



THE DECAMERON,

An hundred very pleasant Novels

Writtily discoursed, betweene seven Honourable Ladies, and three Nable Gentlemen.

Preserved to Posterity by the Renowned Iohn Boccacio, the first Refiner of Italian profes And now translated into English.

The last Five dayes.

LONDON.

Printed by Tho. Cores, and are to be fold by Benjamine Allen, and William Hope, 1634.

THE THE TENTON TO SERVE

20 T

のできる。

for an two

or me

my me hai

Gr lee Sna bla

A (中国的) 中国 (中国) 中国 (中国) 中国 (中国) (中国) (中国)

To the Right Honourable, Sir Phillip Herbert, Knight; Lord Baron of Sherland, Earle of Montgomery, and Knight of the most Noble order of the

Aving (by your Honourable command) translated this Decameron, or Cento Novelle, sirnamed Il Principe Galeotto, of ten daies

severall discourses, grounded on variable and singular Arguments, happening betweene seaven Noble Ladies, and three very Honourable Gentlemen: Although not attyred with fuch elegancy of phrase, or nice curiofity of stile, as a quicker and more sprightfull wit could have performed, but in such home-borne language, as my ability could fretch unto, yet it commeth (in all duty) to keffe your Noble hand, and to shelter it selfe under your Gracious protection, though not from the leering eye, and over-lavish tongue of Snarling Envy; yet from the power of his blasting poy son, and malice of his machinations. A42

diadiadiadia

To the Reader.

Bookes (Courteous Reader) may rightly be compared to Gardens; wherein, let the pamefull Gardiner expresse never so much care and diligent endeavour; yet among the very fairest, sweetest, and freshest Flowers, as also Plants of precious vertue; ill favouring and flinking Weedes, fit for no use but the fire or mucke-hill, will fpring and sprout up. So fareth it with Bookes of the very belt quality, let the Author be never so indulgent, and the Printer vigilant : yet both may mifle their ayme, by the escape of Errors and Mistakes, either in sense or matter, the one fault enfuing by a ragged written Copy; and the other through want of wary Correction. If then the best Bookes cannot be free from this common infirmity; blame nor this then, of farre lighter argument, wherein thy courtefie may helpe us both: His blame, in acknowledging his more fusficiency, than to write fo groffe and abourdly : And mine, in pardoning unwilling Errors committed, which thy judgement finding, thy pen can as eafily correct.

Faremell:

A

ted 2, he go ledge

faid fiver Mar

Granto his there pofe o

Giott Mage defor

ly rev

husban dulter Guazz From

and ple former

The Sixt day governed by Madame -

The first Novell.

A Knight requested Madame Oretta, to ride behinde him on how seback, and promised to tell her an excellent Tale by the way. But the Lady perceiving, that his discourse was idle, and much worse delivered: extreated him to let her walke on soote againe.

2, Novell. Ciffin a Baker, by a mitty an fiver which he gave unto Messer Geri Spina, caused him to acknowledge a very indiferest motion, which de had made to the

faid Ciftio.

3. Novell. Madam Nonna de Pulci, ly a sudden anfiver, did put to silence a Bishop of Florence, es the Lord Marshall : having mooved a question to the said Lady,

which feemed to come fort of bonefty.

4. Novell. Chichibio, the Cooke to Meffer Currads Gran siliazzi, by a sudden pleasant answer which he made to his Master; converted his anger into laughter, and thereby escaped the punishment, that Messer meant to impose on him.

5. Novell. Messer Foreso da Rabatte, and Maister Ciotto, a Painter by his Profession, comming together from Magello, scornefully reprehended one another for their

deformity of body.

6. Novell. A young ingentous Scholler, being unfindly revited and finite by his ignorant Father, es through the procurement of an unlearned Vicar; after ortained to

be doubly revenged on him.

7. Novell. Madame Philippa, being accused by her husband Rinaldo de Pugliese, because he tooke her in adultery, with a young Gentleman named Lazarino de Guazzagliori: caused her to be cited before a ludge. From whom she delivered her selfe, by a sudden, withy, and pleasant answer, or moderated a severe first statute, formerly made against women.

8. No.

8. Novell. Fre fee da Celatico, counfelled and advifed his Neece Cefea. That if fuch as deferred to be tooked on, were offenfive to her eyes (as she had often teld him;) she should forbeare to looke on any.

9. Novell. Signior Guido Cavalcante, with a foddine and witty answer, reprehended the rash folly of certains Florentine Gentlemen, that thought to seeme and flour

bim.

10. Novell. Fryer Onion promifed certaine honest people of the Country, to show them a Feather of the same Phanix, that was with Noah in his Arke. Insteed whereof, he found coales, which he avouched to be those very coales wherewith the same Phanix was roasted.

The VII. day governed by Dioneus.

The first Novell.

Mon of Lorraine beardone knocke at his doore in the night time, whereupon he awaked his wife Monna Teffa. Shee made him believe, that it was a spirit which knocked at the doore, and so they arose, going both together to conjure the spirit with a charme; and after-

wards, they heard no more knocking.

2. Novell. Peronellahid a young man her Friend and Lover, under a great brewing Fat, upon the judden returning home of her Husband; who told her, that he had fold the faid Fat, and brought him that hought it, to carry it away. Peronella replyed, That she had formerly fold it unto another, who was now underneath it, to see whether it were whole and found, or no. Whereupon, he being come forth from under it; she caused her Husband to wake it neate and cleane, and so the last buyer carried it away.

3. Novell. Fryer Reynard, falling in love with a Gentlewoman, wife to a man of good account; found the meanes to become her Goffip. Afterward, bee being conferring closely with her in her Chamber, and her Hufberd

uf clem

11)4

for

2300

wil

aga

him

Ea/

of z

his

Wel

mar mar

Prie

him

whi

whi

door

10€ €

the b

The o

6.

of he

wife

as fac

Lam

stant

dian

excu/

band comming suddenly thither: shee made him believe, that he came thither for no other end, but to rure his Godsonne by a charme, of a danger ous disease which he had by wormes.

d

n,

1C

220

142

0-

me

les

9110

of-

ich

10-

cr-

and

farfold

it a

11/1-

er it

ome

ke it

y .

11/2

dth

CQ 72

Hul

ban

4. Novell. To fano in the night scason, did locke his mife out of his house, and she not prevailing to get entrance againe, by all the entreaties shee could possibly use: made him believe that she had throwne her selfe into a well, by easting a great stone into the well. To fano hearing the fall of the stone into the well, and being perswaded that it was his Wife indeed; came firth of his house, and ran to the well side. In the meane while, his wife got into the house, made saft the doores against her Husband, and gave him many reproachs sulf speeches.

5. Novell. A jealous man, clouded with the habite of a Priest, became the confessor to his owne Wise; who made him believe, that shee was deepely in love with a Priest, which came every night, and lay with her. By meanes of which confession, while her jealous Hushand watched the doors of his house; she that never meant to doe amisse, had the company of a secret friend who came over the toppe of the house to visite her, while her sootish Hushand kept the doors.

6. Novell. Madam Isabella, delighting in the company of her affected friend, named Lionello, and she being likewise beloved by Signior Lambertucio: At the same time as she had entertained Lionello, shee was also visited by Lambertuccio. Her husband returning home in the very instant: she caused Lambertuccio to runne forth with a diawne sword in his hand and (by that meanes) made an excuse sufficient for Lionesto to her Husband.

7. Novell. Lodovico discoveredto his Mistresse ataelam Beatrix, how amourously he was affected with her.

She

She cumingly sent Egano her husband into his garden, in all respects disgussed like her selfe; while servently Lodovico conferred with her the means while. Afterward, Lodovico pretending a lastinious alluvement of his mistresse, thereby to wrong his honest diaster, instead of her, heateth Egano sound-

ly in the Garden.

Novell 8. Arriguecio Berlingbierie, became immersuably jealous of h. wife Simonida, who fusined a thred about har great toe, for to serve as a signall, when her amorous friend should come to visite her. Arriguecio sindeth the fallacy, and while he pursueth the amorous friend, she carefel her Maide to by in her hed against his returne: whom hee heateth extremely, eutting away the lockes of her have (thinking hee had done att this volence to his wife Simonvala:) and afterward setcheth her Mother and Beethren, to shame her before them, and so be vid of ter. But they sinding all his speeches to be false; and reputing him to be a drunkin jealous soole; all the blame and diffrace salleth on himselfe.

Novell 9. Lydia, a Lady of great beauty, birth, and honour, being wife to Nicostratus, Governous of Argos, falling inlove with a Gentlman, named Pyrrhus, was requested by him as a true testimony of her unfeigned affection to serfyme three severall actions of her feife. She did accomplish them all, and imbraced and hisselfed Pyrrhus in the presence of Nicostratus, by posswading him that what sever he fair, was

meere'y falfe.

Novell 10. Two Citizens of Sienna, the one named Tingotto Mini, and the other Mentiodi Tora, affected both one woman, colled Monna Mita, to whom the one of them was a Gossip. The Cossip dyed and appeared afterward to his companion according as he had formerly promised him to doe, and told him what strange wonders he had seem in the other world.

The

w

th

fer

of

mo



DECAMERON,

Containing an hundred

Wherein, after demonstration made by the Authour.

upon what occasion it happened, that the persons (of whom we shall speake hereafter) should thus meet together to make so queint a narration of Novels: He declareth unto you, that they first begin to devise and conferre under the government of Madam P ampinea, and of such matters as may be most pleasing to them all.

The Induction of the Authour, to the following Difcourfes.



72-

ne

36

m-

oe,

1.3

RACIOUS Ladies, so often as I confider with my selfe, and observe respectively, how naturally you are enclined to compassion; as many times doe I acknowledge, that this present work of mine, will (in your judgement) appeare to have but a

harth and offensive beginning, in regard of the mournefull remembrance it beareth at the very en-

tra

trance of the last Pestilential mortallity, universally hurtfull to all that beheld it, or otherwise came to knowledge of it. But for all that, I desire it may not be so dreadfull to you, to hinder your further proteeding inreading, as if none were to looke thereon, but with sighes and teares. For, I could rather wish, that so fearefull a beginning, should seeme but as an high and steepy hill appeares to them, that attempt to travell farreon foot, and ascending the same with some difficulty, comme afterward to walke upon a goodly even plaine, which causeth the more contentment in them, because the attayning thereto was hard and painefull. For even as pleasures are cut off by griefe and anguish; so sorrowes cease by joyes most sweet and happy arriving.

After this briefe moleftation; briefe I say, because it is contained within smal compasse of writing, immediately followed the most sweete and pleasant taste of pleasure, whereof (before) I made promise to you. Which (peradventure) could not bee expeded by such a beginning, if promise stood not thereunto cagaged. And indeed, if I could well have conveyed you to the center of my desire, by any other way, than for rude and rocky a passage as this is, I would gladly have done it. But because without this Narration, we could not demonstrate the occasion how and wherefore the matters happing, which you shall reade in the ensuing Discourses. I must set them down (even as constrained thereto by meere necessary) in

W

ar

pa

im

red

(po

writing after this manner.

The yeere of our bleffed Saviours Incarnation, 1348. that memorable mortallity happened in the excellent City, farre beyond all the reft in Italy; which plague, by operation of the superiour bodies, or rather for our enormous iniquities, by the just anger of God was

was sent upon us mortals. Some few yeares before, it tooke beginning in the Easterne parts, sweeping thence an innumerable quantity of living soules: extending it selfe afterward from place to place Westward, untill it seized on the said City. Where neither humane skill or providence, could use any prevention, notwithstanding it was cleansed of many annoyances, by diligent Officers thereto deputed: besides prohibition of all the sickly persons enterance, and all possible provision daily used for confervation of such as were in health, with incessant Prayers and supplications of devoute people, for the

allwaging of fodangerous a ficknesse.

About the beginning of the yeere, it also began in very strange manner, as appeared by divers admirable effects ; yet not as it had done in the East Countries, where Lord or Lady being touched therewith, manifest signes of inevitable death followed thereon, by bleeding at the nofe. But here it began with yong children, male and female, either under the armepits, or in the groine by certaine fwellings, in fome to the bigneffe of an Apple, in others like an Egge. and fo in divers greater or leffer, which (in their valgar Language) they termed to be a Botch or Byle. In very short time after, those two infected parts were growne mortiferous, & would disperse abroad indifferently, to all parts of the body; whereupon, fuch was the quality of the discale, to shew it selfe by blacke or blew spottes, which would appeare on the armes of many, others on their thighes, and every part elfe of the body : in somegrear and few, in others imall and thicke.

Now, as the Byle (at the beginning) was an affirred figne of neere approaching death; so prooved the spots likewise to such as had them: for the curing of

B 2

which

was

nt

to

ed

to

cd

an

VVC

re-

cin

(e-

ion,

a the

whichfick nesse it seemed, that the Physicians counsell, the vertue of Medicines, or any application else could not yeeld any remedy: but rather it plainely appeared, that either the nature of the disease would not endure it, or ignorance in the Physicians could not comprehend from whence the cause proceeded, and so by consequent, no resolution was to be determined. Moreover, beside the number of such as were skilfull in Art, many more both women and men, without ever having any knowledge in Physike, became Physicians: so that not onely sew were healed, but (well-neere) all dyed, within three dayes after the said signes were seene; some sooner, and others later, commonly without either Feaver, or any other accident.

And this peltilence was yet of farre greater power or violence; for, not onely healthfull persons speaking to the ficke, comming to fee them, or ayring cloathes in kindnesse to comfort them, was an occafion of ensuing death: but touching their garments, or any foode whereon the ficke person fed, or any thing elfe nfed in his fervice, feemed to transferre the dilease from the ficke to the found, in very rare and miraculous manner. Among which matter of marvell, let me tell you one thing, which if the eyes of many (as well as mine owne) had not feeme, hardly could I be perswaded to write it, much lesse to beleeve st, albeit a man of good credit fould report it. I fay, that the quality of this contagious pestilence was not only of fuch efficacy, in taking and catching it on or another, either men or women: but it extended further, even in the apparet view of many, that the cloathes, or any thingelfe wherin one died of that difeafe, being toucht, or lien on by any beaft, far fro the kind or quality of man, they did not only contaminate & infect the faid beaft, were it Dog, Cat, or any others but

but also it dyed very soone after.

(-

g

3-

S

ny

he nd

of

dly

eve

ay,

not

nor

loa-

eale,

te &

hers but

Minc owne eyes (as formerly I have faid) among divers other, one day had evident experience hereof: for some poore ragged cloathes of linnen and wollen, torne from a vyretched body dead of that difeafe, and hurled in the open ftreete; two Swine going by, and (according to their naturall inclination) feeking for foode on every dung-bill, toffed and tumbled the cloathes with their fnouts, rubbing their heads likewife upon them; and immediately, each turning twice or thrice about, they both fell downe dead on the faid cloathes, as being fully infeded with the contagion of them: which accident and other the like, if not farre greater , begat divers feares and imaginations in them that beheld them, all tending to a most inhumane and uncharitable end; namely, to fly thence from theficke, and touching any thing of their s by which meanes they thought their health thould be fafely warranted.

Some there were, who confidered with themselves, that living foberly, with abilinence from all superfluity; it would bee a sufficient relistance against all hurtfull accidents. So combining themselves in a fociable manner, they lived as separatifts from all other company, being flut up in such houses, where no ficke body should be neere them. And there, for their more fecurity, they used delicate viands and excellent wines, avoiding luxury, and refuting speech to one another, not looking forth at the windowes, to heare no cryes of dying people, or fee any coarfes carried to buriall; but having Musicall instruments, lived there in all possible pleasure. Others, were of a contrary opinion, who avouched, that there was no other phylicke more certaine, for a difease so desperate, than to drinke hard , bee merry among themselves ,

3 finging

finging continually, walking every where, and fatisfying their appetites with whatfoever they defired, laughing, and mocking at every mournefull accident, and fo they vowed to fpend day and night: for now they would go to one Taverne, then to another, living without any rule or measure; which they might very easily do, because every one of them, (as if hee were to live no longer in this World) had even forfaken all things that he had. By meanes whereof, the most part of the houses were become common, and all strangers might doe the like (if they pleased to adventure it) even as boldly as the Lord or owner, without any let or contradiction.

Yet in all this their beaftly behaviour, they were wife enough, to fhun (so much as they might) the weake and fickly: In misery and affliction of our City, the venerable authority of the Lawes, as well Divine as Humane, was even destroyed, as it were, through want of the lawfull Ministers of them. For they being all dead, or lying ficke with the rest, or else lived so solitary, in such great necessity of servants and attendants, as they could not execute any Office, whereby it was lawfull for every one to doe as he

th

uti

dre

the

and

way

DOV

coul

tude

lity .

lifted.

Betweene these two rehearsed extremities of life, there were other of a more moderate temper, not being so duntily dieted at the first, nor drinking so dissolutely as the second; but used all things sufficient for their appetites, and without shutting up themselves, walked abroad, some carrying sweete Nose-gayes of slowers in their hands; others odoriferous kerbs, and others divers kinds of Spiceries, holding them to their Noses, and thinking them most comfortable for the Braine, because the Ayre seemed to be much infected by the noysome smell of dead

dead carkafes, and other hurtfull favours. Some other therewere also of more inhumane minde (how-beit peradventure it might bee the surest) saying, that there was no better physicke against the pestilence, nor yet so good, as to fly away from it : which argument mainely moving them, and caring for no body but themselves, very many, both men and women, forsooke the City, their owne Houses, their Parents, Kindred, Friends, and Goods, slying to other mens dwellings else-where. As if the wrath of God in punnishing the sinnes of men with this plague, would fall heavily upon none, but such as were enclosed within the City wals; or else perswading themselves, that not any should there bee left alive, but that the final ending of all things was come.

Now albeit these persons in their diversity of opinions died not all, fo undoubtedly they did not all escape; but many among them becomming sicke, and making a generall example of their flight and folly, among them that could not flirre out of their beds, they languished more perplexedly than the other did. Let us omit, that one Citizen fled after another, and one neighbour had not any care of another, Parents nor Kindred never visiting them, but utterly they were forfaken on all fides : this tribulation pierced into the hearts of men, and with such a dreadfull terrour, that one Brother forlooke another, the Vnckle the Nephew, the Sifter the Brother, and the Wife her Husband: nay, a matter much greater, and almost incredible; Fathers and Mothers fled away from their owne Children, even as if they had no way appertained to them. In regard whereof, it could be no otherwise, but that a countlesse multitude of men and women fell ficke; finding no Chatity among their friends, except a very few, and fub

t

O

1-

ap

tc

riv

es:

m

vre

of

finging continually, walking every where, and fatisfying their appetites with whatfoever they defired, laughing, and mocking at every mournefull accident, and fo they vowed to fpend day and night: for now they would go to one Taverne, then to another, living without any rule or measure; which they might very easily do, because every one of them, (as if hee were to live no longer in this World) had even forfaken all things that he had. By meanes whereof, the most part of the houses were become common, and all strangers might doe the like (if they pleased to adventure it) even as boldly as the Lord or owner, without any let or contradiction.

Yet in all this their beaftly behaviour, they were wife enough, to fhun (so much as they might) the weake and fickly: In misery and affliction of our City, the venerable authority of the Lawes, as well Divine as Humane, was even destroyed, as it were, through want of the lawfull Ministers of them. For they being all dead, or lying sicke with the rest, or else lived so solitary, in such great necessity of servants and attendants, as they could not execute any Office, whereby it was lawfull for every one to doe as he

fo

be

th

otl

utt

tion

dre

the

the

and

ivay

NOA

coul c

tity a

lifted.

Betweene these two rehearsed extremities of life, there were other of a more moderate temper, not being so duintily dieted at the first, nor drinking so dissolutely as the second; but used all things sufficient for their appetites, and without shutting up themselves, walked abroad, some carrying sweete Nose-gayes of slowers in their hands; others odoris ferous herbs, and others divers kinds of Spiceries, holding them to their Noses, and thinking them most comfortable for the Braine, because the Ayre seemed to be much insected by the noysome smell of dead

dead carkafes, and other hurtfull favours. Some other therewere also of more inhumane minde (how-beit peradventure it might bee the surest) saying, that there was no better physicke against the pestilence, nor yet so good, as to fly away from it twhich argument mainely moving them, and caring for no body but themselves, very many, both men and women, forsooke the City, their owne Houses, their Parents, Kindred, Friends, and Goods, slying to other mens dwellings else-where. As if the wrath of God in punnishing the sinnes of men with this plague, would fall heavily upon none, but such as were enclosed within the City wals; or else perswading themselves, that not any should there bee left alive, but that the snall ending of all things was come.

Now albeit these persons in their diversity of opinions died not all, fo undoubtedly they did not all escape; but many among them becomming sicke; and making a generall example of their flight and folly, among them that could not firre out of their beds, they languished more perplexedly than the o. ther did. Let us omit, that one Citizen fled after another, and one neighbour had not any care of another, Parents nor Kindred never vifiting them, but utterly they were forfaken on all fides : this tribulation pierced into the hearts of men, and with such a dreadfull terrour, that one Brother forlooke another, the Vnckle the Nephew, the Sifter the Brother, and the Wife her Husband: nay, a matter much greater, and almost incredible; Fathers and Mothers Red away from their owne Children, even as if they had no way appertained to them. In regard whereof, it could be no otherwise, but that a countlesse multitude of men and women fell ficke; finding no Chatity among their friends, except a very few, and fub

i-

te

i

5:

m

re

of ad ject to the avarice of servants, who attended them constrainedly, (for great and unreasonables wages) yet serv of those attendants to bee found any where too. And they were men or women but of base condition, as also of groffer understanding, who never before had served in any such necessities, nor indeed were any way else to bee imployed, but to give the sicke person such things as hee called for, or to awaite the houre of his death; in the performance of which service, oftentimes for gaine, they lost their

owne lives.

In this extreame calamity, the ficke being thus forfaken of Neighbours, Kindred and Friends, standing also in such need of servants; a custome came up among them, never heard before, that there was not any woman, how Noble, Young, or Faire foever the was, butfalling ficke the must of necessity have a man to attend her, were he young or otherwife ; respect of thame or modelty no way prevailing, but all parts of her body must be discovered to him, which (in the like urgency) was not to be seene by any but women: whereon enfued aftervard, that upon the parties healing and recovery, it was the occasion of further difhonesty; which many being more modestly curious of, refused such disgracefull attending, chusing rather to dye, than by fuch helpe to be healed. In regard wherof, as well through the want of convenient remedies, (which the ficke by no meanes could attaine unto) as also the violence of the contagion, the multitude of them that died night and day, was fo great, that it was a dreadfull light to behold, and as much to heare spoken of. So that meere necessity (among them that remained living) begat new behaviours, quite cotrary to all which had been in former times, and frequently used among the City inhabitants. Th

gr

ati

Co

one

thei

dead

Poor

thos

The custome of precedent dayes (as now againe it is) was, that Women, Kindred, Neighbours and Friends, would meete together at the deceased parties house, and there, with them that were of neerest alliance, expresse their hearts forrow for their friends If not thus, they would affemble before the loffe. doore, with many of the Citizens and Kindred, and (according to the quality of the difeased) the Cleargy me; there likewise, and the dead body was carried (in comely manner) on mens shoulders with funerall Pompe of Torch light, and Singing, to the Church appointed by the diseased. But these feemely orders, after that the fury of the peftilence began to encrease, they in like manner altogether ceased, and other new customes came in their place; because not onely people died, without having any women about them, but infinites also patt out of this life, not having any witnesse, how, when, or in what manner they departed. So that few or none there were, to deliver outward thew of forrow and grieving: but insteed thereof, divers declared idle joy and rejoycing, a use soone learned of immodest women, having put off all feminine compassion, year or regard of their owne welfare.

C

n

a

rts

he

en:

ca-

dif-

of,

rto

her-

me-

aine

mul-

reat,

much

mon?

iours

imes

Thi

Very few also would accompany the body to the grave, and they not any of the Neighbours, although it hab beene an honourable Crizen, but onely the meanest kind of people, such as were Grave-makers, Coffin-bearers, or the like, that did these services onely for money, and the Biere being mounted on their shoulders, in all haste they would runne away with it, not perhaps to the Church appointed by the dead, but to the necrest at hand, having source or fixe poore Priests following, with lights or no lights, and those of the filliest; short service being said at the Buriall,

riall, and the body unreverently throwne in the first open grave they found. Such was the pitifull mercy of poore people, and divers, who were of better condition, as it was most lamentable to behold; because the greater number of them, under hope of healing, or compelled by poverty, kept still within their house weake and faint, thousands falling sicked aily, and having no helpe, or being succoured any way with foode or physicke, all of them died, sew or

none escaping.

Great store there were, that died in the streetes, by day or night, and many more belides, although they died in their houses; yet first they made it knowne to their neighbours, that their lives perished, rather by the noylome smell of dead, and putrified bodies, than by any violence of the disease in them-So that of these and the rest, dying in this manner every where, the neighbours observed one course of behaviour, (moved thereto no lesse by feare, that the smell and corruption of dead bodies should harme them, than charitable respect of the dead) that themselves when they could or being affisted by some bearers of coarses, when they were able to procure them, would hate the bodies (already dead) out of their houses, laying them before their doores, where fuch as paffed by, especially in the mornings, might ice them lying in no meane numbers. Afterward, Bieres were brought thither, and such as might not have the helpe of Bieres, were glad to lay them on Tables : and Bieres have beene observed, not onely to be charged with two or three dead bodies at once, but many times it was scene also, that the Wife with the Husband, two or three Brethren together; yea, the Father and Mother, have thus beene carried along to the grave upon one biere.

Morcover,

pl

W

ya

ule

Vei Ear

the

ry P

m c

Moreover, oftentimes it hath beene scene, that when two Priests went with one Crosse to fetch the body; there would follow (behind) three or foure bearers with their Bieres, and when the Priefts intended the buriall but of one body, fixe or eight more have made up the advantage, and yet none of them being attended by any feemly company, lights, teares, or the very least decency; but it plainly appeared, that the very like account was then made of Men or Women, as if they had beene Dogges or Swine. Wherin might manifestly be noted, that that which the naturall course of things could not thew to the wife, with rare and little loffe, to wit, the patient support of miferies and misfortunes, even in their greatest height: not onely the wife might now learne, but also the very simplest people; and in such fort, that they should alwayes bee prepared against all infelicities whatfoever.

Hallowed ground could not new suffice, for the great multitude of dead bodies, which were daily brought to every Church in the City, and every houre in the day; neither could the bodies have proper places of buriall, according to our ancient custome: wherefore, after that the Churches and Churchyards were filled, they were constrained to make use of great deepe ditches, wherein they were buried by hundreds at once; ranking dead bodies along in graves, as Merchandizes are laid along in ships, covering each after other, with a small quantity of Barth, and so they filled at last up the whole ditch to

the brim.

Now, because I would wander no further in every particularity, concerning the miseries happening in our City: I tell you, that extremities running on in such manner as you have heard; little lesse spare

was made in the Villages round about; wherein (fetting aside enclosed Castles, which were now filled like to small Cities) poore Labourers and Husband-men, with their whole Families, died most miserably in out-houses, yea, and in the open fields also; without any affistance of physicke, or helpe of servants; and likewise in the high-wayes, or their ploughed landes, by day or night indifferently,

yet not as men, but like brute beafts.

By meanes whereof, they became lazy and flothfull in their dayly endevours, even like to our Citizens; nor minding or medling with their wonted affaires: but, as awaiting for death every houre, imployed all their paines, not in caring any way for themselves, their Cattle, or gathering the Fruits of the Earth, or any of their accustomed labours; but rather wasted and consumed, even such as were for their instant sustenance. Whereupon, it fell fo out, that their Oxen, Affes, Sheepe and Goates, their Swine, Pullen, yea their very Dogges, the truest and faithfullest fervants to men, being beaten & banished from their houses, went wildly wandring abroad in the fields, where the Corne grew still on the ground without gathering, or being fo much as reapt or cut. Many of the forefaid beafts (as endued with reason) after they had pastured themselves in the day time, would returne full fed at night home to their houses, without any government of Heardsmen, or any other.

How many faire Palaces! How many goodly Honfes! How many Noble habitations, filled before with Families of Lords and Ladies, were then to be feene empty, without any one there dwelling except fome filly fervant? How many Kindreds, worthy of memory! How many great inheritances! And

what

th

m

YC

ye:

wi

cer

what plenty of riches, were left without any true fuccessours? How many good men! How many woorthy Women? How many Valiant and comely young men, whom none but Galen, Hippocrates, and Afrulapius (if they were living) could have beene reputed any way unhealthfull; were seene to dine at morning with their Parents, Friends, and familiat confederates, and went to sup in another world with their Predecessor?

It is no meane breach to my braine, to make repetition of so many miseries; wherefore, being willing to part with them as easily as I may: I say that our City being in this case, voide of inhabitants, it came to passe (as afterward I understood by some of good credit) that in the venerable Church of S. Mais la Neusus, on a Tuesday morning, there being then no other person, after the hearing of Divine Service, in mourning habits (as the season required) returned thence seven discreet young Gentle-women, all allied together, either by friendship, neighbour-hood, or parentage. She among them that was most entred into yeares, exceeded not 28, and the youngest was no lesse than 18, being of Noble descent, saire forme, adorned with exquisite behaviour and graci-

ous modesty.

Their names I could report, if just occasion did not forbid it, in regard of the occasions following by them related, and because times hereafter shall not taxe them with reproofe; the laws of pleasure being more straited now adayes (for the matters before revealed) than at that time they were not onely to their yeares but to many much riper. Neither will I likewise mainister matter to rash heads (over-ready in censuring commendable life) any way to impasse the honesty of Ladies, by their idle detracting speeches.

And

And therefore, to the end that what each of them faith, may be comprehended without confusio; I purpose to stile them by names, wholly agreeing, or (in part) conformable to their qualities. The first, and most aged, we will name Pampinea; the second, Fiametta; the third, Philomena; the fourth, Emilia; the fift, Lauretta; the fixt, Neiphila; and the last we terme (not without occasion) Elissar Eliza. All of the being attembled at a corner of the Church, not by any deliberation formerly appointed, but meerely by accident, and sitting as it were in a round ring; after divers sighs severally delivered, they conferred on sundry matters answerable to the sad quality of the time, and within a while after, Madam Pom.

d

n

fh

in

th

if

G

tu

(m

ca

th

pinea began in this manner:

Faire Ladies, you may (no doubt as well as I) have heard, that no injury is offered to any one, by fuch as make use but of their owne right. It is a thing naturall for every one which is borne in this World, to aide, conserve, and defend her life so long as the can; and this right hath beene so powerfully permitted, that although it hath sometimes happened, that (to defend themselves) men have beene flaine without any offence : yet Laws have allowed it to be fo, in whose solicitude lieth the best living of all mortals. How much more honest and just is it then for us, and for every other wel-disposed person, to seeke for (without wronging any) and to practife all remedies that we can, for the conservation of our lives? When I well confider, what we have heere done this morning, and many other already past (remembring, withall, what likewife is proper and convenient for us : I conceive (as all you may do the like) that every one of us hath a due respect of her selfe, and then I mervaile not, but rather am much amazed (knowing ing none of us to be deprived of a Womans best judgement) that we seeke nor after some remedies for our selves, against that, which every one among us,

ought (in reason) to feare.

Here we meete and remaine (as it feemeth to me) in no other manner, than as if we would or should be witnesses, to all the dead bodies at reft in their grave; or elfe to liften, when the Religious Sifters here dwelling (whose number now are well-neare come to be non at al) fing Service at fuch houres as they ought to do ; or elfe to acquaint all commers hither (by our mourning habits) with the cuality and quantity of our hearts mileries. And when we part hence, we meet with none but dead bodies, or ficke perfons, transported from one place to another; or else we fee running thorow the City (in most offensive fury) fuch as (by authority of publike Lawes) were banished hence, onely for their bad and brutish behaviour in contempt of those Laws, because now they know, that the executours of them are dead and fick. And if not these, more lamentable spectacles present theselves to us , by the base rascality of the City; who being fatted with our blood, tearme themselves Grave-makers, and in meere contemptible mockeries of us, are mounted on Horse-backe, galloping every where, reproaching us with our loffes and misfortunes, with leved and dishonest songs: so that we can heare nothing elfe but fuch and fuch are dead, and fuch and fuch lie a dying ; here hands wringing, and every where most pitiful complaining.

If we returne home to our houses (I know not whether your case be answerable to mine) when I can finde none of all my Family, but onely my poore waiting Chamber-maid; so great are my feares, that the very haire of my head declareth my amazement,

and wherefoever I go or fit downe, me thinkes I fee the Ghofts and Shadowes of deceafed friends, not with fach lovely lookes, as I was wont to behold them, but with most horrid and dreadfull regards, newly stolne upon them I know not how. In these respects, both here, else-where, and at home in my house, me thinkes I am alwaies ill, and much more (in mine owneopinion) than any other body, not having meanes or place of retirement, as all we have,

and none to remaine heere but onely we.

Moreover, I have often heard it faid, that in tarrying or departing, no diffinction is made in things honefter diffionet; onely appetite will be ferved, and be they alone or in company by day or night, they do whatfeever their appetite defireth: not lecular perfons onely, but fuch as are reclufes, and flut up within Monafteries, breaking the Lawes of obedience, and being addicted to pleafures of the flesh, are become lascivious and diffolate, making the World believe, that whatfoever is convenient for other women, is no way unbeseeming them, as thinking in

that manner to escape.

If it be so, as manifestly it maketh shew of it selfe; What doe we here? What stay we for? And wheron do we dreame? Why are we more respectselfe of our health, than all the rest of the Citizens? Repute we our selves lesse precious than all the other? Or do we believe, that life is linked to our bodies with stronger chaines, than to others, and that therefore we should not scare any thing that hath power to offend us? We erre therein, and are deceived. What brutishnesse were it in us, if we should urge any such beliefe? So often as we call to mind, what and how many gallant young men and women, have beene devoured by this cruell pestilence; we may evidently observe a contrary argument.

n

ra

if

11

Wherefore, to the end, that by being over-lcrupus lous and carelesse, we fall not into such danger. whence when we would (perhaps) we cannot recover our felves by any meanes : I thinke it meete fif your judgement therein shall jumpe with mine) that all of us as we are (at leaft, if we will do as divers before us have done, and yet daily endeavour to doe) fhunning death by the honest example of other, make our retreate to ourcountry houles, wherwith all of us are sufficiently furnished, and ther to delight our felves as best we may, yet without transgressing (in any act) the limits of reason. There shall we heare the pretty birds fweetly finging, fee the hilles and plaines verdantly flouring, the Corne waving in the field like the billowes of the Sea, infinite store of goodly trees, and the Heavens more fairely open to us, than here we cam behold them. And although they are justly displeased, yet will they not there deny us better beauties to gaze on, than the walles in our City (emptied of inhabitants) can affoord us.

Moreover, the Ayre is much fresh and cleere, and generally, there is far greater abundance of all things whatsoever, needfull at this time for preservation of our health, and lesse offence or molestation than week.

findhere.

And although Country people die, as well as here our Cittizens do, the griefe notwithstanding is to much the lesse, as the houses and dwellers there are rare, in comparison of them in our city. And beside, if we well observe it, here we for sake no particular person, but rather we may tearmeour selves for sakens in regard that our Husbands, Kindred, and Friends, eyther dying, or slying from the dead, have less us alone in this great affliction, even as if we were no way belonging unto them. And therefore, by follows.

ing this counsell, we cannot fall into any reprehension; whereas if we neglect and refuse it, danger, diftresse, and death (perhaps) may ensue thereon.

f

t

G

CO

co

CC

m

ki.

th

Wherefore, if you thinke good, I would allow it for well done, to take our waiting women, with all fuch things as are needfull for us, and (as this day) betake our felves to one place, to morrow to another, taking there fuch pleafure and recreation, as so sweet a season liberally bestoweth on us. In which manner we may remaine, till we see (if death otherwise prevent us not) what end the gracious Heavens have referved for us. I would have you also to consider, that it is no lesse seemely for us to part hence honefully, than a great number of other women to remaine here immodessly.

The other Ladies and Gentle-women, having heard Madam Pampinea, not onely commended her counfell, but defiring allo to put it in execution; had already particularly confulted with themselves, by what meanes they might instantly depart from thence. Neverthelesse, Madam Philomena, who was

very wee, spake thus :

Albeit faire Ladies, the case propounded by Madam Pampinea, hath beene very well delivered; yet (for all that) it is against reason for us to rush on, as we are over-ready to do. Remember that we are all Women, and no one among us sochildish, but may consider, that when we shall be so affembled together, without providence or conduct of some man, we can hardly governe our selves. We are fraile, offensive, suspicious, weake spirited, and searcfull: in regard of which imperfections, I greatly doubt (if we have no better direction then our owne) this society will some dissolve it selse, and (perchance) with lesse honor to us, than if we never had begunne it. And therefore

fore it shall bee expedient for us, to provide before wee proceede any turther. Madam Euza hereon

thus replyed.

Most true it is, that men are the chiefe or head of women, and without their order, fildome times doe any matters of ours fort to recommendable end. But what meanes shall we make for men? We all know well enough, that the most part of our friends are dead, and such as are living, some be dispersed here, others there, into divers places and companies, where wee have no knowledge of their being; and to accept of strangers, would seeme very inconvenient: wherefore as we have such acre of our health, so should we be as respective withall, in ordering our intention, that wheresoever we aime at our pleasure and conteniment, reproofe and scandall may by no

meanes purfue us.

While this Discourse thus held among the Ladies, three young Gentlemen came foorth of the Church (yet not so young, but the youngest had attained to five and twenty yeares:) in whom neither malice of the time, loffe of friends, or kindred, nor any fearefull concert in themselves, had the power to quench affection, but (perhaps) might a little coole it, in regard of the queazy feafon. One of them called him. felfe Pamphilus, the fecond Philostratus, and the last Dioneus. Each of them was very affable and well conditioned, and walked abroad (for their greater comfort in such a time of tribulation) to try if they could meete with their faire friends, who (happily) might all three be among these seaven, and the rest kin unto them in one degree or other. No fooner were these Ladies espied by them, but they met with them also in the same advantage; wherupon Madam Pampinea (amiably smiling) faid:

de

ha

de

ne

rea

the

ore

ne

app

bo

ha

to

ak

pu

ftai

rec

del

Pal

ber

bea

wa

the

of :

Bra

fin

mo

pre

de.

See how graciously Fortune is favorable to our begianing, by presenting our eyes with three so wise and worthy young Gentleman, who will gladly be our guides and servants, if we doe not disdaine them the office. Madam Neiphila began immediatly to blush, because one of them had a Love in the company, and faid, Good Madam Pampinea, take heed what you fay, because (of mine owne knowledge) nothing can be spoken but good of them all; and I thinke them all to bee absolutely sufficient to a farre greater employs ment than is here intended; as being well worthy to keepe company, not onely with us, but them of more faire and precious esteeme than we are. But because it appeareth plainely enough, that they beare affection to some here amongst us, I feare, if we should make the motion, that some dishonor or reproofe may enfue thereby, and yet without blame, either in us or them. That is nothing at all, answered Madam Philo. mena, be me live honefly, and my Conscience not checke me with any crime; fpeake then who can to the contrary; God and truth thail enter armes for me. I wish that they were as willing to come, as all we are to bid them welcome; for truly (as Madam Pampinea faid) we may very well hope, that Fortune will bee furtherous to our purpoled journey.

The other Ladies hearing them speake in such manner, not onely were silent to themselves, but all with one accord and consent said, that it were well done to call the, and to acquaint them with their intention entreating their company in so pleasant a voyage. Whereupon, without any more words, Madam Pampinea mounting on her feete (because one of the three was her Kinsman) went towards them, as they shood respectively observing them, and (with a pleasing countenance) giving them a gracious salutation,

declared to them their deliberation, defiring (in behalfe of all the reft) that with a brotherly, and modeft minde, they would vouchfafe to be are them com-

pany.

The Gentlemen imagined at the first apprehenfion that this was spoken in mockage; but when they better perceived that her words tended to folemne earnest, they made answer, That they were all hartily ready to doe them any service. And without any further delaying, before they departed thence, tooke order for ther aptest furnishing with all convenient necessaries, and sent word to the place of their first appointment. On the morrow, being Wednesday, about breake of day, the Ladies, with certaine of their attending Gentlewomen, and the three Gentlemen, having three servants to waite on them, left the City to begin their journey, and having travelled about a a leagues distance, arrived at the place of their first purpose of stay, which was seated on a little hill, diflant (on all fides) from any high way, plentifully ftored with faire spreading Trees, affoording no meane delight to the eye. On the top of all, flood a flately Palace, having a large and spacious Court in the middeft, round engirt with Gallerics, Hals, and Chambers, every one separate alone by themselves, and beautified with Pictures of admirable cunning. Nor was there any want of Gardens, Meadowes, and other most pleasant walkes, with Welles and Springs, of faire running waters, all encompassed with Branching Vines, fitter for curious and quaffing Bibbers, than Women fober, and fingularly modeft.

This Pallace, the company found fully fitted and prepared, the beds in the chambers made and daintily ordred, thickly firewed with variety of flowers, which could

could not but give them the greater contentment. Dioneus, who (above the other) was a pleafant yong gallant, and full of infinite witty concerts, faid; Your wit (faire Ladies) hath better guided us hither, than our providence: I know not how you have determined to dispose of your cares; as for mine owne, I left them at the City gate, when I came thence with your and therefore let your resolution bee, to spend the time here in smiles and singing, (I meane, as may fittest agree with your dignity) or else give me leave to go seek my sorrowes again, and so to remaine discontented in our desolate City. Madam Pampinea having in like manner shaken off her forrowes, delivering a modest and bashfull smile, replyed in this manner:

Dieneus, well have you spoken, it is fit to live merrily, and no other occasion made us forfake the sicke and fad City. But, because such things as are without meane or measure, are subject to no long continuance: I, who began the motion, whereby this fociety is thus affembled, and aime at the long lafting thereof, doe hold it very convenient, that we should all agree, to have one chiefe Commander among vs, in whom the care and providence thould confift, for direction of our merriment, performing honour and obedience to the party, as to our Patrone and fole Governour. And because every one may feele the burthen of solicitude, as also the pleasure of commanding, and consequently have a sensible taste of both, whereby no envy may arise on any side, I could wish that each one of us (for a day onely) should feele both the burthen and honour, and the person so to be advanced, shall receive it from the election of us all. As for fuch as are to succeed, after him or her that hath had the dayes of dominion, the party thought fit for fucceffi-

no

¢i:

121

an

fu

br

mc up

CO

D

Qu

fin

WC

bei

the

on

de

tha

M:

ch

nei

fer

Tr

ma

of t

oth

fice

on, must be named so soone as night approacheth.

And being in this eminency (according as he or shee shall please) he may order and dispose how long the time of his rule shall last, as also of the place and maner, where best we may continue our delight.

These words were highly pleasing to them all, and by generall voice, Madam Pampinea was chosen Queene for the sirst day. Whereupon Madam Philomena ranne presently to a Bay-tree, because shee had often heard what honour belonged to those branches and how worthy of honour they were, that rightfully were crowned with them, plucking off divers branches, shee made of them an apparant and honourable Chaplet, placing it (by generall consent) upon her head; and this so long as their companie continued, manifested to all the rest, the signall of

Dominion and Royall greatneffe.

t.

r

n

1:

e

-

0

۱.

is

r-

ie ic

C:

is

oc

n

n

cc

r.

.

1-

0

ic

n

ıll

as

10

i-

n

Aftert that Madam Pampinea was thus made Queene, the commanded publique filence, and caufing the Gentlemensthree fervants, and the wayting women also (being foure in number) to bee brought before her, thus fe beganne : Because I am to give the first example to you all, whereby proceeding on from good to better, our company may live in order and pleasure, acceptable to all, and without thame to any ; I create Parmeno (fervant to Dioneus) Master of the Houshold, hee taking the care and charge of all our traine, and for whatloever appertais neth to our Hall service. I appoint also, that Silifeo servant to Pamphilus, shall bee our Dispenser and Treasurer, performing that which Parmeno shall command him. Likewise that Tindaro serve as Groome of the Chamber, to Philoftratus his Mafter, and the other two, when his fellowes impeached by their offices, cannot be prefent. Mifig my Chamber-maid,

and Licifca belonging to Philomena, shall serve continually in the Kitchin, and diligently make ready fuch Viands, as shall be delivered them by Parmeno. Chimera, waiting-woman to Lauretta, and Stratilia appertaining to Fiammetta, shell have the charge and government of the Ladies Chambers, and preparing all places where we shall be present. Moreover, we will and commaund every one of them (as they defire to deserve our grace) that wheresoever they go or come, or whatloever they heare or fee; they especially respect to bring us sydings of them. After the had fummarily delivered them thefe orders, very much commended of every one, the arole fairely, faying : Here we have Gardens, Orchardes, Medowes, and other places of fufficient pleafure, where enery one may sport and recreate themselves : but fo foone as the ninth houre striketh, then all to meet here again, to dine in the coole shade.

This jocund company having received licence from their Queene to disport themselves, the Gentlemen walked with the Ladies into a goodly Garden, making Chaplets and Nolegayes of divers flowers, and finging filently to themselves. When they had spent the time limitted by the Queene, they returned into the house, where they found that Parmeno had effectually executed his office. For when they entred into the hall, they faw the Tables covered with delicate white Napery, and the glaffes looking like filver, they were to transparantly cleere, all the roome beside strewed with Flowers of Iuniper. When the Queens, and all the rest had washed, according as Parmenu gave order, fo every one was feated at the Table; the Viands (delicately dreft) were ferved in andexcellent wines plentifully delivered, none attending but the three fervants, and little or no lowd Din-Table-talke palling among them.

yo mounts, a being folly

fusth

in

ch

 $d\epsilon$

an

th

da

cn

the

qui

crs

tho

the

all.

ing

hur

whe

Sun

of fa

neffe

breat

there

the n

thee !

Dinner being ended, and the Tables withdrawne (all the Ladies, and the Gentlemen likewife, being skilfull both in finging and dancing, and playing on inffruments artificially (the Queene commanded, that divers Instruments should be brought, and as shee gave charge) Dioneus tooke a Lute, and Fiametto a Viola de gamba, and began to play an excellent daunce. Whereupon, the Queene with the reft of the Ladies, and the other two young Gentlemen (having fent their attending Servants to dinner) paced foorth a daunce very maiestically. And when the daunce was ended, they fing fundry excellent Canzonets, outwearing fo the time, untill the Queene commanded them all to reit, because the houre did necessarily require it. The Gentlemen having their Chambers farre fevered from the Ladies, curroully Rrewed with flowers, and their beds adorned in exquifite manner, as those of the Ladies were not a jotte inferiour to them, the filence of the night bestowed sweete rest on them; all. In the morning the Queene and all the rest being rifen, accounting over much fleepe to be very hurtfull, they walked abroad into a goodly Meadows where the graffegrew verdantly, and thebeames of the Sunne heated not over-violently, because the shades of faire speading Trees, gave a temperate calmnesse, coole and gentle winds fanning their sweete breath pleafingly among them. All of them being there fee downe in a round ring, and the Queene in the middest, as being in the place of this eminency, thee fpake in this manner.

,

.

,

at

et

ce

e-

n

rs,

ad

ed

ad

red

de-

61-

ome

the

as

the

d in

ten-

ovvd

Din-

You see (faire company) that the Sunne is highly mounted, the heate (elsewhere) too extreame for us, and therefore here is our fittest refuge, the ayre being so coole, delicate, and acceptable, and our folly well worthy reprehension, if wee should walke suther, and speede worse. Heere are Tables, Cards,

and Chelle, as your dispositions may be addicted. But if mine advice might passe for currant, I would admit none of those exercises, because they are too troublesome both to them that play, and such as looke on. I could rather wish, that some quaint discourse might passe among us, a tale or fable related by some one, to urge the attention of all the reft. And fo wearing out the warmth of the day, one prety Novell will draw on another, untill the Sunne be lower declined, and the heates extremity more diminished, to solace our selves in some other place, as to our mindes thall feeme convenient. If therefore what I have saide be acceptable to you (I purposing to follow in the same course of pleasure,) let it appeare by your immediate answere; for, till the Evening, I thinke wee can devise no exercise more commodious for us.

The Ladies and Gentlemen allowed of the motion, to spend the time in telling pleasant tales: wherepon the Queene saide: Seeing you have approoved mine advice, I grant free permission for this first day, that every one shall relate, what to him or her is best pleasing. And turning her selfe to Pamphilus (who was seated on her right hand) gave him savour, with one of his Novells, to begin the recreation, which he not daring to deny, and perceiving generall attentions.

Atesire Chappelet du Prat, by making a false confession, beguyled an holy Religious man, and after dyed, and having (during his life time) bene a very bad manat his death, was reputed for a Saint, and salled Saint Chappelet.

on prepared for him, thus he began.

Th

po

bo

fam

as p

con

all g undo that

meri

benig

piere

tals.;

whom the ex

our

The first Novell.

Wherein is contained, how hard a thing it is, to distinguish goodnesse from hypocrisic; and how (under the shadow of holinesse) the wickedwaise of one man, may decrive many.

T is a matter most convenient (deare Ladies) that a man ought to begin whatsoever he doth, in the great and glorious name of him, who was the Creator of all things. Wherefore, seeing that I am the man appointed, to

begin this your invention of discoursing Novelties: I intend to begin also with one of his wonderfull workes. To the end, that this being heard, our hope may remaine on him, as the thing onely permament and his name for ever to be praised by us. Now as there is nothing more certaine, but that even as temporall things are mortall and transitory, fo are they both in and out of themselves, full of forrow, paine, anguish, and subject to infinite dangers: So in the fame manner we live mingled among them, feeming as part of them, and cannot (without some error) continue or defend our felves, if God by his especiall grace and favour, give us not strength and good understanding. Which power we may not beleeve, that either it descendeth to us, or liveth in us, by any merites of our owne ; but of his onely most gracious benignity. Monved nevertheleffe, and entreated by the interceffions of them, who were (as we are) mortals; and having diligently observed his commandements, are now with him in eternall bleffedneffe. To whom (as to advocates and procurators, informed by the experience of our frailty) wee are nor to prefere

us

tier-

red

ay,

vho

with

h he

enti-

.con.

dyed.

1 man

Sain

Novell.1. The First Day.

our prayers in the presence of so great a Judge; but onely to himselfe, for the obtaining of all such things as his wisedome knoweth to be most expedient for us. And well may we credit, that his goodnesse is more fully enclined towards us, in his continual bounty and liberality; than the subtilty of morrall eye, can reach into the secret of so divine a thought: and sometimes therefore we may be beguiled in opinion, by electing such and such as our intercessors before his



Majefy

ref her dou ver ther the . brab neffe man repoi a lon at lail who c And b fome ' word e

Majesty, who perhaps are farre off from him, or driven into perpetuall exile, as unworthy to appeare in so glorious a presence. For he from whom nothing can be hidden, more regardeth the sincerity of him that prayeth, than ignorant devotion, committed to the trust of a heedlesse intercessor, and such prayers have alwayes gracious acceptation in his sight. As manifestly will appeare, by the Novell which I intend to relate; manifestly (Isy) not as in the Sudgement of God, but according to the apprehension of men.

There was one named, Mufciatto Francesi, who from being a most rich and great Merchant in France, was become a Knight, and preparing to go into Tufcany, with Mounteur Charles mithout Land, Brother to the King of France (who was defired and incited to come thither by Pope Boniface) found his affaires greatly intricated heere and there (as oftentimes the matters of Merchants fall out to be) and that very hardly hee should sodainely unintangle them, without referring the charge to divers persons. And for all he tooke indifferent good order, onely he remained doubtfull, whom he might sufficiently leave, to recover his debs among many Burgundiam. And the rather was his care the more heerein, because he knew the Burgundians to be people of bad nature, rioters, brablers, full of calumny, and without any faithfulnesse: fo that he could not bethinke himselfe of any man (how wicked foever he was) in whom he might repose trust to meete with their lewdnesse. Having a long while examined his thoughts upon this point, at lait he remembred one Maiter Chappelet du Prat, who oftentimes had reforted to his house in Paris. And because he was a man of little stature, yet handsome enough, the French not knowing what thisword Chappelet, might meane, esteeming he should

be called rather (in their tongue) Chappell; imagiped, that in regard of his small stature, they rermed him Chappelet, and not Chappell, and so by the name of Chappelet he was every where knowne, and by few

or none acknowledged for Chappell.

This Mafter Chappelet, was of lo good and commendable life; that, being a Notary, he held it in high difdaine, that any of his Contractes (although hee made but few) thould be found without fallhoode. And looke how many foever hee dealt withall, hee would be urged and required thereto, offering them his paines and travaile for nothing, but to be requited otherwise than by money; which prooved to be his much larger recompencing, and returned to him the Hee tooke the onely pleasure farre greater benefit. of the world, to beare falle witnesse, if he were thereto entreated, and (oftentimes) when he was not requested at all. Likewise because in those times, great trust and beleefe was given to an oath, he maketh no care or conscience to be perjured : greatly advantaged himselfe by Law suites, in regard that many matters relyed upon his oath, and delivering the truth according to his knowledge.

He delighted (beyond measure) and addicted his best studies, to cause enmittee and scandals betwixt kindred and friends, or any other persons, agreeing well together: and the more mischeese he could procure in this kinde, so much the more pleasure and delight tooke he therein. If he were called to kill any one, or to doe any other villanous deede, he never would make deniall, but goe to it very willingly; and divers times it was well knowne, that many were cruelly beaten, yea staine by his hands. He was a most horrible blasphemer of God and his Saines, upon the very least occasion, as being more addicted to choller than any other man could be. Never would he fre-

quent

11

ar

ar

m

to

W

30

quent the Church, but basely contemned it, with the Sacraments and religious rites therein administred, accounting them for vile and unprofitable things: but very voluntaryly would visite T avernes, and ether places of dishonest accesse, which were continually pleasing unto him, to satisfie his lust and inordinate lubricity. He would steale both in publike and private, even with such a conscience, as if it were given to him by nature so to doe. He was a great glutton and a drunkarde, even till he was not able to take any more: being also a continual gamester, and carrier of salse Dice, to cheate with them the very best Friends he had.

But why doe I waste time in such extent of words. When it may suffice to say, that never was there a worse man borne; whose wickednesse was for long time supported, by the favour, power, and Authority of Monsieur Austriatio, for whose sake many wrongs and injuries were patiently endured, as well-by private persons (whom he would abuse notoriously) as others of the Court, betweene whom he made no difference at in alhis vile dealing. This Master Chappelet, being thus remembered by Musciatto (who very well knew his life and behaviour) he persectly perswaded himselfe, that this was a man apt in all respects, to meeta with the treachery of the Burgundians: wherupon, having sent for him, thus he began.

e

.

it

d

rs

r-

is

xt

19

Ó.

ny

er

nd

u-

he

ler

ent Chappelet, thou knowest how I am wholly to retreate my selfe from hence, and having some affaires among the Burgundians, men full of wickednesse and deceite is I can bethinke my selfe of no meeter a man than Chappelet, to recover such debts as are due to me among them. And because it falleth out so well, that thou are not now hindered by any other businesse; if thou wilt undergoe this office for me, I will produce thee savorable Letters from the Court,

Gı

Novellar. The First Day,

and give thee a reasonable portion in all thou recoverest. Master Chappelet, seeing himselfe idle, and greedy after worldly goods, considering that Mounfeur Musciatto (who had been alwaies his best buckler) was now to depart from thence, without any dreaming on the matter, and constrained thereto (as it were) by necessity, set downe his resolution, and

answered, that he would gladly doe it.

Having made their agreement together, and received from Musciatto his expresse procuration, and alfo the Kings gracious Letters; after that Mufciatto was gone on his journey, Mafter Chappelet went to Dijon, where he was unknowne (well-neere) of any. And there (quite from his natural dispositionhe)began being nely and graciously, in recovering the debts due; which course he tooke the rather, because they should have a further feeling of him in the end. Being lodged in the house of two Florentine brethren, that lived on their monies ulance;& (for Mounfier Mufciattoes fake) using him with honour and respect : it fortuned that he fell ficke, and the two brethren fent for Physitions to attend him, allowing their fervants to be diligent about him, making no spare of any thing, which gave the best likelihood of restoring his health. But all their paines prooved to no purpose, because he being now grown aged, and having lived al his life time very disorderly, felday by day, (according to the Physitions judgement) from bad to worle, as no other way appeas 1ed but death, whereat the brethren greatly greived.

Vpon a day, neere to the Chamber, where the ficke man lay, they entred into this communication: What shall we doe (quoth the one to the other) with this man? We are much hindered by him; for to send him away (sicke as he is) we shall be greatly blamed thereby, and it will be a manifest note of our weake wisedome; the people knowing that first of all wee

gave

he

W

rec

fici

Ipe

gave him entertainement, and have allowed him phyficall attendance, and he not having any way injuried or offended us, to lee him be fuddenly expulsed our house (ficke to death as he is) it can be no way for our credit.

On the other fide, we are to confider also, that he hath beene so bad a man, ashe will not now make any contestion thereof, neither receive the bleffed Sacrament of the Church; and dying fo without confeffion , there is no Church that will accept his body , but it must be buried in prophane ground, like to a Dogge, And yet if he would confesse himselfe, his finnes are fo many and monitrous, as the like cafe allo may happen, because there is not any Priest or Religious person, that can or will absolve him. And being not absolved, he must be cast into some ditch or pit: and then the people of the Towne, as welling regard of the account we carry heere, (which to them appeareth to little pleafing, as we are dayly purfued with their worst words) as also covering our spoyle and overthrow, upon this will cry out and mutiny againft us ; Behold thefe Lombard dogs, minich are not to be received into the Church, why should me suffer them to live heere among us? In furious madnefle will they come upon us, and our house, where (peradventure) not contented with robbing us of our goods, our lives will remaine in their mercy and danger ; fo that, in what fore foever it happen, this man dying here, must needes be banefull to us.

Mafter Chappelet, who (as we have formerly faid) was lodged neere to the place where they thus conferred, having a fubtle attention (as oftentimes we feeticke persons to be possessed withall) heard all these speeches spoken of him, and causing them to be called

unto him, thus he spake.

0

7.

n

d

d

n ()

10

to

nt

ch ut

ng

ry

ns

2= d.

he

n:

ith

nd

ke

vee

ave

I would not have you to be any way doubtfull of me;

neither that you should receive the least damage by me: I have heard what you have saide, and am certaine, that it will happen according to your words, if mattes, should sall out as you conceite; but I am minded to deale otherwise. I have committed so many offences against our Lord God, in the whole current of my life; that now I intend one action at the houre of my death, which Ttrust will make amends for all-Protuc therefore I pray you, that the most holy and religious man that is to be found (if there be any one at all) may come unto me, and referre the case then to me, for I will deale in such for: for you and my selfe, that all shall be well, and you no way discontented.

The two Brethren, although they had no great hope in his speeches, went to a Monastery of Gray-Friars, and requested; that some one holy and learned man, might come to heare the confession of a Lombard, that lay very weake and ficke in their house. And one was granted unto them, being an aged religious Frier, a great read mafter in the facred Scripture, a very venerable person, who being of good and Sanctified life, all the Cittizens held him in great respect and esteeme, and on he went with them to their house. When he was come up into the Chamber where Mafter Chappelet lay, and being diere feated downe by him; he began first to comfort him very lovingly, demanding alto of him, how many times he had beene at confession? Whereto Master Chappelet (who never had beene shrived in all his life time) thus replied.

Holy Father, I alwaies used (as a common custome) to be confessed once (at the least) every weeke, albeit sometimes much more often; but true it is, that being falue into this sicknesse, now eight dates since I have not beene coasest, so violent hath beene the

extremity

m

extremitie of my weakenesse. My sonne (answered in good old man) thou hast done well, and so keepe thee hereaster in that minde: but I plainely perceive, seeing thou hast so often confessed thy selfe, that I shall take the lesse Labour in urging questions to thee.

Master Chappeter replied; Say not so good Father, for albeit I have been so oftentimes contested, yet am I willing now to make a generall confession, even to all sinnes comming to my rememberance, from the very day of my birth, untill this instant houre of my shrift. And therefore I intreate you (holy Father) to make a particular demand of every thing, even as if I had never been confessed at all, and to make no respect of my sicknesse, for I had rather be offensive to mine owne sless, than by savoring or allowing it case, to hazard the perdition of my soule, which my Redeemer bought with so precious a price.

These words were highly pleasing to the holy Frier, and seemed to him as an argument of a good conscience: Wherefore, after he had much commended this forwardnesse in him, he began to demand of him if hee had never offended with any Woman where were the had never offended with any Woman where we had not been also we had not been also we had not been also with a second with

figh) answered:

Holy Father, I am halfe ashamed to rell you the truth in this case, as feating least I should sinne in vaine-glory. Whereto the Consesser replied; Speake boldly sonne, and seare not, for in relling the truth, be it in consession or otherwise, a man can never sin. Then said Master Chaptelet, Pather, seeing you give me so good an assurance. I will resolve you statisfiely herein, I am so true a Virgin-man in this matter, even as when I issued feeth of my Mothers wombe. O sonne (quoth the Frier) how happie and blessed of God art thou? Well hast thou lived, and therein hast thou not meanely smerited, having stad to much the bettie

Novell. 1. The First Day,

bertie to do the contrary if thou wouldest , wherein ve-

rie few of us can fo answer for our felves.

Afterward, he demanded of him how much difpleasing to God he had been in the some of Gluttony? When (fighing againe greatly) hee answered: Too much, and too often, good Father. For, over and befides the Fasts of our Lent season, which every yeare ought to be duely observed by devout people, I brought my selfe to such a customary use, that I could fast three dayes in every weeke, with Bread and Water. But indeede (holy Father) I confesse, that I have drunke water with fuch a pleafing appetite and delight (especially in praying, or walking on pilgrimage)even as greedy drunkards do, in drinking good Wine. And many times I have defired fuch Sallades of small hearbes, as Women doe gather abroad in the open fields, and feeding onely upon them, without covering after any other kinde of fuftenance, hath feemed much more pleasing to me, than I thought to agree with the nature of Fasting, especially, when as it fwerveth from devotion, or is not done as it ought

Sonne, Sonne, replied the Confessour, these sinnes are naturall, and very light, and therefore I would not have thee to charge thy conscience with them, more than is needefull. It happeneth to every man (how hoir foever he be) that after he hath falled overlong, feeding will be welcome to him, and drinking good drinke after his travell. O Sir, (faid Mafter chappeter) never tell me this to comfort me ifor well you know, and I am not ignorant therin, that fuch things as are done for the Service of God, ought all to be performed purely, and without any blemish of the minde; what otherwise is done, savoureth of finne. The Frier being well contented with these words, said: It is not amile that thou under-Mandeft

20

fo the

my

ica

fuc

thr

Co

grie

yee

:of

dem

standest it in this maner, & thy conscience thus purely cleared, is no little comfort unto mee. But tell mee now concerning Avarice, haft thou finged therein, by defiring more than was reasonable, or withholding from others, fuch things as thou oughtest nor to detaine? Wherein Master Chappelet answered. Good Father, I would not have you to imagine, because you fee me lodged here in the house of two Vinrers ; that therefore I am of any fuch disposition. No truely Sir, I came hither to no other end, but onely to chaftife and admonth them in friendly manner, to clenfe their mindes from fuch abhominable profit, And affuredly, I should have prevailed therein, had not this violent ficknesse hindred mine intention. But under-Rand (holy Father) that my Parents left mee a rich man, and immediatly after my Fathers death, the greater part of his goods I gave away for Gods fake, and then, to sustaine mine owne life, and to helpe the poore members of Ielus Christ, I betooke my selfe to a meane estate of Merchandise, defiring noneother than honest gaine thereby, and evermore whatfoever benefit came to me, I imparted halfe shereof to the poore, converting mine owne small portion about my necessary affaires, which that other part would icarfely ferve to supply: yet alwayes God gave thereto such a mercifull bleffing, that my butineffe daily thrived more and more, arising still from good to better.

Well hast thou done therein, good Sonne, said the Confessour: but how oftentimes hast thou beene angrie? Oh Sir (said Master Chappelet) therein i assure yee, I have often transgressed. And what man is able to forbeare it; beholding the daily actions of men to be so dishoness? No care of keeping Gods Commandements, nor any seare of his dreadfull judgements. Many times in a day, I have rather wished my selfe

dead than living, beholding youth pursuing idle vanities, to fweare and forfiveare themselves, tipling in Tavernes, and never haunting Churches, but rather affeeing the worlds follies than any fuch duties as they owe to God. Alas Sonne (quoth the Frier) this is a good and holy anger, and I can impose no penance on thee for it. But tell me, hath not rage or furie at any time fo over-ruled thee, is to commit murther or mailflaughter, or to focake evill of any man, or to doe any fuch kinde of injurie ? Oh Father (antivered Matter chappelet) you that feeme to be a man of God, how dare you ute any such vile words? If I had had the very leaft thought, to doe any fuch act as you treake. doe you thinke that God would have fuffered mee to live? These are deeds of darkenesse, fit for villain is and wicked livers, of which hellith crew, when at any time I have happened to meete with fome one of them, I have faid; Goe, God convert thee.

Worthy, and charitable words replied the Frier but tell me Sonne, Didtt thou ever, beare falle witnelle against any man, or half spoken falsely, or taken ought from any one, contrary to the will of the owner? Yes indeede Father, faid Mafter Chappelet, I have spoken ill of another, because I have sometime seene one of my neighbhurs, who with no meane thame of the world, would doe nothing elfe but beate his wife; and of him once I complained to the poore mans Parents, faying, he never did it but when he was overcome of drink. Those were no ill words, quoth the Prier; but I remember you faid, that you were a Merchant Did you everidective any, as some Merchants use to doe? Truly Father, answered Mafter Chappe'et, I think not any except one man, who one day brought me money which he owed me for a certain perce of cloath I fould him, and I puriginto a purfe without accounting it. About a moneth afterward, I found

shat

C

35

te

15

ble

Co

Ye

fpe

Soi

1110

plac

fact

1 cul

ung

can

as or

pran

haid:

In

that there were foure small pence more than was due to me; and never happening to meete with the man againe, after I had kept them the space of a whole yeare, I then gave them away unto soure poore peo-

ple, for Gods take;

A fmall matter, faid the Frier, and truly paide backe againe to the owner, in bestowing them on the poore. Many other questions he demanded of him, whereto flill he answered ia the same manner. But before hee proceeded to absolution, Master Chappelet spake thus: I have yet one finne more, which I have not revealed to you : when being urged by the Frier , to confesse it, he faids I remember, that I should afford one day in the weeke, to cleanse the house of my soule, for better entertainement to my Lord and Saviour, and yet I have don no fuch reverence to the Sunday or Sabbath. as I ought to have done. A (mall fault Sonne, replied the Frier. On no (quoth Mafter Chappelet) doe not terme it a small fault, because Sunday being a holy day, is highly to bee reverenced: for as on that day, our bleffed Lord grole from death to life. But (quoth the Confessour) hast thou done nothing else on that day? Yes, faidhe, being forgetfull of my felie, once I did fpet in Gods Church. The Frier Imiling, faid : Alas Sonne, that is a matter of no moment; for we that are Religious persons, doe use to sper there every day. The more is your shame, answered Master Chappelet, for no place ought to be kept more pure and cleane than the facred Temple, wherein our daily facrifices are offered up to God.

In this manner he held on an houre and more, utteting the like transgressions as these; and at last he began to sigh very passionately, and to steed a few teares; as one that was skilfull enough in such dissembling prankes; whereat the Confession being much moved, aid: Alas Sonne, what ailest thou? On Fathersquois

Chappelet)

Chappelet) there remaineth yet one finne more upon my conscience, whereof I never at any time made confession, so shamefull it appeareth to me to disclose it; and I am partly perswaded, that God will never pardon me for that finne. How now Sonne? faid the Frier, never fay to ; for if all the finnes that ever were committed by men, or shall be committed so long as the world endureth, were onely in one man, and hee repenting them, and being fo contrite for them, as I fee thou art; the grace and mercy of God is fo great, that upon penitent confession, he will freely pardon him, and therefore spare not to speake it boldly . Alas Father (faid Chappelet, still in pretended weeping) this finne of mine is logreat, that I can hardly beleeve (if your earnest prayers doe not affist me) that ever I shall obtaine remission for it. Speake it Sonne, faid the Friar, and feare not, I promise that I will pray to God for thec.

n

an

M

50

die

fed

W

200

mo

for

I pu

as a

dic:

Mafter Chappelet ftill wept and fighed, and continued filent, notwithflanding all the Confessors comforcable perswasions; but after hee had held him a long while in suspence, breathing forth a sighe, even as if his very heart would have broken, hee faid; Holy Father, feeing ou promife to pray to God for ince, I will reveale it to you: Know then, that when I was a little boy, I did once curse my haother; which hee had no fooner spoken, but hee wrung his hands, and grieved extraordinarily. Oh good Soane, faid the Frier: doth that feeme fo great finne to thee? Why, men doe daily blaspheme our Lord God, and yet ne. verthelesse, upon their heartie repensance, hee is alwayes ready to forgive them; and wilt not then beleeve to obtaine remission for a sinne so ignorantly committed? Weepe no more deare Sonne, but comfort thy felfe and rest resolved, that if thou were one of them, who nailed our bleffeg Saviour to his Croffe; Crosse; yet being so truly repentant, as I see thou ait, hee would freely forgive thee. Say you so Father? quoth Chappelet. What my owne deare Mother? that did beare mee in her wombe nine moneths, day and night, and afterwards fed mee with her breasts a thousand times, can I bee pardoned for cursing her? Oh no, it is too hainous a sinne, and except you pray to God very instantly for mee, he will not forgive me; for I seare it comes neere to

be a sinne unpardonable.

When the Religious man perceived, that nothing more was to be confessed by Master Chappelet; hee gave him absolution, and his owne benediction befide, reputing him to be a most holy man, as verily beleeving all that hee had faid. And who would not have done the like, hearing a man to speake in this manner, and being npon the verie point of death? Aforward, hee faid unto him, Mafter Chappelet, by Gods Grace you may be foone restored to health, but if it fo come to paffe, that God do take your bleffed and well disposed soule to his mercy, will it please you to have your body buried in our Convent? Whereto Master Chappelet answered; I thanke you Father for your good motion, and forry should I be, if my friends did burie me any where elfe, because you have promifed to pray to God for me; and befide, I have alwayes carried a religious devotion to your Order. Wherefore, I befeech you, so soone as you are come home to your Convent, prevaile so much by your good meanes, that the holy Eucharift, confecrated this morning on your high Altar, may be brought untome: for although I confesse my selfe utterly unworthy, yet I purpole (by your reverend permission) to receive it, as also your holy and latest unction, to this end, that having lived a grievous a finner, I may yet (at the laft) die a Christian, These words pleased the good old man,

Novell.1. The First Day.

and he caused every thing to be performed, according

as Mafter Chappeles had requested.

The two brethren, who much doubted the diffembling of Chappelet, being both in a finall partition, which fundered the ficke mans Chamber from theirs, heard and understood the passage of all, betweene him and the ghoftly Father, being many times scarsely able to refraine from laughter, at the fraudulen: courle of his contession. And often they faid within themselves, what manner of man is this, whom nettherage, ficknesse, nor terrour of death so neare approaching, and fensible to his owne soule, nor that which is much more, God, before whole judgement he knowes not how foon heshal appeare, or be fent to a more fearefull place; none of these can alter his wicked disposition, but that he will needs die according as he hath lived ? Notwithstanding seeing hee had fo ordered the matter, that he had buriall freely allowed him, they cared for no more-

After that Chappelet had received the Communion, and the other Cerimonies appointed for him; weakenesse encreasing upon him more and more, the very fame day of his goodly confession, he died (not long after) towards the evening. Whereupon the two brethren tooke order, that all needefull things should be in a readineffe, to have him buried honourably; fending to acquaint the Fathers of the Convent therewith, that they might come to fay their Vigilles, according to precedent cultome, and then on the morrow to fetch the body. The honest Frier that had confeffed him, hearing he was dead, went to the Prior of the Convent, and by found of the house Bell, caufed all the brethren to affemble together, giving them credibly to understand, that Master Chappelet was a very honest man, as appearedd by all the parts of his confession, and made no doubt, but that many

miracles

V

ma

me

ple

the

and

his

were

miracles would be wrought by his fanctified body, perswading them to fetch it thirter with all devout solemnitie and reverence : whereto the Prior, and all the credulous Brethren presently condescended very gladly.

When night was come, they went to vifite the dead body of Mafter Chappelet, where they used an cfpeciall and and folemne Vigill; and on the morrow, apparelled in their richest Coapes and Vestments, with Bookes in their hands, and the Croffe borne before them, finging in the forme of a very devoute proceffion, they brought the body pompeoufly into their Church, accompanied with all the people of the Towne, both men and women. The Father Confesfor, ascending up into the Pulpit, preached wonderfull things of him, and the rare holineffe of his life, his fafts, his virginitie, simplicitie, innocency, recounting also (among other especial observations) what Chappelet had confessed, as this most great and grievous finne, and how hardly hee could be perswaded, that God would grant him pardon for it. Whereby he tooke occasion to reprove the people then prefent, laying ; And you (accurfed of God) torthe leaft and triffing matter hapning, will not spare to blaspheme God, his bleffed Mother, and the whole Court of heavenly Paradife: Oh, take example by this fingular man, this Saint-like man, nay a very Saint indeede.

Many additions more hee made, concerning his faithfulneffe, truth and integritie; fo that by the vehement affeveration of his words, (whereto all the people there present gave credible beliefe) he provoked them unto fuch zeale and earnest devotion; that the Sermon was no fooner ended, but (in mightie crowds and thronge) they preffed about the Biere, kiffing his hands and feete, and all the garments about him

Novell. 1. The First Day,

were torne in peeces, as precious Reliques of so holy a person, and happy they thought themselves, that could get the smallest piece or shred of any thing that came neere to his body: and thus they continued all the day, the body lying still open to be visited in this manner.

When night was come, they buried him in a goodly Marbell tombe, erected in a faire. Chappell purpofedly; and for many dayes after following, it was most strange to see, how the people of the Countrey came thither on heapes, with holy Candles and other offerings, with Images of wax fastened to the Tombe, in figne of Sacred and folemne Vowes, to this new Created Saint. And fo farre was foread the fame and renowne of his fanctitie, devotion, and integritie of life, maintained constantly by the Fathers of the Convent ; that if any one fell ficke, in neede, diftrelle, or advertitie, they would make their Vowes to no other Saint but him: naming him (as yet to this day they doe) S. Chappelet, affirming upon their Oather, that infinite miracles were there daily performed by him, and especially on such, as came in devotion to visite his shrine.

In this manner lived and died Master Chappelet da Prat, who before he became a Saint, was as you have heard; and I will not deny it to be impossible, but that he may be at rest among other blessed bodies. For although he lived lewdly and wickedly, yet fuch might be his contrition in the latest extremitie, that (questionlesse) he might find mercy. But because such things remaine unknowne to us, and speaking by outward appearance, vulgar judgement will centure otherwife of him, and thinke him to be rather in perdition, than in so bletled a place as Paradise. But referring that to the Omnipotents appointment, whose elemencie hath alwayes beene fo great to us, that hee regards not our.

cirors.

m

tij

ob

30

pre

lit

lib

cn

We

of

ly:

the

Ra

errors, but the integritie of our faith, making (by means of our continual Mediator) of an open enemy, a converted some and servant. And as I began in his name, so wil I conclude, desiring that it may ever more be had in due reverence, and refer we our selves thereto in all our necessities, with this setled assurance, that he is alwayes ready to heare us. And so she ceased.

Abraham a tem, being admonified or advised by a friend of his, named Ichannot de Chevigny, travelled from Paris unto Rome: And beholding there the wicked behaviour of men in the Church, returned back to Paris agains, where yet (neverthelesse) he became a Christian.

The second Novell.

Wherein is contained and expressed, the liberalitie and goodnesse of God, extended to the Christian faith.

THE Novell recited by Pamphilus was highly pleafing to the company, and much commended by the Ladies: and after it had beene diligently observed among them, the Queene commanded Madam Neiphila (who was seated neerest to Pamphilus) that, in relating another of hers, she shold follow on in the passime thus begun. She being no lesse gracious in concenance, than merrily disposed 5 made answer that shee would

obey her charge. and began in this manner.

Pamphilus hath declared to us, by his Tale, how the goodnesse of God regardeth not our errors, when they proceede from things which we cannot descene. And lintend to approave by mine, what argument of infallible truth, the same benignity delivereth of it selfe, by enduring patiently the faults of them, that (both in word and worke) should declare vnfaigned testimony of such gracious goodnesse, and not to live so dissolutely as they doe. To the end, that others illuminated by their light of life, may believe with the stronger con-stancy of minde.

As I have heeretofore heard (Gracious Ladies) there

a wealthy Merchant in Paris, being a Mercer, or feller of Silkes, named Ichannot de Chevigny, a man of faithfull, bonest and upright dealing; who held great affection and friendship with a very rich Iew, named Abreham, that was a Merchant alio, and a man of very direct conversation. Ichannot well noting the honestic and loyall dealing of this lew, began to have a religious kinde of compassion in his soule, much putying that a man fo good in behaviour, fo wife and discreete in all his actions, should be in danger of perdition thorow want of faith. In which regard, lovingly hee began to intreate him, that he would leave the errors of his Icwish beliefe, and follow the truth of Christianitie, which he evidently faw (as being good and holy) daily to prosper and enlarge it felfe, whereas on the contrary, his profession decreased, and grew to nothing.

pa

pn

the

oft

turr

Ala:

fuch

loni

that

Sea

are l

Bapt

peare

ftand

faith

confe

nedin

The lew made answer, that he beleeved nothing to to be so good and holy, as the Iewish Religion, and having beene borne therein, therein also he purposed to live and die, no matter whatfoever being able to remove him from that resolution. For all this stiffe deniall, tenazaet would not give him over ; but purfued him fill day by day, reitterating continually his former speeches to him : delivering infinite excellent and pregnant reasons, that Merchants themselves were not ignorant, how farre the Christian faith excelled the Iewish falshoods. And albeit the lew was a very learned man in his owne Law, yet notwithstanding the intire amitie he bare to lebannot, or (perhaps) his words fornfied by the bleffed Spirit were To prevailant with him ,that the lew felt a pleafing approbenfion in them, though as yet his obstinacie stood farre off from conversion. But as he thus continued strong in opinion, so le hamot left not hourely to labour him; infomuch, that the Iew being conquered by fuch earnest and

and continual importunitie, one day spake to lehan-

not, faying.

3

d

t

10

r-

10

is

in

111

m

IN-

No-

and

My worthy friend Iehannot, thou art extremely defirous that I should convert to Christianitie, and I am well contented to doe it; onely upon this condition: That first I will journey to Rome, to see him whom thou sayest, is Gods generall Vicar here on earth, and to consider on the course of his life and manners, and likewise of his Colledge of Cardinals. If hee and they doe appeare such men to mee, as thy speeches affine them to be, and thereby I may comprehend that thy Faith and Religion is better thanming, as with no meane paines thou endevourest to perswade me, I will become a Christian as thou art: but if I finde it other-

wife, I will continue as I am, a Icw.

Tehannothearing thefe words, became exceeding for. rowfull, and faid within himfelfe; I have loft all the paines which I didthinke to be well employed, as hoping to have this man converted here. For, if he go to the Court of Rome, and behold there the wickednesse of the Priefts lives, farewell all hope in mee, of ever feeing him to become a Christian. But rather, were he already a Christian, without all question he would turne a lew. And fo going nearer to Abraham, he faid, Alas, my loving friend, why flouldest thou undertake fuch a redious travell, and fo great a charge, as thy journey from hence to Rome will coft thee ? Confider, that to a rich man (asthou art) travell by Land or Sea is full of dangers. Doeft thou not thinke, that here are Religious men enow, who will gladly bestow Baptifine upon thee? To mee therefore it plainely appeareth, that such a voyage is to no purpose. If thou flandest upon any doubt or scruple, conceerning the faith whereto I wish thee; where canst thou defire conference with greater Doctours, or men more learned in all respects, than this famous Citie dorh afford thee,

thee, to resolve thee in any questionable case! Thou must thinke that the Prelates are such there, as heere thou feeft them to be; and yet they muft needes be in much better condition at Rome, because they are neere to the principall Paftor. And therefore, if thou wilt credit my counfell, referve this journey to some time more convenient, when the Iubilee of generall Pardon happeneth, and then (perchance) I will beare thee company, and goe along with thee as in vowed Pilgrimage.

Whereto the Iew replied: I believe Ichannot that all which thou haft faid may be fo. But, to make thort with thee, I am fully determined (if thou wouldeft have me a Christian, as thou instantly urgest me to be) to goe thither, for otherwise, I will continue as I am. Ichannot perceiving his fetled puopole, faid: Goe then in Gods name. But perswaded himselfe, that he would never become a Christian, after hee had feene the Court of Rome: nevertheleffe, he counted his labour not altogether loft, in regard hee bestowed it to a good end, and honest intentions are to be commended.

The lew mounted on horfe-backe, and made no lingering in his journey to Rome: where being arrived, hee was very honourably entertained by other Iewes dwelling in Rome. And during the time of his abiding there (without revealing to any one the reason of his comming thither) very heedfully he observed the manner of the Popes life, of the Cardinals, Prelats, and all the Courtiers. And being a man very difcreet and judicious, hee apparantly perceived, both by his owne eye, and further information of friends; that from the highest to the lowest (without any restrain; remorle of confcience, thame, or feare of punishment) all finned in abhominable luxurie, and not naturally onely, but in foule Sodomy, fothat the credite of Strumpets and Boyes was not small, and yet might be

na

tio

WO

nar

for

beir

feen

very

ofhi

him.

vveni

anot

mano

the P

other

ftrang

he dor

able to

heard

nevert

tion, go

T

man

too easily obtained. Moscover, drunkards, belly-gods. and fervants of the paunch, more than of any thing elfe (even like brutifh beafts after their luxury) were every where to be met withall. And upon further obfervation, he faw all men fo covetous and greedy of Coine, that every thing was bought and fold for readie money, not onely the bloud of men, but (in plaine termes) the faith of Christians, yea, and matters of divinest qualities, how, or to whomsoever appertaining, were it for Sacrifices, or Benefices, whereof was made no meane merchandize, and more Brokers were there to be found (than in Paris attending upon all Trades) of manifest Symonie, under the nice name of Negotiation, and for gluttony, not fuffentation: even as if God had not knowne the fignification of vocables, nor the intentions of wicked hearts, but would fuffer himselfe to be deceived by the outward

names of things, as wretched men use to doe.

c

is

110

Lo

e-

lif.

by

120

n',

nt)

ally

e ot

at be

101

These things, and many more (fitter for filence, than for publication) were fo deepely displeating to the Iew, being a most sober and modest manithat he had soone feene enough, refolving on his returne to Paris, which very speedily he performed. And when Ichannet heard of his arrivall, crediting much rather other newes from him, than ever to fee him a converted Christian, hee went to welcome him, and kindely they feafted one another. After some few dayes of refting, Jehanner demanded of him; what he thought of our holy Father the Pope, and his Cardinals, and generally of all the other Courtiers? Whereto the Iew answered; It is strange lehannot that God should give them so much as he doth. For I will truly tell thee, that if I had beene able to confider those things, which there I have both heard and feene : I could then have refolved my felfe, never to have found in any Priest, either fanctity, devotion, good worke, or example of honest life. But if a

man defire to fee luxury, avarice, gluttony, and fucliwicked things, yea, worfe, if worfe may be, and held in generall estimation of all men; let him but goe to Rome, which I thinke rather to be the forge of damnable actions, than any way leaning to grace or goodnesse. And, for ought I could perceive, mee thinkes your chiefe Pasiour, and (consequently) all the rest of his dependants, doe strive to much as they may with all their engine are and endevour) to bring to nothing, or to banish quite out of the world. Christian Religion, whereof they should be the support and foundation.

But because I perceive, that their wicked intent will never come to passe, but contrariwise, that your faith enlargeth it selfe, shining every day much more cleare and splendant: I gather thereby evidently, that the blessed Spirit is the true ground and defence thereof, as being more true and holy than any other. In which respect, whereas I stood shifte and obtained against the good admonitions, and never minded to become a Christian; now I freely open my heart auto thee, that nothing in the world can or shall hinder mee, but I will be a Christian as thou art. Let us therefore presently goe to the Church, and there (according to the true custome of your hoy faith) helpe me to be baptized.

tehannot, who expected a farre contrary conclusion than this, hearing him speaking with such constancie; was the very gladdest man in the world, and went with him to the Church of Nostre Dame in Paris, where he requested the Pricise there abiding, to bestiow Baptisme on Abraham, which they joyfully did, hearing him earnestly to desire it. Ichannot was his Godfather, and named him tolm, and asterward, by learned Divines he was more fully instructed in the grounds of our faith, wherein he grew of great understanding, and led a very vertuous life.

Melchisedech.

31

ge

11/

fre

tie

no

ici

on

elchisedech a sem, by recounting a Ta'e of three Ring, to the great Soldan, named Saladine, prevented a great danger which was prepared for him.

The third Novell.

Whereby the Author, approving the Christian Faith, she wet how beneficiall a sodaine and ingenious answere may fall out to be, especially when a man finds numselfe in some evident danger.

M Adam Neiphila having ended her Discourse which was well allowed of by all the company; it pleafed the Queene, that Madam Philomena should next

fucceede in order, who thus began.

ī

c

111

23

nt

15,

oe-

id,

his

by

che

ler-

ch,

The Tale delivered by Neiphila, maketh mee remember a doubtfull case, which sometime hapned to another Icw. And because that God, and the truth of his holy Faith, hath been already very well discoursed on: it shall not feeme unfitting (in my poore opinion) to descend now into the accidents of men. Wherefore, I will relate a matter unto you, which being attentively heard and confidered, may make you much more circumiped, in answering to divers questions and demands, than (perhaps) otherwise you would be, Confider then (most worthy assembly) that like as folly and dulneile, many times hath overthrowne fome men from place of eminencie, into most great and grievous miseries: even so, discreet sense and good understanding, hath delivered many out of ukelome perils, and feated them in fafest fecuritie. And to prove it true, that folly hath made many fall from high authoritie, into poore and despised calamitie, may be avouched by infinite examples, which now were needeleffe to remember : But, that good sense and able understanding, may proove to be the occasion of great desolation, without happy prevention, I wildeclare unto you in very few words, and make itgood according to my promife

) 2

The First Day, Novell.3.

Saladine, was a man fo powerfull and valiant, as not onely his valour made him Soldan of Babylon, and alfo gave him many fignall victories, over Kings of the Sarazens, and of Christians likewise. Having in divers Warres, and Other magnificent employments of his owne, wasted all his treasure, (and by reason of forme fodaine accident happening to him) flanding in neede to use some great summe of money, yet not readily knowing where, or how to procure it; he remembered a rich Iew named Melchifedech, that lent out mony to use or interest in the Citic of Alexandria. This man he imagined best able to furnish him, if hee could be won to doe it willingly; but he was knowne to be fo gripple and miferable, that hardly any meanes would draw him to it. In the end, conftrained by necessitie, and labouring his wits for some apt device whereby he might have it : hee concluded, though hee might not compelle him to doe it, yet by a practife thadowed with good reason to ensure him. And having fent for him, entertained him very familiarly in his Court, and fitting downe by him, thus began.

Honest man, I have often heard it reported by manie, that thou art very skilfull, and in cases concerning God, thou goest beyond all other of these times: wherefore, I would gladly be informed by thee, which of these three Lawes or Religions, thou takest to be trueft; that of the Levy, the other of the Sarazen, of that of the Christian? The lew, being a very wife man, plainely perceived, that Saladine fought to entrap him in his answer, and so to raise some quarrell against him. For, if hee commended any one of these Lawes above the other, he knew that Saladine had what he simed at. Wherefore, bethinking himfelfe to thape fuch an answer, as might no way trouble or enrangle him: fumoning all his fences together, and confidering, that dallying with the Soldane might re-

Ver

fe &

tial

tot

abo

mea

very

he fl

man

them

promife

dound to his no meane danger, thus he replied.

My Lord, the question propounded by you, is faire and worthy, and to answer my opinion truly thereof, doth necessarily require some time of consideration, it it might fland with your liking to allow it : but if not, let me first make entrance to my reply, with a prettie tale, and well worth the hearing. I have oftentimes heard it reported, that (long fince) there was a very wealthy man, who (among other precious Iewels of his owne) had a goodly Ring of great valere: the beautie and estimation whereof, made him earnestly defirous to leave it as a perpetuall memory and honour to his successours. Whereupon, he willed and ordained, that hee among his male children, with whom this Ring (being left by the Father) should be found in custodie after his death; he, and none other, was to be reputed his heire, and to be honoured and remerenced by all the reft, as being the prime and worthieft person. That Sonne, to whom this Ring was left by him, kept the same course to his posteritie, dealing (in all respects) as his predecessors had done; so that (in short time) the Ring (from hand to hand) had many owners by Legacie.

At length, came to the hand of one, who had three fonnes, all of them goodly and vertuous persons, and very obedient to their Father: in which regard, he affeed them allequally, without any difference or partiall respect. The custome of this Ring being knowne to them, each one of them (covering to beare essemble above the other) desired (as he could best make his meanes) his Father, that in regard he was now growne very old, he would leave that Ring to him, whereby he should be acknowledged for his heire. The good man, who loved no one of them more than the other, knew not how to make; his choise, nor to which of them he should leave the Ring; yet having past his

ıg

\$:

ch

be

to

ife

en-

12.

efe

had

eto

en-

con-

TC-

Juni

promife to them feverally, he studied by what meanes to fatisfie them all three, Wherefore, fecretly having conferred with a curious and excellent Goldsmith, he caused two other Rings to be made, so really refembling the first made Ring, that himselfe (when he had them in his hand) could not diffinguish which was

the right one.

Lying upon his death-bed, and his Sonnes then plying him by their best opportunities, he gave to each of them a Ring. And they (after his death) prefuming reverally upon their right to the inheritance and honour, grew to great contradiction and square: each man producing then his Ring, which were fo truely all alike in refemblance, as no one could know the right King from the other. And therefore, fuite in Law, to diffinguish the true beire to his Father, continued long time, and fo it doth yet to this very day.In like manner my good Lord, concerning those three Lawes given by God the Father, to three fuch people as you have propounded: each of them doe imagine that they have the heritage of God, and his true Law, and also ducly to performe his Commandements; but which of them doe fo indeede, the question as of the three Rines) is yet remaining.

Saladine well perceiving, that the lew was too cunning to be caught in his fnare, and had answered fo well, that to doe him further violence, would redound unto his perpetual I dishonour; resolved to reveale his neede and extremity, and trie if hee would therein friendly stead him. Having disclosed the matter, and how he purposed to have dealt with him if he had not returned fo wife an answer; the Iew lent him fo great a summe of money as he demanded, and Saladine repaiedit againe to him juttly, giving him other gifts befide : respecting him as his especial friend, and main taining him in very honourable condition, neare unto

his owne person.

A Monke having committed an offence, deferving to be very grievoufly punished freed himselfe from the paine robe in flicted on him by mittiy reprehending his Abbot, much the very same sault.

Th Fourth Novell.

d

S

h

h

y

n

1-

In

ce

lc

10

N,

ut

10

1-

fo

nd

is

in

nd

ot

at

e-

00-

11 -

ote

Wherein may be noted, that fuch men as will reprove those errours in others, which remaine in themselves, commonly are the Authors of their own reprehension.

SO ceased Madame Philomena, after the conclusion of her Tale: when Dioneus sitting next unto her, (without tarrying for any other command from the Queene, knowing by the order formerly begun, that he was to follow in the same course) spake in this manner.

Gracious Ladies, if I faile not in understanding your generall intention, we are purposely assembled here to tell Tales; and especially such as may please our felves. In which respect, because nothing should be done diforderly, I hold it lawfull for every one (as our Queene decreed before her Dignitie) to relate fuch a Noveltie, as in their owne judgement may cause most contentment. Wherefore having heard that by the good admonitions of Ichannet de Chevigny, Abraham the lew was advited to the falvation of his foule, and Melchifedec (by his witty understanding) defended his riches from the traines of Saladine : I now purpole to tell you in few plaine words, without feare of receiving any reprehension, how cunningly a Monk compassed his deliverance, from a punishment intended towards him.

There was in the Country of Luniglana (which is farre diffant from our owne) a Monaftery, which fometime was better furnished with holinesse and Re ligion, than now adayes they are: wherein lived (among divers others) a young Novice Monke, whose

hot and lustie disposition (being in the vigour of his yeares) was such, as neither Fasts nor Prayers had any great power over him. It chanced on a Fasting day about high noone, when all the other Monkes were asseepe in their Dormitaties or Dorters; this frolike Frier was walking alone in their Church, which shoode in a very solitary place, where ruminating on many matters by himselfe, he espied a pretty handsome Wench (some Husbandmans daughter in the Country, that had beene gathering rootes and heaples in the field) upon her knees before an Altar; whom hee had no sooner seene, but immediately he felt esseminate temperations, and such as ill sitted with his profession.

Lascivious desire; and no religious devotion, made him draw neare her, and whether under fhrift (the onely cloake to compasse carnall affections) or some other as close conference to as pernicious and vile a purpose, I know not but so farre he prevailed upon her frailtie, and such a bargaine passed betweene them, that from the Church, he wonne her to his Chamber, before any person could perceive it. Now, while this young luftic Monke (transported with over-fond affection) was more careleffe of his dalliance, than hee thould have beene , the Lord Abbot being newly arisen from sleepe, and walking softly about the Cloyster; came to the Monkes Dorter doore, where hearing what noyle was made betweene them, and a feminine voyce more strange than hee was wont to heare; hee laide his yeare close to the Chamber doorc, and plaine-Ty perceived, that a woman was within. Wherewith being much moved, he intended fodainely to make him open the doore; but (upon better confideration) he conceived it farre more fitting for him, to returne backe to his owne Chamber, and tarry till the Monke should come forth.

The

The Monke, though his delight with the Damolell. was extraordinary, yet feare and suspition followed upon it; for, in the very height of all his wantonneffe, he heard a foft treading about the doore. And prying thorow a small crevice in the same doore, perceived apparantly, that the Abbot himselse stood listening there, and could not be ignorant but that the maide was with him in the Chamber. As after pleasure enfueth paine, for the venial! Monke knew well enough (though wanten beate would not let him heede it before) that most grievous punishment must be inflicted. on him, which made him lad beyond all measure: Nevertheleffe, without disclosing his dismay to the young Maiden, he began to consider with himselse on many meanes, whereby to finde out one that might beft fit his turne. And feddenly conceited an ape ftratagem, which forted to fuch effect that hee would have it : whereupon, sceming satisfied for that season, he told the Damofell, that (being carefull of her credit) as hee had brought her in unleene of any, to he wold free her. from thence againe, defiring her to tarrie there (with out making any noyfe at all) untill fuch time as hee returned to her.

e

e

T

,

3

c

i.

1

g

h

e

)

e

ie

10

Going forth of the Chamber, and locking it fast, with the key, hee went directly to the Lord Abbots lodging, and delivering him the saide key (as every Monke used to doe the like, when he went abroade out of the Convent) setting a good countenance on the matter, boldly said; I have not yet brought in all my part of the wood, which lieth ready cut downe in the Forrest; and having now convenient time to doe it, if you please to give mee leave, I will goe and setch it. The Abbot perswading himselfe, that he had not been discovered by the Monke, and to be resolved more assured in the offence committed; being not a little jocund of so happie an accident, gladly tooke the

key, and gave him leave to fetch the wood.

No sooner was he gone, but the Abbot beganne to confider with himselfe, what he were best to doe in this case, either (in the presence of all the other Monkes) to open the Chamber doore, that fo the offerce being knowne to them all, they might have no occasion of murmuring against him, when hee proceeded in the Monkes punishment; or rather should first understand of the Damofell her felfe, how, and in what manner the was brought thither. Furthermore, he confidered that shee might be a woman of respect, or some such mans daughter, as would not take it well, to have her diffraced before all the Monkes. Wherefore he concluded, first to fee (himselfe) what shee was, and then (afterward) to resolve upon the rest. So going very toftly to the Chamber, and entring in, locked the doore fast with the key, when the poore Damosell thinking it had beene the gallant young Monke; but finding it to be the Lord Abbot, flice fell on her knees weeping, as fearing now to receive publike fhame, by being betraied in this unkinde manner.

My Lord Abbot looking demurely on the Maide, and perceiving her to be faire, feate, and lovely; feltimmediatly (although hee was old) no leffe spurring on to fleshly defires, than the young Monke before had done; whereupon hee beganne to conferre thus privately with himselfe. Why should I not take pleasure when I may freely have it? Cares and molestations I endure every day, but seldence finde such delights prepared for me. This is a delicate sweet young Damoiell, and heere is no eye that can discover mee. If I can enduce her to doe as I would have her, I know no reason why I should gaine-say it. No man can know it, or any tongue blaze it abroade; and sinne so concealed, is halfe pardoned. Such a faire fortune as this is, perhaps hereafter will never befall me; and there-

fore I holdit wisedome, to take such a benefite when a

man may enjoy it.

Vpon this immodest meditation, and his purpose quite altered which hee came for; hee went neerer to her, and very kindely began to comfort her, desiring her to forbeare weeping; and (by further infinuating speeches) acquainted her with his amorous intention. The Maide, who was made neither of iron nor diamond, and seeking to prevent one shame by another, was easily wonne to the Abbots will, which caused

him to embrace and kilfe her often.

Our lustice young novice Monke, whom the Abbot imagined to be gone for wood; and had hid himselse alost upon the roose of the Dorter, where, when hee saw the Abbot enter alone into the Chamber, he less a great part of his former feare, promising to himselse a kinde of perswasion, that somewhat would ensue to his better comfort; but when he beheld him lock tinto the Chamber, then his hope grew to undoubted certainetic. A little chincke or crevice favoured him, whereat he could both heare and see, whatsoever was done or spoken by them: so, when the Abbot thought hee had staide long enough with the Damotell; leaving her still there, and locking the doore fast againe, he returned thence to his owne Chamber.

Within some short while after, the Abbot knowing the Monke to be in the Convent, and points him to be lately returned with the rood, determined to resprove him shupely, and to have him elesely imprisoned, that the Danosell night remaine soly to himselfe. And causing him to be called presently before him, with a very steame and angric countenance, giving him many harth and bitter speeches, commanded,

that he fould be clapt in priion.

The Monke very readily answeed, faying, My good Lord, I have not yet beene so long in the Order of

No vell. 5. The First Day,

Saint Benedict, as to learne all the particularities hereto belonging. And belide Sir, you never shewed me or any of my Brethren, in what manner we young Monkes ought to use women, as you have done for our custome of Prayer and Fasting. But seeing you have so lately therein instructed me, and by your owne example how to doe it: I here solemnely promise you, if you please to pardon me but this one error, I will never faile therein againe, but daily follow what I have seen you doe.

The Abbot, being a man of quicke apprehension, preceived instantly by this answer; that the Monke not onely knew as much as hee did, but also had seene (what was intended) that he should not. Wherefore, sinding himselfe as faulty as the Monke, and that he could not shame him, but worthily had deserved as much himselfe, pardoning him, and imposing silence on eithers offence: they conveied the poore abused Damosell forth of their doores, she purposing (never

after) to transgreffe in the like manner.

p.1

va]

tha

fam

me

equ

J,ad

hare

Wife

The Ladie Marquesse of Montserrat, with a Banquet of Hennes, and diversother gracious speeches beside, repressed the fond love of the King of France,

The fift Novell.

bold their chastitie in wore effecue, than the greatnesse and treasures of Princes: and treas a discreete Lord should not offer modestie violence.

THE Tale reported by Dioness, at the first hearing of the Ladies, began to rellish of some immodestic, as the basefull bloud mounting up into their faces, delivered by apparent testimony. And beholding one another with scarse-pleasing lookes, during all the time it was in discourling, no sooner had he concluded:

but with a few milde and gentle speeches, they gave him a modest reprehension, and meaning to let him know that fuch tales ought not to be told among women. Afterward, the Queene commanded Madam Fiammetta, (fitting on a banke of flowers before her) to take her turne as next in order, and the fmiling with fuch a Virgin blufh, as very beautifully became her, began in this manner,

ng.

ic,

le-

one

the

ed: but

It is no little joy to me, that we understand so well (by the discourses already past) what power confisteth in the delivery of wife and ready answers; And because it is a great part of fence and judgement in men, to affelt women of greater birth and qualitie than themfelves, as also an admirable fore fight in women, to keepe off from being furprised in love, by Lords going beyond them in degree, a matter offereth it felf to my memory, well deferving my speech and your attention how a Gentlewoman thould defend her honour in that kind, when importunitie laboureth to betray it.

The Marquelle of Montferrat was a worthy and valiant Knight, who being Captaine Generall for the Church, the necessary service required his company on the Seaes, in a goodly. Army of the Christians against the Turkes. Vpon a day, in the Court of King Philip, firnamed the one-eyed King (who likewife made preparation in France, for a royallaffiftance to that expedition) as many speeches were delivered, cocerning the valour and manhood of this Marquelle: it fortuned, that a Knight was then present, who knew him very familiarly, and he gave an addition to the former commendation, that the whole world cotained not a more equall couple in marriage, than the Marquelle and his Lady. For, as among all knights, the Marqueffe could hardly be paraleld for armes and honours; even so his wife, in comparison of all other Ladies, was scarcely matchable for beauty. Which words were so weighty in

apprehension of King Philip, that fodainely (having as yet never feene her) he began to affect her very earneftly, concluding to embarke himfelfe at Gennes or Genova, there to fet forward on the intended voyage, and fournying thither by land, hee would thape fome honest excuse to see the Ladie Marquesse, whose Lord being then from home, opinion perswaded him over fondly, that he should easily obtaine the issue of his a-

morous defire.

When he was come within a dayes journey, where the Lady Marquelle then lay; hee fent her word that the should expect his company on the morrow at dinner. The Lady being fingularly wife and judicious, answered the meffenger, that the reputed the Kings comming to her, as an extraordinarie grace and fayour, and that he should be most heartily welcome. Afterward, entring into further confideration with her felfe, what the King might meane by his private visitation, knowing her husband to be from home, and it to be no meane barre to his apter entertainement : at last the discreetly conceited (and therein was not deceived) that bubling report of her beautie and perfections, might thus occasion the Kings comming thither, his journey lying elfe a quite contrary way. Notwithstanding, being a Princely Lady, and so loyall a wife as ever lived, the intended to give him her bett entertainement : fommoning the chiefest Gentlemen in the Countrey together, to take due order (by their advice) for giving the King a gracious Welcome. But concerning the dinner, and fervice to his Table, that remained only at her own disposing.

Sending preferily abroad, and buying all the Hens that the Country affoorded, thee commanded her Cookes, that onely of them (without any other provision beside) they should prepare all the services that they could devise. On the morrow the King came ac-

cording

an

and

the

He

nin

no (Ran

port

OVVII

they

yet n cherr cording to his promife, and was most honourably welcomed by the Lady, who seemed in his eye (farre beyond the Knights speeches of her) the fairest creature that ever he had seene before; whereat he marvelled not a little, extolling her perfections to be percelesse, which much the more enslamed his affections, and (almost) made his defires impatient. The King being withdrawne into such Chambers, as orderly were prepared for him, and as beseemed so great a Prince: the houre of dinner drawing on, the King and the Lady Marquesse were seated at one Table, and his attendants placed at other tables, answerable to

their degrees of honour.

(t

e-

cr

LIS

to

ns

ner

ro-

hat

ac-

1115

Plentie of diffies being ferved in, and the rarest Wines that the Countrey yeelded; the King had more minde to the faire Lady Marquelle, than any meate that stood on the Table. Neverthel fle, observing each service after other, and that all the Viands (though varoufly cooked, and in divers kindes) were nothing elfe hut Hennes onely, he began to wonder; and so much the rather, because he knew the Countrey to be of such qualitie, that it afforded all plenty both of Fowles and Venison : beside, after the time of his comming was heard, they had respite enough, both for hawking and hunting 3 and therefore it encreased his marvell the more, that nothing was provided for him, but Hennes onely: wherein to be the better resolved, turning a merry countenance to the Lady, thus he spake. Madam, are Hennes onely bred in this Countrey, and no Cockes? The Lady Marqueile, very well underflanding his demand, which fitted her with an apt opportunitie, to thwart his idle hope, and defend her owne honour; boldly returned the King this answer. Not so my Lord, but women and wives, howsoever they differ in garments and graces one from another; yet notwithstanding, they are all here as they are in otherplaces.

l aj yi ni G ai h b fc n t t

When the King heard this reply, hee knew well enough the occasion of his Henne dinner, as also, what
vertue lay couched under her answer; perceiving apparently, that wanton words would prove but in vaine,
and such a woman was not easily to be seduced; wherefore, as he grew enamored on her inconsiderately, so
he found it best fitting for his honour, to quench this
heate with wisedome discreetly. And so, without any
more words, or further hope of speeding in so unkingly a purpose, dinner being ended, by a sudden departing, he smoothly shadowed the cause of his comaming, and thanking her for the honour she had done
him, commending her to her chastle disposition, and,
posted away with speede to Gennes.

An homest plaine meaning man, (funly and consciousbly) reprobended the malignitie, hypocrisic, and misdemeanour of many Religious persons.

The fixt Novell.

Declaring, that in few, diffreete, and well placed words, the covered craft of Courch-men may be justly reproved, and their hypocrific bonefly diffeovered.

MAdam Amilia litting next to the gentle Lady Fiammetta, perceiving the modelt chaftslement, which the vertuous Lady Marquesse had given to the King of France, was generally graced by the whole Assembly; began (the Queent thereto appointing her) in these words. Nor will I conceale the deserved reprehension, which an horest simple lay-man, gave to a coverous holy father, in very sew-words; yet more to be commended, than derided.

Not long fince (worthy Ladies) there dwelt in our owne native City, a Frier Minor, an Inquittor after matters of Faith; who, although he laboured greatly to feeme a fanctified man, and an earnest affecter of

Christian

iz

21

an

hi

to

th

ann ma

T

cul

fpe:

the

vou

Wh

drui

thin

feen

e-

at

7-

ic,

·e-

fo

ny

g-

11-

n=

ne

nd.

1.30

if-

ds,

ro-

Fi-

nt,

the

ole

er)

re-

e to

orc

our

fier

atly

r of

tian

Christian Religion, (as all of them appeare to be in outward shew;) yet he was a much better Inquisitor after them that had their purses plentiously stored with money, than of such as were slenderly grounded in Faith. By which diligent continued eare in him, hee found out a man, more rich in purse, than understanding; and yet not so defective in matters of faith, as misguided by his owne simple speaking, and perhaps) when his braine was well warmed with wine, words fell more foolishly from him, than in better judgement they could have done.

Being on a day, in company, (very little differing in qualitie from himfelfe) he chanced to fay; that he had beene at fuch good wine, as God himfelfe did never drinke better. Which words (by fome Sicophant then in prefeace) being carried to this curious Inquifitor, and hee well knowing, that the mans faculties were great, and his bagges ivolne up full with no meane abundance: Cum gladys of fuftibus, with Booke, Bell, and Candle, he raifed an hoaft of execrations against him, & the Sumner cited him with a folemme Processe to appeare before him; understanding sufficiently, that this course would sooner get money from him, than amend any misbeliefe in the man; for no surther reformation did he seeke after.

The man coming before him, he demanded, if the accufation intimated against him, was true or no? Whereto the honest man answered, that he could not deny the speaking of these words, and declared in what manner they were uttered. Presently the Inquisitor, most devoutly addicted to St. Ioha with the golden beard, said; What? Dost thou make our Lord a drinker, a glutton a belly-god, or a Taverne haunter, as thou, and other drunkards are? Being an hypocrite as thou art, thou thinkest this to be but a slight matter, because it may seeme so in thy owa opinion: but I tel thee plainly, that

it deferveth fire and faggot, if I should proceede in Iuffice to inshest it on thee: with these and other such
like threatning words, as also a very sterne and angry
countenance, he made the man believe himselse to be
an Epicure, and that hee denied the eternitic of the
soule; whereby he fell into such a trembling seare,
as doubting indeede, least hee should be burned; that,
to be more mercifully dealt withall, hee rounded him
in the eare, and by secret meanes, so annointed him
hands with Saints Iohni golden grease (a very singular
remedy against the Disease Pestilentiall in covetous
Priests, especially Friars Minors, that dare touch no
money) as the case became very quickly altered.

This foveraigne Vnftion was of fuch vertue (though Galen speakes not a word thereof among all his chiefest medicines) and so faire prevailed, that the terrible threatning words of fire and faggot, became meerely frozen up, and gracious language blew a more gentle and calmer aire; the Inquititor delivering him an hallowed Crucifixe, creating him a fouldier of the Croffe (because he had paied Crosses good store for it.) and even as if he were to travell under that Standard to the holy Land; lo did he appoint him a home-paying pennance, namely, to vifite him thrice every weeke in his Chamber, and to annoint his hands with the felfefame yellow unguent, and afterward, to heare Maffe of the holy Croffe, vifiting him also at dinner time, which being ended, to doe nothing all the rest of the day, but according as he directed him.

The simple man, yet not so simple, but seeing that this weekely greazing the Inquisitors hands, would in time graspe away all his gold, grew wearse of this annointing, and began to consider with himselfe, how to thay the course of this chargeable pennance. And comming one morning (according to his injunction) to heare Masse, in the Gospell he observed these words;

ch

be

he

e,

at,

m

nis

lar

MIS

no

gh

ie-

ble

ely

tle

131-

offe

ind

to

e in

lfe-

e of

nich

134,

hat

din

an-

V to

-ומכ

67 (

dsi

Y ou

Tou shall receive an hundred for one, and so possesseternalllife; which faying, hee kept perfectly in his memory; and as he was commanded, at dinner time, he came to the Inquificor, finding him (among his fellowes) feated at the Table. The Inquifitor prefently demanded of him, whether he had heard Maffe that morning, or no? Yes Sir, replied the man very readily. Haft thou heard any thing therein (quoth the Inquifitor) whereof thou are doubtfull, or defireft to be further informed? Surely Sir, answered the plainemeaning man, I make no doubt of any thing I have heard, but doe beleeve all constantly; onely one thing troubleth me much, and maketh me very compassionate of you, and of all these holy Fathers your Brethren, perceiving in what wofull and wretched estate you will be, when you shall come into another world. What words are thefe, quoth the Inquifitor? And why art thou moved to fuch compassion of us? O good Sir, faid the man, doe you remember the wordes in the Gospell this morning, You shall receive an hundred for one? Thats very true, replied the Inquistor, but what moveth thee to urge those words?

I will tell you Sir, answered the plaine sellow, so it might please you not to be offended. Since the time of my resorting hither, I have daily seene many poore people at your doore, and (out of your abundance) when you and your Brethren have sed sufficiently, every one hath had a good messe of Pottage a now Sir, if for every dashfull given, you are sure to receive an hundred againe, you will be meerely drowned in Pottage. Although the rest (sitting at the Table with the Inquisitor) laughed heartily at the jest; yet he found himselse toucht in another nature, having hypocritically received for one poore offence, above three hundred pieces of gold, and not a mite to be restored againe. But searing to be surther disclosed,

Novell.7. The First Day,

yet threatning him with another Processe in law, for abusing the words of the Gospell, hee was content to dismisse him for altogether, without anymore golden greasing in the hand.

Bergamino, by telling a tale of a skilfull man, named Primafio, and of an Abbot of Clugni; hosefty checked a new kind of covetoufneffe, in M. Can de la Scala, The leventh Novell.

Approving, that it is much unfitting for a Prince, or great person, to be coverous; but rather to be liberal to al men.

The courteons demeanour of Madam Amilia, and the quaintnesse of her discourse, caused the Queene, and the rest of the company, to commend the invention of carrying the Crosse, and the golden ointment appointed for pennance, Afterward Philostratus, who was in order to speake next, began in this manner.

It is a commendable thing (faire Ladies) to hit a But that never firreth out of his place; but it is a matter much more admirable, to see a thing suddenly appearing, and feldome or never frequented before, to be as fuddenly hit by an ordinary Archer. The vicious and polluted lives of Priefts, yeeldeth matter of it felie in many things, deferving speech and reprehension, as a true But of wickednelle, and well worthy to bee tharpely thot at. And therefore, though that hone ft meaning man did wisely, in touching Master Inquisitor to the quicke, with the hypocriticall charitie of Monkes and Friers, in giving fuch things to the poore, as were more meete for Swine, or to be weife throwne awayiyet I hold him more to be commended, who (by occasion of a formertale, and which I purpose to relate) pleasantly reproved Mister can dela Scala, a Magnifico and mighty Lord, for a sudden and unaccuflomed coverousnesse appearing in him, figuring by other

other men, that which hee intended to fay of him, in

manner following.

Mafter Can de la Scala, as fame ranne abroade of him in all places, was (beyond the infinite favours of. Fortune towards him) one of the most notable and magnificent Lords that ever lived in Italy, fince the dayes of Fredericke the fecond, Emperor. Hee determining to procure a very folemne affembly at Verena, and many people being met there from divers places, especiall Gentlewomen of all degrees; suddenly (upon what oceasion I know not) his minde alcred, and hee would not goe forward with his intention. Mest of them he partly recompenced which were come this ther, and they dismissed to depart at their pleasure; one onely man remained unrespected, or in an, kinde fort fent away, whose name was Bergamino, a man very pleasantly disposed, and so wittily readie in speaking and answering, as none could easily credit it, but such as heardhim; and although his recompence feemed over-long delaied, yet bee made no doubt of a beneficiall ending.

By some enemies of his, Master Can de la Scala was incensed, that whatsoever hee gave, or bestowed on him, was as ill imployed and utterly lost, as if it were throwne into the fire, and therefore he neither did or spake any thing to him. Some few dayes being passed over, and Bergamino perceiving, that he was neither called, nor any account made of, netwithstanding many manly good parts in him; observing beside, that he found a shrewd consumption in his purse, his sine, horses, and servants, being chargeable to him; he began to grow extreamely malanchosly, and yet hee attended in expectation day by day, as thinking it farre unsitting for him to depart before he was ibdden

farewell.

3

-

0

15

ie

as

ee

ß

1-

of

e,

ne

by

C-

u-

by

ner

Having brought with him thither three goodly rich

ments, which had beene given him by fundry Lords, for his more fightly appearance at this great meeting ; the importunate Hoft being greedy of paiment, first, hee delivered him one of them, and yet not halfe the foure being wiped off; the fecond must needes follow; and befide, except he meant to leave his lodging, he must live upon the third so long as it would latt, till he faw what end his hopes would fort too. It fortuned, during the time of living thus upon the last refuge, that he met with Mafter can one day at dinner, where hee presented himselfe before him, with a discontented countenance : which Master Can well obferving, more to distaste him, than take delight in any thing that could come from him, he faid: Berga. mino, how cheerest thou? Thou are very melancholly, I pray thee tell us why? Bergamino fuddenly, without any premeditation, yet feeming as if he had long confidered thereon, reported this Tale.

Sir, I have heard of a certaine man, named Primafo, one skilfully learned in the Grammar, and (bevond all other) a very witty and ready verfitier: in regard whetcof, hee was so much admired, and farre renowned, that fuch as never faw him, but onely heard of him, could eafily fay, this is Primaffo. It came to palie, that being once at Paris, in poore estate, as commonly he could light on no better fortune (because vertue is flenderly rewarded by fuch as have the greatelt possessions) he heard much fame of the Abbot of clugni, a man reputed (next to the Pope) to be the richeft Prelate of the Church. Of him he heard won. deriull and magnificent matters, that he alwayes kept an open and hospitable Court, and never made refu. fall of any (from whence foever he came or went) but they did cate and drinke freely there; provided, that they came when the Abbot was fet at the Table. Primaffo hearing this, and being an earnest defirer to tee

magni-

gt

th

in

W:

Cal

chi

bor

ner

har

tot

whe

ftor

hou

ast

ric t

hold

but I

magnificent and vertuous men, hee refolved to goe fee the rare bounty of the Abbot, demanding how farre he dwelt from Paris? Being answered, about some three leagues thence. Primasso made account, that if he went on betimes in the morning, hee should easily

reach thither before the houre for dinner.

)-

1-

1.

y,

u

G-

ri-

oe-

c-

TC-

ard

eto

35

aule

rea-

ot of

ethe

von-

kept

refu.

t)but

, that

Pri-

to lee

Being instructed in the way, and not finding any to walke along with him; fearing, if he went without fome furnishment, and should stay long there for his dinner, he might (perhaps) complaine of hunger: he therefore carried three loaves of bread with him, knowing that he could meete with water every where, albeit he used to drinke but little. Having aptly conveyed his bread about him, he went on his journey, and arrived at the Lord Abbots Court, an indifferent while before dinner time : wherefore entring into the great Hall, and so from place to place, beholding the great multitude of Tables, bountifull preparation in the Kitchin, and what admirable provision there was for dinner, hee faid to himfelfe ; Truly this man is more magnificent than fame hath made him, because the speakes too sparingly of him.

While thus he went about, confidering on all these things very respectively, he saw the Master of the Abbots Houshold (because then it was the houre of dinner) command water to be brought for washing of hands; so every one sitting downe at the Table, it fell to the lot of Primasso, to fit directly against the doore, whereat the Abbot must enter into the Hall. The custome in this Court was such, that no manner of soode should be served to any of the Table, until such time as the Lord Abbot was himselfe set: whereupen, everie thing being fit and ready, the Master of the household went to tell his Lord, that nothing now wanted

but his onely presence.

The Abbot comming from his Chamber to eater

the

the Hall, looking about him, as he was wont to doe; the first man he faw was Primaso, who being but in homely habite, and he having not feene him before to his rememberance, a present bad conceit possessed his braine, that he never faw an unworthier person, faying within himselfe: See how I give my goods away to be devoured . So returning backe to his Chamber againe; commandeded the doore to be made fast, demanding of every man necre about him, if they knew the base Knave that sate before his entrance into the Hall; and all his fervants answered no. Primaffo being extreamely hungry, with travelling on foote fo farre, and never used to fast so long; expeding still when meate would be ferved in, and that the Abbot came not at all: drew out one of his loaves which he brought with him, and very heartily fella feeding.

My Lord Abbot, after he had staied within an indifferent while, fent forth one of his men, to fee if the poore fellow was gone, or no. The fervant told him, that he staied there, and fed upon dry bread, which it feemed hee had brought thither with him. Let him feede on his owne (replied the Abbot) for hee shall tafte of none of mine this day. Gladly would the Abbot, that Primaffo should have gone thence of himself; and yet held it scarsely honest in his Lordship, to dismisse him by his owne command. Primasso having eaten one of his loaves, and yet the Abbot was not come; began to feede upon the fecond : the Abbot full fending to expect his absence, and answered as he was before. At length, the Abbot not comming, and Primaffo having eaten up his fecond loafe, hunger compele him to begin with the third.

When these news were carried to the Abbot, sodainly he brak forth, and said: What new kind of needy trick hath my braine begot this day? Why doe I grow disdainefull against any man whatsoever? I have long

time

th th

21

M

fr

m lir

an

hi

ge

rep

gre fire

ino

Ab

bef

oft

to

WO

Wh

him

to I

on i

deri

mea

gam

nece

felt

which

1

n

O

is

y-

ay

2 -

c-

W

he

-30

fo

till

100

he

lif-

the

im,

h it

ımı

hall

Ab-

clf.

dif-

ving

not

Aill

was

Pri-

om-

ainly trick

dif-

long

time

time allowed my meate to be eaten by all commers that did pleafe to vifit me, without exception against any person, Gentleman, Yeoman, poore or rich, Merchant or Minstrill, honest man or knave, never refraining my presence in the Hall, by basely contemning one poore man Beleeve me, covetousnesse of one mans meate, doth ill agree with mine estate and calling. What though he appeareth a wretched sellow to me? He may be of greater merit than I can imagine, and deserve more honour than I am able to give him,

Having thus discoursed with himself, he would needs understand of whence, and what he was, and finding him to be Primaffe, come only to fee the magnificence which he heard reported of him, knowing allo (by the generall fame noyfed every where of him) that he was reputed to be a learned, honest, and ingenious man: he grew greatly ashamed of his owne folly, and being defirous to make him an amends, itrove many wayes how to doe him honour. When dinner was ended, the Abbot bestowed honourable garments on him, such as befeemed his degree and merit, and putting good flore of money in his purfe, as also giving him a good horse to ride on, left it at his owne free election, whether he wold ftay there still with him, or depart at his pleasure, Wherwith Primaffo being highly contented, yeelding him the heartiest thanks he could devise to do, returned to Paris on horse-back; albeit he came poorely thither on foote.

Master Cande la Scala, who was a man of good understanding, perceived immediately what Bergamino meant by this morall, and smiling on him, said: Bergamino, thou hast honestly expressed thy vertue and necessities, and justly reproved mine avarice, niggardnesse and base folly. And trust me Bergamino, I never telt such a fit of coverous fiels come upon me, as this which I have declared unto thee; and I will banish from

Novell.8. The First Day,

me, with the same correction as thou hast taught me. So having payed the Host all his charges, redeeming also his robes or garments, mounting him on a good Gelding and putting plenue of Crownes in his purse, he referd it to his owne choise to depart, or dwell there still with him.

Guillaume Boursier, with a few quaint and familiar words, checkt the miserable coverous resset of Signior Herminio de Grimaldi.

The eight Novell.

Which plainely declareth, that a covetous Gentleman, is not worthy of any honour or respect.

MAdam Lauretta, fitting next to Philoftratus, when thee had heard the witty conceit of Bergamino; knowing, that the was to fay fomewhat, without injun-

Aion or command, pleafantly thus began.

This last discourse (faire and vertuous company) induceth me to tell you, how an hone? Courtier reprehended in like manner (and nothing unprofitably) base coverousnesse in a Merchant of extraordinary wealth. Which Tale, although (in effect) it may seeme to resemble the former; yet perhaps, it will prove so lesse pleasing to you, in regard it forted to as good an end.

At is no long time fince, that there lived in Genes or Genewai, a Gentleman named Signior Herminio de Grimaldy, who (as every one well knew) was more rich in inheritances, and ready fummes of currant money, than any other knowne Citizen in Italy. And as he surpassed other men in wealth, so did hee likewise excell them in wretched Avarice, being so miserably greedy and covetous, as no man in the world could be more wicked that way; because, not onely he kept his purse lockt up from pleasuring any, but de-

nied

٧

li

lit

qu

th

in

nied needfull things to himselse, enduring many miscrees onely to avoide expences; contrary to the Genewayes generall custome, who alwayes delighted to be decently cloathed, and to have their diet of the best-By reason of which most miserable balenesse, they tooke away from him the Sirname of Grimaldi, whereof he was in right descended, and called him Master Herminist the covetous Mizer, a Nickname very notably and

greeing with his gripple nature.

)

ne

ve

be

or

de

STC

nt

nd

kc-

Se-

rld

ely

de-

se d

It came to paffe, that in this time of his spending nothing, but multiplying daily by infinite meanes, that a civill honest Gentleman (a Courtier of ready wir, and discourfive in Languages) came to Geneway, being named Guillaume Burfier. A man very farre differing from divers Courtiers in thesedayes, who for foothing shamefull and gracelesse maners in such as allow them maintenance, are called and reputed to be Gentlemen, yea speciall favorits: whereas much more worthily, they should be accounted as knaues and villaines, being borne and bred in all filthinesse, and skilfull in every kinde of basest behaviour, not fit to come in Princes Courts. For, whereas in paffed times, they spent their dayes and paines in making peace, when Gentlemen were at warre or diffention, or treating of honest marriages, betweene triends and familiers, and (with loving speeches) wold recreate difturbed mindes, defiring none but commendable exercises in Court, and sharpely reproving (like Fathers) difordered life, or ill actions in any, albeit with recompence little, or none at all; thefe upftarts now adayes, employ all their paines in detractions, fowing queftions and quarrels betweene one another, making no spare of lies and falshoods. Nay, which is worse, they will doe this in the presence of any man, upbraiding him with injuries, fhames, and icandals, (true, or not true) upon the very least occasion. And by false and decent full

Novell 9. The First Day,

full flatteries and villanies of their own inventing, they make Gentlemen to become as vile as themfelves. For which deteltable qualities, they are better beloved and respected of their missemented Lords, and recompened in more bountifull manner, than men of vertuons carriage and desert. Which is an argument sufficient, that goodnesse is gone up to heaven, and hath quite forsaken these loathed lower Regions, where men are drowned in the mud of all abhominable vices.

But returning where I left (being led out of my way by a just and a religious anger against such deformitie) this Gentleman, Master Gurllaume Boursier, was willingly seene, and gladly welcommed by all the best men in Geneway. Having remained some sew dayes in the Citie, and amongst other matters, heard much talke of the miserable covetousnesse of Master Herminio, he grew very desirous to have a sight of him. Master Herminio had already understood, that this Gentleman, Master Guillaume Boursier was vertuously disposed, and (how covetously soever he was inclined) having in him some sparkes of notable nature, gave him very good words, and gracious entertainement, discoursing with him on divers occasions.

In company of other Genewages he brought him to a new creeked house of his, a building of great cost and heauty 5 where, after he had shewed him all the variable rarieties, hee began thus. Master Guillaume, no doubt but you have heard and seene many things, and you can instruct me in some queint conceit or device, to be fairely sigured in painting, at the entrance into the great Hall of my house, Master Guillaume hearing him speake so simply, returned this answer: Sir, I cannot advise you in any thing, so rare or unseene as you speake of: but bow to sneeze (after a new manner) upon' a full and over-cloyed stomacke, to avoide base humours that stupishethe braine, or other matters of the

like

like qualitie. But if you would be taught a good one indeede, and had a disposition to see it fairely effected, I could instruct you in an excellent Embleme, where-

with (as yet) you never came acquainted.

16

d

1-

r-

f-

h

re

S.

17

-

r,

10

W

rd

cr

n.

is

ly

d)

ve

it,

to

nd

13-

no nd :e,

ote

ng

n-

ou

P-

u-

he

ke

Mafter Herminio hearing him fay fo, and expecting no fuch answer as he had, faid, Good Mafter Guilleame, tell me what it is, and on my faith I will have it fairely painted. Whereto Mafter Guillaume fudden . ly replied; Doe nothing but this Sir: Paint over the Portall of your Halles enterance, the lively victure of Liberalitie, to bid all your friends better welcome, than hitherto they have beene. When Mafter Hermuio heard these words, he became possessed with stick a ludden shame, that his complexion changed from the former palenesse, and answered thus: Master Guillaume, I will have your advice so truly figured over my gate, and thee thall give to good welcome to all my guefts, that both you, and all thefe Gentlemen shall fay, I have both feene her, and am become reasonably acquainted with her. From that time forward, the words of Master Guillaume were so effectuall with Signior Herminio, that he became the most bountifull and best house-keeper, which lived in his time in Genewsy: no man more honourng and friendly welcoming both ftrangers and Citizens, than he continually used to doe.

The King of Cyprus was wittily reprehended, by the words of a Gentlewoman of Gascoignic, and became vertuously alreved from his vicious dispositions.

Giving all men to understand, that Instice is necessary in a King above all things whatsoever.

The last command of the Queene, remained upon Madam Elissa, or Eliza, who (without any delaying)

ing) thus began. Young Ladies, it hath often beens feene, that much paine hath beene bestowed, and many reprehensions spent in vaine, till a word happening at adventure, and perhaps not purposely determined, hath effectually done the deed: as appeareth by the Tale of Madam Lauretta, & another of my own, wherwith I intend briefely to acquaint you, approving that when good words are discreetly observed, they are of

foveraigne power and vertue.

In the dayes of the first King of Cyprus, after the Conquest made in the holy Land by Godfrey of Bulten, it fortuned that a Gentlewoman of Gascoigni, travelling in pilgrimage to vifite the facred Sepulcher in Ierusalem, returning home againe, arrived at Cypras, where thee was villanously abused by certaine base wretches. Complaining thereof, without any comfort or redreffe, thee intended to make her moane to the King of the Countrey. Whereupon it was told her, that therein thee mould but look her labour, because he was so womanish, and faint-hearted & that not onely he refused to punish with justice the offences of others, but also suffered thamefull injuries done so himselfe. And therefore, such as were displeased by his negligence, might eafily discharge their folcene against him, and doe him what dishonour they would.

When the Gentlewoman heard this, despairing of any consolation, or revenge for her wrongs, shee resolved to checke the Kings deniall of justice, and comming before him weeping, spake in this manner. Sir, I presume not into your presence, as hoping to have redresse by you, for divers dishonourable injuries done unto me; but, as full satisfaction for them, doe but reach mee how you suffer such vile abuses, as daily are offered to your selfe. To the end, that being therein infructed by you. I may the more patiently beare mine

owne

ens

ma-

ning

ed,

the

er-

hat

e of

the Bulzni,

her

Cy-

ine

any

ane

old

our,

hat

pes

one

fed

reir

1110

fa-

ol-

m-

ave

but

arc

in-

ne

owne, which (as God knoweth) I would beflow on you very gladly, because you know so well how to endure them.

The Kine, who (till then) had beene very bad, dull, and flothfull, even as fleeping out fits time of governement, began to revenge the wrongs done to this Gentlewoman very feverely, and (thence forward) became a most sharpe Justice, for the least offence offered against the honour of his Crowne, or to any of his subjects besides.

Master Albert of Bullen, bone sty made a Lady to blusty, that thought to have done as much to him, because she perceived him, to be amorously affected towards her. The tenth Novell.

Wherein is declared, that honeft love agreeth with people of all ages.

A Fter that Madam Eliza fate filent, the last charge and labour of like emploiment, remained to the Queene her selfes whereupon the began thus to speake; Honest and vertuous young Ladies, like as the starres (while the aire is faire and cleare) are the adorning and beautie of heaven, and flowers (while the Spring time lasteth) doe graciously embellish the Meadowes; even so sweete speeches and pleasing conferences, to passe the time with commendable discourses, are the best habite of the minde, and an outward beauty to the body: which ornaments of words, when they appeare to be short and sweete, are much more seemely in women, than in men; because long and tedious talking when it may be done in lesser time, is a greater blemish in women than in men;

Among us women, this day, I thinke few or none have therein offended, but as readily have underflood thort and pithy speeches, as they have beene quicke and quaintly delivered. But when answering suteth net with understanding, it is generally a share in us, and all such as live; because our moderne times have convened that vertue, which was within them who lived before us, into garments of the body, and she whose habits were noted to be most gaudy, fullest of imbroyderies and santasticke fashions: she was reputed to have most matter in her, and therefore to be more honoured and esteemed. Never considering, that whosoever loadest he backe of an Asse, or puts upon him the richest bravery; he becomment not thereby a jot the wiser; or meriteth any more honour than an Asse should have. I am assumed to speake it, because in detecting other, I may (perhaps) as justly taxe my selfe,

Such imbroydered bodies, tricked and trimmed in fuch boaking bravery, are they any thing elfe but as Marbell Statues, dumbe, dull, and utterly infensible? Or if (perchance) they make an answer, when some question is demanded of them; it were much better for them to he filent. For defence of honest devise & conference among men and women, they would have the world to think, that it proceedeth but from simplicity, and precise opinion, covering their own folly with the mame of honesty; as if there were no other honest woman, but she that conferres onely with her Chamber-maide, Laundresse, or Kitchin-woman; as if nature had allowed them, (in their owne idle conceit) no o-

ther kinde of talking.

Most true it is, that as there is a respect to be used in the action of other things; so time and place are necessarily to be considered, and also whom we converse withall; because sometimes it happeneth, that a man or woman, intending (by a word of jest and merriment) to make another body blush or be ashamed; not knowing what strength of wit remaineth in the opposite,

do convert the fame diferace upon chemfelves, Therefore, that we may the more adviscelly fland upon your owne guard, and to prevent the common Proverbe, That momen (in all things) make choife of the mere: I defire that this dayes last Tale, which is to come from my felfe, may make us all wife. Tatheend, that as in gentlenelle of minde wee conferre with other; fo by excellency in good manners, we may thew

our felvet not interiour to them.

not'

and On-

ved

pole

vdc. ave

104-

-20

the

the

Affe

use

axe

in

as

ole?

me for

n-

the

ty,

he 10.

er-

are

0-

in

erfe

an

at)

W-

c,

oc

It is not many yeares fince (worthy affembly) that in Bulloigne there dwelt a learned Physitian, a man famous for skill, and farre renowned, whose name was Mafter Albert, and being growne aged, to the eftimate of threefcore and ten yeares : hee had yet fuch a sprightfull disposition, that though natural heate and vigour had quite shaken hands with him, yet amorous flames and defires had not wholly forfaken him, Ha. ving seene (at a Banquet) a very beautifull woman; being in the eftate of widdowhood, named (as fome fay Madam Margaret de Chifolieri, thee appeared fo pleafing in his eye; that his fences became no leffe diflurbed, than as if he had beene of farre younger temper, and no night could any quietnefie possesse his fonle, except (the day before) hee had frene the sweete countenance of this lovely widdow. In regard whereof his daily passage was by her doore, one while on horsebacke, and then againe on foote; as best might declare his plaine purpose to fee her.

Both fhee and other Gentlewomen, perceiving the occasion of his passing, and repassing; would privately reft thereat together, to fee a man of fuch yeares and discretion, to be amoroully addicted, or over-swayed by effermate passion. For they were partly persivaded, that fuch wanton Ague hits of Love, were he for none but youthful apprehensions, as best agreeing with

their

their cheerefull complexion, Master Albert continuing his daily walkes by the widdowes lodging; it chanced upon a Festivall day, that the (accompanied with divers other women of great account) being fitting at her doore; espied Master Albert (farre off) comming thitherward, and a resolved determination among themselves was set downe, to allow him favourable entertainement, and to jest (in some merry manner) at his loving felly, as afterward they did indeede.

No fooner was hee come neere, but they all arofe, and courteously invited him to enter with them, conducting him into a goodly Garden, where readily was prepared choise of delicate wines and banqueting. At length, among other pleasant and delightfull discourses, they demanded of him; how it was possible for him, to be amorously affected towards so beautifull a woman, both knowing and seeing how earnestly shee was solicited by many gracious, gallant, and youthfull spirits, aptly suring with her yeares and defines? Master Albert perceiving, that they had drawne him in among them, onely to scottle and make a mockerie of him; set a metry countenance on the matter, and honestly thus answered.

Beleeve me Gentkwoman (speaking to the widdow her selfe) it should not appeare strange to any of wisedome and discretion, that I am amorously inclined, and especially to you; because you are well worthy of it. And although those powers, which naturally appertaine to the exercises of Love, are bereft and gone from aged people; yet good will rhereto cannot be taken from them, neither judgement to know such as deserve to be affected; for, by how much they exceed youth in knowledge and experience; by so much the more had nature made them meete for respect and reverence. The hope that incited me (being aged) to love you, that are affected of so many youthfull

fe

cel

di-

at

ng

ng

le

r)

è,

n-

ly

g.

ole

ti-

ft-

nd

e-

ne

c•

L

d-

ıy

n-

:11

2-

ft

03

tơ

h

by

ĨΟ

e-

youthfull Gallants, grew thus. I have often chanced into divers places, where I have feene Ladies and Gentlewomen, being disposed to a Collation, or terebanquet after dinner, to feede on Lupines, and young Onions or Leekes ; and although it may be fo, that there is little or no goodnesse at all in them; yet the heads of them are least hurtfull, and most pleasing in the mouth. And you Gentlewomen generally (guided by unreasonable appetite) will hold the heads of them in your hands, and feede upon the blades or stalkes : which not onely are not good for any thing, but also are of very bad layour. And what know I (Lady) whether among the choise of friends, it may fit your fancy to doe the like? For, if you did fo, it were no fault of mine to be chosen of you, but thereby were all the rest of your futers the sooner answered.

The widdowed Gentlewoman, and all the rest in her company, being bashfully ashamed of her owne and their folly, presently said. Master Aibert, you have both well and worthily chastised our overbold presumption, and believe me Sir, I repute your love and kindenesse of no meane merit, comming from a man lo wise and vertuous: And therefore (mine honour reserved) command my uttermost, as alwayes ready to doe you any honest service. Master Aibert, arising from his seate, thanking the faire widdow for her gentle offer, tooke leave of her and all the company; and shee blushing, as all the rest were therein not much behinde her, thinking to checke him, became chidden her, selse; whereby (if we be wise) let us all take warning.

The Sunne was now somewhat faste declined, and the heates extremity well worne away; when the Tales of the seaven Ladies and three Gentlemen were thus sinished whereupon their Queene pleasantly said. For this day (faire company) there remaines nothing more to be done under my regiment, but only

to bestow a new Queene upon you, who (according to her judgement) must take her turne, and dispose what next is to be done, for continuing our time in honest pleasure. And although the day should endure till darke night; in regard, that when some time is taken before, the bester preparation may be made for occasions to follow; to the end also, that whatsoever the new Queene shall please to appoint may be the better fitted for the morrow: I am of opinion, that at the same houre as we now cease, the following dayes shall severally beginne. And therefore, in reverence to him that giveth life to all things and in hope of comfort by our Second Day; Madam Philomena, a most wise young Lady shall governe as Queene this our Kingdome.

So foone as the had thus spoken, arising from her feate of dignitie, and taking the I awrell crowne from off her owne head; thee reverently placed it upon Madam Philomenaes; the first of all humbly faluting her, and then all the rest; openly confessing her to be their Queene, made gracious offer ro obey what the commanded. Philomena, her cheekes delivering a fearler tincture, to fee her felfe thus honored astheir Queene, and well remembring the words, fo lately utered by Madam Pampinea; that dulneffe or neglect might not be noted in her, tooke cheerefull courage to her, and first of all, the confirmed the officers, which Pampinea had appointed the day before; then thee ordained for the morrowes Provision, as also for the supper so ncere approaching, before they departed away from thence, and then thus began.

Lovely Companions, although that Madam Pampinea, more in her owne courtefie, than any matter of merit remaining in me, hath made me your Queene: Fam not determined to aker the forme of our intended life, nor to be guided by mine owne judgement,

at

n

ce

-

15

W

d

10

m

le le

2-

cr

m

a-

r,

ir

1-

ct

co

ıd

ea

:d Ca

m

3-

of

n-

10.

שנ

but to affociate the same with your affistance- And because you may know what I intend to doe, and so con-(fequently) adde or diminish at your pleasure; in very few words, you shall plainely understand my meaning. If you have well confidered on the course, which this day hath beene kept by Madam Pampines, me thinkes it hath been very pleafing and commendable; in which regard, untill by over-tedious continuation, or other cecasions of irkesome offence, it shall seeme in jurious, I am of the minde, not to alter it. Holding on the order then as we have begun to do, we will depart from hence to recreate our felves a while, and when the Sunne groweth towards fetting, wee will sup in the fresh and open aire: afterward, with Canzonets and other pastimes, wee will out-weare the houres till bed time. To morrow morning, in the fresh and gentle breath thereof, wee will rife and walke to fuch places, as every one shall find fittest for them, even as already this day we have done; untill due time shall summon us hither againe, to continue our discoursive Tales, wherein (me thinkes) confifteth both pleasure and profit, especially by discreete observation.

Very true it is, that some things which Madam Pampinea could not accomplish, by reason of her small time of authoritie, I will beginne to undergo, to wit, in testraining some matters whereon wee are to ipeak, that better premeditation may passe upon them. For, when respite and a little leasure goeth before them, each discourse will sayour of the more formalitie;and if it might so please you, thus would I direct the order. As fince the beginning of the world, all men have beene guided (by Fortune) thorove divers accidents and occasions : fo beyond all hope and expectation, the iffue and successe hath beene good and succeffefull, and accordingly should every one of our ar-

guments be chosen.

Novell 10. The First Day,

The Ladies, and young Gentlemen likewife, commended her advife, and promifed to imitate it; only Dioneus excepted, who when every one was filent, spake thus. Madam, I say as all the rest have done, that the order by you appointed, is most pleasing and worthy to be allowed. But I intreate one speciall favour for my selfe, and to have it confirmed to me, so long as our company continueth; namely, that I may not be confirmed to this Law of direction, but to tell my Tale at libertie, after my owne minde, and according to the freedome first instituted. And because no one shall imagine, that I urge this grace of you, as being unsurvissed of discourses in this kinde, I am well contented

to be the last in every dayes exercise.

The Queene, knowing him to be a man full of mirth and matter, began to confider very advisedly, that hee would not have moved this request, but onely to the end, that if the company grew wearied by any of the Tales recounted, he would flut up the dayes disport with some mirthfull accident. Wherefore willingly, and with confert of all the reft he had his fuite granted. So, arising all, they walked to a Christall river, descending downe a little hill into a valley, graciously shaded with goodly trees; where washing both their hands and feete, much pretty pleasure passed among them; till supper time drawing neere; made them returne home to the Palace. When supper was ended, bookes and instruments being laide before them, the Queene commanded a dance, and that Madam Æmitia, affisted by Madam Lauretta and Dieneus, should fing a fweet ditty. At which command, Lauretta undertooke the dance, and led it, A milia finging this fong enfuing.

The

10

The Song.

That any other Love,

kc

he

ny

ur.

1-

le

31

d!

-

ed

h

ec ne

oc

rt

y,

n-

r,

ly

ir

g

l,

2-

d

-

S

e.

To wish or proove; Can never sute it selfe with my desire.

Therein I fee, upon good observation,
What sweet content due understanding lends:
Old or new thoughts cannot in any fashion
Rob me of that, which mine owne soule commendate.

What objects then, (mongst infinites of men)

Can 1 never finde to possesse my minde,

And flant therein another new defire?
So much delight. Go.

But were it fo, the bliffe that I would chufe, is, by continuall fight to comfort me: So rare a presence never to resuse, Which mortall tongue or thought, what ere it be

Must still conceale, not able to reveale, Such a sacred sweete, for none other meete,

But hearts inflamed with the fame defire. So much delight, & s.

The Song being ended, the Chorus whereof was answered by them all, it passed with general applause; and after a few other dances, the night being well run on, the Queene gave ending to this first dayes Recreation. So, lights being brought, they departed to their severall Lodgings, to take their rest till the next morning,

The end of the first Day.

The Second Day.

Wherein, all the Difcourfes are under the government of Madam Philomena : Concerning fuch men or women as (in divers accidents) have beene much motteffed by Fortune, and yet afterward f contrary to their hope and expectation) have had a happy and fucces full deliverance.



The Lready had the bright Sun renewed theday every where with his splendant beames, and the Birds fate merrily finging on the blooming branches, yeelding testimony

thereof to the eares of all hearers; when the feaven Ladies, and the three Gentlemen (after they were rifen) entred the Gardens, and there fpent some time in walking, as also makeing of Nosegayes and Chaplets of flowers. And even as they had done the day before, so did they now follow the same course; for, after they had dined, in a coole and pleafing aire they fell to dancing, and then went to fleepe a while, from which being awaked, they tooke their places (according as it pleased the Queene to appoint) in the same faire Meadow about her. And the, being a goodly creature, and highly pleasing to beheld, having put on her Crowne of Lawrell, and giving a gracious countenance to the whole company; commanded Madam Neiphia that her cale fhould begin this dayes delight. Whereupon the, without returning any excuse or deniall, began in this manner.

Martellino counterfeiting to be lame of his members, caufed himfeife to be fet on the body of Saint Arrigue, where he made flew of his fudden recovery ; but when his distimulation was discovered, he was well beaten, being afterward taken prisoner, and in great danger of being hanged and frangled by the necke, and yet hee escaped in the end.

The

e

C

r

C

The first Novell.

Wherein it is fignified, now easie a thing it is, for maked men to deceive the world, under the shadow and cotour of miracles; and that such trechery (oftentimes) redoundeth to the harme of the deviser.



FAire Ladies, it hath happened many times, that he who striveth to scorne and floure other men, and especially in occasions deserving tobe respected, proveth to mock himself with the self same matter, yea, & to his

Novell. 1. The Second Day,

no meane danger beside. As you shall perceive by a Tale, which I intend to tell you, obeying therein the command of our Oceane, and according to the subject by her enjoyned. In which discourse, you may first observe, what great mischance happened to one of our Citizens; and yet afterward, how, (beyond all hope)

he happily escaped.

Not long fince, there lived in the Citie of Trevers, an Almaine or Germaine, named Arrigue, who being a poore man, served as a Porter, or Burden-bearer for money, when any man pleafed to employ him. And yet, notwithstanding his poore and meane condition, he was generally reputed, to be of good and fan dified life. In which regard (whether it were true or no, I know not) is happened, that when he died (at least as the men of Trevers themselves affirmed) in the very instant houre of his departure, all the Belles in the great Church of Trevers, (not being pulled by the helpe of any man) began to ring: which being accounsed for a miracle, every one faid; that this Arrigue had beene, and was a Saint. And prefently all the people of the Citie ranne to the house where the dead bodie lay, and carried it (as a fanctified body) into the great Church, where people, halt, lame, and blinde, or troubled with any other diseases, were brought about it, even as if every one should forth-with be holpen, onely by their touching the body.

It came to palle, that in so great a concourse of people, as resorted thither from all parts; three of our Citizens went to Trevers, one of them being named Stechio, the second Martellino, and the third Marquiso, all being men of such condition, as frequented Princes Courts, to give them delight by pleasant and counterfetted qualities. None of these men having ever beene at Trevers before, seeing how the people crowded shorow the streets, wondered greatly thereat; but

when

the

ject

frit

our

ers,

ing

for

hni

on,

fied

25

ery

the

the

in-

QUO

co-

00-

the

de,

2-

ol-

-0-

nuc

ied

10.

ces

m.

er:

W-

suc

cn

when they knew the reason why the throngs ran on heapes in such fort together, they grew as desirous to lee the Shrine, as any of the reft. Having ordered all affaires at their lodging, Marquiso faid; It is hit for us to fee this Saint, but I know not how wee thall attaine thereto, because (as I have heard) the place is guarded by Germaine Souldiers, and other warlike men, commanded thither by the Governor of this Cirie, leaft any outrage thould bee there committed: And beside, the Church is so full of people, as wee shall never compasse to get neere. Martellino being also as forward in defire to fee itsprefently replied. All this difficulty cannot difmay mce, but I will goe to the very body of the Saint it felfe. But how? quoth Marquiso I will tell thee, answered Martellino. I purpose to go in the disguise of an impotent lame person, supported on the one side by thy selfe, and and on the other by Stechie, as if I were not able to walke of my felfe : And you two thus fustaining mcc, defiring to come neere the Saint to cure mee ; every one will make way, and freely give you leave to goe on.

This device was very pleafing to Marquiso and Stechio, so that (without any further delaying) they all three left their lodging, and reforting into a secret corner aside. Martellino so writhed and mishaped his hands, singers, and armes, his legges, mouth, eyes, and whole countenance, that it was a dreadfull sight to looke upon him, and whosover beheld him, would verily have imagined, that he was atterly lame of his limbes, and greatly deformed in his body. Marquiso and Stechio, seeing all sorted so well as they could wish, tooke and led him towards the Church, making very pittious moane, and humbly design (for Gods sake) of every one that they met, to grant them free passage, whereto they charitably condescended.

thus

Novell.1. The Second Day,

Thus leading him on, crying; Beware there before, and give way for Gods fake, they arrived at the body of Saint Arriguo, that (by his helpe) he might be healed. And while all eyes were diligently observing, what miracle would be wrought on Martellins; he having fitten a small space upon the Saints body, and being sufficiently skilfull in counterfeiting, began first to extend forth the one of his singers, next his hand, then his arme, and so (by degrees) the rest of his body. Which when the people saw, they made such a wronderfull great noyle in prasse and commendation of Saint Arriguo, even as if it had thundered in the Church.

Now it chanced by ill fortune, that there stood a Florentine nere to the body, who knew Martelline verie perfectly, but appearing fo monstroully mishapen, when he was brought into the Church, he could take no knowledge of him. But when he faw him stand up and walke, he knew him then to be the man indeede; whereupon, hee faid: How commeth it to patie, that this fellow should be so miraculously cured, that never truly was any way impotent? Certaine men of the City hearing these words, entred into further questioning, demanding, how he knew that the man had no fuch imperfection? Well enough (answered the Florentime) I knew him to be as direct in his limbes and body, as you; I, or any of us all are ; but indeede, he knowes better how to diffemble counterfeit trickes, than any man else that ever I say in all the dayes of my life.

When they heard this, they discoursed no further with the Florentine, but pressed on mainely to the place where Mutellino stood, crying out aloud. Lay hold on this Traytor, a mocker of God, and his Saints, that had no lamenesse in his limbes; but to make a mocke of our Saint and us, came hither in falle and counteseit manback him to f

gain

for bear whi wit defi mu Kil fpar hov

ting

tre:

it,
flice
with
Lice
Inft
vill
may
doz
unh
peo

Pal

wh

Cu

MA

ner. So laying hands upon him, they threw him against the ground, and plucking him by the haire of his head, and tearing the garments from his backe, spurning him with their secte, and beating him with their fifts, that many were much ashamed to fec it.

Poore Martellino was in a pittifull case, crying out for mercy, but no man would heare him ; for, the more hee cryed, the more still they did beate him, as meaning to leave no life in him: which Steenio and Marquifo seeing, considered with themselves, that they were likewise in a desperate case; and therefore, fearing to bee as much miluled, they cried out among the rest, Kill the counterfeiting Knave, lay on loade, and spare him not; neverthelesse, they tooke care how to get him out of the peoples hands, as doubting, least they would kill him indeed, by their ex-

treame violence.

t

15

62

le

d

2

.

12

e

P

;

ıc

f

-

d

ic

's

e,

5,

of

h

e

n

ıd

11 1cr

Suddenly Marquilo bethought him how to doe it, and proceeded thus. All the Sergeants for luflice standing at the Church doore, hee ranne with all possible speede hee could to the Potestates Lieutenant, and faid unto him: Good my Lord luttice, helpc mee in an hard case; yonder is a villaine that hath cut my purse, I defire that hee may bee brought before you, that I may have my money againe. He hearing this, fent for a dozen of the Sergeants, who went to apprehend unhappie Martellino, and recover him from the peoples furie, leading him on with them to the Palace, no meane crowds thronging after him, when they heard that hee was accused to bee a Cutpurfe. Now durst they meddle no more with Martelline, but affifted the Officers; fome ofthem charging him in like manner, that kee had cut

their purles alfo.

Vpon these clamours and complaints, the Potestates Lieutenant (being a man of rude qualitie) rooke him fodenly afide, and examined him of the crimes werewith he was charged. But Martellino, as making no account of these accusations, laughed, and returned fooffing answers. Whereat the Judge, waxing much displeased, delivered him over to the Strappado, and flood by himfelfe, to have him confelle the crimes impoled on him and then to hang him afterward. Being let downe to the ground, the ludge ftill demanded of him, whether the accusations against him were time, or no? Affirming, that it nothing availed him to deny it : whereupon hee thus spake to the Judge. My Lord, I am here ready before you, to confesse the truth; but I pray you demand of all them that accuse mee, when and where I did cut their purses, and then I will tell you that, which (as yet) I have not done, otherwise I purpose to make you no more answer.

Well (quoth the Indge) thou requireft but reasons and calling divers of the accusers, one of them said; that he lost his purse eight dayes before; another said, fixe, another sourc, and some said the very same day. Which Martellino hearing, replied. My Lord, they all he in their throats, as I will plainely prove before you. I would to God I had never set source within this City, as it is not many houres since my first entrance, and presently after mine arrivall, I went (in evill houre I may say for me) to see the Saints body, where I was thus beaten as you may behold. That all this is true which I say unto you, the Seigneurie Officer that keeps your Booke of presentations will tellifie for me, as also the Host where I am lodged. Wherefore good my Lord, if you tinde all no otherwise, than I have

faid,

repo

V and t.ste alre plex buli pan, ging with pene Afte ande great vylio neft! poor

this! of The to had gers before pado would perform more different to the way.

him, cular dispar the ha faid, I humbly intreate you, that upon these bad mens reports, and false informations, I may not be thus tor-

mented, and put in-perill of my life.

While matters proceeded in this manner, Marquifo. and Stechio, understanding how roughly the Potetates Lieucenant dealt with Martelling, and that he had already given him the Strappado; were in heavy perplexitie, faying to themselves; we have carried this bulineffe very badly, redeeming him out of the Fryingpan, and flinging him into the fire. Whereupon, trudging about from pace to place, and meeting at length. with their Hoft, they told him truly how all had happened, whereat hee could not refraine from laughing. Afterward, he went with them to one Mafter Alexander Agolante, who dwelt in Trevers, and was in great credite with the Cities chiefe Magistrate, to whom he related the whole Discourse; all three earnestly entreating him, to commisserate the case of poore Martellino.

Master Alexander, after he had laughed heartily at this hot peece of service, went with him to the Lord of Trevers; prevailing so well with him, that he sent to have Martillino brought before him. The Messers that went for him, found him standing in his start before the ludge, verythrewally shaken with the Strippado, trembling and quaking pitifully. For the ludge would not heare any thing in his excuse; hating him (perhaps) because he was a Florentine: statly determined to have him hanged by the necke, and would not deliver him to the Lord, untill in meere despisht

he was compeld to doe it.

•

.

e

f

C

c

1;

١,

7.

11

u.

d

1

15

ue

at

e,

bo

ve

d,

The Lord of Trevers, when Martellino came before him, and had acquainted him truly with every particular: Mafter Alexander requested, that he might be dispatched thence for Florence, because he thought the halter to be about his necke, and that there was

no other helpe but hanging. The Lord fmiling (a long while) at the accident, and causing Martelling to be handlomly apparrelled, delivering them allo his Paffe, they escaped out of further danger, and tarried no where, tillthey came unto Florence,

Rinaldo de Efte, after he was robbed by Theeves, arrived at cafteau Guillaume, where he was friendly lodged by a faire Widdow, and recompensed likewife for all his loffes i returned after fafe and well home unto his owna houfe.

The fecond Nove Il.

Wher by we may learn that fuch things as fometimes freme hurtfull tous, may turne to our benefit and commodity

Mych merriment was among the Ladies, hearing this Tale of Martellinos misfortunes, so familiarly reported by Madam Neighilas and of the men, it was best respected by Philostratus, who fitting neerest unto Neiphila, the Queene commanded his Tale to be the next, when presently he began to speake thus.

Gracious Ladies, I am to speake of universall occafions, mingled with some misfortunes in part, and partly with matters leaning to love, as many times may happen to fuch people, that trace the dangerous pathes of amorous defires, or have not learned perfeely, to fay Saint Julians Pater Nofter, having good beds of their owne, yet casually meete with worser Lodging.

In the time of Agge, Marquelle of Ferrara, there was a Merchant named Rinaldo de Este, who being one day at Bologna, about some especiall busineffe of his own; his occasions there ended, and riding I fpea from thence towards Verena, he fell in company with for m other horsemen, seeming to be Merchants like himself, but indeede were Theeves, men of moft bad life and

converia-

d

a by

hi

to

Gal

ing be

YOU

WI

truc

M12t

doe

am :

thy (

for t

and

mea

that

nygr

elcap

to an

firmel

hould

conversation; yet he having no such mistrust of them, rode on, conferring with them very familiarly. They perceiving him to be a Merchant, and likely to have ome flore of money about him, concluded betweene themselves to rob him, so soone as they found apt place and opportunitie. But because hee should conceive no fuch suspition, they rode on like modest men, talking honefly and friendly with him, of good parts and disposition appearing in him, offering him all humble and gracious fervice, accounting themselves happie by his company, as hee returned the fame courtefic to them, because he was alone, and but one servent with him.

E

r-

it

ft

be

2-

nd

nes

OHS

oer-

ood

rfer

17.3 .

ver.a

Falling from one discourse to another, they beganne to talke of fuch prayers, as men (in journey) use to falute God withall; and one of the Theeves (they being three in number) spake thus to Rinaldo. Sir, let it be no offence to you that I defire to know, what prayer you most use when thus you travell on the way? Whereto Rinaldo replied in this manner. To tell you true Sir, I am a man groffe enough in fuch Divine matters, as medling more with Merchandize, than I doe with Boskes. Nevertheleffe, at all times when I am thus in journey, in the morning before I depart thy Chamber, I fay a Pater nofter, and an Ave Maria for the foules of the father and mother of Saint Iulians and after that, I pray God and Saint Iulian to fend me a good lodging at night. And let mee tell you Sir, that very oftentimes heretofore, I have met with many great dangers upon the way, from all which I still escaped, and evermore (when night drew on) I came who to an exceeding good lodging. Which makes mee buli- firmely beleeve, that Saint Iulian (in honour of whom iding I speake it) hath begged of God such great grace with for mee; and mee thinkes, that if any day I miels hould faile of this prayer in the morning: I cannot fe and travell

He and the rest, who had already determined how to handle him before they parted, faid within themfelves : Looke thou haft faid thy prayer, for when we have thy money, Saint Inlian and thou shift for thy lodging. Afterward, the same man thus againe confeed with him. As you Sir, fo I have ridden many journeies, and yet I never nied any fuch prayer, although I have heard it very much commended, and my lodging hath proved never the worfer. Perhaps this very night will therein refolve us both, whether of us two shall be the best lodged, you that have faid the Prayer, or I that never used it at all. But I must not deny, that in flead thereof, I have made use of some verles; as Dirupifti, or the Intemerata, or De profundis, which are (as my Grandmother hath often told

me) of very great vertue and efficacic.

Continuing thus in talke of divers things, winning way, and beguiling the time, ftill waiting when their purpose should fort to effect: it fortuned, that the Theeves feeing they were come neere to a Towne, called cartery Guillaume, by the foord of a River, the houre somewhat late, the place solitary, and thickely fluded with Trees, they made their affault; and having robd him, left him there on foste, fript into his thirt, faying to him. Goe now and fee, whether thy Saint Iulian will allow thee this night a good lodging, or no, for our owne wee are fufficiently provided; to paffing the River, away they rode. Rinadoes fervant, feeing his Mafter fo fharply affayled, like a wicked villaine, would not affift him in any fort bu giving his horfe the fourres, never left gallopping, untill he came to Callean Guillaume, where hee entre

upor

te

po

in

W:

Бу

the

Sai

tru

paff

upon the point of night, providing himselfe of a lodging, but not caring what became of his Mafter.

Rinaldo remaining there in his shirt, bare-foote and bare-legged, the weather extreamely cold, and inowing incessantly, and not knowing what to doe, darke night drawing on, and looking round about him for some place where to abide that night, to the end he might not die with cold; he found no helpe at all there for him, in regard that (no long while before) the late warre had burnt and wafted all and not fo much as the least Cottage left. Compelled by the colds violence, his teeth quaking, and all his body trembling, he trotted on towards Caffean Guillaume, not knowing whether his man was gone thither or no, or to what place elfe: but perswaded himselfe, that if he could get entrance, there was no feare of finding faccour. But before he came within halfe a mile of the Towne, the night grew extreamely darke, and arriving there fo late, he found the gates fast lockt, and the Bridges drawneup, fo that no entrance might be admitted.

d

25

er id

ft!

ne

71-

old

ing

rior

the

ne,

Ri-

and

ult;

tript

whe-

good

pro-

lina'-

I, like

t .bu

2,811

upor

Grieving greatly hereat, and being much discomforred, rufully he went fpying about the walls, for fome place wherein to fhrowd himfelfe, at leaff, to keepe the fnow from falling upon him. By good hap, he efpied an house upon the wall of the Town, which had a terrace jutting out as a Penthouse, under which he purpoice to fland all the night, and then to get him gone in the morning. At length, he found a doore in the wall, but very fast thut, and fome small straw lying by it, which he gathered together, and fitting downe thereon very pensively; made many lad complaints to Saint Iulian, laying: This was not according to the trust hee reposed in her. But Saint Julian, taking compaffion upon hirtr', without any over-long tarrying; F 2 provided provided him of a good lodging, as you shal hears how. In this towne of Chastean Gullaume, live a young Lady, who was a widdow, so beautifull aud comely of her person, as fildomseene a more lovely creature. The Marquelle Aggomoft dearely affected her and(as his choilest Iewell of delight) gave her that house to live in, under the terrace whereof poore Rinaldo made his flelter. It chanced the day before, that the Marquefle was come thither , according to his frequent custome, to weare away that night in her company, thee having secretly prepared a Bath for him, and a costly supper beside. All things being ready, and nothing wanting but the Marquelle his presence : suddenly a Post brought him fuch Letters, which commanded him instantly to take horsebacke, and word he fent to the Lady, to spare him for that night, because urgent occasions called him thence, and he rode

away immediately.

Much discontented was the Lady at this unexspected accident, and not knowing how to found the time, refolved to use the Bath which shee had made for the Mirquelle, and (after fupper) betake her felte to reft, and fo face entred into the Bath. Close to the doore where poore Rinaldo face, flood the Bath, by which meanes, thee being therein, heard all his quivering moanes, and complaints, feeming to be fuch, as the Swanne finging before her death: whereupon, flee cilled her Chambermaide, faying to her. Goe up as bove, and looke over the terrace on the wall downe to this doore, and fee who is there, and what hee doth-The Chambermaide went up aloft, and by a little elementing in the aire, thee faw a man fitting in his there, bare on feere and legges, trembling in manner before rehearfed. Shee demanding of whence, and what hee was, ; Rinaldnes teeth fo trembled in his head; as very bardly could hee forme any words, but (but (fo well as he could) told her what hee was, and how he came thither : most pitifully entreating her, that if shee could affoord him any helpe, not to suffer him to

flarve there to death with cold.

is

e

-

nt

y,

3

0-

d-

ard

e-

de

cd

he-

eff,

ore

ing

lice

1 35

e to

oth.

itile

his

mer

and

his

, but

(but

The Chamber-maide, being much moved to compassion, returned to her Lady, and told her all 5 fixe likewise pittying his diffreste, and remembring thee had the key of that doore, whereby the Marquelle both entred and returned, when he intended not to be feene of any, faid to her Maide. Goe, and open the doore foftly for him; wee have a good supper, and none to helpe to eate it, and if he be a man likely, wee can allow him one nights lodging too. The Chambermaide, commending her Lady for this charitable kindneffe, opened the doore, and feeing hee appeared as halfe frozen, the faid unto him. Make hafte good man, get thee into this Bath, which yet is good and warme, for my Lady her felfe came but newly out of it. Whereto very gladly he condescended, as not tarrying to be bidden twife; finding himfelfe to fingularly comforted with the heate thereof, even as if hee had beene restored from death to life. Then the Lady fent him garments, which lately were her deceafed husbands, and fitted him fo aptly in all refpects, as if purposely they had beene made for him.

Attending in further expectation, to know what elfe the Lady would command him; he began to remember God and Saint Iulian, heartily thanking her, for delivering him from fo bad a night as was threat-ned towards him, and bringing him to fo good entertainement. After all this, the Lady caufing a faire fire to be made in the neerest Chamber beneathe, went and fate by it her selfe, demanding how the honest man fared Madam, answered the Chambermande, now that he is in your deceased Lords garments, hee appeareth to bee a very goodly Gentleman, and

F 3 (que-

questionlesse) is of respective birth and breeding, well deserving this gracious savour which you have affoorded him. Goe then (quoth the Lady) and conduct him bither, to sit by this fire, and sup here with mee, for I search that had but a forrie supper. When Rinaldo was entred into the Chamber, and beheld her to be such a beautiful Lady, accounting his fortune to exceede all compassion, he did her most humble reverence, expressing so much thankefulnesse, as possibly he could, for this her extraordinary grace and favour.

The Lady fixing a fted falt eye upon him, well liking his gentle language and behaviour, perceiving alfo, how firly her deceased husbands apparell was formed to his person, and resembling him in all familiar respects, he appeared (in her judgement) farre beyond the Chambermaides commendations of him; so praying him to sit downe by her before the fire, the questioned with him, concerning this unstappy nights accident befalne him, wherein he fully resolved her, and the was the more perswaded; by reason of his servants comming into the Towne before night, assuring him; that hee should be found for him early in the morning.

Supper being served in to the Table, and liee seated according as the Lady commanded; thee began to observe him very considerately; for hee was a goodly man, compleate in all persection of person, a delicate pleasing countenance, a quicke alluring eye, fixed and constant, not wantonly gadding, in the joviall youthfulnesse of his time, and truest temper for amorous appresention; all these were as battering Engines agents a Bulwarke of no strong resistance, and wrought strangely upon her stexible affections. And though thee fed heartily, as occasion constrained, yet her thoughts had entertained a new kinde of dier, digested onely by the eye; yet so cunningly concealed, that no motive

motive to immodefty could be discerned. Her mercy thus extended to him in mifery, drew on by Table difcourse) his birth, education, Parents, friends; and allies; his wealthy pollessions by Merchandize, and a found stabilitie in his estate, but above all (and best of all) the fingle and fole condition of a batchelor; an apt and cafe freele to frike fire, especially upon such quick taking tinder, and in a time favored by Fortune.

No imbarment remained, but remembrance of the Marquelle, and that being fummoned to her more advised confideration, her youth and beauty stood up as confcious accusers, for blemishing her honour and faire repute, with lewde and luxurious life, farre unfit for a Lady of her degree, and well worthy of generall condemnation. What should I further fay? Vpon a thore conference with her Chamber-maide, repensance for finne past, and folemne promife of a conifant conversion, thus thee delivered her minde to

Rinaldo.

ell

r-

a

e,

1-

er

to

e-

ly

ŕ-

ır

d

d

-

.

Sir, as you have related your fortunes to mee, by this your casuall happing hither, if you can like the motion fo well as thee that makes it; my deceased Lord and Husband living to perfectly in your perfon; this house and all mine is yours; and of a widdow, I will become your wife, except (unmanly) you deny me. Rivaldo hearing these words, and proceeding from a Lady of fuch absolute perfections, prefuming upon fo proud an offer, and condemning himfelfe of folly if he should refuse it thus replied. Madam, confidering that I fland bound for ever hereafter, to confelle that you are the gracious preferver of my life, and I no way able to returne requitall; if you please to thadow mine infufficiencie, and to accept me and my fairest fortunes to doe you service : let me die before 2 thought of deniall, or any way to yeeld you the least discontentineat.

Here wanted but a Prieft to joyne their hands, as mutuall affection already had done their hearts, which being sealed with infinite killes, the Chambermaide called up Frier Roger her Confessor, and wedding and bedding were both effected before the bright morning. In briefe, the Marqueffe having heard of the marriage, did not millike it, but confirmed it by great and honourable gifes. And having fent for his difhonest Servant, he dispatched him (after sound reprehenfion) to Ferrara, with Letters to Rinaldoes Father and Friends, of all the accidents that had befalne him, Moreover, the very fame morning, the three Theeves that had robbed, and foill intreated Rinaldo, for another fat by them the same night committed, were taken, and brought to the Towne of Chasteau Guillaume, where they were hanged for their offences, and Rinaldo with his wife rode to Ferrara.

Three young Gentlemen, being Brethren, and having spent all their Lands and possessions vainely, became poore. A Nephew of theirs (falling almost into as desperate a condition) became acquainted with an Abbot, whom he afterward found to be the King of Englands Daughter, and made him her Husband in marriage, recompencing all his Uncles losses, and seating them againe in good estate.

The third Novell.
Wherein is declared the dangers of prodigalitie, and the

manifold mutabilities of Fortune.

The fortunes of Rinaldo de Este, being heard by the Ladies and Gentlemen, they admired his happines, and commended his devotion to Saint Julian, who in such extreame necessitie) sent him so good succour. Nor was the Lady to be blamed, for leaving

Knight

bafe liberry, and converting to the chafte embraces of the marriage bed, the dignitie of womens honour, and eternall difgrace living otherwise. While thus they discanted on the happy night betweene her and Rinaldo, Madane Pampinea fitting next to Philosiratus, confidering, that her Discourse must follow in order, and thinking on what the was to fay; the Queene had no fooner fent out her command, but fhee being no lefle faire than forward, began in this manner.

Ladies of great respect, the more we conferre on the accidents of Fortune, fo much the more remaineth to confider on her mutabilities, wherein there is no neede of wonder, if discretly we observe that all such things as wee fondly tearme to be our owne, are in her power, and so (consequently) change from one to another, without any flay or airest (according to her concealed judgement) or feeled order (at leaft) that can be knowne to us. Now, although these things appeare thus daily to us, even apparently in all occasions, and as hath beene discerned by some of our precedent Discourses; yet notwithstanding, seeing it pleaseth the Queene that our arguments thould aime at these ends, I will adde to the former Tales anoother of my owne, perhaps not unprofitable for the hearers, nor unpleasing in observation.

Sometime beretofore, these dwelt in our Citie, a Knight named Signier Theobaldo, who (according as foome doe report) iffued from the Family of Lamberti, but others derive him of the A-; golantis guiding (perhaps) their opinion herein, more from the traine of Children, belonging to the faid. Theobaldo (evermore equall to that of the Agelanti) than any other matter elfe. But fetting afide from which of these two houses hee came, I: fay, that in his time hee, was a very wealthy Knight, and had three sonnes; the first being named Lamberto, the second Theobalde, and the third Agilanto, all goodly and gracefull youths: howbeit, the eldest had not compleated eighteene yeares, when Signior Theobaldo the Father deceased, who lest them all his goods and inheritances. And they, seeing themselves rich in ready moneyes and revenewes, without any other government than their owne voluntary disposition, kept no restraint upon their expences, but maintained many servants, and store of unvalewable Horses, besides Hawkes and Hounds, with open house for all commers; and not onely all delights else sit for Gentlemen, but what vanities beside best agreed with

their wanton and youthfull appetites.

Not long had they runne on this race, but the Treasures left them by their Father, began to diminish; and their Revenewes sufficed not, to Support fuch lavish expences as they had begun: but they fell to engaging and pawning their inheritances, felling one to day, and another to morrow, fo that they faw themselves quickely come to nothing, and then poverty opened their eyes, which prodigality had before clozed up. Hereupon, Lamberto (on a day) calling his Brethren to him, thewed them what the honours of their Father had beene, to what height his wealth amounted, and now to what ebbe of poverty it was falne, onely thorow their inordinate expences. Wherefore hee counselled them, (as best he could) before further-milery insuled over them, to make fale of the small remainder that was left, and then to betake themselves unto some other abiding, where fairer Fortune might chance to thine upon them.

This advice prevailed with them; and fo, without taking leave of any body, or other folemnitie than closest fecrocie, they departed from Florence, not tak-

i

-

at [-

lc

h

ie

0

0

ut

3,

ıd

ic

y

ft.

r,

i-

-

n

-

19

tying in any place untill they were arrived in England. Comming to the City of London, and taking there a fmall house upon yearely rent, living on so little charge as poffibly might be, they began to lend our money at use : wherein Fortune was to favourable to them, that (in few yeares) they had gathered a great fumme of money: by meanes whereof it came to paffe, that one while one of them, and afterward another, returned backe againe to Florence: where, with thole fummes, a great part of their inheritances were redeemed, and many other more bought beside. Linking themselves in marriage, and yet continuing their ulances in England, they fent a Nephew of theirs thither, named Aleffandro, a young man, and of faire demeanour, to maintaine their flocke in employment; while they three remained still in Florence, and growing forgetfull of their former mifery, tell againe into as unreasonable expences as ever, never respecting their houshold charges, because they had good credite among the Merchants, and the monies still fent from Aleffandro, inpporting their expences divers yeares.

The dealings of Alexandro in England grewvery great; for hee lent out much money to many Gentlemen, Lords, and Barons of the Land, upon engagement of their Manors, Castles, and other revenewes: from whence he derived immeasurable benefit. While the three Brethren held on in their lavish expences, borrowing moneyes when they wanted until their supplies came from England, whereon (indeede) was their enely dependance: it fortuned, that (contrary to the opinion of all men) warre happened betweene the King of England, and one of his tonnes, which occafioned much trouble in the Country, by taking part on either side, some with the sonnes and other with the Father. In regard whereof, those Cassles and

P'accs

places, pawned to Aleffandro, were suddenly seized from him, nothing then remaining, that turned him any profite. But living in hope day by day, that peace would be concluded betweene the Father and the Sone, he never doubted, but all things then should bee restored to him, both the principall and interest, and therefore hee would not depart out of

the Countrey.

The three Brethren at Florence, bounding within no limits their disordered spending, borrowed daily more and more. And after some few yeares, the Creditors seeing no effect of their hopes to come from them, all credit being lost with them, and no repayment of promised dues, they were imprisoned, their Lands and all they had, not suffising to pay the moitie of Debts, but their bodies remained in prison for the rest, their wives and young children being sent thence, some to one Village, some to another, so that nothing now was to be expected, but povertie and misery of life for ever.

As for honeit Alessandro, who had awaited long time for peace in England, perceiving there was no likelihood of it; and confidering also, that (beside his tarrying there in vaine to recover his dues) he was in danger of his life; without any further deterring, hee fet away for Italy. It came to passe, that as hee illued forth of Bruges, hee faw a young Abbot also journeying thence, being clothed in white, accompanied with divers Monkes, and a great traine before, conducting the needefull carriage. Two ancient Knights, kinfmen to the King, followed after; with whom Aleffandro acquainced himselfe, as having formerly known them, and was kindly accepted into their company. Aleffaudro riding along with them courteoxilly requested to know, what those Monkes were that rode before, & fuch a train attending on the? Wherto

one of the Knights thus answered.

He that rideth before is a young gentleman, and our Kinsman, who is newly elected Abbot of one of the best Abbyes in England, and because he is more young in yeares, than the degrees of such a dignity doe allow, we travaile with him to Rome, to intreat our Holy Father, that his youth may be dispensed withall, and he confirmed in the sayd dignitie; but he is not to speake a word to any person. On rode this new Abbot, sometimes before his Traine, and other whiles after, as we see great Lords use to doe, when they ride upon the high-wayes.

It chanced on a day, that Alessand o rode somewhat neere to the Abbot, who stedsastly beholding him, perceived that he was a very comely young man, so assable, lovely, and gracious, that even in his first encounter, he had never seen any man before that better pleased him. Calling him a little closer, he began to conferre familiarly with him, demanding what hee was, whence he came, and whither he travelled. Alessandro imparted freely to him all his affaires, in every thing satisfying his demands, and offering (although his power was small) to doe him all the service hee

when the Abbot had heard his gentle answeres, so wisely and discreetely delivered, considering also (more particularly) his commendable carriage, hee tooke him to be (at the least) a well-borne Gentleman, and farre differing from his owne logger-beaded traine. Wherefore, taking compassion on his great misfortunes, hee comforted him very kindly, withing him to bee of good cheere, and to live alwayes in good hope. For if he were vertuous and honest, hee should surely attaine to the seate from whence Fortune had throwne him, or rather be exalted much higher. Intreating him also, that

t

Novell. 2. The Second Day,

that feeing he journied towards Tufcany, as he himfelfe did the like, to continue still (if he pleased) in his company. Alesfandro most humbly thanked him for such gracious comfort; protesting, that he would be alwayes ready to doe whatsoever he commanded.

The Abbot riding on, with newer crotchets in his braine than he had before the fight of Alessandro, it fortuned, that after divers daves of travaile, they came to a small Country Village, which afforded little flore of Lodging, and yet the Abbot would needes lye there. Alessandro, being well acquainted with the Hofte of the house, willing him to provide for the Abbot and his people, and then to lodge him where hee though it meetelt. Now before the Abbots comming thither, the Harbenger that marshalled all such matters, had provided for his Traine in the Village, some in one place, and others elsewhere, in the best manner that the Towne could yeeld. But when the Abbot had fupt, a great part of the night being foent, and evety one elle at his reft; Aleffandro demanded of the Hofte what provision he had made for him, and how hee fhould be lodged that night?

In good fadnesse Sir (quoth the Hoste) you see that my house is full of Guests, so that I and my people must gladly steepe on the tables, and benches: Nevernthelesse, next adjoyning to my Lord Abbots Chamber, there are certaine Corn losts, whither I can closely bring you, and making shift there with a stender Palierbed, it may serve for one night, in stead of a better, But mine Hoste (quoth Alessaniro) how can I passe those would not aslow lodging for any of his Monkes? If I had remembred so much (sayd the Hoste) before the Curtaines were drawne, I could have lodged his Monkes in the Corne-losts, and then both you and I might have sleept where now they doe. But scare you

not.

V

ly

fe

fri

an bo

thi

œi

lea

VIC

tho

not, my Lords Curtaines are close drawne, he fleeperh (no doubt) foundly, and I can conveigh you thither quietly enough, without the least diffurbance to him, and a Paller-bed shall befired there for you. Aleffandro perceiving that all this might eafily be done, and no difease offered to the Abbot, accepted it willingly and went thither without any noyfe at all.

e

e

, .

C

e

-

t

-

te

c

C c

1 ...

г,

ly

et.

r.

0-

it

be

is I

u

ot

My Lord Abbot, whose thoughts were so bufied about amorous defires, that no fleepe at all could enter his eyes, heard all this talke betweene the Hoft and Aleffandro, as also where he was appointed to Lodge, he Tayd thus within himfelfe. Seeing Fortune hath fitted me with a propitious time, to compasse the happinesse of my hearts defire; I know no reason why I should refule it. Perhaps I shall never have the like ofter againe, or ever be enabled with fuch an oportunitie. So, being fully intended to profecute his intention, and perlwading himselfe allo, that the filence of the night had bestowed sleepe on all the rest; with a low and flender voyce he called Aleffandro, advising him to come and lye downe by him, which (after some few faint excufes) he did, and putting off his cloathes, lay downe by the Abbot, being not a little proud of so gracious a favour.

The Abbot, laying his arme over the others body, began to imbrace and hugge him; even as amorous friends (provoked by earnest affection) use to doe. Wherear Aleffandrovery much mervailing, and being an Italian himselfe, fearing least this folly in the Abbot, would convert to foule and dishonest action, thrunke modefly from him. Which the Abbot perceiving, and doubting least A'effandrowould depart and leave him, pleafantly fmiling, and with baffifull behaviour baring his flomacke, he tooke Aleffandres hand, and laying it thereon, fayd; Aleffandro, let allbad thoughts of best milabine be farre off from thee, and

feel:

feele here, to refolve thee from all such feare. Aleffandro feeling the Abbots bress, found there two pretty little mountaines, round, plumpe, and smooth, appearing as if they had beene of polished Ivory; whereby he perceived, that the Abbot was a woman: which, setting an edge on his youthfull desires, made him fall to embracines & immediately he offered to kille her; but she somewhat rudely repulsing him, as offended, sayd.

n

ta

P

00

th

liv

m

nı

35

the

ha

Tr

ria

my

Co

an

YOU

caf

frai

and

ma

WC

our

A'essandro, forbeare such boldnesse, upon thy lives persili, and before thou farther presume to touch me, understand what I shall tell thee, am (as thou perceivest) nomanabut a womana and departing a Virgin from my Fathers house, am travailing towards the Popes holinesse, to the end that he should bestow me in marriage. But the other day, when first I beheld thee, whether it proceeded from thy happinesse in fortune, or the fatall house of my owne infelicity for ever, I know not is conceived such an effectuall kinde of liking towards thee, as never did a woman love a man more truely than I doe thee, having swoone within my soule to make thee my Husband before any other; and if thou wilt not accept me as thy wise, set a lock upon thy lips concerning what thou hast heard, and depart to thine owne bed againe.

No donbt, but that these were strang newes to Aleffundro, and seemed meerely as a mirrole to him. What she was, he knew not, but in regard of her traine and company, he reputed her to be both noble and rich, as also the was wonderfull faire and beautifull. His owne fortunes stood out of squire expectation, by his kinfmens overthrow, and his great losses a England syherfore, upon an opportunity so fairely offered, hee held it no wisedome to returne refusall, but accepted her gracious motion, and referred all to her disposing. She arising out of her bed, called him to a little bed standing by, where hung a faire Crucific upon the wall; before which, and calling him to witnesse, that suffered such bit er

bitter and civell tormems on his Crosse, putting a ring on his singer, there the faithfully espoused him, refusing all the world to be onely his which being on either side confirmed, by an holy Vow, and chaste kisses; she commanded him back to his Chamber, and the returned to her bed againe, sufficiently satisfied withher loves acceptation, and so they journed on till they came to Rome.

When they had refled themselves there some few dayes, the supposed Abbot, with the two Knights, and none else to accompany but Alessando, went before the Pope, and having done him such reverence as beseemed,

the Abbot began to speake in this manner.

1-

y

y

1,

11

UC

1-

1)

i-

c.

10

11

11-

35

oc

ny

pt

at

ie.

1-19

ac

ba

as

ne

11-

er-

זנו

ci-

ri-

ng

orc

ich

cr

Holy Father (as you know much better than any other) every one that defireth to live well and vertuoufly, ought to flunne (fo farre as in him lyeth) all occasions that may induce to the contrary. To the end therefore that I (who defire nothing more) than to live within the compasse of a vertuous conversation, may perfect my hopes in this behalfe: I have fled from my Fathers Court, and am come hither in this habite as you fee, to crave therein your holy and fatherly furtherance. I am daughter to the King of England, and have fufficiently furnished my selfe with some of his Treasures, that your Holinesse may bestow me in marriage; because my unkinde Father, never regarding my youth and beauty (inferiour to few in my native Country)would marry me to the King of North-Wales, an aged, impotent, and fickely man. Yet let me tell your fancticy, that his weaknelle hath not fo much occafioned my flight, as feare of mine owne youth and frailty; when being married to him, in flead of loyall and unstained life, lewd and dishonest desires might make me to wander, by breaking the divine Lawes of wedlocke, and abusing the royall blood of my Father.

As I travailed hither with this vertuous intention, our Lord, who onely knoweth perfectly, what is

best fitting for all his creatures; presented mine eyes, (no doubt in his meere mercy and goodnesse) with a man meete to be my husband, which (pointing to A'effandro) is this young Gentleman standing by me whose honest, vertuous, and civill demeanour, deferweth a Lady of farre greater worth, although (perhaps) Nobility in blood be denied him, and may make him seeme not so excellent, as one derived from Royall descent, Holy and religious vowes have passed betweene us both, and the Ring on his tinger, is the firme pledge of my faith and conftancie, never to accept any other man in marriage, but him onely, although my Father, or any elfe doe diflike it. Wherefore (holy Father) the principall cause of my comming hither, being already effectually concluded on, I deare to compleat the rest of my Pilgrimage, by visiting the fan Sified places in this City, whereof there are great plenty: And also, that facred marriage, being contracted in the presence of God onely, betweenc Aleffandro and my lelfe, may by you be publikely confirmed, and in an open congregation. For feeing God hath fo appointed it, and our foules have fo folemnely vowed it, that no difaster whatsoever can alter it : you being Gods Vicar here on earth, I hope will not gainefay, but confirme it with your fatherly benediction, that we may live in Gods feare and dye in his fayour.

Periwade your felves (faite Ladies) that Aleffandro was in no meane admiration, when he heard, that his wife was daughter to the King of England, unspeakeable joy (questionlesse) wholly overcame him; but the two Kinghts were not a little troubled and offended, at such a strange and unexpected accident; yea, so violent were their possions, that had they beene any where eife, than in the Popes presence, Alessandro had felt their sury, and (perhaps) the Principle her selfe

re

31

re

O

CC

21

n

W

CO

fa

li

ad

n

ap

to

hi

w

th

an

R

ne

th

die

(n

po

Ag

Pa

tai

Kı

fucceffe:

too. On the other fide, the Pope was much amazed at the habit she went disguised in, and likewise at the election of her husband; but perceiving there was no refistance to be made against it, he yeelded the more willingly to satisfie her defire. And therefore having first comforted the two Knights, and made peace between them, the Princesse, and Alessandro, he gave

order for the reft that was to be done.

O

)

e

1-

.

ig,

3

e

13

10

1-

b

ly

u

30

1-

3-

10

is

C-

1-

2,

14

ad.

te

170

When the appointed day for the folemnity was come, he caused the Princette (cloathed in most rich and royall garments) to appeare before all the Cardinalls and many other great persons then in presence, who were come to this worthy feaft, which hee had caused purposely to be prepared, where she seemed so faire and goodly a Lady, that every eye was highly delighted to behold her, commending her with no meane admiration. In like manner was Aleffandro greatly honoured by the two Knights, being most sumptuous in appearance, and not like a man that had lent money to ulury, but rather of very royall quality; the Pope himselfe celebrating the marriage betweene them, which being finished, with the most magnificent pomp that could be devised, he gave them his benediction, and licenced their departure thence.

Alessandro, his Princesse and her traine thus leaving Rome, they would needes visite Florence, where the newes of this accident was (long before) noysed, and they received by the Citizens in royall manner. There did she deliver the three brethren out of prison, having first payed all their debts, and research them againe (with their wives) in their former inheritances and possessions. Afterward departing from Florence, and Agolanto, one of the Vneles travailing with them to Paris; they were there also most honourably entertained by the King of France. From whence the two Knights went before for England, and prevailed so

Novell.3. The Second Day,

fuccesses with the King, that he received his daughter into grace and favour, as also his Sonne in law her husband, to whom he gave the order of Knighthood, and (for his greater dignitie) created him Earle of Cornewall.

And fuch was the noble spirit of Alessandro, that hee pacified the troubles betweene the King and his sonne, whereon ensued great comfort to the Kingdome, winning the love and favour of all the people; and Agolaz10 (by the meanes of Alessandro) recovered all that was due to him and his brethren in England, returning richly home to Florence, Count Alessandro (his kinsman) having first dub'd him Knight. Long time be lived in peace and tranquility, with the faire Princesse his wife, proving to be so absolute in wisedome, and so famous a Souldier; that (as some report) by assistance of his Father in law, he conquered the Realme of 11c-11and, and was crowned King thereof.

Landolpho Ruffolo, falling into poverty, became a Plrate on the Seas, and being taken by the Genemayer, hardly escaped drowning: Which yet (veverthelesse) hedid, upon a little chest or Cosser, sull of
very rich lewels, being carried thereon to Cosser,
where he was well entertained by a good woman;
And afterward, returned richly home to his owne
house.

The fourth Novell.

Whereby may be differred, into how many dangers a man may fall, enrough a covetous defire to enrich himselfe.

MAdam Lauretts, fitting next to Madam Pampinea, and feeing how triumphantly she had finished her discourse; without attending any thing else, spake thus. Gracious Ladyes, wee shall never behold (in mine opinion) a greater act of Fortune, than to see a

man

m;

of

co

ha

pe

ful

far

th

fo

Ы

ha

di

le

ha fu m

th

da

a

m

lo

20

di

hi

th

of

vv

man to suddenly exaked, even from the lowest depth of poverty, to a Royall estate of dignity; as the discourse of Madam Pampinea hath made good, by the happy advancement of Alessandro. And because it appeareth necessary, that whosoever discourseth on the subject proposed. should no way vary from the very same termes; I shall not shame to tella tale, which, though it contains farregreater mishaps than the former, may fort to as happy an issue, albeit not so noble and magnificent. In which respect, it may (perhaps) merit the less attention; but how so everthat tault shall be found in me, I meane to discharge my owned duty.

e

-

11

e

e

o

c

1-

2-

7-

of

u,

mi

ne

an

fc.

ca,

ur

ke in

e a an Opinion hath made it famous for long time, that the Sea coast of Rbegium to Gaieta, is the onely delectable part of all Italy, wherein, somewhat neere to Salerno, is a shore looking upon the Sea, which the inhabitants there dwelling, doe call the coast of Malsie, full of small Townes, Gardens, Springs, and wealthy men, trading in as many kindes of Merchandizes, as any other people that I know Among which Townes, there is one, named Ravello, wherein (as yet to this day there are rich people) there was (not long since) a very wealthy man, named Landolpho Russolo, who being not contented with his riches, but covering to multiply them double and trebble, fell in danger, to loose both himselfe and wealth together.

This man (as other Merchants are wont to doe) after he had confidered on his affaires, bought hima very goodly Ship, lading it with divers forts of Merchandizes, all belonging to himfelfe onely, and making his voyage to the Ille of cyprus. Where he found, over and befide the Merchandizes hee had brought thither, many Shippes more there arrived, and all of them laden with the fame commodities, in regard whereof, it was needfull for him, not onely to make a

boog

Novell.4. The Second Day,

good Mart of his goods; but also was further conferained (if he meant to vent his commodities) to sell them away (almost) for nothing, endangering his utter destruction and overthrow. Whereupon grieving exceedingly at so great a loile, not knowing what to doe, and seeing, that from very abundant wealth, he was likely to fall into as low poverty: he resolved to dye, or to recompence his losses upon others, because he would not return home poore, having departed thence so rich.

Meeting with a Merchant, that bought his great Ship of him; with the money made thereof, and also his other Merchandizes, he purchased another, being alighter vessell, apt and proper for the use of a Pirate, arming and furnishing it in ample manner, for roving and robbing upon the Seas. Thus he began to make other mens goods his owne, especially from the Turkes he tooke much wealth, Fortune being alwayes fo favourable to him, that he could never compaffe the like by trading. So that, within the space of one yeare, he had robd and takenso many Gallies from the Turk, that he found himselfe well recovered, not onely of all his loffes by Merchandize, but likewife his wealth was wholly redoubled. Finding his loifes to be very liberally requited, and having now sufficient, it were folly to hazard a second fail; wherefore conferring with his owne thoughts, and finding that he had enough; and needed not to covet after more: he fully concluded, now to returne home to his owne house againe, and live upon his goods thus gotten.

Continuing still in feare of the losse he had sustained by traffique, and minding never more to imploy his money that way, but to keepe this light vessels, which had holpen him to all his wealth; he commanded his men to put forth their Oares, and shape their course for his owne dwelling. Being aloft in the higher

Seas,

p

p

PI

af

fi

Pi

m

al

P

01

fi

31

it

0

(c

lc

b

fu

lo

6]

So

W

te

la

Seas, darke night over-taking them, and a mighty winde fuddenly comming upon them; it not onely was contrary to their course, but held on with such impetuous violence; that the small vessell, being unable to endure it, made to land-ward speedily, and in expedation of a more friendly wind, entred a little port of the Sea, directing up into a small Island, and there fafely shelrred it felfe. Into the same port which Landolpho had thus taken for his refuge, entred (foone after) two great Carrackes of Genewayes, lately come from constantinople. When the men in them had efpied the small Barke, and lockt up her passage from getting forth; understanding the Owners name, and that report had famed him to be very rich, they determined (as men evermore addicted naturally, to cover after money and spoyle) to make it their owne as a

prize at Sea.

11

is

at

1,

d

fe

ed

at

10

ng

tc,

92

kc

es

fo

he

re,

rk,

all

yas

oc-

ol-

rich

gh;

·lu-

ne,

lai-

volo

fell,

an-

heir

gher cas,

Landing some store of their men, well armed with Croffe-bowes and other weapons, they tooke poffeffi on of fuch a place, where none durst iffue forth of the fmall Barke, but endangered his life with their Darts and Arrowes. Entring aboord the Barke, and making it their owne by full possession, all the men they threw over-boord, without sparing any but Landolpho himfelfe, whom they mounted into one of the Carrackes, leaving him nothing but a poore thirt of Maile on his backe, and having rifled the Barke of all her riches, funke it into the bottome of the Sea. The day following, therough windes being calmed, the Carrackes fet sayle againe, having a prosperous passage all the day long; but upon the entrance of darke night, the winds blew more tempestuously than before, and sweldthe Sea in fuch rude ftormes, that the two Carrackes were fundred each from other, and by violence of the tempeft it came to passe, that the Carracke wherein lay poore miserable Lande'pho (beneath the Isle of cephalonis) ran against a rocke, and even as a glasse against a wall, so split the Carracke in peeces, the goods and merchandize floating on the Sea, Chests, Costers, Beds, and such like other things, as often happeneth

h

tl

h

ef

th

W

lc

he

ca

do

up

La

vey

ver

rre:

hin

he l

ner

had

upo

his

not

reco

best

Nev

Che

in, f

in fuch lamentable accidents.

Now notwithstanding the nights obscurity, and impernous violence of the billows; fuch as could fwimme, made that to fave their lives by swimming. Others caught hold on fuch things, as by Fortunes favour, floated nearest to them, among whom, distressed Landolpho, defirous to fave his life, if possible it might be, espied a Chest or Coster before him, ordained (no doubt) to be the meanes of his fafety from drowning. Now although the day before, hee had wished for death infinite rimes, rather than to returne home in fuch wretched poverty; yet, feeing how other men strove for safety of their lives by any helpe, were it never so little, hee tooke adayntage of this favour offered him, and the rather in a necessitie so'urgent. Keeping fait upon the Coffer fo well as he could, and being driven by the winds and waves, one while this way, and anon quite contrary, hee made shift for himselfe till day appeared; when looking every way about him. feeing nothing but clouds, the feas, and the Coffer, which one while thrunke from under him, and another while supported him, according as the windes and billowes carried it: all that day and night thus he floated up and downe, drinking more than willingly he would, but almost hunger-starved thorow want of foodo. The next morning, either by the appointment of heaven or power of the windes, Landulpho who was (well-neere) become a Spunge, holding his armes Atrongly about the Cheft, as we have feene fome doe, who (dreading drowning) take hold on any the very fmalleft helpe; drew neere unto the fhore of the Hand cor , where (by good fortune) a poore woman was 1cowning feowring diffies with the falt water and fand, to make them (house-wife like) neate and cleane.

When the faw the Cheft drawing neere her, and not discerning the shape of any man, she grew fearefull, and retyring from it, cryed out aloud. Hee had no power of speaking to her; neither did his fight doe him the smallest service; but even as the waves and windes pleased, the Chest was driven still neerer to the Land, and then the woman perceived that it had the forme of a Cofer, and looking more advisedly, beheld two armes extended over it, and afterward, thee espied the face of a man, not being able to judge, whether he were alive, or no. Mooved by charitable and womanly compassion, shee stept in among the billowes, and getting fast hold on the hayre of his head, drew both the Cheft and him to the Land, and calling forth her daughter to helpe her, with much a. doe the unfolded his armes from the Cheft, fetting it upon her daughters head, and then betweene them, Lando pho was led into the Towne, and there conveyed into a warme Stove, where quickely hee recovered/by her paines)his strength, benummed with, extreame cold.

0

n

n

C-

d

ng

11-

nd

ill

mi,

cr,

10-

des

he

igly

t of

ent

Was

rmes

doc,

very

land

a was

viing

Good wines and comfortable broathes she cherished him withal, that his sences being indifferently restored, he knew the place where he was; but not in what manner he was brought thither, till the good woman had shewed him the Cofer that had kept him floating upon the waves, and (next under God) having saved his life. The Chest seemed of such slender weight, that nothing of any value could be expected in it, either to recompence the womans great paines and kindnesse bestowed on him, or any matter of his owne benefit. Neverthelesse, the woman being absent, he opened the Chest, and sound innumerable precious stones therein, some costly and eurious set in gold, and others not

Novell.4. The Second Day,

fixed in any mettall. Having knowledge of their great worth and value (being a Merchant, and skil'd in such matters) he became much comforted, praying God for his good successe, and such an admirable meanes of

deliverance from danger.

Then confidering with himselfe that (in a short time) he had beene twice well buffeted and beaten by Fortune; least a third mishap might follow in like manner, hee consulted with his thoughts, how hee might fafely order the bufineffe, and bring fo rich a booty (without perill) to his owne home. Wherefore, wrapping up the Iewels in very unfightly colours that no futpition at all should be conceived of them, he fayd to the good woman, that the Cheft would not doe him any further fervice; but if the pleafed to lend him a small facke or bagge, the might keepe the Cofer, for in her house it would divers way Read her. The evoman gladly did as he defired, and Landolpho returning her infinite thankes, for the loving kindnesse thee had offered him, throwing the sacke on his necke, palfed by a Barke to Brundusium, and from thence to Tranium, where Merchants in the City bestowed good garments on him, hee acquainting them with his difasterous fortunes, but not a word concerning his last good successe.

Being come home in fatery to Ravello, he fell on his knees, and thanked God for all his mercies towards him. Then opening the facke and viewing the lewels at more leafure than formerly he had done, he found them to be of fogreat estimation, that selling them but a ordinary and reasonable rates, he was three times richer, than when hee departed first from his house. And having vented them all he sent a great summe of money to the good woman at Corfu, that had rescued him out of the Sea, and saved his life in a danger so dreadfull. The like he did at Transum, to the Mer-

chants

dre

fes,

pos

in l

othe

even

Hoff

wher

chants that newly cloathed him; living richly upon the remainder, and never adventuring more to the Sea, but ended his dayes in wealth and honour.

Andrea de Piero, travelling from Perouse to Naples to buy Horses, was (in the space of one night) surprised by three admirable accidents, out of all which he fortanately escaped, and with a rich Ring, returned home to his owne house.

The fife Novell.

Comprehending, how needfull a thing it is, for a man that travelleth in affaires of the World, to be provident and well advised, and carefully to keepe himselfe from the deceitfull allurements of Strumpers.

The precious Stones and lewels found by Landolpho, maketh me to remember (fayd Madam Fiammetta, who was next to deliver her discourse) a Tale,
containing no lesse perils, than that reported by Madam Lauretta: but somewhat different from it, because
the one happened in sundry yeeres, and this other had
no longer time, than the compasse of one poore night,

as inflantly I will relate unto you.

ot

d

τ,

he re-

ıd-

cke

and

Ci-

ting

prord

n his

rards

elsat

them

butat

times

house.

me of

ad re-

danger

e Mer-

chants

As I have heard reported by many, there fometime lived in Perouse or Perusia, a young man named Andrea de Piero, whose profession was to trade about Horses, in the nature of a Horse-courser, or Horse-master, who hearing of a good Faire or Market (for his purpose) at Naples, did put five hundred Crownes of gold in his purse, and journeyed thinher in the company of other Horse-coursers, ariving there on a Sunday in the evening. According to instructions given him by his Host, he went the next day into the Horse-market, where he saw very many Horses that he liked, cheapening

ning their prices as he went up and downe, but could fall to no agreement; yet to manifest that he came purposely to buy, and not as a cheapner onely, oftentimes (like a shallow-brainde trader in the world) he shewed his purse of gold before all passengers, never respecting who, or what they were that observed his folly.

It came to passe, that a young Sicillian wench (very beautifull, but at commaund of wholoever would, and for [mall hire) passing then by, and (without his perceiving) feeing fuch flore of gold in his purfe; prefently the fayd to her felfe: why should not all those crownes be mine; when the foole that owes them, can keepe them no closer? And so the went on. With this young wanton there was (at the fame time) an old woman (as commonly such stuffe is alwayes so attended) feeming to be a Sicillian also, who so soone as the faw Andrea, knew him, and leaving her youthfull commodity, ranne to him, and embraced him very kindly. Which when the younger Lasse perceived, without proceeding any further, thee stayed to fee what would enfue thereon. Andrea conferring with the old Bayvde, and knowing her (but not for any fuch creature) declared himselfe very affable to her; shee making him promise, that she would come and drinke with him at his lodging. So breaking off further speeches for that time, the returned to her young Cammerado; and Andrea went about buying his Horses, full cheapning good store, but did not buy any all that morning.

The Punke that had taken notice of Andreaes purse, upon the old womans coming back to her (having formerly
studied, now the might get all the gold, or the greater
part thereof) cunningly questioned with her, what
the man was, whence hee came, and the occasion of his businesse? wherein shee fully informed
her particularly, and in as ample manner as himselfe

could

m

an

fee

tlev

allo

Wh

could have done; That the had long time dweltin Sicily with his Father, and afterward at Peronfes recounting also, at what time the came thence, and the cause which now had drawne him to Naples. The witty young housewife, being thorowly instructed, concerning the Parents and kindred of Andrea, their names, quality, and all other circumstances thereto leading; began to frame the foundation of her purpole thereupon, fetting her resolution downe constantly, that the purse and gold was (already) more than haife her owne.

Being come home to her owne house, away shee fent the old Pandresse about other businesse, which might hold her time long enough of employment, and hinder her returning to Andrea according to promise, purpoling not to trust her in that serious piece of fervice. Calling a young crafty Girle to her, whom thee had well tutoured in the like ambaffages, when evening drew on, the fent her to Andreas lodging, where (by good fortune) the found him fitting alone at the doore, and demanding of him, if he knew an honest Gentleman lodging there, whose name was Signior Andrea de Piere; he made her answere that himselfe was the man. Then taking him afide, the fayd. Sir, there is a worthy Gentlewoman of this City, that would gladly speake with you, if you please to vouchfafe her so much favour.

Andrea, hearing such a kind of falutation, and from a gentlewoman, named of worth; began to grow proud in his owne imaginations, and to make no meane offimation of himselfe: As (undoubtedly) that hee was an handsome proper man, and of such carriage and perfections, as had attracted the amorous eye of this Gentlewoman, & induced her to like and love him beyond all other, Naples not containing a man of better merit. Whereupon he answerd the Maid, that he was ready to

, what the ocnformed

n

n.

he

m.

ndth-

hat

the

fuch

Thee

rinke

Spee-Cam-

orles Mthu

rfc,up.

rmerly

greater

himfelfe

could

attend her Miffresse, desiring to know, when it should be, and where the Gentlewoman would speake with him? So soone as you please Sir, replyed the Dampsell, for she tarrieth your comming in her owne house.

Inftantly Andrea (without leaving any direction of his departure in his lodging, or when hee intended to returne againe) fayd to the Girle: Goe before, and I will follow. This little Chamber-commodity, condu-Red him to her Miffreffes dwelling, which was in a Greete named Marpeltuis, a title manifesting sufficiently the ftreetes honefty: but he, having no fuch knowledge thercof, neither suspecting any harme at all, but that he went so a most honest house, and a gentlewoman of good respect; entred boldly, the Mayde going inbefore, and guiding himup a faire paire of flayres, which he having more than halfe ascended, the cunning Queane gave a call to her Mistreffe, faying; Signior Andrea is come already, whereupon, the appeared, at the flayres-head, as if the had flayd there purposely to entertaine him. She was young very beautifull, comely of person, and rich in adornements, which Andrea well observing, and seeing her descend two or three steps, with open armes to embrace him, catching faft hold about his necke; he stood as a man confounded with admiration, and the contained a cunning kinde of filence, even as if the were unable to utter one word, feeming hindred by extremity of joy at his presence, and to make him effectually admire her extraordinary kindnesse, having teares plenteously at command, intermixed with fighes and broken speeches, at last thus the spake.

Signior Andrea, you are the most welcome friend to me in the word; sealing this salutation with infinite sweet kisses and imbraces; whereat (in wonderfullamazement)he being strangely transported, replied; Madam, you honour me beyond all compasse of merit.

Then,

Then taking him bythe hand, the guided him, thorough a goodly Hall, into her owne Chamber, which was de-Ilcately embalmed with Roses, Orenge flowers, and all other pleasing smelles, and a costly bed in the middeft, curtained round about, very artificiall Pictures beautifying walls, with many other embellishments, fuch as those Countries are liberally stored withall. He being meerely a novice in thefe kindes of wanton carriages of the World, and free from any bale or degenerate concert; firmely perswaded himselfe, that (queftionleffe) the was a Lady of no meane effeeme, and he more than happy, to be thus respected and honored by her. They both being seated on a curious Chest at the beds feet, teares cunningly trickling downe her cheekes, and fighes intermedled with inward fobbings, breathed foorth in fad, but very feemely manner, thus she be-

I am fure Andrea, that you greatly marvell at me, in gracing you with this folemne and kinde entertainment, and why I should so melt my felte in fighes and teares, at a man that hath no knowledge of me, or perhapsfeldome or never heard any speeches of me: but you shall instantly receive from me matter to augment your greater merveile, meeting here with your owne Sifter, beyond all hope or expectation in either of us both, Bur feeing heaven hath beene fo gracious to me, to let me fee one of my Brethren before I dye (though gladly I would have feene them all) which is some addition of comfort to me; and that which (haply) thou haft never heard before, in plaine and trueft manner, I

will reveale unto thee.

c.

of

0 I

4

a

ty-

ut

0-

ng

s,

ng-

3-

rri -

ch

or

ng

n-

ng

ter his

X-

at

.c-

to ite

a-

1a-

rit.

en,

Piero, my Father and thine, dwelt long time (as thou canst not choose but to have understood) in Palermo; where, through the bounty, and other gracious good parts remaining in him, he was much renowned, and to this day, is no doubt remembred, by many of his

loving

loving Friends and Well-willers. Among them that most intimately affected Piero, my mother (who was a Gentlewoman, and at that time a widdow) did deereft of all other love him; fo that forgetting the feare of her Father, or Brethren, yea, and her owne honour, they became so privately acquainted, that I was begotzen, and am here now fuch as thou feeft me. Afterward occasions so befalling our Father, to abandon Palermo, and returne to Peroufe, he left my mother and me his little daughter, never after (for ought that I could learne) once remembring either her or me; fo that (if hee had not beene my Father) I could have much condemned him, in regard of his ingratitude to my mother, and love which he ought to have showne me as his child being born of no Chamber-maide, neither of a City finner; albeit I must needes say, that the was blameworthy, withour any further knowledge of him (mooved onely thereto by most loyall affection) to commit both her felfe and all the wealth free had, into his hands : but things ill done, and fo long time fince, are more easily controulled, than amended.

Being left fo young at Palermo, and growing (well neere) to the stature as now you see me; my Mother (being wealthy) gave me in marriage to one of the Gergentes Family, a Gentleman, and of great revensues, who in his love to me and my mother, went and dwelt at Palemo: where falling into the Guelphes Faction, and making one in the enterprize with Charles our King; it came to passe, that they were discovered to Fredericke King of Arragon, before their intent could be put in Execution: Whereupon, we were enforced to slive from sicily, even when my hope stood fairely, to be the greatest Lady in all the Island. Packing up then such sew things as we could take with us (sew I may wellcall them, in regard of our wealthy possessions, both in Pallaces, Houses and Lands, all which

we were constrained to forgoe:) we made our recourse to this Citty, where we found King Charles so benigne and gracious to us, that recompending the greater part of our losses, be bestowed Lands and houses on us here, beside a continuall large pension to my husband your brother in Law, as hereaster himselfe shall better acquaint you withall. Thus came I hither, and thus requaint you withall. Thus came I hither, and thus remaine here, where I am able to welcome my brother sandrea, thankes more to Fortune, than any friendlinesse in him. With which wordshe embraced and kissed him many times, sighing and weeping as she did before.

Andrea hearing this Fable fo artificially delivered, composed from point to point with such likely proteflations, without faltering or failing in any one words utterance; and remembring perfectly for truth, that his Father had formerly dwelt at Palermo; knowing also (by some sensible feeling in himselfe) the custome of young people, who are eafily conquered by affection in their ye athfull heate; feeing befide the teares, trembling speeches, and earnest embracings of this cunning commodity; he tooke all to be true by her thus fpoken, and upon her filence thus replyed. Lady, let it not feeme strange to you, that your words have raised mervaile in me, because I had no knowledge of you, even no more than If I had never feene you never also having heard my Father speak either of you or your mother (for some confiderations best knowne unto himselfe:)or if as any time he used fuch language, either my youth then or defective memory fince, hath utterly loft it. But truely, it is no little joy and comfort to me, to finde a fifter heere where I had no fuch expectation, & where also my felfe am a meere ftranger. For to freake my minde of you,& the perfections appearing in you. I know not any man of how great repute or quality to ever, but you may well befeeme his acceptace, much rather than mine, that am but a meane Merchant. But faire Sifter, I defire to be refolved

11

r

ve

1-

nt

es

es

to

ld

ed

y ,

ng

VV

el-

ich

WC

resolved in one thing, to wit; by what meanes you had understanding of my being in the City? whereto she

returned him this answere.

Brother, a poore woman of this City, whom I employ sometimes in houshold occasions, came to mee this morning, and shaving seene you) told me, that she dwelt a long while with our Father, both at Palermo and Perouge. And because I held it much better befeeming my condition, to have you visite me in mine owne dwelling, than I to come see you at a common line, I made the bolder to send for you hither. After which words, in very orderly manner, she enquired of his chiefest kindred and friends, calling them readily by their proper names, according to her former instructions. Whereto Andrea still made her answere, confirming thereby his beleese of her the more strongly, and crediting whatsoever she sayd, farre better than before.

Their conference having long time continued, and the heate of the day being fraewhat extraordinary, the called for Greeke wine, and banquetting fluffe, drinking to Andrea; and he pledged her very contentedly. After which, he would have returned to his lodging, because it drew neere supper time; which by no meanes the would permit, but feeming more than halfe difpleased, the sayd. Now I plainely perceive brother, how little account you make of me, confidering, you are with your owne Sifter, whom (you fay) you never law before, and in her owne House, whither you should alwayes refort when you come to this City; and would you now refuse her, to goe and sup at a common Inne? Beleeve me Brother you thall fup with me, for although my Husband is now from home, to my no little difcontentment ; yet you shall find Brother, that his wife, can bid you welcome, and make you good cheere belide.

Now

Now was Andrea so confounded with this extremity of courtefie, that he knew not what to fay, but onely thus replyed. I love you as a Sifter ought to be loved, and accept of your exceeding kindnesse: but if I returne not to my lodging, I shall wrong mine Hoft and his guests 100 much, because they will not sup untill I come. For that (quoth the) we have a prefent remedy, one of my fervants shall goe and give warning, whereby they shall not tarry your comming. Albeit, you might doe me a great kindnesse to fend for your friends, to sup with us here, where I affure yee, they thall finde that your Sifter (for your fake) will bid them welcome, and after supper, you may all walke together to your Inne. Andrea answered, that he had no such friends there; as should be so burthenous to her: but feeing the urged him to farre, he would flay to fup with her, and referred himselfe solely to her disposition,

Ceremonious shew was made, of sending a servant to the Inne, for not expecting Andreas presence at Supper, though no such matter was performed; but, after divers other discourfings, the table being covered, and variety of costly viands placed thereon, downe they fate to feeding with plenty of curious Wines liberally walking about, fo that it was darke night before they arose from the tables. Andrea then offering to take his leave, she would (by no meanes suffer it, but told him, that Naples was a City of fuch firich Lawes and Ordinances, as admitted no night-walkers, although they were Natives, much lette strangers, but puniffed them with great feverity. And therefore, as the had formerly fent word to his Inne, that they should not expect his comming to supper, the like had the done concerning his bed intending to give her Brother Andrea one nights lodging, which as eafily thee could affoord him, as the had done a Supper. All which this new carbit Woodcocke verily crediting, and that

he was in company of his owne Sifter Fiordeliza (for fo did the cunning ly falle her felic, and in which believe he was meerely deluded) her accepted the more gladly her gentle offer, and concluded to flay there all that

night.

After fipper, their conference lafted very long ,purposely dilated out in length, that a great part of the night might therein be waited; when leaving Andrea to his Chamber, and a Lad to attend, that hee should lacke nothing; she with her women went to their lodg. ings, and thus our Brother and supposed Sifter were parted. The scason then being somewhat hot and soultry, Andreaput off his hofe and doublet, and being in his furt alone, layed themunderneath the beds boulfter, as feeming carefull of his money. But finding a provocation to the house of Office, he demaunded of the Lad, where he might find it; who showed him a little doore in a corner of the Chamber, appointing him to enter there. Saidly enough he went in, but chanced to gread upon a board, which was fastned at neither end to the joynts whereon it lay, being a pit-fall asee of purpoles to entrap any fuch coxcombe, as would be trained to fo base a place of lodging, so that both he and she board fell downe together into the draught; yet fuch being his good forture, to receive no harme in the fall (although it was of extraordinary height) onely the filth of the place, (it being over full) had fowly myred him.

Now for your better understanding the quality of ahe place, and what ensued thereupon, it is not unnecessary to describe it, according to a common use observed in these parts. There was a narrow passage or entrie, as often we see reserved between two howes, for eithers benefit to such a needfull place; and boards loosly lay upon the joynts, which such as were acquainted withat, could easily avoide any perill, in passing to or

frem

uf

all

hov

Cro

and

the

able

and

from the stoole. But our fo newly created Brother, not dreaming to finde a Queane to his Sifter, receiving fo foule a fall into the vault, and knowing not how to helpe himselfe, being forrowfull beyond measure; cryed out to the boy for light and ayde, who intended not to give him any. For the crafty wag, (a meete attendant for fo honeft a Miftreffe) no fooner heard him to bee fallen, but presently hee ranne to enforme her thereof, and the as speedily returned to the Chamber, where finding his cloathes under the beds head, the needed no instruction for search of his pockets. But having found the gold which Andrea indifcreetely carried alwayes about him, as thinking it could no where elfe be fo fafe: This was all the aymed at, and for which the had enfnared him, faighning her felfe to be of Patermo, and Daughter to Piero of Peronie, fo that not regarding him any longer, but making fast the house of Office doore, there the left him in that milerable taking

Poore Andrea perceiving, that his calls could get no answere from the Lad; cryed out louder, but all to no purpose; when seeing into his owne simplicity, and understanding his errour, though somewhat too late, he made fuch meanes conftrainedly, that he got over a wall, which severed that foule finke from the Worlds eye; and being in the open freete, went to the doore of the House, which then he knew too well to his cost. making loud exclaimes with rapping and knocking but all as fruiteleffe as before. Sorrowing exceedingly, and manifeftly beholding his misfortune; Alas (quoth he) how foone have Hoft a Sifter, and five hundred Crownes besides? With many other words, loud calks and beatings upon the doore without intermissions. the neighbours finding themselves disturbed, and unable to endure any tuch c. afeleffe vexation, role from their beddes, and called to him, defiring him to be gone

and let them reft. A maide also of the same house, looking forth at the window, and feeming as newly raifed from fleepe, called to him, faying. What noyle is that beneath? Why Virgin (answered Andrea) know you not me? I am Andrea, brother to your Mistreffe Fiordeliga. Thou art a drunken knave, replied the maide, more ful of drinke than wit : goe fleepe, goe fleepe, and come againe to morrow: for I know no Andrea de Piero, neither hath my Miftreffe any fuch Brother. Get thee gone good man, and fuffer us to fleepe I prythee. How now (quoth Andrea) doft thou not understand what Ifay? Thou knowest that I supt with thy Mistrelle this night; but if our Sicilian kindred be so foone forgot, I prythee give me my cloathes which I left in my Chamber, and then very gladly will I get me gone. Hereat the maide laughing out aloude, faid, Surely the man is mad, or walketh the streets in a dreame: and so clasping fast the Window, away thee went and left him.

Now could Andrea affure himfelfe, that his gold and cloathes were part recovery, which moving him to the more impatience, his former intercessions became converted into furie, and what he could not compaffe by faire intreates, he intended to winne by outrage and violences : fo that taking up a great stone in hishand, hee layed upon the doore very powerfull froakes. The neighboures hearing this mollestation fill, admitting them not the least respite of reft, reputed him for a trouble some fellow, and that he used those counterieit words, only to diffurbe the Miffresse of the house, and all that dwelled neere about her ; looking againe out at their windowes, they altogether beganne to rate and reprove him, even like fo many bawling Curres, barking at a strange dogge passing through the ffreete. This is fhamefull villany (quoth one) and not to be fuffered, that honest women should

thus

te

fo

Si

art

pra

fian

And

thou

thus bee molested in their houses, with foolish idle words, and at fuch an unfeafonable time of the night; For Gods fake (good man) be gone, and let us fleepe; if thou hast any thing to say to the Gentlewoman of the house, come to morrow in the day time, and no doubt but thee will make thee fufficient anfwer.

11

n

1-

ed

Te

i à

cr

ny

ng

th

ld

us

Andrea, being somewhat pacified with these speeches, a shagge-hair'd swash-buckler, a grimme visadge Ruffian (as fildome bawdy houles are without fuch Swaggering Champions) not seene nor heard by Ardrea, all the while of his being in the house; rapping out two or three terrible Oathes, opening a Casement, and with a sterne dreadfull voyce, demanded, who durst keepe that noise beneath? Andrea fearefully looking up, and (by a little glimmering of the Moone) feeing fuch a rough fellow, with a blacke beard, ftrowting like the quills of a Porcupine, and parches on his face, for hurts received in no honest quarrels, yawning alfo and ftretching, as angry to have his fleepe difturbed : trembling and quaking , answered ; I am the Gentlewomans Brother of the house. The Ruffian interrupting him, and speaking more fiercely than before; fealing his words with horrible Oathes, faid Sirra, Rascall, I know not of whence, or what thou art; but if I come downe to thee, I will so bumbaft thy prating Coxcombe, as thou wast never so beaten in all thy life, like a drunken flave and beaft as thou art, that all this night wilt not let us fleeps. And so hee clapt to the window againe.

The Neighboures well acquainted with the Ruffians rude conditions, speaking in gentle manner to Andrea, faid. Shift for thy felfe (good man) in time, and tarrie not for his comming downe to thee, except thou art weary of thy life : Be gone therefore, and lay thou haft a friendly warning. These words dismaying

Andrea

Andrea, but much more the sterne oathes and ougly fight of the Russian, incited also by the neighbours counsell, whom hee imagined to advise him in charitable manner: it caused him to depart thence, taking the way home-ward to his Inne, in no meane affiction and torment of minde, for the monstrous abuse offered him, and losse of his money. Well he remembed the passages, whereby the day before the Girle had guided him, but the loathsome smell about him, was so extreamely offensive to himselfe, that defiring to wash him at the Seaes side, he strayed too farre wide on the contrary hand, wandring up the street called

Ruga Gateliana.

Proceeding on still, even to the highest part of the Citie, hee espied a Lanthorne and light, as also a man carrying it, and another man with him in company, both of them comming towards him. Now, because hee suspected them two of the Watch, or some persons that would apprehend him, hee stepr aside to fhunne them, and entred into an old house hard by at hand. The other mens intention was to the very fame 'place; and going in, without any knowledge of Andreaes being there, one of them laide down divers instruments of Iron which he had brought thither on his backe, and had much talke with his fellow concerning those Engines. At last one of them faid; I fmell the most abhominable stinke that ever I felt in all my life. So, lifting up the Lanthorne, hee espied poore pittifull Andrea, closely couched behinde the wall. Which fight somewhat affrighted him, hee yet boldly demanded, what, and who he was? Whereto Andrea answered nothing, but lay still, and held his. peace. Neverthey drew towards him with their light, demanding how hee came thicker, and in that filthy manner.

Conftraint having now no other evafion, but that (of

to

lipp

necessitie) all must out , he related to them the whole adventure, in the same fort as it had befalne him. They greatly pittying his misfortune, one of them faid to the other: Questionlesse, this villanie was done in the house of Scarabone Buttafucco. And then turning to Andrea, proceeded thus. In good faith poore man, albeit thou haft loft thy money, yet art thou much beholden to Fortune, for falling (though in a foule place) yet in a fuccesfull manner, and entring no more backe into the house. For beleeve mee friend, if thou haddeft not falne, but quietly gone to fleepe in the house, that fleepe had beene thy last in this world, and with thy money, thou hadft lost thy life likewise But teares and lamentations are now helpeleffe, because as easily thou maift plucke the Starres from the Firmament, as get againe the least doit of thy losse. And for that shag-haird Slave in the honse, he will be thy deaths-man, if hee but understand that thou makest any enquirie after thy money. When he had thus admonished him, he began alfo in this manner to comfort him. Honeft fellow, we cannot but pittie thy present condition; wherefore if thou wilt friendly affociate us, in a bufineffe as we are instantly going to effect, thy losse hath not beene so great, but on our words, wee will warrant thee, that thine immediate gaine shall farre exceede it. What will not a man (in desperate extremity) both well like and allow of, especially when it carrieth apparance of prefent comfort? So fared it with Andrea, hee perswaded himselfe, worse than had already happened, could not befall him; and therefore he would gladly adventure with them.

í

n

3-

in

ed

he

ret

his.

ht,

(of

8:C)

The selfe same day preceding this disasterous night to Andrea, in the cheese Church of the Citie, had been buried the Archbishop of Naples, named Signior Phillippo Minutulo, in his richest pontificall Robes and Ornaments, and a Ruby on his singer valued to be

worth

worth five hundred duckets of gold : this dead body they purposed to rob and rifle, acquainting Andrea, with their whole intent, whose necessitie (coupled with a covetous defire) made him more forward than well advised, to joyne with them in this facriligeous enterprize. On they went towards the great Church. Andreges unsavorie perfume much displeasing them, where the one faid to his fellow: Can we devise no eafe for this foule and noyfome inconveniences? The very finell of him will be a meanes to betray us. There is a Well-pit hard by, answered the other, with a pulley and bucket descending downe into it, and there we may wash him from his silthinesse. To the Well-pit they came, where they found the rope and pulley hanging ready, but the bucket for fafetie was taken away; whereon they concluded, to fasten the rope about him, and fo let him downe to the Well-pit, and when he had washed himselfe, hee should wagge the rope ; and they would draw him up again, which accordingly they forthwith performed.

Now it came to passe, that while he was thus washing himselfe in the Well-pit, the Watch of the Citic walking the round, and finding it to be a very horand sweltring night, they grew dry and thirstie, and therefore went to the Well to drinke. The other two men, perceiving the Watch so necre upon them, left Andrea in the pit to thift for himfelfe, running away to thelter themselves. Their flight was not discovered by the Watch, but they comming to the Well-pit, Andrearemained still in the bottome, and having cleanfed himfelfe fo well as hee could, fate wagging the rope, expecting when hee should be baled up. This dumbe figne the Watch discerned not, but sitting down by the Wells fide, they laid downe their Billes and other weapons, tugging to draw up the rope, thinking the Bucket was fastened thereto, and full of water.

Andrea

Andrea being haled up to the pits brim, left holding the rope any longer, catching fast hold with his hands for his better safety: and the Watch at the sight hereof being greatly affrighted, as thinking that they had dragd up a Spirit; not daring to speake one word, ran away

with all the hafte they could make.

ic

ot.

nd

NO

eft

10

by

171-

n-

he

his

nyv

10-

ing

ter-

Andrea hereat was not a little amazed, so that if he had not taken very good hold on the brim : he might have falne to the bottome, and doubtleffe there his life hap perished. Being come forth of the Well, and treading upon Billes and Halberts, which hee well knew his companions had not brought thither with them; his marvell fo much the more encreased, ignorance and feare still feizing on him, with filent bemoaning his many misfortunes, away thence he wandred, but he wist not whither. As hee went on, hee met his two fellowes, who purpofely returned to drag him out of the Well, and seeing their intent already performed, defired to know who hath done it: wherein Andrea could not refolve them, rehearling what he could, and what weapons hee found lying about the Well. Whereat they smiled, as knowing, that the Watch had haled him up, for feare of whom they left him and fo declared to him the reason of their returne.

Leaving off all further talke, because new it was about midnight, they went to the great Church, where sinding their enterance to be easie: they approaching neere the Tombe, which was very great, being all of Matble; and the cover stone weighty, yet with crowes of iron and other helpes, they raised it so high, that a man mightwithout perilpasse into it. Now began they to question one another, which of the three shold enter into the Tombe. Not I, said the first; so said the second: No nor I, said Andrea. Which when the other two heard, they caught sast hold of him, saying. Wilt

nut

not thou goe into the Tombe? Be advised what then faiest, for, if thou wilt not goe in , we will so beat thee with one of these iron crowes, that thou shalt never

goe out of the Church alive.

Thus poore Andrea is still made a propertie, and Fortune (this fatall night) will have no other foole but he, as delighting in his hourely disafters. Feare of their fury makes him obedient, into the grave he goes. and being within, thus consults with him selfe. These cunning companions suppose me to be simple, and make me enter the Tombe, having an absolute intention to deceive mee. For, when I have given them all the riches that I finde here, and when I am ready to come forth for mine equall portion: away will they runne for their owne fafety, and leaving me here, not onely thall I loofe my right among them, but must reremaine to what danger may follow after. Having thus meditated, hee refolved to make fure of his owne there first, and remembring the rich Ring, whereof they had told him : forthwith hee tooke it from the Archbishops finger, finding it indifferently fit for his owne. Afterward, hee tooke the Croffe. Miter, rich garments, Gloves and all, leaving him nothing but his thirt, giving them all thefe feverall parcels, protesting that there was nothing elfe. Still they prefied you him, affirming that there was a Ring, urging him to fearch diligently for it; yet still he answered, that hee could not finde it, and for their longer tarrying with him, seemed as if he searched very carefully, but all appeared to no purpofe.

The other two fellowes, as cunning in craft, as the third could be still willed him to fearch, and watching their aptest opportunity: tooke away the proppes that supported the Tombe-stone, and running thence with their got booty, left poore Andrea mewed up in the grave. Which when he perceived, and faw this mi-

feric.

ferie to exceede all the reft, it is farre caffer for you to gueffe at his griefe, than I am any way able to expresse it. His head, shoulders, yea all his utmost strength hee emploieth, to remove that over-heavy hinderer of his liberty: but all his labour being spent in vaine, forrow threw him in a swoond upon the Bishops dead body, where if both of them might at that in hant have beene observed, the Archbishops dead body, and Andrea in griefe dying, very hardly had beene diftinguithed But his fenfes regaining their formes offices, among his filent complaints, consideration presented him with choile of these two unavoidable extremities : Die starving must he in the Tombe with putrifaction of the dead body, or if any man came to open the grave, then must be be apprehended as a facrilegious theefe, and so be hanged according to the laws in that case provided.

As he continued in thefe strange atflictions of mind, fodainely hee heard a noise in the Church of divers men, who (as he imagined) came about the like bufinesse, as he and his fellowes had underraken before: wherein he was not a jot deceived, albeit his feare the more augmented. Having opened the Tombe, and supported the stone, they varied also among themselves for entrance, and an indifferent while contended about it. At length, a Priest being one in the company, boldy faid; Why, how now you white-liver'd Rafcals? What are you affraid of? Doe you thinke he will eate you? Dead men cannot bite, and therefore I my selfe will goein. Having thus spoken, he prepared his entrance to the Tombe in such order, that he thrust in his feets before, for his easier descending downe into it

Andrea fitting upright in the Tombe, and desiring to make use of this happic opportunitie, caught the Priest sale by one of his legges, making shew as if he meant to dragge him downe, Which when the Priest

felts

Novell.6. The Second Day,

felt, he cryed out aloud, getting out with all the hafte he could make, and all his companions, being well-neere frighted out of their wits, ranne away amaine, as if they had beene followed by a thousand divels. Andrea little dreaming on such fortunate successe, made meanes to get out of the grave, and afterward forth of the Church, at the very same place where he entred.

Now began day-light to appeare, when he (having the rich Ring on his finger) wandred on he knew not whither: till comming to the Sea fide, hee found the way directing to his Inne, where all his company were with his Hoft, who had beene very carefull for him. Having related his manifold mifchances, his Hoft friendly advised him with speede to get him out of Naples. As instantly hee did, returning home to Perouse, having adventured his five hundred Crownes on a Ring, wherewith he purposed to have bought Horses, according to the intent of his journey thither.

r

H

an

VVC

JA

ans

mi

thi

mic

Herein all men are admonified, never to distrust the powerfull hand of heaven, when Fortune seemeth to be most adverse against them.

The Ladies and Gentlemen alfo, having smiled sufficiently at the severall accidents which did befall the

Madame Beritola Caracalla, was found in a Hand with two Goates, having lost her two Soanes, and thence travelled into Lunigiana: where one of her Sonnes became servant to the Lord thereof, and was found over-familiar with his Masters daughter, who therefore cansed him to hee imprisoned. Afterward, when the Countrey of Sicely rebelled against King Charles, the aforesaid Sonne chanced to be knowne by his mother, and was married to his Masters daughter. And his brother being found likewise, they both tetured to great estate and credit.

The Sixt Novell.

the poore Traveller Andrea, reported at large by Madam Fiammetta; the Lady Æmilia feeing her Tale to be fully concluded, began (by commandement of the

Queene) to speake in this manner.

The diversitie of changes and alterations in Fortune, as they are great, so must they needs be grievous; and as often as we take occasion to talke of them, so often doe they awake and quicken our understandings, avouching that it is no easie matter to depend upon her flatteries. And I am of opinion, that to heare them recounted, ought not any way to offend us , be it of men wretched, or fortunate; because, asthey inftruct the one with good advise, so they animate the other with comfort. And therefore, although great occasions have beene already related, yet I purpose to tell a Tale, no leffe true than lamentable; which albeit it forted to a fucceffefull ending, yet notwithstanding, such and so many were the bitter thwartings, as hardly can I beleeve, that ever any forrow was more joyfully sweetned.

You must understand then (most gracious Ladies) that after the death of Fredericke the second Emperor, one named Manfred, was crowned King of Sicity, about whom, lived in great account and authoritie, a Neapolitane Gentleman, called Henriet Capece, who had to Wife a bountifull Gentlervoman, and a Neapolitane alfo, named Madam Beritola Caracalls. This Henriet held the government of the Kingdom of Sicily, and understanding that King Charles the first, had wonne the battell at Beneventum, and flaine King Manfred, the whole Kingdome revolting also to his devotion, and little truft to be reposed in the Sicilians, or hee willing to subject himself to his Lords enemie ; provided for his secret flight from thence. But this being discovered to the Sicillians, he and manic more, who had beene loyall fervants to King Man-

he

the

fred,

fred, where fuddenly taken and imprisoned by King Charles, and the sole possession of the lland confirmed to him.

Madam Beritola not knowing (in so sudden and strange an alteration of State affaires) what was become of her Husband, searing also greatly before, those inconveniences which afterward sollowed; being overcome with many passionate considerations, having left and forsaken all her goods, going aboord a small Barke, with a Sonne of hers, aged about some eight yeares, named Geoffrey, and growne great with child with another, she fled thence to Lapary, where she was brought to bed of another Sonne, whom shee named (answerable both to his and her hard fortune,) The poore expelled.

Having provided her selfe of a Nurse, they altogether went aboarde againe, setting saile for Naples to visite her Parents; but it chanced quite contrary to her expectation, because by stormie windes and weather, the Vessell being bound for Naples, was hurried to the Ile of Ponzo, where entring into a small Port of the Sea, they concluded to make their aboade, till a time more furtherous should further their voyage.

As the reft, so did Madam Beritola goe on shore in the Hand, where having found a separate and solitary place, sit for her silent and sad meditations, secretly by her selfe, shee sorrowed for the absence of her Husband, Resorting daily to this her sad exercise, and continuing there her complaints, unseene by any of the Marriners, or whosoever selfe; there arrived suddenly a Galley of Pyrates, who seazing on the small Barke, carried it and all the reft in it away with them. When Beritota had sinished her wosfull complaints, as daily she was accustomed to doe, she returned backe to her children againe; but sinding no person there remaining, whereat she wondered not a little; immediately suspecting

elfe

thee

form

ten y

the ha

nefite

wella

Ons, V

milery

tions ,

(suspecting what had happened indeede) sheelent her lookes on the Sea, and law the Galley, which as yet had not gone farre, drawing the smaller vessell after her. Hereby plainely she perceived, that now she had lost her children, as formerly she had done her husband; being left there poore, forsaken, and miserable, not knowing when, where, or how to finde any of them agains and calling for her Husband and children;

the fell downe in a fwound upon the shore.

Now was not any body neere, with cold water or any other remedy to helpe the recovery of her loft powers; wherefore her spirits might the more freely wander at their owne pleafure : but after they were returned backe againe, and had won their wonted offices in her body, drowned in teares, and wringing her hands, thee did nothing but call for her children and husband, straying all about in hope to finde them, feeking in caves, dens, and every where elfe, that prefented the very least glimple of comfort. But when the faw all her paines fort to no purpole, and darke night drawing swiftly on, hope and difmay raising infinite perturbations, made her yet to be somewhat respedive of her felfe, and therefore departing from the ca-shore, she returned to the solitary place, where she afed to figh and mourne alone by her felfe.

The night being over-pass with infinite seares and afrights, and bright day saluting the world againe, with the expence of nine houres and more, she fell to her former fruitlesse travels. Being somewhat sharply bitten with hunger, because the former day and night she had not tasked any foode: the made therefore a benefite of necessitie, and fed on the greene hearbes, so well as she could, not without many piercing afflictions, whatshould become of her in this extraordinarie misery. As shee walked in these pensive meditations, thee saw a Goate enter into a Cave, and

n-

he

nly

ke,

hen

aily

mai-

atcly

aing

H with-

(within a while after) come forth againe, wandring along thorow the woods. Whereupon thee stayed, and entred where she saw the beast issue forth, where shee found two young Kids, yeared (as it seemed) the selfesame day, which sight was very pleasing to her, and nothing in that distress could more content her.

As yet the had milke freshly running in both her breafts, by reason other so late delivery in child-bed; wherefore the lay downe unto the two young Kids, and taking them tenderly in her armes, fuffered each of them to lucke a teate, whereof they made not any refufall, but tooke them as lovingly as their dammes, and from that time forward, they made no distinguishing betweene their damme and her. Thus this unfortunate Lady, having found some company in this solitary defart, fed on herbes and rootes, drinking faire running water, and weeping filently to her felfe, fo often as thee remembred het husband, children, and former daves paft in much better manner. Here fhee refolved now to live and die, being at last deprived both of the Damme and younger Kids allo, by their wandering further into the neere adjoyning woods, according to their naturall inclinations; whereby the poore diffressed Lady became more favage and wilde in her daily conditions, than otherwise she would have beene.

After many moneths were over-passed, at the very same place where shee tooke landing; by chance, there arrived another small Vessell of certaine Pissans, which remained there divers dayes. In this Barke was a Gentleman, named contrado de Marchess Malespini, with his holy and vertuous wise, were returned backe from a Pilgrimage, having visited all the sanchised places that then were in the Kingdome of Apulio, and now were bound homeward to their owne abiding. This Gentleman, for the expelling of melancholly perturbations,

te

if

til.

and

surbations, one especiall day amongst other, with his wife, fervants, and wainting hounds, wandred to into the Hand, not far from the place of Madam Beritblats defert folitary dwelling. The hounds quefting after game, at last happening on the two Kids where they were feeding, and (by this time) had attained indifferent growth; and finding themselves thus pursued by the hounds, fled to no other part of the wood, than to the cave where Beritola remained, and feeming as if they thought to be refeued, onely by her, thee fuddenly caught up a staffe, and forced the hounds thence

to flight.

0

d

ee

ed

eir

15,

he

lde

ave

rery

nere

hich

25 1

pini,

acke

rified

s,and

ding.

y per-

Racis

By this time, conrade and his wife, who had followed closely after the hounds, was come thither, and feeing what had hapned, looking on the Lady, who was become blacke, fwarthy, meager, and hairie, they wondred not a little at her, and the a great deale more at them. When (upon her request) conrado had checkt backe his hounds, they prevailed fo much by earnest entreaties, to know what the was, and the reason of her living there, that the intirely related her qualitic, and frange determination for living there. Which when the Gentleman had heard, who very well knew her Husband, compassion forced teares from his eyes, and carneftly he laboured by kinde perswasions, to alter fo cruell a deliberation; making an honourable offer, for conducting her home to his owne dwelling, where the thould remaine with him in noble refped, as if the were his owne fifter, without parting from him, till fortune thould fmile as fairely on her, as ever thee had done before.

When these gentle offers could not prevaile with her, the Gentleman left his wife in her company, with her, faying, that hee would goe fetch fome foode for her; and because her garments were rent and torne, , hee would bring her other of his wives,

Novell.6. The Second Day.

not doubting but to winne her thence with them. His wife abode there with Beritola, very much be-moaning her great disasters: and when both viands and gaments were brought, by extremitie of intercession, they caused her to put them on, and also to feede with them, albeit shee protested, that shee would not depart thence into any place, where any knowledge should be taken of her. In the end, they persuaded her to goe with them into Lunigiana, earlying also with her the two young Goates and their damme, which were then in the Cave, altogether, prettily playing before Beritola, to the great admiration of Conrado and his wife, as also the servants attending on them.

When the windes and weather grew favourable for them, Madame Beritola went aboord with Gonrado and his Wife, being followed by the two young Goates and their Damme; and because her name should be knowne to none but Conrado, and his Wife onely, the would be stiled no otherwise but the Goatherdesse. Merrily, yet gently blew the gale, which brought them to enter the River of Maica, where going on shore, and into their owne Cassle, Beritola kept company with the wise of Conrado, but in a mourning habite; and a waiting Gentlewoman of theirs, honess, humble, and very durifull, the Goates alwayes familiarly keeping them com-

Panie.

Returne wee now to the Pyrates, which at Foago feized on the small Barke, wherein Madom Berito's was brought thicher, and carried thence as a yey, whom any fight or knowledge of her. With such other spoiles as they had taken, they shaped their course for Geneway, and there (by consents) the Parrons of the Gilley) made a devision of their buoties. It came to palie, that (among other things) the Nurse that attended on

Buildias

Beritola, and the two Children with her, fell to the there of one Meffer Gafparine & Oria, who femithem together to his owne house, there to be employed in fervice as fervints. The Nurse weeping Beyond meafure for the loffe of her Lady, and bembahing her own miferable Fortune, whereinto the was now falne with the two young Laddes; after long lamenting, which the found atterly fruitleffe and to none effect, though thee was used as a fervant with ellem, and being but a very poore woman, yet was thee wife and different ly advised. Wherefore, comforting both her felfe and them fo well as the could, and confidering the depth of their difafter, thee conceited thus, that if the children should be knowne, it might redound to their greater danger, and the be no way advantaged chereby.

ir

1-

TS

or

do

ng

ne

ite

03-

ic'n

0-

ola

na

of

the

m'-

2230

1013

nout

oilc3

ere-

G:1-

lie,

edon

Hereupon, hoping that Fortune (early or late) would alter her fterne malice, and that they might (if they lived) regaine once more their former conditions. fie would not difcloke them to any one whatloever, till the thould fee the time aprly disposed for it. Being thus determined, to all fuch as questioned her concerning them; thee answered that they were her owne children, maring the elder not Geoffery, but Ichannot de Protide. As for the youngest, thee cared not greatly for chaming his name, and therefore wifely informed Geoffrey apon what realon thee had altered his name, and what danger hee might full into, if he should otherwise bee discovered; being not satisfied with thus telling him once, but remembring him thereof very often which the gentle youth (being for well infrincted by the wife and carefull Nurse) did veric warsly observe. . Solla list mada.v.

The two young Laddes, very poorely garmented but much worke holed and shodde, continued thus in the house of Gasparino, where both they and the

Narica -

Nurse were long time employed about very base and drudging Offices, which yet they endured with admirable pacience. But Jehannot, aged already about fixeteene yeares, having a loftier spirit, than belonging to a flavish fervant, despising the basenesse of his service condition; departed from the drudgery of Afeffer Gafberine; and going aboord the Gallies which were bound for Alexandria, fortuned into many places, yet none of them affoording him any advancement. In the end, about three or foure yeares after his departure from Gafarino, being now a brave young man, and of very goodly forme: hee understood, that his father (whom he supposed to be dead) was as yet living, but in captivity, and priloper to King Charles. Wherefore, despairing of any successeful fortune, he wandred here and there, till hee came to Lunigiana, and there (by ftrange accident) her became fervante Meller Conrade Malefpino, where the fervice proved well liking to them both.

. Very fildome times he had a fight of his Mother, because thee atwayes kept company with Compadoes wife ; and yet when they came in view of each other, the knew not him; nor he her, fo much yeares had altered them both from what they were wont to be, and when they favy each other laft. Jehannot being thus an the service of Meffer Conrado, it fortuned that a daughter of his, named Sophia, being the widdow of one Meffer Nicolas Grignam, retutned home to her fathers house. Very beautifull and amiable thee was, young likewife, aged but little above fixteenes growing wonderously amorous of tehannot, and he of hery in extraordinary and most ferrent manner t which love was not long without full effect, continuing many moneths before any person could perceive it ! which making them to build on the more affurance, they began to carry their meanes with leffe diferetion than

is required in fuch nice cases, and which cannot be too

providently managed.

,

c

et

c

re

d

er

12

e.

re by

.

ng

er,

des

er,

al-

nd

143

£ 2

of

ner

25,

ng

in

DYC

my

ich

be-

ner

is

Vpon a day, be and the walking to a goodly Wood, plentifully turnished with spreading Trees: having out-gone the jeft of their company, they made choife of a pleasant place, very daintily shaded and beautified with all forts of flowers. There they fpent fome time in amorous talking, befide fome other fivect embraces. which though it feemed over-short to them, yet was to unadvifedly prolonged, that they were on a fudden furprized, first by the mother, and next by Meller Conrade himselfe; who grieving beyond measure, to be thus treacheroully dealt withall, caused them to be apprehended by three of his fervants , and (without telling them any reason why) led bound to another Caftle of his, and fretting with extremitie of rage, concluded in his minde, that they should both shame:

fully be put to death.

The mother of this regardleffe daughter, having heard the angry words of her husband, and how hee would be revenged on the faultie ; could not endure that he should be so severe; wherefore, although shee was likewise much afflicted in minde, and reputed her daughter worthy (for fo great an offence) of all cruell punishment, yet shee hasted to her displeased husband, and began to intrease, that hee would not tunne on in fuch a furious spleene, now in his aged yeares to be the murtherer of his owne child, and foile his hands in the bloud of his fervant, Rather he might finde our fome milde course for the farisfaction of his anger, by committing them to close imprisonment, there to remaine and mourne for their folly committed. The vertuous and religious Lady alledged fo many commendable examples, and used such plenty of moving perswasions, that thee quite altered his minde, from putting them to death, and hee commanded onely, that

that they should separately be imprisoned, with little store of soode, and lodging of the uncasies, until hee should otherwise determine of them; and so it was done. What their life now was in captive is and continuall teares, with stricter abstinence than was needfull for them, all this I must commit to your consideration.

Ichannet and Spine remaining in this comfortleffe condition, and an whole yeare being now out-worne, vet Conrado keeping them thus fill imprisoned it came ropaffe, that Don Fedro King of Arrago, by the means of Meffer John de Procida, caused the Ille of Sicily to resolt, and tooke it away from King Charles ; whereat comado (he being of the Ghibbitne faction) not a little rejeyced. Ichannot having intelligence thereof, by fome of them that had him in custody, breathing forth a vehement figh, spake in this manner. Alas poore miserable wretch as I am! that have already gone begging through the world above foureteene yeares, in expediation of nothing elfe but this opporzunitie; and now it is come, must I be in prison, to the end, that I thould never more hope for any future happinesse? And how can I get forth of this prison, except it be by death onely? How now, replied the Officer of, the Guard? What dorn this bufinesse of great Kings concerne thee; What affaires haft thou in Sicily?

Once more Jehannot fighed extreamely, and returned him this answer. Me thinkes my heart (quoth he) doth cleave in funder, when I call to minde the charge which my Father had there; for although I was but a little boy when I fled thence, yet I can well remember, that I saw him Governour there, at such time as King, Mansred lived. The Guard, pursuing on still his purpose, demanded of him, what, and who his Father was? My Father (replied Jehannot?) I may

ır

e

e 18

0 IC

le

ly

C

rn,

y

15

e-1-

cs

r-

e)

10.

.

Il

ch

n

10

ay

14

end

now fecurely speake of him, being out of the peril! which neerely concerned me if I had been discovered. he was then named (and so fill if he be living) Henriet capece, and my name is Geoffrey, and not Jehannet; and I make no doubt, but if I were freed from hence, and might be returned home to Sicily, I should (for his fake) be placed in some authoritie.

The honest man of the Guard without seeking after any further information, fo foone as he could compalle. any leafure reported all to Meffer Courade, who having heard thele newes (albeithe made no thew thereof to the Revealer) went to Madam Beritola, gracionly demanding of her, if fice had any fonne by her busband, who woi called Geoffrey. The Lady replied in teares, that if her elden longe were yet living, hee was to namede and aged about 22 yeares. Conrado bearing this, imagined this fame to be the man; confidering further withall, that if it fell out to prove to, he might have the better meanes of mercy, and closely concealing his daughters shape, joyfully joyne them.

in marriage rogetherwooded orvier. Hereupon, hee fecretly called Jehannet before him, examining him particularly of all his passed life, and finding (by most manifest arguments) that his name was truly Geoffrey, and the eldeft fonne of Henriet Can pece sheo fpike thus to him. Jehannat, thou knowest. how great the injures are that thou halt done me and my deare daughter ; gently intreating thee (as became an honest fervant) that thou shouldest alwayes. have beene respective of mine honour, and all that apportaine unto me. There are many noble Gentlemen, who fullaining the wrong that thou halt offred mee. they would have progunt thy tham efull death, which pittle and compation will not fuffer in me.Wherefore feeing fas thou informeft me) that thou art honours bly derived both by father and mother, I will give H. 5

end to all thy anguishes, even when thy seife art so pleased, releasing thee from that captivitie wherein! trive to long keps thee, and in one instant, reduce thine honour and mine into compleate perfection, As thou knowest my daughter Spina, whom thou hast embraced as a friend (although farre unfitting for thee, and her) is a widdow, and her marriage is hoth great and good; what her manners and conditions are, thou ind flerently knowest, and art not ignorant of her father and mother : concerning thinc owne effate, as now I purpose nor to speake any thing. Therefore, when thou wilt, I am determined, that whereas thou halt immodeftly affected her, the shall become thy honeft wife, and accepting thee as my forme, to remaine with me fo long as you both please? I had seed to

Imprisonment had somewhat mishapen lebarnot in his outward forme, but not impaired a jot of his noble spirit; much lesse the true love which hee bare his friend. And although most earnestly hee defired that which now Conrade had fo frankely offered him, and was in his power onely to beflow on him & yet could he not cloude any part of his greatneffe, but with a resolved judgement, thus replied. My Lord, affectation. of rule, defire of wealthy possettions, or any other matter whatfoever, could never make me a Traiter to you or yours; but that I have loved doc love, and for ever shall love your beauteous daughter; if that be trea. Son, I doe freely confesse it, and will die a thousand deaths, before you, or any elfe thall enforce mee co denie it, for I hold her highly worthy of my leve. If I have beene more unmannerly with her than became me, I have committed but that error, which evermore is foattendant upon youth ; that to deny, is to denie youth alfo. And if reverend age would but remember, that once he was young, and measure others offences typhes owne, they would not bee thought fo great as you 4:11

'you (and many more) account them to be, mine being committed as a friend, and not as an enemy. What you make offer of so willingly. I have alwayes defired; and if I had thought it would have beene granted, tong fince I had most humbly requested it: and so much the more acceptable would it have beene to mee, by how much the sutther off it stood from my hopes. But if you be so forward as your words doe wintesse, then feede me not with any further fruitlesse expectation; but rather send mee backe to prison, and lay as many afficients on me as you please. For my endeared love to your daughter spina maketh mee to love you the more for her sake, how hardly soever you intrease me, and bindeth me in the greater reverence to you, as

being the Father of my fairest friend.

L

0

Meller Conrado hearing thele words, flood as confounded with admiration, reputing him to be a man of loftic spirit, and his affection most fervent to his Daughter, which was not a little to his liking. Wherefore, embracing him, and kiffing his checke, without any longer dallying, hee fent in like manner for his Daughter. Her restraint in prison, had made her bokes meager, pale, and wanne, and very weake was the alfo of her person, farre differing from the Woman the was wont to be, before her affedion to lehannot, There in presence of her Father, and with free confent of either, they were contracted as man and wife, and the espousals agreed on according to custome? Some few dayes after, (without any ones knowledge of that which was done) having furnished them with all things fit for the purpofe and rime aprly ferving, that the mothers thould be partakers in this joy; hee. called his wife, and Madam Beritola, to whom nirt he fpake in this manner.

What will you fay Madam, if I cause you to see your eldest; Sonne, not long since married to one of

my Daughters ?Whereunto Beritola thus replied. My Lord, I can fay nothing elfe unto you, but that I shall be much more obliged to you, than already I am ; and the rather, because you will let mee see the thing which is dearer than mine owne life; and rendering it unto mee in such manner as you speake of, you will recall backe fome part of my former loft hopes : and withthese words the teares streamed aboundantly from her eyes. Then turning to his wife, hee faid : And you deare Love, if I flew you fuch a Sonne in fary, what will you thinke of it? Sir (quoth shee) what pleafeth you, must and shall fatisfie mee, be hee gentleman or begger. Well faid Madam, answered, Meler Comado. I hope fortily, to make you both joyfull. So when the amorous couple had recovered their former feature, and honourable garments prepared for them, privately thus he faid to Geoffrey's Beyond the joy which already thou art inriched withall, how would it please thee to meete with thine owne Mother here? I cannot beleeve Sir (replied Geoffrey) that her grievous misfortunes have fuffered her to live to long; and yet, if heaven hath beene fo mercifull to her, my joyes were incomparable, for by her gracious counfell, I might well hope to recover no meane happinelle in icily. Soone after, both the mothers were both fent for, who were transported with unspeakable joy, when they beheld the fo lately married couple: being much amazed what inspiration had guided Meffer Comado to this extraordinary benigniiy, in joyning lebannet in marriage with Spina

Hereupon, Madam Beritola remembring the speeches betweene her and Messer Conrado, began to observe him very advisedly; and by a hidden vertue which long had silently sleepe in her, and now with joy of spirit awaked, calling to minde the lineatures of her longes infancie, without awaiting for any other de-

monftration,

menstration, the folded him in her armes with earnest affection. Motherly joy & pitty new contended so violently together, that she was not able to utter one word, the sensitive vertues being so closely combined, that (even as dead) she fell downe in the armes of her son. And he wondering greatly thereat, making a better recollection of his thoughts, remébred that he had before seen her in the Cassle, without any other knowledge of her Neverthelesse, by meere instinct of Nature, whose power in such actions declares it selfet to be highly predominant; his very soule assured him, that she was his Mother, and blaming his understanding, that hee had not before beene better advised, he threw his armes a

bout her, and wept exceedingly.

e d

O

14

0-

th ir-

ad

e-

b.

ich

of

de-

Afterward, by the loving paines of Conradoes wife, as allo her daughter Spina, Madam Beritola (being recovered from her paffionate traunce, and her vitall spirits executing their Offices againe) fell once more to the embracing of her Sonne, kiffing him infinite times, with reares and speeches of motherly kindnesse he likewise expressing the same dutifull humanity to her. Which ceremonious courtefies being passed over and over, to no little joy in all the beholders, befide repetition of their feverall misfortunes: Meffer Conrado made all knowne to his friends, who were very glad of this new alliance made by him, which was honoured with many folemne feathings. Which being all concluded, Geoff rey having found out fit place and opportunity, for conference with his new created Father, without any finister opposition, began as followeth.

Honourable Father, you have rayled my contents ment to the highest degree, and have heaped also many gracious favours on my Noble Mothers but now in the finall conclusion, that nothing may remaine uneffected, which consistes in your power to performe; I would humbly intreatyous to honour my Mother with

your company, at a Feast of my making, where I would gladly also have my Brother present. Messer Gasparino d'Oria (as Phave herectore told you) questing as a common Pyration the Seas, tooke us and sent us home to his house as slaves, where (as yet) he detained him. I would I kewise have you send into Sicily, who informing himselfe more amply in the state of the Country, may understand what is become of Henriet my Father, and whether he be living or no. If hee be alive, then to know in what condition hee is; and being secretly instructed in all things, then to returne

backe againe to you.

This motion made by Geoffrey, was so pleasing to Conrado, that without any reference or further leyfure, he dispatched thence two discreete persons, the one to Geneway and the other to Sicily: he which went for Geneway, having met with Gufparino, carnefly entreated him (on the behalfe of Conrado) to fend him the Poore expelled; and his Nurse recounting every thing in order, which conrado had told him, concerning Geoffery and his mother. When Gaffarino had heard the whole discourse, he mervailed greatly thereat, and fayd; True it is, that I will doe any thing for Meffer Conrado, which may be to his love and liking, provided that it lye in my power to performe; and (abour some fourteene yeeres fince) I brought fuch a Lad as you feeke for, with his mother, home to my house, whom I will gladly fend unto him. But you may felf him from me, that I advise him from over-rath crediting the Fables of Ichannot, that now termes himfelfe by the name of Geoffrey, because he is a more wicked boy than he taketh him to be, and fo did I finde him.

Having thus spoken, and giving kinde welcome to the Mellenger; secretly he called the Nurse unto him, whom he heedfully examined concerning this case, She having heard the rebellion in the Kingdome of

Sicily; and understanding withall that Heariet was yet living, joyfully threw off all her former feare-relating every thing to him orderly, and the reasons mooving her to conceale the whole bufineffe in fich manner as the had done. Gafparina well perceiving, that the report of the Nutle, and the message received from conrado, varied not in any one circumftance, began the beiter to credit her words. And being a man most ingenious, making further inquificion into the bufineffe. by all the possible meanes that he could devises and finding every thing to yeeld undoubted affurance, ashamed of the vile and base usage wherein hee had so long time kept the Lad, and defiring (by his beft meanesko make him amends, he had a beaunfulldaughter, aged about thirteene yeares, and knowing what manner of man he was, his Father Henriet allo yet livingshe gave her to him in marriage, with a very bountifull and honorable dowry.

The joviall dayes of feating being past, he went aboord a Galley with the Poore expelled, his Daughter, the Ambassador, and the Nuise, departing thence to Lericy, where they were nobly welcommed by Meffer conrado, and his Castle being not farre from thence, with an bonourable traine they were conducted thither, and entertained with all possible kindnesse: Now concerning the comfort of the Mother, meeting for happily with both her Sonnes, the jay of the brethten and mother together, having alle found the faithfull Nurle, Galbarino and his daughter, in company now with Conrado and his wife, friends, familiars, and al generally in a lubilee of rejoycing : inexecedeth capacity in me to expresse it, and therefore I referre it to your more able imagination. A dist des temperals

d

e

L

n

m

C

10

y

to

In the time of this mutual contenement, so the end that nothing might be wanting to complete and premy feet this univerfall joy; our Lord, a mod abundant

bestower

bestower where he beginneth, added long wished tydings concerning the life and good effate of Henry Capece. For even as they were feathing, and the concourfe great of worthy quefts, both Lords and Ladyes, the first fervice was fearfely fet on the Tables, but the Ambaffador whichwas fent to Sicily, arrived there before them; Among many other important matters, hee fpake of Henrief, who being follong a time detained in prifon by King Charles, when the commotion arose in the Citty against the Kings the people (grudging at Henriets long imprisonment) flew the Guard, and fee him at liberrie. Then as capitall enemie to King Coarles, he was created Captaine Generall, following the chafe,

and killing the French.

Now by this meanes, he grew great in the grace of King Pedro, who replanted him in all the goods and honours which hee had before, with very high and eminent authority Hereunto the Ambaffador added that he was entertayned with extraordinary grace, and delivery of publike joy and exaltation, when his Wife and Sonne were knowne to be living, of whom no tydings had at any time beene heard, fince the houre of his surprizall: Moreover, that a swift winged Bark was now feat thither (upon the happy hearing of this newes pwell femilied with noble Gentlemen, to attend till their remining backe. Weeneed to make no doubt concerning the sydings, brought by this Ambaffadour, nor of the Genelemens welcome, thus font to Madam Beritola and Geoffrey; who before they would fit downe at the Table, faluted Meffer contado andhis kinde Latty (on the behalfe of Hennite) der atlabagreat graces extended to her and her Sonne, with promise of any thing, lying in the power of Henties to referone cinually actheir command. The like they did to Signior Gafbasto frehole liberall favours came unlooked for) 'with certaine afforance that when Hearic afhould .cist.

under-

Al

the

understand what he had done for his other Sonne, the Poore expelled, there would be no defaylance of reciprocall courteses.

As the longest joyes have no perpetuity of lasting, fo all thefe gracefull ceremonies had their conclusion, with as many fighes and teares at parting, as joyes abounded at their first encountring. Imagine then, that you fee fuch aboord, as were to have heere no longer abiding, Madam Beritola and Geoffery with the reft;as the Poore expelled, the fo late married Wives, and the faithfull Nurse bearing them company. With prosperous windes they arrived in Sicily, where the Wife, Sonnes, and Daughters, were joyfully met by He nriet at Palerme, and with fuch honourable pompe, as a cale to important equally deferved. The Histories make further mention, that there they lived (a long while after) in much felicity, with thankefull hearts (no doubt) to heaven, in acknowledgement of fo many reat mercies received.

of

n

36

72-

m

23

fe,

2 ...

of.

nd

nd

cd

and Vife

e 05

was

this.

210.

E no

affa-

nt to

buros

dduis

great

nic of

TODO:

Sig-

ooked

should

inder-

The Soldan of Babylon sent one of his Daughters, to be joyned in marriage with the King of Cholcos, who by divers accidents (in the space of source yeeres) happened into the custodie of nine men, and in sundry places. At length, being restored backe to her Father, shie went to the sayd King of Cholcos, as a Mayd, and as at first she was intended to be his wife.

The seventh Novell.

Alively demonstration, that the beauty of a woman (oftentimes) is very hurtfull to her felfe, and the occasion of many culls, yea, and of death, to divers men.

PEradventure the Novell related by Madam Æmiltia, did not extend it felfe so farre in length, as it mooved compassion in the Ladies mindes, hearing the hard fortune of Beritola and her Children, which Novell-7. The Second Day,

which had incited them to weeping; but that is pleafed the Queene (upon the Tales conclusion) to commend Pamphilus, to follow next in order with his Discourse; and he being thereto very obedient, began in

this manner.

It is a matter of no meane difficulty (vertuous Ladies) for us to take intire knowledge of every thing we doe, because (as oftentimes hath beene observed) mamy men, imagine if they were rich, they fould live fecurely, and without any care. And therefore, not onely have their prayers and intercessions aymed at that end, but also their fludyes and dayly endeyours, without refufall of any paines or perills, have not meanely expressed their housely solicitude. And although it hath happened accordingly to them, and their covetous defires fully accomplished; yet at length they have met with such kinde people, who likewise thirsting after their wealthy possessions, have bereft them of life, being their kinde and intimate friends, before they atgained to fach riches. Some other, being of low and befe condition, by adventuring in many skirmiflies and foughten battels, trampling in the blood of their brethren and friends, have beene mounted to the foveraigne dignitie of Kingdomes (beleeving that therein confifted the truest happinesse) but bought with the deereft price of their lives. For, belide their infinite cares and feares wherewith such greatnesse is continually attended, at their royall Tables, they have drunke poylon in a Golden pot. Many other in like manner (with most earnest appetite) have covered beauty and bodily frength, not foreleeing with any judgement, that thefe wishes were not without perill; when being encued with them, they either have beene, the oceafion of their death, or tuch a lingering lamentable e-Atace of life, as death were a thouland times more welcome to them.

up

he

an

accouftre-

But, because i would not speake particularly of all our fraile and humane affections, I dare affure ve. that there is not any one of thele defires to bee elefted among us mortals; with entire forelight or providence: warrantable against their ominous issue, Wherefore, if we would walke directly, we should dispose our willes and affections, to bee guided onely by him, who beft knoweth what is needfull for us, and will beftow them at his good pleasure. Nor let me lay this blameful imputation upon men onely for offending in many things through our lavish defires; because you your selves (gracious Ladyes) finne highly in one, as namely, in coveting to be beautifull. So that it is not sufficient for you, to enjoy those beauties bestowne on you by Nature; but you practife to increase them by the rarities of Art. Wherefore, let it not offend you, that I tell you the hard fortune of a faire Sarazine, to whom it hapned by ftrange adventures, that within the compalle of foure yeares, nine feverall times the was married, and onely for her beauty.

t

e

f-

e,

tıd

es ir

0e-

he

ite

11-

ke

ner ind

nt,

ing

100

ec.

vel-

But,

It is now a long time fince there lived a Soldane in Babylon, named Beminidab, to whom (while he lived) many things happened, answerable to his owne defires. Among divers other Children both male and female, he had a daughter called Alathiella, and the (according to the common voyce of every one that faw her) was the fairest Lady then living in all the world. And becaule the King of cholcos had wonderfullyaffifted him, in a most valiant foughten battell against a mighty Armie of Arabians, who on a fedaine had affayled bim; he demanded his faire daughter in marriage, which likewife was kindly granted to him. Wherupon a goodly and well-armed Ship was prepared for her, with full furnishment of all necessary provision, and accompanyed with an honourable traine both of Lords and Ladies, as also most costly and sumpenous

accoustrements; commending her to the mercy of hea-

ven, in this manner was the fent away,

The time being propisious for their parting thence, the Mariners hoyled their fayles, leaving the port of Alexandria, and fayling prosperously many daye-together. When they had past the Countrey of Sardinia, and (as they imagined) were well neere to their journeyes end; fodainely arose boysterous and contrary windes, which where fo impetuous beyond all measure, and fo tormented the Ship wherein the Lady was that the Mariners feeing no figne of comfort, gave over all hope of escapingwish life. Nevertheles, as men most expert in implacable dangers, they laboured to their uttermost power, and contended with infinite bluftring tempelts, for the space of two dayes and nights topether, hoping the third day would prove mere favourable. But therein they faw themselves deceived, for the violence continued ftill, encreasing in the night time more and more, being not any way able to comprehend either where they were; or what course they tooke, neither by Marinall judgement, or vany apprehension else whatsoever, the heavens were so clouded, and the nights darkenelle fo extreame.

Being (unknowne to them) neere the Isle of Majorica, they felt the Shippe to split in the bottome: by meanes whereof, perceiving now no hope of escaping (every one caring for himselfe, and not any other) they threw forth a Squiffe on the troubled waves, reposing more considence of safety that way, than abiding any longer in the broken ship. Howbeit such as were first descended downe, made stout resistance against all other followers, with their drawne weapons; but safety of life so farre prevailed, that what with the Tempests violence, and over lading of the Squiffe, it sunke to the bottome, and all perished that were therein. The Ship being thus split, and more than halfe sull of

water; toffed and tormented by the bluffring windes, first one way and then another: was at last driven into a firond of the Ife Majorica, no other person therein remaining but onely the Lady and her women, all of them (through the rude tempest and their owne conceivedfeare)lying fill as if they were more thanhalf dead. And there within a stones cast of the neighboring thore, the thip (by the rough furging billowes) was fixed fast on the lands, and so continued all the rest of the night, without any further molestation of the windes.

When day appeared, and the violent stormes were more mildly appealed, the Lady who feemed well neere dead, lifted up her head, and began (weake as the was) to call first one, and then another: but she called in vaine, for fuch as the named were farre enough from her. Wherefore hearing no answere, nor feeing any one, the wondred greatly, her feares encreasing then more and more. Rayling her felfe lo well as the could, the beheld the Ladies that were of her company, and some other of her women, lying still without any flirring : whereupon, first jogging one and then another, and calling them feverally by their names; the found them bereft of understanding; and even as if they were dead; their hearts were to quayled, and their feare to over-ruling, which was no meane difmay to the poore Lady her felfe. Neverthelelle, neceffity now being her best counsellor, seeing her selfe thus all alone, and not knowing in what place thee was, the used such meanes to them that were living, that (at the laft they came to better knowledge of themselves. And being unable to gueffe, what was become of the men and Marriners, feeing the Ship also driven on the fand, and filled with water, the began with them to laterat most greevously; and now it was about the houre of mad day, before they could difery any person on the flore, or any to pitty, them in fo orgent a neede.

0-

e-

1-

ke

Ħ.

of er, At length, moone being past, a Gentleman named Baiazeth, attended by divers of his followers on horse-backe, and returning from a Country house belonging to him, chanced to ride by on the lands. Vppon light of the Ship lying in that case, he imagined truely what had happed, and commanded one of his men to enter abourd it, which (with some difficulty) he did, to resolve his Lord what remained therein. There he found the sayre young Lady, with such small sort of company as was left her, searefully hidden under the prow of the Ship. So soone as they saw him, they held up their hands, wofully desiring mercy of him: but hee perceiving their Lamentable condition, and that he understood not what they sayd to him, their affiliation grew the greater, labouring by signes and gestures, to

give him knowledge of their mistorrane.

The fervant gathering what he could by their cutward behaviour, declared to his Lord what hee had feene in the Shippe; who caused the women to bee brought on shore, and all the precious things remaining with them; conducting them with him to 2 place not farre off, where with food and warmth hee gave them comfort. By the rich garments which the Lady wascloathed withall, he reputed her to be a Gentles woman well derived, as the great reverence done to her by the rest, gave him good reason to conceive, And although her lookes were pale and wan, as also her person mightily altered, by the tempestuous violence of the Sea; yet notwithstanding, shee appeared faire and lovely in the eye of Baiaget's, whereupon forthwithhe determined, that if the were not married, he wouldenjoy her as his owne in marriage: or if he could not winne her to be his wife, yet (at least) thee should bee his friend, because shee remained now in his power-

fu

th

ve

ba

Pro

the

for

Baiagethiwas a man of ftearne lookes, rough and

harsh both in speech and behaviour; yet causing the Lady to be honourably used divers dayes together, the became thereby well comforted and recovered. And feeing her beautie to exceede all comparison, he was afflicted beyond measure, that he could not understand her, nor shee him, whereby he could not know of whence or what the was. His amorous flames enercafing more and more; by kinde courteous, and affable actions, he laboured to compasse what he aymed at. Bur all his endeavour proved to no purpose, for the refuled all familiar privacie with him, which fo much the more kindled the furic of his fire. This being well observed by the Lady, having now remained there a moneth and more, and collecting by the customes of the Countrey; that the was among Turkes; and in fuch a place, where although the were knowne, yet it would little advantage her; beside, long protraction of time would provoke Bajazero by faire means or force to obtaine his will: fice propounded to her felfe (with magnanimity of spirit) to tread all missortune under her feete, commanding her Women (wheteof thee had but three now remaining alive) that they should not disclose what she was, except it were in some fuch place, where manifelt fignes might yeeld hope of regaining their liberty. Moreover, the admonished the floutly to defend their honour and chaftity; affirming, that the had abfolurely refolved with herfelfe that never any other should enjoy her, but her intended hufband: wherein her women did much commend her, promiting to preferve their reputation, according as the had commanded.

Day by day, were the corments of Baiggeth wonderfully augmented, yet still his kinde offers scornefully refused, and he as farre of from compassing his defires as when he first began to moeve the matter : wherefore, perceiving that all faire courses served to no

gh and harth

ad

cc

ii-

S.C

ive

dy

tle

eto

ive,

alfo

vio-

eared

upon

tried,

rifhe

) thec

OVY ID

effect; he refolved to compaffe his purpose by craft and subtiltie, reserving rigorous extremity for his finall conclusion. And having once observed, that wine was very pleasing to the Lady, shee never being used to drinke any at all because (by her Countries Law) it was forbidden her: and no meane store having beene lately brought to Baiazeth in a Barke of Geneway: he resolved to surprize her by meanes thereof, as a chiefe minister of Venus, to heate the coolest bloud. And feeming now in his outward behaviour, as if he had given over his amorous pursute, and which shee strove by all her best endeavours to withstand; one night; after a very Majesticke and solemne manner, he prepared a delicate and sumptuous supper, whereto the Lady was invited: and he had given order, that hee who attended on her Cup, should serve her with manie wines, compounded and mingled together; which he accordingly performed, as being cunning enough in fuch occasions.

Alothiclls mistrusting no such trechery intended against her, and liking the Wines pleasing taste extraordinarily; dranke more than stood with her precedent modest resolution, and forgetting all her passed adversities, became were frolicke and merry: so that seeing fome women dance after the manner observed there in Majorica, shee also fell to dancing according to the Alexandrian custome. Which when Baiageth beheld, heeimagined the victory to bee more than halfe wonne, and his hearts desire very neere the obtaining: plying her still with wine upon wine, and continuing this revelling the most part of the night.

At the length, the invited gueffs being all gone, the I ady retired to her chamber, attended on by none but Bajayeth himselfe, and as familiarly as if he had been one of her women, the no way contradicting his bold introsion, so farre had wine over-gone her sences, and

pre-

25

the

we

Cic

Wil

rat)

the

Prevailed against all modest bashfulnesse. These wanton embracings, strange to her that had never tasted them before, yet pleasing beyond measure, by reason of his trecherous advantage; afterward drew on many more of the like carowsing meetings, without so much as thought of her passed miseries, or those honourable and chast respects, that ever ought to attend on Ladies.

Now, Fortune envying thus their stollen pleasures, and that the, being the purposed wife of a potent King, should thus become the wanton friend of a much meaner man, whose onely glory was their shame; altered the course of their too common pastimes, by preparing a farre greater infelicity for them. This Baiareth had a Brother, aged about five and twenty yeeres, of most compleate person, in the very beauty of his time, and fresh as the sweetest fmelling Rose, he being named Amurath. After hee had once feene this Lady (whole faire feature pleased him beyond all womens else) the feemed in his fodaine apprehension, both by her ourward behaviour and civill apparancie, highly to deferve his very best opinion, for the was not meanely entered into his favour. Novy he found nothing to his hindrance, in obtaining the heighth of his hearts defire, but onely the firit cuftodie and guard, wherein his brother Baiazeth kept her: which rayled a cruell conceite in his minde, wherein followed (not long after) as cruellan effect.

1-

h

in

1-

iá.

cc-

ad-

ce-

ved

ling

aia-

the

and

e, the

been

s bold

s,and

hr.

It came to passe, that at the same time; in the l'ort of the Citty, called Cassa, there lay then a Ship laden with Merchandize, being bound thence for Smyrna, of which ship two Genemay Merchants (being brethren) were the Patrons and Owners, who had given direction for hoysing the sayles to depart thence when the winde should serve. With these two Genemayes Annual had covenanted, for himself togoe aboord the ship the night ensuing, and the Lady in his company. When

1

night

night was come, having refolved with himfelfe what was to be done; in a disguised habite he went to the house of Baiazeth, who frood not any way doubtfull of him, and with certaine of his most faithfull Confederates (whom he had fworne to the intended action) they hid themselves closely in the house. After some part of the night was over-past, he knowing the severall lodgings both of Baiazeth and Alathiella, flew his brother foundly fleeping; and feizing on the Lady, whom he found awake and wceping, threatned to kill her also, if the made any noyle. So being well furnithed with the greater part of worldly lewels belonging to Baiageth, unheard or undeferred by any body, they went presently to the Port, and there (without any further delay) Amurath and the Lady were received into the Ship, but his companions returned backe againe; when the Mariners, having their fayles ready fet, and the winde aptly fitting for them, lanchec forth merrily into the maine.

You may well imagine, that the Lady was extraordinarily afflicted with greefe for her first misfortune; and now this fecond chancing fo fod ainely, must needs offend her in greater manner : but Anurath did fo kindly comfort her with milde, modeft, and manly persivations, that all remembrance of Baiageth was quickely forgotten, and the became converted to lovely dem anor, even wien Forrune prepared a fresh milery for her; as not latisfied with thole whereof the had ta-The Lady being unequalled for beauty fled already, (as I fayd before ther behaviour also in fuch exquitire and commendable kind expressed; the two brethen owmargof the Ship, became to deepely enamored of her, that forgetting all their moft ferious affaires, they fludied by all possible meanes, to be pleasing and gracious in hereve, yet with fuch a careful courage, that Amurath

Could neither fce nor fulpedit.

When

h

10

of

t-

ı)

ae

c-

115

y,

all

11-

ng

icy

HI-

to

ne;

nd

Ti-

or.

ne;

eds

do

mly

was

vely

fery

ta-

auty

ulite

OW-

her,

Atu-

CIOUS

math

Vhen

When the Brethren had imparted their loves extreamity each to other, and plainely perceived, that though they were equally in their fiery torments, ver their defires were utterly contrary: they began feverally to confider, that gaine gotten by Merchandize, admitted an cqual and honest division, but this porchase was of a different quality, pleading the title of a fole possession, without any partner or intruder. Fearefull and jealous were they both, leaft either should ayme at the others intention, yet willing enough to fhake hands, in ridding Amurath out of the way, who onely was the hinderer of their hopes. Whereupon they concluded together, that on a day when the ship sayled on very swiftly, and Amurath was fitting upon the Decke, studiously observing how the Billowes combated each with other, and not suspecting any such treason in them towards him: ftealing foftly behinde him, fodainely they threw him into the Sea, the thip floating on above halfe a Leagues distance, before any perceived his fall into the Sea.

When the Lady heard thereof, and faw no likely meanes of recovering him againe, the fell toher wonted teares and lamentations; but the two Lovers came quickely to comfort her, using kinde words and pithy perswasions (albeit the understood them not, or at the moft very little) to appeale the violence of her passions; and to speake uprightly, she did not so much bemoane the loffe of Amurath, as the multiplying of her owne misfortunes, full one succeeding in the neck of another. After divers long & well delivered Orations as also veryfaire and courteous behaviour, they had indifferently pacified her complayningsthey began to discourse and commune with themselves, which of them had most right and title to Alathiella, and confequently ought to enjoy her. Now that Amurath was gone, each pleaded his priviledge to be as good as the others, both in the thip, Goods, and all advantages elle whatfoever hap-

12

CIRC

pening: which the elder brother absolutely denyed, alleaging art his propriety of birth, a reason sufficient, whereby his younger ought to give him place: Likewise his right and interest both in the ship & goods, to be more than the others, as being heire to his father, and therefore in justice to be highest preferred. Last of all, that his strength onely threw Amurath into the sea, and therefore gave him the full possession of his prize, no

right at all remaining to his brother.

From temperate and calme speeches they fell to frownes and ruder Language, which heated their blood in such violent manner, that forgetting brotherly afte-Sion, and all respect of Parents or friends, they drew Forth their Ponyards, flabbing each other so often and desperately, that before any in the ship had the power or meanes to part them, both of them being very dangeroully wounded, the younger brother fell downe dead : the elder being in little better cafe, by receiving to many perilous hurrs, remained (nevertheleffe) living. This unhappy accident displeased the Lady very highly, feeing her felfe thus left alone, without the help or counsell of any body; and fearing greatly, least the anger of the two Brethrens Parents and Friends, should now be layd to her charge, and thereon follow feverity of punishment. But the earnest entreaties of the wounded furviver, and their arrivall at Smyrna foone after, delivered him from the danger of death, gave some ease to her forrow, and there with him the went on thore.

Romaining there with him in a common Inne, while he continued in the Chirurgians cure, the fame of her fingular and much admired beauty was foone spread abroad throughout all the City. & amought the rest, to the hearing of the Prince of Ionia, who lately before (on very urgent occasions) was come to Smyrna. This rate rumour made him desirous to see her, and after he had seene her, she seemed farre fairer in his eye,

chan

0

d

1,

١d

10

to

od

te-

W

nd

er

m-

vne

ing

li-

ery

nelp

the

bluc

rity

oun

fter,

ealc

ore.

while

f her

ad a-

It, to

efore

This

after

seye,

than

feafted.

than common report had noyfed her to be; and fuddenly grew fo enamored of her, that the was the onely Idea of his best defires. Afterward, understanding in what manner the was brought thither, he devised hove to make her his owne, practifing all possible meanes to accomplish it: which when the wounded Brothers Parents heard of they not onely made tender of their willingnesse therein, but also immediately sent her to him : a matter most highly pleasing to the Prince, and likewise to the Lady her selfe, because the thought now to be freed from no meane perill, which otherwise the wounded Merchanes friends might have inflicted upon her. The Prince perceiving, that befide her matchleffe beauty, the had the true character of Royall behaviour; greeved the more, that he could not be further informed of what Countrey the was. His opinion being fo fledfastly grounded, that (lesse than Noble) shee could not be, was a motive to fer a keener edge on his affection towards her, yet not to enjoy heras in honourable and loving complement onely, but as his espouled Lady and Wife. Which appearing to her by apparant demonftrations, though entercourfe of speech wanted to confirme it; remembrance of her fo many fad difafters. and being now in a most noble and respected condition, her comfort enlarged it felfe with a fetled hope, her feares grew free from any more mollestations, and her beauties became the onely theame and argument of private and publike conference in all Natolia, that (well-neere) there was no other discourse; in any Asfembly whatfoever.

Hecreupon the Duke of Athens, being young, goodly, and valiant of person, as also a neere Kinsman to the Prince, had a defire to see her; and under colour of vifiting his noble Kinsman, as oftentimes he had done) attended with an honourable traine, to Smirna he came being there most royally welcommed, and boungeously

feafted. Within some few dayes of his there being, conference passed between them, concerning the rare beauty of the Lady; the Duke questioning the Prince, whether she was of such wonder, assame had acquainted the world withall? Whereto the Prince replyed; Much more (Noble kinsman) than can be spoken of, as your owne eyes shall witnesse, without crediting any words of mine. The Duke soliciting the Prince thereto very carnessly, they both went together to see her, and shee having before heard of their comming, adorned her seife the more Majestically, entertaining them with ceremonious demeanor (after her Countries custome) which gave most gracious and onspeakable acceptation

Ar the Princes affable motion. thee fate downe betweene them, their delight being beyond expression, to behold her but abridged of much more felicity. because they understood not any part of her Language; so that they could have no other conference, but by looks and outward fignes onely, and the more they beheld her, the more they marvelled at her rare perfections,efpecially the Duke, who hardly credited that the wasa mortall creature. Thus not perceiving, what deepe carowses of amorous poylon his eyes dranke downe by the meere fight of her, yet thinking thereby onely to be satisfied, he loft both himselfe and his best seuces, growing in love (beyond all measure) with her. When the Prince and he were parted from her, and he was at his owne private amorous meditations in his Chamber, he reputed the Prince fatre happier than any man elfe, by the enjoying of fuch a peercleffe beauty.

After many intricate and distracted cogitations, which molested his braines incessantly, regarding more his loves wanton heate, than reason, kindred, and honourable hospitality; he resolutely determined (whatsoever ensued thereupon) to be reave the Prince of his faire felicity, that none but himselfe might possesse further

dot!

g

re

e,

ed ch

ur ds

ry

er

c-

in 4-

n,

10

ks

d

ef-

14

1-

by

to

3,

en at

n-

ın

ıs,

rc •-

e-

re

13

treafure, which he efteemed to be the height of all haps pines. His courage being coformable to his bad intent. with all haft it must be put in execution fo that equity, juffice, and honefly, being quite abandoned, nothing but fubtile ftratagems were now his meditations. On a day, according to a fore-compacted trechery which he had ordered with a Gentleman of the Princes Chamber, who was named Churiscy, he prepared his horfes to be in readinelle, and dispatched all his affaires else for a fodaine departure. The night following, he was fecretly conveyed by Churiary & a friend of his with him (being both armed) into the Princes chamber, where he (while the Lady was foundly fleeping) flood at a gazing window towards the Sca, naked in his fhirt, to take the coole ayre, because the season was exceeding hot. Havingformerly inftructed his friend what was to be don, very foftly they ftept to the Prince, and running their weapons quite thorow his body, immediately they threw him forth of the window.

Mere you are to observe, that the Pallace was seated on the Sea shore, and very high, and the Window whereat the Prince stood looking foorth, was directly over divers houses, which the long continuance of time, and incessant beating on by the surges of the Sea, had so defaced and ruinated them, as seldome they were visited by any person; whereof the Duke having knowledge before, was the easier perswaded that the salling of the Princes body in so vast a place, could neither be heard or discryed by any. The Duke and his Companion, having thus executed what they came for, proceeded yet in their cunning a little further, casting a strangling Cord about the necke of Churtacy, seemed as if they hugged and simbraced him, but does it with so maine strength, that he never spake word after,

and to threw him downe after the Prince.

This done, and plainely perceiving that they were

not heard or feene, either by the Lady, or any other; the Duke tooke a light in his hand, going on to the bed, where the Lady lay most sweetely sleeping; whom the more he beheld, the more he admired and commended: but if in her garments the appeared to pleafing, what did the now in a bed of fuch flate and Majesty? Being no way daunted with his fo late committed finne, but Swimming rather in Surfet of joy, his hands all bloody. and his foule much more ugly; he layde him downe on the bed by her, bestowing infinite killes and embraces on her, the supposing him to be the prince al this while, not opening her eyes to bee otherwise resolved. But this was not the delight he aymed at, neither did hee thinke it fafe for him, to delay time with any longer tarrying there: Wherefore, having his agents at hand fit and convenient for the purpofe; they surprized her in fuch fort, that the could not make any noyfe or outcry, and carrying her through the fame false posterne, whereat themselves hadentred, laying her in a Princely litter; away they went with all possible speede, not sarrying in any place, untill they were arrived neere Athens. Bur thither he would not bring her, because himselfe was a married man, but rather to a goodly Caftle of his owne, not diftant farre from the City; where he caused her to be kept very secretly (to her no Sittle greefe and forrow) yet attended on and ferved in most honourable manner.

The Gentlemen usually attending on the Prince, having waited all the next morning till noone, in expectation of his rising, and hearing no stirring in the Chamber, did thrust at the doore, which was but onely closed together, and finding no body there, they prefently imagined, that he was privately gone to some other place, where (with the Lady, whom he so deerely affected) he might remaine some fewdayes for his more contentment, & so they rested verily perswaded. Within

fomr

the

ed,

the

led:

hat

ing

but

dy,

e on

CCS.

ule.

But

hee

ger

and

her

out-

me,

ICC-

not

eere

aule

dly

ty;

rno

d in

ha-

pe-

the

nely

ore-

CO-

rely

ore

thin

me

fome few dayes following, while no other doubt came in question, the Princes Feole, entering by chance among the ruined houses, where lay the dead bodyes of the Prince and Churiacy: tooke held of the cord about Churiacyes necke, and so went along dragging it after him. The dead body being knowne to many, with no meane merveile how he should be murthered in so vile manner; bygists and faire perswasions they won him to bring them to the place where hee found it. And there (to the no little greefe of the whole Citty) they found the Princes body also, which they caused to be interred with all the Majesticke pompe that might be.

Vpon further inquifition, who should commit to horrid a deed, perceiving likewife that the Duke of Athens was not to be found, but was closely gone : they judged (according to the truth) that he had his hand in this bloody bufinetie, and had carried away the Lady with him, Immediately, they elected the Princes brother to be their Lord and Soveraigne, incling him to revenge fo herrid a wrong, and promiting to affift him with their utmost power. The new chosen Prince being alfured afterward, by other more apparant and remarkeable proofes, that his people informed him with nothing but truth: fod inely, and according as they had concluded, with the helpe of neighbours, kindred and friends, collected from divers places; he mustred a good and a powerfull army, marching on towards Athens, to make warre against the Duke.

No forner heard he of this warlike preparation made against him but he likewise levied forces for his owner defence, and to his succour came many great States: a-mong whom, the Emperor of Constantinepse lent his son constantine, attended on by his Nephew Emanuell, with Troopes of faire and towardly force, who were honourably welcommed and entertained by the Duke, but much more by the Dutchesse, occasie she was their fifter in Lave.

Military provision thus proceeding on dayly more and more, the Dutches making choyse of a fit and convenient houre, tooke these two Princes with her to a withdrawing Chambers and there, in slouds of teares flowing from her eyes, wringing her hands, and fighing incessantly, the recounted the whole History, occasion of the warre, and how dishonourally the Duke dealt with her about this strange woman, whom hee purposed to keepe in despight of her, and thinking that she knew nothing thereof, and complaining very earnessy unto them, entreating that for the Dukes honour, and her comfort, they would give their best assi-

ftince in this cafe.

The two young Lords knew all this matter, before the thus reported it to them ; and therefore, without flaying to liften her any longer, but comforting her fo well as they could, with promise of their best employed paines: being inform'd by her, in what place the Lady was fo closely kept, they tooke their leave, and parted from her, Often they had head the Lady much commended, and her incomparable beauty highly extolled, yea even by the Duke himselfe; which made them the more defirous to fee her : wherefore earneftly they folicited him to let them have a fight ofher, and he(forgerting what happened to the Prince, by flewing her fo unadvitedly to him) promifed to grant their request. Caufing a very magnificent dinner to be prepared, in a goodly garden, at the Caffle where the Lady was kept; on the mortowy, attended on by a small traine, away they rode to dine with her.

conflutine being feated at the Table, he began (as one confounded with admiration) to observe her judiciously, affirming secretly to his soule that he had never seen to compleat a woman before; and allowing it for justice that the Duke or any other whatsoever, if (to enjoy so rare a beauty) they had committed treason,

or any mischeese else beside, yet in reason they ought to be held excused. Nor did he bestow so many looker upon her, but his prayles infinitely surpassed them, as tainking he could not sufficiently commend her, following the Duke step by step in assection for being now growne amorous of her, and remembrance of the intended warre, utterly abandoned, no other thoughts could come neerer him but how to be ease the Duke of her, yet conceasing his love, and not imparting it

to any one.

-

2

e

at

t-

0-

re

ut

Co

d

iy

ed

4-

d.

ne

ty

1-

fu

ft.

1 2

:10

ay

85

11-

10-

,if

n,

10

While his fancies were thus amoroufly fee on fire, the time came, that they must make head against the Prince, who already was marching within the Dukes dominions: wherefore the Duke, constantine, and all the reft, according to a counfell held among them, went to defend certaine of the Frontiers, to the end that the Prince might paffe no further. Remaining there divers dayes together, Confiantine (who could thinke on nothing elfe but the beautiful Lady) confidering with himselfe, that while the Duke was now lo farre from her, it was an eafie matter to compafie his intent: Hereupon, the better to colour his pretent returne to Athens, he feemed to be furprized with a fudden extreame ficknesse, in regard whereof (by the Dukes free licente, and leaving all his power to his Cofen Emanuel) forthwith he journyed backe to Athens. After some conference had with his lifter, about her dithonourable wrongs enduted at his hands only by the Lady, he folemnly protefled, that if the were so pleased, he would ayde her powerfully in the matter, by taking her from the place where the was, and never more afterward, to be feene in that Country any more.

The Dutcheffe being faithfully perlivaded, that hee would doe this onely for her fake, and not in any affection he bare to the Lady, answered, that it highly pleafed her; alwayes provided, that it might be performed

fort, as the Duke her husband should never understand that ever she gave consent thereto; which Constantine sware unto her by many deepe oathes, whereby the referred all to his owne disposition. Constantine hereupon prepared in a readinesse a subtile Barke, sending stinan evening, neere to the Garden where the Lady selorted, having first informed the people which were in it, fully what was to be done. Afterwards, accompanied with some other of his atendants, he went to the Palace, to the Lady, where he was gladly entertained, not onely by such as wayted on her, but also by

the Lady her felfe.

Leading her along by the arme towards the Garden, attended on by two of her fervants, and two of his owne; feeming as if hee was fent from the Duke, to conferre with her: they walked alone so a Port opening on the Sea, which standing ready open, upon a figne given by him to one of his complices, the Barke was brought close to the shore; and the Lady being fodainely feized on, was immediately. conveyed into it; and he returning backe to her people, with his fword drawne, fayd': Let no man ftirre, er speake a word, except he be willing to loose his life: for I intend not to rob the Duke of his faire friend, but to expell the frame and dishonour that he hath offered to my Sifter : no one being to hardy as to returne him any answer, Aboord went Conftantine with his conforts; and fitting neere to the Lady; who wrung her hands, and wept bitterly; he commaunded the Mariners to launch forth, flying away on the wings of the winde, till about the breake of day following, they arrived at Melaffo. There they tooke landing, and repoled on thore for lome few dayes, Constantine labouring to comfort the Lady, even asif the had beene his own Sifter, the having good cause to curse her infortunate beauty.

Going

Pa

Going aboord the Barke againe, within few dayes they came to Setalia, and there fearing the reprehension of his Father, and leaft the Lady should be taken from him; it pleafeth Constantine to make his stay, as in a place of no mean fecuritie. And (as before) after much kind behaviour used towards the Lady, without any meanes in her selfe to redresse the least of all these great extremities, she became more milde and affable, for discontentment did not a jot quaile her.

While occurrences palled on in this manner, it forruned, that Osbech the King of Turkic (who was in continuall warre with the Emperour) came by accident to Laiazzo : and hearing there how lasciviously Conffantine fpent his time in Setalia, with a Lady which he had stolne, being but weake and slenderly guarded; in the night with certaine well provided thips, his men and hee entred the towne, and furprized many people in their beds , before they knew of their enemies comming, killing fuch as flood upon their defence against them (among whom was Constanfantine: and burning the whole Towne brought their booty and prisoners about their Ships, wherewith they returned backe to Lais 720, Being thus come. to Laia? 20, Osbech who was a brave and gallant young man, upon a review of the pillage, found the faire Lady, whom he knew to be the beloved of confrantine, because the was found lying on his bed. Without any further delay, hee made choise of her to be his wife; causing his nuptials to be honourably solemnized, and many moneths'he lived there in great joy with her.

But before occasions grew to this effect, the Emperour made a confederacie with Baffano, King of Cappadocia, that he shold descend with his forces, one way upon Osbech, and he would assault him with his power, on the other. But hee could not so well bringthis to passe, because the Emperor would not yeeld to Bassana.

Novell 7. The Second Day,

in any unreasonable matter hee demanded Neverthelesse, when hee understood what had happened to his Sonne (for whom his griefe was beyond all measure) he granted the King of Cappadociaes requests solicating him with all instancie, to be the more speedy in assayling Osbech. It was not long, before he heard of this conjuration made against him; and therefore he speedily mustered up all his forces, ere he would be encompassed by two such potent Kings, and marched on to meete the King of Cappadocia, leaving his Lady and Wise (for her safetie) at Laisago, in the custody of a

true and loyall fervant of his.

Within a fhort while after, hee dtew neere the Campe belonging to the King of cappa locia, where boldly hee gave him battell; chancing therein to be flaine, his Army broken and discomfitted; by meanes whereof, the King of cappadoeia, remaining Conquerque marched on towards Laiz 70; every one yeelding him obeyfance all the way as he went. In the meane frace, the fervant to Osbech, who was named Antibehin, and with whom the faire Lady was left in guard; although he was aged, yet feeing the was focktraordinarily beautifull, he fell in love with her, forperting the folemne vowes he had made to his Mafter. One happineffe hee had in this cale to helpe him, namely, that he understood and could peake her Language: a mitter of no meane comfort to her, who constrainedly had lived divers yeares together, in the state of a deafe or dumbe Woman, because every where effe they understoode her not, nor the them, but by flewes and fignes.

This benefite of familiar conference, began to embottlen his hopes, elevate his courage, and make him feeme from youthfull in his owne opinion, than any ability of body could speake unto him, or promise him in the postession of her, who was as farre bryond him.

and

n

governed by Madam Philomena.

the-

his

urc)

lay-

this

pee-

cn-

don

and

of a

the

here

o be

anes

on-

one

med

ft un

for-

fer.

um,

Lanwho

nthe

hem,

him

him

him;

104

and so unequal to be enjoyed by him; yet to advance his hopes a great deale higher, Newes came, that orbech was vanquished and flaine, and that Baffano made every where great havocke of all : whereon they concluded together, not to tarrie there any longer, but storing themselves with the goods of Osbech. fecretly they departed thence to Rhodes. Being feated there in some indifferent abiding, it came to paffe, that Antiochus fell into a deadly ficknesse, to whom came a Cyprian Merchant, one much efteemed by him, as being an intimate friend and kinde acquaintance, and in whom hee reposed no small confidence. Feeling his ficknesse to encrease more and more upon him daily, he determined, not onely, to leave fuch wealth as hee had to this Merchant, but the faire Lady likewife. And calling them both to his beds fide, hee spake in this manner.

Deere Love, and my most worthily respected friend. I perceive plainely and infallibly, that I am now drawing neare unto my end, which much discontenteth me; because my hope was to have lived longer in this world, for the enjoying of your kinde and most efteemed company. Yet one thing maketh my death very pleasing and welcome to me ; namely, that lying thus in my bed of larest comfore in this life, I shall expire and finish my course, in the armes of those two perfons, whom I most affected in all this world, as you my ever-dearest friend, and you faire Lady, whom (fince the very first fight of you) I loved and honoured in my foule. Irkefome and very gricvous it is to me, that (if I die) I shall leave you here a stranger, without the counsell and helpe of any body: and yet much more offensive would it become, if I had not flich a friend as you here prefent, who (I am faithfully perswaded) will have the like care and respect of her (even for my fake) as of my felfe, if time had allotted

my

my longer tarrying here. And therfore (worthy friend) most earnestly. I desire you, that if I die, all mine affaires and shee may remaine to your trustic care, as being (by my selfe) absolutely commended to your providence, and so to dispose both of the one and the other, as may be diagree with the comfort of my soule. As for you (choise beautie) I humbly intreate, that after my death you would not forget me, to the end, I may make my vaunt in another world, that I was affected here by the fairest Lady that ever Nature framed. If of these two things you will give me assured. If of these two things you will give me assured. Is of these two things you will give me affort.

The friendly Merchant, and likewise the Lady, hearing these words, were both bitterly : and after hee had given over speaking, kindely they comforted him, with promifes and folemne Vowes, that if he died, all should be performed which he had requested. Within a thort wile after, hee departed out of this life, and they gave him honourable buriall, according to that Countrey custome. Which being done, the Merchant difpatching all his affaires at Roodes, was defirous to returne home to Cyprus, in a Carracke of the Catelans then there being : moving the Ladie in the matter, to understand how shee stood enclined, because urgent occasions called him thence to Cyprus. The Lady made answer, that shee was willing to passe thither with them, hoping for the love he beare to deceased Antiochus, that he would respect her as his fifter. The Merchant was willing to give her any contentment, but yet resolved her, that under the title of being his Sifter, it would be no warrant of securite to rhem both. Wherefore, he rather advised her, to ftile him as her husband, and he would terme her his Wife, and fo hee should be fure to defend her from all injuries. whatfoever-

Being

end)

e.af-

c, as

your

d the

oule.

icaf-

nd, I

nat I

ture

affu-

on:-

ady,

hee

him,

d,all

un a

they

oun-

dif-

re-

lans

, to

gent

ady

ther

afed

The

ent,

his

inse

nas

d fo

rics.

ing

Being aboord the Carracke, they had a Cabing and fmall bed conveniently allowed them, where they flept together, that they might the better be repused as man and wife ; for, to palle otherwife, wouldhave beene very dangerous to them both. And question lella their faithfull promise made at Rhodes to Antigebus lickeneffe on the Sea, and mutable respect they had of each others credit, was a constant restraint to all wanton defires, and a motive rather to incite Chaftitie; than otherwise, and so (I hope) you are perswaded of them . But howfoever, the windes blew merrily, the Carracke failed luftily, and (by this time) they are arrived at Baffa, where the Cyprian Merchant dwelr, and where the continued a long while with him, no one knowing otherwise, but that shee was his wife indeede.

Now it fortuned, that there arrived also at the same Baffa (about some especiall occasions of his) a Gentleman whole name was Antigenus, well stept into yeares, and better stored with wisedome than wealth; because by medling in many matters, while he followed the fervice of the King of Gyprus, Fortune had beene very adverse to him. The ancient Gentleman, pasfing (on a day) by the house where the Lady lay, and the Merchant being gone about his businesse into Armenia: hee chanced to see the Lady at a window of the house, and because shee was very beautifull, he observed her the more advitedly, recolleding his fences together, that (doubtleffe) hee had feene her before, but in what place hee could not remember. The Lady her felfe likewife, who had fo long time beene Fortunes tennis ball, and the terme of her many mileries drawing now neere an ending : began to conceive (upon the very first fight of Antigonus) that she had formerly feene him in Alexandria, ferving her Father in place of great degree. Hereupon, a sodaine hope per-Iwaded her, that by the advice and furtherance of this

Gentleman

Novell.7. The Second Day,

Gentleman, the could recover her wonted Royall conplition; and opportunity now aprly fitting her, by the absence of her pretended Merchant-husband, the sent for him, requesting to have a few words with him.

3. When he was come into the house, she bashfully demanded of him, if he was not named Antigonus of Famagofta, because the knew one like him so called? He answered that he was so named: faying moreover, Madam me thinkes, I should know you, but I cannot remember where I have seene you, wherefore I would intrease (if it might fland with your good liking) that my memory might be quickned with better knowledge of you. The Lady perceiving him to be the very man indeed, weeping incessantly, the threw her armes about his necke, and foone after asked Antigonus (who flood as one confounded with merveile) if he had never seene her in Alexandris? Vpon these words, Antigonus knew her immediately to be Alathiella, daughter to the great Soldane, who was supposed (long fince) to be drawned in the Sea! and chering to doe her fuch reverence as became him: the would not permit him, but defired that he would be affiftant to her and willed him also so sit downe's whileby her.

A goodly chaire being brought him, in very humble manner he demanded of her, what had become of her in so Iong a time, because it was verily believed throughout all Egypt, that shee was drowned in the Sea. I would it had beene so, answered the Lady, rather than to leade such a life as I have done; and I thinke my Father himselfe would wish it so, if ever he should come to the knowledge thereof. With these words the teares rained downe her faire cheekes wherefore Antigonus thus spake unto her. Madam; discomfort not yourselfe before you have occasion, but (if you be so pleased) relate your passed accidents, to me, and what your course of life hath beene; per-

haps,

governed by Madam Philomena. 306

con

the

Cent

v de-

Fa-

He

ver,

not

ould

that edge

man

bout

boof

ever

nti-

hter

e) to

Tuch

him,

illed

mble f her

eved

the

rà-

nd I

ever

thefe

ekes:

dam;

Gon;

ents,

per-

haps,

haps, I thall give you fo friendly advise as may frand you infread, and no way be injurious to you.

Ferching a fighe, even as if her heart would have folitin funder, thus the replyed. Ah Antigonia, mee thinkes when I looke on thee, I feeme en behold my royall Father, and therefore moved with the like religious zeale and charitable love, as in duty I ovve unto him : I will make known to thee, what I rather ought to conceale and hide from any person living. I know thee to be honourable, discreete, and truly wife, though I am a fraile, fimple, and weake woman, therfore I dare discover to thee, rather than any other that I know, by what ftrange and unexpected misfortunes I have lived to long obscurely in the world. And if in thy great and grave judgement (after the hearing of my many mileries) thou cariff any way reftore mee to my former estate, I pray thee doc it : but if thou perceive it impossible to be done, as earnestly likewise I entreate thee, never to reveale to any living person, that either thou haft feene mee, or heard any fpeech of me. After these words, the teares still streaming from her faire eyes, the recounted the whole passage of her rare mishappes, even from her shipwracke in the sea of Majorica, untill that very instant houre; speaking them in such harsh manner as they hapned, and not sparing any jet of them.

Antiochus being moved to much compassion, de= clared how he pittied her by his teares; and having beene filent an indifferent while, as confidering in this case what was best to be done, thus he beganne. Madam, feeing you have past through such a multitude of misfortunes, yet undiscovered, what and who you are: I will render you as blameleffe to your Facher, and estate you as fairely in his love, as at the houre when you parted from him; and afterward make you wife to the King of Cholches. She demanding of him by what

meanes

Novell.7. The Second Day,

meanes possibly this could be accomplished, briefely he made it knowne to her, how, and in what manner he

would performe it.

To cur off further tedious circumstances, forthwith he returned to Famagoffa, and going before the King of the countrey, thus he spake to him. Sir, you may (if lo you will be pleased) in an instant, doe me an exceeding honour, who have beene impoverished by your scrvice, and a also a deede of great renowne to your felfe, without any much matter of expence and coft. The King demanding how? Antigonus thus an-Iwered. The faire daughter of the Soldane, so generally reported to be drowned, is arrived at Baffar and to preserve her honour from blemishing, hath suffered many croffes and calamities : being at this inflant in very poore estate, yet desirous to vilite her Father. If you please to send her home under my conduct, it will bee great honour to you, and no meane benefite to me, which kindenesse will for ever be thankefully remembred by the Soldan. The King in royall magnificence, replied fuddenly, that hee was highly pleafed with these good tidings; and having sent honourably for her from Baffa, with great poinge the was condu-Red to Famagoffa, and there most graciously welcommed both by the King and Queene, with folemne triumphs, banquets, and revelling, performed in most Majesticke manner. Being questioned by the King and Queene, concerning to large a time of strange misfortunes; according as Antigonus had formerly instructed her, fo did thee thape the forme of her antivers, and fatisfied (with honour) all their demands. So, within few dayes after, upon her request, with an honourable traine of Lords and Ladies, the was fent thence, and conducted all the way by Antigonus, untill the came to the Soldans Court. After some dayes of her repoling these, the Soldan was defirous to understand, how the could felv

rhe

with

Ling

y/if

ccc-

your

e to

and

an-

eral-

nd to

fered

nt in

er. If

t will

ite to

lly re-

agni-

ealed

irably

ondu-

com-

етле

molt

ig and

isfor-

ruacd

, and

within

urable

e, and

ame to

poling

how the

could

couldpossibly live so long in any Kingdome or Province whatsoever, and yet no knowledge to be taken of her? The Lady, who perfectly retained by heart, and had all her lessons at her singers ends, by the warie instruction which Antigonis had given her, answered her father in this manner, Sir, about the 20 day after my departure from you, a very terrible and dreadful tempest overtooke us so that in dead time the night our ship being split in sunder upon the fands, neare to a place called Verna; what became of all the men that were aboord, I neither knew, nor ever heard of. Only I remember, then, when death appeared, and I being recovered from death to life, certaine Pesants of the Country, comming to search the ship so wrackt, I was strik (with two of my women) brought safely on shore.

No fooner were we there, but certaine rude shaggehaird villaines fet upon us, carrying away from mee both my women, then haling me alone by the haire of my head; neither teares or intercessions could draw any pittie from them. As thus they dragd me ina spacious Wood; foure horsemen on a sodaine came riding by, who feeing how diffionourably the villaines used me, rescued me from them, and forced them to flight. But the foure horsemen, seeming (in my judgement) to be perfons of power and authoritie, letting them goe, came to me; urging fundry questions to me, which neither I understood, or they mine anlwers. After many deliberations held among themfelves, fetting mee upon one of their hories, they brought me to a Monasterie of religious women, according to the cuflome of their Law: and there, whatfoever they did or faid, I knew not, but I was benignely welcomed thither, and honoured of them extraordinarily, where (with them in Devotion) I dedicated my felfe to the Goddeffe of chattitie, who is highly reverenced among the women of that Countrey

Novell.7. The Second Day,

Countrey, and to her religious service they are whol-

ly addicted.

After I had continued some time among them, and learned a little of their Language; they asked me, of whence, and what I was. Reason gave mee so much understanding, to be fearefull of telling them the truth, for seare of expulsion from among them, as an enemie to their Law and Religion: wherefore answered (according as necessitic urged) that I was daughter to a Gentleman of Cyprus, who sent me to be married in Candie; but our fortunes (meaning such as had the charge of me) sel out quite contrary to our expectation, by losses, shipwracke, and other mischances; adding many matters more beside, onely in regard of seare, and yeelding obediently to observe their customes.

At length, the that was in chiefest preheminence among these women (whom they termed by the name of their Lady Abbeffe) demanded of me, whether I was willing to abide in that condition of life, or to returne home againe into Cyprus. I answered, that I defired nothing more. But the, being very carefull of mine honour, would never repole confidence in any that came for Cyprus, till two honeft Gentlemen of France, who happed thither about two moneths fince, accompanied with their wives, one of them being a neere kinfwoman to the Lady abbeffe. And the well knows ing, that they travelled in Pilgrimage to Jerufalem, to vilite the holy Sepulcher, where (as they believe) that he whom they held for their God was buried, after the Iewes had put him to death; recommended me to their loving trust, with especiall charge, for delivering me to my Father in Cyprus. What honourable love and respect I found in the company of those Gentlemen and their Wives, during our voyage backe to Cyprus, the Historic would be over-tedious in reporting, neither

n

16

h

h

Ve

IC.

an

kij

ther is it much materiall to your purpole, because your

demand is to another end.

nd

of

ch

he

an

n-

was.

be

125

ex-

an-

re-

heir

ence

ame

Was

urne

fired

mine

that

ance,

com-

ncere

ewon.

en, te

) that

ter the

me to

vering

ve and

lemen

Суртия,

g, nei-

ther

Sayling on prosperously in our Ship, it was not long before we arrived at Baffa, where being landed, and not knowing any person, neither what I should say to the Gentlemen who only were carefull for delivering me to my Father, according as they were charged by the reverend Abbeffe ; it was the will of heaven doubtleffe (in pi tie and compaffion of my passed disasters) that I was no fooner come on thore at Baffa, but I should there happily meet with Antigonus, whom I called unto in our Countrey Language, because I would not be understood by the Gen lemen and their wives, requesting him to acknowledge me as his daughter. Quickly he apprehended mine intention, accomplishing what I requested, and (according to his poore power) most bountcously feasted the Gentlemen and their wives, conducting me to the King of Cyprus, who received me royally, and fent me home to you with fo much honour, as I am no way able to relate. What elle remaineth to be faid, Antigonus who hath oft heard the whole story of my misfortunes, at better kilure will report.

Antigonus then turning to the Soldan, faid: My Lord, as she hash often told me, and by relation both of the Gentlemen and their wives, the hash delivered nothing but truth. Onely she hash forgotten somewhat worth the speaking, asthinking it not sit for her to utter, because indeede, it is not so convenient for her. Namely, how much the Gentlemen and their wives (with whom she cause) commended the rare honestic and integrate of life, as also the uniported vertue wherein thee lived among those chaste religious women, as they constantly (both with teases and solemne, protestations) avouched to me, when hindely they resigned their charge to me. Of all winch

matters

matters, and many more befide, if I should make discourse to your Excellency; this whole day, the night ensuing, and the next dayes full extendure, are not sufficient to acquaint you withall. Let it suffice then that I have said so much, as (both by the reports, and mine owne understanding) may give you faithfull affurance, to make your Royall vaunt, of having the fairest, most vertuous and honest Ladie to your daugh-

ter, of any King or Prince whatfoever.

The Soldane was joyfull beyond all measure, welcomming both him and the rest in most stately manner, oftentimes entreating the Gods very heartily, that he might live to requite them with equall recompence, who had so graciously honoured his daughter: but above all the rest, the King of Cyprus, who sent her home so Majestically. And having bestowne great gifts on Antigenus, within a few dayes after, he gave him leave to returne to Cyprus: with thankesull savours to the King, as well by Letters, as also by Ambassadures expressely sent, both from himselfe and his

Daughter.

When as this businesse was fully finished, the Soldan, desiring to accomplish what formerly was intended and begun, namely, that she might be wise to the King of Colchos: hee gave him intelligence of all that had happened; writing moreover to him, that (if hee were so pleased) he would yet send her in Royall manner to him. The King was exceeding joyfull of these glad tidings, and dispatching a worthy traine to fetch her, the was conveied thither very pompously; and she who had beene imbraced by so many, was received by him as an honest Virgin, living long time after with him in much joy and felicitie. And therefore it hath beene said as a common Proverbe: The mouth well kist comes not short of good Fortune, but is still renewed like the Moone.

ce

CO

of

her

wh

Fre

bety

diff

The Count D'Angiers being falfely accufed, was banifled out of France, and left his two children in England in diversplacee. Returning afterward (un-Imorpine) thorow Scotlands hee found them advanced unto great dignitie. Then, repairing in the habite of a Servitour, into the King of France his Army, and bis innocency made publikely knownes bee was refeated in his honourab'e degree. vell .

The Eight Nound

Whereby all men may plainely erftand, that loyalte faithfully kept to the Prince (what perils foever doe enfue) doth yet nevertheleffe renowne a wan, and bring him to farre greater honour.

THe Ladies fighed very often, hearing the variety of wofall mileries happening to Alarhiella: but who knoweth, what occasion moved them to those fighes? Perhaps, there were some among them, who rather fighed they could not be fo often maried as the was rather than for any other compassion they had of her difasters. But leaving that to their owne construction, they fmiled merrily at the last speeches of Pampbilus : and the Queene perceiving the Novel to be ended, the fixed her eye upon Madam Eliza, as fignifying therby, that the was next to fucceed in order; which the joyfullyembracing, spake as followeth. The field is large, wherein all this day wee have walked, and there is not any one here to wearied with running the former races, but nimbly would adventure on as many more, fo copious are the alterations of fortune, in fad repetition of her wonderfull changes, and among the infinity of her various courses, I must make addition of another, which I truft, will no way discontent you.

When the Romane Empire was translated from the French to the Germaines, mightie diffention greve betweene both the Nations, infomuch, that it drew a dismall and a lingring warre. In which tespect, as

The

c

n-

y,

m-

er:

ent

reat

AVC

fa-

m-

d his

Sol-

nten.

o the

Ithat

if hee

manfthele

o fetch

and the

ived by

er with it hath

th well

still re-

well for the safetie of his owne kingdome, as to annoy and disturbe his enemies; the King of France and one of his sonnes, having congregated the forces of their owne Dominions, as also of their friends and consequences, they resolved manfully to encounter their enemies. But before they would advenue any tash proceeding, they held it as the chiefest part of policie and royall providence, not to leave the State without a Chiefe or Governor. And having had good experience of Gualtrie, Count D' Angiers, to be a wise and worthy. Lord, singularly expert in military thscipline, and faithfull in all affaires of the Kingdome (yet fitter for ease and pleasure, than laborious toyle and travell:) he was elected Lieutenant Governour in their stead, over the whole kingdome of France, and then they

went on their enterprize. Now beganne the Count to execute the office committed to his truft, by orderly proceeding, and with great discretion, yet not entring into any businesse, without confent of the Queene and her faire daughter in Law : who although they were left under his care and custodie, yet (notwithstanding) hee hopoured them as his superiours, and as the dignitic of their qualitie required. Heere you are to oblerve, concerning Count Gaultier himselfe, that he was a most compleate person, aged little above fortie yeares, as affable and fingularly conditioned, as any noble man possible could be, nor did those times affoord a Gentleman, that equalled him in all respects. It fortuned that the King and his sonne being basic in the aforenamed warre, the wife and Lady of Count Gualtier died in the meane while, leaving him onely a sonne and a daughter, very yong and of tender yeares, which made his owne home the leffe welcome to him , having loft his deare love, and fecond felfe.

3

lo

pr

mi

en

hal

thi

Hareupon, he reforted to the Court of the faid La-

-

e-

ond

: 2

hy

for

11:)

hey

ffice

with

nelle,

care

oured

cheir

most

e man

ortuned

afore-

onely a

rycarcs,

come to

dics

selfe.

dies the more frequently, often conferring with them, about the weightie affaires of the Kingdome: in which time of fo ferious interparlance, the Kings fonnes wife, threw many affectionate regards upon him, conveying fuch conspiring passions to her heart (in regard of his person and vertues) that her love exceeded all capacitie of government. Her defires out-Repping all compasse of modestie, or the dignitie of her Princely condition, throwes off all regard of civill and fober thoughts, and guides her into a Labirinth of wanton imaginations. For, the regards not now the eminencie of his authoritie, his gravitie of yeares, and those parts that are the true conducts to honour: but lookes upon her owne loofe and lascivious appetite, her young, gallant, and over-ready yeelding nature, comparing them with the want of a wife, and likely hope thereby of her fooner prevailing; supposing, that nothing could be her hindrance, but onely bashfull fhamefaftnesse, which she rather chose utterly to forfake and fet afide, than to faile of her hot enflamed affection, and therefore thee would needes be the difcoverer of her owne difgrace.

Vpon a day, being alone by her selse, and the time seeming sutable to her intention: she sent for the Count, under the colour of some other important conference with him. The Count D'Angiers, whose thoughts were quite contrary to hers: immedially went to her, where they both sitting downe together on a beds side in her Chamber, according as formerly she had plotted her purpose; twice he demanded of her, upon what occasion she had sent for him. She sitting a long time silent, as if she had no answer to make him, pressed by the violence of her amorous passions, a Vermillion tincture leaping up into her sace, yet shame enforcing teares from her eyes, with words broken and halse consused, at last she began to deliver her minde in this manner.

Novell.8. The Second Day,

Honourable Lord, and my deare respected Friend; being so wife a man as you are, it is no difficult matter for you to know, what a fraile condition is imposed both on men and women syet (for divers occasions) much more upon the one, than the other. Wherefore defertfully, in the confure of a just and upright ludge, a fault of divers conditions (in respect of the person) ought not to be cenfured with one and the fame punifhment. Befide, who will not fay, that a man or woman of poore and meane efface, having no other helpe for maintenance, but laborious travell of their bodies, should worthily receive more sharpe reprehension, in yeelding to amorous defires, or fuch paffions as are incited by love; than a wealthy Lady whose living relieth not on her paines or cares, neither wanteth any thing that fhe can wish to have : I dare prefume, that you your felfe will allow this to be equal and just. In which respect, I am of the minde, that the fore-named allegations, ought to serve as a sufficient excuse, yea, and to the advantage of her who is so posfessed, if the passions of love should over-reach her: alwayes provided, that thee can pleade in her owne defence, the choice of a wife, and vertuous friend, answerable to her owne condition and qualitie, and no way to be taxt with a fervile or vile election.

These two speciall observations, allowable in my judgement, and living now in me, seizing on my youthfull bloud and yeares, have found no meane inducement to love, in regard of my husbands farre distance from me, medling in the rude uncivill actions of war, when he should rather be at home in more sweet imploiment. You see Sir, that these Oratours advance themselves here in your presence, to acquaint you with the extremitie of my over-commanding agony: and if the same power hath dominion in you, which your discretion (questionlesse) cannot be voide of; then let

ne

me intreate such advice from you, as may rather lielpegthan hinder my hopes. Beleeve it then for truth Sir,
that the long absence of my husband from me, the solitary condition wherein 1 am left, ill agreeing with
the hot bloud running in my veines, and the temperof my earnest desires; have so prevailed against my
strongest resistances, that not onely so weake a woman as I am, but any man of much more potent might,
(living in ease and idlenesse as I do) cannot withstand
such continual assaults, having no other helpe but
steen and bloud.

1-

)-

pe

15,

1 ,

re

ng

th

ne,

and

the

ent

-log

ner:

vne

end,

tic,

on.

a my

outh-

duce-

tance

war,

t im-

vance

uwith

y: and

h your

henlet

me

Nor am I so ignorant, but publike knowledge of fuch an error in mee, would be reputed a shrewd taxation of honefty: whereas (on the other fide) fecret carriage, and heedfull managing such amorous affaires, may paffe for currant without any reproach. And let me tell you, noble Count, that I repute love highly favourable to me, by guiding my judgement with fuch moderation, to make election of a wife sworthy, and honourable friend, fit to enjoy the grace of a farre greater Lady than I am, and the first letter of his name, is the Count D'Angiers. For if error have not missed mine eye, as in love no Lady can be eafily deceived: for person, perfections, and all parts most to be commended in a man, the whole Realme of France containeth not your equall. Observe beside, how forward Fortune sheweth her selfe to us both in this case; you to be deflitute of a wife, as I am of a husband; for I account him as dead to me, when he denies me the duties belonging to a wife. Wherefore, in regard of the unfained affection I beare you, and compaffion which you ought to have of a Royall Princesse, even almost ficke to death for your fake, I earnestly entreate you. not to deny me your loving focietie, but pittying my youth and fiery affections (never beto quenched but by your kindnesse) I may enjoy my hearts desire.

As shee vitered these words, the teares streamed aboundantly downe her faire cheekes, preventing her of any further speech: so that dejecting her head into her bosome, overcome with the predominance of her passion, she fell upon the Counts knee, whereas else she had falne upon the ground. When he, like a loyall and most honourable man, sharpely reprehended her fond and idle love; And when she eisled him s he repulsed her roughly from him, protesting upon his honourable reputation, that rather than hee would so wrong his Lord and Master, he would endure a thousand deaths.

The Lady seeing her desire disappointed, and her fond expectation utterly frustrated : grew instantly forgetfull of her intemperate love, and falling into extremity of rage, converting her former gentle and loving speeches, into this rash and ruder language. Vil= laine (quoth thee) shall the longing comforts of my life, be abridged by thy base and scournefull deniall? Shall my destruction be wrought by thy most currish unkindnesse, and all my hoped joyes be defeated in a moment? Know Slave, that I did not so earnestly defire thy sweete embracements before, but now as deadly I hate and despise them; which either thy death or banishment shall pay for. No sooner had she thus Spoken, hut tearing her haire, and rending her garments in peeces, the ranne about like a diftraded woman, crying out aloud; Helpe, helpe, the Count D'Angiers will forcibly dishonor mee, the lufty Count will violate my honour.

D'Angiers seeing this, and fearing more the malice of the over-credulous Court, than either his owne conscience, or any dishonourable all by him commits ted, believing likewise, that her slanderous accolation would be credited, above his true and spotlesse inno-

cencie;

1

0

er

C 11

cr n-

C-

0-Co

u.

er

tly

X-

0-

my

113 ih

n a

de-

as

ath

hus

221-

NO-

unt

unt

ma-

wnc

mits tion

nho-

icie:

cencie; closely he conveyed himselfe out of the Court, making what hafte he could, home to his owne house, which being too weake for warranting his fafetie upon. fuch purfaire as would be used against him, without any further advice or counfell, hee feated his two children on horfe-backe, himfelfe also being but meanely mounted, thus away thence hee went to Calice.

Vpon the clamour and noise of the Lady, the Courtiers flocked thither; and, as lies foone winne beleefe in hafty opnions, upon any filly or shallow surprise : so did heracculation palle for current, and the Counts advancement being envied by many, made his honest carriage (in this cale) the more suspected. In hafte and madding furie, they ranne to the Counts houses, so - arrest his person, and carry him to prison; but when they could not finde him, they raced his goodly buildings downe to the ground, and used all shamefull violence to them. Now, as ill newes fildome wants a Speedy Messenger; so, in lesse space than you will imagine, the King and Dolphin heard thereof in the Campe, and were therewith highly offended , the the Course had a fodzine and fevere condemnation, all his progeny being sentenced with perpetuall exile, and promifes of great and bountifull rewards, to fuch as could bring his body alive or dead.

Thus the innocent Count, by his over-haftie and Todame flight, made himselfe guiltie of this soule Imputation : and arriving at Callice with his children, their poore and homely habites , hid them from being knowne, and thence they croffed over into England, flaving no where until hee came to London. Before hee would enter into the Citie, he gave divers good advertisements to his children, but especially two precepts above all the rest. First, with patient foules to Support the poore condition, whereto For-

K 4

tune

tune (without any offence in him or them) had thus dejected thern. Next, that they should have most heedfull care, at no time to disclose from whence they came, or whose children they were, because it extended to the perill of their lives. His Sonne, bebeing named Lewes, and now about nine yeares old, his Daughter called Violenta, and aged seaven yeares, did both observe their Fathers direction, as afterward it did sufficiently appeare. And because they might live in the fafer fecuritie he thought it for the beft to change their names, calling his Sonne Perette, and his Daughter Gianetta, for thus they might beft clease anknowne.

Being entred into the Citie, and in the poore estate of beggars, they craved every bodies mercy and almes. It came to paffe that flanding one morning at the Cathedrall Church-doores, a great Lady of England being then witero she Lord high Marthal. comming forth of the Church, espied the Countand his children there begging. Of him shee demanded swhat countrey-man he was ? and whether those children were his owne, or no? The Count replied, that he was borne in Piccardy, and for an unhappy fact committed by his eldeft Sonne (a stripling of more hopefull expectations than proved) he was enforced, with those his two other children, to forfake his counzrey. The Lady being by nature very pittifull, looking advisedly on the young Girle, began to grow in good diking of her; because the was beautiful, whereupon the faid. Honest man, thy daughter hath a pleasing countenace, and (perhaps) her inward disposition may prove answerable to her outward good parts: if thou wilt be content to leave her with me, I will entertaine her, and upon her dutifull carriage, if the live to fuch yeares as may require it, I will have her honefly bestowne in marriage. This motion pleased the Count, who willingly delivered his daughter to the Lady.

1113

fle

ace

til

e-

ld,

cs,

ard

ght

to

and

Spc

ate

and

nor-

ady

hal,

and

ded

hil-

that

nore

-Ruc

king

pood

afhe

oun-

rove

ilt be

,and

25.25

wil-

She being thus happily beflowne, he minded to tarry no longer in London; but, in his wonted begging
manner, travelling thorough the Countrey with his
fonne Peratto, at length he came into Wales: but not
without much paine and travell, being never used before, to journey so far on foot. There dwelt another
Lord, in office of Marshalship to the King of England,
whose power extended over those parts: a man of very great authoritie, keeping a most noble and bountifull house, which they termed the President of Wales
bis Court; whereto the Count and his Son oftentimes
resorted, as hinding there good reliefe and comfort.

On a day, one of the Presidents sons, accompanied with divers other Gentlemens children, were performing certaine youthfull sports and passimes, as running, leaping, and such like, wherein Perotto presudent on the one among them, excelling all the rest in such commendable manner, as none of them came any thing neere him. Divers times the President had taken notice thereof, and was so well pleased with the Lads behaviour, that he enquired of whence he was? Answer was made, that he was a poore mans Son, that

every day came for an almes to his gate.

The President being desirous to make the boy his, the Count frankely gave his Son to the Noble-man: albeit fatherly affection urged some unwillingnesse to part so with him; yet necessitie and discretion, found it best for the benefite of them both. Being thus eased of care for his Son and Daughter, and they (though indifferent places) yet under good and worthy government; the Count would continue no longer in England; but, as best he could procure the meanes, passed over into Ireland, arrived at Stanford, became servant to an Earle of that countrey, a Gentleman professing Armes, on whom he attended as a ferving man, and lived a long while in that estate very painefully.

His daughter Violenta, clouded under the the borrowed name of Gianetta, dwelling with the Lady at London, grew fo in yearcs, beauty, comlinesse of perfon, and was fo gracefull in the favour of her Lord and Lady, yea, of every one in the house belide, that it was wonderfull to behold. Such as but observed her usuall carriage, and what modefty shined cleerely in her eyes, reputed her well worthy of honourable preferment ; in regard, the Lady that had received her of her Father, not knowing of whence, or what shee was; but as himselfe had made report, intended to match her in honourable marriage, according as her vertues . worthily deserved. But God, the just rewarder of all good endeavours, knowing her to be noble by birth, and (caufeleffe) to fuffer for the finnes of another ; disposed otherwise of her: and that so worthy a Virgine might be no mate for a man of ill conditions, no doubt ordained what was to be done, according to his owne good pleasure.

The noble Lady, with whom Gianetta dwelt, had but, one only Son by her husband, and he most decrely affeded of them both, as well in regard he was to be their heire, as also for his vertues and commendable. qualities, wherein he excelled many young Gentlemen. Endued he was with heroycall valour, compleate in all perfections of person, and his minde answerable to his outward behaviour, exceeding Gianetta about fixe yeares in age. He perceiving her to be a faire and comely Maiden, grew to affed her fo entirely, that all things elfe he held contemptible, and nothing pleafing. in his eye but she. Now, in regard her parentage was reputed poore, he kept his love concealed from his Parents, not daring to defire her in marriage : for loath . he was to lofe their favour, by disclosing the vehemencie of his afflictions, which proved a greater totment to

him, than if it had beene openly knowne.

It came to palle; that love over-awed him in fuch fort, as he fell into a violent fickneffe, and flore of Phyfitions were fent for, to live him from death, if polible it might be. Their judgements observing the course of his licknesse, yet nor reaching to the cause of the theaft, made a doubtfull queftion of his recovery; which was to displeasing to his Parents, that their griefe and forrow grew beyond measure. Many earnest entreaties they moved to him, to know the occasion of his fickeneffe, whereto hee returned no other answer, But heart-breaking fighes, and inceffant teares, which drew him more and more into weakenesse of body.

It chanced on a day, a Physition was brought unto him, being young in yeares, but well experienced in his practife : and as he made triall of his pulle, Giandetta (who by his Mothers command, attended on him very diligently) uppon some speciall occasion entred into the Chamber, which when the young Gentheman perceived, and that thee nither fpake word, nor lomuch as looked towards him, his heart grew great in amorous defire, and his pulle did beate beyond the compaffe of ordinary custome; whereof the Phyfition made good observation, to note how long that fir would continue, No looner was Giannetta gone torth of the Chamber, but the pulle immediately gave over bearing, which perswaded the Physition, that some part of the disease had now discovered it selfe apparently.

11

,

0

is.

it,

f-

e.

le.

e-

te.

le

ut ;

ıd.

11

g.

2-

1-

th

n-

to.

Iç.

Within a while after, pretending to have some speech with Gianeta, and holding the Gentleman still by the arme, the Physicion caused her to be fent for ; and immediately flie came. Vpon her very entrance into the Chamber, the pulle began to beate againe extreamely and when the departed, it prefently ceafed. Now was . he thorovely persivaded, that he had found the true effect of his fickhelle, when taking the Father and mo-

ther aside, thus he spake to them. If you be desirous of your Sons health, it confitteth not in Physicion or Phylicke, but in the mercy of your faire maide Gianetta; for manifelt fignes have made it knowne to me, that hee loveth the Damofell very deerely : yet (for ought as I can perceive, the maide doth not know it :) now if you have respect of his life, you know (in this case) what is to be done. The Nobleman and his Wife hearing this, became fomewhat fatisfied, because there remained a remedy to preferve his life; butyet it was no meane griefe to them, if it should so succeede, as they feared, namely, the marriage betweene this their Son

and Gianetta.

The Physicion being gone, and they repairing to their ficke Son, the Mother began with him in this manner. Sonne, I was alwayes perswaded, that thou wouldest not conceale any secret from me, or the least part of thy defire ; especially, when without enjoying them, thou must remaine in the danger of death. Full well art thou affured, or in reason oughtest to be, that there is not any thing for thy contentment, be it of what qualitie loever, but it should have beene provided for thee, and in as ample manner as for my own felfer But now though theu halt wandred to farre from duty, and hazarded both thy life and ours, it commeth. to to passe, that heaven bath beene more mercifull to shee, than thou wouldest be to thy selfe, or us. And to prevent thy dying of this discase, a dreame this night hath acquainted me with the principal occasion of thy ficknesse, to wit, extraordinary affection to a young maiden, to fome fuch place as thou haft feene her. I tel thee Son, it is a matter of no difgrace to love, and why are ashamed to manifest as much, as being so apt and convenient for thy youth? For if I were perswaded, thou couldft not love, I should make the leffe efteem of thee. Son, be not dismaied, but freely discover thy affection. Expell

governed by Madam Philomena, 100215

Expell those disastrous drouping thoughts, that have endangered thy life by this long lingering sickenesse. And let my soule be faithfully assured, that thou canst not require any thing to be done, remaining within the compasse of my power, but I will performe its for I love thee as decrely as mine owne life. Set therefore aside this nice conceit of shame and feare, revealing the truth boldly to me, if I may stead thee in thy love; resolving thy self unfaignedly, that if my care stretch not to compasse thy contest, account me for the most cruell Mother living, and utterly unworthy of such a Soune.

The young Gentleman having heard thefe proteftations made by his Mother, was not a little afhemed of his owne folly; but recollecting his better thoughts together, and knowing in his foule, that no one could better further his hopes, than the; forgetting all his former feare, he returned her this anlwere; Madam and my deerely affected Mother, nothing hath more occasioned my loves so strict concealement. but an especiall errour, which I finde by dayly proofe in many, who being growne to yeeres of grave discretion, doe never remember , that they themselves, have beene young. But because herein I finde you to be both discreet and wife, I will not mely affirme what you have feene in me to be true, but alfo will confesse, to whom it is : upon condition, that the effect of your promise may follow it, according to the power remaining in you, whereby you onely may fecure my life.

His Mother, defirous to be refolved, whether his confession would agree with the Physicians words, or no, and reserving another intention to her selfe: bad him seare nothing, but freely discover his whole desire, & forthwith she doubted notes effect it. Then Madam (quath he) the matchlesse beauty, and commendable qualities of your Maid Gianette, to whom (as yet)

Thave made no motion to commifferate this my fanguiffing extremity, nor acquainted any living creacure with my love : the concealing of thefe affictions to my felfe, bath brought me to this desperate conditien and if fome meanes be not wroughts according to your contrant promile, for the full enjoying of my longing defires, affure your felfe (moft Noble Mother) that the date of my life is very thort.

The Lady well knowing, that the time now rather required kindeft comfort, than any fevere of tharpe teprehension, smiling on him, fayd : Alas dere fonne walt thou ficke for this? Beof good cheare, and when thy frength is better reftored, theil referre the matter to me. The young Gentleman, being put in good hope by his Mothers promife; began (in fhort ume) to flew apparant fignes of well-forwarded amendment to the Mothers great joy and comfort, dispoling her felse dayly to proove, how in honour the

might keepe promise with her sonne.

Within a fort while after, calling Gianetta privately to her; in gentle manner, and by the way of pleafane discourse, the demanded of her whether the was provided of a Lover, or no. Gidnered, being never arquithred with any fuch questions, a feither Die covering all her modelt countenance, thus telly el? Madam, I have no neede of any Lover, and very onfeeme. Is were it, for fo poore a Damofell as I am, to have for much as a thought of Lovers, being banished from my friends and kinsfolke, and remaining in fervice as I

If you have none (answered the Lady) wee will beflow one on you, which shall content your minde, and being you to a more pleafing kinde of life; because it is fatre unfir, that fo faire a Mayd as you are, should remaine destitute of a Lover. Madam, fayd Gianetta, confidering with my fedfer that fince you received me?

of

ful

car

ho

but

anfi

was

luft

agai

governed by Madam Philomena

of my poote Father, you have used me rather like would daughter, than a servant; it becometh me to do not pleaseth you. Notwithstanding, I would sin the regard of mine owne good and honour) never to use any complaint in such a case; but if you please to bestom a husband on me, I purpose to love and honour bim ones ly, and not any other. For, of all the inheritance left me by my progenitors, nothing remaineth to me but honourable honesty, and that shall be my Legacie so

long as I live.

These words, were of a quite contrary complexion, to those which the Lady expected from her, and for effecting the promise made unto her Sonne; howbeit (like a wife and noble Lady) much the inwardly commended the maides answeres, and sayd unto her. But tell me Gianetta, what if my Lord the King (who is a gallant youthfull Prince, and you fo bright a beauty as you are) should take pleasure in your love, would ye deny him ? Sodainely the Mayde returned this anfwere: Madam, the King perhaps might enforce me, but with my free confent, he shall never have any thing of me that is not honeft. Nor did the Lady diflike her Maydes courage and resolution, but breaking off all her further conference, intending shortly to put her project in proofe, faying to her fonne, that when hee was fully recovered, he should have private accesse to Gianetta, whom the doubted not but would bee tractable enough to him; for the held it no meane blemish to her honour, to moove the Mayde any more in the matters but let him compalle it as he could.

Farre from the young Gentlemans humor was this answere of his Mother, because hee aymed not at any dishonourable end: true, faithfull, and honest love was the sole scope of his intention, soule and loathsome lust he utterly defied; whereupon he fell into siekenesse againe, rather more violently than before. Which the

Lady

Lady perceiving, revealed her whole intente Giantita and hading her conftancie beyond common comparison, acquainted her Lord with all she had done, and both consented (though much against their mindes) to let himten joy, her in honourable marriage: accounting it better, tot preservation of their onely somes life, to march him sarre inferiour to his degree, than by de nying his defire, to let him pine and dye for her love.

After great consultation with Kindred and Friends, the match was agreed upon, to the no little joy of Giametta, who devoutly returned infinite thankes to heaven, for somercifully, respecting her dejected poore estate, after the bitter passage of so many miseries, and never terming her selfe any otherwise, but the daughter to a poore Piccard. Soone was the young Gentleman recovered and married, no man alive so well contented as he, and setting downe an absolute determination, to leade a loving life with his Gianetta.

Let us now convert our lookes to Wales, to Perotto; being left there with the other Lord Marshall, who was the President of that Countrey, On hee grew in yeeres, choysely respected by his Lord, because he was most comely of person, and forward to all valiant attempts: so that in Tourneyes, southes, and other actions of Armes, his like was not to be found in all the Island, being named onely Perotto the valiant Piccard, and so was he famed farre and neere. As God had not forgotten his Sister, so in mercy he became as mindfull of him, for, a contagious mortality happing in the Country, the greater part of the People perished thereby, the rest slying thence into other parts of the Land, whereby the whole Province became dispeopled and desolate.

pl

no

E

Pe

and

In the time of this Plague and dreadfull vilitations, the Lord President, his Lady, Sonnes, Daughters, Bro-thers,

thers, Nephewes, and Kindred deed, none remaining alive, but one onely Daughter marriageable, a few of the houshold fervants, befide Pronto; whom (after the fickeneffe was more mildly affwaged) with counsell and confent of the Countrey people, the young Lady accepted to be her husband, because he was a man fo worthy and valiant, and of all the inheritance left by her deceased Father, the made him Lord, and sole commander. Within no long while after, the King of England understanding that his Prefident of Water was dead, and Fame liberally relating the vertues, valour, and good parts of Perottethe Piccard, he created him Prefident thereof, and to supply the place of his deceafed Lord. These faire fortunes within the compasse of fo fort a time, fell to the two innocent children of the Count D'Angiers after they were left by him as loft.

d

.

-5

1-

01:

or.

in.

25.

IL+

i.

he

rd,

not

full :

the :

re-

nd.

and.

ons

Eightene yeeres were now fully over-paft, lince the Count D' Angiers fled from Paris, having suffered fin milemble fort) many hard and lamentable advertices; and feeing himfelfe now to be growne aged, he was debrotts to leave Ireland, and to know (if he might) what was become of both his Children. Heereupon, peretiving his wonted forme to bee to akered, charfireh as formerly had converted most with him, could nove not take any knowledge of him, and feeling his body (through long labour and exercise endured in service) more lufty than in his idle youthfull yeeres, especially when he left the Court of France, he purposed to proceede in his determination. Being very poore and timple in apparel, he departed from the Irish Earle his Mafter, with whom he had continued long in fervice, to no advantage or advancement, and croffing over into England, travayled to the place in Wales, where he left Perotto, and where he found him to be Lord Marshall and Prefident of that country, lufty and in good health a man of goodly feature, and most honorably respected and reverenced of the people. Well

Novell. 8 . The Second Day

Well may you magine, that this was no small conference to the poore aged Countes heart, yet would her mot make himselfe knowne to him, or any other about him, but referred his joy to a further enlarging and diminishing, by fight of the other limbe of his life; his decreby affected daughter Gianetta, denying refeto his body in any place, untill such time as he came to London. Making there secret enquirie concerning the Ladie with whom he had left his daughter; he understood that a young Gentlewoman, named Gianetta, was married to that Ladyes onely Sonne, which made addition of joy, to his soule, accounting all his passed adversities of no valew, both his children being living, and

in fo high honour.

Having found her dwelling, and (like a kinde Father) being earnestly desirous to see her, be dayly reforced neere to the house, where Sir Roger Mande vile (for foreras Gianettaes husband named) chancing to See him, being mooved to compassion, because he was both poore and aged : commanded one of his men, to take him into the house, and to give him some foode for Gods fake, which (accordingly) the fervant performed. Giametta bed divers children by her husband, she eldeft being about eight yeeres wage, yet all of them for faire and comely as could bo. As the old Count face eating his meate in the Halls the children came all about him, embrading, hugging, and making much of him, even as if Nature had truely inftructed them that this was their aged (though poore) Grandfather; and he as lovingly receiving thefe kinde relations from them, wifely and filently kept all to himfelfe, with fighes, teares, and joyes intermixed together, Infomuch that the children would not part from him though their Tutor and Mafter called them often, which being told to their Mother the came forth of the intereadjoyning Barlour, and threatned to beate

W

hi

YV

W

Ch

governed by Madam Philomens, 118

25

311 1-

ns

iis

D-

he

T

10,

adc

adand

Fa-

II. vile

10

7725

1, 10

ode

per-

and. all of

DAIRC

came nuck

hem

ther:

fpom with

Infohim

fren,

ofthe

beate cham

them, if they would not doe what their Maifter commanded them.

Then the Children began to cry, faying that they would tarry still by the good old man, because he loved them better than their Mafter did; whereat both the Lady and the Count began to fmile. The Count hite a poore Begger, and not as Father to fo great a Lady, arole, and did her humble reverence, because the was now a Noble Woman, conceiving wonderfull joy in his foule, to fee her fo faire and goodly a creature: yet could the take no knowledge of him, Age, want, and mifery had so mightily altered him; his head all white, his beard without any comely forme, his Garments lo poore, and his face so wrinkled, leane and meager, that he feemed rather fome Catter, than a Count. And Gianetta perceiving that when her Children were fetcht away, they returned againe to the old man, and would not leave him, the defired their Mafter colet them alone.

While thus the Children continued making much of the good old man, Lord Andrew Mandevile, Father to Sir Roger, came into the Hall, as being fo willed to doe by the Childrens Schoolemaster. He being a haftie-minded man, and one that ever despited Gia. netta before, but much more fince her marriage to his fonne, angerly fayd; Let them alone with a mischeefe, and so befall them, their best company ought to bee with beggers, for fo they are bred and borne by the Mothers fide : and therefore it is no merveile, if like will to like, a beggers brats to keepe company with beggars. The Count hearing these contemptible words, was not a little greeved thereat; and although his courage was greater than his poore condition would permit him to expresse; yet, clouded all injuries with noble patience, hanging downe his heads and shedding many afalt teare, endured this reproach, as

Novell. 8. The Second Day,

he had done many, both before and after,

But honourable Sir Roger, perceiving what delight his Children tooke in the poore mans company; albeit he was offended at his Fathers harsh words, by holding his wife in such base respect: yet savoured the poore Count so much the more, and seeing him weepe, did greatly compassionate his case, saying to the poore man, that if he would accept of his fervice, he willingly would enterraine him. Whereto the Count replyed, that very gladly he would embrace his kinde offer : but he was capeable of no other fervice, fave onely to be an horse-keeper, wherein he had imployed the most part of his time. Heereupon more for pleasure and pitty, than any necessity of his service, he was appointed to the keeping of an Horse, which was onely for his Daughters faddle, and dayly after he had done his diligence about the horse, he did nothing else but play with the children. While forme pleafed thus to dally with the poore Count D' Angiers, and his children, it camero paffe, that the King of France (after divers leagues of truces passed betweene him & the Germaines) dyed, and next after him his Sonne the Dolphin was crowned King, and it was his wife that wrongfully caused the Counts banishment. After expiration of the last league with the Germaines, the warres began to grow much more fierce and tharpe, and the King of England, (upon request made to him by his new brother of France) fent him very honourable supplies of his people, under the conduct of Perotto, his lately elefted President of Wales and Six Roger Mandevile, Son to his other Lord high Marshall; with whom also the poore Count went, and continued a long while in the Campe as a common Souldier where yet like a valiant Gentleman (as indeed he was no leffe) both in advice and actions; he accomplished many more notable matters, than was expected to come from him.

10

ce

in

cc

It fo fell out; that in the continuance of this warre, the Queene of France fell into a grievous ficknesse, and perceiving her selfe to be at the point of death, she became very penitently forrowfull for all her finnes, earneftly defiring that the might be confessed by the Archbithop of Reant, who was reputed to be an holy and vertuous man. In the repetition of her other offences; the revealed what great wrong the had done to the Count D'Angiers, refting not lo fatisfied, with dife clofing the whole matter to him alone; but alloconfessed the same before many other worthy persons, and of great honour, entreating them to worke to with the King, that (if the Count were yet living, or any of his Children) they might be restored to their former honour againe. It was not long after, but the Queene left this life, and was most royally enterred, when her confession being disclosed to the King, after much forrow, for fo injuriously wronging a man of fo great valour & honour: Proclamation was made throughout the Campe, and in many other parts of France beside, that who foever could produce the Count D'Angurs, or any of his Children, should richly be rewarded for each one of them; in regard he was innocent of the foule imputation, by the Queenes owne confession; and for his wrongfull exile fo long, he should be exalted to his former honour with farre greater favours, which the King frankely would bestow upon him. When the Count (who walked up and downe in the habite of a common fervitor) heard this Proclamation, forth-with he went to his Mafter Sir Roger Mandevile, requesting his specdy repaire to Lord Perotto, that being both affembled together, he would acquaint them with a ferious matter concerning the Proclamation published bythe King. Being by themselves alone in the Tent; the Count spak in this manner to Perotto. Sir, S. Roger Mandevile hert, your equal competitor in this military fervice, is husband

d

e

ly

d,

שני

an

art

ty,

to

his

di-

lay

ally

, 1

ers

mes)

Was

fully

n ot

n to

ng of

bro.

es of

yele-

on to

the

n the

aliant

dvice

e mat-

to your naturall fifter, having as yet never received any dowrie with her, but her inherent unblemishable vertue and honour. Now because the may not still remaine destitute of a competent Dowry: I desire that Sir Roger, and none other, may enjoy the royall reward promifed by the King. You Lord Perotto, whose true name is Lewes, manifest your selfe to bee nobly borne, and Sonne to the wrongfully banished Count D' Angiers : avouch moreover, that Violenta Shadowed under the borrowed name of Gianetta, is your owne Sifter; and deliver me up as your Father, the long exiled Count D'Anglers. Perotto hearing this, beheld him more advisedly, and began to know him: then the teares flowing abundantly from his eyes, he fell at his feere, and often embracing him, fayd: My deere and noble Father ! a thousand times more deerely welcome to your Sonne Lewes.

Sir Roger Mandevile, hearing first what the Count had sayd, and seeing what Perotto asterward performed; became surprized with such extraordinary joy and admiration, that he knew not how to carry himfelse in this case. Neverthelesse, giving credit to his words, and being somewhat ashamed, that he had not used the Count in more respective manner, and remembring beside, the unkinde language of his strious Father to him: he kneeled downe, humbly craving pardon, both for his Fathers rudenesse and his owne, which was courteously granted by the Count, embracing him sovingly in his armes.

When they had a while discoursed their severall fortunes, sometime in teares, and then again in joy; Perotto and Sir Roger, would have the Count to bee garmented in better manner, but in no wise hee would inster it; for it was his onely desire, that Sir Roger should be assured of the promised reward, by presenting him in the Kings presence, and in the homely

habit

all

fte

fu

wh

gre

ma

call

governed by Madam Philomena . 11416

habit which he did weate atd touch him with the more fenfible thame, for his rath beleefes, and injurious proceedings Then Sir Roger Mandevile, guiding the. Count by the hand, and Peretto following after, came before the King, offering to prefentabe Count and his children, if the reward promifed in the Proclamation might be performed. The King immediately commanded that a reward of ineftimable valery should be produced; defiring Sir Roger upon the light thereof, to make good his offer, for forthwith pretenting the Count and his children. Which he made no longer delay of, but surning himselfe about, delivered the aged Count, by the title of his fervant, and prefenting Perotto next, fayd. Sir, heere I deliver you the Father and his Sonne; his Daughter who is my wife, cannot fo conveniently be here now, but shortly, by the permission of heaven, your Majesty shall have a light of her.

ly

nt

N-

ne

i-

:ld

en

at

erc

rel-

unt

or-

109

mi -

his

not

dre-

rious

ving

wife,

abra-

l for-

y; Pc-

e 221-

would

Roger

presen-

nomely

habit

When the King heard this, Redfaffly heelooked on the Count; and notwithstanding his wonderfull alteration, both from his wonted feature and forme: yet, after he had very seriously viewed him, he knew him perfectly; and the teares trickling downe his cheekes, paralywith remorfesult shame, and joy also for his so happy recovery, hee tooke up the Count from kneeding, kissing and embracing him very kindly, welcomming Perottoin the selfesame manner. Immediately also he gave commaund, that the Count should be reflored to his honors, apparelly servants; horses, and surniture, answerable to his high estate and cashing, which was as speedily performed. Moreover, the King greatly honoured Sir Roger Mandevile, desiring to be made acquainted with all their pailed fortunes.

When Sit Roger had received the royall reward, for thus furrending the Count and his Sonne, the Count calling him to him, fayd: Take that Princely remu-

neration

Novelle. The Second Day,

neration of my foveraigne Lord and King, and commending me to your unkinde Father, tell him your children are no beggers brats, neither basely borne by their mothers fide. Sir Roger returning home with his hountifull reward foone after brought his Wife and Mother to Paris, and fo did Perotto his Wife, where in great joy and triumph's they continued a long while with the Noble Counts who had all his goods and honours restored to him, in farre greater measure than ever they were before : his Sonnes in Law returning home with sheir Wives into England, left the Count with the King at Paris, where he fpent the rest of his dayes in great honour and felicity.

Bernardo, a Merchant of Geneway, being dessived by an other Merchant, named Ambroginolo, loft a great part of his goods. And commanding his innocent Hife to bec murinered, she escaped, and (in the babite of a man) besame fervant to the Soldane. The deceiver being found at last, fbe compassed fuch meanes, that her Hufband Bernardo came into Alexandria, and there after due punishment inflitted on the false deceiver, she refumed the garments againe of a woman, and returned home with her Husband to Geneway. The ninth Novell.

wherein is declared, that by an over-liberall commending the chaftity of Women, it falleth out (oftentimes) to be very dangerous especially by the meanes of treacherers who yet (in the end) are justly punished for sheir treachery.

MAdam Eliza having ended her compaffionate difcourse, which indeed had moved all the rest to fighing; the Queene, who was faire, comely of flature and carrying a very majefficall countenance, fmiling

more

01 ly

ho

1111 els:

con luc.

bec

173

tho

ofe

more familiarly than the other, fpak to them thus. It is very necessary, that the promise made to Dioneus, should carefully be kept, and because now there remaineth none, to report any more Novels, but onely he and my felfe : I must first deliver mine, and he (who takes it for an honour) to be the last in relating his owne, laft, let him bee for his owne deliverance. Then paufing a little while, thus thee began againe, Many times among vulgar people, it hath passed as a common Proverbe: That the deceiver is often trampled on, by fuch as he harh deceived. And this cannot fhere it felfe (by any reason) to bee true, except such accidents as awaite on trechery, doe really make a just difcovery thereof. And therefore according to the course of this day observed, I am the woman that must make good what I have fayd for the approbation of that Proverbe: no way I hope distastfull to you in the hearing, but advantageable to preferve you from anyfuch beguiling. There was a faire and goodly Inne in Paris, much frequented by many great Italian Merchants, according to fuch variety of occasions and bufineste, as urged their often reforting thither. One night among many other, having had a merry supper together, they began to discourse on diverse matters, and falling from one relation to another; they communed in very friendly manner, concerning their wives, left at home in their houses. Quoth the first, I cannot well imagine what my wife is now doing, but I am able to fay for my felfe that if a pretty female should fall into my company : I could eafily forget my love to my wife, and make use of fuch an advantage offered.

A fecond replyed; And trust me, I should do no lesse, because I am persivaded, that if my wife be willing to wander, the law is in her owne hand, and I am farre enough from home : dumbe walles blab no tales, and offences unknowne are fildome or never called in

queltion.

e difeft to fature miling more

40

art

bec

be-

ing

14/-

fter

re-

rned

ding

to be

crevs

sbeir

Noveil.9. The Second Day,

question. A third man unapt to censure, with his former fellowes of the Iury; and it plainely appeared, that all the rest were of the same opinion, condemning their wives over-rashly, and alleaging, that when husbands strayed so farre from home, their wives had wit

enough to make use of their time,

Onely one man among them all, named Bernardo Lomelling, and dwelling in Geneway, maintaining the contrary; boldly avouching that by the especiall favour of Fortune, he had a wife to perfectly compleate in all graces and vertues, as any Lady in the world possibly could be, and that Italy scarfely contained her equall. Bur the was goodly of person, & yet very young , quicke, quaint, milde, and court cous, and not any thing appertaining to the office of a wife, either for domeflicke affayres, or any other imployment whatfoever, but in woman-hoode the went beyond all other. No Lord, Knight, Efquire, or Gentleman, could be better ferved at his Table, than himfelfe dayly was, with more wifedome, modefty and discretion. After all this, hee prayfed her for riding, hawking, hunting, filhing, fowling, reading, writing, enditing, and most absolute keeping his Bookes of accounts, that neither himfelfe, or any other Merchant could therein excell her. After infinite other commendations, he came to the former point of their argument, concerning the easie falling of women into wantonnelle, maintaining (with a folerane oath) that no woman possibly could bee more chaffe and honeft than the: in which refpect, he was verily perswaded, that if he stayed from her tenne yeeres space, yea (all his life time) out of his house; yet never would the fallifie her faith to him, or be lewdly allured by any other man.

Amongst these Merchants thus communing together, there was a young proper man, named Ambroginolo of Placentia, who began to laugh at the last prayles which

Ber-

ger

cff

mo

ner

mei

ther

flan

on o

Bernardo had used of his Wife, and seeming to make a mockerie thereof, demaunded, if the Emperour had giyen him this priviledge, above all other married men? Bernardo being somewhat offended, answered : No Emperour hath done it, but the especial bleffing of heaven, exceeding all the Emperours on the earth in grace, and thereby I have received this favour; whereto Ambroginolo prefently thus replyed. Bernardo, without all question to the contrary, I believe that what thou halt layd, is true; but (for ought I can perceive) thou haft flender judgement in the Nature of things; because if thou diddest observe them well, thou couldit not be of fo groffe understanding. For, by comprehending matters in their true kinde and nature, thou wouldft fpeake of them more correctly than thou doeft. And to the end, thou mayeft not imagine, that wee who have spoken of our Wives, doe thinke any otherwise of them, than as well and honeftly as thou can't of thine, nor that any thing elfe did urge thefe speeches of them, or falling into this kinde of discourse, but onely by a naturall instinct and admonition, I will proceede familiarly, a little further with thee, upon the matter alreadie propounded.

n

à,

 $_{\mathrm{ed}}$

c-

ce

ıg,

0-

m-

er.

the

afie

with

bcc

sect.

her

his

n, or

ther,

olo of

which

Ber-

I have evermore understood, that man was the most noble creature, formed by God to live in this World, and woman in the next degree to him: but man, as generally is believed, and as is discerned by apparant effects is the most perfect of both. Having then the most perfection in him, without all doubt. he must be so much the more firme and constant. So in like manner, it hath beene, and is universally graunted, that women are more various and mutable, and the reason thereof may be approved by many natural circumstances, which were needlesse now to make any mention of. If a man then be possessed in the greater stabi-

I. 2

lity, and yet cannot containe himselfe from condescending; I fay not to one that entreates him, but to defire any other that may pleafe him; and befide, to cover the enjoying of his owne pleasing contentment (a thing not chancing to him once in a moneth, but infinite times in a dayes space.) What can you then conceive of a fraile woman, subject/by nature to entreatics. Hatteries, gifts, perswasions, and a thousand other inticine meanes, which a man (that is affected to her)can tife? Doeft thou thinke then that the hath any power to containe? Affuredly, though thou frouldest rest so relol ved, yet cannot I be of the same opinion. For I am fure thou beleeveft, and must needes confesse it, that thy wife is a Woman made of fleft and blood, as other women are: if it be fo, thee cannot bee without the Same defires, and the weakenesse or ftrength as other wemen have, to refift naturall appetites as her owne are. In regard whereof, it is meerely impossible (alshough the be most honest) but thee must needes doe that which other Women doe: for there is nothing else passible, either to bee denyed or affirmed to the contrary, as thou most unadvisedly hast done.

Bernardo answered in this manner. I am a Merchant, and no Philosopher, and like a Merchant I meane to answere thee. I am not to learne, that these accidents by thee related, may happen to sooles, who are voyde of understanding or shame: but such as are wise, and endued with yeruse, here alwayes such a precious estimate of their henour, that they will containe those principles of constancie, which men are meerely carelesse of, and I justific my wife to be one of them. Beleeve me Bernardo, replyed Ambroginolo, if so often as thy wives minde it addicted to wanton folly, a badge of storne should arise on thy stockead, to render testimosay of her semale frailety, I beleeve the number of them would be more, than willingly you would wish them to

SVC

20

the

be. And among all married men in every degree, the notes are to fecter of their wives imperfections, that the tharpest fight is not able to differ ne them; and the wifer fort of men are willing not to know them; because thame and lost of honour is never imposed, but in ca-

ics evident and apparant.

I

m

at

er he

er

ne al-

doe

the

ant,

ents

oyde

and

cious

thole

care.

. Bc-

tenas

dge of

Rimo-

fchem

iem to

be

Periwade thy felfe Bernardo, that what women may accomplish in secret, they will rarely faile to doe; or if they abstaine, it is through searce and folly. Wherefore, hold it for a certaine rule, that that woman is onely chaste, that never was solicited personally, or if the endured any such suite, either she answeared yea, or no. And albeit 1 know this to be true, by many infallible and naturall reasons, yet could I not speake so exactly as 1 doe, if I had not tryed experimentally, the humors and affections of divers Women. Yea, and let me tell thee more Bernardo, were I in private company with thy wise, howsoever thou prefumest to thinke her to be. I should account it a matter of no impessibility, to finde in her the selfesame frailty.

Bernardoes blood now began to boyle, and patience being alittle put downe by choller, thus he teplyed. A combate of words requires over-long continuance; for I maintaine the matter which thou denyeft, and all this forts to nothing in the end. But feeing thou prefumest, that all women are so apt and trastable, and thy felfe to confident of thine owne power: I willingly yeeld (for the better assurance of my wives confrant loyalty) to have my head fmitten off, if thoucanft win her to any fuch dithonest act, by any meanes whatfoever thou canft use unto her; which if thou canft. not doe, thou thalt onely loofe a thoufand Duckets of Gold. Now began Ambroginoloto be heated with thesesverds, answering thus Bernardo, if I had won the waget I know not what I should doe with thy head; but if thou be willing to fland upon the proofe, pawn down 5

L:

thou-

thousand Duckets of gold, (a matter of much lesse value than thy head against a thousand Duckets of mine, granting me a lawfull limited time, which I require to be no more than the space of three monethes, after the day of my departing hence. I will stand bound to goe for Geneway, and there winne such kinde consent of thy Wife, as shall be to mine owne consent. In witnesse whereof, I will bring backe with me such private and especiall tokens, as thou thy selfe shalt consesse that I have not failed. Provided, that thou doe first promise upon thy faith, to absent thy selfe from thence during my limited time, and bee no hindersance to me by thy Letters, concerning the attempt by mee undertaken.

Bernardo fayd, be it a bargaine, I am the man that will make good my five thousand Duckets; and albeit the other Merchants then prefent, earnestly laboured to breake the wager knowing great harme must needes enfue thereon : yet both rhe parties were fo hot and fiery, as all the other men spake to no effect, but writings was made, fealed, and delivered under either of their hands, Bernardo remaining at Paris, and Ambroginolo departing for Geneway. There he remained some few dayes, to learne the ffreetes name where Bernardo dwelt, as also the conditions and qualities of his Wife, which fearfely pleafed him when he heard them; because they were farre beyond her Husbands relation, and the reputed to bee the onely wonder of women; whereby he plainely perceived, that he had undertaken a very idle enterprile, yet would he not give it over fo, but proceeded therein a little further.

He wrought fuch meanes, that he came acquainted with a poore woman, who often frequented Bernardors house, and was greatly in favour with his wife; upon whose poverry he so prevailed, by earnest perswasions, but much more by large gifts of money, that

va"

ne,

cto

the

goe

t of

cile

and

effe

irth

om

nce

nec

hat

be-

red

des

ind

ri-

r of

10-

me

rdo

ife,

be-

on,

ens

cen

Co,

ted

locs

on

ıli-

hat

lic

he won her to furthe him in this manner following. A faire & artificiall Cheft he caused to be purposly made, wherein himselfe might be aptly contained and so conveyed into the house of Bernardoes Wife, under colour of a formall excuse; that the poore woman should bee absent from the Citty two or three dayes, and shee must keepe it safe till shee returne. The Gentlewoman suspecting no guile, but that the Cheft was the receptacle of all the womans wealth; would trust it in no other roome, than her owne bed-chamber, which was the place where Ambroginalo most desired to be.

Being thus conveyed into the Chamber, the night going on a pace, and the Gentlewoman fast affecpe in her bed, a lighted Taper flood burning on the Table by her, as in her husbands absence she ever nsed to have : Ambroginolo foftly opened the Cheft, according as cunningly he had contrived it, and flepping forth in his fockes made of cloath, observed the scituation of the Chamber, the paintings, pictures, and beautifull hangings, with all things elfe that were remarkeable, which perfectly he committed to his memory. Going necre to the bed, he faw her lye there fweetely fleeping and her young Daughter in like manner by her, thee feeming then as compleate and pleafing a creature, as when the was attired in her best bravery. No especiall note or marke could he deferie, whereof he might make credible report, but onely a freall wart upon her left pappe, with some few haires growing thereon, appearing to be as yellow as gold.

Sufficient had he feene, and durst prefume no further; but taking one of her Rings, which lay upon the Table, a purse of hers, hanging by on the wall, a light wearing Robe of filke, and her girdle, all which he pur into the Chest, and being in himselfe, closed it fast as it was before, so continuing there in the Chamber two severall nights, the Gentlewoman neither mistrusting

La

came to have home her Cheft againe, and brought it fafely into her owne house; where Ambroginolo comming forth of it, satisfied the poore woman to her owne liking returning (with all the forenamed things)

as fast as conveniently he could to Paris.

Being arrived there long before his limmited time, he called the Merchants together, who were prefent at the paffed words and wager; avouching before Bernardo, that he had won his five thousand Duckets, and performed the taske he undertooke. To make good his. protestation, first he described the forme of the Chamber, the curious pictures hanging about it, in what manner the bed flood, and every circumftance else befide. Next he snewed the severall things, which hee brought away thence with him, affirming that he had received them of her felfe. Bernardo confessed, that his description of the Chamber was true, and acknowledged moreover, that these other things did belong to his Wife : But (quoth be) this may be gotten, by corrupzing some servant of mine, both for intelligence of the Chamber, as also of the Ring, Purse, and what else is befide; all which fuffice not to win the wager, without some more apparant and pregnant token. In troth, answered Ambroginolo, me thinkes these should serve for fufficient proofes; but feeing thou are fo defirous so know more: I plainely tell thee, that faire Gemeurathy Wife, hath afmall round wart upon her Beft pappe, and some few little golden haires growing thereon.

When Bernardo heard these words, they were as so many stabs to his heart, yea, beyond all compasse of patient sufferance, and by the changing his colour, it was noted manifestly, (being unable to utter one word) that Ambroginolo had spoken nothing but the truth.

he

ed.

ic ic

m-

s)

ne,

at

17 -

nel

nis

m-

125

oc-

iec

ad his

g-

phe

is

h-

h,

ve

us

e-

er

ng

60

of

it

ne

he h. truth, Within a while after, he fayd; Gentlemen, that which Ambreginolo hath fayd is very true, wherefore let him come when hee will, and he shall bee payde ; which accordingly he performed on the very next day, even to the utmost penny, departing then from Paris towards General, with a most malicious intention to his Wife: Being come necre to the Citty, hee would not enter it, but rode to a Country house of his flanding about tenne miles distant thence. Being there arrived, he called a fervant, in whom he reposed especiall truft, fending him to Geneway with two Horics, writing to his Wife, that he was returned, and thee thould come thither to fee him. But fecretly hee charged his fervant, that fo foone as hee had brought her to a convenient place, hee should there kill her, without any pitty and compassion, and then returne to him againe.

When the fervant was come to Geneway, and had delivered his Letter and mellage, Genewa gave him most joyfull welcome, and on the morrow morning mounting on Horse-backe with the servant, rode merrily toward the Country house; diverle things shee discoursed on by the way, till they descended into a deepe folitary valey, very thickely befet with high andhuge fpreading Trees, which the fervant supposed to. be a meete place for the execution of his Mafters command. Suddenly drawing forth his Sword, and holding Geneuro fast by the arme, he layd; Mistrelle, quickely commend your foule to God, for you must dye, before you may passe any further torward. Geneura seeing the naked fword, and hearing the words fo peremptorily delivered, fearefully answered; Alas deare friendmercy for Gods fake; and before thou kill me, tell mee wherein I have offended thee, and why thou must kill me ? Alas good Mistreffe, you have not offended me, but. in what occasion you have displeased your Husband,

LS

it is utterly unknowne to mee: for he hath strictly commanded me, without respect of pitty or compassion, to kill you by the way as I bring you, and if I doe it not, he hath sworne to hang me by the necke. You know good Mistresse, how much I stand obliged to him, and how impossible it is for mee, to contradict any thing that hee commandeth. God is my witnesse, that I am truely compessionate of you, and yet (by no

meanes) may 1 let you live.

Geneura kneeling before him weeping, wringing her hands, thus replyed. Wilt thou turne Monfter, and be a murtherer of her that never wronged thee, to pleafe another man, and on a bare command? God, who truely knoweth all things, is my faithfull witnesse, that I never committed any offence, whereby to deferve the diflike of my Husband, much leffe fo harth a recompence as this is. But flying from mine owne justification, and appealing to thy manly mercy, thou mayeft (wert thou but so well pleased) in a moment satisfie both thy Mafter and me, in such manner as I will make plaine and apparant to thee. Take thou my garments, spare me onely thy doublet, and such a Bonnet as is fitting for a man, fo returne with my habite to thy Mafter, affuring him, that the deede is done. And here I fweare to thee, by that life which I enjoy but by thy mercy, I will so strangely disguise my selfe, and wander so farre off from these Countryes, as neither hee or thou, nor any person belonging to these parts, shall ever heare any tydings of me.

The fervant, who had no great good will to kill her, very eafily grew pittiful, tooke off her upper garments, and gave her a poore ragged doublet, a filly Chapperone, and fuch small store of money as he had, defining her to forsake that Country, and so left her to walke on soute out of the valley. When he came to his Master, and had delivered him her garments, he assured

O

t

C

1-

1-

ft

e

c

5,

t-

1-

I

y

er

110

e-

r,

.

e-

i-

to

is

ed

m,

him, that hee had not onely accomplished his commaund, but also was most fecure from any discoverybecause he had no sooner done the deede, but source or five very ravenous Woolves, came presently running to the dead body; and gave it buriall in their bellyes. Bernardo soone after returning to Geneway, was much blamed for such unkinde cruelty to his wise; but his constant avouching of her treason to him (according then to the Countries custome) did cleare him from all pursuite of Law.

Poore Geneura was left thus alone and disconsolate. and night flealing fast upon her, the went to a filly village neere adjoyning, where (by the meanes of a good old woman) the got fuch provision as the place afforded, making the doublet fit to her body, and converted .. her petticoate to a paire of breeches, according to the. Mariners fashion: then cutting her haire, and quaintly disguised like unto a Saylor, the went to the Sea coaff. By good fortune, the met there with a Gentleman of Cathalogna, whose name was Signior Enchararcho, who came on land from his Ship, which lay hulling there about Albagia, to refresh himselfe at a pleasant Spring. Enchararcho taking her to be a man, as the appeared no .. otherwise by her habite; upon some conference palfing betweene them, the was entertained into his fervice, and being brought aboord the Ship, she went under the name of Sicurano da Finale. There the had .. betrer apparrell bestowne on her by the Gentleman, and her fervice proved fo pleafing and acceptable to him, that he liked her care and diligence beyond all comparison.

It came to waite within a fhort while after, that this Gentleman of Cathalogna layled (with some charge of his) into Alexandria, carrying thither certaine Falcons, which he presented to the Soldan, who oftentimes welcommed this Gentleman to his table, where

Maisters Trencher, and therewith was so highly plea-Sed; that he requested to have him from the Gentleman, who (for his more advancement) willingly parred with his fo lately entertained fervant. Sicurano was forcady and difereet in his dayly fervices, that he grew in as great grace with the Soldan, as before hee had

done with Enchararcho.

At a certaine feation in the yeare, as customary order (there observed) had formerly beene, in the City of deres which was under the Soldanes Subjection, there yeerely met a great affembly of Merchants, as Chriftians, Moores, Tewes, Sarazens, and many other Nations belides, as at a common Mart or Fayre, And to the end, that the Merchants (for the better fale of their goods) might be there in the lafer affurance, the Soldane used to fend thither some of his ordinarie Officers, and a strong guard of Souldiers beside, to defend them from all injuries and moleflation, because hee reaped thereby no meane benefit. And who should be now fent about this bufineffe, but his new elected favorite Sicurano, because, fhe was skilfull and perfet in the Languages.

Sicurano being come to Acres, as Lord and Captaine of the Guard for the Merchants, and for the fafety of their Merchandizes, the discharged her office most commendably, walking with her traine thorough every part of the Fayre, where the observed a worthy company of Merchants, Sicilians, Pifans, Genewayes, Venetians, and other Italians, whom the more willingly the noted, in remembrance of her native Country. At one especiall time among other, chancing into a Shop or Booth belonging to the Venetians, the efficed (hanging up with other coffly wares) a Purfe and a Girdle, which fodainely the remembred to bee fometime her own, whereat the was not a little abothed in her minde. But

But without making any such outward shew, courseously the requested to know whole they were, and whe-

ther they should be fold, or no.

Ambroginolo of Placentia, was likewise come thicher. and great flore of Merchandizes he had brought with him, in a Carracke appertaining to the Venetians, and hee hearing the Captaine of the Guard demaund whole they were, stepped forth before him, and imiling, answered: that they were his, but not to bee folde ; yet if he liked them, gladly he would bestow them on him. Sicurano feeing him Imile, fulpeded least himselfe had (by some unfitting behaviour) beene the occasion thereof: and therefore, with a more fetled countenance, hee fayd: Pethaps thou tmileft because I that am a man, professing Armes, should question after such womanish toyes. Ambroginolo replyed, My Lord, pardon me I fmile not at you. or at your demand, but at the manner how I came by thefe things.

Sicurano, upon this answere, was tenne times more defirous than before, and fayd: if Fortune favoured thee in friendly manner, by the obtaining of thefe things; if it may bee spoken, tell mee how thou hadft them. My Lord (answered Ambroginoly) these things (with many more befides) were given me by a Gentlewoman of Geneway, named Madam Geneura, the wife to one Bernardo Lomellino, in recompence of one nights lodging with her, and fhee defired me to keepe them for her fake. Now, the maine reason of my finiling, was the remembrance of her husbands folly, in waging five thoufand Duckets of Gold, againft one thousand of mine, that I should not obtaine my will of his Wife, which I did, and thereby won the wager. But he, who better deferved to be punished for his folly than the, who was but ficke of all womens difeafe; returning from Paris to Geneway, caused her to be flain as was reported by himselie. When

-

r

-

.

Novell. 9. The Second Day,

When Sicurano heard this horrible lie, immediately the conceived, that this was the occasion of her had bands hatred to her, and all the hard haps which the had fince suffered; whereupon, the reputed it for more than a mortall sinne, is sicurano seemed to like well this report, and grew into such familiaritie with Ambiogizaolo, that (by her perswassons) when the Faire was ended, she tooke him higher with her into Alexandria, and all his Wares along with him, surnishing him with a fit and convenient shop, where he made great benefite of his merchandizes, trusting all his monies in the Captaines custody, because it was the safest course for him, and so hee continued there with no means contentment.

Much did the pitty her husbands perplexitie, devifing by what good and warrantable meaner thee might
make knowne her innocencie to him; wherein her
place and authority did greatly fled her, & the wrought
with divers gallant Merchants of Geneway that then
remained in Alexandria, and by vertice of the Soldans
friendly letters belide, to bring him thither upon an
especiall occasion. Come he did, albeit in poore and
meane order, which soone was better altered by her
appointment, and hee very honourably (though in
private) enrettained by divers of her worthy friends,
till time did favour what the further intended.

In the expectation of Bernardees arrivall, thee had fo prevailed with Ambioginoto, that the fame tale which he formerly told to her, he delivered agains in presence of the Soldan, who seemed to be well pleased with it. But after she had once seene her husband, she thought upon her more serious businesses providing her selse of an apt opportunitie, when she entreated such favour of the Soldan, that both the men might be brought before him; wher if Ambroginolowould not confesse

confesse (without constraint) that which he had made his vaunt of concerning Barnardoes wife, he might be

compelled thereto perforce.

ely

1

he

ore

th-

his

ri-

Vas

1.1,

im

cat

ics

:Of

no

vi -

ght

her

ght

ien

ans

an

and

her

1 in

ids,

had

tale

e in

afod

flie

ling

ated

ight

not

Sicurances word was a Law with the Soldane, so that Ambroginolo and Bernardo being brought face to face, the Soldan with a sterne and angry countenance, in the presence of a most Princely Assembly, commanzeded Ambroginolo to declare the truth, upon perill of his life, by what meanes he won the Wager of the five thousand golden Duckets hee received of Bernardo.

Ambroginolo seeing Sicurano there present a upon whose favour he wholly relied, yet perceiving her looke likewise to be as dreadfull as the Soldans, and hearing her threatning him most grievons torments except he revealed the truth indeede; you may easily guesse in what condition hee stood at that instant.

Frownes and fury he beheld on either fide, and Barpardo standing before him, with a world of wirnesses, to heare his lie confounded by his owne confession, and his tongue to deny what it had before fo constantly ayouched. Yet dreaming on no other paine or penalty, but restoring backe the five thousand Dackets of gold and the other things by him purloyned, truely he revealed the whole forme of his falshood. Then Sicurano according as the Soldane had formerly commanded him, turning to Bernardo, faid, And thou, upon the fuggestion of this foule lie, what didst thou to thy wife; Being (quoth Bernardo) overcome with rage, for the lofle of my money, and the differencer I supposed to receive by my wife; I caused a servant of mine to kill her, and as hee credibly avouched, her body was devoured by ravenous Wolves in a moment after.

These things being spoken and heard, in the presence of the Soldan, and no reason (as yet) made knowne, why the case was so seriously urged, and to what end it would succeede: Signano spake in this manner to the

Soldane.

Novell.9. The Second Day,

Soldane, My gracious Lord, you may plainely perceive, in what degree that poore Gentlewoman might make her vaunt, being so well provided both of a loving friend, and a husband. Such was the friends love, that in an instant, and by a wicked lie, hec robber her both of renowne and honour, and bereft her also of her husband. And her husband, rather crediting falshood, than the invincible truth, whereof hee had faithfull knowledge, by long and very honourable experience; caused her to be flaine, and made foode for devouring Wolves. Belide all this, fuch was the good will and affection borne to that Woman, both by friend and imsband, that the longest continuce of them in their company, makes them alike in knowledge of her. But because your great wisedome knoweth perfectly what each of them have worthily deserved : if you please (in your ever-knowne gracious benignitie) to permit the panishment of the decriver, and pardon the partie fo deceived; I will procure fuch meanes, that the shall appeare here in your prefence, and theirs.

The Soldane, being desirous to give Sicurano all-manner of satisfaction, having followed the course so industriously: bade him to produce the Woman, and he was well contented. Whereat Bernardo stoode much amazed, because he verily believed that she was dead. And Ambroginolo societing already a preparation for punishment, seared, that the repaignent of the money would not now serve his turne; not knowing also, what hee should further hope or suspect, if the woman her selfe did personally appeare, which hee imagined would be a miracle. Sicurano having thus obtained the Souldanes, permission, in teares, humbling her selfe at his feete, in a moment she lost her manly voyce and demeancur, as knowing that she was now no longer to use them, but must truly witnesse what shee.

1

C

ai

21

CO

tu

ca

of

h

10

ju

an

te:

lo

Ga

was indeede, and therefore thus fpake.

179

he

0-

ds

eft

CT

ot

TY

her

ch

ul,

in

ne

ty.

ci -

C-

111

in

all.

So.

he

ch.

d.

or

cy

0,

an

ed

ce

no

ce.

25

Great Soldane, I am the miserable and unfortunate Geneura, that for the space of fixe whole yeares, have wandred through the world, in the habite of a man, fallely and most maliciously slandered, by the vilannous Traytor Ambroginolo, and by this unkinde eruell husband, betraied to his servant to be llaine, and left to be devoured by favadge beafts. Afterward, defiring fuch garments as better fitted for ber, and shewing her breafts, the mape it apparant before the Soldane and his affiftance, that thee was the very fame woman indeede. Then turning her felfe to Ambragiuolo, with more than manly courage, thee demanded of him, when, and where it was, that he lay with her, as (villanoully) he was not ashamed to make his vaunt? But he, having already acknowledged the contrary, being strickendumbe with shamefull difgrace, was not able toutter one word.

The Soldane, who had alwayes reputed Sicurano to be a man, having heard and feene to admirable an accident; was fo amazed in his minde, that many times he was very doubtfull, whether this was a dreame, or an absolute relation of truth. But, after hee had more feriously considered thereon, and found it to be reall and infallible : with extraordinary gracious praises, he commended the life, conflancy, condition, and vertues of Genenra, whom (till that time) he had alwayes. called Sicurano. So committing her to the company ofhonourable Ladies, to be changed from her manly habite; he pardoned Bernardo her husband (according to her request formerly made) although he had more juffly deferved death; which likewife himfelf confested, and falling at the feete of Geneura, defired her (in teares) to forgive his rash transgression, which most lovingly the did, killing and embracing him a thouland times.

Then the Soldane strictly commanded, that our fome high and eminent place of the Citic, Ambrogistolo should be bound and impaled on a stake, having his naked body nointed all over with honey, and never to be taken off, untill (of it selfe) it fell in peeces, which, according to the sentence, was presently performed. Next, hee gave expresse charge, that all his money and goods should be given to Geneura, which valued above tenthousand double Duckets. Forthwitha solution feast was prepared, wherin much honour was done to Bernardo, being the husband of Geneura; and to her, as to a most worthy woman, and matchesse wise, hee gave in costly lewels, as also resides of gold, and silver plate, so much as did amount to above ten

thousand double Duckets more.

When the feafting was finished, he caused a Ship to be furnished for them, granting them license to depart for Geneway when they pleased; whthere they returned most richly and joyfully, being welcommed home with great honour, especially Madam Geneura, whom every one supposed to be dead: and alwayes after, folong as the lived, the was most famous for her manifold vertues. But as for Ambroginolo, the very same day that he was impaled on the stake, annointed with honey and fixed in the place appointed, to his no meane torment; he not onely died, but likewife was devoured to the bare bones, by Flies, Waspes, and Horners, whereof the Councry notorioully aboundeth. And his bones, in full forme and fashion, remained strangely blacke for a long time after, knit together by the linewes; as a witnesse to many thousands of people, which afterward beheld the Carkaffe, of his wichednesse against so good & vertuous a woman, that had not a thought of evill towards him. And thus was the Proverbe truly verified, that thame fucceedeth after ugly fin, and the deceiver is trampled and trod, by fuch Pagamino as himfelf bath deceived.

12

ti

fe

a

el

fi

to

rogiving neces,

perl his hich hich was

and leffe old, ten

part remed ura, s afr her very nted

his was and leth. ined ther s of his that

was fter fuch nina Pagamino da Monaco a roving Pyrate on the Seas, carried away the faire wife of Signior Ricciardo de Chinzica, who understanding where shee was; went thither; and falling into friendship with Pagamino, demanded his wife of him; whereto he yeelded, provided, that she would willingly goe away with him. She devied to part thence with her Husband, and Signior Ricciardo dying she became the wife of Pagamano.

The tenth Novell.

Wherin old men are wittily reprehended, that will match with younger women than is fit for their yeares, and insufficient, never confidering what afterward may

happen to them.

EVery one in this honest and gracious assembly, most highly commended the Novell recounced by the Oucene; but especially Dioneus, who remained to finish that dayes pleasure with his owne Discourse, and after many prailes of the former tale were past, thus he began. Faire Ladies, part of the Queenes Novell hath made an alteration of my minde, from that which I intended to proceede next withall, and therefore I will report another. I cannot forget the unmanly indifcretion of Bernardo, but much more the base arrogance of Ambroginolo, how justly deserved thame fell upon him, as well it may happen to all other, that are fo vile in their owne opinions, as he apparently approved hm: selfe to be. For, as men wander abroad in the world, according to their occasions in diversitie of Countries and observations of the peoples behaviour; so are their humours as variously transported. And if they finde women wantonly disposed abroade, the like judgement they give of their Wives at home; as if they had never knowne their birth and breeding, or made proofe of their loyall carriage towards them. Wherefore, the Tale that I purpose to relate, will likewise condemne

condem all the like kinde of men, but more especially such as thinke themselves endued with more strength than Nature meant to bestow on them, foolishly beleving, that they can cover their owne defects by fabulous demonstrations, and thinking to fashion other of their owne complexions, that are meerely strangers

to fuch groffe follies.

Know then, that there lived in Pifa (some hundred yeares before Tufcany and Liguria embraced the Chriftian Faith) a ludge better stored with wisedome and ingenuitie, than corporall abilities of the body, named Signior Ricciardedi Cingica. He being more than halfe perswaded, that he could content a woman with such latisfaction as hee daily bestowed on his studies, being a widdower, and extraordinary wealthy, laboured with no meane paines, to enjoy a faire and youthfull wife in marriage: both which qualities hee should have confidered as good counfell to himfelfe, as hee gave to others, reforting to him for advice. Vpon this his amorous and diligent inquisition, it came so to passe, that a worrhy Gentlewoman, called Bertolomea, one of the fairest and chosest young maides in Pifa, whose youth did hardly agree with his age; but mucke was the motive of this marriage, and no expectation of mutual contentment. The Judge being married, and the Bride brought folemnely home to his house, wee neede make no question of brave delicate cheere and banqueting, well furnished by their friends, on either fide : other matters were now hammering in the Iudges head, for though hee could please all his Clients with counsell, yet now fuch a fuite was commeneed against himselfe, and in Beauties Court of continual! Requelts, that the Judge failing in plea for his owne defence, was often non-fuited by lacke of answer; yet hee wanted not good Wines, Drugges,

lly

th

DC--

fa-

ic:

ers

red

ri-

ind

ned

life

uch

ing

red

full

uld

hee

his

led

ung

rec

this

nt-

ride

ede

an.

ther

his

om-

urt

in by

ness ges: Drugges, and all fores of reftoratives to comfore the heart, and increase good bloud: but all availed not.

But wel fare a good courage, where performance faileth, hee could liberally commend his passed joviall dayes, and make a promile of as faire felicities yet to come; because his youth would renew it selfe like to the Eagle, and his vigour in as full force as before. But besides all these idle allegations, he would needs instruct lus wife in an Almanacke or Kalender, which hee had (formerly) bought at Ravenna, and wherein hee plainely thewed her, that there was not one day in the yeare, but it was dedicated to some Saint or other. In reverence of whom, and for their takes, he approved by divers arguments and reasons, that a man and his wife ought to abstaine from bedding together. Adding withall, that those Saints dayes had their Feafts and Fafts, befides the foure Seatons of the yeare, the vigils of the Apostles, and a thousand other holidayes, with Fridayes, Saterdayes, and Sundayes, in honour of our Lords reft, and all the holy time of Lent; as also certaine observations of the Moone, and infinite other exceptions befide; thinking perhaps, that it was as convenient for men to refraince from their wives convertation, as he did often time from fitting in the Court. These were his daily documents to his young wife, wherewith (poore foule) the became fortired, as nothing could be more irkefome to her; and very carefull hee was, least any should teach her what belonged to working dayes, because hee would have her know none but holidayes. It came to passe, that the season waxing extreamely hot, Signior Ricciardo would goe to recreate himfelfe ar his house in the Country, neere to the blacke Mountaine, where for his faire wives more contentment, he continued divers dayes together, And for her further rectestion

recreation, he gave order to have a day of fifting, hee going aboord a small Pinnace among the Fishers, and fine in another, conforted with divers other Gentlewomen in whole company the was very well pleafed. Des light made them launch further into the Sea, then either the ludge was willing they should have done, or agreed with their own fafety. For fodainely a Galliot came upon them, wherein was one Pagamino a famous Pyrate, who cipying the two Pianaces, made presently to them, and feized on that wherein the women were. When he beheld there fo faire a young woman, he coveted after no other purchase; but mounting her into his Galliot, in the fight of Signior Ricciardo, who by this time was fearefully landed, hee carried her away with him. When Signiour Iudge had seene this theft (he being fo jealous of his wife, as scarfely hee would let the aire breathe on her) it were needleffe to know whether hee was offended, or no. He made great complaint at Pifa, and in other places belide, what injurie he had fultained by those Pyrates, in carrying away his wife from him: but all in vaine, he neither (as yet) knew the man, nor what was become of him. Pagamino perceiving what a beautifull woman shee was, made the more precious effeeme of his purchase, and being himselfe a Batchelor, intended to keepe her as his owne, comforting her with kinde and pleafing speeches, not using any ill demeanour to her, because the wept and lamented grievoufly. But when night came, her husbands Calender falling fro her girdle, & all the fasts and feasts quite out of her remembrance, the received fuch courtefies from Pagamino, that bebefore they could arrive at Monaco, the ludge and his Law causes were almost out of memory; such was his affable behaviour to her, and shee began to converse with him in more friendly manner; and he entreated, her as if the had beene his espouled wife.

Within

h

6

V

be

n

yo

ap

10

do

to

re

yo

ih;

in

ma

or:

plie

d

.

3

i-

or

ot

us

ly

e.

0-

to

by

14

ft

ld

W

cat

1.10

1-

her

im.

hec

ic,

her

ing

aufe

ight

c,&

nce,

be-

d his

s his

verfe

ated,

ithen

Within ashort while after, report had acquainted the ludge, where, and how his wife was kept from him; whereupon he determined, not to fend, but rather to goe himfelte in person, and to redeeme her from the Pyrate, with what summes of money hee should demand. By sea he passed to Monaco, where he law his wife, and thee him, as (toone after) thee made knowne to Pagamino. The next morning, Signiour Ricciardo meeting with Pagamino, made means to be acquainted with him, and within leffe than an houres space, they grew into familiar conference ; Pagamino yet pretended not to know him, but expected what iffue this talke would fort to. When time ferved, the Judge discoursed the occasion of his comming thither, defiring him to demand what ransome he pleafed, and that he might have his wife home with him. Whereto Pagamino antivered.

fever you briefely, very true it is, that I have a young Gentlewoman in my house, whom I neither know to be your wife, or any mans else whatsoever: for I am ignorant both of you and her, albeit she hath remained a while here with me. If you be her husband, as you seeme to avouch, I will bring her to you, for you, appeare to be a worthy Gentleman, and (question-less) she cannot chuse but know you perfectly. It she doe confirme that which you have faid, and be willing to depatt hence with you: I shall rest well satisfied, and will have no other recompence for her ransome (in regard of your grave and reverend yeares) but what your selfe shall please to give me. But if it fall out other shan you have affirmed, you shall offer me great wrong in seeking to take her from me; because I am a young,

man, and can as well maintaine fo fatre a wife as you,

or any man elfe that I know. Beleeve it certainely, re-

plied the ludge, that the is my wife, and if you pleafe

My Lord Iudge, you are welcome hither, and to an-

to bring me where thee is, you shall soone perceive it for the will presently tast her arms about my necke, and I durit adventure the losse of her, if thee deny to doe it in your presence. Come on then, said Pagamino,

and let us delay the time no longer.

When they were entred into Pagaminos house, and face downe in the Hall, he caused her to be called, and flic (being readily prepared for the purpose) came forth of her Chamber before them both, where friendly they fate converfing together; never uttering any word unto Signior Ricciardo, or knowing him from any other ftranger, that Pagamino might bring in to the house with him. Which when my Lord the Judge beheld, (who expected to finde a farre more gracious welcome) he flood as a man amazed, faying to himfelfe. Perhaps the extraordinary greefe and melancholly suffered by me since the time of her loffe, hath so altered my wonted complexion, that she is not able to take knowledge of me. Wherefore, going neerer to her, he faid : Faire Love, deerely have I bought your going on Fithing, because never man felt the like affictions as I done fince the day when I loft you: but by this your uncivil filence, you feeme as if you did not know me. Why decreft love, feeft thou not that I am thy husband Ricciardo, who am come to pay what ranfome this Gentleman shall demand, even in the house where now wee are, so to convey thee home againe, upon his kinde promise of thy deliverance, after the payment of thy ransome?

Bertolousea turning towards him, and feeming as if the finited to her felfe, thus answered. Sir, speake you to me? Advise your selfe well, least you mistake mee for some other, for mine owne part, I never saw you till now. How now, quoth Ricciardo? Consider better what you say, looke more dreumspectly on mee, and then you will remembet; that I am'your loving

husband

r

n

m

Si

tit

ill

if y

OW

CO

chi

t ·

c,

to

70.

nd

nd

me nd-

ny

om

to

dge

ous

im-

an-

ath

able

cr r

THOY

al-

but did

that

pay

m m

ome

2.35 it

e you

e mice

r'bet-

mee,

oving

isband

husband, & my name is Ricciardo di Cingica. You must pardon me Sir, replied Bartotomea, I know it not fo fitting for a modest woman to stand gazing in the fac ces of men; and let me looke upon you never fo oftens certaine I am, that (till this inffant) I have not feene you. My Lord Judge conceived in his minde, that thus thee denied all knowledge of him, as standing in feare of Pagamino, and would not confesse him in his presence. Wherefore he entreated of Pagamino, to affoordhim fo much favour, that he might speake alone with her in her Chamber. Pagamino answered, that he was well content therewith, provided, that hee should not kiffe her against her will. Then he requested Bartolomea, to goe with him alone into her Chamber, there to heare what hee could fay, and to answer him is thee found occasion. When they were come togegether into the Chamber, and none there prefent but he and the, Signior Ricciardo began in this manner. Heart of my heart, life of my life, the sweetest hope that I have in this world; wilt thou not know thine owne Ricciardo, who loveth thee more than hee doth himselfe? Why art thouso ftrange? Am I so disfigured, that thou knowest me not? Behold me with a more pleasing eye, I pray thee.

Bertolomea smiled to her selfe, and without suffering him to proceede any further in speech, returned him this answer. I would have you to understand Sir, that my memory is not so oblivious, but I know you to be Signior Ricciardo di Cinzica, and my husband by title, but during the time that I was with you, it very ill appeared that you had any knowledge of me. For if you had beene so wise and considerate, as sin your owne judgement) the world reputed you to be, you could not be voide of so much apprehension, but did apparantly perceive, that I was young, sresh, and the esfully disposed; & so (by consequent) meet to know

M

matters

Novell. 10. The Second Day,

matters requisite for such young women, beside allowance of soode and garments, though bashfulnesse and modesty forbid to utter it. But if studying the Lawes were more welcome to you than a wise, you ought not to have married, and you loose the worthy reputation of a ludge, when you fall from that venezable profession, and make your selfe a common protainer of Feasts and Fasting dayes, Lenten seasons, Vigils, and solemnities due to Saints, which prohibite the houshold conversation of husbands and wives.

Here am I now with a worthy Gentleman, that ensertaineth me with very honourable respect, and here Thire in this Chamber, not so much as hearing of any feafts or taking dayes; for, neither Fridayes, Saturdayes, vigils of Saints, or any lingering of Lent, enter at this doore: but here is honest and civill conversation, better agreeing with a youthfull disposition, than those harth documents wherewith you tutord mee. Wherefore my purpole is, to continue here with him, as being a place furable to my minde and youth, referzing feafts, vigils, and fasting dayes, to a more mature and staied time of age, when the body is better able to endure them, and the minde may be prepared for fuch ghostly meditations: depart therefore at your owne pleafure, and make much of your Calender, without enjoying any company of mine, for you heare my refolved determination.

The ludge hearing these words, was overcome with exceeding griese, and when the was filent, thus he began. Alas deare Love, what an answer is this? Hast thoung regard of thine owne honours thy Parents, and friends? Canst thou rather asset to abide here, for the pleasures of this man, and so since capitally, than to live at Pisa in the state of my wife? Consider deare heart, when this man shall wave weary of thee, to thy sname and his own differee, he will reject thee. I must

and

and shall love thee for ever, and when I die, I leave thee Lady and commandresse of all that is mine. Can an inordinate appetite, cause thee to be carelesse of thy honour, and of him that loves thee as his owne life? Alas, my fairest hope, say no more so, but returne home with mee; and now that I am acquainted with thy inclination, I will endeavour hereaster to give thee better contentment. Wherefore (deere heart) doe not denie me, but change thy minde, and goe with me, for

I never faw merry day fince I loft thee.

il-

Te

he

hy

les

o-

ns,

ite

en-

nny

ur-

rfa-

han

nce.

im,

turc

e to

luc.

vne

TC-

With

e be-

Haft

nes,

e,for

chan

leare

o thy

mult

Sir (quoth flie) I defire no body to have care of mine honour, beside my felf, because it cannot be here abused. And as for my l'arents, what respect had they of mee, when they made mee your wife? If then they could be so carelesse of me, what reason have I to regard them now? And whereas you taxe me, that I cannot live here without capitall finne; farre is the thought hereof from me, for, here I am regarded as the wife of Pagamino, but at Pifa, you reputed me not worthy your focietie; because by the point of the Moone, and the quadratures of Geometrie; the Planets held conjunction betweene you and me, whereas here I am subject to no such constellations. You say befide, that hereafter you will frive to give mee better contentment than you have done; furely in mine opinion it is no way possible, because our complexions are fo far different, as ice is from fire, or gold from drolle. As for your allegation, of this Gentlemans rejecting me, when his humour is fatisfied; if it should prove to be fo, what fortune foever shall betide me, never will I make any meanesto you, what miferies or mifadventures may happen to mee; but the world will affoord me one refting place or other, and more to my contentment, than if I were with you. Therefore I tell you again, to live fecured from all offence to holy Saints, & not to injure their fealls, fasts, vigils, and other feafons:

M 3

here

Nove'l. 10. The Second Day,

here is my demourance, and from hence I purpole

not to depart.

Our Judge was now in a wofull perplexitie, and cons feffing his felly, in marrying a wife fo young, and farre, unfit for his age and abilitie: being halfe delperate, fad, and displeased, hee came forth of the Chamber, using divers speeches to Pagamino, whereof he made little or no account at all; and in the end, without any other fixceffe, left his wife there, and returned home to Pi-(a. There further afflictions fell upon him, betaufe the people began to scorne him, demanding daily of him, what was become of his gallant young wife, making hornes, with ridiculous pointings at him: whereby his fenfes became diffracted, fo that he ran raving about the streets, and afterward died in miserable manner. Which newes came no fooner to the eare of Pagamino, but, in the honourable affection he bare to Bertolomes, hee married her, with great solemnitie: banishing all Fasts, Vigils, and Lents from his house, and living with her in much felicity. Wherefore (faire Ladies) I am of opinion, that Bernardo of Ge . neway, in his disputation with Ambroginolo, might have thewne himselfe a great deale witer, and sparing his rash proceeding with his wife.

This Tale was so merrily entertained among the whole company, that each one smiling upon another, with on consent comended Dioneus, maintaining that he spake nothing but the truth, and condemning Bernardo for his crueltie. Vpon a generall silence commanded, the Queene perceiving that the time was now verie farre spent, and every one had delivered their severall Novels, which likewise gave a period to her Royalty: the gave the Crowne to Madam Neiphila, pleafandy speaking to her in this order. Hereaster, the government of these sew people is committed to your trust and care, for with the day concludeth my domi-

nion.

nion. Madam Neiphila, blushing at the honour done unto her, her checks appeared of a vermilion tincture, her eyes glittering with gracefull desites, and sparkling like the morning Starre. And after the modest murmure of the Assistants was ceased, and her courage in cheerefull manner settled, seating her selfe higher than

the did before, thus the fpake.

Sceing it is fo, that you have eleded me your Queene, to varie somewhat from the course observed by them that went before me, whose government you have all to much commended: by approbation of your counfell, I am defirous to speake my minde concerning what I would have to be next followed. It is not unknowne to you all, that to morrow shall be Friday, and Saturday the next day following, which are dayes somewhat molestuous to the most part of men, for preparation of their weekly foode and fustenance. Moreover, Friday ought to be reverently respected, in remembrance of him, who died to give us life, and endured his bitter passion, as on that day; which makes me to hold it fit and expedient, that we should minde more weightie matters, and rather attend our prayers and devotions, than the repetitions of Tales or Novels. Now concerning Saturday, it hath beene a custome observed among women, to bathe and wash themselves from such immundicities as the former weekes toile bath impofed on them. Befide, it is a day of fasting, in honour of the enfuing Sabbath, whereon no labour may be done, but the observation of holy exercises.

By that which hath beene faid, you may eafily perceive, that the course which we have hitherto continued, cannot be prosecuted in one and the same manner: wherefore, I would advise, and doe hold it an action well performed by us, to cease for these sew dayes, from recounting any other Novels. And because we have remained here source dayes already, except

Ma

we

mannannevefeve-Roypleae goyour

omi-

nion.

ole

ns

re,

ıd,

ng

or

ner

Pi-

ule

of

11-

rc-

ing

ble

: of

010

tic:

his

forc

Ge .

ring

the

her,

athe

we would allow the enlarging of our company, with fome other friends, that may refort unto us: I think it necessary to remove from hence, and take our pleasure in another place, which is already by me determined. When we shalbe there affembled, and have slept on the discourses formerly delivered, let our next argument be still the mutabilities of Fortune, but especially to concerne fuch perfors, as by their wit and ingenuitie, industriously have attained to some matter earnestly defired, or elfe recovered againe after the loffe. Hereon let us feverally fludy and premeditate shat the hearers may receive benefite thereby, with the comfortable maintenance of our harmeleffe recreations; the priveledge of Dionem alwayes referred to himfelfe.

Every one commended the Queenes deliberation, concluding that it should be accordingly profecuted: and thereupon, the Mafter of the houshold was called; to give him order for that evenings Table-service, and what elfe concerned the time of the Queenes Royalty, wherein hee was sufficiently instructed: which being done, the company arole, licensing every one to doe what they lifted. The Ladies and Gentlemen walked to the Garden, and having sported there a while; when the houre of supper came, they fate downe, and fared very daintily. Being rifen from the Table, according to the Queens command, Madam Amilia led the dance, and the ditty following, was fung by Madam Pampines, being answered by all the reft;as a Chorus.

The Song. And if not I, what Lady elfe can fing, Of those delights, which kinde contentments bring? Come, come, freete Love, the cause of my cheefe good, Of all my hopes, the firme and full effect; Sing we together, but in no fad mood, Of fighes or teares, which joy doth countercheeker

Stoine pleasures are delightfull in the taste, But yet Loves fire is oftentimes too fieree; consuming comfort with ore-speedy haste, Which into gentle hearts too far deth pierce, And if not 1, &c.

h

it

e

d.

ne

0

c,

y

m

22

le

.

7,

e,

28

1:

y

c-

re

te

ic

n

The first day that I felt this fiery heate,
So sweete a passion did possesse my soule,
That though I found the torment sharpe, and great;
Yet still me thought t' was but a sweete controute.
Nor could I course it rude, or rigorous,
Taking my wound from such a piercing eye:
As made the pain most pleasing, gracious.
That I desire in such assaults to die.
And if not 1,000.

Grant then great God of love, that I may fill Enjoy the benefit of my defire;
And honour her with all my deepest skill,
That first enstand my heart with boly fire.
To her my bondage it free libertie,
My sicknesse health, my tortures sweete repose;
Say she the word, in full felicity
All my extreames iogne in anhappy close.
Then if not I, what Lover else can sing,
Of those delights which kind contentment wing?

After this Song was ended, they fung divers other beside, and having great variety of instruments, they played to them as many pleasing dances. But the Queene considering that the meete houre for rest was come, with their lighted Torches before them, they all repaired to their Chambers; sparing the other dayes next succeeding, for those reasons by the Queene alledged, and spending the Sunday in solemne devotion.

M 4

The

The Third Day.

Topon which day, all matters to be discoursed on, do passe under the regiment of Madam Neiphila: concerning such persons as (by their wit and industry) have ateatined to their long wished desires, or reconvered something, supposed to be tost.

The Induction to the enfuing Difcourfes.

HE morning put on a vermillion counternance, and made the Sun to rife biushing red, when the Owene (and all the faire red, when the Owene (and all the faire rempany) were come abroad forth of their Chambers; the Seneshall or great Master of the Houshold, having (long before) sent all things necessarie to the place of their next intended meeting. And the people which prepared thereevety needfull matter, suddenly when they saw the Queene was setting forward, charged all the rost of their followers, as if it had beene preparation for a Campe; to make haste

away with the carriages, the rest of the Familie re-

maining behind, to attend upon the Ladies and Gen-

With a milde, Majesticke, and gentle pace, the Queene rode on, being followed by the other Ladies, and the three young Gentlemen, taking the way towards the West; conducted by the multiall notes of sweete singing Nightingales, and infinite other precise Birds beside, tiding in a tract not much frequented, but richly abounding with faire hearbes and slowers which by reason of the Sunneshigh mounting, began, to open their bosome, and fill the fresh Aire with their odoristierours persumes. Before they had travelled two small miles distance, all of them pleasantly conversing tegether; they arrived at another goodly Palace; which

which being somewhat mounted above the plaine, was feated on the fide of a little rising hill.



When they were entred thereinto, and had feene the great Hall, the Parlors and beautifull Chambers, every one so stupendiously furnished, with all convenient commodities to them belonging, and nothing wanting, that could be defired; they highly commended it, reputing the Lord thereof for a most worthy man, that had adorned it in such Princely manner. Afterward, ibeing descended lower, and noting the

MS

mot

ning atered

aire of the cef-

ier, forif it afte re-

the es, to-

ed, ers an, ett wo

ch

enoit spacious and pleasant court, the cellers stored with the choisest wines, and delicate springs of waters everie where running, their prayses then exceeded more and more. And being weary with beholding such variety of pleasures, they sate downe in a faire Galley, which tooke the view of the whole Court, it being round engirt with trees and showers, whereof the season then yeelded great plenty. And then came the discrete Master of the Houshold, with divers servants attending on him, presenting them with comfits, and other Banqueting, as also very sin-

gular wines, to ferve in flead of a brakefaft.

Having thus reposed themselves a while, a Garden gate was set open to them, coasting on one side of the Pallace, and roundenclosed with high mounted walls. Whereinto when they were entred, they found it to be a most beautifull Garden, stored with all varieties that possibly could be devised; and therefore they observed it the more respectively. The walkes and allyes were long and spacious, yet directly straite as an arrow, enwironed with spreading vines, whereon the grapes hung in copious clusters; which being come to their fall ripenesses, are for rare a smell throughout the Garden, with other sweete savours intermixed among, that shey supposed to seele the fresh spiceries of the East.

It would beside require much time, to describe all the varieties of this place, deserving much more to be commended, than my best faculties will assorb me. In the middest of this Garden, was a square plot, after the resemblance of a meadow, shourishing with high grasse, hearbes, and plants, beside a thousand diversities of showers, as if by the Art of planting they had bin there alcounted. Round was it, circled with very verdant orenge and Ceder trees, their branches plentiously stored with fruit both old and new, as also the slovers growing among them, yeelding not only a rare aspect to the eye, but also a delicate savor to the smell.

nt.

ve-

ol-

n a

TS,

nd

ith

em

in-

en

the

114.

be

at

ed.

erc

n-

es

cit

tr-

as

11

be

e,

of

re

ge

3-

e.

D.

In the middeft of this Meadovy, flood a Fountaine of white marbell, whereon was engraven most admirable workemanship, and within it (I know not whether it were by a naturall veine, or artificiall) flowing from a figure, standing on a Collumne in the midst of the Fountaine, fuch aboundance of water, and fo mounting up towards the Skies, that it was a wonder to behold. For after the high afcent, it fell downe agains anto the wombe of the Fountaine, with fuch a noise and pleasing murmure, as the streame that glideth from a mill. When the receptacle of the Fourtaine did over-flow the bounds, it freamed along the meadow, by fecret passages, and chanels, very faire. and artificially made, returning agains into every part of the meadow, by the like wayes of cunning conveighance, which allowed it a full course into the Garden, running swiftly thence downe towards the plaine; bus before it came thether, the very fwift current of the Greame did drive two goodly Milles, which brought in great be nefit to the Lord of the foile.

The fight of this Garden, the goodly grafts, plants, trees, herbes, frutages, and flowers, the Springs, Fountaines, and pretty rivolets streaming from it, so highly pleased the Ladies and Gentlemen, that among other infinite commendations, they spared not to say, if any Paradise remained on the earth to be seene, it could not possibly be in any other place, but onely was contained within the compasse of this Garden. With no meane pleasure and delight they walked round about it, making Chaplets of flowers, and other faire branches of the trees, continually hearing the Birds in melodious notes, exchoing and warbling one to another seven as if they envied each others selectices.

But yet another beauty (which before had not prefeated it felfe to them) on a fedaine they perceived divers creatures in many parts of the garden. In one place

Ceneres

Conies tripping about; in another place Hares, in a chird part Goates browling on the hearbes, and little young Hindes feeding every where: you without thife or warring together, but rather living in such a Domesticke and pleasing kinde of company, even as if they were appointed to enstruct the most noble of all creatures, to imitate their sociable conversation.

When their fenses had sufficiently banquetted of those severall beauties, the tables were fodainely prepared about the Fountaine; where first they fung fixe Canzoners; and having paced two or three dances, they fate downe to dinner, according as the Queene ordained, being ferved in very sumptuous manner. with all kinde of costly and delicate viands, yet not any babling noise among them. The Tables being withdrawne, they played againe upon their infruments, finging and dancing gracefully together, till, in regard of the extreame heate, the Queene commanded to give over, and permitted fuch as were so pleased, to take their eafe and reft. But fome, as not fatisfied with the places pleafures, gave themselves to walking, others fell to reading the lives of the Romanes; Some to the Cheffe, and the reft to other recreations.

But after the dayes warmth was more mildly qualified, and every one had made benefit of the best content; they went (by order sent from the Queene) into the Meadow where the Fountain stood, and being set about it, as they used to doe in telling their Fales (the argument appointed by the Queene being propounded) the first that had the charge imposed, was Phi-

lostratus, who began in this manner.

Massetto di Lamporechio, by counterfeiting himselfe to be dumbe, became a Gardiner in a Monastery of Nunnes, where he had familiar conversation with them allte

11

B

s,

ne

r.

ny

1-

3,

c-

ed to

th

0-

ne

li-

n-

ito

let

he

m-

hi-

10

of

dris

he

The First Novell.

wherein is declared, that Virginity is very bardly to bee bept in all places.

MOstworthy Ladyes, there wants no store of men and women, that are fo simple, as to credit for a certainty, that so soone as a young virgin hath the veile put on her head, and the blacke Cowle given to cover her withall, the is no longer a woman, nor more fentible of feminine affections, than as if in turning Nun, thee became converted to a ftone. And if (perchance) they heare some matters, contrary to their former perswasion; then they grow so furiously offended, as if one had committed a most foule and enormous finne, directly against the course of Nature. And the correct of this opinion hurries them on fo violently, that they will admit no leifure to confider, how (in fuch a scope of liberty) they have power to doe what they lift, yea beyond all meanes of fufficient fatisfying, never remembring how potent the priviledge of idleneffe is, especially when it is backt by solitude. In like manner, there are other people now, who venly beleeve, that the Spade, and Pickaxe, groffe feeding and labour, doe quench all fenfuall and fleshly concupifcence, yea in such as till and husband the ground, by making them dull, blockish, and (almost) meere senseleffe of understanding. But I will approve (according as the Queene hath commanded me, and within the compaffe of her direction) by a short and pleasant Tale how greatly they are abused by errour, that build upon fo weake a foundation.

Not farre from Alexandria, there was a great and goodly Monasterie, belonging to the Lord of those parts, who is termed the Admirall. And therein, under the care and trust of one woman, divers virgins were kept as recluses, or Nins, vowed to chastity of life; out of whose number, the Soldan of Babylon (under the care and trust of the soldan of the sold

der whom they lived in subjection) at every three yeeres end, had usually three of these virgins sent him. At the time whereof I am now to speake, there remained in the Monastery, no more but eight religious Sisters onely, beside the Lady Abbesse, and an honest poore man, who was a Gardiner, and kept the Garden in a most commendable and fit order.

His wages being small, and hee not wellcontented therewith, would serve there no longer: but making his accounts even with the Fac-totum or Baylisse belonging to the house, returned thence to the village of Lamperechio, being a native of the place. Among many other that gave him welcome home, was a young Hebrew Pezant of that country, sturdy, strong, and yet comely of person, being named Masses. But because hee was borne not farre off from Lamporethio, and had there beene brought up all his younger dayes, his name of Masses (according to their vulgar speech) was turned to Masses and there force he was usually called and knowne by the name of Masses of Lampore chio.

Massetto, falling in talke with the honest poore many, whose name was Lurso, demanded of him what services he haddone in the monastery, having continued there so long a time? Quoth Lurso, I laboured in the Garden, which is, very faire and great, then I went to the Forest to fetch home wood, and cless it for their Chamber suell, drawing up all their water beside, with many other tollome services else; but the allowance of my wages was so little, as it would not pay for the shoots I wote. And that which was worst of all, they being all young women, I thinke the Divell dwels among them, for a man cannot doe any thing to please them. When I have beene buse at my workein the garden, one would come and

c,

bi

-

d

g

Ç.

g

2

y's fr

is

to

-

of

0

n,

at

n-

4

æ,

οď

eir

e:

it

at

n,

n-

ne

ne

and fay, put this heere, put that there; and others would take the dibble out of my hand, telling mee, that I did not performe any thing well, making me fo weary of their continual trifling, as I have left all bufinesse, given over the Garden, and what for one mollestation, as also many other; I intended to tarry no longer there, but came away as thou seef. And yet the Factosum desired me at my departing, that if I knew any one who would undertake the aforesayd labours, I would send him thither, as (indeed) I promised to doe but let me fall sieke and dye before I helpe to send them any,

When Massetto had heard the words of Lurco, hee was so desirous to live among the Nunnes, that nothing else now hammered in his head; for hee meant more subtilly then poore Lurco did, and made no doubt to please them sufficiently. Then considering with himselfe, how best he might bring his intent to esset; which appeared not easily to be done. He would question no surther therein with Lurco, but onely demanded other matter of him, saying: Introth thou disse well Lurco, to come away from so tedious adwelling, had he not neede to be more than a man that is to how with such women? It were better for him to dwell among so many divels, because they understand not the tenth part that womens wily wits can dive into.

After their conference was ended, Massetto began to beate his braines how he might compasse to dwell among them, and knowing that he could well enough performe at the labours whereof Lurco had made mention; he cared not for any losse he could sustaine thereby, but onely stood in doubt of his entertainment, because he was too young and sprightly. Having pondered on many imaginations, he sayd to himselfe. The place is farre enough distant hence, and none there can know me; if I have wit sufficient, cleanely to make.

them

Novell. 1. The Third Day,

them believe that I am dumbe, then (questionlessed) I shall be received. And resolving to prosecute this determination, he tooke a spade on his shoulder, and without revealing to any body whither he went, in the disguise of a poore labouring Countryman, he travelled

to the Monastery.

When he was there arrived, he found the great gate open, and entering in boldly, it was his good hap to elpy the Fac-totum in the court, according as Lurco had given description of him. Making fignes before him, as it he were both dumbe and deafe; hee manifested, that hee craved an Almes for Gods fake, making theve, beside, that if need required, hee could cleave wood, or doe any reasonable kinde of service. Fac totum gladiy gave him food, and afterward fhewed him divers knotty logs of wood, which the weake ftrength of Lurco had left uncloven; but this fellow being more active and lufty, quickly rent them all to pieces. Now it fo fell out, that the Fac-totum muft needs goe to the Forrest, and tooke Massetto along with him thicher: where causing him to fell divers trees, by fignes he bade bim to lade the two Affes therewith, which commonly carried home all the wood, and fo drive them to the Monastery before him, which Maffetto knew well enough how to doe, and performed it very effectually.

Many other servile Offices were there to be done, which caused the Fac-totum to make use of his paints divers other dayes besides in which time, the Lady Abbelle chancing to see him, demanded of the Fac-totum what he was? Madam (quoth he) a poore labouring man, who is both deafe and dumbe, came to crave an almostic other day, the which in charity I could doe no lesse but give him; for which, hee hath done many honest services about the house. It seemes beside, that he hath pretty skill in Gardening, so that if

Ĺ

31

Te)

de-

ind

the

led

ate

o to

had

im,

cd.

ing

ave

The

ew-

akc

low

llto

nuft

with

ces,

vieh,

d fo

hich

for .

one,

incs

Lady

Fac-

ela-

ne to

rity I

hath

emes

hat if

I can perswade him to continue here, I make no queition of his able services: for the old filly man is gone,
and we have neede of such a stout fellow, to doe the
businesse belonging to the Monastery, and one fitter
for the turne comes seldomehither. Moreover, in regard of his double impersections, the Sisters can seitain no impeachment by him. Whereto the Abbesse
answered, saying; By the faith of my body, you
speake but the truth; understand then if he have any
knowledge in Gardening, and whether he will dwell
heere, or no: which compasse so kindiy as you can.
Lethim have a new paire of shoes, fill his belly dayly
full of meate, flatter, and make much of him, for wee
shall finde him worke enough to doe. All which, the
Fac-totam promised to fulfill sufficiently.

Massetto, who was not farre off from them all this while, but seemed seriously busied about sweeping and making cleane the Courr, heard all these speeches; and being not a little joyfull of them; sayd to himselfe: If once I come to worke in your Garden, let my proofe yeeld prayse of my skill and knowledge. When the Fac-totum perceived, that he know perfectly how to undergoe his businesse, and had questioned him by signes, concerning his willingnesse to serve there still, and received the like answere also, of his dutifull readinesse thereto; he gave him order to worke in the Garden, because the season did now require it; and to seave all other assays for the Monastery, attending

now onely the Gardens preparation.

As Massetto was thus about his Garden emploiment, the Nunnes began to resort thither, and thinking the man to be dumbe and dease indeede, were the more lavish of their language, mocking and flowing him very immodestly, as being perswaded, that he heard them not. And the Lady Abbesse, thinking he might as well be an Eunuch, as deprived both of hearing and

fpeaking

Novell. 1: The Third Day,

speaking, stood the lesse infeare of the Sisters walkes; but referred them to their owne care and providence. On a day, Massetto having laboured somewhat extraordinarily, lay downe to rest himselse a while under the trees, and two delicate young Nunnes, walking there to take the ayre, drew neere to the place where he dissembled sleeping; and both of them observing his comelinesse of person, began to pitty the poverty of his condition, but much more the misery of his great desectes. Then one of them, who had a little livelier spirit than the other, thinking Massetto to be fast a-

fleepe, began in this manner.

Sifter (quoth fhe) if I were faithfully affured of thy fecrecie, I would tell thee a thing which I have often thought on, and it may (perhaps) redound to thy profit. Sifter replyed the other Nun, speake your minde boldly, and beleeve it (on my Mayden-head) that I will never reveale it to any creature living. Encouraged by this folemne answere, the first Nun thus profecuted her former purpose, saying. I know not Silter, whether it hath entered into thine understanding of no, how firifily we are here kept and attended, never any man daring to adventure among us, except our good and honest Fac-totum, who is very aged; and this dumbe fellow mained, and made imperfect by nature, and therefore not worthy of the title of a man. Ah Sifler, it hath oftentimes bin told me, by Gentlewomen comming hither to visite us, that al other sweetes in the world are mockeries, to the incomparable pleasures of man and woman, of which we are barred by our unkinde parents, binding us to perpetuall chafting, which they were never able to observe themselves.

A Sifter of this house once told me, that before her turne came to be sent to the Soldane, the fell in frailty with a man that was both lame and blinde, and discovering the same to her Chofly Father in confessions

es!

ice.

tra-

der

ing

erc

ing

of

eat

lier

12-

hy

ten

ro-

nde

t I

ou-

10-

Cr.

ot

ver

out

his

re,

Si-

en

he

of

n-

ch

er

ty if-

ni

he

After

he absolved her of that sinne; affirming, that shee had not transgressed with a man, because hee wanted his rationall and understanding parts. Behold Sister, heere lyes a creature, almost formed in the selfe-same mold, dumbe and dease, which are two the most rationall and understanding parts that doe belong to any man, and therefore no man, wanting them. If folly and trailty should be committed with him (as many times since he came hither it hath run in my mind) he is by Nature, sworne to such secrecies that he cannot (if he would) be a blabbe thereof. Beside, the Lawes and constitution of our Religion doth teach us, that a sinne so assured.

ly concealed, is more than halfe abfolved.

Ave Maria Sifter (fayd the other Nun) what kinde of words are these you utter? Doe you not know, that we have promifed our virginity to God? Oh Sifter (an-(wered the other) how many things are promiled to him every day, and not one of a thousand kept or performed? If we have made him fuch a promife, and fome of our weaker-witted fifters doe performe it for us, no doubt but he will accept it in part of payment. Yea. but Sifter, replyed the second Nun againe, there is another danger lying in the way : If we prove to bee with childe, how thall we doe then? Sifter (quoth our couragious wench) thou are affrayd of harme before it happen: if it come fo to paffe, let us confider on it then: thou art but a Novice in matters of such moment, wee are provided of a thousand meanes, whereby to prevent conception. Or, if they should faile, we are fo furely fitted, that the world thall never know it. Let it suffice, our lives must not be by any so much as fulpefted, our Monastery questioned, or our Religion rashly scandalized. Thus the schooled her younger Sifter in wit, albeit as forward as the in will, and longed as deliroufly, to know what kinde of creature man WASA

Novell. I. The Third Day,

After some other questions, how this intention of theirs might be fafely brought to full effed the spright. ly Nun that had wit at will, thus answered. You see Sifter (quoth flie) it is now the houre of midday, when all the reft of our Sifterhood are quiet in their Chambers, because we are then allowed to fleepe, for our earlier rifing to morning Mattins. Here are none in the Garden now but our selves, and while I awake him be you the watch, and afterward follow me in my fortune, for I will valiantly leade you the way. Maffetto immitating a Dogges sleepe, heard all this conspiracie intended against him, and longed as earnestly till shee came to a wake him. Which being done, hee seemed very simple and sottish, and she chearing him with flattering behaviour; into the close Arbour they went which the Sunnes bright eye could not pierce into, and there I leave it to the Nunnes owne approbation, whether Maffetto was a man rationall, or no. Ill deeds require longer time to contrive, than act; and both the Nunnes having beene with Maffette at this new forme of confession, were enjoyed (by him) such an ease and filent penance, as brought them the oftner to shrift, and made him to proove a very persect Confeflour.

Desires obtained, but not fully satisfied, doe commonly urge more frequent accesse, than wisedome thinkes expedient, or can continue without discovery. Our two joviall Nunnes, not a little proud of their private stolne pleasures, so long resorted to the close Arbour, till another Sister, who had often observed their haunt thither, by meanes of a little hole in her window; that she begant o suspect them with Massetto, and imparted the same to two other Sisters, all three concluding, to accuse him before the Lady Abbesse, But upon a surther conference had with the Offenders, they changed opinion, tooke the same oath as

the

the forewomen had done; and because they would be free from any taxation at all: they revealed their adventures to the other three ignorants, and so fell all eight into one formall confederacie, but by good and warie observation. least the Abbesse her selfe should descrythem; finding poore Massetto such plenty of Garden-worke, as made him very doubtfull in plea-

fing them all.

of

hs-

ice

en

m-

auc

in

um

or-

icie hee

ned

ith

ent

to,

on,

ces

the

me

alic

to

on-

m-

me

TY.

CII

ofe

ved

her

110,

rec

ffc.

n-

125

the

It came to paffe in the end, that the Lady Abbeffe who all this while imagined no tuch matter, walking all alone in the garden on a day, found Maffetto fleeping under an Almond tree, having then very little bufineffe to doe, because he had wrought hard all the night before. She observed him to be an handlome man, young, lufty, well-limbde and proportioned, having a mercifull commilleration of his dumbeneffe and deafenesse, being perswaded also in like manner, that if he were an Eunuch too, hee deserved a rhousand times the more to be pittied. The feafon was exceeding hot, and heelay downe fo careleffely to fleepe, that fomething was noted; wherein the intended to be better relolved, almost falling sicke of the other Nuns difeafe. Having awaked him, the commanded him by figues that he should follow her to her chamber, where he was kept close so long, that the Nunnes grew offended, because the Gardiner came not to his dayly labour.

Well may you imagine that Massetto was no mileproud man now, to be thus advanced from the Garden to the Chamber, and by no worse woman than the Lady Abbetse her selfe; what signes, shews, or language he spake there, I am not able to expresse, onely it appeared, that his behaviour pleased her so well, as at procured his dayly repairing thither; and acquainted her with such familiar conversation, as she would have condemned in the Nunnes her daughters, but that

they

they were wife enough to keepe it from her. Now began Masseto to confider he had undertaken a taske belonging to great Hercitles, in giving content to so many, and by continuing dumbe in this manner, it would redound to his no meane detriment. Whereupon, as he was one night sitting by the Abbesse, the string that retained his tongue from speech, brake on a sodaine, and

thus he spake.

Madam I have often heardit fayd, that one Cocke may doe service to ten severall Hennes, but ten men can very hardly even with all their best endeavour, give full fatisfaction every way to one woman; and yet I am tyed to content nine, which is farre beyond the compaffe of my power to doe, 'Already have I performed To much Garden and Chamber-worke, that I confesse my selfe starke tired, and can travell no further, and therefore let me intreate you to lycense my departure hence, or finde some meanes for my better cafe. The Abbesie hearing him speake, who had so long beene there dumbe, being ftricken into admiration, and accounting it almost a miracle, sayd. How commeth this to passe? I versly beleeved thee to be dumbe. Madam (quoth Maffetto) fo I was indeed, but not by Nature; onely I had a long lingering fickeneffe which bereft mee of speech, and which I have not onely recovered againe this night, but shall ever remaine thankefull to you for it.

The Abbesse verily credited his answer, demanding what he meant in saying, that he did serve to nine? Madain, quoth he, this were a dangerous question, and not easily answered before all the eight Sisters. Upon this reply, the Abbesse plainely perceived that not one-ly she had fallen into folly, but all the Nunnes cryed guilty too: wherefore being a woman of sound esteration, she would not grant that Massetto should depart, but to keepe him still about the Nunnes

bufinelle,

,

c

d

kc

n

VC

m

d

Te

nd

re

ne c-

is

m c i

eft ed

to

ing

da-

non

neyed

dif-

uld

nes elle, businesse, because the Monastery should not he scandalized by him. And the Fac-totum being dead a little before his strange recovery of speech revealed, and some things essemble more neerely concerning them: by generall consent, and with the good liking of Massette, he was created the Fac-totum of the Monasterie.

All the neighboring people dwelling thereabour, who knew Maffetto to be dumbe, by fetching home wood dayly from the Forest, and divers employments in other places, were made to beleeve, that by the Nunnes devout prayers and discipline, as also the merite of the Saint, in whose honour the Monastery was built and crected, Maffetto had his long reftrained freech reflored, and was now become their fole Factorum, having power now to employ others in drudgeries, and eafe himselfe of all such labours. And albeit he made the Nunnes to be fruitefull, by encreasing some store of younger fifters, yet all matters were fo close and cleanly carryed, as it was never talke of, till after the death of the Lady Abbeffe, when Maffetto beganne to grow in good yeeres, and defired to returne home to his native abiding, which (within a while after) was granted him.

Thus Massetto being rich and old, returned home, like a wealthy father, taking no care for the nursing of his children, but bequeathed them to the place where they were bred and borne; having (by his wit and ingenious apprehension) made such a benefit of his youthfull yeere, that now he tooke ease in his age.

A Querry of the Stable, belonging to Agilulfo, King of the Lombardes, found the meanes of accesse to the Dycenes bed, without any knowledge or consent in her. This being feeretly discovered by the King, and the party knowns, he gave him a marke, by shearing the haire of his head. It bereupon be that was software, sheared like wise all

The second Novell.

sherein is fignified, the providence of a wife man, when he shall have reason to use revenge. And the cuming meaner of another, when he compasseth crast to defend himselfe from perill.

WHen the Novell of Philostratus was concluded. which made some of the Ladyes blush, and the rest to fmile ; it pleafed the Queene, that Madam Pampenea should follow next, to second the other gone before; when the, fmiling on the whole affembly, began thus. There are fome men fo shallow of capacity, that they will (neverthelesse) make show of knowing and understanding such things, as neither they are able to doe, nor appertaine to them : whereby they will fometimes reprehend other new errours, and fuch faults as they have unwillingly committed, thinking thereby to hide their owne shame, when they make it much more apparant and manifest. For proofe whereof, faire company, in a contrary kinde I will thew you the fubtill cunning of one, who (perhaps) might bee reputed of leffereckning than Maffettos and yet he went beyond a King, that thought himselfe to be a much wifer man.

Agilulfo, King of Lombardie, according as his Predecessours had done before him, made the principall feate of his Kingdome, in the City of Pavia, having embraced in marriage Tendelinga, the late left widdow of Vetario, who likewise had beene King of the Lombardis a most beautifull, wife and vertuous Lady, but made unfortunate by a mischance. The occurrences and estate of the whole Realme, being in an honourable, quiet and welferled condition, by the discreete care and providence of the King; a Querrie appertaining

10

b

0

el

Qu

the

vin

bei

her

6=

m

at

nd

to

ne-

135

10

SIC

ite

ub-

ired

be-

WI-

Prc-

llegi

ving

ddow

Long-

, but

ences

oura-

e care

aining

10

to the Queenes Stable of Horfe, being a man but of meane and low quality, though comely of person, and of equals state to the Kings became immeasurably amorous of the Queene. And because his base and service condition, had endued him with so much understanding, as to know infallibly, that his affection was mounted beyond the compasse of conveniencie; wisely he concealed it to himselse, not acquainting any one therewith, or daring so much, as to discover it either by lookes, or any other affectionate behaviour.

And although he lived utterly hopeleffe, of ever attaining to his hearts defires; yet notwithstanding, hee proudly gloried, that his love had foared fo high a pitch. to be enamored of a Queene. And dayly, as the furie of his flame encreased; so his carriage was farre above his fellowes and companions, in the performing of all fuch ferviceable duties, as any way he imagined might content the Queene. Whereon enfued, that whenfoever she roade abroade to take the ayre, the used oftner to mount on the horse, which this Querrie brought when she made her choyse, than any of the other that were led by his fellowes. And this did he esteeme as no meane happinesse to him, to order the flirrope for her mounting, and therefore gave dayly his due attendance: fo that, to touch the ftirrop, but (much more) to put her foote into it, or touch any part of her garments, he thought it the onely heaven on carth.

But, as we fee it oftentimes comes to paffe, that by how much the lower hope declineth, so much the higher love ascendeth; even so fell it out with this poore Querry; for most irkesome was it to him, to endure the heavy waight of his continual oppressions, not having any hope at all of the very least mitigation. And being utterly unable to relinquish his love, divers times he resolved on some desperate conclusion, which might

N

give the world an evident testimony, that he dyed for the love he bare to the Queene. And upon this determination, he grounded the successe of his future fortune to dye in compassing some part of his desire, without either speaking to the Queene, or sending any missive of his love, for to speake or write, were meerely in vaine, and drew on a worser consequence than death, which he could bestow on himselfe more easily, and when he listed.

No other course now beleagershis braines, but only for fecret accesse to the Queenes bed, & how he might get entrance into her Chamber, under colour of the King, who (as he knew very well) flept many nights together from the Queene. Wherefore, to fee in what manner, and what the usuall habit was of the King, when he came to keepe company with the Queene: he hid himselfe diverse nights in a Gallery, which was betweene both their lodging Chambers. At length hee Law the King come forth of his Chamber, himfelfe all alone, with a faire night mantle wrapt about him, carrying a lighted Taper in one hand, and a small white Wand in the other, fo went hee on to the Queenes lodging; and knocking at the doore once or twice with the wand, and not using any word, the doore opened, the light was left without, and he entered the Chamber, were he stayed not long, before his returning backe againe, which likewife very diligently he obvcd.

So familiar was he with the Wardrobe, by often fetching and returning the King and Queenes furnitures; that the fellowes to the fame Mantle which the King work when he went to the Queene, very fecretly he conveighed away thence with him, being provided of a light, and the very like wand. Now bestowes he costly bathings on his body, that the least fent of the Stable paight not be felt about him; and finding a time fura-

bic

c

r

r

14

C

bo

m

tie

Be:

the

Del

Wil

beg

the,

me,

can

com

I

ble to his defire, when he know the King to be at rest in his owne Lodging, all else sleeping in their beds closely he steales into the Gallery, where lighting his Taper, with the Tinder purposely brought thither, the Mantle solded about him, and the Wand in his hand, valiantly he adventures upon his lives perill. Twice he knockt softly at the doore, which a wayting woman immediately opened, and receiving the light, went forth into the Gallery, while the supposed King, was con-

verfing with the Queene.

or

1-

ne

ut

ve

in

h,

nd

for

get

ng,

her

11-

hen

hid

be.

hee

e all

car.

hite

enes

with

ened.

nam-

ning

e ob-

often

urni-

ch the

cretly

ovided

scable

e futa-

Alas good Queene, heere is a finne committed, without any guilty thought in thee, as (within a while after) it plainely appeared, For, the Querry having compassed what he most covered, and fearing to forfeite his life by delay, when his amorous defire was indifferently fatisfied; returned backe as he came, the fleepy evaiting woman not so much as looking on him, but rather glad, that the might get her to reft againe. Scarcely was the Querry stept into his bed, unheard or difcerned by any of his fellowes, divers of them lodging both in that and the next Chamber : but it pleased the King to vifite the Queene, according to his wented manner, to the no little mervaile of the drowfie waiting woman, who was never twice troubled in a night before. The King being in bed, whereas alwayes till then, his refort to the Queene, was altogether in ladnesse and melancholly, both comming and departing without speaking one word: now his Majesty was become more pleasantly disposed, whereat the Queene began not a little to mervaile. Now trust me Sir, quoth the, this hath beene a long wished, and now most welcome alteration, vouchfafing twice in a night to vifite me, and both within the compasse of one houre; for it cannot be much more, fince your being heere, and now comming againe.

The King hearing these words, sodainely presumed

that by some counterfeit person or other, the Queene had beene this night beguiled; wherefore (very advifedly) he confidered, that in regard the patty was unknowne to her, and all the women about her, to make no outward appearance of knowing it, but rather. concealed it to himselfe, Farre from the indiscretion of some hare-braind men, who presently would have answered and sworne; I came not hither this night, till now. Whereupon many dangers might enfue to the difhonour and prejudice of the Queene; belide, her errour being discovered to her, might afterward bee an occasion, to urge a wandring in her appetite, and to cover after change againe. But by this filence, no shame redounded to him or her, whereas prating, must needs be the publifner of open infamie; yet was he much vexed in his minde, which neither by lookes or words he would discover, but pleasantly said to the Queene, Why Madam although I was once here before to night, I hope you millike not my fecond feeing you, nor if I should please to come againe. No truely Sir, quoth she, I onely defire you to have care of your health. Well, favd the King, I will follow your countaile, and now returne to mine owne todging againe, committing my Queene to her good reft.

His blood boyling with rage and diftemper, by fuch a monstrous injuric offered him; he wrapt his nightmantle about him, and leaving his Chamber, imagining, that whatfoever he was, needs he must be one of his owne house: he tooke a light in his hand, and convayed it into a little Lanthorne, purpofing to be refolved in his suspition. No guests or strangers were now in the Court, but onely fuch as belonged to his houf- lodg hold, who lodged altogether about the Escurie and Sta- wha bles, being there appointed to divers beds. Now, this was inge his concerte, that who loever had beene lo lately famili- Who ar with the Queene, his heart and his pulse could (as takin

yet) their

d

î

C tl

f

d

n

pr

to de

his

dra

bro

his

ver

him

yet) be hardly at reft, but rather would bee troubled with apparant agitation, as discovering the guilt of so great an oftender. Many Chambers had he paffed thorow, where all were foundly fleeping, and yet hee felt both their brefts and pulles.

0

er.

n

ve ill

he

er-

an

to

me

eds

cx-

s he

Vhy t, I

if I

the,

fayd

urne

eene

fuch

ight-

nagi-

e one , and

be re-

e now

houl-

id Sta-

At last he came to the lodging of the man indeede, that had so impudently usurped his place, who could no as yet fleepe, for joy of his atchieved adventure. When he espied the King come in, knowing well the occasion of his fearch, he began to waxe very doubtfull, fo that his heart and pulfe beating extremely, he felt a further addition of feare, as being confidently persivaded, that there was no other way but death, especially if the King discoverd his Agony. And although many confiderations were in his braine, yet because hee law the king was unarmed, his best refuge was, to make thew of fleepe, in expectation what the King intended to doe. Among them all he had fought, yet could not finde any likelihood, whereby to gather a grounded probability; untill hee came to this Querrie, whose heart and pulses laboured so strongly, that hee sayd to himselfe, yea marry, this is the man that did the deed.

Neverthelesse, purposing to make no apparance of his further intention, he did nothing elfe to him, but drawing forth a paire of sheares, which purposely he brought thither with him, he clipped away a part of his lockes, which (in those times) they used to weare very long, to the end that he might the better know him the next morning, and fo returned backe to his lodging againe. The Querry, who partly faw, but fe. what was done to him; perceived plainly (being asubtill is was ingenious fellow) for what intent he was thus marked. famili- Wherefore, without any longer dallying, up he role, and ald (as taking a paire of theares, wherewith they used to trim yet) their Horses; softly he went from bed to bed, where they. N 3

they all lay yet foundly fleeping, and clipt away each mans locke from his right eare, in the felfe fame manner as the King had done his, and being not perceived by any one of them, quietly he layde him downe a-

gaine.

In the morning, when the King was rifen, he gave command that before the Pallace gates were opened, all his whole Family hould come before him, as in-Stantly his will was fulfilled. Standing all uncovered in his presence, he began to consider with himselfe. which of them was the man that he had marked. And feeing the most part of them to have their lockes cut, all after one and the felfefame manner; marvailing greatly, he fayd to himfelfe. The man whom I feeke for though he be but of meane and base condition, yet it plainely appeareth, that he is of no deject or common understanding. And seeing, that without further clamour and noyle, he could not finde out the party hee looked for he concluded, nor to win exernal shame, or compassing a poore revenge: but rather (by way of admonition) to let the offender know in a word; that he was both noted and observed. So turning to them all. he fayd; He that hath done it, let him be filent, and doe fo no more, and now depart about your bufineffe.

Some other turbulent spirited man, no imprisonaments, tortures, examinations, and interrogations, could have served his turne; by which course of proceeding, he makes the shame to be publikely known, which reason requires that keepe concealed. But admit that condigne vengeance were taken, it diminishes that not one title of the shame, neither qualifiest the peoples bad affections, who will lash out as liberally in scandall, and upon the very least babling rumor. Such therefore as heard the Kings words, sew though they were, yet cruely wise; marvelled much at them, and by long examinations among themselves, questioned, but came far

Chott

ach

an-

ived

LC 3-

ned,

ered

elfe.

And

ckes

iling

e for

ct it

mon

cla-

hee

e,oy

fad-

at he

all,

due

fon!

ons.

hich

that

one

bad dall,

fore

exa-

e far

fhort of his meaning; the man onely excepted whom indeed they concerned, and by whom they were never discovered, so long as the King lived, neither did he dare at any time after, to hazard his life in the like action, under the frownes or the favour of Fortune.

Under colour of Confession, and of a most pure conscience, a faire young Gentlewoman, being amorously affested to an honest man, induced a devoute and solemne religious Friar, to advise her in the meanes (without his suspicion or perceiving) from to enjoy the benefit of her friend, and bring her desires to their sulf effect.

The third Novell ..

Declaring that the level qualities of some persons, oftensimes misguide good people, into great and greeyous errors.

When Madam Pampines fate filent, and the Querries boldnesse consilled with his crafty commings and great wisedome in the King had passed among them with a generall applause; the Queene turning her selfe to Madam Philomena, appointed her to follow next in order as the rest had done before her: whereupon Philomena began after this manner.

It is my purpole, to acquaint you with a notable mockerie, which was performed (not in jeft, but earneft) by a faire gentlewoman, to a grave and devout Religious Fryar, which will yeeld fo much the more pleafure and recreation, to every fecular understander, if but diligently he or shee doe observe, how commonly those Religious persons (at least the most part of them) like notorious fooles, are the inventers of new courses and customes, as thinking themselves more wise and skilfull in all things than any others.

N 4

yct

yet prove to bee of no worth or validity, addicting the very best of all their devices, to expresse their owne vilenesse of mind, and fatten themselves in their styes like to pampered Swine. And affure your selves worthy Ladies, that I doe not tell this tale onely to follow the order enjoyned me; but also to informe you, that such Saint-like holy Sirs, of whom wee are too opinionate and credulous, may bee, yea and are divers times leunningly met withall, in their crastinesse, not onely by men, but likewise some of our owne

fexe, as I shall make it apparant to you.

In our owne City (more full of craft and deceit, than love or faithfull dealing) there lived not many yeeres fince, a Gentlewoman of good spirit, highly minded, endued with beauty and all commendable qualities, as any other woman (by nature) could be. Her name, or any others, concerned in this Novell, I meane not to make manifest, albeit I know them, because Some are yet living, and thereby may be scandalized; and therefore it shall suffice to passe them over with a smile, This Gentlewoman, seeing her selfe to bee descended of very great parentage, and (by chance) married to an Artizan, a Cloathyer or Draper, that lived by the making and felling of cloth. She could not (because hee was a Tradesman) take downe the height of her minde; conveiving, that no man of meane condition (how rich so ever) was worthy to enjoy a Gentlewoman in marriage, Observing that with all his wealth and treasure, hee underflood nothing better, than to open skeines of yarne, overfee weaving, fill shuttles, laywebbes in his Loomes, or dispute with his Spinsters, about their bufineffe.

Being thus over swayed with her proud opinion, she would no longer bee embraced or regarded by him in any manner, saving onely because shee could not refling

their

their

elves

ly to

rme

are

are

afti-

wne

han

eres

ded,

ties,

me,

not

aufe

zed:

vith

bce

ice)

er,

She

hat

was.

cr-

er-

of his

cir

he

in

e-

i.c

fule him, but would finde some other for her better fatisfaction, who might feeme more worthy of her respect, than the Draper her husband did. Heereupon the fell to deepely in love with a very honest man of our City alfo, and of indifferent yeeres, as what day shee faw him not, she could take no rest the night enfuing. The man himfelfe knew nothing hereof, and therefore was the more careleffe; and the being curious, nice, yet wifely confiderate, durft not let him understand it, neither by any womans close conveyed message, nor yet by Letters, as fearing the perils which happen in fuch cases. But her eye observing his dayly walkes and refores, gave her notice of his often converting with a religious Fryar, who albeit he was a far and corpulent man, yet notwithstanding, because he seemed to leade a sanctimonious life, and was reported to be a most honest man; the perswaded her selfe, that he might be the best meanes betweene her and her friend.

Having confidered with her felfe, what course was best to be observed in this case; upon a day apt and convenient, she went to the Convent where hee kept, and having caused him to bee called, she told him, that is segure so served, very gladly would shim, that is segure so served, very gladly would shim. The holy man seeing her to bee a Gentlewoman (as indeed shee was) willingly heard her; and when shee had confessed what the could, she had yet another matter to acquaint him withall, and

thereupon thus begah.

Holy Pather, it is no more than convenient that I should have recourse to you to be affished by your helpe and counsell, in a matter which I will impart unto you I know, that you are not ignorant of my parents and husband, of whom I am affected as deerely as his life, for proofe whereof, there is not any thing that I can de-

N 5

fire,

Are, but immediately I have it of him, he being a rich man, and may very sufficiently affoord it. In regard whereof, I love him equally as my felfe, and fletting alide my best endevours for him) I must tell you one thing quite contrary to his liking and honour : no woman could more worthily deserve death, than my felfe. Vnderstand then (good Father) that there is a man, whose name I know not, but he seemeth tobee honest, and of good worth; moreover (if I am not deccived) he reforeeth oftentimes to you, being faire and comely of person, going alwayes in blacke garments of good price and value. This man, imagining (perhaps) no such minde in me, as truely there is; hath often attempted me, and never can I bee at my doore, or window, but he is alwayes present in my fight, which is not a little displeasing to me; he watcheth my walkes, and much I mervaile, that he is not now heere.

Let me tell you holy Sir, that fuch behaviours doe many times lay bad imputations upon very honest women, yet without any offence in them. It hath often run in my mind, to let him have knowledge thereof by my brethren: but afterward I confidered, that men (many times) deliver meffages in fuch fort, as draw on very ungentle answers, whereon grow words, and words beget actions. In which regard, because no harme or scandall should ensue, I thought it best to be filent; determining, to acquaint you rather therewith, than to any other, as well because you seeme to be his friend, as also in regard of your office, which priviledgeth you to correct fuch abuses, not onely in Friends, but also in ftrangers. Enow other women there are, (more is the pitty) who perhaps are better disposed to such fuites than I am, and can both like and allow of fuch courting, otherwise than I can doc; as being willing to embrace fuch offers, and (haply) loath to yeeld depiall. Wherefore I most humbly intreate you good Father

ther (even for our bleffed Ladies sake) that you would give him a friendly reprehension, and advise him to use such unmanly meanes no more hereaster. With which words, she hung downe her head in her bosome, cunningly diffembling, as if she wept, wiping her eyes with her Handkerchiese, when not a teare fell from

them, but indeed were dry enough.

ich

ard

ing

one

NO-

my

13 2

occ

de-

nd

of

25)

cn

OI.

is

cs,

loe

est

of-

eof

cn

W

nd

ne

nt;

to

23

OIL

10

is

ch

h

g

The holy religious man, fo foone as he heard her description of the man presently knew whom the means, and highly commending the Gentlewoman for her good and vertuous feeming disposition, beleeved faithfully all that the had fayd : promiting her, to order the matter fo well and discreetly, as thee should not any more be offended. And knowing her to bee a woman of great wealth (after all their usuall manner, when they cast forth their fishing nets for gaine:) liberally he commended Almel-decds, and dayly workes of Charity, recounting to her (befide) his owne particular necessites. Then, giving him two peeces of Gold, she fayd: I pray you (good Father) to be mindfull of me, and if he chance to make any deniall, tell him I spake it my selfe to you : and by the way of a sad complaint, her tonfession being ended, and penance easie enough enjoyned her, the promifed to make her parents bountifull Benefactors to the Convent, and put more money into his hand, desiring him in his Malles, to remember the foules of her deceased friends, and fo returned home to her house.

Within a short while after her departure, the Gentleman of whom she had made this counterfeit complaint, came thither, as was his usual manner, and having done his duty to the holy Father, they fate downe together privately; falling out of one discourse into another. At the length, the Friar (in very loving and friendly sort) mildly reproved him for such amorous glaunces, and other pursures, which (as he thought)

be

Novell.3. The Third Day,

he dayly used to the Gentlewoman, according to her owne speeches. The Gentleman mervailed greatly thereat, as one that had never feene her, and very fildome passed by the way where she dwelt, which made him the bolder in his answeres; wherein the Confesfour interrupting him fayd: Never make fuch admiration at the matter, neither waste more words in deniall, because they cannot serve thy turne; I tell thee plainely, I heard these words even from her owne selfe, in a very forrowfull and fad complaint. And though (perhaps) heereafter, thou canft very hardly refraine fuch follyes; yet let me tell thee fo much of her (and under the feale of absolute affurance) that the is the onely woman of the world, who to my judgement, doth abhorre all fuch base behaviour. In regard therefore of thine owne honour; as also not to vexe and prejudice so vertuous a Gentlewoman, I pray thee refraine such idlenesse henceforward, and suffer her to live in peace.

The Gentleman being a little wifer than his ghoffly Father, perceived immediately, the notable pollicy of the Woman. Whereupon, making fomewhat bashfull appearance of any error already committed, he fayd; He would afterward be better advised. So departing from the Fryar, he went on directly to passe by the house where the Gentlewoman dwelt, and shee stood alwayes ready on her watch, at a little Window, to observe when he would take that way. And seeing him comming, the thewed her telfe fo joyfull and gracious to him, as he cally understood, whereto the substance of the holy Fathers chiding tended. And from that time forward, he used dayly though in covert manner (to the no little liking of the Gentlewoman and himfelfe) to make his paffage thorough that ftreet, under colour of fome important occasions there concerning

bim.

ier

tly

fil-

ide

ef-

ni-

de-

ice

fe,

gh

ne

nd

he

nt,

re-

nd

e-9

to

lly.

of

d;

ng

he

 $_{\rm bo}$

to

m

IS

ce

at

er

1-

7

g

e

Soone after, it being plainely discerned on either fide, that the one was; as well contented with thefe walkes, as the other could be : thee defired to inflame him a little farther, by a more liberall illustration of her affection towards him, when time and place afforded convenient opportunity. To the holy Father againe she went, (for shee had beene too long from thrift) and kneeling downe at his feete, intended to begin her confession in teares; which the Friar perceiving, forrowfully demanded of her; what new accident had happened ? Holy Father (quoth the) no novell accident, but onely your wicked and ungracious friend, by whom (fince I was heare with you, yea, no longer agoe than yesterday (I have beene so wronged, as I verily believe that he was borne to be my mortall enemy, and to make me doe fomething to my difgrace for ever; and whereby I shall not dare to be seene any more of you my deare Father. How is this? answered the Frier, hath he not refrained from afflicting you fo abusively ?

Pauling a while, and breathing forth many a differbling fighe, thus the replied. No truely, holy Father, there is no likelihood of his abstaining sfor fince I made my complaint to you, he belike taking it in evill part, to be contraried in his wanton humours, hath (meerely in despight) walked seaven times in a day by my doore, wheras formerly henever used it above once or twice. And well were it (good Father) if he could be contented with those walks, and gazing glances which he dartes at me: but he growes so bold and shamelesse, that even yesterday, (as I told you) hee sent a woman tome, one of his Pandoraes as it appeared, and as if I had wanted either Purses or Girdles, hee sent me by her a Purse and a Girdle. Whereat I grew so grievously offended, as had it not beene for my due respect and feare of God, and next the facred reverence

Novell. 3. The Third Day,

I beare to you my ghostly Father, doubleffe I had done fome wicked deede. Neverthelesse, happily I withstood it, and will neither say or doe any thing in this case, till

firft I have made it knowne to you.

Then I called to minde, that having redelivered the Purse and Girdle to his shee-messenger, which brought them, with lookes sufficient to declare my discontentment : I called her backe againe, fearing least thee would keepe them to her felfe, and make him beleeve that I had received them (as I have heard fuch kinde of women use to doe sometimes:) and in an anger I Inarcht them from her, and have brought them to you, to the end, that you may give him them againe; and tell him, I have no neede of any fuch things, thankes be to heaven and my husband, as no woman can bee better stored than I am. Wherefore good Father, purposely am I now come to you, to let him know, that if he will not abflaine from thus molesting me, I will disclose it to my Husband, Father, and Brethren, whatfoever befall. For I had rather he should receive the injury, than I to be causelesty blamed for him; wherein good Father tell me, if I doe not well. With many counterfeit fobbes, fighes, and teares thefe words were delivered; and drawing forth from under her gowne, a very faire and rich Purle, as also a Girdle of great worth, the threw them into the Friers lappe.

He verily beleeving all these false reports, being troubled in his minde thereat beyond measure, tooke the Gentlewoman by the hand, saying: Daughter, if thou be offended at these impudent follies, assuredly I cannot blame thee, nor will any wiseman reprove thee for it; and I commend thee for following my counsell. But let me alone for schooling my Gentleman, ill hath he kept his promise inade to me; wherefore, in regard of his former offence, as also this other so lately committed, I hope to set him in such a heate, as shall make

him

done

bood

e,till

d the

ught

tent-

thee

ceve

inde

er I

you,

and

nkes

Can

Fa-

now,

c, l

ren,

cive

inn :

Vith

hele

nder

irdle

eing

oke

r, if

ily I

thee

fell.

ath

gard

om-

ake

him

pe.

him leave off from injuring thee. Suffer not thy selfe to be conquered by choller, in disclosing this to thy kindred or husband, because too much harme may ensue thereon. But feare not any wrong to thy selfe; for I am a true witnesse of thy honesse and vertue.

Now began the to be better comforted, and forbearing to play on this string any longer, as well knowing the coverousnesse of him and his equals, shee faid: Holy Father, some few nights past, me thought in my fleepe, that divers spirits of my kindred appeared to me in a vision, who me thought were in very great paines, and defired nothing else but Almes; especially my Godmother, who feemed to be afflicted with fuch extreame poverty, that it was most pittifull to behold. And I am halfe perswaded, thather torments are the greater, feeing mee troubled with fuch an enemy to goodnesse. Wherefore (good Father) to deliver her foule and the others out of those fearefull flames, among your infinite other devoute, prayers, I would have you to fay the forty Masses of S Gregory, as a meanes for their happy deliverance; and fo the put ten ducates into his hand. Which the holy man accepted thankefully, and with good words, as also many fingular examples, confirmed her bountifull devotion; and when he had given her his benediction, home the departed.

After that the Gentlewoman was gone, he fent for his friend whom shee so much seemed to be troubled withall; and when he was come, he beholding his holy Father to looke discontentedly, thought, that now he should heare some newes from his suffresse, and therefore expected what he would say. The Frier, falling into the course of his former reprehensions, but yet in more rough and impatient manner, sharpely checkt him for his immodest behaviour towards the Geatlewoman, in sending her the Putse and Girdle.

The

Novell. ?. The Third Day,

The Gentleman, who as yet could not gueffe whereto his speeches tended, somewhat coldly and temperately, denied the fending of such tokens to her, to the end that he would not be utterly discredited with the good man, it so be the Gentlewoman had showne him any such things. But then the Frier, waxing much more angry, sternely said: Bad man as thou art, how can't thou deny a manifest truth? See fir, these are none of your amorous tokens? No, I am sure you do not know

them, nor ever faw them till now.

The Gentleman, feeming as if he were much afhamed, faid. Truely Father I doc know them, and confetfe that I have done ill, and very greatly of. fended: but now I will sweare unto you, seeing I understand how firmely she is affected, that you shall never here any more complaint of me. Such were his vowes and protestations, as in the end the ghostly Father gave him both the Purse and Girdle : then after he had preached, and severely conjured him, never more to vexe her with any gifts at all, and he binding himselfe thereto by a solemne promise, he gave him license to depart. Now grewthe Gentleman very jocond, being fo furely certified of his Mistreffes love, and by tokens of fuch worthy esteeme; wherefore no fooner was he gone from the Frier, but hee went into fach a secret place, where he could let her behold at her Window, what precious tokens he had received from her, whereof the was extraordinarily joyfull, because her devices grew fill better and better; nothing now wanting, but her husbands absence, upon some journey from the City for the fall effecting of her defire.

Within a few dayes after, such an occasion hapned, as her husband of necessitie must journey to Geneway; and no sooner was he mounted on horsebacke, taking leave of her, and all his friends, but she, being sure he was gone, went with all haste to her Ghossly Father;

reto ate-

end

boo

any

anst

e of

Cha-

on-

of.

ng I

fhall

his

Fa-

after

EVCT

ding

him'

10-

ove,

e no

into

her'

rom

aufe

now

rney

ned,

way;

king

te he

her's

and,

and, after a few faigned outward shewes, thus the spake. I must now plainely tell you, holy Father, that I can no longer endure this wicked friend of yours; but because I promised you the other day, that I would not doe any thing, before I had your counsell therein, I am come now to tell you, the just reason of my anger, and full purpose to avoid all surther molestations.

Your friend I cannot terme him, but (questionlesse) a very divell of hell: this morning, before the breake of day, having heard (but how, I know not) that my husband was ridden to Genemay: got over the wall into my Garden, and climbing up a tree which standeth close before my Chamber window, when I was fast ascepe, opened the Casement, and would have entred in at the window. But, by great good fortune, I awaked, and made thew of an open out-cry; but that he entreated me, both for Gods sake and yours, to pardon him this error, and never after he would prefume any more to offend me. When he faw that (for your fake) I was filent, hee closed fast the window againe, departed as hee came, and fince I never faw him, or heard any tidings of him. Now judge you, holy Father, whether thefe be honest courses, or no, and to be endured by any civill Gentlewoman, neither would I be fo patient, but onely in my dutifull reverence to you.

The Ghostly Father hearing this, became the sortowfullest man in the world, not knowing how to make her an answer, but onely demanded of her divers times, whether she knew him so perfectly, that she did not mistake him for some other? Quoth shee, I would I did not know him from any other. Also deere daughter (replied the Frier) what can more be said in this case, but that it was over-much boldnesse, and verified hone, and thou sheweds thy selfe a worthy wise woman, in sending him away so mercifully, as thou didst. Once more I would intreat thee (deere daughter)

feeing

Novell. 3: The Third Day,

feeing grace hath hitherto keept thee from diffioner, and twice already thou hast credited my counsell, let me now advise thee this last time. Spare speech, or complaining to any other of thy friends, and leave it to me, to try if I can overcome this unchained divell, whom I took to be much a more holy man. If I can recall him from this sensuall appetite, I shall account my labour well employed; but if I cannot doe it, henceforward (with my bleffed benediction) I give thee Lare to doe, even what thy heart will best tutor thee to. You fee Sir (faid she) what manner of man he is, yer would I not have you troubled or disobeyed, onely I defire to live without disturbance, which worke (I befeech you) as best you may : for I promise you, good Father, never to solicite you more upon this occasion: And fo, in a pretended rage, the returned backe from she ghoftly Father.

Scarcely was thee gone forth of the Church, but in commeth the man that had (Supposedly) so much transgreffed; and the Frier taking him afide, gave him the most injurious words that could be used to a man, as, dilloyall, perjured, and a traytor. He who had formerly twice perceived, how high the holy mans anger Thounted, did nothing but expect what he would fay; and, like a man extreamely peoplexed, frove how to get it from him, faying; Holy Father, how come you to be so he inously offended? What have I done to incense you so strangely ? Heare me, duhonest wretch, answered the Frier, listen what I shall say unto thee, Thou answerest me, as if it were a yeare or two past, fince to foule abuses were by thee committed, and they almost quite out of thy remembrance. But tell mee wicked man; where wast thou this morning, before breake of the day? Wherefoever I was, replied the Gentleman, me thinkes the tidings come very quickly to you. It is true faid the Frier, they are speedily come

ar

RIG

Bre

25

(p

in

an

T

lo

in

B

le

Id

to mee indeede, and upon urgent necessity.

110

let

10

03

ell,

e-

my

· 93

100

300

is,

elv

od

n:

m

3,

r-

0

After a little curbing of his wrath, somewhat in a milder fraine, thus he proceeded. Because the Gentlewomans husband is journyed to Geneway, proves this a ladder to your hope, that to embrace her in your armes, you must climbe over the Garden wall, like a treacherous robber in the night feafon, mount up a tree before her Chember window, open the Casement, as hoping to compaffe that by importunity, which her. spotleffe chaftity will never permit. There is nothing in the world, that pollibly the can hate more than you, and yet you will love her whether the will or no. Many demonstrations her felfe hath made to you, how retrograde you are to any good concert of her, and my loving admonishments might have had better successe in you, than as yet they thew of outward apparance. But one thing I must tell you, her silent sufferance of your injuries all this while, hath not beene in any respece or you, but at my earnest entrearies, and for my fake. But now the will be patient no longer, and I have given her free license, if ever hereafter you offer to attempt her any more, to make her complaint before her brethren, which will redound to your no mone danger.

The Gentleman, having wisely collected his Lovelesson out of the Holy Fathers angry words, pacified the good old man so well as hee could, with very solemne promises and protestations, that hee should heare (no more) any misbehaviour of his. And being gone from him, followed the instructions given in her complaint, by climbing over the Garden wall, ascending the Tree, and entring at the Casement, standing ready open to welcome him. Thus the Friers simplicitic, wrought on by her most ingenious subtilitie, made

way to obtaine both their longing defires.

Novell.3: The Third Day,

A young Scholler, named Felice, enstrutted Puccio di Rinieri, how to become rich in a very short time. While Puccio made experience of the instructions taught him; Felice obtained the favour of his daughter.

The fourth Novell.

Wherein is declared, what craft and fubility some wily wits can devise to deceive the simple, to compasse their own desires.

A Fter that Philomena bad finished her Tale, she sate still; and Dioneus (with faire and pleasing longuage) commended the Gentlewomans quaint coming, but smiling at the Consessor witlesse simplicate. Then the Queene, turning with cheerefull lookes towards Pamphilus commanded him to continue on their delight; who gladly yeelded, and thus began. Madam, many men there are, who while they strive to climbe from a good estate, to a seeming better; doe become in much worse condition than they were before. As happed to a neighbour of ours, and no long time since, as the ac-

cident will better acquaint you withall.

According as I have heard it reported, neere to Saint Branca 710, there dweltan honeft man, and fome. what rich, who was called Pucciodi Rinieri, and who addicted all his paines and endeavours to Alchimy : wherefore, he kept no other family, but onely a widdowed daugher, and a servant; and because hee had no other Art or exercise, he used often to frequent the market place. Andin regard he was but a weake witted man, and a gormand or groffe feeder; his language was the more harsh and rude; like to our common Porters or fottish men; and his carriage also absurd, boore-like, and clownish. His daughter, being named Monna Isabetta, aged not above eight and twenty, or thirtie yeares; was a fresh indifferent faire, plumpe, round woman, cheery cheeckt, like a Queene apple; and, and, there ned of thing exto

2 yo

skilf ariti in m (hir he u peci dini and perc bec

goo

of I and felfi wa fup car circ app the

ob an im pli as and, to please her Father, fed not so sparingly, as otherwise the would have done; but when thee communed or jested with any body, thee would ralke of nothing, but only concerning the great vertue in Alchimy,

extolling it above all Arts.

li

Much about this fealon of the yeare, there returned a young Scholler from Paris, named Felice, faire of complexion, comely of person, ingeniously witted, and skilfully learned, who (soone after) grew into familiaritie, with Paccio: now because he could resolve him in many doubts, depending on profession of Alchimy, (himselfe having onely practise, but no great learning) he used many questions to him, shewed him very especiall matters of secrecie, entertaining him often to dinners and suppers, whensoever he pleased to come and converse with him; and his daughter likewise, perceiving with what favour her Father respected him, became the more familiar with him, allowing him

good regard and reverence.

The young man continuing his refort to the house of Puccio, and observing the widdow to be faire, fresh, and prettily formall; hee began to confider with himfelfe what those things could be, wherein she was most wanting; and (if he could) to fave an others labour, supply them by his best endeavors. Thus not alwayes, carrying his eyes before him, but using many back and circumipect regards, he proceeded fo farre in his wily apprehensions, that (by a few sparkes close kept together) he kindled part of the fame fire in her, which began to flame apparantly in him. And he very wittily observing the same, as occasion first smiled on him, and allowed him favourable opportunity, fo did hee impart his intention to her. Now albeit he found her pliant enough, to gaine physicke for her owne griefe, as foone as his; yetche meanes and manner were (as yet) out of all apprehention. For thee in no other

part of the world, would trust her selfe in the young mans company, but onely in her Fathers house; and that was a place out of all possibilitie, because Puccio (by a long continued custome) used to watch well-neare all the night, as commonly he did, each night after other, never stirring forth of the roomes, which much abated the edge of the young mans appetite. After infinite intricate revolvings, wheeling about his busied braine, he thought it not altogether an Herculian taske, to enjoy his happines in the house, and without any suspicion, albeit Puccio kept still within doores, and

watched as he was wont to doe.

Vpon a day at hee fate in familiar conference with Puccio, he began to speake unto him in this manner : I have many times noted, kinde friend Puccio, that all thy defire and endeavour is, by what meanes thou mailt become very rich, wherein (me thinkes) thou takest too wide a course, when there is a much neerer and shorter way, which Mighell Scotus, and other his affociates, very diligently observed and followed, yes were never willing to inftruct other men therein, whereby the mystery might be drowned in oblivion; and profecuted by none, but onely great Lords, that are able to undergoe it. But because thou art mine especially friend, and I have received from thee infinite kinde favours; whereas I never intended, that any man (by me) thould be acquainted with fo rare a fecret ; if thou wilt imitate the course as Ishall shew thee, I purpole to teach it thee in full perfection. Puecio being veric earnestly desirous to understand the speediest way to so fingular a mysterie, first began to intreate him (with no meane instance) to acquaint him with the rules of forich a Science; and afterward sware unto him, never to disclose it to any person, except he gave his confent thereto; affirming befide, that it was a ratitie, not calle to be comprehended by very apprehenlive

hen haf will K that deri how fay tho

> wh ma that for that neft bot nig abi

> > thy fran larg rig aga eve uni upo tru

ref bul ter fuc hentive judgements. Well (quoth Felice) feeing thou haft made me such a found and solemne promise, I

will make it knowne unto thee.

0

¢

4

-

-

d

.

y

d

h

1

u

u

r

2

12

-

n

if

.

y

n

10

0

e

.

e-1e

Know then friend Puccio, the Philosophers doe hold, that fuch as cover to become rich indeede, must understand how to make the Stone : as I will tell thee how, but marke the manner very heedfully, I doe not fay, nor meane, that after the Stone is obtained, thou shalt be even as rich as now thou art; but thon shalt plainely perceive, that the very groffest substances, which hitherto thou haft seene, all of them shalbe made pure gold: and fuch as afterward thou makeft, thall be more certaine, thanto goe or come with Ava fortis, as now they doc. Most expedient is it therefore, that when a man will goe diligently about this busis nesse, and purposeth to prosecute such a singular labour, which will and must continue for the space of 40. nights, he must give very carefull attendance, wholly abstaining from fleepe, flumbring, or so much as nodding all that while.

Morcover, in some apt and convenient place of thy house, there must be a forge or furnace creeted, framed in decent and formall fashion, and necre it a large table placed, ordered in fuch fort, as standing upright on thy feete, and leaning the reines of thy backe against it; thou must stand stedfastly in that manner every night, without the least motion, or stirring untill the breake of day appeareth, and thine eyes still upon the Furnace fixed, to keepe ever in memory, the true order which I have prescribed. So soone as the morning is scene, thou mayest (if thou wilt) walke, or reft a little upon thy bed, and afterward goe about thy bufineffe, if thou have any. Then goe to dinner, attending readily till the evenings approach, preparing fuch things as I will readily fet thee downe in writing, without which there is not any thing to be done; and

then returne to the same taske againe, not varying a jot from the course directed. Before the time be fully expired, thou shalt perceive many apparent signes, that the stone is still in absolute forwardnesse, but it will be utterly lost if thou saile in the least of all the observances. And when the experience hath crowned thy labour, thou art sure to have the Philosophers stone, and thereby shalt be able to enrich all, and works wonders beside.

Puccio instantly replied. Now trust me Sir, there is no great difficulty in this labour, neither doth it require any extraordinary length of time: but it may very eafily be followed and performed, and (by your friendly favor, in helping to direct the Furnace and Table, according as you imagine most convenient) on Sunday at night next, I will begin my taske. The Scholler being gone, he went to his daughter, and told her all the matter, and what he had determined to do: which she immediately understood sufficiently, and what would enfue on his nightly watching in that manner, returning him answer; that whatsoever hee liked and allowed of, it became not her way to millike. Thus they continued in this kinde concordance, till Sunday night came. When Puccio was to begin his experience, and Felice to fet forward upon his adventure. Concluded it was, that every night the Scholler must come to Supper, partly to be a witnesse of his constant performance, but more especially for his own advantage.

The place which Paccio had chosen, for his hopefull attaining to the Philosophers Stone, was close to the Chamber where his daughter lay, having no other separation or division, but an old tottering wall. So that, when the Scholler was playing his prize, Paccio heard an unwonted noise in the house, which he had never observed before, neither knew the wall to have

n

î

ы

te

yo

th

di

W:

Pu

of

be

any fuch motion: wherefore, not daring to flir from his flanding, leaft all should be marrd in the very beginning, hee called to his daughter, demanding what busic labour she was about? The widdow, being much addicted to frumping, according as questions were demanded of her, and (perhaps) forgetting who spake to her, pleafantly replied : Whoop Sir, where are wee now? Are the Spirits of Alchimy walking in the

house, that we cannot lye quietly in our beds?

.

S

ır d

1)

ne Id

0: nd

at

ce

ce.

till

nis

n-

ller

his

vyn

pe-

01 9

ther

So

ccia

had

nave

any

Puccio marvelling at this answer, knowing the never gave him the like before; demanded againe, what the did? The fubtle wench, remembring that the had not answered as became her, faid : Pardon me Father, my wits were not mine owne, when you demanded such a fuddaine question; and I have heard you say an hundred times, that when folke goe supperlesse to bed, either they walk in their fleepes, or being awake, take very idly, as (no doubt) you have difcern'd by me. Nay daughter (quoth he) it may be, that I was in a waking dreame, and thought I heard the old wall totter: but I fee I was deceived, but now it is quiet and ftill enough. Talke no more good Father, faid the, leaft you stirre from your place, and hinder your labour : talke no care for me, I am able enough to have care of my felfe.

To prevent any more of these nightly disturbances, they went to lodge in another part of the house, where they continued out the time of Puccioces paines, with equall contentment to them both, which made her diverstimes fay to Felice : You teach my Father the chiefe grounds of Alchimy, while wee helpe to wafte away his treasure. Thus the Scholler being but poore, yet well forwarded in Learning, made use of Puccioes folly, and found benefit thereby, to keepe out of wants, which is the bane and overthrow of numberleffe good wits. And Puccio dying, before the

date

Nove'l.s. The Third Day,

date of his limited time, because he failed of the Philofophers Stone, Ifabetta joyned in mariage with Felice, to make him amends for instructing her Father, by which meanes he came to be her husband.

Ricciardo surnamed the Magnissco, gave a Horse to Signior Francesco Virgilliti, on condition that he might speake to his wise in his presence; which he did: and she not returning him any answer, made answer to himselfe on her behalfe, and according to his answer, so the effect sollowed.

The fifth Novell.

Wherein is deforthed the frailtie of some wersen, and folly of such husbands, as leave them alone to their owne disposition.

Amphilus having ended his novell of Puecio the Alchimist, the Queene fixing hereye upon Madam Eliza, gave order, that the should succeede. She looking fomewhat more aufterely than any of the reft, not in any spleene, but as it was her usual manner, thus began. The world containeth some particular people, who beleeve (because they know something) that others are ignorant in all things, who for the most part, while they intend to make a scorne of other men, upon triall, finde themselves to carrie away the scorne. Therefore, I account it no meane folly in them, who (upon no occasion) will tempt the power of another mans wit or experience. But because all men and women are not of my opinion; I meane that you shall perceive it more apparantly, by an accident happening to a Knight of Piftoia, as you finall heare by me related.

In the Towne of Pistoia, bordering upon Florence, there lived not long fince, a Knight named Signious Francesco, descended of the linage or family of the Dirgillist, a man very rich, wife, and in many things provident,

rat

bu

and

providents but gripple, covetous, and too close handed, without respect to his worth and reputation. He being called to the Office of Podesta in the City of Millaine, furnished himselfe with all things (in honourable manner) befeeming such a charge; onely, a comely horse for his owne saddle) excepted, which he knew nor by any meanes how to compasse, so loath he was to lay out money, albeit his credit much depended thereon.

At the fame time, there lived in Piftoia likewife, a young man, named Riceiardo, derived of meane birth, but very wealthy, quicke witted, and of commendable person, alwayes going so neate, fine, and formall in his apparrell, that he was generally tearmed the Magnifico, who had long time affected, yea, and closely courted, (though without any advantage or fucceffc) the Lady and wife of Signiour Francesco, who was very beautifull, vertuous, and chafte. It fo chanced, that this Magnifice had the very choisest and goodliest ambling Gelding in all Tuscany, which he loved dearely, for his faire forme, and other good parts. Vpon a flying rumor throughout Pistoia, that hee daily made love to the foresaid Lady, some busie-body put it into the head of Signior France fco, that it he pleased to request the Gelding, the Magnifico would frankely give it him, in regard of the love he bare to his wife.

T

10

er

n

all

ng

d.

ce,

our

the

ngs

The baseminded Knight, covering to have the horse, and yet not to part with any mony, sent for the Magnifeo, defiring to buy his faire Gelding of him, because he hoped to have him of free gift. The Magnifeo hearing of this request, was very joyfull, and thusanswered; Sir, if you would give me all the wealth which you possess in the world, I will not fell you my horse, rather I will bestow him on you as a Gentlemans gift but yet upon this condition, that before you have him delivered, I may with your license, and in your pressence, speake a few words to your vertuous Lady,

Novelis. The Third Day,

and so farre off in distance from you, as I may not be heard by any, but onely her felfe. Signior Francefeo, wholly conducted by his base avaricious defire, and meaning to make a fcorne at the Magnifico, made anfwer, that hee was well contented to let him fpeake with her when he would; and leaving him in the great Hall of the house, went forthwith directly to his wives Chamber, and told her how eafily he might enjoy the horse, commanding her forthwith to come and heare what he could fay to her, onely the should abfraine, and not returne him answer. The Lady with a modest blush, much condemned this folly in him, that his coverous nelle should ferve as a cloke to cover any unfitting speeches, which her chafte eares could never endure to heare. Nevertheleffe being to obey her hufbands wil, the promifed to do it, and followed him down into the Hall, to heare what the Magnifico would fay. Againe, hee there confirmed the bargaine made with her Husband, and fitting downe in corner of the Hall, farre enough off from any ones hearing, taking her courteoutly by the hand, thus he fpeake.

Worthy Lady, it feemeth to me, that you are for truly wife, as no doubt you have long fince perceived, what unfained affection your beauty (farre excelling) hath compelled mee to beare you. Setting afide those commendable qualities and fingular vertues gloriously shining in you, and powerfullenough to make a conquest of the stourest courage: I held it utterly needlesse, to let you understand by words, how faithfull the love is I beare you, were it not much more fervent and constant, than ever any other man can expresse and constant, than ever any other man can expresse a woman. In which condition it shall still continue, without the least blemish or impaire, so long as I enjoy life or motion; yea, and I dare assure you, that is in the sutter world, affection may containe the same

powerfall

Ic

ren

chu

Ala

me

powerfull dominion, as it doth in this, I am the man borne to love you perpetually. Whereby you may reft confidently perfeaded, that you enjoy not any thing, how poore or precious to ever it be, which you can fo folemnely account to be your own, and in the trueft title of right, as you may my felfe, in all that I have, or

for ever shall be mine.

n

y

18

Co

d,

tic

Dy

n-

d-

اله

ent

to

ac.

n-

it if

me

fall

To confirme your opinion in this case by any argument of greater power, let me tell you, that I should repute it as my fairest and most gracious fortune, if you would command mee fome fuch fervice, as confifteth in mine abilitie to performe, and in your courteous favour to accept, yea, if it were to travell thorow the whole world, right willing I am, and obedient. In which regard faire Madam, if I be fo much yours, as you heare I am, I may boldly adventure (and not without good reason) to acquaint your chaste eares with my earnest defires; for on you onely depends my happineffe, life, and absolute comfort, and as your most humble fervant, I beseech you (my dearest good, and fole hope of my foule) that rigour may dwell no longer in your genule breft, but Lady-like pitty and compassion, whereby I shall fay, that as your divine beauty enflamed mine affections, even fo it extended fuch a mercifull qualification, as exceeded all my hope, but not the halfe part of your pitty.

Admir (miracle of Ladies) that I should die in this distresse: Alas, my death would be but your dishonours. I cannot be termed mine owne murtherer, when the Dart came from your owne eye that did it, and mast remaine a withesse of your rigor. You cannot them chuse but call to mind, and say within your own soule: Alas, what a sinne have I committed, in being so unmerciful to my Magnifico. Repétance then serves to no purpose, but you must answer for such unkind crueky. Wherfore, to prevent so black a scandal to your beauty;

0 3

befide.

befide, the ceaselesse acclamations, which will dogge your walkes in the day time, and breake your quiet fleepes in the night featon, with fearefull fights and gaftly apparitions, hovering and haunting about your bed; let all these move you to milde mercy, and

spill not life when you may fave it.

So the Magnifico cealing, with teares streaming from his eyes, and fighes from his heart, he fate fil in expecation of the Ladies answer, who made neither long nor short of the matter, neither Tilts nor Toutneying, nor many loft mornings and evenings, nor infinite other fuch like Offices, which the Magnifico (for her fake) from time, to time had spent in vaine, without the least thew of acceptation, or any hope at all to winne her love: moved now in this very houre, by these solemne protestations, or rather most prevailing affeverations, thee began to finde that in her, which (before) the never felt, namely Love : And although (to keepe her promise made to her husband) shee spake not a word: yet her heart heaving her foule throbbing, fighes intermixidg, and complexion altering, could not hide nor any whit conceale her intended answet to the Magnifico, if promise had been no hinderance to her will-All this while the Magnifico fate as mute as the, and feeing thee would not give him any answer at all, he could not choose but wonder therear, yet at length perceived, that is was thus cunningly contrived by her husband. Notwithstanding, observing well her counrenance, that it was in a quite contrary temper, another kinde of fire sparkling in her eye, other humours flowing, her pulses strongly beating, her stomacke rifing, and fighes (welling; all these were arguments of a change, and motives to advance his hope. Taking courage by this ticklish perswafion ,and instructing his minde with a new kinde of counsell; he would needs answer himselfe on her behalfe, and as if the had intered the words, thushe fpake. Mag -

Magnifico, and my friend, furely it is a long time fince, when I first noted thine affection toward me to be very great and most perfect, but now I am much more certaine thereof, by thine owne honest and gentle speeches, swhich content me as they ought to doe. Nevertheleffe, if heretofore I hvae scemed cruell and unkinde to thee, I would not have thee thinke, that my heart was any way gultie of my outward feveritie, but did evermore love thee, and held thee deerer than any man living. But yet it became me to doe fo, as well in feare of othes, as for the renowne of mine owno repultation. But now is the time at hand, to let thee know more cleerely, whether I doe affect thee or no :as a just guerdon of thy constant love which long thou half a and fill doeff beare to mee. Wherefore comfort thy selfe, and dwell on this undoubted hope, because Sigmour Francesco my husband, is to be absent from hence for many dayes, being chosen Podefta at Miltaine, as thou canft not choose but heare, for it is common through the Countrey.

.

4

r

-

0

h

h

c

d

ct

to

e,

1,

h

er

1-

)-

18

of

ng

ad

I know (for my sake) thou hast given him thy goodly ambling Gelding, and so soone as he is gone, I promise thee upon my word, and by the faithfull love I beare thee; that I will have further conference with thee, and let thee understand somewhar more of my minde. And because this is neither sixing time nor place, rodiscourse on matters of such serious moment: observe hereafter, as a signall, when thou sees my crimson Skarse hanging in the window of my chamber, which is upon the Garden side, that evening (so soone as it is night) come to the Garden sate, with wary respect that no eye doe discover thee, and there thou shalt find me walking, and ready to acquaint thee of other matters, according as I shall find occasion.

When the Magnifico, in the person of the Lady, had spoken thus, then he returned her this answer. Most

vertnous Lady, my spirits are so transported with extraordinary joy, sor this your gracious and welcome answer, that my sences faile me, and all my faculties quite for sake me, that I cannot give you such thanks as I would. And if I could speake equally to my desire, yet the season suites not therwith, neither were it convenient that I should be so troublesome to you. Let me therefore humbly besech you, that the desire I have to accomplish your will (which words availe not to expresse) my remaine in your kinde consideration. And as you have commanded me, so will I not faile to performe it accordingly, and in more thankefull manner, than (as yet) I am able to let you know. Now there resteth nothing else to doe, but under the protection of your gracious pardon, I to give over speech, and you to

attend your worthy husband.

Notwithstanding all that he had spoken, yet she replied not one word; wherefore the Magnifico arole and returned to the Knight, who went to meete him, faying in a loud laughter. How now man? Have I not kept my promise with thee ? No Sir, answered the Magnifico, for you promised I should speake with your wife, and you have made me talke to a marble Statue. This answer was greatly pleasing to the Knight, who although he had an undoubted opinion of his wife; yet this did strengthen his belcefe, and he faid. Now thou confesses thy Gelding to be mine? I doe, replied the Magnifico, but if I had thought, that no better successe would have enfued on the bargaine, without your motion for the horse, I would have given him you : and I am forry that I did not, because now you have bought my horse, and yet I have not sold him. The Knight laughed heartily at this answer, and being thus provided of fo faire a beaft he rode on his journey to Millane, and there entred into his authoritie of Podelta.

The Lady remained now in liberty at home, con-

fidering on the Magnificoes words, and likewife the Gelding, which (for her fake) was given to her hufband. Oftentimes the faw him paffe too and fro before her window, still looking when the Flagge of defiance should be hanged forth, that he might light valiantly under her Colours. The Story faith, that among many of her much better meditations, the was heard to talke thus idly to her felf. What doe I meane? Wherefore is my youth ? The old miserable man is gone to Millaine, and God knoweth when he comes backe againe, ever, or never. Is dignitic preferred before wedlockes holy duty, and pleasures abroad, more than comforts at home? Ill can age pay youths arrerages, when time is fpent, and no hope fparde, Actions omitted, are oftentimes repented, but done in due fealon , they are fildome forrowed for. Vpon these un-Ladylike private confultations, whether the window flewed the fignall or no, it is no matter belonging to my charge: I fay, hosbands are unwife, to grant fuch ill advantages, and wives much worfe, if they take hold of them, only judge you the best, and so the Tale is ended

Ricciardo Minutolo loved the Wife of Philippello Fighinolfi, and knowing ber to be very lealous of ber Husband, gave her to understand, that he was greatly enamored of his wife, and bad appointed to weete ber privately in a Bathing house, on the next day following: where shee boping to take him tardie with his elose compasted Mistresse, sound her selfe to be deceived by the said Ricciardo.

The fixth Nove 1.

Declaring, how much perseverance, and a contagiona spirit is availeable in love.

NO more remained to be spoken by Madam Eliza, but the cunning of the Magnifico, much comended

By all the company : the Queene commanded Madam Frammetta, to fucceede next in order with one of her Novels, who (smiling) made answer that shee would, and began thus. Gracious Ladies, me thinkes we have fooken enough already concerning our owne Citie, which as it aboundeth copiously in all commodities, foit is an example also to every convenient purpose-And as Madam Eliza hath done, by recounting occafions happening in another World, so must we now leape a little further off even fo farre as Naples, to fee how one of those Saint-like Dames that nicely seemes to thun loves allurings, was guided by the good fpirit to a friend of hers, and tafted of the fruit, before thee knew the flowers. A fufficient warning for you to apprehend before hand what may follow after, and to let you fee beside, that when an error is committed, how to be discreete in keeping it from publike shame.

In the Citie of Naples, it being of great antiquitie, and (perhaps) as pleafantly fituated, as any other Cirie in all Italy, there dwelt fometime a young Gentleman, of noble parentage, and well knowne to be wealthy, named Ricciardo Minutolo, who (although he had a Gentlewoman of excellent beauty, and worthy the very kindest affecting, to his wife ; yet his gadding eye gazing elsewhere, and he became enamored of another, which (in generall opinion) furpaffed all the Neapolitane women elfe, in feature, favour, and the choilest perfections, the being named Madam Caculla wife to as gallant a young Gentleman , called Philippetto Fighinotfi, whom most dearely hee loved beyond all other, for her rare vertie and admired

chastitie.

Ricciardo loving this Madam Catulta and using all fuch meanes whereby the grace and liking of a Lady might be obtained found it yet a matter beyond possibhiry, to compatte the height of his defire: fo that many

desperate

desperare and dangerous resolutions beleageed his braint, feeming to intricate and unfiledy to afford any hopefull iffue, as he wifed for nothing more than death. And death (asyet) being deafe to all his earnest imprecations, delayed him on in lingering afflictions : and continuing full in fix han extreasic condition, he was adviced by fome of his best friends; unterly to ab-Staine from this fond purlaite, because his hopes were meerely in vaine, and Madam Carulla prized nothing more precious to her in the world, than unftained loyaffie to her husband; and yet the lived in fuch ex- . treame jealeufie of him; as fearing leaft fome bird flying in the arre fould match him from her.

Ricciardo not unacquainted with this her jealous humour, as well by credible hearing thereof, as also by daily observation, began to consider with himselfe, that it were best for him, to diffemble amorons affection in fome other place, and (henceforward) to fee afide all hope, of ever enjoying the love of Madam Caratta. because he was become the fervant of another Gentlewoman, pretending to perform many worthy afti-ons of Armes, louftes, Tournaments, and all little like noble exercises, as he was wont to doe for Madam canilla. So that most of the people of Naples, but especially Midam Catulla, became verily perswaded, that his former fruite felle love to her was quite changed, and the new cleffed Lady had all the glory of his. best endeavours, persevering so long in this opinion. as now it paffed absolutely for current. Thus feemed he now as meere a franger to her, whose house before he familiarly frequenced, yet as a neighbour gave her the dales fald atrons according as he elitriced to fee her. or nict her.

It tame to to palle, that it being now the delightful! Summer feafon, when all Gentlemen and Gentlewomen vied to meete together (according to a custome

long observed in that Country) sporting along on the Sea Goals, dining, and supping there very often, Risciordo Minutolo happened to heare, that Madam Gatulla (with a company of her friends) intended also to be present there among them; at which time, consorted with a seemely traine of his confederates, he resorted thither, and was graciously welcommed by Madam Catulla, where he pretended no willing long time of tarrying, but that Catulla and the other Ladies were faine to entreate him, discoursing of his love to his new elected Mistresse: which Minutolo graced with so solve the counternance, as it ministred much more matter of observere, all covering to know what she was.

So farre they walked, and held on this kinde of difcourfing, as every Lady and Gentlewoman, waxing weary of too long a continued argument, began to feparate her felfe with fuch an affociate as the best liked, and as in such walking women are wont to do; so that Madam Catulle having few females left with her-Rayedbehind with Minutolo, who lodainely thor forth. a word concerning her husband Philipello, and of his loving another woman befide her felfe. She that was overmuch jealous before, became so sodainely ser on. fire to know what the was, of whom Minutelo Spake. as the fate filent a long while, till being able to continue no longer, thee entreated Receivedo even for the Ladies fake, whole love he had so devoutely embraced, to refulve her certainly in this ft; ange alteration of her husband; whereunto thus he answered.

Madam, you have so straightly conjured mee, by urging the remembrance of her, for whose lake I am not able to deny any thing you can demand, as I am ready therin to pleasure you. But first you must promise me, that neither you, or any other person for you shall at any time disclose it to your husband, untill you have seene by essea, that which I have told you pro-

vcth

tri

the

Upi

tro

pre

tun

veth to be true: and when you pleafe, I will infirmed you how your felfe shall see it. The Lady was not a little joyfull to be thus satisfied in her Husband folly, and constantly crediting his words to be true, she sware a solemne oath, that no one alive should ever know it. So depping a little further aside, because no listening

care fould heare him, thus he began.

Lady, if I did love you now to effectually as heeretofore I have done, I should be very circumsped, in untering any thing which I imagined might distast you. I know not whether your husband Philippello, were at any time oftended, because I affected you, or beleeved that I received any kindnesse of you: but whether it were fo or no. I could never diferne it by any outward apparance. But now awaiting for the opportunity of time, which he conceived should affoord mee the least suspition, he seekes to compasse that, which (I doubt) he feares I would have done to him, in plaine tearmes Madam, to have his pleasure of my wife. And as by some carriages I have observed , within few dayes past he hath solicited and pursued his purpole very fecretly, by many Ambaffages, and meanes as (indeed) I have learned from her felfe, and alwayes the harh returned in fuch answers, as the received by my direction.

And no longer agoe Madam, than this very morning, before my comming hither, I found a woman medenger in my house, in very close conference with my wife, when growing doubtfull of that which was true indeed, I called my Wife, enquiring, what the woman would have with her; and the told me, it was another pursuite of Philippello Fighinols, who (quoth the) upon such answers as you have caused me to send him from time to time, perhaps doth gather some hope of prevailing in the end, which makes him still to importune me as he doth. And now he adventure the farre.

a c

dered his complot, that when I please. I must meete him fecretly in a house of this City, where he hint prepared a Bath ready for me, and hopeth to enjoy the end of his defire, as very earnessly he hath folicited me thereto. But if you had not commanded me, to hold him in suspense with so many frivolous answers, I thouse ere this, have fent him such a message, as should ere this, have fent him such a message, as should

have beene little to his liking.

With patience Madam I endured all before, but now (me thinkes) he proceedeth too farre, which is not arry way to be fuffered; and therefore! intended to let you know it, that you may perceive, how well you are rewarded for the faithfull and loyall love you beare him and for which; I was even at deathes doore. Now, because you may be the surer of my speeches, not to bee any lyes or fables, and that you may (if you please) approve the truth by your owne experience, I caitled my wife to fend him word, that 'the would meete him to morrow at the Bathing-house appointed, about the houre of noone-day, when people repote themselves in regard of the heates violence; with which answere the woman returned very jocondly. Let me now rell you Lady, I hope you have better opinion of my wit, than any meaning in me, to fend my wife thither, I father did it to this end, that having actinainted you with this trecherous intent, you hould lupply my wives place, faving both his reputation and your owne, and frustrating his unkinde purpose to me. Moteover, tipon the view of his ownedelufion, wrought by my wife in meere love to you, he shall see his foule shame and your most noble care, to keepe the rites of marriage betweene you fill unstained.

Madain Catul'a, having heard this long and unpleafing report, without any confideration, either what le was that told the tale; or what a treason hee intended

againft

h

fu

dz

le:

din

So!

CAL

[cv

hes

dit

her

against her : immediately (as jealous persons useto doe) the gave faith to historgerie, and began to difcourse many things to him, which imagination had often mifguided her in, againft her honeft minded hufband, and inflamed with rage, fuddenly replyed; that the would doe according as he had advised her, as being a matter of no difficulty: But if he came, the would so shaine and dishonour him, as no woman whatfoever should better schoole him. Riectardo highly pleased therewith, and being perswaded, that his purpose would take the full effect : confirmed the Lady in her determination with many words more; yet putting her in memory, to keepe and truely performe her faithfull promise made, without revealing the matter to any living person; as she had sworne upon her faith.

On the morrow mornig, Ricciardo went to an ancient woman of his acquaintance, who was the Mifireffe of a Bathing-house, and there where he had appointed Madam Catulla, that the Bath fhould be prepared for her, giving her to understand the whole bufineffe, and defiring her to be favourable therein to him. The woman, who had beene much beholding to him in other matters, promifed very willingly to fulfill his request, concluding with him, both what should be done and fayd. She had in her house a very darke Chamber, without any window to affoord it the least light, which Chamber the had made ready, according to Ricciardoes direction, with a rich Bed therein, fo foft and delicate as poffible could bee, wherein hee entred fo foone as hee had dined, to attend the arrivall of Madam Cainlla. On the fame day, as thee had heard the speeches of Ricciardo, and gave more credit to them than became her, flee returned home to her house in wonderfull imparience. And Philippello her husband came home discontentedly too, whose

u

in

er

c,

u-

on

in

nr

é-

ea-

10

led nft head being busied about some worldly affaires, perhaps he looked not so pleasantly, neither used her so kindly, as he was wont to doe. Which Catulla perceiving, she was ten times more suspicious than before, saying to her selfe. Now apparant truth doth disclose it selfe, my husbands head is troubled now with nothing else, but Ricciardoes wife, with whom (to morrow) he purposeth his meeting; wherein he shall be disappointed, it live; taking no restratall the whole night, for thinking how to handle her husband.

What shall I say more? On the morrow, at the houre of mid-day accompanied onely with her Chamber-mayde, and without any other alteration in opinion; she went to the house where the Bath was promifed, and meeting there with the old woman, demanded of her, if Philippello were come thither as yet or no? The woman, being well instructed by Ricciardo, answered: Are you she that should meete him herre? Yes, replyed Catulla. Goe in then to him (quoth the

woman) for he is not farre off before you.

Madam Carulla, who went to feeke that which sheewould not finde, being brought vailed into the darke Chamber where Ricciardo-was, entred into the Bath, hoping to finde none other there but her husband, and the custome of the Country, never disallowed such meetings of men with their wives, but held them to be good and commendable. In a counterfeite voyce he bad her welcome, and she, not seeming to be any other then she was indeed, entertained his embrasings in as loving manner; yet not daring to speake, least he should know her, but suffered him to proceede in his owne errour.

Let paffe the wanton follies paffing betweene them, and come to Madam Catulla, who finding it a fit and convenient time to vent forth the tempest of her spleene, began in this manner. Alas! how mighty

21

on

COI

W

ma

the

tho

fed

emi

are the misfortunes of women, and how ill requited is all the loyall love of many wives to their husbands? I, a poore miserable Lady, who, for the space of eight yeeres now fully compleated, have loved thee more deerely than mine owne life, finde now (to my hearts endleffe griefe) how thou wafteft and confumeft thy defires, to delight them with a ffrange woman, like a most vile aud wicked man as thou art. With whom doest thou now imagine thy selfe to bee? Thou art with her, whom thou hast long time deluded by falle blandishments, feigning to affect her, when thou doatest in thy defires elle-where. I am thine owne Catulla, and not the wife of Ricciardo, trayterous and unfaithfull man, as thou art. I am fure thou knoweft my voyce, and I thinke it a thousand yeeres, untill we may fee each other in the light, to doe thee fuch dishonour as thou justly deservest, thou dogged, disdainfull, and villanous wretch. By conceiving to have another woman in thy wanton embraces, thou haft declared more joyiall disposition, and demonstrations of farre greater kindnesse, than domesticke familiarity. At home thou lookest sowre, sullen or surly, often froward, and seldome well pleased. But the best is, whereas thou intendeft this husbandric for another mans ground, thou haft (against thy will) bestowed it on thine owne, and the water hath runne a contrary courle, quite from the current where thou meantfit.

What answere caust thou make, diveil, and no man? What, have my words smitten thee dumbe? Thou mayest (with shame enough) hold thy peace, for with the face of a man, and love of an husband to his wife,

thou art not able to make any answere-

Ricciardo durst not speake one word, but still-expressed astable behaviour towards her, bestowing infinite embraces and kisses on her: which so much the more augmented her rage and anger, continuing on her

Novell. 6. The Third Day,

her chiding thus. If by these flatteries and idle folsies, thou hopest to comfort or pacific mee, thou runnest quite by as from thy reckoning, for I shall never imagine my selfe halfe fatissied, untill in the presence of my parents, friends, and neighbours, I have revealed thy base behaviour. Tell me, treacherous man, am not I as faire, as the wise of Ricciardo? Am I not as good a Gentlewomanborne, as shee is? What canst a nou more respect in her, than is in me? Villaine, monster, why does thou not answere mee? I will send to Ricciardo, who loveth me beyond all other women in Naples, and yet could never vaunt, that I gave him so much as a friendly looke: he shall know what a dishenour thou hast intended towards him; which both he

and his friends will revenge foundly upon thee.

The exclamations of the Lady were fo irkesome, that Ricciardo perceiving, if the continued longer in these complaints, worse would ensue thereon, than could be eafily remedied: refolved to make himfelfe knowne unto her, to reclaime her out of this violent extafie, and holding her somewhat firially, to prevent her escaping from him, he sayd. Madam, afflict your felfe no further, for, what I could not obtaine by fimply loving you, subtilty hath better taught me, and I am your Ricciardo: which the hearing, and perfectly knowing him by his voyce; the would have leapt out of the Bath, but the could not: and to avoyde her crying out, he layde his hand on her mouth, faying. Lady, what is done, cannot now be undone, albeit you cryed out all your life time. If you exclaime, or make this knowne openly by any meanes; two unavoydable dangers must needes ensue thereon. The one (which you ought more carefully to respect) is the wounding of your good renowne and honour because, when you shall fay, that by trecherie I drew you hither? I will boldly maintaine the contrary, avouching that having

ft

i-

2-

m

as

n-

in

(e

be

e,

in an

lte

nt

nt

our

n-

ry-

a-

ke

la-

ne

the

ne,

er:

ing

having corrupted you with gold, and not giving you fo much as coveroully you defired; you grew offended, and thereon made the out-cry: and you are not to learne, that the world is more eafily induced to beleeve the worst, than any goodnesse, be it never so manifest. Next unto this, mortall hatred must arise betweene your husband and me, and (perhaps) I shall as soone kill him, as he me; whereby he can hardly live in any true contentment after. Wherefore, joy of my life, doe not in one moment, both shame your selfe, and cause such perill betweene your husband and me : for you are not the first, neither can be the laft, that shall be deceived. I have not beguiled you, to take any honeur from you, but onely declared the faithfull affe-Rion I beare you, and so shall doe for ever, as being your bounden and most obedient servant; and as it is a long time agoe, fince I dedicated my felfe and all mine to your fervice, so hence-forth must I remaine for ever. You are wife enough (I know) in all other things; then thew your felfe not to be filly or fimple in this.

Ricciardo uttered thefe words, teares freaming aboundarly downe his cheekes, and Madam Catulla (all the while) likewise showred forth her forrowes equally to his: now, although the was exceedingly troubled in mind, and faw what her owne jealous folly had now brought her to, a shame beyond all other whatsoever: in the middeft of her tormenting passions, shee confidered on the words of Ricciardo, found good reason in them, in regard of the unavoydable evils, whereupon the thus spake. Ricciardo, I know not how to beare the horrible injurie, and notorious treafon used by thee against me, grace and goodnesse having so forsaken me, tolet me fall in so foule a manner. Nor becommeth it me, to make any noyle or out-cry heere, whereto simplicity, or rather divillish Jealouse, did conduct

Novell. 7: The Third Day,

conduct me. But certaine I am of one thing, that I thall never fee any one joyfull day, till (by one meanes or other) I be revenged on thee. Thou haft glutted thy defire with my diffrace; let me therefore goe from thee, never more to looke upon my wronged husband, nor let any honest woman ever fee my face.

1

re

lo

fue

to

fp

Ricciardo perceiving the extremity of her perplexed minde, used all manly and milde perswasions, which possibly he could devise to doe, to turne the torrent of this high tide, to a calmer course; as by outward show the made appearance of, untill (in frightfull feares shunning everyone she met withall, as arguments of her guiltinesse) the recovered her owne house, where remote so tortured her distressed outle, that shee fell into so fierce a melancholy, as never left her till shee dyed. Vpon the report whereof, Ricciardo becomming likewise a widdower, and greeving extraordinarily for his haynous transgression, penitently betooke himselfe to live in a wildernesse, where (not long after) he ended his dayes.

Theobaldo Elisei, having received an unkindere pulse by his beloved, departed from Florence, and returning thisher (a long while after) in the habite of a Pilgrime; he spake with her, and made his wrongs knowne unto her. He delivered her Father from the danger of death, because it was proved, that he had staine Theobaldo: he made peace with his brethren, and in the end, wisely enjoyed his hearts de sine.

The feaventh Novell.

Wherein is figuified the power of Love, and the diverfity of dangers, whereinto men may dayly fall.

SO ceased Fiametta her discourse being generally commended, when the Queene, to prevent the losse of time, commanded Amilia to follow next, who thus

thus began. It liketh me best (gracious Ladyes) to returne home againe to our owne City, which it pleafed the former two discourses to part from: And there I will shew you, how a Citizen of ours, recovered the kindnesse of his Love, after hee had lost it.

Sometime there dwelt in Florence a young Gentleman, named Theobaldo Etifei, descended of a noble House, who became earnestly enamoured of a Widdow, called Hermelina, the daughter to Aldobrandino Palermini, well deferving, for his vertues and commendable qualities, to en joy of her whatfoever he could defire. Secretly they were espoused together, but Fortune, the enemy to Lovers felicities, opposed her malice against them, in depriving Theobaldo of those decre delights, which sometime he held in free possession, and making him as a stranger to her gracious favours. Now grew the contemptibly to despite him, not onely denying to heare any message fent from him, but fcorning also to youchfafe so much as a fight of him, causing in him extreame griefe and melancholy, yet concealing all her unkindnesse so wisely to himfelfe, as no one could understand the reason of his sadneffe.

After he had laboured by all hopefull courses, to obtaine that favour of her, which he had formerly loft, without any offence in him, as his innocent soule truely witnessed with him, and saw that all his further endeavours were fruitlessed and in vaine; he concluded to retreate himselfee from the World, and not to bee any longer irkesome in her eye, that was the onely occasion of his unhappinesse. Heereupon, storing himselfe with such summes of money, as suddenly he could collect together, secreely he departed from Florence, without speaking any word to his friends or kindred; except one kind companion of his, whom he acquainted with most

of his secrets, and so travelled to Ancona, where hee termed himselfe by the name of Sandolosio. Repairing to a wealthy Merchant there, he placed himselfe as his servant, and went in a Ship of his with him to Cyprus; his actions and behaviour proved so pleasing to the Merchant, as not onely he allowed him very sufficient wages, but also grew into such association with him; as he gave the most of his affaires into his hands, which he guided with such honest and discreete care, that himselfe (in few yeeres compatte) proved to

be a rich Merchant and of famous report.

While matters went on this successefull manner; although he could not chuse, but still he remembred his cruell Mistresse, and was very desperately transported for her love, as coveting (above all things elfe) to fee her once more; yet was he of fuch powerfull constancie, as 7. whole yeeres together, hee vanquished all those fierce conflicts. But on a day it chanced he heard a long lung in Cyprus which he himselfe had formerly made, in honour of the love he bare to his Miftrelle, and what delight he conceived, by being dayly in her presence; whereby he gathered, that it was impossible for him to forget her, and proceeded on fo defiror fly, as he could not live, except he had a fight of her once more, and therefore determined on his returne to Florence. Having fet all his affaires in due order, taking one of his fervants, he passed to Aucona, where when he was arrived, he tent his Merchandifes to Florence, in name of the Merchant of Ancona, who was his especiall friend and partner; travayling himfelfe alone with his fervant in the habite of a Pilgrime, as if he had beene newly turned from Icru falem.

10

tl

m

go

in

cd

ma

wh

the

COL

Being come to Florence, he went to an Inne kept by two brethren, neere neighbours to the dwelling of his Miftresse, and the first thing he did, was passing by her doore, to get a sight of her if her were so happy. But he found the windowes, doores and all the parts of the house fast flut up, whereby he suspected her to be dead, or elfe to be changed from her dwelling: wherefore (much perplexed in minde)he went on to the two brothers Inne, finding foure persons standing at the gate, attired in mourning, whereat he mervelled not a little; knowing himselfe to be so transfigured, both in body and habite, farre from the manner of common use of his parting thence, as it was a difficult matter to know him : he stept boldly to a Shoot-makes shop neere adjoyning, and demanded the reason of their wearing mourning. The Shoue-maker made answere thus; Sir, those men are clad in mourning, because a brother of theirs, being named Theobaldo (who hath beene ablent hence a long while) about some fifteene dayes fince was flaine. And they having heard, by proofe made in the Court of Iustice, that one Aldobrandino Palermini (who is kept close prisoner) was the murtherer of him, ashe came in a disguised habite to his daughter, of whom he was most affectionately enamoured; cannot chuse, but let the World know by their outward habits, the inward affliction of their hearts, for a deede fo dishonourably committed.

11

ly

e,

cr

ole

ly,

ice

:lo-

one

V25

me

end

wly

t by

his

her

But

Theobaldo wondered greatly hereat, imagining, that fome man belike refembling him in thape, might bee flaine in this manner, and by Aldobrandino, for whose misfortune he grieved marvellously. As concerning his mistresse, he understood that she was living, and in good health; and night drawing on apace, hee went to his lodging, with an infinite number of molestations in his minde, where after supper, hee was lodged in a Corne-lose with his man. Now by reason of many disturbing imaginations, which incessantly wheelest about his braine, his bed also being none of the best, and his supper (perhaps) somewhat of the coursest, a great part of the night was spent, yet could

he not close his eyes together. But lying fill broade awake, about the dead time of night, hee heard the treading of divers persons over his head, who descended down a paire of stayres by his Chamber, into the lower parts of the house, carrying a light with them, which he discerned by the chinkes and crannics in the wall, Stepping fofely out of his bed, to fee what the meaning hereof might be, he espied a faire young woman, who carried a light in her hand, and three men in her company, descending downe the stayres together, one of them speaking thus to the young woman. Now we may boldly warrant our fafety, because wee have heard it afforedly, that the death of Theobaldo Elifei, hath beene sufficiently approved by the brethren, against Aldobrandino Palermini, and he hash confessed the fact; whereupon the sentence is already for downe in writing. But yet it behooveth us notwithstanding, to conceale it very secretly, because if ever hereaster it should be known, that we are they who murthered him, we should be in the same danger, as now Aldobrandino is

When Theobaldo had heard these words, he began to confider with himselfe, how many and great the dangers are, wherewith mens minds may dayly be molefled. First, he thought on his owne brethren in their forrow, who buried a stranger insteed of him, accusing afterward (by falle opinion, and upon the testimony of as falle witnesses) a man most innocent, making him ready for the stroke of death. Next, hee made a ftrict observation in his foule, concerning the blinded severity of Law, and the Ministers thereto belonging, who pretending a diligent and carefull inquifition for eruth, doe oftentimes(by their tortures and torments) heare Ives avouched (onely for eale of paine) in the place of a true confession, yet thinking themselves (by doing fo) to be the Ministers of God and Justice, whereas indeed they are the Divels executioners of

his

n

h

kn M

an

he

de

fhe riv

my

to t

hin

fhe

him

enti

deli

pee

appe

up N

١,

2

5.

n,

ed

ne

g,

m,

0 15

10

an-

ole-

heir ling

ony

king

ide a

nded

ging,

n for

ints)

s (by

frice, ers of

his

tively

his wickednesse. Lastly, converting his thoughts to Aldobrandino, the imagined murtherer of a man yet living, infinite cares beleagured his soule, in devising what might best be done for his deliverance.

So foone as he was rifen in the morning, leaving his fervant behind him at his lodging, he went (when he thought it fit time all alone toward the house of his Mistreffe, where finding by good fortune the gate open he entred into a small Parlour beneath, and where he faw his Mistreffe fitting on the ground, wringing her hands, and wofully weeping, which (in meere compaffion)moved him to weepe likewife; and going fomewhat neere her, he fayd. Madam, torment your felfe no more, for your peace is not farre off from you. The Gentlewoman hearing him fay fo, lifted up her head, and in teares spake thus. Good man, thou seemest to me to be a Pilgrime stranger; what doest thou know, either concerning my peace, or mine affliction? Madam (replied the Pilgrime) I am of Constantinople, and (doubtleffe) am conducted hither by the hand of heaven; to convert your teares into rejoycing, and to deliver your Father from death. How is this? answered the : If thou be of Constantinople, and art but now arrived here; doch thou know who we are, either I, or my Father?

The Pilgrime discovered to her, even from one end to the other, the history of her husbands sad disasters, telling her, how many yeeres since she was espouled to him, and many other important matters, which well she knew, and was greatly amazed thereat, thinking him verily to be a Prophet, and kneeling at his seete, entreated him very earnessly, that if he were come to deliver her Father Aldobrandino from death, to doe at speedily, because the time was very short. The Pilgrime appearing to be a man of great holinesses, sayd. Rife and Madam, restaine from weeping, and observe atten-

Novell.7. The Third Day,

tively what I shall say; yet with this caution, that you never reveale it to any person whatsover. This tribulation whereinto you are falne, (as by revelation I am faithfully informed) is for a grievous finne by you heretofore committed, whereof divine mercy is willing to purge you, and to make a perfest amends by a fenfible feeling of this affliction; as feeking your found and absolute recovery, least you fall into tarre greater danger than before. Good man (quoth the) I am burthened with many finnes, and doe not know for which any amends should be made by me; any one sooner then other: wherefore if you have intelligence thereof for charities fake tell it me, and I will doe fo much as lyeth in me, to make a full fatisfaction for it. Madam, answered the Pilgrime; I know well enough what it is and will demand it no more of you, to winne any further knowledge thereof, than I have already: but because in revealing it your selfe, it may touch you with the more true compunction of foule; let us goe to the point indeed, and tell me, doe you remember, that at any sime you were married to an Husband, or no?

At the hearing of these words, she breathed forths very vehement sigh, and was stricken with admiration at this question, believing that not any one had knowledge thereof. Howbeit, since the day of the supposed Theobaldaes buriall, such rumour run abroad, by meaner of such speeches, rashly dispersed by a friend of Theobaldaes, who (indeed) knew it; whereupon she returned this answere. It appeareth to mee (good man) that divine ordination hath revealed unto you all the secrets of men; and therefore I am determined, not to conceale any of mine from you. True it is, that in my younger yeeres, being left a widdow, I entirely affected a young Gentleman, who (in secret) was my husband, and whose death is imposed on my Father. The death of him I have the more bemoa-

ned,

ned, because (in reason) it did neerely concerne me, by shewing my selfe so savage and rigorous to him before his departure: neverthelesse, let me assure you Sir, that neither his parting, long absence from me, or his untimely death, never had the power to bereave

my heart of his remembrance.

u

I

u

1-

1 2

nd

ter

at -

ich

ıcr

rc-

ach

m,

t is

fur-

be-

vith

the

at at

rth 2

ation

now.

poled

eanes

These

retur-

man)

ou all

nined,

it is,

len-

ecret)

on my

emoa-

ned,

Madam, fayd the Pilgrime, the unfortunate young Gentleman that is flaine, did never love you; but fure I am, that Theobaldo Elifei loved you deerely. But tell me, what was the occasion whereby you conceived such hatred against him? Did he at any time offend you? No trucky Sir, quoth she, but the reason of my anger towards him, was by the words and threatnings of a religious Fathersto whom once I revealed (under confession) how faithfully I affected him, and what private familiarity had passed betweene us. When instantly he used such dreadfull threatnings to me, and which (even yet) doe affisie my soule, that if I did not abstaine, and utterly refuse him, the Divell would setch me quicke to Hell, and cast me into the bottome of his quenchlesse and everlasting fire.

These menaces were so prevailing with me, as I resused all further conversation with Theobaldo, in which regard I would receive neither letters nor messages from him. Howbeit, I am perswaded, that if he had continued here still, and not departed hence in such desperate manner as hee did, seeing him melt and consume dayly away, even as Snow by power of the Sunne-beames: my austere deliberation had beene long agoe quite altered, because not at any time (since then) life hath allowed me one merry day, neither did

I, or ever can love any man like uncohim.

At these words the Pilgrime sighed, and then proceeded on againe thus. Surely Madam, this one onely sinne, may justly torment you, because I know for a certainty, that Theobaldo never offered you any inju-

P 2

Nove'l.7. The Third Day,

ry, fince the day he first became enamoured of you; and what grace or favour you afforded him, was your owne voluntary gift, and (as he tooke it) no more than in modesty might well become you; for he leving you first, you had beene most cruell and unkinde, if you should not have requited him with the like affection-If then he continued to just and loyall to you, as (of mine owne knowledge) I am able to fay he did; what should move you to repulse him so rudely & Such matters ought well to be confidered on before hand; for if you did imagine, that you should repent it as an action ill done, yet you could not doe jo, because as hee became yours, to were you'likewife only his; and he being yours, you may dispose of him at your pleasure, as being truely obliged to none buryou. How could you then withdraw your felfe from him, boing onely his, and not commit most manifest theft, a farre unfitting thing for you to doe, except you had gone with his confent?

Now Madam, letome further give you to understand, that I am a religious porton, and a pilgrime, and therefore am well acquainted with all the courles of their dealing; if therefore I freake fomewhat more amply of them, and for your good, it cannot bee fo unfreming for me to doe it, as it would appeare ugly in another. In which respect, I will speake the more freely to you, to the end, that you may take better knowledge of them, than (as it feemeth) hicherto you have done. In former paffed times fuch as professed Religion, were learned and most holy persons; but our religious profesiours now adayes, and such as cover to be fo effeemed, thave no matter at all of religion in them, but onely the outward fnew and habite. Which yet is no true badge of Religion neither, because it was ordained by religious institutions, that their garments should be made of narrow, plaine, and courfest spun cloth, to make a publike manifestation to the world, that in meeredevotion

and

u

IC

18

u

ill

10

89

C-

h-

ot

or

id.

rc-

cir

of

ing

In

m,

ner

ned

ours

ave

e of

1005

e ot

pub-

tion

and

and religious disposition) by wrapping their bodyes in such base clothing, they condemned and despited all temporal occasions. But nowndayes they make them large, deepe, glistering, and of the finest cloth or stuffes to be gotten, reducing those habitesto fo proud and pontificall a forme, that they walke Peacocke-like, ruftling, and strouting with them in the Churches; yea, and in open publike places, as if they were ordinary fecular persons, to have their pride more notorioully observed. And as the Angler bestoweth his best cunning, with one line and baice to catch many fiftes at one ftrike; even fo doe thefe counterfeite habit-mongers, by their diffembling and crafty dealing, beguile many credulous widdowes, simple women, yea, and men of weake capacity, to credit whatfoever they shall either doe or fay, and heerein they doe most of all excercise themselves.

And to the end, that my speeches may not savour of any untruth against them; these men which I speake of, have not any habite at all of religious men, but only the colour of their garments; and whereas they in times paft, defired nothing more than the falvation of mens foules; thefe freiher witted fellowes, cover after women and wealth, and employ al their paines by their whilpering confessions, and figures of painted fearefull examples, to affright and terrific unfetled and weake confciences, by horrible and blasphemous speeches; yet adding perswasion withall, that their sinnes may bee purged by Almef-deedes and Masses. To the end, that fuch as credit them in these their dayly. courses, being guided more by apparence of devotion, than any true compunction of heart, to escape fevere penances by them enjoyned : may fome of them bring bread, wine, & others coyne, al of them matter of commoditie and benefit, and simply fay, these gifts are for the

the foules of their good friends deceafed.

I make not any doubt, but almef-deedes and prayers, are very mighty, and prevailing meanes, to appeafe heavens anger for fome finnes committed; but affuch as bestow them, did either fee or know, to whom they give them; they would more warily keepe them, or elfe caft them before Swine, in regard they are altogether fo unworthy of them. But come wee now to the case of your ghostly father, crying out in your care, that fecret marriage was a most greevous finne : Is not the breach thereof farre greater ? Familiar conversation betweene man and woman, is a concession meerely naturall : but to rob, kill, or banifh any one, proceedeth from the mindes malignity. That you did rob Theobaldo, your felfe hath already furficiently witnessed, by taking that from him, which with free consent in marriage you gave him. Next I must say, that by all the power remaining in you, you kild him because you would not permit him to remain with you declaring your felfe in the very height of erucley, that he might destroy his life by his owne hands. In which case the Law requireth, that whosoever is the occasion of an ill act committed, hee or thee is as deepe in the fault, as the party that did it. Now concerning his banishment, and wandring seaven yeeres in exile thorow the world; you cannot deny, but that you were the onely occasion thereof. In all which three severallactions, farre more capitally have you offended; than by contracting of marriage in such manner.

But let us fee, whether Toebaldo deserved all these severall castigations, or not. In trueth he did not, your selfe have confessed (beside that which I know) that he loved you more deerely than himselfe, and nothing could bee more honoured, magnified and exalted, than dayly you were by him, above all other women whatsoever. When he came in any place, where

hone-

honeftly, and without fuspition he might speake to you: all his honour, and all his liberty, lay wholly committed into your power. Was hee not a noble young Gentleman? Was he (among all those parts that most adorne a man, and appertaine to the very choycest respect) inferiour to any one of best merit in your Citie? I know that you cannot make deniall to any of these demands. How could you then by the per-Iwasion of a beast, a foole, a villaine, yea, a vagabond. envying both his happinesse and yours, enter into so cruell a minde against him? I know not what error milguideth women, in scorning & despising their husbands: but if they entred into a better confideration, understanding truely what they are, and what nobility of nature God hath endued man withall, farre above all other creatures; it would be their highest title of glory, when they are so preciously esteemed of them, To dearely affected by them, and fogladly embraced in all their best abilities.

This is so great a sinne, as the divine Iustice (which in an equal ballance bringeth all operations to their full effect) did not purpose to leave unpunshed; but as you enforced against all reason, to take away Theobaldo from your selse: even so your father Aldobrandino, without occasion given by Theobaldo, is in perill of his life, and you a partaker of his tribulation. Out of which if you desire to be delivered, it is very convenient that you promise one thing which I shall tell you at may much betterbe by you performed. Namely, that if Theobaldo doe returne from his long banishment, you shall restore him to your love, grace, and good acceptation; accounting him in the selfe-same degree of savour and private entertainment, as he was at the first, before your wicked ghostly father so hel-

liftly incenfed you against him.

When the Pilgrime had finished his speeches, the

Gentlewoman who had liftned to them very attentively (because all the alledged reasons appeared to bee plainely true) became verily perfwaded, that all thefe afflictions had falne on her and her father, for the ingratefull offence by her committed, and therefore thus replied. Worthy man and the friend to goodnesse, I know undoubtedly, that the words which you have Spoken are true, and also I understand by your demonfiration, what manner of people some of these religious persons are, whom heretofore I have reputed to be Saints, but finde them now to be farre otherwife. And to speake truely, I perceive the fault to bee great and greevous, wherein I have offended against Theobaldo, and would (if I could) willingly make amends, even in such manner as you have advised. But how is it posfible to be done? Theobaldo being dead, can be no more recalled to this life; and therefore, I know not what promife I should make, in a matter which is not to bee performed. Whereto the Pilgrime without any longer pauling thus answered.

Madam, by fuch relations as have beene shevene to me, I know for a certainty, that Theobaldo is not dead, but living, in health, and in good estate, if he had the fruition of your grace and favour. Take heede what you fay Sir (quoth the Gentlewoman) for I faw him lye flaine before my doore, his body having received many wounds, which I folded in mine armes, and wathed his face with my brinish teares; whereby (perhaps) that scandall arose, that flew abroad to my disgrace. Beleeve me Madam (replyed the Pilgrime) fay what you will, I dare affure you that Theobaldo is living, and if you dare make promise, concerning what hath beene formerly requested, and keepe it inviolably, I make no doubt, but you your felfe shall shortly fee him. I promife it, faid the, and binde my felf thereto by a facred oath, to keepe it faithfully: for never could any thing happen to

yceld

Some :

yeeld me the like contentment, as to fee my Father

free from danger, and Theobaldo living.

At this instant Theobaldo thought it to be a very apt. and convenient time to disclose himselfe, and to comfort the Lady, with an affured fignall of hope, for the. deliverance of her Father, wherefore he fayd : Lady, to the end that I may comfort you infallibly in this dangerous perill of your fathers life, I am to make knowne an especiall secret to you, which you are to keepe carefully (as you tender your owne life) from ever being revealed to the world. They were then in a place of sufficient privacie, and by themselves, because the reposed great confidence in the Pilgrimes fanctity of life, as thinking him none other than he feemed to be. Theobaldo tooke out of his Purlea Ring, which the gavehim the last night of their conversing together, and he had kept with no meane care; and flewing it to her fayd; Do you know this Ring Madam? So foone as the fawit, immediately the knew it, and answered, Yes Sir; Lkneyy the Ring, & confelle that I gave it to Theobaldo. Heereupon the Pilgrime food up, and fuddenly putring off his poore linnen Frock, and the Hood from his head, dfing the Florentine tongue, he fayd, Tell me Madam, doe you know me? When the had advitedly beheld him, and knew him indeed to be Theobaldo, the was ftricken into a wonderfull aftonifhment, being as feareful of him as the was of the dead body which the faw lying in the ffreet. And I dare affure you, that the durft not goe neere him, to refped him as Theobaldo lately come from cyprus, but (in terror) fled away from him, as if Theobaldo had beene newly rifen our of his grave, and came thither purpolely to affright her; wherfore he fayd. Be not affraid Madam, I am your Theobaldo, in health, alive, and never as yet died, neither have I received any wounds to kill me, as you and my brethree had formerly imagined.

Some better affurance getting possession of her, as knowing him perfectly by his voyce, and looking more Redfally on his face, which constantly avouched him to be Theobaldo; the teares trickling amaine downe her faire cheekes, the ran to embrace him, casting her armes about his necke, and kiffing him a thouland times, faying, Theobaldo, my faithfull husband, nothing in the worldcan be so welcome to me. Theobaldo having most kindly kissed and embraced her, fayd; Sweete wife, time will not now allow us those ceremonious courtefies, which (indeed) folong a separation doe justy challenge; for I must about a more weighty bufineffe, to have your Father fafely delivered, which I hope to doe before to morrow night, when you shall heare tydings to your better contenement. And queffionleffe, if I fpeed no worfe than my good hope perfwadeth me, I will fee you againe to night, and acquaint you at better leyfure, in such things as I cannot now.

at this present. So putting on his Pilgrimes habite againe, killing her once more, and comforting her with future good fucceffe, hee departed from her, going to the prison where Aldobrandinolay, whom hee found more penfive, as being in hourely expectation of death, than any hope he had to be freed from it. Being brought neerer to him by the prisones favour, as seeming to bee a man come onely to comfort him: fitting downe by him thus he began. Aldobrandino, I am a friend of thine, whom Heaven hath fent to doe thee good, in meere pittie and compaffion of thine innocency. And therefore, if thou wilt grant me one small request, which I am to crave at thy hands, thou shalt heare (without any failing) before to morrow at night, the sentence of thy free absolution, whereas now thou expected nothing but death; whereunto Aldobrandino thus answered. Friendly man, feeing thou art fo carefull of my

fafey

er, 25

more

d him

owne

g her

uland

thing

o ha-

weete

nious

doe

y bu-

ch I

fhall

effi-

Swa-

laint

now

bod

ilon

en-

han

ice-

ce a

im

ne,

erc

TC-

hI

out

of

0-

¢-

ny

fafety (although I know thee not, neither doe remember that ere I faw thee til now) thou must needs be some especiall kinde friend of mine. And to tell thee the truth I never committed the finfull deed for which I am condemned to death. True it is alhave other hainous and greevous firm, which (undoubtedly) have throwne this heavy judgement on me, and therefore I am the more willing to undergoe it. Neverthelesse, the me thus far assure they first I would gladly not onely promise some thing which might be to the glory of God, if he were pleased in this case to have mercy on me; but also would as willingly performe and accomplish it. Wherefore, demand whatsoever thou pleasest, for unfainedly (if I escape with life) I will truely keepe promise with thee.

Sir, replyed the Pilgrime, I defire nor demaund any thing of you, but that you would pardon the three Brethren of Theobaldo, that brought you to this hard extremitie, as thinking you to be guilty of their brothers death, and that you would also accept them as your bre. thren and friends upon their craving pardon for what they have done. Sir, answered Aldobrandino, no man knoweth how sweete revenge is, nor with what beate it is to be defired, but onely the man who hath beene wronged. Notwithstanding not to hinder any hope which only aymeth at Heaven, I freely forgive the, and henceforth pardon them for ever, intending moreover, that if mercy give melife, and cleere me from this bloody imputation, to love and respect them so long as I shall live. This answere was most pleasing to the Pilgrime, and without any further multiplication of speeches, he entreated him to be of good comfort, for he feared not but before the time prefixed, he should heare certaine tydings of his deliverance.

At his departing from him, he went directly to the Signoria, and prevailed so farre, that he spake privately with a Knight, who was then one of the States chiefest

Lords,

Lords, to whom he fayd. Sir, a man ought to bestow his best paines and diligence, that the truth of things should be apparently knowne, especially, such men as hold the place and office as you doe: to the end, that shofe persons which have committed no foole offence should not be punished, but onely the guilty and haynous transgrettors. And because it will be no meane honour to you to lay the blame where it worthily deferyeth, I am come hither purpofely, to informe you in a cale of most weighty importance. It is not unknowne to you, with what rigour the State hath proceeded against Aldobrandino Palermini, and you thinke verily he is the man that hath flaine Theobaldo Elifei, whereupon your Law hath condemned him to dye. I dare affere you Sir,that a very un juft course hath beene taken in this case, because Aldobrandino is falsly accused, as you your selfe shall confesse before midnight; when they are delivered into your power, that were the murtherers of she man.

The honest Knight, who was very forrowfull for Aldebrandino, gladly gave attention to the Pilgrime, and having conferred on manymatters, appertaining to the fact committed; the two brethren who were Theobaldes Hoftes, and their Chamber-maid, upon good advice given, were apprehended in their first fleepe, without any reliftance made in their defence. But when the tortures were fent for, to understand truely how the case went, they would not endure any paine at all, but each afide by himselfe, and then altogether confessed openly, that they did the deed, yet not knowing him to bee Theobaldo Elifci. And when it was demanded of them upon what occasion they did so foule an act, they anfwered, that they were fo hatefull against the mans life because he would luxuriously have abused one of their wives, when they both were absent from home.

When the Pilgrime had heard their voluntary con-

4.25

festion, he tooke his leave of his Knight, returning fecretly to the house of Madam Hermeling, and there (because al her people was in their beds) the carfully awaited his returne, to heare some glad tidings of her father. and to make a further reconciliation betweene her and Theobalde, when fitting downe by her, he faid : Deare Love, be of good cheere, for (upon my word) to morrow you shall have your father home safe, well, and delivered from all further danger : and to confirme her ; the more confidently in his words, he declared at large the whole carriage of the bufmeffe, Hermelina being wondroufly joyfull for two fuch fuddaine and fucceffefull accidents, to injoy her husband alive, and in health, and also to have her father freed from fo great a danger ; kiffed and embraced him most affe dionatly, welcomming him lovingly into her bed, whereto fo

long time he had beene a stranger.

No fooner did bright day appeare, but Theobaldo arofe, having acquainted her with fuch matters as were to be done, and once more earnefly defiring her, to conceale (as yet) thefe occurrances to her felfe. So in his Pilgrims habit, he departed from her house, to awaite convenient opportunity, for attending on the businesse belonging to Aldobranding. At the usuall houre appointed, the Lords were all fet in the Sige. nioria, and had received full information, concerning the offence imputed to Aldobrandino, fetting him at liberty by publique confent, and sentencing the other. malefactors with death, who (within a few dayes after) were beheaded in the place where the murther was committed. Thus Aldobrandino being released to his exceeding comfort, and no small joy of his daughter, kindred and friends, all knowing perfectly , that this had happened by the Pilgrims meanes, they conducted him home unto Aldobrandinges house, where they defired him to continue so long

Novell.7. The Third Day,

as himselfe pleased, using him with most honourable and gracious respect, but especially Hermelina, who knew (better than the rest) on whom she bestowed her liberall favours, yet concealing all closely to her selfe.

After two or three dayes were over-past, in these complementall entercourlings of kindneffe, Theobaldo began to confider, that it was high time for reconciliation, to be folemnely paft betweene his brethren and Aldobrandino. For, they were not a little amazed at his Brange deliverance, and went likewife continually armed, as flanding in feare of Allobrandino and his friends; which made him the more earnest, for accomplifument of the promise formerly made unto him. Aldobrandino lovingly replied, that he was ready to make good his word. Whereupon, the Pilgrime provided a goodly Banquer, whereat he purpoled to have present Aldobrandino, his daughter, kindred, and their wives. But first, himselfe went in person, to invite then in peace to his Banquet, using many pregnant and torcible reasons to them, such as are requisire in the like discordant cases. In the end they were so wise and prevailing with them, that they willingly condelcended, and thought it no disparagement unto them, for the recovery of Aldobrandinoes kindenesse againe, to crave pardon for their great error committed.

On the morrow following, about dinner time, the foure brethren of Theobaldoes, attired in their mourning garments, with their wives and friends, came fift to the house of Aldrobrandino, who purposely staid for them; and having laid downe their weapons on the ground, in the presence of all such as Aldobrandino had invited as his witnesses, they offered themselves to his mercy, and humbly required pardon of him, for the matter wherein they had offended him. Aldobrandino shedding teares, most lovingly embra-

th

P:

ced them, and (to be briefe) pardoned whatloever in juries he had received. After this, the fifters, and wives, all clad in mourning, courteoully submitted themfelves, and were graciously welcommed by Madam Hermelina, as also divers other Gentlewoman there present with her. Being all seated at the Tables, which were furnished with such raries as could be wished for; all things else deserved their due commendation, but onely sad silence, occasioned by the fresh remembrance of sorrow, appearing in the habites of Thebatdees friends and kindred, which the Pilgrime himselse plainely perceived, to be the onely disgrace to him and his seast. Wherefore, as before hee had resolved when time served to purge away this melancholly, he atose from the Table, when some (as yet) had seasse begun

to cate, and thus fpake.

n c

١,

10

-

ne

ly

ns

77-

n-

of

n.

13-

ed

Gracious company, there is no defect in this Banquet, or more debars it of the honour it might elfe have, but onely the prefence of Thepbaldo, who having beene continually in your company, it feemes you are not willing to take knowledge of him, and therefore I meane my felfe to thew him. So, uncafing himfelfe out of his Pilgrimes clothes, and standing in his hole, and dublet, to their nolittle admiration, they all knew him, yet doubted whether it were he or no. Which he perceiving, he repeated his brethren, and ablent kindreds names, and what occurrences hapned betweene them from time to time, befide the relation of his own paffed fortunes, inciting teares in the eyes of his brethren, and all elfe there prefent, every one hugging and embracing him, yea, many belide, who were no kin at all to him, Hermeling onely excepted: which when Aldobronatno faw, hee faid unto her's How now Hermelina? Why doeft thou not welcome home Theobaide, fo kindely as the reft have done?

She making a modest courtefie to her Father, and answering

answering for lond as every one might heare her, faid. There is not any in this affembly that more willingly. would give him all expression of a joyfull welcome home and thankefull gratitude for such especiall fayours received, than in my heart I could affoord to do, but onely in regard of those infamous speeches poyled out against me, on the day when we wept for him, who was supposed to be Theobaldo, which slander was to my great discredit. Goe on boldly, replied Aldobrandino, doeft thou thinke that I regard any fuch praters? In the procuring of my deliverance, he hath approved them to be manifest lyers, albeit my selfe did never credit them. Goe then I command thee, and let me fee thee both kille and embrace him. She who defired nothing more, thewed her felfe not flouthfull in obeying her father to doe but her dutie to her husband. Wherefore being rifen, as all the reft had done, but yet in a far more effectuall manner, the declared her unfained love to Theobaldo. These bountifull favours of Aldobranding, were joyfully accepted by Theobaldoes brethren, as also to every one there prefent ; lo that all formet rançour and hatted which had caused heavie variances betweene them, was now converted to mutual kindnelle and folemne friendship on every fide.

When the feating dayes were finished, the garmenta of lad mourning were quite laide adde, and those the comming so generall a joy) put on to make their hearts and habits sureable. Now, concerning the man slaine, and supposed to be Theobaldo, he was one, that in all the parts his of body, and truenesse of complexion so nearly relembled him, as Theobaldoes owne brethren could not distinguish the one from the other to the was of Lunguishand and Fatinale, and not Theobaldoe, whom the two brethren time-knepers maliced, about some idle sufficient conceived, and having slaine him, laide his body at the doore of Aldobranting, where by

d

fh

an

rel

realon

governed by Madam Neiphila.

reason of Theobaldees absence, it was generally reputed to be he, and Aldobrandino charged to do the deede, by vehement perswasion of the brethren, knowing what love had passed betweene him and his daughter Hermelina. But happy was the Pilgrims returne, first to heare those words in the Inne, the meanes to bring the murther to light; and then the discreece carriage of the Pilgrime, until he plainely approved himselfe to be truly Theobaldo.

Ferando, by drinking a certaine kinde of powder, was buried for dead, and by the Aboot, who was enamored of his wife, was taken out of his Grave, and put into a darke Prifon, where they made him believe, that hee was in Purgatorie. Afterward, when time came that he shold be raised to life again; he was made to keepe a child which the Abbot had got by his wife.

The eight Novell.

Wherein is displaied the apparent folly of iealousie: And the fubilitie of some religious carnall minded men, to be-

guile filly and simple married men.

lla

75

y

When the long discourse of Madam Emilia was ended, not displeasing to any, in regard of the length, but rather held too short, because no exceptions could be taken against it, comparing the raritie of the accidents, and changes together: the Queene turned to Madam Lauretto, giving her such a manifest signe, as shee knew, that it was her turne to follow next, and therefore she tooke occasion to begin thus. Faire Ladies, I intend to tell you a Tale of truth, which (perhaps) in your opinions, will seeme to found like a lies and yet I heard by the very last relation, that a dead man was wept and mourned for, in stead of another being then alive at the presentatime. In which respect, I am now to ket you know, how aliving man was

was buried for dead, and being raifed againe, yet not as living, himfelfe, and divers more befide, did beleeve that he came forth of his grave, and adored him as a Saint, who was the occasion thereof, and who (asa

bad man) deserved justly to be condemned.

In Tulcany there was sometime an Abbey, seated, as now we see commonly they are, in a place not much frequented with people, and thereof a Monke was Abbot, very hely and curious in all things else, save onely a wanton appetite to women; which yet hee kept so clearly, that though som did suspective, yet it was known to very few. It came to passe, that a rich Countrey Franklin, named Ferando, dwelt as necre neighbour to the said Abbey, hee being a man material, of simple and grosse understanding, yet he fell into great sami-aritie with the Abbot; who made use of this friendly conversation to no other end, but for divers times of recreations when he delighted to smile as his filly and sottish behaviour.

Vpon this his private frequentation with the Abbot, at laft he observed, that Ferando had a very beautifull woman to his wife, with whom he greve fo deepely in love, as he had no other meditations, either by day or night, but how to become acceptable in her favour. Neverthelesse, he concealed his amorous passions privately ro himselfe, and could plainely perceive, that although Ferando (in all things else) was meerely a simple fellow, and more like an Idiot, than of any apprehension : yet was hee wife enough in loving his Wife, keeping her carefully out of all company, as one (indeede) vary jealous, least any should kiffe her, but onely himselfe; which drove the Abbot into despaire, for ever attaining the iffue of his defire. Yet being fubtill, craftie, and cautelous, he wrought fo on the flexible nature of Ferando, that he brought his wife with him divers dayes to the Monasterie; where they walked

th

in

25

ve

12

12

d,

ch

b.

ly

(o

WIL

rey

to

ple

ni-

dly

of

nd

16-

au-

pe-

Ьу

fa-

ons

hat

y a

ap-

his

one

but

ire,

(ub-

Xi.

vith

ked

in

in the goodly Garden, discoursing on the beatitudes of eternall life, as also the most holy deedes of men and women, long since departed out of this life, in mervailous civell and modest manner. Yet all these were but traines to a further intention, for the Abbot must needes be her ghostly Father, and the come to be confessed by him; which the foole Ferando tooke as an especial favour, and therefore hee gave his consent the sooner.

At the appointed time, when the woman came to confession to the Abbot, and was on her knees before him , to his no fmall contemment, before thee would fay any thing elfe, thus the begun: Sacred Father, if Godhad not given me such an husband as I have, or else had bestowed on me none at all; I might have beene so happy, by the meanes of your holy doctrine, very easily to have entred into the way, whereof you spake the other day, which leadeth to eternall life, and conducts to heavenly bliffe. But when I confider with my felfe, what manner of man Ferando is, and thinke upon his folly withall; I may well terme my felfe to be a widdow, although I am a married wife, because while hee liveth, I cannot have any other husband. And yet (as fortish as you see him) he is (without any occasion given him) so extreamely jealous of me; as I am not able to live with him, but onely in continuall embulation and hearts griefe. In which respect, before I enter into Confession, I most humbly beseech you, that you would vouchfafe (in this diffreste) to affift me with your fatherly advice and counsell, because, if thereby I cannot attaine to a more pleasing kinde of happineffe; neither confession, or any thing elfe, is able to doe me any good at all.

These words were not a little welcome to my Lord Abbot, because (thereby) he halfe affured himselfe, that Portune had laid open the path to his hoped pleasures.

Whereupon

Novell.8. The Third Day,

Whereupon he faid. Deare daughter, I make no queftion to the contrary, but it must needes be an exceeding infecility, to fo faire and goodly a young woman as you are, to be plagued with fo fottish an husband. brainclicke, and, without the ule of common understanding ; but yet subject to a more hellish affliction than all thefe, namely jealoufie; and therefore you being in this wofull manner tormented, your tribulations are not onely fo much the more credited, but also as amply grieved for, and pittied. In which heavy and irksome perturbations, I see not any meanes of remedie, but onely one, being a kinde of phyficke ('beyond all other)to cure him of his jealouse; which medicine is very familiar to me, because I know best how to compound it, alwayes provided, that you can be of fo frong a capacity, as to be fecret in what I shall fay unto you.

Good Father (answered the Woman) never make you any doubt thereof; for I would rather endure death it selfe, than disclose any thing which you enjoyne me to keepe fecret: wherefore I befeech you Sir to tell me, how, and by what meanes it may be done. If (quoth the Abbot) you defire to have him perfectly cured, of a disease so dangerous and offensive, of necesfitie he must be fent into Purgatory. How may that be done, faid the woman, he being alive ? He must needs die, answered the Abbot, for his more speedy passage thither; and when he hath endured fo much punishment, as may expiate the qualitie of his jealouse, we have certaine devoute and zealous prayers, whereby to bring him backe againe to life, in as able manner as ever he was. Why then, replied the woman, I must remaine of necessitie in the state of a Widdow? Very true, said the Abbot, for a certaine time, in all which space, you may not (by no meanes) marrie againe, because the heavens will therewith be highly offended: but Ferando being restored to life againe, you muft

ic -

e-

an

nd,

ın-

on

x-

ti-

lo

nd

16-

nd

ne

m-

ng

. III

ke

ire

n-

Sir

ıc.

tly

ef-

be

ds

ge h-

ve

by

as

ıſŧ

v?

all

2-

1

Du:

ıft

beauty

must repossesse him as your husband, but never to be jestious any more. Alas Sir (quoth the woman) so that he may be cured of his wicked jealousie, and I no lon-live in such an hellish imprisonment, do as you please.

Now was the Abbot (well neere) on the ftep of his hope, making her constant promise, to accomplish it : But (quoth he) what shall be my recompence when I have done ? Father, faid the, whatfoever you pleafe to 25ke, if it remaine within the compaffe of my power: but you being such a vertuous and sandified man, and I a woman of fo meane worth or merite, what sufficient recompence can I be able to make you? Whereunto the Abbot thus replied. Faire woman, you are able to doe as much for me, as I am for you, because I doe dispose my selfe, to performe a matter for your comfort and confolation, even fo ought you to be as mindfull of me, in any action concerning my life and welfare. In any fuch matter Sir (quoth the) depending on your benefite fo strictly, you may safely presume to command me. You must then (faid the Abbot) grant me your love, and the kinde embracing of your person; because so violent are mine affections, as I pine and confume away daily, till I enjoy the fruition of my defires, and none can helpe me therein but you.

When the woman heard these words, as one confounded with much amazement, thus she replied. Alas, holy Fathet! What a strange motion have you made to me? I believed very faithfully, that you were no lesse than a Saint, and is it convenient, that when silly women come to aske counsell of such sandised men, they should returne them such unstring answer? Be not amazed good woman, said the Abbot, at the motion which I have made unto you, because holinesse is not thereby impaired a jot in me; for it is the inhabitant of the soule, the other is an impersection attending on the boby; but let it bee whatsoever, your

beautic hath so powerfully prevailed on mee, that entire love hath compelled mee to let you know it. And more may you boast of your beauty, than any that ever I beheld before, considering, it is so pleasing to a sanctified man, that it can draw him from divine contemplations, to regard a matter of so humble an equalitie.

Let me tell you moreover, worthy Woman , that fee me reverenced here as Lord Abbot, yet am I but asother men are, and in regard I am neither aged, nor mishapen, me thinkes the motion I have made, should be the leffe offenfive to you, and therefore the fooner granted. For, all the while as Ferando remaineth in Purgatory, doe you but imagine him to be present with you, and your perswasion will the more absolutely be confirmed. No man can, or shall be privy to our close meetings, for I carry the same holy opinion among all men, as you your felfe conceived of me, and none dare be so saucie, as to call in question whatsoever I doe or fay, because my words are Oracles, and mine actions more than halfe miracles; doe you not then refuse so gracious an offer. Enow there are, who would gladly enjoy that, which is franke and freely offered to you, and which fif you be a wife woman) is meerely impossible to refuse. Richly am I posfelfed of Gold and lewels, which shall be all yours, if you please in favour to be mine, wherein I will not be gaine-faid, except your felfe doe deny me.

The Woman having her eyes fixed on the ground, knew not how the thould deny him; and yet in plaine words, to fay the confented, thee held to be over-base and immodest, and ill agreeing with her former reputation: when the Abbot had well noted this attention in her, and how filent the stood without returning any answer; hee accounted the conquest to be more than halfe his owne: so that continuing on his formall per-

fwafions,

n

00

ir

al

Swalions, he never ceased, but allured her stilleo beseeve whatsoever he said. And shee much ashamed of his importunitie, but more of her flexible yeelding weakenesse; made answer, that shee would willingly accomplish his request; which yet shee did not ablofutely grant, untill Ferando were first fent into Purgatory. And till then (quoth the Abbot) I will not urge any more, because I purpose his speedy sending thither: but yet, fo farre lend me affiftance, that either to morrow, or elfe the next day, he may come hither to difcourse with me. So putting a gold Ring on her finger,

they parted till the next meeting.

1

đ

ľ

n

ĸ

c-

ır

1-

nd

e-

nd

Du

rc,

nd

10-

of-

, if

be

nd,

inc

pale

pu-

ion

any

ban

per-

ons,

Not a little joyfull was the Woman of forich a gift, hoping to enjoy a great many more of them, and returning home to her neighbours, acquainted them with wonderfull matters, all concerning the fandimonious life of the Abbot, a meere miraele of men, and worthy to be truely termed a Saint. Within two dayes after, Ferando went to the Abbey againe, and to foone as the Abbot espied him, hee presently prepared for his sending of him into Purgatory. He never was without a certaine kinde of drugge, which being beaten into powder, would worke fo powerfully upon the braine and all the other vitall fences; as to entrance them with a deadly fleepe, and deprive them of all motion, either in the pulses, or in any other part else, even as if the body were dead indeede; in which operation, it would fo hold and continue, according to the quantity given and dunke, as it pleased the Abbot to order the matter, This powder or drugge, was fent him by a great Prince of the East, and therewith he wrought wonders upon his Novices, sending them into Purgacory when hee pleafed, and by fuch punishments as he inflicted on them there, made them (like credulous affes) beleeve whatfoever himfelfe lifted.

So much of this poyder had the Abbet provided, 25 should thould fuffice for three dayes entrancing, and having compounded it with a very pleafant Wine, calling Ferando into his Chamber, there gave it him to drinke, and afterward walked with him about the Cloyfter, in very friendly conference together, the filly for never dreaming on the treachery intended against him. Many Monkes beside were recreating themselves in the Cloyfter, most of them delighting to see the follies of Ferando, on whom the potion began so to work, that he step in walking, nodding and reeling as he went, till at the last he fell downe, as if he had been dead.

The Abbot pretending great admiration at this accident, called his Monkes about him, all labouring by rubbing his temples, throwing cold water and vinegar in his face, to revive him againe; alleadging that some fume or vapour in the stomacke, had thus over-awed his understanding faculties, and quite deprived him of life indeede. At length, when by feeling the pulle, and all their best employed paines, they faw that their labout was fpent in vaine; the Abbot used such perswa. fions to the Monkes, that they all beleeved him to be dead : whereupon they fent for his wife, and friends, who crediting as much as the reft did, were very fad and forrowfull for him. The Abbot (clothed as hee was)laid him in a hollow vanlt under a Tombe, such as there were used in stead of graves; his wife returning home againe to her house, with a young son which she had by her husband, protesting to keepe still within her house, and never more to be seene in any company, but only to attend her young fon, and be very carefull of such wealth as her husband had left unto her.

From the City of Bologna; that very instant day, a well stand and governed Monke there arrived, who was a neere kinsman to the Abbot, and one whom hee might securely trust. In the dead time of the night, the Abbot and this Monke arose, and taking Ferando out

36

fo

th:

bu

his

hei

kno

and

ding

carr

of the vault, carried him into a darke dangeon or prifon, which he termed by the name of Purgatory, and where hee used to discipline his Monkes, when they had committed any notorious offence, deferving to be purished in Purgatory. There they tooke off all his usuall wearing garments, and cloathed him in the habite of a Monke, even as if hee had beene one of the house ; and laying him on a bundle of straw. To left him until his fenfes shold be restored again. On the day following, late in the evening, the Abbot, accopanied with his trufty Monke, (by way of vifitation) went to fee and comfort the supposed widdow, finding her attired in blacke, very fad and penfive, which by his wonted perswasions, indifferently he appealed 3 challenging the benefit of her promife. She being thus alone, not hindered by her Husbands jealousie, and ef. pying another goodly gold Ring on his finger, heve frailety and folly over-ruled her, I know not, the was a weake woman, he a devillish deluding man ; and the ftrongest holdes by over long battery and befieging, must needes yeeld at the last, as I feare she did : for very often afterward, the Abbot used in this manner to vifite her, and the simple ignorant Country people, carrying no fuch ill opinion of the holy aboot, and having scene Ferando lying for dead in the vault, and alfo in the habite of a Monke; were verily perswaded, that when they faw the Abbot paffe by to and fro, but most commonly in the night season, it was the shoft of Ferando, who walked in this manner after his death, as a just pennance for his jealousie.

c

d

ρf

nd

1-

3 . be

ds,

fad

hec

uch

ing

flic thin

npa-

care-

er.

lay, a

was

n hee t, the

do out

of

When Ferandoes sences were recovered againe, and he found himselfe to be in such a darkesome place; not knowing where he was, he beganne to crie and make a noyle. When presently the Monke of Bologna (according as the Abbot had tutured) ftept into the dungeon.

carrying a little waxe Candle in the one hand, and a **Imarting**

fmarting whip in the other, going to Ferando, he ftript off his cloathes, and began to lash him very foundly. Ferando, rearing and crying, could fay nothing elfe, but where am I? The Monke (with a dreadfull voyce) replyed : Thouart in Purgatory. How ? faid Ferando: what? Am I dead? Thou are dead (quoth the Monke) and began to lash him lustily againe. Poore Ferando. crying out for his Wife and little Sonne, demanded a number of idle queftions, whereto the Monke Still fitted him with as fantaflicke answers. Within a while after, be fet both foode and wine before him, which when Ferando faw, he faid; How is this? Doe deade men eate and drinde ? Yes, replyed the Monke, and this foode which heere thou feeft, thy wife brought hither to the Church this morning, to have Maffes devoucly fung for thy foule; and as to other, fo must it be fer before thee; for fuch is the command of the Patron

of this place. Ferando having lyen entranced three dayes and three nights, felt his ftomacke well prepared to cate, and feeding very heartily, fall faid; O my good Wife. O my loving Wife, long maift thou live for this extraordinary kindnesse, I promise thee (sweete heart) while I was alive, I cannot remember, that ever any foode and wine was halfe fo pleafing to mee. O my deare Wife; O my hony Wife Canft thou (quoth the Monke) praise and commend her now, using her so villanously. in thy life time? Then did he whip him more fiercely. than before, when Ferando holding up his hands, as craving for mercy, demanded wherefore hee was fo Yeverely punished? I am so commanded (quoth the Monke) by supreme power, and twice every day must thou bee (in this fert and kinde) thus disciplinde. Vpon what occasion? replied Ferancio. Because quoth the Monke) thou wast most notoriously jealous of thy wife, the being the very kindest woman to thee, as all

the

no

the

alle

in F

thou

lous

fie,

thee

F

the Countrey containeth not her quall. It is too true. answered Ferando, I was over-much fealous of her indeede : but had I knowne that icalousie was such & batefullfin against Heaven, I never would have offended therein. Now (quoth th Monke) thou canft confeffe thine wilfull folly, but this should have beene thought on before, and whileft thou wast living in the World. But if the Fates vouchfafe to favour thee fo much, as hereafter to fend thee to the World once more ; remember thy punishment here in Purgatory. and finne no more in that foule finne of jealousie, I pray you Sir, tell me, replyed Ferando, after men are dead, and put into Purgatory, is there any hope of their ever visiting the world any more? Yes, faid the Monke, if the furie of the Fates be appealed. O that I knew (quoth Ferando) by what meanes they would be appealed, and let me vifite the world once againe: I would be the best Husband that ever lived, and never more be jealous, never wrong fo good a wife, nor ever use any unkinde word against her. In the meane while. and till their anger may be qualified; when next my wife doth fend mee foode, I pray you worke fo much, that some Candles may be sent me also, because I live here in uncomfortable darkenesse; and what should I doe with foode, if I have no light? She fends lights enow, answered the Monke, but they are burnt out on the Altar in Maffe-time, and thou canft have none other here, but fuch as I must bring my selfe, neither are allowed, but for the time of thy feeding and correcting.

c

e

re

e'i

fly.

25

the

กบใช

ide.

ioth

sall

the

Ferando breathing forth a vehement figh, defired to know what he was, being thus appointed to punish him in Purgatory? I am (quoth the Monke) a dead man, as thou art, borne in Sardignia, where I served a very jealous Master; and because I soothed him in his jealo-fie, I had this pennance imposed on me, and to serve thee here in Purgatory with means and drink & stwice

Q 2

CVCT

every day) to discipline thy body, untill the Fates have otherwise determined both for thee and me. Why? said Ferando, are any other persons here, beside you and I & Many thousands, replied the Monke, whom thou canst neither heare nor see, no more than they are able to do the like by us. But how sarre, said Ferando, is Purgatory distant from our native Countries & About some fistic thousand leagues, answered the Monkes but yet passable in a moment, whensoever the offended Fates are pleased: and many Masses are dayly said for thy soule, at the earnest entreaty of thy wife, in hope of thy conversion, and becoming a new man, hating to be jealous

any more hereafter,

In these and such like speeches, as thus they beguiled the time, so did they observe it for a daily course, sometime discipling, other whiles eating and drinking, for the space of ten whole moneths together, in the which time, the Abbot fildome failed to vifite Ferandocs wife, without the least suspition in any of the neighbours, by reason of their setled opinion, concerning the nightly walking of Ferandoes ghost. But, as all pleasures cannot be exempted from some following paine or other. fort came to passe, that Ferandoes wife proved to be conceived with child, and the time was drawing on for her deliverance. Now began the Abbotto confider. that Ferandoes folly was sufficiently chastisfed, and he had beene long enough in Purgatory: wherefore, the better to countenance all passed inconveniences it was now thought high time, that Ferando should be fent to the world againe, and fet free from the paines of Purgatory as having paied for his jealoufie dearely, to reach him better wisedome hereafter.

Late in the dead time of the night, the Abbot himfelf entred into the darke dungeon, and in an hollow councerfeited voyce, called to Ferando, faying. Comfort thy felfe Ferando, for the Fates are now pleafed, that thou flak

finit be rejeafed out of Purgatory, and fer to live in the world againe. Thou didft leave thy wife newly conceived with child and this very morning the is delivered of a goodly fon, whom thou fhalt cause to be named Bennet: because, by the incessant prayers of the holy Abbot, thine own loving wife, and for sweet S. Bennett fake, this grace and favour is afforded thee. Feranda hearing this, was exceeding joyfull, and returned this answer: For ever honoured be the Fates, the holy Abe bot, bleffed S. Bennet, and my deare beloved wife whom I will love for ever, and never more offend her by any jealouse in me; when the next food was fent to Ferado, fo much of the powder was mingled with the wine, as would ferve only for foure houres entrancing, in which time, they clothed him in his own wearing apparell again, the Abbot himself in person, and his honest trusty Monke of Bologna, conveying and laying him in the faine vault under the Tombe, where at the first they gave him buriall. The next morning following, about the breake of the day, Ferando recovered his fenfes, and thorow divers chinkes of the Tombe, descried daylight, which he had not feene in ten moneths space before. Perceiving then plainely, that he was alive, he cryed our aloud, faying: Open, open, and let mee forth of Purgatory, for I have beene here long enough in conscience. Thrusting up his head against the cover of the Tombe, which was not of any great ftrength, neither well closed together ; he put it quite off the Tomb: and fo got forth upon his feete:at which instant time, the Monkes having ended their morning Mattins, and hearing the noyle, ran in haftethither, and knowing the voyce of Ferando, faw that he was come forth of the Monument.

Some of them were ancient Signiors of the house, and yet but meere Novices in these cunning and politique stratagems of the Lord Abbot, when he intended to

23

punif

Pury, to mfelf counet thy

thou

fliak

ft

lo

ry

ic

1-

re

e,

n-

us

led

ne-

for

ich

ifc.

by

vise

an-

er.

be

on

der,

d he

WAS

ntto

to punish any one in Purgatory: and therefore, being affrighted, and amazed at this rare accident; they fled away from him, running to the Abbot, who making a shew to them as If he were but new come forth of his Oratory, in a kinde of pacifying speeches, said; Peace my deare Sonnes, be not affraid, but sette the Crosse and Holy-water hithersthen follow me, and I will shew you, what miracle the Fates have pleased to shew in our Convent: therefore be filent, and make no more

noise :all which was done as he commanded.

Ferando looking pale, (as one) that in fo long time had not seene the light of heaven, and endured such ftrift discipline twice every day; ftood in a gaftly amazement by the Tombes side, as not daring to adventure any further, or knowing perfectly, whether her was (as yet) truly alive, or no. But when he faw the Monkes and Abbot comming, with their lighted Torches, and finging in a folemne manner of Proceffion, he humbled himselfe at the Abbots feete, faying, Holy Father, by your zealous prayers (as hath beene miraculoufly revealed to me) and the prayers of bleffed S. Bennet; as also of my honest, deare, and loving wife, I have beene deliverd from the paines of Purgatory, and brought hither again e to live in this world; for which unspeakcable grace and favour, most humbly I thanke the well pleased Fates, Saint Bennet, your Father-hood, and my kinde Wife, and will remember all your loves to me for ever. Bleffed be the Fates, an-Iwered the Abbot, for working fo great a wonder in our Monastery. Goe then my good Sonne, seeing the Fates have beene lo gracious to thee; Goe (I fay) home to thine owne house, and comfore thy kinde wife, who ever fince thy departure out of this life, bath lived in continual mourning; love, cherish, and make much of her, never afflicting her henceforth with causelelle jealoufie, No I warrant you good Father, replied

replied Ferando; I have beene well whips in Purgatorie for such folly, and therefore I might be called a starke foole, if I should that way offend any more, ci-

ther my loving wife, or any other.

led

23

his

ace

offe

CVV

in

orc

me

uch

2-

adher

law

cef.

ng.

ene

ef-

ing

ga-

rld;

our

ber

an-

in

the y)

nde

ake

vith

her,

lied

The Abbot caufing Miferere to be devoutely fung, sprinkling Ferando well with Holy-water, and placing a lighted Taper in his hand, fent him home fo to his owne dwelling Village: where when the neighbours beheld him, as people halfe frighted out of their wits, they fled away from him, so scared and terrified, as if they had feene fome dreadefull fight, or gaftly apparition; his wife being as fearefull of him, as any of the reft. He called to them kindly by their feverall names. telling them, that he was newly rifen out of his grave, and was a man as he had beene before. Then they began to touch and feele him, growing into more certain affurance of him, perceiving him to be a living man indeede. Whereupon, they demanded many questions of him ; and hee, as if hee were become farre more wifer than before, told them tydings, from their long decealed kindred and friends, as if he had mette with them all in Purgatory, reporting a thousand lyes and fables to them, which (neverthelelle) they beleeved.

Then he also rold them what the miraculous voyce had said unto him, concerning the birth of another young Sonne, whom (according as he was commanded) he caused to be named Bennet Ferando. Thus his returne to life againe, and the dayly wonders reported by him, caused no meane admiration in the people, with much commendation of the Abbots holinesse,

and Ferandoes happy curing his jealoufie.

Iuliet of Narbona, cured the King of France of a dangerous Fishula, in recompence whereof, she requested to enjoy as her husband in marriage, Bertrand Count of Roussidion. He having married her against his with as tterly

utterly despising her, went to Florence, where he made love to a joing Gentlewoman. Indict by a queint and cunning policy, compassed the meanes (in fread of his chosen new friend) to lie withher owne hushand, by whom she conceived, and had two somes; which being afterward made knowne unto Count Bertrand, he accepted her into his favour againe, and loved her as his loyall and honourable wife.

The ninth Novell

Commending the good judgement and understanding of Ladies or Gentlewomen; that are of a quicke and apprehensive shirt.

Now there remained no more (to preferve the priviledge granted to Dioneus uninfringed) but the Queene onely, to declare her Novell. Wherefore, when the discourse of Massam Lauretta was ended, without attending any motion to be made for her next succeeding, with a gracious and pleasing disposition, she begun to speake; Who shall tell my Tale hereafter, to carry any hope or expectation of a liking, having heard the wittie discourse of Massam Laurettal Beleves me, it was very advantageable to us all, that she was not this days beginner, because tew or none would have any courage to follow after her; and therefore the rest yet remaining, are the more to be feared and suspected.

There lived sometime in the Kingdome of France, a Gentleman named Isaarde, being the Count of Roussilion: who because he was continually weake, and crazie, kept a Physitian daily in his house, who wasealled M. Gerard of Narbona. Count Isaarde had one only Son, very yong in yeares, faire & comely, named Bertrand, with whom many other children of his age, had aheir education: and among them, a daughter of the forenamed Physitian, called Iulies; who, in these tender yeares, fixed her affection upon young Bertrand, with such an earnest resolution, as was most admirable in so

made

and

f bis

i, by

d, be

er as

e of

ap-

the but

ore,

ded,

ion,

eaf-

net

1276

reft

ce,a

of

nly

er-

had

the

der

rith

ols

ung

young a maiden. Old Count I fnarde dying, young Bertrand fell a Ward to the King, and being lent to Paris, remained there under his Royall protection, to the no little discomfort of yong Juliet, who became afflicted in mind, because the had lost the company of Bertrand.

Within some few yeares after, the Physitian her Father also died, and then her defires grew wholly addicted to vifite Paris her felfe in person, onely because the would fee the yong Count, awaiting but time and opportunitie, to fit her stolne journey thither. But her. friends, to whose care she was committed, in regard of her rich dowry, and being left as a fatherleffe orphane were fo circumfped of her walks and behaviour, as the could not by any meanes escape. Her yeares made her almost fit for marriage, which so much more encreased. her love to the Count, making refulall of many worthy husbands, and laboured by the motions of herfriends, yet all denied, they not knowing any reason for her refulals. By this time the Count was become a gallant Gentleman, and able to make election of his wife, whereby her affections were the more violently enflamed, as fearing leaft some other should be preferred before her, & so her hopes be utterly disappointed.

It was noyled abroad by common report, that the King of France was in a very dangerous condition, by reason of a strange swelling on his stomacke, which failing of apt and convenient curing, became a Fistula, afflicting him daily with extraordinary paine, no Chyrugion or Physician being found, that could minister any hope of healing, but rather encreased the griefe, compelling the King, as despairing of all helpe, to give over any surther advice. Herof faire suffer was very joy-full, as hoping this acceident could be the meanes, not only of her journey to Paris, but if the disease were no more than she imagined; shee could cashly cure it, and therby compasse Bestsand to be her husband Hercupon quickning.

quickning up her wits, with remembrance of those rules of Are, which (by long practife and experience) the had learned of her skilfull Father, the compounded certaine hearbes together, fuch as the knew fitting for that kinde of infirmitie, and having reduced hercompound into powder, away shee rode forthwith en Paris.

Being there arrived, all other ferious matters fet afide, first shee must needes have a fight of Count Berstand, as being the onely Saint that caused her Pilgrimage. Next the made meanes for her accesse to the King, humbly intreating his Majestie, to vouchsafe ber the fight of his Fiftula. When the King faw her, ber modest lookes did plainely deliver, that the was a faire, comely, and discrecte young Gentlewoman, wherefore, he would no longer hide it, but layed it open to her view. When the had feene and felt it, pre-Rently the put the King in comfort ; affirming, that the knew her felfe able to cure his Fistula, faying : Sir, if your Highnesse will referre the matter to me, without any perill of life, or any the least paine to your person, I hope (by the helpe of Heaven) to make you whole and found within eight dayes space. The King hearing her words, began merrily to smile at her, faying: How is it possible for thee, beeing a young Maiden, to doe that which the best Physicians in Europe, are not able to performe? I commend thy kindnesse, and will not remaine anthankefull for thy forward willing nese: but I am fully determined, to use no more counsell, or to make any further trial of Phylicke or Chirurgery. Whereto faire Inliet thus replyed : Great King, let not my skill and experience be despised, because I am young, and a Maiden; for my profession is not Phyficke, neither doe I undertake the administring thereof, as depending on my owne knowledge; but by the gracious affiftance of heaven, and some rules of skilfull

c)

ed

or

cr.

th

1-

7-

i-

he

fe

r,

52

.

0-

re-

he

if

out

n, de

ng

WO

loe

Ыe

e:

or

ry.

let

in

Y-

e-

he il-

ull

full observation, which I learned of reverend Gerard of Narbona, who was my worthy Father, and a Phyfittin of no meane fame, all the while he lived.

At the hearing of these words, the King beganne somewhat to admire at her gracious carriage, and faid within himfelfe, What know I, whether this Virgin is fent to mee by the direction of heaven, or no? Why should I disdaine to make proofe of her skill ? Her promile is to cure me in a small times compalle, and without any paine or affildion to me; the thall not come fo farre, to returne againe with the loffe of her labour, I am refolved to try her cunning, and thereon faid. Faire Virgine, If you cause me to breake my setled des termination, and faile of curing me, what can you exped to follow thereon? Whatfoever great King (quoth the) shall please you. Let me be strongly guarded, yet nor hindred, when I am to profecute the bufineffe: and then if I dot not perfectly heale you within eight dayes, let a good fire be made, and therein confume my body unto aftes. But if I accomplish the cure, and tet your Highneste free from all further greevance, what recompence then shall remaine to me?

Much did the King commend the confident perswafron which the had of her owne power, and prefently replied: Faire beautie (quoth he) in regard that thou are a Maide and unmarried, if thou keepe promite, and I finde my felfe to be fully cured : Pwill match thee with fome fuch Gentleman in marriage, as thallbe of honourable and worthy reputation, with a fufficient dowry befide. My gracious Soveraigne faid the willing am I, and most heartily thankefull withall, that your Highnelle shall bestow mee in marriage : but I defire then, to have such a husband, as I shall defire or demand by your gracious favour, without prefuming to crave any of your Sonnes, Kindred, or Alliance, or appertaining unto your Royallblond. Wherero the King gladly

Novell.9. The Third Day,

gladly granted. Young Iuliet began to minister her Physicke, and within fewer dayes than her limited time, the King was found and perfectly cured; which when he perceived, he said unto her. Trust me gracious maide, most worthily hast thou wonne a Husband, name him, and thou shalt have him. Royall King (quoth she) then have I won the Count Bertrand of Roussilion, who I have most entirely loved from my infancy, and cannot (in my soule) affect any other. Very loath was the King to grant the young Count, but in regard of his solemne passed promise, and his Royall word engaged, which hee would not by any meanes breake; he commanded, that the Count should be sent

for, and spake thus to him.

Noble Count, it is not unknowne to us, that you are a Gentleman of great honour, and it is our Royall pleasure, to discharge your wardship, that you mayrepaire home to your owne House, there to Settle your affaires in fuch order, as you may bee the seadier to enjoy a Wife, which we intend to bestow appon you. The Count returned his Highneffe most humble thankes, defiring to know of whence, and what the was? It is this Gentlewoman, answered the King, who (by the helpe of Heaven) hath beene the meanes to fave my life. Well did the Count know ber, as having very often before feene her; and although the was very faire and amiable, yet in regard of her meane birth, which he held as a disparagement to his Nobility of blood; he made a scorne of ber, and Ipake thus to the King. Would your Highnesse give me a Quackfalver to my wife, one that deales in drugs and Phyficary? I hope I am able to bestow my selfe much better than fo. Why ? quoth the King, wouldst thou have us breake our faith; which for the recovery of our health, we have given to this vertuous virgin, and the will have no other reward, but onely Count Betrand

ner

ed

ed;

me ul-

all

and

my

le-

but

yall

ent

vou

OHE

hat

eto

the

nost

the

al-

ent

and

give

ug s

elfe

lda

ery

gin,

unt

and

Bertrand to be her husband? Sir, replyed the Count, you may disposses me of all that is mine, because I am your Ward and Subject, and any where else you may bestow me: but pardon mee to tell you, that this marriage cannot bee made with any liking or allowance of mine, neither will I ever give consent thereto.

Sir, fayd the King, it is our will that it should be for vertuous the is, faire and wife, the loveth thee most affectionately, and with her mayft thou leade a more Noble life, than with the greatest Lady in our king. dome. Silent, and discontented stood the Count, but the King commanded preparation for the marriage a and when the appointed time was come, the Count(albeitagainst his will) received his wife at the Kings hand; the loving him deerely as her ownelife. When all was done, the Count requested of the King, that what else remained for further solemnization of the marriage, it might be performed in his owne Country, referving to himfelfe what elfe hee intended. Being mounted on horsebacke, and humbly taking their leave of the King, the Count would not ride home to his owne dwelling, but into Tufcany, where hee heard of a warre betweene the Florentines and the Senefi, purpofing to take part with the Florentines, to whom he was willingly and honourably welcommed, being created Captaine of a worthy Company, and continuing there along while in fervice.

The poore forfaken new married Counteffe could scarlely be pleased with such dishonourable unkindnesse yet governing her impatience with no meane discretion, and hoping by her vertuous carriage, to compasse the meanes of his recall; home she rode to Roussition, where all the people received her very lovingly. Now, by reason of the Counts solong absence, all things were farre out of order; murines, quarrely, and

civill

civill differeione, having procured many diffolute irruptions, to the expence of much blood in many places, But the like a jolly firring Lady, very wife and provident in fuch diffurbances, reduced all occasions to fuch civility againe, that the people admired her rare behaviour, and condemned the Count for his un-

kindnesse rowards her.

After that the whole Country of Rouffillion (by the policy and wisedome of this worthy Lady was fully re-eftablished) in their ancient liberties, thee made choyle of two fecret knights, whom thee fent to the Count her husband to let him understand, that if in displeasure to her he was thus become a stranger to his owne Country: upon the returne of his answere to give him contentment the would depart thence, and by no meanes diffurbe him. Roughly and churlifuly he replyed; Let her doe as the lift, for I have no determination to dwell with her, or neere where the is. Tell her from me, when the shall have this Ring, which you behold heere on my finger, and a Sonne in her armes begotten by me; then will I come live with her and be her love, The Ring he made most precious and deere account of, and never tooke it off from his fireger, in regard of a speciall vertue and property, which he well knew to be remaining in it. And these two Knights, hearing the impossibility of these two firite conditions, with no other favour elle to bee derived from him; forrowfully returned backe to their Lady; and acquainted her with his unkind answere, as alfo. his unalterable determination, which well you may conceive, must needes bee very unwelcome unto her.

After the had an indifferent while confidered with her felfe, her refolution became fo undauntables that the would adventure to practife fuch meanes, whereby to compalle those two apparant impossibillities, and

of

fo to enjoy the love of her husband. Having ablolutely concluded what was to be done, thee affembled all the chiefest men of the Country, revealing unto them (in mournefull manner) what an attempt thee had made already, in hope of recovering her husbands fayour , and what a rude answere was thereon returned. In the end, the told them, that it did not fuite with her unworthinesse, to make the Count live as an exile from his owne inheritance, upon no other inducement but onely in regard of her : wherefore, the had determined betweene heaven and her foule, to fpend the remainder of her dayes in Pilgrimages and prayers, for prefervation of the Counts foule and her owne; carneftly defiring them, to undertake the charge and government of the Country, and fignifying unto the Count, how the had forfaken his house, and purposed to wander as farre thence, that never would thee vifite Rouffillion any more. In the delivery of these words, the Lords and Gentlemen wept and fighed extraordinarily, using many earnest deprecations to alter this resolve in her, but all was in vaine.

0

C

11

h

h

0

iy

to

th

at

Having taken her sad and forrowfull farewell of them all, accompanied onely with her mayd, and one of her Kinsmen, away she went, attired in a Pilgrimes habite, yet well furnished with money and precious lewels, to avoyde all wants which might befall her in travaile; not acquainting any one whither shee went. In no place stayed she, untill the was arrived at Florence, where hapning into a poore widdowes house like a poort Pilgrim, she seemed content therewith. And destring to heare some riding of the Count, the next day she saw him passe by the house on horse-backe, with his company. Now, albeit she knew him well enough, yet she demanded of the good old Widdow, what Gentleman he was? She made answere, that he was a stranger there, yet a Noble man called Count Bornaud

of Roufitton, a vertuous Knight, beloved and much respected in the Citty. Moreover, that he was farre in love with a Neighbour of hers, a young Gentkwoman, but very poore and meane in substance, yet of honest life, vertuous, and never taxed with any evill report; onely her poverty was the maine embarment of her marriage, dwelling in house with her mother,

who was a wife honest, and worthy Lady.

The Counteffe having well observed her words, and confidered thereon fro n point to point; debating foberly with her owne thoughts, in such a doubtfull case what was beft to be done. When the had understood which was the house, the ancient Ladyes name, and likewise her daughters, to whom her husband was so affectionately devoted; thee made choyle of a fit and convenient time, when (in her Pilgrimes habite) (ecretly the went to the house. There thee found the mother and daughter in poore condition, and with as poore a family: whom after the had ceremoniously faluted, the told the old Lady, that the requested but a little conference with her. The Lady arole, and giving her kinde entertainement, they went together into a withdrawing Chamber, where being both fet downe, the Counteffe began in this manner,

Madam, in my poore opinion, you are not free from the frownes of Fortune, no more than I my selfe am: but if you were so well pleased, there is no one that can comfort both our calamities in such manner, as you are able to doe. And believe me, answered the Lady, there is nothing in the world that can be so welcome to me, as honest comfort. The Countesse proceeding on in her former speeches sayd: I have now need (good Madam) both of your trust and sicelity, whereon if I should rely, and you faile me, it will bee, your owne undoing as well as mine. Speake then boldaly, replyed the old Lady, and remaine constantly assu-

red,

ir

red, that you shall no way be deceived by me, Heereupon the Countelle declared the whole course of her love from the very originall to the infant, revealing also what the was, and the occasion of her comming thither, relating every thing to perfectly, that the Lady verily beleeved her, by fome reports which the had formerly heard, and which mooved her the more to compaffion. Now, when all circumstances were at full dif-

covered, thus fpake the Counteffe.

Among my other miseries and misfortunes, which have half broken my heart in the meere repetition, befide the fad and afflicting fufferance; two things there are, which if I cannot compaffe to have, all hope is quite frustrate for ever, of gaining the grace of my Lord and hasband. Yet these two things may I obtaine by your helpe, if all be true which I have heard, and you can therein best resolve me. Since my comming to this City, it hath credibly beene told me, that the Count my husband, is deepely in love with your daughter. If the Count (quoth the Lady) love my daughter, and have a wife of his owne, he must thinke, and so shall furely finde it, that his greatnesse is no priviledge for him, whereby to worke dishonour upon her poverty. But indeed, some apparances there are, and luch a matter as you speake of, may be prefumed; yet fo farre from a very thought of entertaining in her or me; as whatfoever I am able to doe, to yeeld you any comfort and content, you shall finde me therein both willing and ready : for I prize my daughters spotlelle poverty at as high a rate, as he can doe the pride of his honour.

Madam, quoth the Counteffe, moft heartily I thanke you, But before I prefume any further on your kindnes, het mee first tell you, what faithfully I intend to doe for you, if I can bring my purpole to effect. I fee that your daughter is beautifull, and of fufficient

.

e.

yeares for marriage; and is debarred thereof (as I have heard) onely by lacke of a competent dowry. Where-fore Madam in recompence of the favour I expect from you, I willenrich her with so much ready money as you shall thinke sufficient to match her in the degree of honour. Poverty made the poore Lady, very well to like of such a bountiful offer, and having a Noble heart she fayd; Great Countesse, as can deserve such a gracious offer? If the action be hones; without blame or scandal to my poore, yet undetected reputation, gladly I will doe it; and is being accomplished, let the requitall rest

in your owne noble nature.

Observe me then Madam, replied the Countesse. It is most convenient for my purpose, that by some trusty and faithfull messenger, you should advertise the Count my husband, that your daughter is, and shall be at his command: but that the may remaine ablolutely affured, that his love is constant to her, and above all other: the must intreate him, to fend her (is a testimony thereof) the Ring which he weareth upon his little finger, albeit the hath heard, that he loveth it deerely. If he fend the Ring, you shall give it mee) and afterward fend him word, that your daughter is ready to accomplish his pleasure; but, for the more lafesy and secrecie, he must repaire hither to your house, where I being in bed infleed of your daughter, faire Fortune may fo favour me, that (unknowne to him) I may conceive with childe. Vpon which good fucceffe, when time shall serve having the Ring on my finger. and a childe in my armes begotten by him, his love and bking may be recovered, and (by your meanes) I continue with my Husband, as every vertuous Wife ought to doe.

The good old Lady imagined, that this was a matter somewhat difficult, and might lay a blamefull im-

putation

V

he

CO

rif

br

no

ca

ne

fire

de

of

putation on her daughter: Neverthelesse, considering, what an honest office it was in her, to be the meanes, whereby so worthy a Countesse should recover an unkind husband, led altogether by luft, and not a jot of cordiall love; thee knew the intent to be honeff, the Countesse vertuous, and her promise religious, and therefore undertooke to effect it. Within few dayes after, very ingeniously, and according to the instructed order, the Ring was obtained, albeit much against the Counts will; and the Countelle, in fled of the Ladyes vertuous daughter, was embraced by him in bed; the houre proving so auspicious, and Juno being Lady of the ascendent, conjoyned with the witty Mercury, thee conceived of two goodly Sonnes, and her deliverance

agreed correspondently with the just time.

Thus the old Lady, not at this time onely, but at many other meetings belides; gave the Countelle fice possession of her husbands pleasures, yet alwayes in fuch darke and concealed fecrecie, as it was never suspected, nor knowne by any but themselves, the Count lying with his owne wife, and disappointed of her whom he fo deerely loved. Alwayes at his up. rifing in the mornings (which usually was before the breake of day, for preventing the least scruple of sulpicion) many familiar conferences paffed betweene them with the gifts of divers faire and coffly lewels; all which the Counteffe carefull kept, and perceiving affuredly, that the was conceived with childe, the would no longer be troublesome to the good old Lady; but calling her afide, spake thus to her. Madam, I must needes give thinkes to heaven and you, because my defires are amply accomplished, and both time and your deferts doe justly challenge, that I should accordingly quite you before my departure. It remaineth now in your owne power, to make what demand you pleafe of me, which yet I will not give you by way of reward, because

because that would seeme to be base and mercenary; but onely whatfoever you shall receive of me, is in honourable recompence of faire and vermous defervings, fuch as any honest and well-minded Lady in the like distresse, may with good credit allow, and yet no pre101

Kr

lo

in

tri

dil

of

pr

lin

bu

L

CX

be

th

tw

CO

are

CIT

lo

25

bo

W.

me

CO

the

tio

YO

the

an

judice to her reputation.

Although poverty might well have tutored the Ladyes tongue, to demand a liberall recompence for her paines; yet the requested but an 100. pounds, 25 a friendly helpe towards her daughters marriage, and that with a bashfull blushing was uttered too; yet the Countelle gave her five hundred pounds, besides so many rich and costly jewels, as amounted to a farre greater fumme. So the returned to her wonted lodging, at the aged widdowes house, where first she was entertained at her comming to Florence; and the good old Lady, to avoyde the Counts repairing to her house any more, departed thence fodainely with her daughter, to divers friends of hers that dwelt in the Country, whereat the Count was much discontented; albeit af. terward, he did never heare any more tydings of het or her daughter, who was worthily marryed, to her Mothers great comfort.

Not long after, Count Bertrand was re-called home by his people, and he having heard of his wives abfence, went to Rouffillion fo much the more willingly. And the Counteffe knowing her husbands departure from Florence, as also his sale arrivall at his owne dwelling, remained still in Florence, untill the time of ber deliverance, which was of two goodly Sonnes, lively refembling the lookes of their Father, and all the perfect lineaments of his body. Perswade your selves, the was not a little carefull of their nurfing, and when the faw the time answerable to her determination, thee tooke her journey (unknowne to any) and arrived with them at Montpellier, where shee refted her felfe

for divers dayes, after fo long and wearifome a journey. Vpon the day of all Saints, the Count kept a folemne Feastivall, for the allembly of his Lords, Knights, Ladyes, and Gentlewomen: upon which loviall day of generall rejoycing, the Counteffe attired in her wonted Pilgrimes weed, repaired thither, entring into the great Hall where the Tables were readily covered for dinner. Preasing through the throng of people, with her two children in her armes, thee prefumed to the place where the Count fate, and falling on her knees before him, the teares trickling abundantly downe her checkes, thus the spake. Worthy Lord, I am thy poore, despised, and unfortunate wife; who (that thou mightft returne home, and not be an exile from thine owne abiding) have thus long gone begging through the world. Yet now at length, I hope thou wilt be fo honourably-minded, as to performe thine owne two strict imposed conditions, made to the two Knights which I fent unto thee, and which by thy command) I was enjoyned to doc. Behold here in my armes, not onely one Sonne by thee begotten, but two Twins, and thy Ring befide. High time is it now, if men of honour respect their promises, and after so

as thy true wife.

The Count hearing this, floode as confounded with admiration; for full well he knew the Ring; and both the children were so perfectly like him, as hee was confirmed to be their Father by generall judgement. Vpon his urging by what possible meanes this could be brought to passe; the Countesse in presence of the whole assembly, and unto her eternall commendation, related the whole history, even in such manner as you have formerly heard it. Moreover, the reported the private speeches in bed, uttered between himselfe and her, being witnessed more apparantly, by the costly

long and tedious travell, I should at last be welcommed

Icwels

Iewels there openly showne. Al which infallible proofes proclaiming his shame, and her most noble carriage to her husband, he confessed, that shee had told nothing but the truth in every point which shee had reported.

Commending her admirable conftancy, excellency of wit, and sprightly courage, in making such a bold adventure; he kiffed the two fweete boyes, and to keepe his promife, whereto he was earnestly importuned, by al his best esteemed friends there present, especially the honourable Ladyes, who would have no deniall, but by forgetting his former harth and uncivil carriage towards her, to accept her for ever as his lawfull wife : folding her in his armes, and sweetely kiffing her divers times together, he bad her welcome to him as his vertuous, loyall, and most loving wife, and fo (for ever after) he would acknowledge her. Well knew he that the had flore of better befeeming garments in the house, and therefore requested the Ladyes to walke with her to her Chamber, to uncase her of those Pilgrimes weeds, and cloath her in her owne more fumptuous garments, even those which she wore on her wedding day, because that was not the day of his contentment, but onely this; for now he confessed her to bee his wife indeed and now he would give the king thanks for her, and now was Count Bertyand truely married to the faire Iuliet of Narbona.

A very worthy president for all young Lady es and Gentle-

women;

fut

wa

an

ha

dec

for

but

twe

un

fho

ten

let r

the !

35 P

obie

fonn

Tha very

Daug

ralle

of be

man

dene

tyery

7

The wonderfull and chasse resolved continency of faire Scrictha, daughter to Sivvalde King of Denmarke, who being sought and succlusto by many worthy persons that did affect her deerely, wou'd not looke any man in the face, untill fuch time as she was married.

The tenth Novell.

women, not rashly to bestow themselves in marriage, without the consent of their Parents and Friends.

toneus having diligently liftened to the Queenes lingular discourse, so soone as the had concluded, and none now remained but himselfe, to give a full period unto that dayes pleafure; without long trifling the time, or expecting any commaund from the Queene, thus he began. Gracious Ladyes, I know that you expect from me, some quaint tale as shall bee futable to my merry disposition, rather savoring of wantonnesse, than any discreete and sober wisedome; and such a purpose indeed I once entertained. But having well observed all your severall relations, grounded on grave and worthy examples, especially the last. fo notably delivered unto us by the Queene, I cannot but commend faire Juliet of Narbona, in performing two fuch strange impossibilities, and conquering the unkindnesse of so cruell a Husband. If my Tale come fhort of the precedent excellency, or give not fuch content, as you (perhaps) expect, accept my good will, and let me stand engaged for a better hereafter,

The Annals of Denmarke doe make mention, that the King of the fayd Country, who was first set down as Prince, contrary to the ancient custome and lawes observed among the Danes, namely Hunguinus, had a sonne called Sima'de, who succeeded him in the estates and kingdome, belonging to his famous predecessors. That Age, and the Court of that royall Prince, was very highly renowned, by the honour of saire Seristha, Daughter to the sayd Simalde; who beside her generall repute, of being a miracle of Nature, in perfection of beauty, and most compleate in all that the heart of man could desire to note; in a body sull of grace, gendenesse, and whatsoever esse, to attract the eyes of tvery one to beholde her; was also so chaste, modest,

c

ire

ho

eat

the

rie-

2071;

and

Novell. 10. The Third Day,

and bashfull, as it was meerely impossible to prevaile so farre with her, that any man should come to speake with her. For in those dayes matriages were pursued, and sought by valour, and by the onely opinion which stout Wartiours conceived of the vertuous qualities of a Lady. Notwithstanding never could any man make his vaunt, that she had given him so much as a looke, or ever any attained to the favour, to whisper a word in her eare. Because both the custome and will of Parents then (very respectively kept in those Northerne parts of the world) of hearing such speake, as defired their daughters in matriage, grew from offering them some worthy services; and thereby compassed meanes to yeeld their contentation, by some gracious and kinde answers.

But the, who was farre off from the defire of any fuch follies, referring her felfe wholly to the disposition of the King her Lord and Father; was fo contrary to give any living man an answere, that her eye never looked on any one speaking to her, appearing as sparing in vouchsafing a glance, as her heart was tree from a thought of affection. For the had no other imagination, buethat Maides both in their choyce and will, ought to have any other disposition, but such as would be pleasing to their Parents, either to graunt or deny; according as they were guided by their grave judgement. In like manner, lo well had frie brideled her sensuall appetites, with the curbe of Reason. Wifedome, and providence, fetting fuch an extraordinarie fevere and conftant restraint, on the twinking or motions of her eyes, in absolute obedience to her Father, as never was the feene to tutne her head afide, to lend one looke on any man of her age.

A worthy fight it was, to behold the Knights errant, passing, and repassing to Denmorke, and backe againe, labouring to conquer those settled eyes, to winne the

leaft

44

2

al

fr

CO

01

an

he

121

to

kn

all

tri

gal

fon

fio

WC!

arc

fo f

foli

WAS

dou

veri

113:

love

ence

7

leaft figne of grace or likelihood of any favour, from her whom they so dutioully pursued, to steale but a filly glaunce, and would have thought it a kind of homourable theft. But this immovable tooke of beauty, although the knew the designes of them which thus frequented the Court of the King her Father, and could not pretend ignorance of their endeavour, ayming onely at obtaining her in marriage; yet did not lend any looke of her eye, yeelding the least signall of the hearts motion, in affecting any thing whatsoever, but

what it pleased her Father she should doe.

S

3

.

e

lc

17

n-

1-

16-

35

CC

1134.

nd

1 25

ror

avc

led

ile-

arie

no-

her,

lend

rant,

ainc,

e the

Seriaha, living in this strange and unusuall manner. it mooved many Princes and great Lords, to come and court her; contending both by all fignes and words to change her from this severe constancie, and make knowne (if possible it might be) whether a woman would or could be forefolute, as to ule no respect at all towards them, coming from fo many strange countries, to honour her in the Courts of the King her father. But in these dayes of ours, if such a number of gallant spirits should come, to aske but one looke of fome of our beauties, I am halfe affraide, that they fould finde the eyes of many of our dainty Darlings. not fo sparing of their glances, as those of Seriatha were. Confidering, that our courtiers of these times, are this way emulous one of another, and Women are fo forward in offering themselves, that they performe the Office of futers, as fearing least they should not be folicited, yea, though it be in honest manner.

The King, who knew well enough, that a Daughter was a treature of fome danger to keepe, and growing doubtfull withall leaft (in the end) this to obtinate kereity would be thaken if once it came to passe, that his daughter should feele the piercing apprehension of love, and whereof (as yet) she never had any experience; he determined to use some remedy for this great

ĸ

concourfes of lovers, and ftrange kinde of carriage in the Princelle his daughter. For, he apparantly perceived, that fuch an excelling beauty as was in Sericiba with those good and commendable customes, andother ornaments of his daughters mind, could never attaine to fuch an height of perfection; but yet there would be found tome fort of men, fo wittily accute and ingenious, as to convert and humor a Mayd, according to their will, and make a mockery of them, who were (before) of moit high efteeme. Beside, among so great a croope of Lords, as dayly made tender of their amorous fervice, some one or other would proove so happy, as (at the latt) the should be his mistresse. And therefore torbearing what otherwise he had intended, as a finall conclusion of all fuch follies: calling his daughter alone to himfelfe in his Chamber, and fan ding cleere from all other attention, he used to her this or the like language,

I know not faire daughter, what reason may moore you to thew your felie fo difdainefull towards to many Noble and worthy men, as come to vilite you, and honour my Court with their presence, offering me their love and loyall fervice, under this onely pretence (as I perceive) of obtaining you, and compassing the happinelle (as it appeareth in plaine ftrife among them) one day to winne the prize, you being the maine if-Ine of all their hope. If it be bothfull modefly, which (indeede)ought to attend on all virgins of your yeares and to veyles our eyes, as (with honour) you cannot looke on any thing, but what is your owne, or may not justly vouchfate to fee: I commend your maidenly continencie, which yet neverthelette, I would not have to be lo fevere, as: (at length) your youth falling into millie thereof, it may be the occasion of some great misfortune, either to you, or me, or elle to us both together; confidering what rapes are ordinarily com-

mitted

O

y

de

yo

yo

you

lar

the

upo

lov

juff

ring

the

way to your felf; which happening, would prefently be

the caule of my death.

d

13

1.

115

TE

ny

10-

cir

is I

ap-

m)

il-

nich

eres

not

not

enly

not

lling

Ome

both

om-

itted

If it bein regard of fome vow which you have confeccated to virginity, and to some one of our Gods: I feeke not therein to hinder your diffeignes, neither will bereave the celestiall powers, of whatsoever appertaineth to them. Albeit I could wifh, that it fhould be kept in a place more fraited, and separate from the refort of men; to the end, that fo bright a beauty as yours is, should cause no discords among amorous suters, neither my Court prove a Campe destined unto the conclusion of such quarrels, or you be the occasion of reviving fo many, whose service would beseme a much more needfull place, than to dye heere by a fond and foolish opinion of enjoying a vaine pleasure, yet remaining in the power of another body to grant. If therefore I shall perceive, that these behaviours in you doe proceed from pride, or contempt of them, who endeavour to doe you both honour and service, and inflead of granting them a gracious looke, in arrogancie you keepe it from them, making them enemies to your folly and my fufferance: I fweare to you by our greateft God, that I will take fuch due order, as shall make you feele the hand of an offended father, and teach you (henceforth) to be much more affable.

Wherefore deere daughter you shall doe me a singular pleasure, freely to acquaint me with your minde, and the reasons of your so stricte severity: promising you, upon the word and faith of a King, nay more, of a loving and sinde Pather, that if I finde the cause to be just and reasonable. I will desist so farre from hindering your intent, as you shall rather perceive my fatherly surther ance, and rest truely resoluted of my helpe and sayour. Wherefore faire daughter, neither blush or distray, or feare to let me understand your will for evi-

R 2

dently

dently I fee, that meere virgin shame hath made a rapture of your soule, being nothing else but those true splendors of vertue derived from your Auncestors, and shining in you most gloriously, gracing you with a nuch richer embellishing, than those beauties bestowed on you by Nature. Speake therefore boldly to your Father, because there is no law to prohibite your speech to him: for when he commandeth, hee ought to be obeyed: promising upon mine oath once agains, that if your reasons are such as they ought to be, I will

not faile to accommodate your fancy.

The wife and vertuous Princesse, hearing the King to alledge fuch gracious reasons, and to lay so kinde a sommand on her, making him most low and humble reverence, in figne of dutiful accepting fuch favour, thus the answered. Royall Lord and Father, seeing that in your Princely Court, I have gathered whatfoever may be termed vertuous in me, and you being the principall instructer of my life, from whom I have learned those lessons, how maides (of my age) ought to governe and maintaine themselves : you shall appagantly perceive, that neither gazing lookes, which I ought not to yeelde without your confent, nor pride or arrogancie, never taught me by you, or the Queene my most honourable Lady and Mother, are any occasion of my carriage towards them, which come to make oftentation of their folly in your Court, as if a meere looke of Seriella, were sufficient to yeeld affurance effectually of their defired victory.

Nothing (my most Royall Lord and Father) indueeth me to this kind of behaviour, but onely due respect of your honour and mine owne: and to the end it may not be thought that I belye my selfe, in not eying the affectionate offers of amorous pursuers, or have any other private reserved meaning, than what may best please King Sinualde my Father, let it suffice Sir, that n

to

YC

th

28

lef

CO

of

is,

mı

for

fou

bef

it remaineth in your power onely, to make an apt election and cheyce for me: for I never ought nor will allow the acceptance of any futers kindnesse, so much as by a looke (much leffe than by words) untill your Highneffe shall nominate the man, to beca meete hufband for Seriaha It is onely you then (my Lord) that beares the true life-blood of our Ancestors. It is the unrainted life of the Queene my Mother, that fets a chafte and friet restraint on mine eyes, from estranging my heart to the idle amorous enticements of young giddyheaded Gentlemen, and have fealed up my foule with an absolute determination, rather to make choyce of death, than any way to alter this my warrantable fe-

verity.

ie

ve

ht

a-

1

or

ny

on

ke

cre

cf-

đu-

re-

dit

ing any

best

that

36

You being a wife King, and the worthy Father of Serillha, it is in you to mediate, counsell, and effect. what best shall beseeme the de seignes of your daughter, because it is the vertue of Children, yea, and their eternall glory and renowne, to illustrate the lives and memory of their parents. It confifteth in you, eitograunt honest license to such Lords as defire me, or to oppose them with fuch discreete conditions, as both your felfe may fit free from any further afflicting, and they rest descated of dangerous diffentions, according as you forefee what may enfine. Which yet inevertheleste) I hold as a matter impossible; if their difcord should be grounded on the sole apprehension of their foules: and the onely prevention thereof, is, not to yeeld any figne, glance of the eye, or fo much as a word more to one man than to another: for fuch is the fetled disposition of your daughters foule, and which the humbly entreateth, may to fill

Many meanes there are, whereby to winne the grace of the greatest King, by employing their paines in worthy occasions, answerable unto their yeeres and

R 3

vertue,

vertue, if any fuch sparkles of honour doe finne in their foules; rather than by gaining heere any matter of fo meine moment, by endeav ouring to fhake the fimpli, city of a bafhfull Mayd: Let them cleare the Kings High-wayes of Theeves, who make the passages difficult; or let them expell Pyrats from off the Seas, which make our Danish coasts every way inaccessible. These are the Noble meanes to merite, as may throw deferved recompence upon them, and much more worthily, than making Idolles of Ladyes lookes, or gazing for Babyes in their wanton eyes. So may you beflow on them what is your owne, granting Seriffab to behold none, but him whom you shall please to give her : for otherwife, you know what her absolute refolve is, never hereafter for to looke any living man in the face, but onely you my gracious Lord and Father.

When the King had heard this wife and modest answere of his daughter, he could not otherwise chuse but greatly commend her in his heart; and fmiling at the counsell which she gave him, hee returned her this answere. Vnderstand mee well, faire daughters newher am I minded to breake your determination wholly, nor yet dee I purpose to governe my selfe according to your owne fancy. I fland indifferently contented, that untill I have otherwise purposed, you shall continue the nature of your ancient custome : yet conditionally, that when I command an alteration of your carriage, you faile not therein to declare your obedience. What elle remaineth befide, for fo filly a thing as a Woman is, and for the private pleafing of fo many great Princes and Lords, I willnot endanger any of their lives, because their parents and friends (being fentible of fuch loffes) may feeke revenge, perhaps to their owne ruine, and fomefollowing feourge to my indifferetion. For I confider

confider (daughter) that I have neighbours who fearfely love me, and of whom (in time) I may right my selfe, having receive by their meanes, great wrongs and injuries. Also I make no doubt, but to manage your love-sute with discretion, and set such a pleasing proceeding between them, as neither shall beget any hatred in them towards me, nor yet offend them in their affectious pursuite, till fortune may smile so favourably upon some one man, to reach the height of both our wished desires.

Simulde was thus determinately refolved, to let his daughter live at her owne diferetion, without any alteration of her continued feverity, perceiving day by day, that many came fill to request her in marriage, and he could not give her to them all, nor make his choyse of any one, least all the refe should become his enemies, and fall into quarrell one with anc-

ther:

0

-

rş

n

d

c

Onely this therefore was his ordination, that among such a number of amorous suiters, hee onely should weare the Lawrell wreath of victory, who could obtain such favour of Seristing, as but to looke her in the face. This condition seemed to be of no meane difficulty, yea, and so impossible, that many gave over their amorous enterprize: whereof Seristing was wondrously joyfull, seeing her selte eased of such tedious importunity, dulling her eases with their proffered services, and soppish allegations of fantasticke serviced, such as idle headed lovers doe use to protest before their Mistresses, wherein they may believe them, if they list.

Among them that were thus forward in their heate of affection, there was a young Danish Lord, named Ocharus, the some of a Pirate, called Hibenius, the same man, who having stone the Sister unto King Hunguinus, and affect to Simulde, and affancing him-

R

Telfe to her, was Laine by King Haldune, and by thus hilling him, enjoyed both the Lady, and the Kingdome of the Gothes also, as he inheritance. This Ocharus, relying much on his comelineffe of person, wealth, poever, and valour, but (above all the rest) on his excellent and eloquent speaking; bestowed his best endeayours to obtaine Serifiba, notwithstanding the concemptible carriage of the rest towards him: whereupon prevailing for his accesse to the Princelle, and admitted to speak, as all the other did, he reasoned with her thus.

Whence may it proceede, Madam, that you being she fairest and wife Princesse living at this day in all the Northerne parts, should make so small account of your felfe, as to denie that, which with honour you may yeeld to them, as feeke to doe you most humble Krvice; and forgetting the ranke you hold, doe refuse so deigne them recompence in any manner whatfoewer, feeking onely to enjoy you in honourable marriage? Perhaps you are of opinion, that the Gods should become flaves to your beauty, in which respect, men are unworthy to crave any fuch acquaintance of you. If it be fo, I confesse my selfe conquered : But if the Gods feeke no fuch affociation with women, and fince shey for fook the world, they left this legacy to us men; I thinke you cover after none, but fuch as are extracted of their blood, or may make vaunt of their neere kindred and alliance to them. I know that many have withed, and doe yet defire you : I know also, that as many have requested you of the King your father, but the choyce remaineth in your power, and you being ordained the Iudge to diffinguish the merit of all your Sutors; me thinkes you doe wrong to the office of a Judge; in not regarding the parties which are in fuite, to sentence the desert of the best and bravest, and soto delay them with no more lingering.

I canpor thinke Madam, that you are fo farre out of

hus

me

00 -

cel-

ea-

on-

On

ed

us.

ng

all

of

OU

le

ſc

e-

i-

ld

n

2.

IC

c

ŝ

-

felfe, and fo chill cold in your affection, but defire of occasions, equall to your vertue and fingular beauty, do fometime touch you feelingly, and make you to with for fuch a man unswerable to the greatnesse of your excellency. And if it should be otherwise (as I imagine it to be impossible) yet you ought to breake such designe, onely to fatisfie the King your Father, who can defire nothing more, than to have a Sonne in law, to revenge him on the Tyrant of Swetia; who, as you well know, was sometime the murtherer of your Grand father Hunguings, and also of his Father. If you please to vouchfafe me fo much grace and favour, as to make mee the man, whom your heart hath chosen to bee your husband; I sweare unto you by the honour of a Souldier, that I will undergoe fuch fervice, as the King shall bee revenged, you royally fatisfied, and my felfe advanced to no meane happines, by being the only fortunate man in the World. Gentle Princesse, the most beautifull Daughter to a King, open that indurate heart, and fo foften it, that the sweete impressions of love may bee engraven therein; see there the joyfull pursuite of your Ocharus, who, to fave his life, cannot fo much as win one looke from his divine Mistresse.

This nicenesse is almost meerely barbarous, that I, wishing to adventure my life prodigally in your services, you are so cruell, as not to deigne recompende to this duty of mine, with the least signe of kindnesse that can be imagined. Faire Seristha, it you desire the death of your friendly servant Ocharus, there are many other meanes wherby to performe it, without consuming him in so small a fire, and suffer him there to languish without any answere If you will not looke upon me; if my face be so unworthy, that one beame of your bright Sunne may not shine upon it: If a word of your mouth bee two precious for mee; make a signe with your hand, either of my happinesse of disaster. If your hand

be envious of mine case, let one of your women be she, to pronounce the fentence of life or death; because, if my life be hatefull to you, this hand of mine may facrifice it to the rigor of your diffaine. But if (as I am tather perswaded) the ruine of your servants, be against your more mercifull withes; deale fo that I may perceive it, and expresse what compassion you have of your Ocharus, who covereth nothing more, than your dayly hearts cale and contentment, with a priviledge ofhonour above other Ladies. All this discourse was heard by Serielha, but folittle was the moved therewith as the was farre enough off from returning him ong answere, neither did any of the Gentlewomen attending on her, ever heare her use the very least word to any ofher amorous follicitors, nor did she know any one of them, but by speech onely, which drove them all into an uner despaire, perceiving no poffible meanes whereby to conquer her.

The Histories of the Northerne Countries doe de. dare, that in those times, the rapes of women were not much respected; and such as pursued any Lady or Gentlewoman with live, were verily perswaded, that they never made jufficient proofe of their amourous passions, if they undertooke not all cunning stratagems, with adventure of their lives to all perils whatfoever, for the rape or flealth of them, whom they purpoled to enjoy in marriage. As we reade in the Gothes History of Gramo, Sonne to the King of Denmarke, who being impatiently amorous of the daughter to the King of the Gothes, and winning the love of the Lady; ftole her away before her parents or friends had any notice thereof; by meanes of which rape, there followed a most bloody warre betweene the Gothes and the Danes. In recompence of which injury, Siblagerus, King of Norway being chosen chiefe Commander of the Swesians & Gother, entired powerfully into Deploark, where

fieft

her he violated the Sifter to King Gramo, and led away her Daughter, whom in like manner he made his spouse as the Dane had the Daughter of Sigtrage, Prince

of the Gothes.

I induce these briefe narrations, onely to shew, that while Ochmeus made honest and affable meanes, to win respect from Sericiba, and used all honourable services to her, as the Daughter of so great a Prince worthily deserved fome there were, not halfe so conscientious as he, especially one of the amountous success, who being wearse of the strangeness of Sericiba, dissembling to prosecute his purpose no surther; prevailed so farre, that he corrupted one of her Governesses, for secretly training her to such a place, where the ravisher should lyen ambush to carry her away, so to enjoy her by policy, seeing all other meanes failed for to compasse his defire.

Behold, to what a kind of foolish rage, which giddy headed dullards doe terme a naturall paffion, they are led, who being guided more by fenfuality, than reafon : or discretion, follow the brainc-ficke motions of their rath apprehentions. He which purfacely and protests to love a Lady for her gentility and vertue, knoweth not how to measure what love is, neither feeth nor conceiveth, how farre the permilion of his owne endeavours extendeth. Moreover, you may observe, that never age was fo grotte, or men to simple, but even al most from the beginning, avarice did hood-winks the hearts of men, and that (with gold) the very ftrongeft Fortification in the World hath beene broken, yea, and the beft bard gates layd open. Sertaba, who thunned the fight of all men, and never diffurbed them. which kept about her; the who never knew (except fome us usull parke gave light to her understanding what belonged to the embracements of mens mult now (without dreaming thereon) fall as foode to the infatial le

insatiable appetite of a wretch, who compassed this surprisall of her, to glory in his owne lewdnesse, and make a mocke of the Princesses setted constancyki

CI

th

ki

m

N

th

to

25

be

a

W

hi

ga

lin

lo

Vi

w

th

he

all

po

She, good Lady, following the counfell of her trayterous guide, went abroad on walking, but weakely accompanied, as one that admitted no mento attend her;
which she might have repented very decrely, if heaven
had not succored her innocency, by the helpe of him
who wished her as well as the ravisher; though their
desire were quite contrary; the one to enjoy her by violence, but the other affected rather to dye, than doe
the least act which might displease her. No sooner was
Seristia attived at the desired place, where the false
governesse was to delivet her; but behold a second
Paris came, and seized on her, hurrying her in haste away, before any helpe could possibly rescue her; the
place being sarre off from any dwelling.

Now the ravisher durst not convey her to his owne abiding, to enjoy the benefit of his purchase; but haled her into a small thicket of trees, where although shee knew the evident peril, whereinto her severe continency had now throwne her: yet notwithstanding, shee would not lift up hereyes, to see what he was that had thus stolne her, so simply shee dwelt upon grounded deliberation, and such was the rigor of her chast resolve. And albeit she knew a wickednesse (worse than death) preparing for her, who had no other glory than in her vertue, and defire to live contentedly, yet was she no more assounded thereat, than if he had ed her to the Palace of the King her Father: perswading her selfe, that violence done to the body, is no prejudice to heaour, when the mind is free trom consent.

As thus this robber of beauty was preparing to maffacte the modelty of the faire Princelle, the refuled him. with all her power, yea, and defended her felfe so worabily, that he could not get one looke of her eye, one kiffe

kille of her cheeke, nor any advantage whatfoever. crying out thrilly, and firugling against him firongly; her outeries were heard by one, who little imagined that the was fo neere, whom he loved more deerely than his owne life, namely, Ocharus; who was walking accidentally alone in this wood, devifing by what meanes he might win grace from his fterne Millrelle, No fooner tooke he knowledge of her, and faw her (in the armes of another) to be ravished; but he cryed out to the thiefe, faying, hand off villain, let not fuch a flave as thou, prophane with an unreverent touch the facred honour of fo chafte a Princeffe, who deferveth to be more royally respected, than thus rudely hurried: Hand off I fay, or elfe I fweare by her divine perfections, whom I esteeme above all creatures in this world, to make thee die more miferably, than ever a-

ny man as y et did.

Whofoever had feene a Lyon or an Ounce roufe himselfe, chasing when any one adventureth to rob him of his prey; and thefe with fierce eyes, mounted creafts, writhed tailes, and sharpened pawes, make against him that durft lo mollest him. In the like manner did the ravisher thew himselfe, and one while snarling, another while briffling the darted disdainefull lookes at Ocharus, and speake to him in this manner. Vilcand base sea-theese, as thou art, welcome to thy deferred wages, and just repaiment for thy proud prefuming. Itglads my heart not a litle, to meet thee here, where thou thalt foone perceive what good will I beare thee, and whether thou be worthy or not to enjoy the honour of this Lady, now in mine owne absolute posfession. It will also encrease her more ample perswasion of my worth, and pleade my merit more effectually in her favour; when thee thall fee what a powerfull arme I have, to punish this proud insolence, of a Pirate.

Novell. 10. The Third Day,

This harfh language was fo distaffull to Ocharus that like a Bull, mide angry by the teeth of tome Maflive Dogge, or pricked by the point of a weapon, hee ran upon his enemy, and was fo roughly welcommed by him, as it could not eafily be jud 'ed which of them had the better advantage. But in the end Fortune favoured most the honest man, and Ocharus having overthrowne the robber, hee smore the head of him quite from his shoulders, which he presented to her, whom he had delivered out of fo great peril, and thus he spake. You may now behold Madam, whether Ocharus be a true lover of Serichaes yertues, or no, and your knowledge fully refolved, at what end his affection aimetis; as also, how farre his bonest defert extendeth, for you both to love him, and to recompence the loyall respect he hath used towards you. Never locke on the villaines face, who firove to mame the King your Farbers Court, by violation of theevery, the choifest Princelle of the earth; but regard Ocharus, who is ready to facrifice himselfe, if you take as much pleasure in his rnine, as (hee thinketh) he hath given you contentment, by delivering you from this Traytor.

Doth it not appeare unto you Madam, that I have as yet done enough, whereby to be thought a worthy husband, for the royal daughter of Denmarke? Have I not fatisfied the Kings owne Ordinance, by delivering his daughter, as already I have done? Will geriffinabe to conflant in her cruelty, as not to turne her eye towards him, who expoted his life, to no meane perill and doner, onely in the defence of her chaffity? Then I plainely perceive, that the wages of my devoire, is ranked amongst those precedent services, which I have performed for so has full a beautie. Yet genile Princesse, that nearly a beautie and my more importance, than all the others can be, and my more in oway to be compared with theirs; at least, if

vou

10

10

C

ki

th

ba

in

be

rc

2%

00

th

13

if

0

h

p

tl

th

21

ce

ed

ın

1

te

m

c.

3

N-

13

ti

a

cs

13

Te

.

13

į.

13

19

-

1

.

1

c

f

you please to make account of him, who is an unseined lover of your modesty, and devoutly honoureth your vertuous behaviour. And yet Madam, shall I have none other answer from you, but your perpetuall silence? Can you continue so obtainate in your opinion, in making your selfe still as strange to your Ocharus, as to the rest, who have no other affection, but onely to the bare outside of beautie? Why then, Royall Lady, seeing (at this instant time) all my labour is but lost, and your heart seemeth much more hardned, in acknowledging any ofmy honest services: at least yet let me be so happy, as to condust you backeto the Palace, and restore you to that sacred safetie, which will be my soules best comfort to behold.

No outward figne of kinde acceptation, did any way expresse it selfe in her, but rather as searing, less the commodiou nesse of the place should inche this young Lord, to forget all honest respect, and imitate the other in like basenesse. But he, who rather wished a thousand deaths, than any way to displease his Mistresse, as if he were halfe doubtfull of her suspition, made offer of guiding her backe to the place, from whence shee had before beene stellae, where she found her company still staying, as not daring to sirre thence, to let the King know his daughters ill fortune; but when they saw her returne, and in the company of so worthy a Knight, they grew resolved that no violence had

The Princelle tharpely rebused her women, for leaving her so basely as they had done, gave charge to one of them (because the woold not feeme altogether negligent and discourteous) that she being gone thence, the should not faile to thanke Ochara, for the honest and faithfull service he had done unto her, which she would continually remember, and recompence as it lay in her power. Neverthelesse, the advised him withall

not to hope of any more advantage thereby, than reaton should require. For if it were the will of the Gods, that the should be his wife, neither she, nor any other could let or hinder it: but if her destiny reserved her for another, all his services would availe to no purpose, but rather to make her the more rigorous towards him.

This gracious anliver, thus given him by the Gentlewoman, although it gave some contentment to the languishing lover, yet he faw no assured signe wheron to lettle his refolve, but his hopes vanished away in fmoake, as fast as opinion bred them in his braine. And gladly he would have given over all further amorous folicitings, but by some private perswasions of her message sent him, which in time might so advance his fervices done for her fake, as would derive far greater fivours from her. Whereupon, hee omitted no time or place, but as occasion gave him any gracious permission, itil plied her memory, with his manly refeuing her from the Ravisher, sufficient to pleade his merit to her Father, and that in (all equitie) thee ought to be his wife, by right both of honour, and Armes; no man being able to deserve her as hee had done.

So long he pursued her in this manner, that his speeches seemed hatefull to her, and devising how to be free from his daily importunities, at length, in the habite of a poore Chamber-maide, shee secretly departed out of the Court, wandering into the solitary parts of the countrey; where shee entred into a service, and had the charge of keeping Sheepe. It may seeme strange, that a Kings onely daughter should stray in such fort; and despising Courtly life, betake her selfe to paines and servillitie; but such was her resolution; and women delighting altogether in extremes, spare no attempts to compasse their owne willes All the Court was in an uproare for the Ladies loss, the Father in no meane affliction, the Lovers well-neere beside their

wits

7

2

fo

wits, and every one elfe most grievously tormented that a Lady of fuch worth should so suddenly be gone, & all pursun made after her,gaine no knowledge of her.

In this high tide of forrow and difafter, what shall we fay of the gentle Lord Ocharus? What judgement can found the depth of his wofull extreamitie? Fearing least some other theese had now made a second stealth of his divine goddeffe; he must needes follow her againe, feeking quite throughout the world, never more returning backe to the Court, nor to the place of his owne abiding, untill he heard tidings of his Mistreffe, or end his dayes in fearch of her. No Village, Towne, Cottage, Caftle, or any place else of note or name, did he leave unfought, but diligently hee searched for Seridia; striving to get knowledge, under what habit she lived thus concealed, bur all his labour was to no effect; which made him leave the place so much frequented; and visite the solitary desert shades, entring into all caves and rufticke habitations, whereon he could fasten his eye, to fecke for the loft treasure of his foule.

On a day, as he wandered along in a vally, seated betweene two pleasant hills, taking delight to heare the gentle murmure of the rivers, running by the fides of two neighbouring rocks, planted with all kind of trees, and very thickly spread with mosse: he espied a flock of theep feeding on the graffe, and not far from them fate a maide spinning on her Distasse; who having got a fight of him, presently covered her face with a veile. Love, who fate as Sentinel both in the heart and eye of the gentle Norwegian Lord, as quickly discovered the subtilty of the faire Sheepheardesse, enstructing the foule of Ocharus, that the hid her face, not to be known: whereupon he gathered that doubtleffe this was free, for whom he had fought with fuch tedious trayell, and therefore going directly unto her, thus he spake,

Gentle Princesse; wherefore doe you hide your fe. . felic from me? Why doe you haunt thefe retreats and desolate abodes, having power to command over infinite men, that cannot live but by your prefence? What hath moved you Madam, to fly from company, to dwell among defert Rockes, and ferve as a flave, to fuch as are no way worthy of your service? Why dee you forfake a potent King, whole onely daughter and hope you are; leaving your countrey and royall traine o' Ladies, and so farre abasing your relfe, to live in the dejected frate of a fervant, and to some rusticke clowne or peazant? What reason have you, to despise so many worthy Lords, that dearely love and honour you, but (above them all) your poore flave Ocharus, who harh made no spare of his owne life for the safetie of yours, and also for the defence of your honour? Royall maid, I am the same man that delivered you from the villain, who would have violated your faire chaffitie; and fince then, have not spared any paine or travell in your fearch: for whose lesse, King Simalde is in extreme anguish, the Dance in mourning habits, and Ocharus even at the doore of death, being no way able to endure your absence.

Are you of the minde, worthy Madam, that I have not hitherto deferved to much as one good looke or glante of your eye, in recompence of so many good and loyall tervices? If Alas! I am neither ravisher, nor demander of any unjust requests, or else incivill in my motions: I may merit one regard of my Mistrelle, I require onely so filly a favour, that her eyes may pay me the wages for all which I have hitherto done in her service. What would you doe Madam, if I were an importante solicitor, and requested farre greater matters of you, in just recompence of mylabours? I do not defire, that you should embrace me. I am not so bold, as to request a kille of Serialases, more than immortall lips. Nor doe I covet, that shee should any otherwise

cutrents

grea

Your

as b

ction

be f

rega

con

red

ters

forl

sil

to c

the

fore

wil

det

ded

upe

lofe

effe

for

Fan

hey

wa

the

entreare me, than with such severity as beseemeth so great a princeffe. I aske no more, but onely to elevare your chafte eyes, and grace me with one little looke, as being the man, who for his vertue and loyall affection, hath deserved more than that favour, yea, a much greater and excellent recompence. Can you then be formell, as to deny me folmall a thing, without regard of the maine debt, wherein you Rand engaged

to your Ocharas ?

The Princesse perceiving that it availed nothing to conceale her felfe, being by him to apparantly difeovered; began now to speake (which she had never done before, either to him, or any other of her amorous futers) answering, him in this manner. Lord Ocharus, it might suffice you, that your importunity made me forfake my Fathers Court, and caufeth mee to live in this abased condition, which I purpose to prosecute sil my time ; or fo long (at the least) as you, and fuch as you are, purfue me fo fondly as you have prefumed to doe. For I am resolved, never to favour you any o+ therwife, than hitherto I have done; defiring you therfore, that Sericina wanting an Interpreter to tel youher will, you would now receive fooner her owne mouth, determining fooner to die, than aker a jot of her intended purpole.

Ocharus hearing this unwelcome answer, was even upon the point to have flaine himselfe: but yet, not to lofe the name of a valiant man, or to be thought of an effeminate or cowardly spirit, that a woman should force him to an act, fo farre unfitting for a man of his ranke, he tooke his leave of her, folemnely promifing, not to forget her further purfuire, but at all times to o. bey her, to long as he lived, although her command was very hard for him to endure. So hee departed thence, not unto the Court, the being not there, that had the power to enjoyne his presence : but home to

Novell.10. The Third Day.

his owne hou'e, where he was no fooner arrived, but he began to waxe weary of his former folly: accusing himselfe of great indiscretion, for spending so much time in vaine, and in her fervice, who utterly despited him, and all his endeavours which he undertooke. He began to accuse her of ingratitude, laying over-much respect upon her versue, to have no feeling at all of his loyall fufferings; but meerely made a mockery of his martyrdome. Hereupon, hee concluded, to give over all further affection, to languish no longer for her sake, that hated him and all his actions.

While he continued in these melancholly passions, the Princesse, who all this while had persisted in such frid feverity, as aftonished the courages of her foutest fervants; confidering (more deliberately) on the fincorreaffection of Ocharus, and that vertue onely made him the friend to her modefly, and not wanton or lafcivious appetite; thee felt a willing readinesse in her foule, to gratifie him in some worthy manner, and to recompence fome part of his travels. Which to effect, the resolved to follow him (in some counterfeit habite) even to the place of his owne abiding, to try, if eafily he could take knowledge of her, whom fo lately hee faw in the garments of a Shepherdeffe. Being thus minded, thee went to her mistresse whom the served, and who had likewise seene Lord Ocharus (of whom shee had perfect knowledge) when hee conferred with the Shephearddeffe, and enquiring the cause, why he reforted in that maner toher: Serifiba returned her this answer.

Mistrife, I make no doubt, but you will be somewhat amazed, and (perhaps) can hardly credit which you heare, that the who now ferveth you in the poore degree of Shephearddelle, is the onely daughter to Siwalde King of the Danes: for whose love, so many great Lords have continually laboured; and that I only attracted

banius her th daine, words advise make not in preva the, w albeit doc c as to

attrad

by I a rever him knov love TI and I of w her f

bega

from roun mak rive and mai don whe

desi cau for me attraced hither Ocharus the noble Son of valiant Hebarius, to wander in thefe folitary deferts, to finde one her that fled from him, and held him in as great difdaine, as I did all the rest of his fellow rivals. But if my words may not herein sufficiently assure you, I would advise you to fend where Ocharus dwelleth, and there make further enquiry of him, to the end that you may not imagine me a lyer. If my speeches doe otherwise prevaile with you, and you remaine affored, that I am the, whom your noble neighbour to dearely affecteth, albeit I never made any account at all of him : then I doe earnestly intreate you, so much to stand my friend, as to provide some convenient meanes for me, whereby I may passe unknowne to the Castle of Ocharus, to revenge my felfe upon his civill honefty, and smile at him hereafter, if he prove not so cleerely sighted, as to know her being fo neere him, whom hee vaunteth to love above all women elfe.

The good Countrey-woman hearing these words, and perceiving that she had the Princesse in her house, of whose speeches she made not any doubt, in regard of her stout countenance, gravity, and faire demeanor; began to rellish something in her minde, far differing from matter of common understanding, and therefore

roundely replied in this kinde of language.

Madam, (for fervant I may no longer call you) I make no question to the centrary, but that you are derived of high birth; having observed your behaviour, and womanly carriage. And so much the more I remaine assured thereof, having seene such great honour done unto you, by that worthy Warriour Ocharus: wherefore it lieth not in my power, to impeach your designes, much lesse to talke of your longer service, because you are the Princesse Seristba, whom I am to performe all humble duty unto, as being one of your meanest subjects. And although you were not shee.

Novell. 10. The Third Day,

his owne hou'e, where he was no fooner arrived, but he began to waxe weary of his former folly: accusing himselfe of great indiscretion, for spending so much time in vaine, and in her service, who utterly despited him, and all his endeavours which he undertooke. He began to accuse her of ingratitude, laying over-much respect upon her versue, to have no feeling at all of his leyall sufferings; but meerely made a mockery of his martyrdome. Hereupon, hee concluded, so give over all further affection, to languish no longer for her sake, that hated him and all his actions.

While he continued in these melancholly passions, the Princeffe, who all this while had perfifted in such fri& feverity, 2s aftonished the courages of her foutest fervants; confidering (more deliberately) on the finccere affection of Ocharus, and that vertue onely made him the friend to her modefly, and not wanton or lafcivious appetite; thee felt a willing readinesse in her foule, to gratifie him in some worthy manner, and to recompence fome part of his travels. Which to effect, the resolved to follow him (in some counterfeit habite) even to the place of his owne abiding, to try, if eafily he could take knowledge of her, whom fo lately hee faw in the garments of a Shepherdeffe. Being thus minded, thee went to her mistresse whom the served, and who had likewife feene Lord Ocharus (of whom thee had perfect knowledge) when hee conferred with the Shephearddeffe, and enquiring the cause, why he reforted in that maner toher: Serifiha returned her this answer.

Mistrse, I make no doubt, but you will be somewhat amazed, and (perhaps) can hardly credit which you heare, that she who now serveth you in the poore degree of Shephearddesse, is the onely daughter to siwalde King of the Danes: for whose love, so many great Lords have continually laboured; and that I only

attrafted

bonius her ti daine word advis make not i preve she, v albei doe e

by I rever him know love

of which her fire began from roun

make rived and main done wher defig cause form

mean

attraded hither Ocharus the noble Son of valiant Hebanius, to wander in these solitary deserts, to finde ont her that fled from him, and held him in as great difdaine, as I did all the rest of his fellow rivals. But if my words may not herein sufficiently affure you, I would advise you to fend where Ocharus dwelleth, and there make further enquiry of him, to the end that you may not imagine me a lyer. If my speeches doe otherwise prevaile with you, and you remaine affored, that I am the, whom your noble neighbour to dearely affecteth, albeit I never made any account at all of him : then I doe earnestly intreate you, so much to stand my friend, as to provide some convenient meanes for me, whereby I may passe unknowne to the Castle of Ocharus, to revenge my felfe upon his civill honefty, and smile at him hereafter, if he prove not fo cleerely fighted, as to know her being fo neere him, whom hee vaunteth to love above all women elfe.

The good Countrey-woman hearing these words, and perceiving that she had the Princesse in her house, of whose speeches she made not any doubt, in regard of her stout countenance, gravity, and faire demeanor; began to rellish something in her minde, far differing from matter of common understanding, and therefore

roundely replied in this kinde of language.

Madam, (for servant I may no longer call you) I make no question to the contrary, but that you are derived of high birth; having observed your behaviour, and womanly carriage. And so much the more I remaine assured thereof, having seene such great honour done unto you, by that worthy Warriour Ocharus: wherefore it lieth not in my power, to impeach your designes, much lesse to talke of your longer service, because you are the Princesse Seristba, whom I am to performe all humble duty unto, as being one of your meanest subjects. And although you were not shee.

yet would Inot prefume any way to offend you, in regard of the true and vertuous love, which that good Knight Ocharus scemeth to beare you. If my company be needfull for you; I befeech you to accept it: if not, take whatsoever is mine, which may any way sted you; for, to make you passe unknowne, I can and will provide sufficiently, even to your owne contentment, and in such strange manner, so Ocharus (were he never so clearely sighted) shall be deceived, you being attired in those sassing arments, which here in these parts

are ufually worne.

Sericlas being wonderoully joyful at her answer, fulfred her to paint, or rather foile her faire face, with the juice of divers hearbes and rootes; and cloathed her in fuch an habite as those women use to were that live in the mountaines of Norway, upon the feacoast fronting Great-Brittaine. Being thus disquised, confidently the went, to beguile the eye of her dearest friend, and fo to returne backe againe from him, having afforded him fuch a fecret favour, in requitall of his honourable services; delivering her out of so great a danger, and comming to vilite him in fo folitary a life. Nor would thee have the woman, company any further, than till the came within the fight of Ocharus his Caftle; where when the was arrived (he being then absent) the mother unto the noble Gentleman, gave her courteous welcome; and, notwithstanding her groffe and homely outward appearance, yet the colle-Aed by her countenance, that there was a matter of much more worth in her, than to be a woman of bale breeding.

When Otharus was returned home, he received advertisement by his mother, concerning the arrivall of this stranger, when as sodninely his soule halfe perfewaded him of some kinde court sie to proceede from his sweete rebell, pretending now some seigned excuse,

offices
wonte
her ey
affure
Yet fo
thoug
triall,
dy thu
finall

Vpc

in rec

ded, a that h the contherest come contection as she express verthe should Ochara only w

prepar the im builty Ochari riage a hands fervant ly from

WCIC C

of Der

No

in recompense of all his travels, and passed honest offices. Observing all her actions and gestures, her wonted rigour never bending one jot, or gave Way to her eye to looke upon any man's he grew the better assured, that she was the daughter to King Simulde. Yet feigning to take no knowledge thereof, heebesthought himselfe of a quaint policy, whereby to make triall, whether secrat kindnesse had conducted this Lady thither, or no, to conclude his torments, and give

finall end to his grievous afflictions.

Vpon a watch-word given to his mother, he pretended, and so caused it to be noised through the house, that he wasto marry a very honoutable Lady; which the constant and chaste maide verily believed; and therefore gave the more diligent attendance (as a newcome fervant) to fee all things in due decency, as noone could expresse her felle more ready, because thee esteemed him above all other men, Yet fuch was the obfinate opinion the conceived of her owne precisenelle, as the would rather fuffer all the flames of love; than expresse the least shew of defire to any man living. No vertheleffe, the was inwardly offended, that any other should have the honor, to make her vaunt of enjoying Ocharus; whom (indeed) the covered, and thought him only worthy in her heart, to be Son in law to the King of Denmarke.

Now, as the mother was very feriously busied in preparing the Castle for receiving the pretended Brides the imployed her new maide (Seristhal meane) as busily as any of all the rest. In the meane while, Ocharus was laid upon a bed, well noting all her carriage and behaviour, the having a lighted candle in her hand, without any Candlesticketo hold it in As all the servants (both men and maides) wery running hastily from place to place, to carry such occasions as they were commanded, the candle was consumed to neero

to Scritthaes fingers, that it burned her hand. She, not to faile a jot in her height of minde, and to declare that her courage was invincible; was so faire off from casting away the small snuffe which offended her, that she rather graspt it the more strongly, a ent to the enflaming of her owne sless, which gave light to the rest about their businesse. A matter (almost) as marvellous, as the act of the noble Romane, who gave his hand to be burned, in presence of the Tuscan King, that had besiedged Rome. Thus this Lady would needes make it apparantly knowne, by this couragious act of hers, that her heart could not be enslamed or conquered, by all the fires of concupiscence, in suffering so stouchy and couragiously, the burning of this materials fire.

Ocharus, who (as we have already faid) observed everything that Serialha did; perceiving that the spake not one word, albeit her hand burned in such fierce manner, was much aftonished at her sprightly minde. And as he was about to adviseher, to hurle away the fire fo much offending her; Curiofitie (meerely naturall unto women) made the Lady life up her eyes, to fee (by Realth) whether her friend had noted her invincible constancy, or no. Whereby Ocharus won the honour of his long expeded victory; and leaping from off the bed, he ranne to embrace her not with any fuch feare as he had formerly used, in not daring so much as to touch her; but boldly nove clasping his armes about her, hee faid. At this instant Madam, the King your Fathers decree is fully accomplished, for I am the first man that ever lookt you in the face, and you are onely mine, without making any longer relistance. You are the Princely Lady and Wife, by me fo constantly loved and defired, whom I have followed with fuch painfull travell, exposing my life to infinite perils in your fervice : you have feene and lookt on himswho never craved any thing of you, but onely this favour whereof

ayour heart

then flow thy i

again felie. for d with on,S Ioath figne mode kindn carria ward o certifi the vvi thee h tion o Shee c Stiffe o

better:
disposi
ny other
nest O
winne
daught
Ocha

was fe

have a

other)

manly

wheref you canot bereave me againe, because the gods themselves, at such time as I least expected it, have bestowne it on me, as my deserved recompense and wor-

thy reward.

h

Is

f

In the delivery of these words, he kissed and embraced her a thousand times, the using no great relistance against him, but only as somewhat offended with her felfe, either for being fo rath in looking on him, or elfe for delaying his due ment fo long; or rather, because with her good will the had falne into the transgreft on. She declared no violent or contending motiou, as loath to cotinue fo long in his arms; but rather evident fignes of hearty contentment, yet in very bathfull and modest manner, willing enough to accept his loving kindnelle, yet not wandring from her wonted chafte carriage. He being favourably excused, for the ons ward expression of his amorous behaviour to her, and certified withall, that fince the time freeing her from the wretch, who fought the violating of her chaffity, thee had entirely respected him, (albeit, to thun suspition of lightnesse, and to win more assurance, of what thee credited sufficiently already, the continued her fiffe opinion against him) yet alwayes this resolution was fet downe in her foule, never (with her will) to have any other husband but Ocharus, who (above all other) had best deserved her, hy his generosity, vertue, manly carriage, and valiancy; whereof he might the better affure himselfe, because (of her owne voluntary disposition) thee followed to finde him out, not for any other occasion, but to revenge her selfe (by this honeft Office) for all that he had done or undertaken, to winne the grace and love of the King of Denmarkes daughter, to whom he presented such dutifull service.

Ocharus, who would not loofe this happinesse, to be made King of the Northerne llands, with a thankefull heart, accepted all her excuses. And being desirous to

Nove'l.10. The Third Day,

wifte no longertime in vaine, left Fortune should raise lome new stratagem against him, to dispossesse him of to taire a felicitie; left off his counterfeit intended marriage, and effected this in good earnest, and was wedded to his most esteemed Seritina. Not long had these Lovers lived in the lawfull and sacred rites of marriage, but King Simalde was advertised, that his Daughter had given her confent to Ocharus, and received him as her noble Husband. The party was not a jot displeasing to him, hee thought him to be a worthy Sonne in Law, and the condition did fo fuffis ciently excuse the match; onely herein lay the errour and offence, that the marriage was folen nized without his knowledge and confent, hee being not called thereto, or fo much as acquainting him therewith, which made him condemne Ocharus of over-bold arrogancy, he being fuch a great and powerfull King, to be so lightly respected by his Subjects, and especially in the marriage of his Daughter.

But Seriffia, who was now metamorpholed from a maide to a wife, and had lyen a few nights by the fide of a suldiour, was become much more valiant and adveriturous than the was before. Shee tooke the matter in hand, went to her Father, who welcommed her most lovingly, and to pleating were her speeches, carried with wit and womanly discretton, that nothing wanted to approve what the had done. Manters which he had never knowne, or fo much as never heard of, were now openly revealed, how Ocharus had delivered her from the Ravisher, what worthy respect hee then afed towards her, and what honour he extended to her in the deferts, where the tended her flocke as a Shepheardeffe, with many other honourable actions beside: shat the Kings anger became mildly qualified, and to farre he entered into affection, that he would not doe any thing thence-forward, without the counfell and

advilo

fr

be

of

m

ch

Ы

pl

lik

in

lov

the

the

be

ly l

tin

and

me

and

alle

yet

rex

advise of his Sonne in Law, whom so highly he effecmed, and liked so respectively of him, and his race, that his Queene dying, hee married with the Sister to Ocharus, going hand in hand with the gentle and mo-

deft Princelle Seriefna.

er

T.

of,

ed

ca

191

and

Vilo

This Novellof Dioneus, was commended by all the company, and so much the rather, because it was free from all folly and obscemesse. The Queene perceiving that as the Tale was ended, so her dignity must now be expited; shee tooke the Crowne of Laurell from est her head, and graciously placed it on the head of Philostratuss, saying; The worthy Discourse of Dioneus, being out of his wonted wanton element, causeth me (at the resignation of mine Authoritie) to make choise of him as our next Commander, who is best able to order and enstructus all; and so I yeeld both my place and honour to Philostratus, I hope with the good liking of all our assistants: as plainly appeareth by their instant carriage towards him, with all their heartiest love and suffrages.

Whereupon Philostratus, beginning to consider on the charge committed to his care, called the Mafter of the houshold, to know in what estate all matters were. because where any detect appeared, every thing might be the sooner remedied, for the better fatisfaction of the company, during the time of his authoritie. Then returning backe to the affembly, thus he began. Lovely Ladies, I would have you to know, that fince the time of abilitie in mee, to diffinguish betweene good and evill, I have alwayes beene hibject (perhaps by the meanes of some beautic here amongst us) to the proud and imperious dominion of love, with expression of all duty, humility, and most intimate defire to please: yet all hath proved to no purpose, but still have beene rejected for fome other, whereby my condition hath falne from ill to worfe, and fo ftill a is likely, even to

Novell.10. The Third Day.

the houre of my death. In which respect, it best pleafeth me, that our conferences to morrow, shall extend to no other argument, but onely such cases as are most comfortable to my calamity, namely, of such, whole love hath had unhappy ending, because I await no other since of mine; nor willingly would I be called by any other name, but the miterable and unfortunate

Lover.

Having thus spoken, he grose againe; granting leave to the rest, to recreate themselves till supper time. The Garden was very faire and spacious, affording Jarge limits for their feverall walkes; the Sunne being already fo low descended, that it could not be offensive to any onc: the Conies, Kids, and young Hindes skipping every where about them, to their no meane pleafure and contenement. Dioneus and Fiammetta, fate finging together, of Meffire Guiglielmo, and the Lady of Vertue. Philomena and Pamphilus playing at the Cheffe, all sporting themselves as best they pleased. But the houre of Supper being come, and the Tables covered about the faire fountaine, they fare downe and fupt in most loving manner. Then Philogratus, not to fwerve from the course which had beene observed by the Queenes before him, so soone as the Tables were taken away, gave command, that Madam Lauretta frould begin the dance, and likewife to fing a Song. My gracious Lord (quoth thee) I can skill of no other Songs, but onely a pecce of mine owne, which I have alreadylearned by heart, and may well befeeme this Assembly: if you please to vllow of that, I am ready to performe it with all obedience. Lady, replied the King, you your felfe being fo faire and lovely, fo needsmust be whatsoever commeth from you, therefore let us heare fuch as you have. Madam Lauretta, giying instruction to the Chorus prepared, and began in this manner.

The

Ano

The Song.

No faule fo comfortlesse, Hath more cause to expresse, Life woe and heavinesse, As I poore amorus Maide.

He that did forme the Heavens and every Starre: Made me as best him pleased,

Lovely and gracious, no Element at latre, Or elfe in gentle breafts to move warre,

But to have strifes appealed

Where Beauties eye should make the deepest scarre.
And yet when all things are confest,
Never was any soule distrest.
Like me poore amorous maide.
No soule so comfortlesse, so c.

There was a time, when once I was held deare,
Blest were those happy dayes,
Number lesse Love shittes whispered in mine eare,
All of faire hope, but none of desperate seare;
And all sunz Beautics praise.

Why should blacke cloudes obscure so bright a cleare?

And why should others swimme in ioy,

And no heart drowned in anney,

Like mine poore amorous maide?

Like mine poore amorous maide?
No foule so comfortlesses & c.
Well may 1 curse that sud and dismaliday.

When in unkinde exchange; Another beautie did my hopes betray;

And fole my dearest Love from me away : Which I thought very frange,

Confidering vowes were past, and what else may
Assure a loyall Maidens trust.
Never was Lover so unjust,

Like mine poore amorous maide. No foule so comforthe see. Come then kinde Death, and finish all my woes, Thy helpe is now the best.

Come lovely Nymphes, lead hands mine eyes to close, And let him wander where force be coes,

Vaunting of mine unrest;

Beguiling others by his treasherous fbe wes.

Grave on my Monuments,
No true love was worfe frent,
Than mine poore amorous Maide.
No foule so comfortlesse, es c.

So did Madam Lautetta finish her Song, which being well observed of them all, was understood by some in divers kindes: some alluding it one way, and others according to their owne apprehensions, but all consenting that both it was an excellent Ditty, well devised, and most sweetly sung. Afterward, lighted Torches being brought, because the Stars had already rishly spangled all the heavens, and the sit houre of rest approaching: the King commanded them all to their Chambers, where wee meane to leave them till the next morning.

The Fourth Day.

Wherein all the severall Discourses, are under the Gowernment of honourable Philostratus: And concerming such persons whose loves have had successels se ending.

The Induction unto the ensuing Novells.

Oft worthy Ladies, I have alwayes heard, as by the fayings of the Iudicious, so also by mine owne observation and reading, that the impetuous and violent windes of envir, doe sildome blow turbulently, but on the highest towers and tops of the trees most eminently advan-

ced.

CC

200

in

de

ve

W

bli th

ur

W

ke

Ic

Sig

m

W

in

be

pu

10

m

tu

vc

m

PC

m

Spi

ced. Yet (in mine opinion) I have found my felte much deceived; because, by striving with my very extermel endeavour, to shunne the outrage of those implacable winds; I have laboured to goe, not onely by plaine and even pathes, but likewife through the deepest vallies. As very easily may be seene and observed in the reading of thefe few fmall Novels, which I have written, not only in our vulgar Florentine p o'e, without any ambitious title; but also in a most humble ftile, fo low and gentle as possibly I could. And although I have beene rudely thaken, yea, almost halfe unrooted, by the extreame agitation of those blustring winds, and torne in peeces by the base back-biter, Envie, : yet have I not (for all that) discontinued, or broken any part of mine intended enterprize. Wherefore, I can fufficiently witnesse (by mine owne comprehenfion) the faying fo much observed by the wife, to be most true : That nothing is without Envic in the world, but milery onely.

Among varietie of opinions, faire Ladies; some seeing these Novelties, spared not to say; that I have beene over-pleasing to you, and wandered too farre from mine owne respect, imbasing my credit and tepute, by delighting my selfe too curiously, for the fitting of your humours, and have extolled your worth too much, with addition of worse speeches, than I meane to utter. Others, feeming to expresse more maturitic of judgement, have likewise said, That it was very unfurable for my yeares, to meddle with womens wanton pleasures, or contend to delight you by the very least of my labours. Many more, making thew of affecting my good fame and effective, fay; I had done much more wifely, to have kept me with the Mufes at Perna Tus, than to confound my fludies with fuch effeminate follies. Some other beside, speaking more de spightfully than discreetly, faid; I had declared more

m

th

vc

th

w

to

th

61

lef

So

Th

A

fro

to

go

fin

alr

for

an

per

flac

ret

humanity, in seeking meanes for mine owne maintenance, and wherevith to support my continuals necesbites, than to glut the world with gulleries, and feede my hopes with nothing but winde. And others, to calumniate my travels, would make you believe, that such matters as I have spoken of, are merely disguisted by me, and sigured in a quite contrary nature, quite from the course as they are related. Whereby you may perceive (vertuous Ladies) how while I laboured in pourservice, I amagitated and molested with these blusterings, and bitten even to the bare bones, by the sharpe and venemous teeth of envys all which (as heaven best knoweth) I gladly endure, and with good

courage.

Now, albeit it belongeth onely to you, to defend me in this desperate extremity, yet, noswithstanding all their utmost malice, I will make no spare of of my best abilities, and, without any answering them any otherwife than is fitting, will quietly keepe their flanders from mine cares, with some fleight reply, yer not deferving to be dreamt on. For lapparantly perceive, that (having not already attained to the third part of my paines) they are growne to fo great a number, and prefume very farre upon my patience : they may encrease, except they be repulsed in the beginning, to fuch an unfinity before I can reach to the end, as with their very least paines taking, they will finke me to the botttomlesse depth, if your facred forces (which are great indeed) may not ferve for me in their reliftance. But before I come to answer any one of them, I will relate a Tale in mine owne favour; yet nor a whole Tale, because it shall not appeare, that I purpose to mingle mine, among those which are to proceed from a company so commendable. Onely I will report a parcell thereof, to the end, that what remaineth unrold. may sufficiently expresse, it is not to be numbred among the reft to come.

By way then of familiar discourse, and speaking to my malicious detradors, I fay, that a long time fince, there lived in our City, a Citizen who was named Philippo Balduccio, a man but of meane condition, vet very wealthy, well qualified, and expert in many things appertaining unto his calling. He had a wife whom he loved most entirely, as the did him, leading together a sweete and peaceable life, fludying on nothing more, than how to please each other mutually. It came to passe, that as all flesh must, the good woman left this wretched life for a better, leaving one onely Sonne to her husband, about the age of two yeares. The husband remained fo disconsolate for the losse of his kinke wife, as no man poffibly could be more fortowfull, because he had loft the only jewell of his joy. And being thus divided from the company which hee most esteemed, he determined also to separate himselfe from the world, addicting all his endeavours to the service of God, and applying his young Son likewife, to the same holy exercises; Having given away all his goods for Gods fake, he departed to the Mountaine Afinaio, where hee made him a small Cell, and lived there with his little Sonne, onely upon charitable almes, with abstinence and prayer, forbearing to speake of any worldly occasions, or letting the Lad fee any vaine fight: but conferred with him continually, on the glories of eternall life, of God, and his Saints, and teaching him nothing elfe but devoute prayers, leading this kinde of life for many yeares together, not permitting him ever to goe forth out of his Cell, or thewing him any other but himfelfe.

The good old man used divers times to goe to Florence, where having received (according to his opportunities) the almes of divers well disposed people, heareurned backe agains to his Hermitage. It fortuned, that the Boy being now about eighteene yeares.

humanity, in seeking meanes for mine owne maintenance, and wherevith to support my continual necesbries, than to glut the world with gulleries, and feede my hopes with nothing but winde. And others, to calumniate my travels, would make you believe, that such matters as I have spoken of, are merely disguised by me, and sigured in a quite contrary nature, quite from the sourse as they are related. Whereby you may perceive (vertuous Ladies) how while I laboured in yourservice, I am agitated and molested with these biusterings, and bitten even to the bare bones, by the sharpe and venemous teeth of envys all which as heaven best knoweth) I gladly endure, and with good

00

10

10

n

fr

to

go

ch

2

fp

31

31

pe

courage.

Now, albeit it belongeth onely to you, to defend me in this desperate extremity, yet, nowithstanding all their utmost malice, I will make no spare of of my best abilities, and, without any answering them any otherwife than is fitting, will quietly keepe their flanders from mine cares, with some fleight reply, yernot deferving to be dreamt on. For lapparantly perceive, that (having not already attained to the third part of my paines) they are growne to fo great a number, and prefume very farre upon my patience : they may encrease, except they be repulsed in the beginning, to fuch an unfinity before I can reach to the end, as with cheir very least paines taking, they will linke me to the botttomlesse depth, if your facred forces (which are great indeed) may not ferve for me in their reliftance. But before I come to answer any one of them, I will relate a Tale in mine owne favout; yet not a whole Tale, because it shall not appeare, that I purpose to mingle mine, among those which are to proceed from a company to commendable. Onely I will report a parcell thereof, to the end, that what remaineth unfold. may sufficiently expresse, it is not to be numbred among the rest to come. By

By way then of familiar discourse, and speaking to my malicious detrators, I fay, that a long time fince, there lived in our City, a Citizen who was named Philippo Balduccio, a man but of meane condition, yet very wealthy, well qualified, and expert in many things appertaining unto his calling. He had a wife whom he loved most entirely, as the did him, leading together a sweete and peaceable life, studying on nothing more, than how to please each other mutually. It came to passe, that as all flesh must, the good woman left this wretched life for a better, leaving one onely Sonne to her husband, about the age of two yeares. The husband remained to disconsolate for the losse of his kinke wife, as no man possibly could be more fortowfull, because he had loft the only jewell of his joy. And being thus divided from the company which hee most esteemed, he determined also to separate himselfe from the world, addicting all his endeavours to the service of God, and applying his young Son likewife, to the fame holy exercises; Having given away all his goods for Gods fake he departed to the Mountaine Afinaio, where hee made him a small Cell, and lived there with his little Sonne, onely upon charitable almes, with abstinence and prayer, forbearing to speake of any worldly occasions, or letting the Lad see any vaine fight; but conferred with him continually, on the glories of eternall life, of God, and his Saints. and teaching him nothing elfe but devoute prayers, leading this kinde of life for many yeares together, not permitting him ever to goe forth out of his Cell, or thewing him any other but himfelfe.

The good old man used divers times to goe to Florence, where having received (according to his opportunities) the almes of divers well disposed people, hed returned backe agains to his Hermitage. It fortuned, that the Boy being now about eighteene yeares.

The Industion.

old, and his Father growne very aged; he demanded of him one day, whither hee went? Wherein the old man truly refolved him: whereupon, the youth thus spake unto him. Father, you are now growne very aged, and hardly can endure such painefull travell: why doe you not let me goe to Florence, that by making me knowne to your weld diposed friends. Such as are devoutly addicted both to God and you; I, who am young, and better able to endure travell than you are, may go thither to supply our necessities, and you take your ease in the means while? The aged man, perceiving the growth of his Son, and thinking him to be so well instructed in Gods service, as no worldly vanities could easily allure him from it; did not dislike the Lads honest motion, but when he went next to Florence.

tence, tooke him thither along with him.

When he was there, and had feene the goodly Palaves, Houses, and Churches, with all other fights to be scene in so pompous a Citie : hee began greatly to wonder at them, as one that had never feene them befire, at leaft, within the compasse of his remembrance; demanding many things of his Father, both what they were, and how they were named: wherein the old man still resolved him. The answers seemed to content him highly, and caused him to proceede on in further questions, according still as they found fresh oc. casions : till at the lad, they met with a troope of very beautifull women, going on in feemely manner together, as returning backe from a Wedding, No fooner did the youth behold them, but he demanded of his Father what things they were swherto the old man replied thus Sonne, cast downe thy lookes unto the ground, and doe not feeme to fee them at all, because they are bad things to behold. Bad things Father? anfivered the Lad. How doe you call them? The good old man, not to quicken any concupifemble appe-

rite

tite

to

rhe

VVC

rec

fee

fric

for

So

do

an

La

02

juc

p!

pa

m

th

hi

rei

an

do

tite in the young boy; or any other inclinable defire to ought but goodnesse; would not terme them by their proper name of Women, but told him that they

were called young Gozlings.

Here grew a matter of no meane marvell, that hee who had never feene any women before now; appeared not to respect the faire Churches, Palaces, goodly Horses, Gold, Silver, or any thing else which he had feenes but, as fixing his affection onely upon this fight, finddenly faid to the old man. Good Father, do fo much for me, as let mee have one of these Gozlings. Alas, Son (replied the Fath r) hold thy peace I pray thee, and doe not defire any fuch naughty thing. Then by way of demand, hee thus proceeded, faying. Father, are thefe naughtic things made of themfelves > Yes Son, answered the old man. I know not Father (quoth the Lad) what you meane by naughtineffe, nor why thefe goodly things should be so badly termed, but in my judgement, I have not feene any thing fo faire and pleasing in mine eye, as thefe are, who excell those painted Angels, which here in the Churches you have thewne me. And therefore Father, if ever youlove me, or have any care of me, let me have one of thefe Gozlings home to our Cell, where wee can make meanes sufficient for their feeding. I will not flaid the Father) be so much thine enemy, because, neither thou, or I, can rightly skill of their feeding. Perceiving prefently, that Nature had farre greater power than his Sonnes capacity and understanding; which made him repent, for fondly bringing his Sonne to Florence.

Having gone so farre in this fragment of a Tale, in am content to paule here, and will return against to them of whom I spake before; I meane my envious deprayers: such as have said (faire Ladies) that I am double blame-worthy, in seeking to please you, and

The Induction.

that you are also over-pleasing to me; which seeig confelle before all the world, that you are fingularly pleasing to me, and I have stroven how to please you effectually. I would demand of them (if they feeme fo much amazed hereat,) confidering, I never knew what belonged to true love kiffes, amorous embraces, and their delectable fruition, fo often received from your graces; but onely that I have yet scene, and doe daily behold, your commendable conditions, admired beauties, noble adornments by nature, and (about all the rest) your womanly and honest conversation, If hee that was nouriflied, bred, and educated, on a favage solitary mountaine, within the confines of a poore small Cell, having no other company than his Father: If fuch a one, I fay, upon the very first fight of your fexe, could fo constantly confesse that women were onely worthy of affection, and the object which (above all things elfe) hee most defired; why should thefe contumelions spirits so murmure against mee, ceare my credite with their teeth, and wound my reputation to the death, because your vertues are pleafing to me, and I endeavour likewife to pleafe you with my utmost paines? Never had the auspicious heavens allowed me life, but onely to love you; and from my very infancy, mine intentions have alwayes beene that way bent : feeling what vertue flowed from your faire eyes, understanding the mellissuous accents of your speech, whereto the enkindled flames of your fighes gave no meane grace. But remembering especially, that nothing could so please an Hermite, as your divine perfections, an unurtured Lad, without underflanding, and little differing from a meere brutith beaft: undoubtedly, who oever loveth not women, and defireth to be affected of them againe: may well be ranked among women-haters, speaking out of cankered spleene, and utterly ignorant of the secret power

fe

vi

re

1

as

re

th

ar

w

th

di

bi

fu

y

be

th

tli

q

ye

PC

(as also the vertue) of natural affection, whereof they feeming so careleffe, the like am I of their depra-

ving.

Concerning them that touch mee with mine age; Doe not they know, that although Leekes have white heads, yet the blades of them are alwayes greene? But referring them to their flours and taunts, I answere, that I shall never hold it any disparagement to me, so long as my life endureth to delight my felfe with those exercifes which Guido Cavalcenti, and Dante Alighieri, already aged, as also Meffer Cino de Piftoia older than ejther of them both, held it to be their chiefest honour. And were it not wandring too farre from our present argument, I would alledge Histories to approve my words full of very ancient and famous men, who in the ripest maturity of all their time, were carefully fudious for the contenting of women, albeit thefe cockbraines neither know the way how to doe it, nor are fo wife as to learne it.

Now, for my dwelling at Parnaffus with the Mules, I confesse their counsell to be very good: but we cannot alwayes continue with them, nor they with us. And yet nevertheleffe, when any man departeth from them, they delighting themselves, to see such things as may be thought like them, (for like will to like) doe not therein deserve to be blamed. We finde it recorded, that the Muses were women, and albeit women cannot equall the performance of the Mules; yet in their very prime aspect, they have a lively resemblance with the Muses: so that, if women were pleasing for nothing else. yet they ought to be generally pleafing in that respect. Befide althis, women have bin the occasion of mycompoling a thouland verles, wheras the mules never cauled me to make fo much as one. True it is, that they gave me good affiftance, & directed me in in writing of thefe Novels. And how basely soever they judge of my studies,

dies, yet have the Muses never sound to dwell with me, perhaps for the respective service, and honourable resemblance of those Ladyes with themselves, whose vertues I have not spared to commend by them. Wherfore in the composing of these varieties, I have not strayed so farre from Parnassus, nor the Muses as in

their filly conjectures they imagine,

But what shall I say to them, who take so great compassion on my poverty, as they advise me to get some thing, whereon to make my living? Affuredly I know not what to fay, in this cale, except by due confide. ration made with my felfe, how they would answere me, if necessitie should drive me to crave kindnesse of them; questionlesse, then would they fay; Goe, seeke comfort among thy fables and follies Yet I would have them know, that poore Poets have found more among their fables and fictions; than many rich men ever could doe, by ranfacking all their bags of treasure. Befide, many other might be spoken of, who made their age and times to flourith, meerely by their inventions and fables: whereas on the contrary, a great number of other bufier braines, feeking to gaine more than would serve them to live on; have utterly runne upon their owne ruine, and overthrown themselves for ever. What shall I far more? To such men, as either are so suspicious of their owne charity, or of my necessitie, whenfoever it shall happen: I can answere (I thanke my God for it) with the Apostle; I know how to abound, and how to abate, yea, how to endure both prosperity and want, and therefore, let no man be more carefull of me, than I am of my felfe.

For them that are so inquisitive into my discourses, to have a further construction of them, than agrees with my meaning, or their owne good manners, taxing me with writing one thing, but intending another; I could wish, that their wisedome would extend so

farie

18

pr

bu

gi

fta

CC

28

th

CI

ch

ag

pe lac

de

lo

DO

ga me

W

ne

11

farre; as to compare them with their originals, to finde the a jot differed and from my writing; and over I would freely confesse, that they had some radius to the prehendine, and I would endeavour to make them amends. But until they can touch me with anything elfe, but words onely; I must let them wander in their own giddy opinions, and follow the course projected to

my felfe, faying of them, as they doe of me.

Thus holding them all fufficiently answered for this time, I lay (most worthy Ladies) that by heavens affiflance and yours, whereunto I onely leane; I will proccede on, armed with patience; and turning my backe against these impetuous windes, let them breathe till they burft, because I see nothing can happen to harme me, but onely the venting of their malice. For the roughest blafts, doe but raise the smallest dust from off the ground, driving it from one place to another; or, carrying it up to the ayre, many times it falleth downe againe on mens heads, yea upon the Crownes of Emperors and Kings, and fometimes on the highest Palaces and tops of Towers; from whence if it chance to descend agains by contrary blafts, it cannot light any lower than from whence it came at the first. And therefore if ever I ftrove to please you with my uttermost abilities in any thing, furely I must now contend to expresse it more than ever. For, I know right well, that no man can fay with reason, except some fuch as my felfe, who love and honour you, that wee doe any thing otherwise than as nature hath ordained us; and to refift her lawes, requires a greater and more powerfull ftrength than ours: and the contenders against her supreame priviledges, have either laboured meerely in vaine, or else incurred their owne bane. Which frength, I freely confesse my selfe not to have, neither cover to be possessed of it in this case: but if I had it, I would rather lend it to fome other, than

The Industion

any way to use it on mine owne behalfe. Wherefore, it would advise them that thus checke and controuse me, to give over and be filent; and if their cold humors cannot learne to love set them live still in their frosty compexion, delighting themselves in their corrupted appetites; suffering me to enjoy mine owne, for the little while I have to live; and this is all the kinduesse I re-

far

OU

neff

alre

or c

acci

quire of them.

But now it is time (bright beauties) to returne whence we parted, and to follow our former order beguin, because it may seeme we have wandered too farre. By this time the Sun had chased the Starre-light from the heavens, and the shadie moysture from the ground, when Philostratusthe King being risen, all the company arose likewise. When being come into the goodly Garden, they spent the time in variety of sports, dining where they had supt the night before. And after the Sunne was at his highest, and they had refreshed their spirits with a little shumbring, they fate downe (according to custome) about the faire Fountaine. And then the King commanded Madam Fiametra, that the should give beginning to the dayes Novels: when she without any longer delaying, began in this manner.

Tancrede, Prince of Salerne, caused the amorous friend of his daughter to be flaine, and sent her his heart in a cup of Gold: which afterwards she steeped in an impossioned mater, and then arinking it, so dyed.

The first Novell.

Wherein is declared the power of Love, and their cruelty justly reprehended, who imagine to make the vigour thereofcenfe, by abusing or killing one of the Lovers.

OYR King (most Noble and vertuons Ladies) hath this day given us a subject, very rough and stearne to discourse on, and so much the rather, if we confider,

fider, that wee are come hither to be merry and plealant, where fad Tragicall reports are no way sutable, especially, by reviving the teares of others, to bedew our owne cheekes withall. Nor can any such argument be spoken of, without moving compassion both in the reporters, and hearers. But (perhaps) it was his High-



nesse pleasure, to moderate the delights which we have already had. Or whatsoever else hath provoked him thereto, seeing it is not lawfull for mee, to alter or contradict his appointment; I will recount an accident very pittifull, or rather most unfortunate,

Nevell. 1. The Fourth Day.

and well worthy to be graced with our teares.

Tancrede, Prince of Salerne (which City, before the Confulles of Rome held dominion in that part of Italy flood free, and thence (perchance) tooke the moderne titleof a Principality) was a very humane Lord, and of ingenious nature; if, in his elder yeeres, hee had not Toyled his hands in the blood of Lovers, especially one of them, being both neere and deere unto him. Soit fortuned, that during the whole life time of this Prince, he had but one onely daughter (albeit it had beene much better, if he had had none at all) whom he fo choifely loved and effeemed, as never was any childe more deerely affeded of a Father: and fo farre extended his over curious respect of her, as hee would feldome admit her to bee forth of his fight; neither would he fuffer her to marry, although the had outflept (by divers yeeres) the age meete for marriage. Nevertheleffe, at length he matched her with the Son to the Duke of Capua, who lived no long while with her; but left her in a widdowed efface, and then the returned home to her father againe.

This Lady, had all the most absolute perfections, both of favour and feature, as could be wished in any woman, young, queintly disposed, and of admirable understanding, more (perhappes) than was requifite in so weake a body. Continuing thus in Court with the King her Father, who loved her beyond all his future hopes; like a Lady of great and glorious magnificence, the lived in all delights and pleasure. She well perceiving, that her Father thus exceeding in his affe-Gion to her, had no mind at all of remarrying her, and holding it most immodel in her, to solicite him with any fuch fuite : concluded in her mindes confulcations, to make choyle of some one especiall friend or favouste (if Fortune would prove fo furtherous to her) whom the might acquaint fecreily, wit's her fober, honeft, and

fami-

fam

que

and Co

den

YOU

any

TOT

W2

the

by

on Ba

the

lov

blo

Wa

th

he

fh

w

po

all

ne

of

not

ne

it

ris

ad

m

y

re

d

t

0

familiar purpole. Her Fathers Court being much frequented, with plentifull accelle of brave Gentlemen, and others of inferiour quality, as commonly the Courts of Kings and Princes are, whose carriage and demeanor the very heedfully observed. There was a young Gentleman among all the rest, a servant to her Father, and named Guffcarde, a man not derived from any great descent by blood, yet much more Noble by vertue and commendable behaviour, than appeared or was to bee observed and found in any of the other: none pleased her opinion, like as he did; so that by often noting his parts and perfections, her affections being but a glowing sparke at the first, grew like a Bavin to take flame, yet kept fo closely as possibly the could; as Ladyes are very wary enough in their love-

The young Gentleman, though poore, being neither blocke nor dullard, perceiving what he made no outward shew of, and understood himselfe so sufficiently, that holding it no meane happinesse to be affected by her, he thought it very base and cowardly in him, if he should not expresse the like to her againe. So loving mutually (yet fecretly) in this manner, and she coveting nothing more, than to have private conference with him, yet not daring to trust any one with soimportant a matter, at length shee devised a new stratageme, to compasse her longing defire, and acquaint him with her private purpose, which proved to bee in this manner. She wrote a Letter, concerning what was the next day to be done, for their fecrer meeting together; and conveying it within the joynt of an hollow Cane, in jesting manner threw it to Guiscardo, faying; Let your man use this for a paire of bellowes, when he meaneth to make fire in your Chamber, Guifcardo taking up the Cane, and confidering with himfelfe, that neither was it given, or the words thus fpo-

Novell. 1: The Fourth Day,

ken, but doubtlesse on some important occasion; went unto his lodging with the Cane, where viewing it respectively, hee found it to be cless, and opening it with his knife, found there the written Letter enclosed.

After he had read it, and well confidered on the fervice therein concerned; he was the most joyfull man of the world, and began to contrive the aptest meanes, for meeting with his gracious Miltreffe, and according as the had given him direction. In a corner of the Kings Palace, it being feated on a rifing hill, a cave hadlong beene made in the body of the same hill. which received no light into it, but by a small spiracle or vent-loope, made out ingeniously on the hills fides Andbecause it had not beene a long time frequented, by the accesse of any body, that vent-light was overgrowne with briers and bufnes, which almost engire it round about. No one could descend into this Cave or vault, but onely by a fecret paire of staires, answering to a lower Chamber of the Palace, and very neere to the Princesse lodging, as being altogether at her command, by reason of a strong barred and describble doore, whereby to mount or defeend at her pleasure, And both the Cave it felfe, as also the degrees condu-Aing downe into it, were now fo quite worne out of memory (in regard it had not beene vifited by any one in long time before) as no man remembred that there was any fuch thing.

But Love, from whose bright discerning eyes, nothing can so closely be concealed, but at the length it commeth to light, had made this amorous Lady mindfull thereof, and because she would not bee discovered inher intention, many dayes together, her soule became perpiexed; by what meanes that strong doore might best be opened, before she could compasse to performe at. But after that she had sound out the way, and

gone

gone

loop

pole

him

fin

Coul

for l

Rep

fo a

unf

of h

the

faft

fu

fay

the

Wa

fet

CO

an

do

th

fo

al

lo

tv

10

f

J

gone downe her felfe alone into the cave; observing the loope-light, and had made it commodious for her purpole, the gave knowledge thereof to Guifcardo, to have him devile an apt course for his descent, acquainting him truely with the height, and how farre it was difrant from the ground within. After he had found the fourpirall in the hills fide, and given it a large ensiance for his fafer paffage, he provided a ladder of cords, with Reps lufficient for his descending and ascending, as alfo a wearing fute made of leather, to keepe his skinne unferatched of the thornes, and to avoyde all fulpition of his reforting thither. In this manner went hee to the fayd loope-hoole the night following, and having fafter done end of his corded ladder, to the fitting flumpe of a tree being closely by it; by meanes of the fayd ladder, he descended downe into the cave, and

there attended the comming of his Lady.

She, on the morrow morning, pretending to her waiting woman, that the was fearfely well, and therefore would not bee diseased the most part of that days commanded them to leave her alone in her Chamber, and not returne untill the called for them, locking the doore her felfe for the better fecurity. Then opened the the doore of the Cave, and going downe the staires, found there her amorous friend Guiscardo, whom the faluted with a chafte and modest kiffe; caufing him to ascend up the faires with her into her chamber. This long defired, and now obtained meeting, caused the two decrely affected lovers, in kinde discourse of amorous argument (without incivill or rude demeanor) to fpend there the most part of that day, to their hearts joy and mutuall contentment. And having concluded on their often meeting there, in this concealed fort; Guifcardo went downe into the Cave againe, the Princeffe making the doore fast after him, and then went forth among her Women. And so in the night seafon.

Novell. I. The Fourth Day,

fon, Guifearde afcended up againe by his Ladder of cords, and covering the loope-hole with brambles and buthes, returned (unfeene of any) to his owne lodgings the cave being afterward guilty of their often meeting

there in this manner.

But Fortune who hath alwayes beene a fatall enemie to lovers stolne felicities, became envious of their thus fecret meeting, and overthrew (in an inflant) all their poore happinesse, by an accident most spightfull and malicious: the King had used divers dayes before dinner time, to refort all alone to his daughters Chamber, there converting with her in most loving manner. One unhappy day among the rest, when the Princesse, being named Ghismonda, was sporting in her private Garden among her Ladyes, the King (at his wonted time) went to his Daughters chamber, being neither heard nor feene by any. Nor would he have his daughter called from her pleafure, but finding the windowes falt shut, and the Curtaines close drawne about the bed; he fate downe in a chaire behind it, and leaning his head upon the bed, his body being covered with the curtaine, as if he hid himselfe purposely; he mused on so many matters till at laft he fell afleepe.

It hath beene observed as an ancient Adage, that when disafters are ordained to any one, commonly they proove to be inevitable, as poore Ghismonda could witnesse too well. For while the King thus sleept, she having (unluckily) appointed another meeting with her friendly lover Guistardo, left her Gentlewomen in the Garden, and stealing softly into her Charaber, having made all fast and sure, for being descried by any perion; opened the doore to Guistardo, who should here ready on the staire-head, awaiting his entrance; and they sitting downe on the bed side (as they were wont to doe) began their usual kinde of conference againe, with sighes and loving hisse mingled a-

n ong

Dau ther have part coul end, lefte

IRCC

mon

being over the cher fervinte hour ven

the as he the l ha full as I unt this that

lylo

bei as l

adj

mong them. It chanced the King awaked, and both hearing and feeing this familiarity of Guifeardo with his Daughter, he became greatly confounded with griefe thereat. Once he intended, to cry out for helpe, to have them both there apprehended; but hee held it a part of greater wifedome, to fit filent full, and (if hee could) to keepe himfelfe to closely concealed: to the end, that he might the more feeretly, and with farre lefte difgrace to himfelfe, performe what hee had rafily

intended to doe.

The poore discovered Lovers, having ended their amorous interparlance, without suspition of the Kings being so neere in person, or any clie, to betray their over-confident truft; Guiscardo descended againe into the Cave, and the leaving the Chamber, returned to her women in the Garden; all which Tancrede well observed, and in a rapture of furie, departed (unseene) into his ownelodging. The fame night about the houre of mens first sleepe, and according as he had given order; Guifcardo was apprehended, even as hee was comming forth of the loope-hole, and in his home. ly leather habite. Very closely was he brought before the King, whose heart was swolne so great with griete, as hardly was he able to speake. Notwithstanding at the last he began thus. Guiscardo, the love and respect I have used towards thee hath not deserved the shamefull wrong which thou haft requited me withall, and as I have feene with mine owne eyes this day. Whereunto Guifeardo could answere nothing else, but onely this : Alas my Lord! Love is able to doe much more, than either you or I. Whereupon, Tancrede commanded, that he should be secretly well guarded, in a neere adjoyning Chamber, and on the next day. Ghifwoods having (as yet) heard nothing beteof, the Kings braine being infinitely bufied and troubled, after dinner, and as he often had used to doe; hee went to his daughters Chamber, where calling for her, and shutting the doores closely to them, the teares trickling downe his

> 172 vi

EC

w

ftr

tea to:

or

in

tha

her

tha

dear

dep

ping

but

and.

her f

Fath

foras

anyw you fl

Ta any f

aged white beard, thus he spake to her.

Ghismonda, I was once grounded in a feeled perswass. on, that I truely knew thy vertue, and honest integrity oflife; and this beleefe could never have beene altred in me, by any finister reports whatsoever, had not mine eyes scene, and mine cares heard the contrary. Nor did I fo much as conceive a thought either of thine affects on, or private converfing with any man, but onely hee that was to be thy husband. But now, I my felie being able to avouch thy folly, imagine what an heart-breake this will be to me folong as life remaineth in this poore weake, and aged body. Yet, if needes thou must haveyeelded to this wanton weakeneffe, I would thou hadft made choyfe of a man, answerable to thy birth and Nobility: whereas on the contrary, among fo many worthy (pirits as refort to my Court, thou like ft beft to converse with that filly young man Guifcardo, one of very meane and base descent, and by me (even for Gods fake) from his very youngest yeeres, brought up to this inflant in my Court; wherein shou haft given me fuch affliction of minde, and so overthrowne my fenfes, as I cannot well imagine how I should deale with thee. For him, whom I have this night cauled to be furprised, even as hee came forth of your close contrived conveyance, and detaine as my priloner, I have resolved how to proceed with him : but concerning thy felfe, mine oppressions are so many and violent, as I know not what to fay of thee. One way, thou haft meerely murthered the unfeighned affection I bare thee, as never any father could expresse but by more to h s childe : and then againe, thou haft kin-(first o aled a most just indignation in mee, by thine immogood, dest and wilfull folly, and whereas Nature pleadeth pardon for the one, yet justice standeth up against the to the other

other, and urgeth cruell feverity against thee:nevertheletle, before I will determine upon any resolution, I come purposely first to heare thee speake, and what thou canft fay for thy felfe, in a base case, so desperate

and dangerous.

-

15

uc

th

1-

eft

one

for

t up

yen

my

cale

ulcd

lofe

ner,

con-

and

way,

fecti-

preffe

t kin-

THIO-

adeth

Having thus spoken, he hung downe the head in his bosome, weeping as aboundantly, as if he had beene a childe feverely disciplinde. On the other fide, Ghifmouds hearing the speeches of her Father, and perceiving withall, that not onely her fecret love was discovered, but also Guiscardo was in close prison, the matter which most of all did torment her; the fell into a very strange kinde of extalie, scorning teares, and entreating tearmes, fuchas feminine frailety are alwayes apteft unto: but rather, with height of courige, controlling feare or fervile basenesse, and declaring invincible fortitude in her very looke, the concluded with her felfe, rather than to urge any humble perswasions, thee would lay her life downe at the stake. For plainely she perceived, that Guifeardo already was a dead man in Law, and death was likewise as welcome to her, rather than the deprivation of her love; and therefore, not like a weeping woman, or as checkt by the offence committed, but carelelle of any harme happening to her: fourely and couragiously, not a teare appearing in hereye, or her foule any way to be perturbed, thus the spake to her Father.

Taxcrede, to deny what I have done, or to entreate any favour from you, is now no part of my disposition: for as the one can little availe me, fo fhal not the other any way advantage me. Moreover, I covet not that you should extend any elemency or kindnesse to mee, but by my voluntary confession of truth, doe intend (first of all) to defend mine honour, with reasons sound, good, and substantiall; and then vertuously pursue of the to the full effect, the greatnesse of my minde and other constant

The Fourth Day, Nove'l.1.

constant resolution. True it is, that I have loved, and still doe, honourable Guifcardo, purpoling the like fo iong as I shall live, which will be but a finall while; but if it be possible to continue the fame affection after death, it is for ever vowed to him onely. Nor did mine owne wom anith weakenes to much thereto induce me, as the matchleffe vertue flining cleerely in Guifcarde, and the little respect you had of marrying me againe. Why royall Father, you cannot be ignorant, that you being compoled of Besh and blood, have begotten s daughter of the felfefame composition, and not made of itone or iron. Moreover, you ought to remember (although now you are farre flept in yeeres) what the laws of youth are, and with what difficulty they are to bee contradicted. Confidering withall, that albeit (during the vigour of your belt time) you evermore were exercifed in Armes, yet you should likewife understand, that negligence & idle delights have mighty power; not only in young people, but also in them of greatest yeares,

I being then made of fleth and blood, and fo derived from your felfe; having had also so little benefit of life, that I am yet in the spring, and blooming time of my blood: by either of thele reasons, I must needes bee Subject to naturall defires, wherein such knowledge as I have once already had, in the estate of my marriage, perhaps might move a further intelligence of the like delights, according to the better abillity of ftrength, which exceeding all capacity of refistance, induced a second motive to affection, answerable to my time and youtifull defires, and fo (like a young woman) I became amorous againe; yet did I ftrive seven with all my utmost might, and best vertuous faculties abiding in me no way to difgrace either you or my felfe, as (in equal) censure) yet have I not done. But Nature is above all humane power, and Love commanded by Nature hath prevailed: for Love, joyning with Fortune, in meere

pitty

h

le

tc

bu tru

ot

no in

nty

of g

into

ferv

ted :

cesa

whie

and bera

anfw

rema

tervy.

there

Which

vertu terme

er,an

YCTY

pitty and commiferation of my extreame wrong, I found them both most benigne and gracious, teaching me a way secret enough, whereby I might reach the height of my desires, how soever you became instructed, or (perhaps) found it out by accident, so it was, and I

deny it not.

s.

e,

y

cc

25

e,

ke

h,

1 a

ind

be-

my

mc

uall

: all

nach

cere

pitty

Nor did I make election of Guifcardo by chance, or rathly, as many women doe, but by deliberate counfell in my foule, and most mature advise; I made choice of him above all other, and having his honest harmeleffe conversation, mucually we enjoyed our hearts contentment. Now it appeareth, that I have not offended but by love; in imitation of vulgar opinion, rather than truth : you feeke to reprove me bitterly, alleaging no other maine argument for your anger, but onely my not chooling a Gentleman, or one more worthy. Wherin it is most evident, that you doe not so much checke my fault, as the ordination of fortune; who many times advanceth men of meanest esteeme, and abaseth them of greater merit But leaving this discourse let us looke into the original of things, wherein we are first to obferve, that from one maffe or lumpe of flesh, both we, & all other received our flesh, and one Creator hath created all things; yea, all creatures, equally in their forces and faculties, and equall likewife in their vertue; which vertue was the first that made distinction of birth and equality, in regard, that fuch as have the most liberall portion thereof, and performed actions thereto answerable, were thereby termed noble; all the reft remaining unnoble: now although contrary use did atterward hide and conceale this Law, yet was it not therefore banished from Nature or good manners. In which respect, whosoever did execute all his actions by vertue, declared himselfe openly to be noble; and he that termed him otherwise, it was an errour in the miscaler, and not in the person so wrongfully called; as the

Nove'l.1. The Fourth Day,

very same priviledge is yet in full force among us as

Cast an heedfull eye then (good Father) upon all your Gentlemen, and advisedly examine their vertues. conditions, and manner of behaviour. On the other fide observe those parts remaining in Guifcardo, & then if you will judge truely, and without affection, you will confesse him to be most Noble, and that all your Genalementin respect of hims are bale Groomes and villaines. His vertues and excelling perfections, I never credited from the report or judgement of any person; but onely by your speeches, and mine owne eyes are grue witnelles. Who did ever more commend Guifeardo, extolling all those singularities in him, most requifite to be in an honest vertuous man; than you your felfe have done? Nor neede you to be forry, or affiamed of your good opinion concerning him : for if mine eyes have not deceived my judgement, you never gave him the least part of prayle, but I have knowne much more in him, than ever your words were, able to expicfle; wherefore, if I have beene any way deceived, eruly the deceit proceeded only from you. How will you then maintaine, that I have thrown my liking on a man of base condition? In troth (Sir) you cannot. Perhaps you will alledge, that he is but meane and poore; I confesse it,& surely it is your shame, that you have not bestown place of more preferment, on a man so honest and well deferving, and having beene fo long a time your fervant. Nevertheleffe poverty impaireth not any part of noble nature, but wealth hurries it into horrible confusions. Many Kings and great Princes have here. tofore beene poore, when divers of them that have delged into the earth, and kept Flocks in the field, have big advanced to riches, and exceeded the other in wealth.

Now, as concerning your last doubt, which most of all afflicted you namely how you shall deale with mes

boldly

in

to

car

his

to

for

aci

wh

rati

boldly rid your braine of any fuch disturbance; for if you have resolved now in your extremity of yeeres, to doe that which your younger dayes evermore despised, I meane, to become cruell; use your utmost cruelty against me; for I will never intreate you to the contrary, because I am the sole occasion of this offence, if it doe deserve the name of an offence. And this I dare affure you, that if you deale with me; as you have done already, or intend to Guislando, mine owne hands shal I ask as much: and therefore give over your teares to women; and if you purpose to be cruell, let him and me in death drinke both of one cup, at least if you imagine that we have deserved it.

Y=

d

ne

ve

ch

x-

ed,

01

211

aps

; [

not

eft

me

any

III-

ere.

lel-

bip

h.

It of

mes

ddly

The King knew well enough the high spirit of his Daughter, but yet (neverthelesse) he did not beleeve, that her words would proove actions, or the doe as the fayd. And therefore parting from her, and without intent of using any cruelty to her, concluded, by quenching the heate of another to coole the fiery rage of her diftemper, commanded two of his followers (who had the custody of Guiscardo) that without any rumor or noyfe at all, they should strangle him the night enfuing, and taking the heart forth of his body, to bring it tohim; which they performed according to their charge. On the next day, the King called for a goodly flanding cup of gold, wherein he put the heart of Guifcardo, sending it by one of his most familiar servants to his Daughter, with command alfo to use these words to her. Thy Father hath fent thee this prefent, to comfort thee with that thing which most of all thou affefteft, even as thou haft comforted him with that thing which he most hated.

Ghifmonda, nothing altered from her cruell deliberation, after her Father was departed from her, caused certaine poysonous rootes and hearbes to bee brought her, which she (by distillation) made a water of sto drink

T 3

fodaine-

fodainely, whenfoever any croffe accident fhould come from her Father; whereupon, when the Messenger from her Father had delivered her the present, and utzered the words as he was commanded: thee tooke the Cup, and looking into it with a feiled countenance, by light of the heart, & effect of the meffage, the knew certainly, that was the heart of Guifcardo; then looking fternely on the fervant, thus fhe spake unto him. My honest friend, it is no more than right and juffice, that so worthy a heart as this is, should have any worfer grave than gold, wherein my Father hath dealt most wisely. So lifting the heart up to her mouth, and fiveetely kiffing it, the proceeded thus. In all things, even till this inftant, (being the utmost period of my life) I have evermore found my Fathers love most effectuall to me; but now it appeareth faire greater, than at any time heretofore; and therefore from my. mouth, thou must deliver him the latest thankes that ever I shall give him, for fending me such an honourable prefent.

These words being ended, holding the Cup fast in her hand, and looking scriously upon the heart, she began againe in this manner. Thou sweete entertainer of all my decreft delights, accurfed be his cruelty, that caufeth me to fre thee with my corporall eyes, it being fufficient enough for me alwayes to behold thee with the fight of my foule. Thou hast runne thy race, and as Fortune ordained, so are thy dayes finished: for as all flesh hath an ending, so hast thou concluded, albeit too foone and before thy due time. The travailes and miferies of this world, have now no more to meddle with thee, and thy very heaviest enemy, hath bestowed such a grave on thee, as thy greatnesse in vertue worthily deserveth; Now nothing else is wanting, wherewith to beautifie thy Funerall, but only her fighes and teares, that was so deare unto thee in thy life time.

And

di

he

in

m

pl

The

an

un

acc

rea

the

toi

ing

And because thou mightest the more freelyen joy themas fee how my mercileffe Father (on his owne meere motion) hath fent thee to me; and truely I will bestow them frankely on thee, though once I had refolved, to dye with drye eyes, and not fliedding one teare, dreadleffe of their utmost malice towards me.

And when I have given thee the due oblation of my teares, my foule which fometime thou haft kept most carefully, shall come to make a sweet conjunction with thine: for in what company elfe can I travell more contentedly, and to those unfrequented filent shades, but onely in thine? As yet I am fure it is present here, in this Cup fent me by my Father, as having a provident respect to the place, for pessession of our equal and mutuall pleafures; because thy soule affecting mine to truely, cannot walke alone, without his deare companion.

Having thus finished her complaint, even as if her head had beene converted into a wellspring of water, for did teares abundantly flow from her faire eyes, kiffing the heart of Guifeardo infinite times. All which while, her women standing by her, neither knew what heart it was, nor to what effect her speeches tended: but being mooved to compassionate teares, they often demanded (albeit in vaine) the occasion of her sad complaining, comforting her to their utmost power. When the was not able to weepe any longer, wiping her eyes, and lifting up her head, without any figne of the leaft difinay, thus thee fpake to the heart. Deare heart, all my duty is performed to thee, and nothing now remaineth uneffe ded; but onely breathing my laft, to let my ghoft accompany thinc.

d

e

Then calling for the glaffe of water, which fhee had readily prepared the day before, and powring it upon the heart lying in the Cup, couragiously advancing it to her mouth, the dranke it up every drop; which being done, the lay downe upon her bed, holding her

Novell. I. The Fourth Day,

Lovers heart fast in her hand, and laying it so neere to her owne as the could. Now although her women knew not what water it was, yet when they had feene her to quaffe it off in that maner, they fent word to the King . who much suspecting what had happened, went in all haft to his Daughters Chamber, entring at the very instant, when the was layd upon her bed; beholding her in such passionate pangs, with teares streaming down his reverend beard, he used many kinde words to comfort her; when boldly thus the spake unto him. Father (quoth fhe) well may you spare these teates, because they are unfitting for you, and not any way defired by me; who but your felfe, hath feene any man to mourne for his owne wilfull offence? Nevertheleffe, if but the least jot of that love doc yet abide in you, whereof you have made fuch liberall profession to me; let me obtaine this my very last request, to wit, that feeing I might not privacely enjoy the benefit of Guifcardees love, and while he lived, let yet (in death) one publike grave containe both our bodyes, that death may affoord us. what you so cruelly in life denved us.

Extremity of griefe and forrow, with-held his tongue from returning any answere, and the perceiving her end approaching, held the heart still closed to her owne bare breft, faying; Here Fortune, receive two true hearts latest oblation; for, in this manner are we comming to thee. So closing her eyes, allsense forsooke her, life leaving her body breathlesse. Thus ended the hapleste love of Guiscardo, and Ghismonda, for whose sad disaster, when the King had mourned sufficiently, and repented fruitsessely; he caused both their bodyes to be honourably embalmed, and buried in a most royal Monument; not without generall forrow of the

Subjects of Salerne.

Fryar Albert made ayoung Venetian Gentlewoman he-

leeve that God Cupid was false in love with her, and he reforted oftentimes unto her, in the diffuife of the fame God. Afterward, being frighted by the Gentle-womans kindred and friends, he cast himselfe out of her Chamber window, and was hidden in a powe mans houses the day following, in the shape of a wild or savage man, he was brought upon the Rialto of Saint Marke, and being there publikely knowne by the Brethren of his Order, he was presently committed to Prison.

The fecond Novell.

c

e

u

21

S

0

Reprehending the level lives of differenting hypocrites; and thecking the arrogant pride of vaine-headed women.

THE Novell recounted by Madam Fiametta, caufed teares many times in the eyes of all the company; but it being finished, the King shewing a sterne countenance, fayd; I should have much commended the kindnesse of Fortune, if in the whole course of my life, I had tafted the least moity of that delight, which Guifcardo received by conversing with faire Ghismonda Norneede any of you to wonder thereat, or how it can be otherwise, because housely I feele a thousand dying torments, without enjoying any hope of eafe or pleafures but referring my fort sto their owne poore condition, it is my will, that Madam Pampinca proceed next in the argument of successelessels love, according as Madam Fiametta hath already begun, to let fall more: dew-drops on the fire of mine afflictions. Madam Pampines perceiving what a taske was imposed on her, knew well (by her owne disposition) the inclination of the company, whereof the was more respective than of the Kings command: wherefore, chufing rather to recreate their spirits, than to satisfic the Kings malancholy humor; the determined to relate a Tale of mirthfull matter, and yet to keepe within compalle of the purpoled Argument

It hath beene continually used as a Proverbe; that a bad man taken and reputed to bee honelt and good, may commit many evils, yet neither credited, or fufpected: which proverbe giveth me very ample matter to speake of, and yet not varying from our intention, concerning the hypocrific of fome religious perfons, who having their garments long and large, their faces made artificially pale, their language mecke and humble to get mens goods from them; yet fowre, harth and flearne enough, in checking and controuling other mens errours; as also in urging others to give, and themselves to take, without any other hope or meanes of falvation. Nor doe they endeavour like other men, to worke out their foules health with feare and trembling; but, even as if they were fole owners, Lords, and possessors of Paradice, will appoint to every dying person, place (there) of greater or leffer excellency, according as they thinke good, or as the legacies left by them are in quantity, whereby they not onely deceive themselves, but all such as give credite to their subtile perivasions. Andewere it lawfull for mee, to. make knowne no more than is meerely necessary; I could quickely disclose to fimple credulous people, what craft lyeth hid under their holy habites; and I would with, that their lies and deluding should speed with them, as they did with a Franciscane Fryar, none of the younger Novices, but one of them of greatelt reputation, and belonging to one of the best Monasteries in Venice. Which I am the rather defirous to report, to recreate your spirits, after your teares for the death of faire Ghilmonda.

Sometime (honourable Ladyes) there lived in the City of Imola, a man of mod lewd and wicked life; named, Bertho de la mella, whose shamelesse deeds were so well knowne to all the Citizens, and won such respect among them; as all his lyes could not compasse any

belecte

beleefe, no, not when he delivered a matter of found truth. Wherefore, perceiving that his lewduesse allowed him no longer abiding there; like a desperate adventurer, he transported himselfe thence to Venice, the receptacle of all roule sinne and abomination, intending there to exercise his wonted bad behaviour, and live as wickedly as ever hee had done before. It came to passe, that some remorse of conscience tooke hold of him, for the former passages of his disolute life, and he pretended to be surprized with very great devotion, becomming much more Catholike than any other man, taking on him the profession of a Franciscane cordetier, and calling himselfe, Fryar Albert of Imola.

In this habite and outward appearance, he foemed to leade an authere and fanctimonious life, highly commending penance and abstinence, never eating flethand or drinking wine, but when he was provided of both in a close corner. And before any person could take . notice thereof, he became (of a theefe) Ruffian, forfwearer, and murtherer, asformerly hee had beene,a great Preacher; yet not abandoning the forenamed vices, when fecretly he could put any of them in execution. Morcover, being made Prieft, when he was celebrating Maffe at the Altar, if he faw himfelfe to be ob. ferved by any; he would most mournefully reade the paffion of our Siviour, as one whole teares coft him little, when foever he pleafed to use them; fo that in a thort while, by his preaching and teares, he fed the humors of the Venetions to pleatingly, that they made him executor (well-neere) of all their Testaments, yea, many chose him as depositary or Guardian of their monies; because he was both Confessor and Counsellor, almost toall the men and women.

By this well feeming out-fide of fanctivy, the Wolfe became a Shepheard, and his renown for holinelle was to famous in those parts, as Saint Francis himselfe had hardly any more. It fortuned, that a young Gentlewoman being somewhat foolish, wanton and proud minded,named Madam Lifetta de Caquirino, wife to a wealthy Merchant, who went with certaine Gallies into Flanders, and there lay as Lieger long time: in company of other Gentlewomen, went to be confessed by this ghoftly Father; kneeling at his feete, although her heart was high enough, like a proud minded woman, (for Venetians are presumptuous, vaine-glorious, and witted much like to their skittish Gondoloes) the made a very thort rehearfall of her finnes. At length Fryar Albert demanded of her, whether the had any amorous friend or lover? Her patience being exceedingly provoked, stearne anger appeared in her lookes, which caused her to returne him this answere. How now Sir Domine? what? have you no eyes in your head? Can you not diftinguish betweene mine, and these other common beauties? I could have lovers enow, if I were so pleased; but those perfections remaining in me, are not to be affected by this man, or that. How many beauties have you beheld, any way answerable to mine, and are more fit for Gods, than mortals.

Many other idle speeches she uttered, in proud opinion of her beauty, whereby Fryar Albert presently pecceived, that this Gentlewoman had but a hollow braine, and was sit game for folly to fly at; which made him instantly enamored of her, and that beyond all capacity of resisting, which yet he referred to a further and more commodious time. Neverthelesse, to shew himselfe an holy and religious man now, he began to reprehend her, and teld her plainely, that she was vainglorious, and overcome with infinite follies-Hercupon the called him a logger headed beast; and he knew not the difference betweene an ordinary complexion, and beauty of the highest merit. In which respect Fryar Albert, being loth to offend her any further; after confession

on was fully ended, let her paffe away among the other Gentlewoman, the giving him divers disdainful lookes,

Within some few dayes after, taking one of his trufty brethren in his company, hee went to the house of Madam Lifetta, where requiring to have fome conference alone with her felfe; thee tooke him into a private Parlor, and being there, not to be feene by any body, he fell on his knees before her, speaking in this manner. Madam, for charities fake, and in regard of your owne most gracious nature, I befeech you to pardon those harsh speeches, which I used to you the other day, when you were with me at confession; because, the very night ensuing thereon, I was chastised in fuch cruel manner, as I was never able to ftirre forth of my bed, untill this very instant morning; whereto the weake-witted Gentlewoman thus replied. And who I pray you (quoth the) did chaftife you fo feverely? I will tell you Madam, faid Frier Albert, but it is a

matter of admirable secrecie.

id

1-

1-

y

r

1,

d

r

IS -

r

Being alone by my felfe the fame night in my Dorter, and in very ferious devotion, according to my ufuall manner : suddenly I faw a bright splendour about me, and I could no sooner arise to discerne what it might be, and whence it came, but I espied a very goodly young Lad standing by me, helding a golden Bow in his hand, and a rich Quiver of Arrowes hanging on his backe. Catching fait hold on my Hood,against the ground heethrew are rudely, trampling on me with his feete, and beating me with fo many cruell blowes, that Ithought mybody to be broken in peeces. Then I defired to know, why he was fo rigorous to mee in his correction? Becaule (quoth hee) thou didft so faucily presume this day, to reprove the celestiall beauty of Madam Lifetta, whom (next to my mother Venus) I love most deerely. Whereupon I perceived, he was the commanding God cupid, therfore

Novell 2. The Fourth Day,

I craved most humbly pardon of him. I will pardon thee (quoth he) but upon this condition, that thou go to her so some as conveniently thou canst, and (by lowly humblity) prevaile to obtain her free pardon; which if shee will not vouchfaste to grant thee, then shall in sterne anger returne againe, and by so many torturing afflictions on thee, that all thy whole life time shall be most hatefull to thee. And what the displeased God said essential to thee. And what the displeased God said essentials in dare not disclose except

you please first to pardon me.

Miftrefle-thallow brain being Iwolne big with this winde like an emptie bladder; conceiving no small pride in hearing these words, constantly crediting them to be true, and therefore thus answered. Did I nor tell you Father Albert, that my beauty was celefiall > But I sweare by my beauty, notwithstanding your idle passfed arrogancy, I am he wally forry for your fo fevere corrections; which that it may no more be inflicted on you, I doe freely Pardon you; yet with this provife, that you tell me what the God elfe faid unto you; wherto Fryer Albert thus replied. Madam, seeing, you have so graciously vouchsafed to pardon me, I will. chankefully tell you all : but you must be very carefull and respective, that whatsoever I shall reveale unto you, must so closely be concealed, as no living creacure in the world may know it ; for you are the onely. happie Lady now living, and that happineffe relieth on . your filence and fecrecie: with folemne vowes, and protestations, shee scaled up her many promises, and then the Frier thus proceeded.

Madam, the further charge imposed on me by God. Cupid, was to tell you, that himselfe is so extreamely enamored of your beauty, and you are become so gracious in his affection; as many nights he hath come to see you in your Chamber, setting on your pillow, while you stept sweetly, and desiring very often to awake

you, but onely fearing to affright you Wherefore, now he fends you word by me, that one night he intendeth to come vifite you, & to fpend fome time in conversing with you. But in regard he is a God, and meerely a fpirit in forme, whereby neither you or any else have capacity of beholding him, much lesse to touch or feele him; he faith, that (for your sake) he will come in the shape of a man, giving me charge also to know of you, when you shall please to have him come, and in whose simultande you would have him to come, whereof hee will not faile; in which respect, you may justly thinke your sette to be the onely happy woman living, and farre beyond all other in your good fortune.

Mistresse want-wit presently answered, shee was well contented, that God Cupid should love her, and shee would return the like love to him; protesting with all, that where so ver she should see his Majestical pisture, she would set a hallowed burning Taper before it. Moreover, at all times he should be welcome to her, when-soever he would vouch safe to visite her; for he should alwayes finde her alone in her private Chamber: on this condition, that his old Love Pychis, and all other beauties else what soever, must be set aside, and none but her selse onely to be his best Mistresse, referring his personal forme of appearance, to what shape himselse best pleased to assume, so that it might not be fright-

full, or offenfive to her.

n

0

y

1:

n

fc

C

pt

11

m

11

11

F--

rc

110

ò,

1-

u

11

-3

-

1-

y.

n.

d

d

d

-

0

Madam (quoth Fryer Albert) most wifely have you answered, and leave the matter to me; for I will take order sufficiently, and to your contentment. But you may doe me a great grace, and without any prejudice to your selfe, in granting me one poore request; namely, to vouchase the Gods appearance to you, in my bodily shape and person, and in the persect forme of a man as now you behold mee: so may you safely give him entertainment, without any taxation of the world

Novell.2. The Fourth Day,

world, or ill apprehension of the most curious inquisition, Beside, a greater happir esse can never besall me: for, while he assume that the source out of my body, and walketh on the earth in my humane sigure: I shall be wandering in the joyes of Lovers Paradise, seeling the fruition of their felicities; which are such, as no mortality can be capeable of, no, not so much as in.

imagination.

The wife Gentlewoman replied, that thee was well contented, in regard of the fevere punishment inflicted on him by God Cupid, for the reproachfull speeches he had given her; to allow him so poore a kinde of consolation, as he had requested her to grant him. Whereupon Frier Albert said: Be ready then Madam to give him welcome to morrow in the evening, at the entring into your house, for comming in an humane boby, he cannot but enter in at your doores: whereas, if (in powerfull manner) he made use of his wings, he then would fly in at your window, and then you could not be able to see him.

Vpon this conclusion, Albert departed, leaving Lifettain no meane pride of imagination that God Cupid should be enamouted of her beauty; and the refore she thought each houre a yeare, till she might see him in the mortall shape of Frier Albert. And now was his braine wonderfully bussed, to visite her in more than common or humanemanner; and therefore he made him a fute (close to his body) of white Taffata, all powdered over with Starres and spangles of Gold, a Bow and Quiver of Arrowes, with wings also saftened to his backe behinde him, and all cunningly covered with his Friers habit, which must be the sole meanes of his safe passage.

Having obtained licence of his Superiour, and being accompanied with an holy Brother of the Convent, yet ignorant of the bulineffe by him intended; he went

ili-

me:

ind.

the

no

\$ 112.

rell

he fo-

:c-

ive

en-

bo --

s, if

he

ore

im

his

an

all

, a.

red

red

acs.

ng

nt,

tat

to the house of a friend of his, which was his usuall receptacle, whensoever hee went about such deedes of darkenesse. There did he put on his dissembled habit of God Cupid, with his wings, Bow, and Quiver, in formall fashion; and then clouded over with his Monks Cowle, leaves his companion to awake his returning backe, while he visited toolish Lifetta, according to her expectation, readily attending for the Gods arrivall.

Albert comming to the house, knocked at the doore, and the maide admitting him entrance, according as her Miftrelle had appointed, fir conducted him to her Miftrelles Chamber, where laying afide his Friers habite, and free feeing him fine with fuch glorious splendour, adding action also to his assumed dissimulation, with majesticke motion of his body, winges, and bow, as if hee had beene God Cupid indeede, converted into a body much bigger of stature, than Painters commonly doe describe him, her wisedome was overcome with feare and admiration, that shee fell on her knees before him, expressing all humble reverence unto him. And he spreading his wings over her, as with wiers and strings hee had made them pliant; shewed how graciously he accepted her humiliation, folding her in his armes, and sweetly kissing her many time together, with repetition of his entire love and affection towards her. So delicately was hee perfumed with odoriferous favours, and so compleate of person in his spangled garments, that shee could doe nothing elfe, but wonder at his rare behaviour, reputing her felicitie beyond all Womens in the world, and utterly impossible to be equalled, such was the pride of her prefuming. For he told her divers tales and fables, of his awefull power among the other Gods, and stolne pleasures of his upon the earth, yet gracing her praises above al his other lovers, and vowes made now, to affect none but her onely,

morrall comparison.

After they had spent so much time in amerous discoursing, as might best fit for this their first meeting, and stand cleare from suspicion from either side; our Albert Capid, or Capid Albert, which of them you best please to terms him, closing his spangled winges together againe behinde his backe, fastering also on his religious Monkes Cowle, and then with a parting kille or two, returned to the place where hee had left his fellow and companion, perhaps imployed in as devout an exercise, as hee had beene in his absence from him swhence both repairing home to the Monastery, all this rights wandering was allowed as tollerable, by by them who made no spare of doing the like.

On the morrow following, Madam Lifetta immediately after dinner, being attended by her Chambermaide, went to fee Fryer Albert, finding him in his wonted forme and fashion, and telling him what had hapned betweene her and God cupid, with all the other lies and tales which he had told her. Truly Madam (answered Albert) what your successe with him hath bene, I am no way able to comprehend; but this I can affure you, that fo foone as I had acquainted him with your answer, I felt a sodaine rapture made of my foule, and visibly (to my apprehension) faw it carried by Elves and Fairies, into the fields about Elifam, where Lovers departed out of this life, walke among the beds of Lillies and Roles, such as are not in this world to be feene, neither to be imagined by any humane capacity. So super-abounding was the pleasure of this joy and folace, that, how long I continued there

affure

, and

d any

is dif-

eting,

fide :

n you

inges

on his

h his

kille

t his

de -

from

cry,

era-

the

edi-

ber-

had

0

111-

aim

his

im

ied

177

ng

115.

u-

of

282

or by what meanes I was transported hither againe this morning, it is beyond all abilitie in me to expresse, or how I assumed my body againe after that great God had made use thereof to your service. Well Fryer Albert (quoth she) you may see what an happinesse hath befalse you, by so grosse an opinion of my perfections, and what a selicitie you enjoy, and still are like to doe, by my pardoning your error, and granting the God accesse to me in your shape: which as I envie not, so I wish you hereafter to be wiser, in taking upon you to judge of beautic. Much other idle folly proceeded from her, which still he soothed to her contentment, and (as occasion served) many meetings they had in the former manner.

Le fortuned within few dayes after that Madam Lifetta being in company with one of her Goffips, and their conference (as commonly it falleth out to be) concerning other womenof the City; their beautie, behaviour, amorous futers and fervants, and generall opinion conceived of their worth and meric; wherein Lifetta was over much conceited of her felfe, not admitting any other to be her equall. Among other speeches, of an unseasoned braine; Goffip (quoth she) if you knew what account is made of my beauty, and who holds it in no meane estimation, you would then freely confesse, that I deserve to be preferred before any other. As women are ambitious in their owne opinions, fo commonly are they covetous of one anothers fecrets, especially in matters of emulation, whereupon the Gossip thus replied. Beleive me Madam, I make no doubt but your speeches may be true, in regard of your admirable beauty, and many other perfe-Gions beside; yet let me tell you, priviledges, how great and fingular foever they be, without they are knowne to others, belide fuch as doe particularly enjoy them ; they carrie no more account, than things of ordinary chima.

Novell.2: The Fourth Day,

estimation. Whereas on the contrary, when any Lady or Gentlewoman hath some eminent and peculiar fayour, which sew or none other can reach unto, and it is made famous by generall notion; then doe all women esse admire and honour her, as the glory of their

10

T

et

kinde, and a miracle of Nature.

If perceive Gossip, said Listra, whereat you aime, and such is my love to you, as you should not lose your longing in this case, were I but constantly secured of your secrecie, which as hitherto I have been no way able to taxe, so would I be loth now to be more suspitious of than needs. But yet this matter is of such maine moment, that if you will protest as you are truly vertuous, never to reveale it to no living body, I will disclose to you almost a miracle. The vertuous oath being past, with many other solemne protestations beside,

Lifetta then proceeded in this manner,

I know Goffip, that it is a matter of common and ordinary custome for Ladies, and Gentlewomen tobe graced with favorites, men of fraile and mortall conditions; whose natures are as subject to inconstancy, as their very best endeavours dedicated to folly, as I could name no meane number of our Ladies herein Unice. But when Soveraigne deities shall feele the impression of our humane desires, and behold subjects of fuch prevailing efficacy, as to subdue the greatest power, yea, and make them enamored of mortall creatures: you may well imagine Goffip, fuch a beauty is fuperiour to any other. And such is the happy fortune of your friend Lifetta, of whose perfections, great Cupid the awefull commanding God of Love himselfe, conceived fuch an extraordinary liking : as he hath abandoned his feate of supreme Majestie, and appeared to me in the shape of a mortall man, with lively expression of his amorous paffions, and what extremities of anguish he hath endured, onely for my love. May this be possible? replied the Gossip. Can the Gods be toucht with the apprehension of our fraile passions? True it is Gossip, answered Lifetta, and so certainely true, that his facred killes, sweet embraces, and most pleasing speeches, with proffer of his continual devotion towards mee, hath given mee good cause to construe what I say, and to thinke my felicity sarre beyond all other womens, being honoured with his

often nightly vifitations.

-ady

fa-

nd it

140-

heir

and

your

ed of

way

piti-

aine

ver-

dil-

eing

de,

01-

obe

en-

fy,

as I

ein

of

es:

ri-

of

pid

n-

n-

to

i-

of

is

be

The Gossip inwardly smiling at her idle speeches, which (neverthelesse) shee avouched with vehenent assertations: fell instantly sicke of womens naturall disease, thinking every minute a tedious moneth, till she were in company with some other Gossips, to breake the obligation of her vertuous promise, and that others (as well as her selfe) might laugh at the folly of this shallow-witted woman. The next day following, it was her happe to bee at a wedding, among a great number of other women, whom quickly shee acquinted with this so strange a wonder; as they did the like to their husbands: and passing from hand to hand in lesse space than two dayes, all Venice was sully possessed with it.

Among the rest, the brethren to the solish woman, heard this admirable newes concerning their Sisters and they discreetly concealing it to themselves, closely concluded to watch the walke of this pretended God and if he soared not to lostie a slight, they would clip his wings, to come the better acquainted with him. It fortuned, that the Frier hearing his Cupidicall visitations over-publikely discovered, purposed to checke and reprove Listing for her indiscretion. And being habited according to his former manner, his Friarly Cowle covering all his former bravery, he left his companion where he used to stay, and closely walked alone

along unto the house. No sooner was he entred, but the brethren being ambushed neere to the doore, went in after him, and ascending the staires, by such time as hee had uncased himselfe, and appeared like God Cupid, with his spangled wings displaid; they rushed into the Chamber, and he having no other refuge, opened a large Casement, standing directly over the great guste or River, and presently scapt into the water; which being deepe, and he skilfull in swimming, he had no other harme by his fall, albeit the sodaine

affright did much perplex him.

Recovering the further fide of the River, he espied a light, and the doore of the house open, wherein divele a poore man, whom hee earnestly intreated, to fave both his life and reputation, telling him many lies and tales by what meanes he was difguifed, and throwne by night-walking villaines into the water. The poore man, being moved to compassionate his diftreffed eftate, laide him in his owne bed, ministring fuch other comforts to him, as the time and his poverty did permit; and day drawing on, he went about his bufinefle, advifing him to take his reft, and it thould not be long till hee returned. So locking the doore; and leaving the counterfeiting God a bed, away goes the poore man to his daily labour. The brethren to Lifetta, perceiving God cupid to be fled and gone, and the in melancholy fadnetic fitting by them : they tooke up the Reliques he hadleft behind him, I meane the Fryers Hood and Cowle, which shewing to their fifter, and tharply reproving her unwomanly behaviour: they left her in no meane discomfort, returning home to their owne houses, with their conquered (poile of the forlarne Frier.

Duringthe times of these occurrences, broade day spreading on, and the poore man returning home-ward by the Rialto, to visite his guest so less in bed:

10

mo

the

121

Go

dos

che

All

WOI

fen

no:

Al

Wil

an

you

Ia:

¥2

ma

pia

the

e10

If

See

ter

11

un

ry.

CO

bac

ent

nie

boo

hed

0.

the

Wa-

ng,

ine

ied

cin

01

any

and

ter.

di-

ing

po-

out

d it

the

, 3-

ore-

and

m:

m, I

g to

be-

tur.

JEC-

day

me -

ed:

he

he beheld divers crouds of people, and a generall runor noy fed among them, that God Cupid had beene
that night with Madam Lifetta, where being overdotely purfued by her brethren, for feare of being furprized, he leapt out of her window into the gulte, and
no one could tell what was become of him. Hereupon
the poore man began to imagine, that the guest entertimed by him in the night, must needes be the same
God Cupid, as by his wings, and other embellishments
sppeared: wherefore being come home, and fitting
downe on the beds side by him, after some few specdes passing betweene them, he knew him to be Frier
Albert, who promised to give him sifty duckets if hee

would not berray him to Lifetties brethren.

Vpon the acceptation of this offer, the money being fent for, and paied downe; there wanted nothing now, but some art and covenient meanes, whereby Albert might fafely be conveyed into the Monastery, which being wholly referred to the poore mans care and trult, thus hee spake. Sir, I see no likelie-hood of your cleare escaping home, except in this manner, as ladvile you. Wee observe this day as a merry Festivall, and it is lawfull for any one, to disguise a man in the skinne of a Beare, or in the shape of a savage man, or any other forme of better advice. Which being fo done, he is brought upon Saint Markes market place, where being hunted a while with dogges, upon the huntings conclusion, the Feast is ended, and then eich man leades his moniter whither him pleafeth. If you can accept any of these thapes, before you be feene here in my poore abiding, then can I fafely (afterward) bring you where you would be. Otherwife, I fee no possible meanes, how you may escape hence unknowne; for it is without all question to the contrary, that the Gentlewomans brethren, knowing your concealement in some one place or other, will fet such

Spics

fpies and watches for you throughout the city, as you

must needs be taken by them.

Now, although it feemed a most severe imposition, for Albert to paffe in any of these difguiles: yet his exceeding feare of Lifettaes brethren and friends, made him gladly yeelde, and to undergoe what shape the poore man pleased, which thus hee ordered. Annointing his naked body with hony, hee then covered it over with downy imall feathers, and falle. ning a chaine about his necke, and a ftrange ugly vizard on his face, hee gave him a great staffe in the one hand, and two huge Mastive dogges chained to gether in the other hand also which hee had borrowed in the Butchery. Afterward he fent a man to the Rialto, who there proclaimed by the found of Trumpets: that all fuch as defired to fee God Cupid, which the last night had descended downe from the skies, and fell (by ill happe) into the Venetian gulfe, let them repaire to the publike Market place of Saint Marke, and there bee would appeare in his owne likeneffe.

This being done, foone after hee left his house, and leading him thus disguised along by the chaine, hee was followed by great crowds of people, every one questioning of whence, and what hee was. In which manner hee brought him to the Market place, where an infinitenumber of people were gathered together, as well of the followers as of them that before heard the proclamation. There he made choile of a pillar, which itood in a place somewhat highly exalted, whereto he chained his savage man, making shew as if he meant to awaite there, till the hunting should beginn which time the Flies, Waspes, Hornets, did so terribly shing his naked body, being annointed with Hony, that he endured thereby unspeakeable anguish. When the poore man saw, that there needed no more concourse

of people; pretending, as if hee purposed to let loose his Savage man; hee tooke the maske or vizard from Alberts face, and then hee spake aloud in this manner.

Gentlemen and others, feeing that the wilde Boare commeth not to our hunting, because I imagine that he cannot eafily be found : I meane (to the end you may not lofe your labour incomming hither) to shew you the great God of love called Cupid, whom Poets feigned long fince to be a little boy, but now growne to manly flature. You fee in what manner hee hath left his high dwelling, onely for the comfort of our Venetian beauties : but belike, the night-fogs overflagging his winges, he fell into our gulfe, and comes now to present his service to you. No sooner had hee taken off his vizard, but every one knew him to be Fryer Albert; and fuddenly arose such shoutes and outcrics, with most bitter words breathed forth against him, hurling also Rones, dure and filth in his face, that his best acquaintance then could take no knowledge of him, and not any one pittying his abusing.

So long continued the offended people in their fury, that the newes thereof was carried to the Convent, and fixe of his religious Brethren came, who caffing and throwing an habit about him, and releafing him fro his chain, they led him to the Monastery, not without much moleftation and trouble of the people; where imprisoning him in their house, severitie of some inflicted punishment, or rather conceit for his open shame shortned his dayes, and so he died. Thus you see (faire Ladies) when licentious life must be clouded with a cloake of sanctitie, and cruell actions daily committed, yet escaping uncredited; there will come a time at length, for just discovering of all, that the good may shine in their true luster of glory, and the bad sinke in their owne deserved shame.

IRREGULAR PAGINATION.

as you

fition, yet his riends, what dered.

failtegly viin the ned tol bor-

an to

metian

ovent

e, and e, hee y one which where her, as

rd the which eto he meant which thing

n the

Nove'l.3: The Fourth Day,

Three young Gentlemen affecting three Sifters, fledde into Candie. The eldest of them (through sealousse)
becommeth the death of her Lover: The second, by
consenting to the Duke of Candies request, is the
meanes of saving her tife. Asterward her owne friend
killeth her, and thence slieth away with the eldest sisfer. The third couple, are charged with her death,
and being committed prisoners they confesse the fast,
and searing death, by corruption of money they prevaile with their Keepers, escaping from thence to
Rhodes, where they died in great powerty.

The third Novell.

Eterein is declared, how dangerous the occasion is ensuing by anger and despight, in such as entirely love especially being injuried and offended by them that they love.

WHen the King perceived that Madam Pampines had ended her discourse, he sat sadly a pretty while, without uttering one word, but afterward speake thus. Little goodnesse appeared in the beginning of this Novell, because it ministred occasion of mirth; yerthe ending proved better, and I could wish, that worse afflictions had falne on the venerious Frier. Then turning towards Lauretta, he faid; Lady, doe you tell us a better tale, if possibly it may be. She smiling, thus an-Iwered the King, Sir, you are over-cruelly bent against poore Lovers, in defiring that their amorous processions should have harsh and sinister concludings. Nevertheleffe, in obedience to your fevere command; among three persons amourously perplexed, I will relate an unhappy ending, whereas all might be faid to speede as unfortunately, being equally alike, in enjoying the iffue of their defires, and thus I proceede,

Every Vice (choise Ladies) as very well you know redoundeth to the great disgrace and prejudice of him, or her, by whom it is practised, and oftentimes to or thers ic in-

oufie)
ad, by

is the

friend

A Si-

leath,

falli

pre-

ce to

(uing

cial-

pinea

thus.

No-

le af-

- tur-

ellus

s anainst

ceffi-

Ne-

d; a-

l re-

id to

CH-

now

him,

0 0=

hers

thers. Now, among thole common hurtfull enemies, the finne or vice which most carrieth us with full carrere, and draweth us into unavoidable dangers (in mine opinion) feemeth to be that of choller or anger, which is a fodaine and inconfiderate moving, provoked by fome received injury, which having excluded all respect of reason, and dimnd (with darke vapers) the bright difcerning fight of the understanding, enflameth the minde with most violent fury. And albeit this inconvenience hapneth most to men, and more to some few than others; yet notwithflanding, it hath bene noted, that women have felt the selfesame infirmity, and in more extreme manner, because it much sooneris kindled in them, and burneth with the brighter flame, in regard they have the letter confideration, and therefore not to be wondered at. For if we will advisedly observe, wee shall plainely perceive, that fire (even of his owne nature) taketh hold of fuch things as are light and tender, much fooner than it can on hard and weighty substances; and some of us women (let men take no offence at my words) are farre more loft and delicate than they be, and therefore more fraile. In which regard, feeing we are naturally inclined hereto, and confidering also, how much our affability and gentlenesse doe shew themselves pleasing and full of content to those men with whom we are to live; and likewife, how anger and fury are compacted of extraordinary perils : I purpole (because wee may be the more valiant in our courage, to outstand the fierce affaults of wrath and rage) to flew you by mine enfining Novell, how the loves of three young Gentlemen, and of as many Gentlewomen, came to fatall and unfortunate successe by the tempestuous anger of one among them, as I have formerly related unto you.

Marfeilles (as you are not now to learne) is in Provence, leated on the fea, and is also a very ancient and

V 2

Novell.3: The Fourth Day,

most noble Citie, which harh beene (heretofore) inhabited with farre richer and more wealthy Merchants. than at this instant time it is. Among whom there was one named Narnaldo Civida, a man but of meane condition, yet cleare in faith and reputation, and in lands, goods, and ready moneics, immeasurable rich. Many children he had by his wife, among whom were chree Daughters, which exceeded his Sons in yeares. Two of them being twinnes, and borne of one body, were counted to be fifteene yeares old; the third was foureteene, and nothing hindred marriage in their Parents owne expectation, but the returne home of Namaido, who was then abroad in Spaine with his Merchandizes. The eldeft of these sisters was named Ninetta, the second Magdalena and the third Bertella. A Gentleman (albeit but poore in fortunes) and called Refragnone, was extraordinarily enamored of Nimetra, as no man possibly could be more, and the likewife as earnest in affection towards him ; yet both carsying their loves proceeding with fuch fecrecy, as long sime they enjoyed their hearts sweete content, yet undiscovered.

It came to passe, that two other young Gallants, the one named Folco, and the other Hugnetto (who had attained to incredible wealth, by the decease of their Father,) were also farre in love, the one with Magdatens, and the other with Bertella. When Restagnone had intelligence thereof, by the meanes of his faire friend Ninetta, he purposed to releave his poverty, by friendly suthering both their love, and his owne: and growing into samiliaritie with them, one while he would walke abroad with Folco, and then againe with Hugnetto, but oftner with them both together, to visite their Mistresses, and continue worthy friendship. On a day, when hee saw the time sutable to his intent, and that hee had invited the two Gentlemen

nha-

ints,

was

cane

id in

ich.

were

ircs.

ody,

was

beir

cof

his

ned

ella

cal-

Ni-

ke-

car-

ong

yet

the

21-

Fa-

da.

350

airc

by

ind

he

ith

VI-

nip.

in-

ien

me

home unto his house, hee fell into this like conference with them.

Kinde friends (quoth hee) the honest familiaritie which hath past betweene us, may render you some certaine affurance, of the confrant love I beare to you both, being as willing to worke any meanes that may tend to your good, as I defire to compaffe mine owne. And because the truth of mine affection cannot conceale it felfe to you, I meane to acquaint you with an intention, wherewith my braine hath a long while travelled, and now may foone be delivered of, if it may paffe with your liking and approbation. Let mee then tell you, that except your speeches savour of untruth, and your actions carry a double understanding, in common behaviour both by night and day, you appeare to pine and confume away, in the cordiall love you beare to two of the Sifters, as I fuffer the same afflictions for the third, with reciprocall requitall of their deerest affection to us. Now, to qualifie the heate of our tormenting flames, if you will condefeend to fuch a courfe as I shall advise you, the remedy will yeelde them equall case to ours, and we may safely injoy the benefite of contentment. As wealth aboundeth with you both, so doth want most extreamely tyrannize over me : but if one banke might be made of both your rich fubstances, I embraced therein as a third partaker, and some quarter of the world defligned out by us. where to live at hearts case upon our possessions, I durft engage my credite, that all the Sifters (not meanely flored with their Fathers treasure) shall beare us company to what place foever wee pleafe. There each man freely enjoying his owne deereft love, may live like three brethren, without any hinderance to our mutuall content : it remaineth now to you Gentlemen, to accept this comfortable offer, or to refuse it.

The

Novell.3. The Fourth Day,

The two Brothers, whose passions exceeded their bek meanes for support, perceiving some hope how to enloy their loves; defired no long time of deliberation, or greatly disputed with their thoughts what was best to be done ; but readily replied, that let happen any danger whatfoever, they would joyne with him in this determination, and hee should partake with them in their wealthiest fortunes. After Restagnone had heard their answer, within some few dayes following, he went to conferre with Ninetta, which was no easie matter for him to compase. Nevertheleffe, opportunitie proved fo favourable to him, that meeting with her at a place appointed, hee discoursed at large, what had passed betweene him, and the other two young Gentlemen, maintaining the same with many good reasons, to have her like and allow of the enterprize. Which although (for a while) bee could very hardly doe; yet, in regard the had more defire than power, without fufpition to be daily in his company, thee thus answered. My hearts chosen friend, I cannot any way mislike your advice, and will take fuch order with my Sifters, that they shall agree to our resolution. Let it therefore be your charge, that you and the rest make every thing ready, to depart from hence so soone, as with best convenient meanes wee may bee enabled.

Restagnone being returned to Folco and Hugnetto, who thought every houre a yeare, to heare what would succeede upon the promise past betweene them; hee told them in plaine termes, that their Ladies were as free in consent as they, and nothing wanted now, but surinshment for their sodaine departing. Having concluded, that Candie should be their harbour for entertainement, they made sale of some sew inheritances which lay the readiest for the purpose, as also their goods in their house; and then, under colour of ven-

ir bek

to en-

ion,or

off to

dan-

is de-

m in

eard

Went

r for

ed fo

e ap-

be-

nen,

hal-

yet,

ful-

WE-

nif-

my

t it

ake

ne,

en-

to,

ıld

ce

25

ut

n-

r-

:

ir

ting Merchandizes abroade, they bought an nimble Pinnace, fortified with good strength and preparation, and waited but for a convenient winde. On the other fide, Ninetta, who was fufficiently acquainted with the forwardnesse of her Sifters desires, and her owne, had so substantially prevailed with them, that a good Voyage now was the fole expectation. Whereupon, the same night when they should fet away, they opened a strong barred Chest of their Fathers, whence they tooke great store of gold and costly Iewels, wherewith escaping secretly out of the house; they came to the place where their Lovers attended for them, and going haftily aboord the Pinnace, the windes were so furtherous to them, that without touching any where, the night following they arrived at Genemay.

There being out of perill or purfate, they all knit the knot of holy wedlocke, and then freely enjoyed their long wished desires from whence setting saile againe, and being well furnished with all things wanting, passing on from Port to Port, at the end of eight dayes, they landed at Candy, not meeting with any impeachment on the way. Determining there to spend their dayes, first they provided themselves of goodly lands in the Countrey, and then of beautifull dwelling houses in the Citie, with all due surnishments belonging to them, and Families well befeeming such worthy Gentlemen, and all delights for their daily recreations, inviting their neighbours, and they them againe in loving manner; so that no lovers could wish to live in more ample contentment.

Passing on their time in this height of selicitie, and not crossed by any sinister accidents, it came to passe (as often we may observe in the like occasions, that although delights doe most especially please us, yet they breede surfeite, when they swell too-over great in

abun

abundance) that Reflagnone, who most deerely affected his faire Ninetta, and had her now in his free poffession, without any petill of loofing her: grew now alfo to be weary of her, and confequently, to faile in those familiar performances, which formerly had paffed betweene them. For being one day invited to a Banket, he faw there a beautifull Gentlewoman of that Countrey, whose perfection pleasing him beyond all compazison : hee laboured (by paineful pursuite) to win his purpole ;; and meeting with her in divers private places, grew prodigall in his expences upon her. This could not be so closely carried, but being seene and obferved by Ninetta, the became possessed with extreame icalousie, that he could not doe any thing whatsoever, but immediately the had knowledge of it : which fire growing to a flame in her, her patience became extreamely provoked, urging rude speeches from her to him, and daily tormenting him beyond fufferance;

As the enjoying of any thing in too much plenty, makes it appeare it kelome and loathing to us, and the deniall of our defires, doe more and more whet on the appetite : even fo did the anary foleene of Ninetta proceede on in violence, against this new commenced love of Restagnene. For, in fuccoffion of time, whether he enjoyed the embracements of his new Miffreste, or no: yet Ninetta (by finister reports, but much more through her owne jealous im ginations) held it for infallible, and to be most cercaine. Hereupon, the fell into an extreame melancholly, which melancholly begat implacable fury, and (confequently) fuch contemptible difdaine, as converted her formerly love to Restagnone, into most cruelland bloudy hatred; yea, and so strangely was reason or respect confounded in her, as no revenge elle but speedy death, might satisfie the wrongs the imagined to receive by Restagnone and his minion.

V pon inquiry, by what meanes the might best com-

affected

poffeffi-

now also

in those

fed b.

Banket,

Coun-

compa-

win his

te pla-

This

nd ob-

reame

ocver,

ch fire

c cx-

herto

enty,

the

the

pro-

love

r he

no:

ugh

ole,

ex-

la-

if-

re,

C-

e.

n.

G

paffe her bloudy intention, the grew acquainted with a Grecian woman and wonderfully expert in the compounding of poylons, whom thee to perforaded by gifts and bounteous promises, that at length shee prevailed with her. A deadly water was distilled by her, which (without any other counsell to the contrary) on a day when Restagnone had his bloud some-what over-heated, and little dreamed on any fuch Treason conspired against him by his Wife, shee caused him to drinke a great draught thereof, under pretence, that it was a most foveraigne and cordiall water; but fuch was the powerfull operation thereof, that the very next morning, Restagnone was found dead in his bed, When his death was understood by Folco, Hugnette, and their wives, and not knowing how he came to be thus impoyfoned (because their Sister seemed to bemoane his fudden death, with as apparant shewes of monrning, as they could pessibly expresse) they buried him very honourably, and fo all suspition ceased.

But as fortune is infinite in her fagaries, never acting disafter so closely, but as cunningly discovereth it againe: so it came to passe, that within sew dayes sollowing, the Grecian woman that had delivered the poyson to Ninetta, for such another deede, was apprehended even in the action. And being put upon the tortures, among many other horrid villanies by her committed, the consessed the empoysoning of Restagnione, and every particle thereto appertaining. Whereupon the Duke of Candy, without any noise or publication, setting a strong guard about the house of Fosco, where Ninetta then was lodged; there suddenly they seized on her, and upon examination, in maintenance of her desperate revenge, voluntarily consessed the fast, and what else concerned the occasion of his death, by

she wrongs which he had offered her.

Folce & Hugnette understanding feerretly, both from

the Duke, and other intimate friends, what was the reason of Ninettaes apprehension, which was not a little displeasing to them, laboured by all their best paines and endeavour, to worke such meanes with the Duke, that her life might not perish by fire, although the had most justly deserved it; but all their attempts proved to none effect, because the Duke had conclu-

ded to execute juffice.

Here you are to observe, that Magdalena (being a very beautifull Woman, young, and in the choilest flower of her time) had often before beene folicited by the Duke, to entertaine his love and kindenetle, whereto by no meanes the would liften or give confent-And being now most earnestly importuned by her for the safetie of her Sisters life, hee tooke hold on this her daily fuite to him, and in private told her, that if thee was fo defirous of Ninettaes life: it lay in her power to obtaine it, by granting him the fruition of her love, She apparantly perceiving that Ninetta wasnot likely to live, but by the proftitution of her chafte honour, which thee preferred before the loffe of her owne life, or her fifters, concluded, to let her die, rather than runne into any fuch diferace. But having an excellent ingenious wit, quicke, and apprehensive in perillous occasions, she intended now to make a triall of overreaching the lascivious Duke in his wanton purpole, and yet to be affured of her lifters life, without any blemish to her reputation.

Soliciting him still as shee was wont to doe, this promise passed from her to him, that when Ninetta was delivered out of prison, and in safetie at home in her owne house, hee should resort thither in some queint disguise, and enjoy his long and expected defire; but untill then she would not yeelde, So violent was the Dake in the prosecution of his purpose, that under colour of altering the manner of Ninettaes

death,

death, not fuffering her to be confumed by fire, but to be drowned, according to a custome observed there long time, and at the importunity of her fifter Magdalena, in the still silence of the night, Ninetta was conveied into a lacke, and sent in that manner to the house of Folco, the Duke following soone after, to

challenge his promife.

vas the

s not a

eir beft

ith the

hough

empts

onclu-

ing a

oileft

ed by

here-

And

t the

her

thec

erto

OVC.

kely

ife,

han

el-

0-

-11

2-

15

ta

in

C

-

C

Magdalena having acquainted her Husband with her vertuous intention, for preferving her fifters life, and difappointing the Duke in his wicked defire the was as contrary to her true meaning in this case, as Ninetta had formerly beene adverse to Restagnone, onely being over-ruled likewise by jealousie, and perswaded in his rash opinion, that the Duke had already dishonoured Magdalena, otherwise, hee would not have delivered Ninetta out of prison. Mad fury gave further fire to this vnmanly persivation, and nothing will quench this violent flame, but the life of poore Magdalena, Suddenly facrificed in the rescue of her fister; such a divell is anger, when the understandings bright eye is thereby abused. No credite might be given to her womanly protestations, or anything seeme to alter his purpose; but having flaine Magdalena with his Poinyard, (notwithstanding her teares and humble entreaties) hee ranne in haste to Nigettaes Chamber, the not dreaming on any fuch desperate accident, and to her he used these diffembling speeches.

Sifter (quoth hee) my wife hath adviled, that I should speedily convey you hence, as fearing the renewing of the Dukes sury, and your falling againe into the hands of Iustice: I have a Barke readily prepared for you, and your life being secured; it is all that shee and I doe most desire. Ninetta being searcfully and no way distrusting what hee had said; in thankefull allowance of her Sisters care, and courteous tender of his so ready service; departed thence presently

wirh

with him, not taking any farewell of her other Sifter, and her husband. To the Sea-shore they came, very weakely provided of monies to defray their charges, and getting aboard the Barke, directed their course

themselves knew not whither.

The amorous Duke in his difguife, having long danced attendance at Folcoes doore, and no admittance of his entrance; angerly returned backe to his Court, protesting severe revenge on Mazdalena, if the gave him not the better fatisfaction, to cleare her from thus basely abusing him. On the morrow morning, when Magdalena was found murthered in her Chamber, and tidings thereof carried to the Duke; presently search was made for the bloudy offender, but Folco being fled and gone with Nietta; fome there were, who bearing deadly hatred to Hugnetto, incenfed the Duke against him and his wife, as suppoling them to be guilty of Magdalenaes death. Hee being thereto very eafily perswaded, in regard of his immoderate love to the flaine Gentlewoman; went himselfe in person (attended with his Guard) to Hugnettees House, where he and his wife were seized as prisoners.

These newes were very ftrange to them, and their imprisonment as unwelcome; and although they were truly innocent either in knowledge of the horrid fact, or the departure of Folco with Ninetta; yet being unable to endure the tortures extremitie, they made themselves culpable by confession, and that they had a hand with Folco in the murder of Mazdaleva, Vpon their forced confession, and sentence of death pronounced on them by the Duke himselfe; before the day appointed for their publike execution, by great funmes of money, which they had closely hid in their house, to serve when any urgent extremitie should happen to thein; they corrupted their Keepers,

and

ter,

cry

cs,

rle

ng

ithis

if

er

r-

e;

1,

ne

02

ee

is

ar.

0

ď

2

dyes;

and before any intelligence could be had of their flight, they cleaped by Sea to Rhodes, where they lived afterwards in great diffresse and misery. The just vengeance of heaven followed after Folco and Ninetta, he for murthering his honest wife, and the for poyfoning her offending husband; for being beaten a long while on the Seas, by tempessuous stormes and weather, and not admitted landing in any Port or creekes they were driven backe on the Coast of Candie againe, where being apprehended and brought to the Citty before the Duke, they confessed their severall notorious offences, and ended their loathed lives in one fire together.

Thus the idle and loofe life of Reftagnone, with the franticke rage and jealousic of Ninetta and Folco, overturned all their long continued happinesse, and

threw a disaftrous ending on them all.

Gerbino, contrary to the former plighted faith of his Grandfather, King Gulielmo, fought with a Ship at Sea, belonging to the King of Thunis, to take away his Daughter, who was then in the Jame Ship. She being flaine by their that had possessing of her, be likewise slew their; and afterward had his owne head smitten off. The fourth Novell.

In commendation of Infice betweene Princes; and declaring without that neither feare, dangers, nor death it felfe, can any way daunt a true and loyall Lover.

MAdam Lauretta having concluded her Novell, and the company complaining on Lovers misfortunes, fome blaming the angry and jealous fury of Ninetra, and every one delivering their feverall opinions; the King as awaking out of a passionate perplexity, exalted his lookes, giving a signe to Madam Elisa, that the should follow next in order; whereto she obeying, began in this manner. I have heard (Gracious La-

Novell.4. The Fourth Day,

dies, quoth the) of many people, who are verily perfivaded, that loves arrowes, never wound any body, but onely by the eyes lookes and gazes, mocking and feorning fuch as maintaine that men may fall in love by hearing onely. Wherein (believe me) they are greatly deceived, as wil appeare by a Novell that I thall now relate unto you, and wherein you shall plainely perceive, that not onely fame or report is as prevailing as fight; but also hath conducted divers, to a wretched

and miferable ending of their lives.

Gulielmo the fecond, King of Sicilie, according as the Sicilian Chronicles record, had two children, the one a sonne, named Don Rogero, and the other a daughter, called Madam Conflance. The fayd Rogero dyed before his daughter, leaving a sonne behind him, named Gerbino, who, with much care and coft, was brought up by his Grand-father, prooving to be a very goodly Prince, and wonderoully effeemed for his great valour and humanity. His fame could not containe it felfe, within the bounds or limites of Sieily onely, but being published very prodigally, in many parts of the world belide, flourished with no meane commendations throughout all Barbarie, which in those dayes was tributary to the King of Sicily. Among other perfons, descrying most to be respected, the renowned vertues, and affability of this gallant Prince Gerbino, was understood by the beautious Daughter to the King of Tu. nis, who by fuch as had feene her, was reputed to be one of the rarest creatures, the best conditioned, and of the truest noble fpirit, that ever Nature framed in her very choyceit pride of Art.

Offamous, vertuous, and worthy men, it was continually her cheefest delight to heareof the admired actions of valiant Gerbino, reported to her by many fingular discourses sluch as could best describe him, with language answerable to his due deservings, won such

honourable

er-

but

ind

ove

are

al!

cly

ing

icd

35

he

1 3

670

m2

125

ry

at

it

ut

he

ti-

35

15,

es,

n-

u-

be:

o!

er

1-

ed

n.

h

h

honourable entertainment in her understanding soole, that they were most affectionately pleasing to her, and in recapitulating (over and over againe) his manifold and heroycall perfections; meere speech made her extreamely amorous of him, nor willingly would sheelend an eare to any other discourse, but that which tended to his honour and advancement.

On the other fide, the fame of her incomparable beauty, with addition of her other infinite fingularitics beside, as the world had given eare to innumberleffe places, fo Sicily came at length acquainted therewith, in such flowing manner, as was truely answerable to her merit. Nor feemed this as a bare babhing rumor, in the Princely hearing of royall Gerbino; but was embraced with such a reall apprehension, and the entire probation of a true understanding : that hee was no leffe en amed with Noble affection towards her, than the expressed the like in vertuous opinion of . him. Wherefore, awaiting fuch convenient opportunity, when he might intreat license of his grand-father for his owne going to Thunis, under colour of some honourable occasion, for the earnest desire hee had to see her : he gave charge to fome of his especiall friends (whose affaires required their presence in those parts) to let the Princesse understand, in such secret manner as best they could devise, what noble effection hee bare unto her, devoting himselfe anely to her service.

One of his chosen friends thus put in trust, being a leweller, a man of singular discretion, and often reforting to Ladyes for sight of his lewels, winning like admittance to the Princesse: related at large unto her, the honourable affection of Gerbino, with full tender of his person to her service, and that the onely was to dispose of him. Both the message and the messenger, were most graciously welcome to her, and slaming in the self-tessage affection towards him: as a testimony there-

Novell.4. The Fourth Day,

of, one of the very choyfest Tewels which she bought of him, she fent by him to the Prince Gerbino, it being received by him with such joy and contentment, as nothing in the world could be more pleasing to him. So that afterward, by the trusty carriage of this Ieweller, many Letters and Love-tokens passed between them, each being as highly pleased with this poore, yet happy kinde of emercourse, as if they had seene and conversed with one another.

Matters proceeding on in this Manner, and continuing longer than their love-ficke passions easily could permit, yet neither being able to finde out any other meanes of helpe; it fortuned that the King of Thunts pro nifed his daughter in marriage to the King of Granada, whereat the grew exceedingly forrowfull, perceiving, that not onely the flould be fent further off, by a large distance of way from her friend, but also be deprived utterly, of all hope ever to enjoy him. And if the could have devised any meanes, either by fecre flight from her Father, or any way elfe to further her intention, the would have adventured it for the Princes fake. Gerbino in like minner hearing of this purposed marriage, lived in a hell of torments, consulting oftentimes with his soule, how he might be possessed of her by power, when she should be fent by Sea to her husband, or private flealing her away from her Fathers Court before; with thefe and infinite other thoughts, was he inceffantly affliced, both day and night.

By some unhappy accident or either, the King of Thunis heard of this their secret love, as also of Gerbinoes purposed policy to surprize her, and how likely he was to effect it, in regard of his manly valour, and Rore of sout friends to assist him. Hereupon, when the time was come, that he would convey his daughter thence to her marriage, and fearing to be prevented by

Gerbino:

ıgln

ing

no-

So

ler,

em,

PPY

fed

ni-

fily

iny

ot

ng

all,

ner

JUE

n.

ЬУ

Ir-

or

of

ts,

be

by

m

er

nd

of

y-

ly

id

n

cr

y

Gerbino: he sent to the King of Sicily, to let him understand his determination, craving safe conduct from him, without impeachment of Gerbino, or any one else untill such time as his intent was accomplished. King Guietmo being aged, and never adquainted with the affectionate proceedings of Gerbino, nor any doubtfull reason to urge this security from him, in a case convenient to be granted: yeelded the sooner thereto right willingly, and as a signall of his honourable meaning, he sent him his royall Glove, with a full confirmation for his sife conduct.

No founer were these Princely affurances received, but a goodly thip was prepared in the Port of Carthagena, well furnished with all things thereto belonging, for the fending his daughter to the King of Granada, waiting for nothing elfe but best favouring windes. The young Princesse, who understood and taw allthis grear preparation; fecretly fent a fervant of hers to Palermo, giving him especiall charge, on her behalfe, to falute the Prince Gerbine, and to tell him withall, that (within few dayes) the must be transported to Grarada. And now opportunity gave faire and free meanes to let the world know, whether he were a man of that magnanimons spirit, or no, as a generall opinion had formerly conceived of him, and whether he affected her to firmely, as by many close messages he had affured her. He who had the charge of this embaffie, effectually performed it, and then returned backe to Thu-

The Prince Gerbino, having heard this message from his divine Mistresse, and knowing also that the King his Grand-sather, had past his sate conduct to the King of Thinis, for peaceable passage through his Seas: was at his wits end, in this urgent necessity, what might best bee done. Notwithstanding, moved by the settled constancy of his plighted Love, and the speeches

delive-

Novell.4: The Fourth Day,

delivered to him by the messenger from the Princesse to show himselfe a man endued with courage, hee departed thence unto Messina, where he made ready two speedy gallies, and fitting them with men of valiant disposition, set away to Sardignia, as making full account, that the Ship which carried the Princesse, must come along that Coass. Nor was his expectation therein deceived: for, within few dayes after, the Ship (not over-swiftly winded) came sayling neere to the place where they attended for her arrivals, whereof Gerbino had no sooner gotten a sight, but to animate the resolutes which were in his company, thus hee

f2

Spake.

Gentlemen, if you be those men of valour, as heretofore you have beene reputed, I am perswaded, that there are some among you, who either formerly have, or now instantly doe feele, the all-commanding power of love, without which (as I thinke) there is not any mortall man, that can have any goodnesse or vertue dwelling in him. Wherefore, if ever you have beene amoroully affected, or presently have any apprehension thereof, you shall the more easily judge of what I now ayme at. True it is, that I doe love, and love hath guided me to be comforted, and manfully affifted by you, because in yonder ship, which you see comming on fo gently under fayle (even as if the offered her felfe to be our prize) not onely is the levvell which I most esteeme, but also mighty and most unvalewable treafure, to be wonne without any difficult labour, or hazard of a dangerous fight, you being men of fuch undauntable courage. In the honour of which victory, I covet not any or parcell, but onely a Lady, for whose sake I have undertaken these Armes, and freely give you all the rest contained in the Ship. Let us set on them, Gentlemen, and my dearest friends; couragioufly let us affaile the thip, you fee how the wind. favours ceffe:

ee de-

y two

aliant

Il ac-

muft

tation

Ship

o the

ereof

imate

s hee

nerc-

that

have,

OWCI

any

ertue

ofion

novy

gui-

you,

eto

noft

reaha-

un-

for

ely

fet

rae

ind

urs

favours us, and (questionlesse) in so good an action,

Gerbino needed not to have spoken so much, in per-swading them to seize sorich a booty; because the men of Messia were naturally addicted to spoyle and rapine; and before the Prince began his Oration, they had concluded to make the Ship their purchase. Where-sore, giving a lowdeshout, according to their Country manner, and commanding their. Trumpets to sound chearefully, they rowed on a maine with their Oares, and (in meere despight) set upon the ship. But before the Gallies could come neere her, they that had the charge and mannaging of her, perceyving with what speede they made towards them, and no likely meanes of cscaping from them, resolvedly they stood upon their best desence, for now it was no time to be stothfull.

The Prince being come neere to the Ship, commanded that the Patrons should come to him, except they would adventure the fight. When the Sarazens were thereof advertised, and understood also what hee demanded, they returned answere: That their motion and proceeding in this manner, was both against Law and plighted faith, which was promised by the King of Sicily, for their safe passage through the Sea, by no meanes to bee mollested or assayled. In restimony whereof, they shewed his Glove, avouching moreover, that neither by force (or otherwise) they would yeeld, or deliver him any thing which they had aboord their Ship.

Gerbins efpying his gracious Mistresse on the Ships decke, and the appearing to bee farre more beautifull than Fame had made relation of her: being much more enslamed and scorehed by the heate of love now, than formerly he had beene, replyed thus when they shewed the Glove. We have (quoth he) no Faulcon

bere

Novell.4: The Fourth Day,

here now, to be humbled at the fight of your Glove; and therefore, if you will not deliver the Lady, prepare Gx your selves for tight, for we must have her whether you will or no. Hereupon, they began to let flye (on both fides) their Darts and Arrowes, with stones lent in violent fort from their flings, thus continuing the fight a long while, to very great harme on either fide. At the length, Gerbino perceiving, that [mall benefit would redound to him, it he did not undertake some other kinde of courfe; he tooke a small Pinnace, which purposely he brought with him from Sardignia, and fetting it on a flaming fire, conveyed it (by the Gallies helpe) close to the thip. The Sarazens much amazed therear, and evidently perceiving, that either they must yeeld or dye; brought their Kings daughter to the prow of the thip, most greeyously weeping and wringing her hands. Then calling Gerbino, to let him behold their resolution, there they flew her before his face, and throwing her body into the Sea, fayd: Take her, there we give her to thee, according to our bounden duty, and as thy periury hath justly deserved.

This fight was not a little greevous to the Prince Gerbino, who madded now with this their monftrous cruelty, and not caring what became of his owne life, having lott her for whom he onely defired to live ; not dreading their Dares, Arrowes flinged stones, or what violence else they could use against him; he leapt abourd their thip, in despieht of all that durst refift him, behaving himselfe there like a hungry flarved Lyon, when he enters among a heard of beafts, tearing their carkaffes in pieces both with his teeth and pawes. Such was the extreame fury of this poore Prince, not forring the life of any one, that durft appeare in his prefence; fo that what with the bloody flaughter, and violence of the fires encreasing in the Ship; the Mariners got fuch wealth as possibly they could fave, & suffering

the

&o

bo

an

fee

na K

hi

k

h

fi

f

h

the Sea to swallow the rest, Gerbino returned unto his Gallies againe, nothing proud of this so ill-gotten vi-

Borv.

Glove:

repare acryou

n both

ent in

Arthe

ald re-

kinde

posely

g it on

)close

eld or

of the

efoluwing

give

rous

life,

vhat oord

ehahen

car-

uch

pa-

re-

10-

crs

he

Afterward, having recovered the Princesse dead body out of the Sea; and embalmed it with fighes and teares : he returned backe into Sicily, where he canfed it to be most honourably buried, in a little Island, named Vilica, face to face confronting Trapanum. The King of Thunis hearing these disastrous Newes, sent his Ambastadors (habited in fad mourning) to the aged king of Sicily, complaining of his faith broken with him, and how the accident had false out. Age being fuddenly incited to anger, and the King extreamely offended at this injury, feeing no way whereby to deny him justice, it being urged so instantly by the Ambassadors; caused Gerbino to be apprehended; and he himfelfe (in regard that none of his Lords and Barrons would therein aflift him, but laboured to divert him by their earnest importunity) pronounced the sentence of death on the Prince, and commanded to have him beheaded in his presence; affecting rather to dye without an heire, than to be thought a King voyde of luflice. So these two unfortunare lovers, never enjoying the vey least benefit of their long wished defires : ended both their lives in violent manner.

The three Brethren of Isabella, slew a Gentleman that secretty loved ber. His ghost appeared to her in her sleepe, and shewed her in what place they had buried his body. She (in sitent manner) brough away his head, and putting it into a pot of earth, such as Flowers, Basile, or other sweete hearbes are usually set in, she watered it (along while) with her steares. Whereof her Brezbren having intelligence; soone after she dyed, with meete concent of sorow.

Novell.5. The Fourth Day,

The fift Novell.

wherein is plainely proved, that Love cannot be rowed up, by any humane power or providence; especially in such a soule, where it both beene really apprehended.

y n

d

ti

3

d

6

c

I

ŧ

i

ſ

d

b

THE Novell of Madam Eliza being finished, and some-what commended by the King, in regard of the Tragicall conclusion; Philomena was enjoyined to proceede next with her discourse. She being overcome with much compassion, for the hard Fortunes of Noble Gerbino, and his beautifull Princesse, after an extreame and vehement sighe, thus she spake. My Take (worthy Ladyes) extendeth not to persons of so high birth or quality, as they were of whom Madam Eliza gave you relation: yet (peradventure) it may prove no lesse pittifull. And now I remember my selse, Messina so lately spoken of, is the place where this accident al-

to happened.

In Messina there dwelt three young men, Brethrens and Merchants, by their common profession, who becomming very rich by the death of their Father, lived in very good fame and repute. Their Father was of San Gemignano, and they had a Sifter named I abfella, young, beautifull, and well conditioned; who upon fome occasion, as yet remained unmarried. A proper youth, being a Gentleman borne in Pifa, and named Lorenzo, as a trufty factor or fervant, had the managing of the Brethrens bufincise and affaires. This Lorenzobeing of comely personage, affable, and excellent in his behaviour, grew fo gracious in the eyes of Ifabella, that the afforded him many respective looks, yea, kindnesse of no common qualities. Which Lorenge taking notice of, and observing by degrees from time to time, gave over all beauties in the Citty, which might allure any affection from him, and onely fixed his heart on her, so that their love grew to a mutual embracing, both

both equally respecting one another, and entertaining kindnelles, as occasion gave leave.

Long time continued this amorous league of love, ver not fo cunningly concealed, but at length the fecret meeting of Lorenzo and Isabella, to ease their poore foules of Loves oppressions, was discovered by the eldeft of the Brethren, unknowne to them who were thus betrayed. He being a man of great discretion, although this fight was highly displeasing to him; yet notwithstanding, he kept it to himselfe till the next morning, labouring his braine what might best bee done in so urgent a case. When day was come, he reforted to his Brethren, and told them what hee had scene in the time past, betweene their fifter and Lo-

ored

in

ed.

and d of

ed to

ome

No.

cr-

Tale

high

Eliza e no fina

nt al-

rens

o be-

lived

as of

Yella,

upon

roper

amed

aging

Zope-

in his

bella,

kind-

aking

time,

allure

art on

acing,

both

Many deliberations passed on in this case; but after all, thus they concluded together, to let it proceede on with patient supportance, that no scandall might ensue to them, or their Sifter, no evill act being (as yet) committed. And feeming, as if they knew not of their love, had a wary eye still upon her secret walkes, awaiting for some convenient time, when without their owne prejudice, or Isabellaes knowledge, they might lately breake off this Itolne love, which was altugether against their liking. So, shewing no worse countenance to Lorenzo, than formerly they had done, but imploying and conversing with him in kinde manner; it fortuned, that riding (all three) to recreate themselves out of the City, they tooke Lorenzo, in their company, and when they were come to a folitary place fuch asbest fured with their vile purpose : they ran fodainely upon Lorenzo, flew him, and afterward enterred his body, where hardly it could be discovered by any one. Then they returned backe to Messing, and gave it forth (as a credible report) that they had fent him abroad about their affaires, as formerly they were wont wont to doe: which every one verily beleeved, because they knew no reason why they should conceite any o-

Isabella, living in expectation of his returne, and perceiving his flay to her was fo offenfive long; made many demands to ker Brethren, into what parts they had fent him, that his tarrying was fo quite from all wonted courfe. Such was her importunate speeches to them, that they taking it very discotentedly, one of them returned her this frowning answere- What is your meaning Sifter, by fo many questionings after Lorenzo? What urgent affaires have you with him, that makes you so impatient upon his absence? If hereafter you make any more demands for him, we shall shape you fuch a reply, as will be but little to your liking. At thele harth words, Ifabella fell into abundance of teares, where-among the mingled many fighes and groanes, fuch as were able to overthrow a farre greater conftitution: fo that being full of feare and difmay, yet no way distrusting her brethrens so wicked and haynous a cruell deede; thee durft not question any more after him.

In the filence of darke night, as the lay afflicted in her bed, oftentimes would the call for Lorenzo, entreating his specedy returne to her: And then againe, as if he had beene present with her, she checkt and reproved him for his long absence. One night among the reft, the being growne almost hopeleffe, of ever feeing him againe, having a long while wept and greeyoully lamented; her fenfes and faculties utterly fpent and til tired, that the could not utter any more complaints, the the fell into a trance or fleepe, and dreamed, that the be ghoft of Lorenzo appeared unto her, in torne and un- th befitting garments, his lookes pale, meager, and flarving co and (as the thought) thus fpake to her. My deere love an Ifabella, thou doeft nothing but torment thy felfe, with the calling

C

ti

0

ling on mee, acculing mee for overlong tarrying from thee : I am come therefore to let thee know, that thou canft not enjoy my company any more, because the very fame day when laft thou fawest mee, thy brethren most bloudily murthered mee. And acquainting her with the place where they had buried his mangled body, he strictly charged her, not to call him at any time

afterward, and fo vanished away.

The young Damosell awaking, and giving some credite to her Vision, fighed and wept exceedingly; and after thee was rifen in the morning, nor daring to fay anything to her brethren, the refolutely determined. to goe fee the place formerly appointed her, onely to make triall, if that which thee feemed to fee in her Reepe, should carry any likely-hoode of truth. Having obtained favour of her brethren, to ride a dayes journey from the Citie, in company of her truftie Nurse, who long time had attended on her in the house, and knew the secret passages of her love : they rode directly to the defigned place, which being covered with some store of dried leaves, and more deepely lunke than any other part of the ground there about, they digged not farre, but they found the body of the murthered Lorenzo, as yet very little corrupted or impaired, and then perceived the truth of her vilion.

Wisedome and governement so much prevailed with feeing her, as to intruct her foule, that her teares fpent there, were meerely fruideffe and in vaine, neither did the at and time require any long tarrying there. Gladly would laints, the have carried the whole body with her, fecretly to nat the bestow honourable enterment on it, but yet exceeded nd un- the compasse of her ability. Wherefore, in regard shee arving could not have all, yet the would be polletled of a part. re love and having brought a keene razor with her, by help of e, with the nurse, the divided the head from the boby, wrapped

X

itreane, 28 eprong the voufly

alling

caule

ny o-

and

made

s they

m all

hes to

them

your

rengo?

makes

r you

e you

g. At

earcs,

panes,

onsti-

yet no

ynous

e after

ted in

wont to doe: which every one verily beleeved, because they knew no reason why they should conceite any o-

therwife.

Isabella, living in expectation of his returne, and perceiving his flay to her was fo offenfive long; made many demands to ker Brethren, into what parts they had fent him, that his tarrying was fo quite from all wonted course. Such was her importunate speeches to them, that they taking it very discotentedly, one of them returned her this frowning answere. What is your meaning Sifter, by fo many questionings after Lorenge? What urgent affaires have you with him, that makes you so impatient upon his absence? If hereafter you make any more demands for him, we shall shape you fuch a reply, as will be but little to your liking. At thele harth words, Ifabella fell into abundance of teares, where-among the mingled many fighes and groanes, fuch as were able to overthrow a farre greater conftitution: fo that being full of feare and difmay, yet no way distrusting her brethrens so wicked and haynous a cruell deede; thee durft not question any more after him.

n

0

no N

ho

IO

CO

de In the filence of darke night, as the lay afflicted in th her bed, oftentimes would the call for Lorenzo, entreatine ting his specedy returne to her: And then againe, as tle if he had beene present with her, she checkt and repro- of ved him for his long absence. One night among the reft, the being growne almost hopeleffe, of ever feeing her him againe, having a long while wept and greevoully we lamented; her fenfes and faculties urterly spent and tim tired, that the could not utter any more complaints, the the fell into a trance or fleepe, and dreamed, that the best ghoft of Lorengo appeared unto her, in torne and un-the befitting garments, his lookes pale, meager, and flarving cou and (as the thought) thus fpake to her. My deere lovgand I fabella, thou doeft nothing but torment thy felic, with the callin &

ling on mee, acculing mee for overlong tarrying from thee : I am come therefore to let thee know, that thou canst not enjoy my company any more, because the very fame day when last thou fawest mee, they brethren most bloudily murthered mee. And acquainting her with the place where they had buried his mangled body, he strictly charged her, not to call him at any time

afterward, and to vanished away.

ule

0-

and

ade

hey

all

sto

bem

your

20202

akes

you

you

. At

arcs.

mes,

nsti-

et no

nous

after

The young Damosell awaking, and giving some credire to her Vision, fighed and wept exceedingly; and after thee was rifen in the morning, nor daring to fay anything to her brethren, the refolutely determined. to goe fee the place formerly appointed her, onely to make triall, if that which thee feemed to fee in her Acepe, should carry any likely-hoode of truth. Having obtained favour of her brethren, to ride a dayes journey from the Citie, in company of her truftie Nurse, who long time had attended on her in the house, and knew the secret passages of her love : they rode directly to the designed place, which being covered with some store of dried leaves, and more deepely lunke than any other part of the ground there about, they digged not farre, but they found ed in the body of the murthered Lorenzo, as yet very littreae, as the corrupted or impaired, and then perceived the truth epro- of her vision.

g the Wisedome and government so much prevailed with eeing her, as to intruct her foule, that her teares fpent there, yoully were meerely fruitleffe and in vaine, neither did the and time require any long tarrying there. Gladly would aints, the have carried the whole body with her, fecretly to at the bestow honourable enterment on it, but yet exceeded nd un-the compasse of her ability. Wherefore, in regard shee arving could not have all, yet the would be policifed of a part, e lovgand having brought a keene razor with her, by help of e, wiell the nurse, the divided the head from the boby, wrapped allin &

it up in a Napkin, which the Nurse conveied into her Jappe, and then laide the body in the ground againe. Thus being undiscovered by any, they departed thence, and arrived at home in convenient time, where being alone by themselves in the Chamber: shee washed the head over and over with her teares, and bestowed in-

finite killes thereon.

Not, long after, the Nurse having brought hera large earthen pee, such as weeuse to set Basile, Marjetome, Flowers, or other sweete hearbes in; and threwding the head in a silken scarfe, put it into the pot, covering it with earth, and planting divers rootes of excellent Basile therein, which shee never watered, but either with her teares, Rose water, or water distilled from the flowers of Oranges. This pot sheeused continually to sit by, either in her Chamber, or any where else: for she carried it alwayes with her, sighing and breathing south sad complaints thereto, even as sit they had beene uttered to her Lorenzo, and day by day this was her continuall exercise, to the no meane admiration of her brethren, and many other friends that beheld her.

So long the held on in this mourning manner, that, what by the continuall watering of the Bafile, and putrifaction of the head, so buried in the pot of earth; it grew very flourishing, and most odoristerous to such as scented it, that as no other Basile could possibly yeeld so sweete a savour. The neighboures noting this behaviour in her, observing the long continuance thereof, how much her bright beauty was defaced, and the eyes sunde into her head by incessant weeping, made many kinde and friendly motions, to understand the reason of her so violent oppressions; but could not by any meanes prevaile with her, or win any discovery by her Nurse, so saithfull was she in secrecie to her. Her breather also waxed weary of this carriage in her; and having

o her

aine.

ence,

being

d the

d in-

her a

Mar-

and

o the

ootes

ered,

iftil-

used

any hing

as if

y day

e ad-

that

that,

pu-

it

ch as

ecld

cha-

reof,

eyes

nany ason any

her

bre-

l ha-

ving

ving very often reproved her for it, without any other alteration in her: at length, they closely stole away the pot of Bafile from her, for which the made infinite wotull lamentation, earneftly entreating to have it reflored againe, avouching that thee could not live

Perceiving that shee could not have the pot againe. the fell into an extreame licknesse, occasioned onely by her ceaselesse weeping: and never urged she to have any thing, but the refloring of the Basile pot. Her bre thren grew greatly amazed thereat, because the never called for ought elfe befide; and thereupon were very defirous to ranfacke the pot to the very bottome. Having emptied out all the earth, they found the Scarfe of filke, wherein the head of Lorenzo was wrappd; which was (as yet) not fo much confumed, but by the lockes of haire, they knew it to be Lorenzoes head, whereat they became confounded with amazement.

Fearing least their offence might come to open publication, they buried it very fecretly; and, before any could take notice thereof, they departed from Meffina, and went to dwell at Naples, I fabella crying and calling still for her pot of Basile, being unable to give over mourning, dyed within a few dayes after. Thus have you heard the hard fate of poore Lorenzo and his Ijabella. Within no long while after, when this accident came to be publikely knowne, an excellent Ditty was composed thereof beginning thus.

Cruell and unkinde was the Christian, That robd me of my Bafiles bliffe, &c.

A beautifull Virgins named Andreana, became enamoured of a young Gentleman, called Gabriello. In conference together, Shee declared a dreame of hers to him, and he another of bis to her; whereupon Gabri-

Novell.6. The Fourth Day,

ello fell dowre suddenly dead in her armes. Sie, and her Chamber-waide were apprehended by the Officers, belonging to the Seigneury, as they were carrying Gabriello, to lay him before his owne doore. The Pote-state offering violence to the Virgine, and shee reflied him vertuously: it came to the understanding of her Father, who approved the impoence of his daughter, and compassed her deliverance. But she afterward being weary of all worldly selicities, entred into Religion, and became a Nun.

The fixth Novell.

Describing the admirable accidents of Fortune; and the mighty prevailing power of Love.

THE Novell which Madam Philomena had so grations related, was highly pleasing unto the other Ladies; because they had oftentimes heard the Song, without knowing who made it, or upon what occasion it was composed. But when the King saw that the Tale was ended he commanded Pamphilus, that he should follow in his due course: wherupon he spak thus.

The dreame already recounted in the last Novell, doth minister matter to me, to make report of another Tale, wherein mention is made of two severall dreames; which divined as well what was to ensue, as the other did what had hapned before, But no sooner were they finished in the relation, by both the parties which had formerly dreampt them, but the effects of

both as fodainely followed.

Worthy Ladies, I am fure that it is not unknowne to you, that it is, and hath bin a generall paffion, to all men and women living, to fee divers and fundry things while they were fleeping. And although (to the fleeper) they feeme most certaine, so that when hee awaketh, he judgeth the truth of some, the likelihood of others, and some beyond all possibilitie of truth; yet soutputhstanding, many dreames have beene observed

to happen; and very strangely hath come to passe. And this hath beene a grounded reason for some men, to give as great credite to such things as they see sleeping, as they doe to others usually waking. So that, according unto their dreames, and as they make construction of them, they are fadly distasted, or merrily pleased, even as (by them) they either seare or hope. On the contrary, there are some, who will not credit any dreame whatsoever, untill they be false into the very same danger which formerly they saw, and most

evidently in their fleepe.

e, 474

ficers,

g Ga.

Porc.

c refi-

ding of

laugh-

rward

o Re-

nd the

o gra-

he o.

d the

what

v that

at he

thus.

ovell,

other

rerall

uc,as

oner

arties

ts of

wne

o all

ndry

(10

hee

boor

: yct

rved

I meane not to commend either the one or other, because they doe not always fallout to be true, neither are they at all times liers. Now, that they prove not all to be true, we can best testifie to our selves. And the & they are not alwayes lyars, hath already beene manifested, by the Discourse of Madam Philomena, and as you shall perceive by mine owne, which next commeth in order to falute you. Wherefore, I am of this opinion, that in matters of good life, and performing honeit actions, no dreame is to be feared prefaging the contrary, neither are good workes any way to be hindred by them. Likewise, in matters of bad and wicked qualitie, although our dreames may appeare favourable to us, and our visions flatter us with prosperous successe: yet let us give no credence unto the beft, nor addict our minds to them of contrary nature. So we proceede.

In the City of Brefeia, there lived fome time a Gentleman, named Meffer Negro da Ponte Cararo, who (among many other children) had a daughter called Andreana, young and beautifull, but as yet unmarried. It fortuned, that the fell in love with a neighbour, named Gabriello; a comely young Gentleman, of affable complexion, and graciously conditioned. Which love was (with like kindenes) welcommed and entertained by him, and by the furtherance of her Chamber-maide,

X 3

it, was so cunningly carried, that in the Garden belonging to Andreanaes father, she had many meetings with her Gabriello. And solemne vowes being mutually passed between them, that nothing but death could alter their affection: by such cerimonious words as are used in marriage, they married themselves secretly together, and continued their stolne chaste pleasures

with equal contentment to them both.

It came to paffe, that Andreana fleeping in her bed, dreamed, that thee met with Grabrielle in the Garden, where they both embracing lovingly together, the feemed to fee a thing blacke and terrible, which fuddenly issued forth of his body, but the shape thereof the could not comprehend. It rudely feized upon Gabriello, and in despitht of her utmost strength (with incredible force) inatched him out of her armes, and finking with him into the earth, they never after did fee one another. Whereupon, overcome with extremitie of griefe and forrow, prefently the awaked, being then not a little joyfull, that the found no fuch matter as the feared, yet continued very doubtfull of her dreame. In regard whereof, Gabriello being defirous to vifite her the night following: shee laboured very diligently to hinder his comming to her; yet knowing his loyall affection toward her, and fearing leaft hee should grow fuspicious of some other matter, shee welcommed him into the Garden, where gathering both White and Damaske Roses (according to the nature of the season) at length, they fate downe by a very goodly Founcaine, which stoode in the middest of the Garden.

After some small familiar Discourse passing betweene them, Gobriello demanded of her, upon what occasion she denied his comming thirther the night before, and by such a sodaine unexpected admonition? Andreana told him, that it was in regard of a horrid Dreame. clon-

with

pal.

d al-

s are

-01 4

urcs

bed,

den,

Cc-

nly

uld

bee

ble

ing

one

of

ien

he

In

cr

to f-

W

m

id

1)

-

-

Dreame, wherewith her foule was perplexed the precedent night, and doubt what might enfue thereon. Gabriello hearing this, began to finile, afferming to her, that it was an especiall note of folly, to give any credit to idle dreames: because (oftentimes) they are caused by excesse of feeding, and continually are observed to be meere lies. For (quoth hee) if I had any superstitious beleese of dreames, I should not then have come hither now: yet not so much as being dismated by your dreame, but for another of mine owne, which I am the more willing to acquaint you withall.

Me thought, I was in a goodly Forest, in the noble exercise of sportfull hunting, and became possessed of a young Hinde, the very loveliest and most pleasing beast that was ever seene. It seemed to be as white as snow, and grew (in a short while) so familiar with me, that by no meanes it would forsake mee. I could not but accept this rare kindnesse in the beast, and searing least I should loose it, I put a coller of Gold about the necke thereof, and saftened it into a chaine of Gold also, which then I held strongly in my hand,

The Hind afterward couched downe by me, laying his head mildly in my lap; and on the fodaine, a blacke. Gray-hound bitch came rushing on us (but whence, or how, I could not imagine) seeming halfe hunger-starved, and very ugly to looke upon. At me she made her full carreere, without any power in me of resistance, and putting her mouth into the left side of my bosom, griped it so mainely with her teeth, that (me thought). I felt my heart quite bitten through, and the tugged on still, to take it wholly away from mee; by which imagined paine and anguish I felt, instantly I awaked. Laying then my hand upon my side, to know whether any such harme had befalse me, or no, and finding none, I smiled at mine owne folly, in making such a fivolous

frivolous and idle fearch. What can be faid then in these or the like cases? Divers times I have had as ill seeming dreames, yea, and much more to be seared, yes never any thing hurtfull to me, followed there on; and therefore I have alwayes made the lesse account of them.

The young maiden, who was still dismayed by her own dreame became much more afflicted in her mind, when the had heard this other reported by Gabriello: but yet to give him no occasion of distaste, the beare it out in the best manner she could devise to doe. And albeit they frent the time in much pleafing discourse, maintained with infinite fweet killes on either fide : yet was thee ftill suspicious, but knew not whereof; fixing her eyes oftentimes upon his face, and throwing fra nge lookes to all parts of the Garden, to catch hold on any fuch blacke ugly fight, whereof he had formerly made description to her. As thus the continued in these afflicting feares, it fortuned, that Gabriello fodainely breathed forth a very vehement fighe, and throwing his armes fast about her, said : O helpe me deare Love, or elie I die; and, in speaking the words, fell downe upon the ground, Which the yong Damosell perceiving, and drawing him into her lap, weeping, faid : Alas sweete friend, What paine doft thou feele?

Gaériello answered not one word, but being in an exceeding sweate, without any abilitie of drawing breath, very soone after he gave up the ghost. How grievous this strange accident was to poore Andreana, who loved him as decrely as her owne life: you that have felt loves tormenting afflictions, can more easily conceive, than I relate. Wringing her hands, and weeping uncessantly, calling him, rubbing his temples, and using all likely meanes to reduce lite: thee found all her labour to be spent in vaine, because hee was starke dead andeede, and every part of his body as cold as ice to

Where-

wh

kn

Chi

fol

tri

or m

di

whereupon, the was in such wofull extremity, that the knew not what to doe, or fay. All about the Garden. the went weeping, in infinite feares and diffraction infoule, calling for her Chamber-maide, the onely fecret friend to their stolne meetings, and told her the occasion of this fod line forrow. After they had fished and mourned awhile, over the dead body of Gabriell, An-

dreama in this manner fpake unto her maide.

thele

fec -

, yet

and

at of

her

ind,

but

our

beit

in-

was

her

1ge

ny

de

af-

ly

113

or

n

d

c

Sceing Fortune hath thus bereft me of my love, mine owne lite must needs be hatefull to me : but before I offer any violence to my felfe, let us devise some convenient meanes, as may both preferve mine honour from any touch or scandall, and conceale the secret love passing betweene us: but yet in such honest fort, that this body (whose bleffed foule hath too scone forfiken it) may be honourably enterred. Whereto her maide thus answered : Mistresse, nevertalke of doing any violence to your felfe, because by such a blacke and difmall deede, as you have loft his kind company here in this life, so shall you never more see him in the other world: for immediately you finke downe to hell, which foule place cannot be a receptacle for his faire foule, that was indued with fo many fingular vertues. Wherefore, I hold it farre better for you, to comfore. your felfe by all good meanes, and with the power of fervent prayer, to fight against all desperate intruding paffions, as a truly vertuous minde ought to doc. Now, as concerning his interrement, the meanes is readily prepared for you here in this Garden, where never he bath beene feene by any, or his reforting hither known, but onely to our felves. If you will not confent to have it lo, let you and I convey his body hence, and leave it in fuch an apt place, where it may be found to morrow-morning: and being then carried to his owne. house, his friends & kindred will give it honest buriall.

Andreana, although her foule was extraordinarily

for

m

m

of

th

cle

10

ri

forrowfull, and teares flowed aboundantly fro hereyes; yet the littned attentively to her maides counfell; al. lowing her first advice against desperation, to be truely good , but to the rest, thus the replied. God forbid (quoth fhe) that I should suffer so deere a loving friend, as he hath alwayes shewed himselfe to me; nay, which is much more, my husband, by facred and folemne vowes passed betweene us; to be put into the ground basely, and like a dorge, or else to be left in the open Arcete. He hath had the facrifice of my virgine teares, and if I can prevaile, hee shall have some of his kindreds, as I have initiantly devised, what (in this hard case) is best to be done. Forthwith the sent the maide to her Chamber, for divers elles of white Damaske lying in ber Cheft, which when the had brought, they spread it abroad on the graffe, even in the manner of a winding sheete, and therein wrapped the body of Gabrielle; with a faire wrought pillow lying under his head, having first (with their teares) closed his mouth and eyes, and placed a chaplet of flowers on his head, covering the whole shrowd over in the same manner; which being done, thus the spake to her maide.

The doore of his owne houle it not farre hence, and thither (betweene us two) he may be eafily carried, even in this manner as wee have adorned him; where leaving him in his owne Porch, we may returne backe before it be day: and although it will be a fad fight to his friends, yet because he died in mine armer, and we being so well discharged of the body, it will be a little comfort to mee. When shee had ended these words, which were not uttered without infinite teares, the maile increased her to make haste, because the night swiftly passed on. At last, the remembred the Ring on her singer, wherewith Gabriello had solemnly espouled her, and opening the shroud againe, sheep ut it on his singer, saying; My deere and loving husband, if thy

Soule

VIII JRONA

foule can fee my teares, or any understanding doe remaine in thy body, being thus untimely taken from me; receive the latest gift thou gavest me, as a pledge of our solemne and spotlesse marriage. So, making up the shroud againe as it should be, and conveighing it closely out of the Garden, they went on along with it,

towards his dwelling house-

Cyes;

; al.

truc-

orbid

iend.

hich

mne

und

pen

res,

nd-

ard

ide

ske

cy

of

of

115

:h

d,

r;

d

As thus they passed along, it fortuned, that they were met and taken by the Guard or Watch belonging to the Potestate, who had beene so late abrode, about very earnest and important businesse. Andreana, desiring more the dead mans company, than theirs whom now the had thus met withall, boldly spake thus to them. I know who and what you are, and can tell my felfe, that to offer flight will never availe me; wherefore, I am ready to go along with you before the Seigneury, and there will tell the truth concerning this accident. But let not any man among you, be so bold as to lay hand on me, or to touch mee, because I yeeld fo obediently to you; neither to take any thing from this body, except hee intend that I shall accuse him. in which respect, not any one daring to displease her, the went with the dead body to the Soigneurie, there to answer all Objections.

When notice hereof was given to the Potestate, he arose; and she being brought forth into the Hall before him, he questioned with her, how, and by what meanes this accident happened. Beside, he sent tor dievers Physicians, to be informed by them, whether the Gendeman were poysoned, or otherwise murthered. All of them affirmed the contrary, avouching rather that some impostumation had ingendered neere his heart, which sodainely breaking, occasioned his as sodaine death. The Potestate hearing this, and perceiving that dudieanawas little or nothing at all faulty in the matter, her beauty and good carriage; kindled a

villanous and luftfull desire in him towards her, provoking him to the immodest motion, that upon granting his request, hee would release her. But when hee faw, that all his perswassions were to no purpose, he sought to compasse his will by violence: which like a vertuous and valiant Virago, shee worthily withstood, defending her honour nobly, and reproving him with many injurious speeches, such as a lustfull Letcher

juffly delerved.

On the morrow morning, thefe newes being brought toher Father, Meffer Negro da Ponte Caraco, greeving thereat exceedingly, and accompanied with many of his friends, he went to the Pallace. Being there arrived, and informed of the matter by the Poreffate: he demanded (in teares) of his daughter, how, and by what meanes the was brought thither? The Potestate would needs accuse her first, of outrage and wrong offered to him by her, rather than to tarry her accuring of him; yet, commending the young maiden, and her confiancic, proceeded to fay, that onely to proveher, he had made fuch a motion to her; but finsting her fo firme, his liking was now fo addicted to her, that if her Father were fo pleafed to forget the remembrance of her former fecret husband, he willing ly would accept her in marriage.

While thus they continued talking, Andreana comming before her Father, the teares trickling mainely downe her cheekes, and falling at his feete, the began in this manner. Deare Father, I shall not neede to make an Historicall relation, either of my youthfull boldnesse or misfortunes, because you have both seene and knowne them: rather most humbly, I crave your pardon, for another error committed, in that, both without your leave and liking, I accepted the man as my troth-plighted husband, whom (above all other in the world) I most intirely affected if my offence here-

to

CO

ar

th

ci

m

W

So

re

Wi

ma

and

Da

Ro

wa

dea

ver

a B

B

in doe challenge the forfeite of my life, than (good Father) I free you from any fuch pardon; because my onely defire is to die your daughter, and in your gracious favour: with which words, in figne of her humilitie, the kiffed his feete. Meffer Negro, da Ponte, being a man wellin yeares, and of a gentle nature, observing what his daughter faid, could not refraine from teares, and in his weeping, lovingly tooke her from the

ground, fpeaking thus to her,

0-

n-

ee

1e

a d,

th

er

ht

e-

1-

re e:

nd

C-

nd

cr

n,

to

1-

to c-

nly

n

oll

10

20

h

15

n

Daughter, I could have wisht, that thou hadft taken fuch an husband, as (in my judgement) had beene beft fitting for thee ; yet if thou madeft election of one anfiverable to thine owne good liking, I have no just reafon to be offended therewith. My greatest cause of complaint is, thy too fevere concealing it from mee, and the finall truft thou didft repole in mee, because thou haft loft him before I knew him. Nevertheleffe, feeing these occasions are thus come to passe, and accidents already ended, cannot possibly be re-called, it is my will, that as I would gladly have contented thee, by making him my Son in Law if he had lived, fo I will expresse the like love to him now he is dead; And fo turning himfelf to his kindred and friends, lovingly requested of them, that they would grace Gabriello with most honourable obsequies.

By this time, the kindreds and friends to the dead man (upon noise of his death bruited abroad) were likewise come to the Pallace, yea, most of the men and women dwelling in the Citie, the body of Gabriello being laid in the midst of the Court, upon the white Damaske shroud given by Andreana, with infinite Roses, and other sweet slowers lying thereon; and such was the peoples love to him, that never was any mans death, more to be bemoned and lamented. Being delivered out of the Court, it was carried to buriall, not like a Burgesse or ordinary citizen, but with such pompe as

Novell.7. The Fourth Day,

feemed a Lord Baron, and on the floulders of very noble Gentlemen, with great honour and reverence.

Within a few dayes after, the Potestate pursuing his former motion of mairiage, and the father moving it to his daughter, shee would not by any meanes listen thereto. And hee being desirous to give her contentment, delivered her, and her Chamber-maide into a Religious Abbey, very famous for devotion and sandtite, where atterwards they ended their lives.

Faire Simonida affecting Pasquino, and walking with him in a pleasant garden, it fortuned, that Pasquino rubbed his teeth with a lease of Sage, and immediately sell downe dead. Simonida being brought before the Bench of tustice, and charged with the death of Pasquino, shee rubbed her teeth like wife with one of the leaves of the same Sage, as declaring what she saw him do, and thereon she died also in the same manner.

The Seventh Novell.

Whereby is given to understand, that love and death do use their power equally alike, as will upon poore and meane per soas, as on them that are rich and no ble.

Pamphilus having ended his Tale, the King declaring an outwared thew of passion, in regard of Andreanaes disasterous Fortune; fixed his eye on Madam
Emilia, and gave her such an apparent signe, as expressed his pleasure, for her next succeeding in discourse; which being sufficient for her understanding, thus she
began. Faire assembly, the Novell so lately delivered
by Pamphilus, maketh me willing to report another
to you, varying from it, in any kinde of resemblances
onely this excepted: that as Andreana loss her lover in
a Garden, even so did she of whom I am now to speake,
And being brought before the seate of lustice, according as Andreana year, freed her selfe from the power

cry

his

it :

ten

nt-

01

ın-

ith

no

te-

the

the

ענו

.

nd

1-

7-

m

1-

3

se

d

r

:5

n

e,

£.

of the Law; yet neither by force, or her owne vertue. but by her fod sine and inopinate death. And alchough the nature of love is such (according as we have oftentimes heretofore maintained) to make his abiding in the houses of the noblest persons; yet men and women of poore and farre inferiour qualitie, doc not alwayes fit out of his reach, though enclosed in their meanest Cottages ; declaring himfelfe sometime as a powerfull commander in those humble places, as hee doth in the richeft and most Emperious Palaces. As will plainely appeare unto you, either in all, or a great part of my Novell, whereto our citie pleadeth fome title; though, by the diversitie of our discourses, talking of so many feverall accidents; we have wandred into many other parts of the world, to make all answerable to our owne liking.

It is not any long time fince, when there lived in our Citie of Florence, a young and beautiful! Damolell, yet according to the nature of her condition; because the was the daughter of a poore father, and called by the name of Simonida. Now, albeit the was not supplied by any better meanes, than to maintaine her felfe by her owne painefull travell, and earne her bread before the could eate it, by carding and spinning to such as employed her; yet was thee not to bale or deje-Red a spirit, but had both courage and sufficient vertue, to understand the secret soliciting of love, and to . diftinguish the parts of well deserving, both by private behaviour and outward ceremony. As naturall inftinct. was her first tutor thereto, so wanted the not a second maine and urging motion, a chip hewed out of the like Timber, one no better in birth than her felfe, a proper young fpringall, named Pasquino, volose generous behaviour, and noble carriage, and gracefull actions (in bringing her daily wooll to fpin by reason his Mafter was a Clothier) prevailed upon her liking and affection. Nor

Novell.7. The Fourth Day,

Nor was he negligent in the observation of her amorous regards, but the Tinder tooke, and his foule flamed with the felte fame fire; making him as defirous of her loving acceptance, as possibly the could be of his; fo that the commanding power of love, could not eafily be diffinguished in which of them it had the greater predominance. For every day as hee brought her freth fupply of woolles, and found her ferioufly bufied at her wheele; her foule would vent forth many deepe fighes, and those fighes fetch flouds of teares frem her cycs, thorough the fingular good opinion the had conceived of him, and earnest defire to enjoy him. Paf. quino on the other fide, as leafure gave him leave for the least converting with her: his disease was every way answerable to hers, for teares stood in his eyes, fighes flery abroad, to eafe the poore hearts afflicting oppressions; which though he was unable to concea le, yet would be feeme to cloud them cleanely, by entreating her that his Masters worke might be neately performed, and with such speede as time would permit her, intermixing infinite praises of her artificiall spinning; and affirming withall, that the Quills of yearne received from her, were the choifest beauty of the whole peece; fo that when other worke-women played, Simonida was fure to want no employment.

Hereupon, the one foliciting, and the other taking delight in being folicited; it came to passe, that often accesse bred the besider courage, and over-much bashfulnesse became abandoned, yet no immodesty passing betweene them, but affection grew the better settled in them both, by interchangeable vowes of constant perseverance, so that death onely, but no disaster else had power to divide them. Their mutuals delight continuing on in this maneer, with more forcible encreasing of their Loves equals same: it fortuned, that Rasquino sixting by Simonida, told her of a goodly Gar-

don,

de

th

wi

an

he

da

5.

the

fri

car

for

the

usi

12.3

fri

ch

fel

an

an

w

go

be

ple

tir

ne

ce

ru

tv

in

N

re

CO

35

0

1.

HS

15;

1-

1-

cr

ed

pe

er

n-

:f:

OF

ry

s,

30

e,

-

.

it

•

e

den, whereto he was defirous to bring her, to the end, that they might the more fafely converse together, without the sufficient of envious eyes. Simonida gave answer of her well-liking the motion, and acquainting her Fither therewith, hee gave her leave, on the Sunday following after dinner, to goe fetch the pardon of 5 Gallo, and afterwards to yishe the Garden.

A modest young maiden named Lagina, following the same profession, and being an intimate familiar friend, Simonida tooke along in her company, and came to the Garden appointed by Pafquino; where the found him readily expecting her comming, and another friend also with him, called Puccino (albeit more usually rearmed Strombo) a secret well-willer to Lagina, whose love became the more furthered by this friendly inceting. Each Lover delighting in his hearts chosen Mistreffe, caused them to walke alone by themfelves, as the spaciousnelle of the Garden gave them ample libertie : Puccino with his Lagina in one part, and Pafquino with his Simonida in another. The walke which they had made choise of, was by a long and goodly bed of Sage, turning and returning by the fame bed as their conference ministred occasion, and as they pleased to recreate themselves, affecting rather to con-

one while they would fit downe by the Sage bed, and afterward rife to walke againe, as eafe and wearinesse seemed to invite them. At length, Pasquino chanced to crop a lease of the Sage, wherewith he both rubbed his teeth and gummes, and champing it betweene them also, saying that there is no better thing in the world to cleanse the teeth withall after feeding. Not long after he had champed the Sage in his teeth, returning to his former kinde of discoursing, but his countenance began to change very pale, his sight failed, and speech forsooke him; so that (in briefe) he fel down

Novell.7. The Fourth Day,

dead. Which when Simonida beheld, wringing her hands, the cried out for helpe to Strambo and Lagina, who immediately came running to her. They finding Passaumo not onely to be dead, but his body swolne very much, and strangely over-spred with toule blacke spots, both on his face, hands, and all parts else beside, Strambo cried out, saying; Ah wicked maide, what

haft thou poyfened him?

Thefe words and their farill out-cries also were heard by neighbours dwelling neere to the Garden, who comming in Suddenly upon them, and seeing Pasquino lying dead, and hugely swolne, Strambolikewise complaining, and accusing Simonidato have poyloned him; the making no answer, but flanding in a gastly amazement, all her fences mearely confounded, at such a strange and uncouth accident, in loofing him whom the fo dearely loved: knew not how to excuse her selfe, and therefore every one verily believed, that Strambo had not unjustly accused her. Poore wofull maide, thus was thee inflantly apprehended, and drowned in her teares, they led her along to the Potestates Palace, where her acculation was justified by Strambo, Lagina, and two men more; the one named Atticciato, and the other Malagevole, fellowes and companions with Pafquino, who came into the Garden upon the out-cry.

The ludge, without any delay at all, gave eare to the businesse, and examined the cause very strictly: but could by no meanes comprehend, that any malice should appeare in her towards him, nor that thee was guiltie of the mans death. Wherefore in the presence of Simonida, hee desired to see the dead body, and the place where hee fell downe dead, because there hee in, tended to have her relate, how she saw the accident to happen, that her owne speeches might the sooner condemne her, whereas the case yet remained doubtfull and farre beyond his comprehension. So, without any

further

tu

of

in

m

t

C

h

0

ti

C

further publication, and to avoid the following of the turbulent multitude, they departed from the Bench of Iustice, and came to the place, where Pasquinoes body was swollen like a Tunne. Demanding three questions, concerning his behaviour, when they walked in conference together, and not a littleadmiring the manner of his death, while hee stood advisedly confi-

dering thereon.

her

gina,

nding

volne

2.icke

clide:

what

ieard

who

nino

oni-

him;

AZC-

ich a

nom

elfe,

סטבונו

thus

her

ace,

ina

the

Paj-

the

but

lice

was

nce

the

in,

10

n-

ull

ny

LT

She going to the bed of Sage, reporting the precedent history, even from the originall, to the ending: the better to make the case understood, without the least colour of ill cariage towards Pasquino; according as she hid seene him do, even so did the plucke another lease of the Sage, rubbing her teeth therewith, and champing it as hee formerly did. Strambo, and the other intimate friends of Pasquino, having noted in what manner she used the Sage, and this appearing as her utmost refuge, either to acquit or condemne her: in presence of the Indge they smiled thereat, mocking and deriding whatsoever she said, or did, and desiring the more earnestly) the senence of death against her, that her body might be consumed with fire, as a just punishment for her abhominable transgression.

Poore Simonida, fighing and forrowing for her deare loves loffe, and (perhaps) not meanely terrified, with the strict infliction of torment so severely urged and followed by Strambo and the rest, standing dumb still, without answering so much as one word; by tasting of the same Sage, fell downe deade by the bed, even by the like accident Pasquino formerly did, to the admi-

rable aftonishment of all there present.

Oh poore infortunate Lovers, whose Starres were so auspicious to you, as to finish both your mortall lives, and servent love, in lesse limitation than a dayes space. How to censure of your deaths, and happinesse to ensue thereon, by an accident so strange and inevi-

table:

Novell.7. The Fourth Day.

table; it is not within the compasse of my power, but to hope the best, and so I leave you. But yet concerning Simonida her felfe, in the common opinion of us that remaine living her true vertue and innocency (though Fortune was otherwise most cruell to her) would not fuffer her to finke under the testimony of Strambo, Lagina, Atticciato, and Malezevole, boing but carders of wooll, or perhaps of meaner condition; a happier course was ordained for her, to passe cleerely from the infamous imputation, and follow her Pasquino, in the very fa ne manner of death, and with fuch a speedy expedition.

The ludge standing amazed, and all there present in his company, were filent for a long while together: but, upon better re-collection of his spirits, thus hee spake. This inconvenience which thus hath hapned, and confounded our fenfes with no common admiration; in mine opinion concerneth the bed of Sage, avouching it either to be venomous, or dangeroully infeded, which (nevertheleffe) is feldom found in Sage. But to the end, that it may not be offensive to any more hereafter, I will have it wholly digd up by the rootes and then to be burnt in the open Market place.

Hereupon, the Gardiner was presently sent for, and before the Judge would depart hence, hee faw the bed of Sage digged up by the rootes, and found the true occasion, whereby these two poore Lovers lost their lives. For, just in the middeft of the bed, and at the maine roote, which directed' all the Sage in growth; Lay an hugh mightie Toad, even weitring (as it were) in a hole full of poylon; by meanes whereof, in conjecture of the ludge, and all the reft, the whole bed of Sage became envenomed, occasioning every leafe thereof to be deadly in talte. None being fo hardy, as to approach neare the Toade, they made a pile of wood directly over it, and fetting it on a flame of fire, threw

alle

the

dea

ing

and

and

Mo

Ici

m

m

to

th

do

21

fe

re

to

th

rc Su but

ming

that

ough

not

mbo,

ders

a the

the

CZ-

nt in

er:

hee

red.

ira-

, 1-

in-

ge.

ore

tes

and

bed

rue

he

h;

(c)

n-

of re-

to

od

all

all the Sage therein, and so they were consumed together. So ended all further suite in Law, concerning the deaths of Pasquino and Simonida: whose bodies being carried to the Church of Saint Paul, by their sad and sorrowfull accusers, Strambo, Lagina, Atticiato, and Malagevole, were buried together, in one goodly Monument, for a future memory of their hard fortune.

Icionimo affecting a young Maiden, named Silvestra, was constrained (by the earnest importunitie of his Mother) totake a journey to Paris. At his return home from thence againe, he found his love Silvestra married. By secret meanes, hee got entrance into her bouse, and died upon the bed lying by her. Afterward his bedy being carried to Church, to receive buriall, shee like wise died there instantly upon his coarse.

The eight Novell.

Wherein is againe declared, the great indifferetion and folly of them, that thinke to constraine love according to their will, after it is constantly settled before: With other instructions, concerning the power of Love.

MAdam Emilia had no sooner concluded her Novell, but Madam Neiphila (by the Kings command) began to speake in this manner. It seemeth to me (Gracious Ladies) that there are some such people to be found, who imagine themselves to know more, than all other else in the world beside, and yet indeede doc know nothing at all a presuming (thorow this arrogant opinion of theirs) to imploy and oppose their senselesse understanding, against installible grounded reason, yea, and to attempt courses, not only contrarie to the counsell and judgement of men, but allo to crosse the nature of divine ordination. Out of which savey and ambitious presumption, many mightic harmes have already had beginning, and more are like to ensue upon such boldnes, because it is the ground of all evill.

Now,

Now, in regard that among all other natural things, no one is lette subject to take counsell, or can be wrought to contrarietie, than Love, whole nature is fuch, as rather to run upon his owne rafti confumption, than to be ruled by admonitions of the very wifelt; my memory hath inspired it selfe, with matter incis dent to this purpole, effectually to approve, what I have already faid. For I am now to speake of a woman who would appeare to have more wit, than either thee had indeede, or appertained to her by any title. The matter alfo, wherein thee would needs thew her fludious judgement and capacity, was of much more consequence than flee could deserve to meddle withill Yet fuch was the iffue of her fond prefuming that even (in one inflant) thee expelled both love, and the foule of her owne sonne out of his body, where (doubeletle) it was planted by divine favour and appointment.

In our owne City (according to true and ancient restimony) there dwelt sometime a worthy and wealthy Merchant, named Leonardo Sighiero, who by his wite had one onely Sonne, called Ieronimo; and within a shore while after his birth, Leonardo bing very ficke, and having feeled all his affaires in good order; departed out of this wretched life to a better. The Tutors and Governours of the child, thought it fitteft to let him live with his Mother, where he had his whole education, though schooled among many other worthy neighboures children, according as in most Cities they use to doe. Young Irronimo growing on in yearcs, and frequenting daily the company of his Schoole-felowes and others: he would often sport (as the reft did) with the neigbours' children, and much pretty pastime they found together.

In the harmeleffe recreations of youth, graver judgements have often observed, that some especiall matter

received then such originall, as greater effect hath fol-

lowed

lo

h.

th

30

B

21

21

yo

tie

21

te

F

Sp

th

bu

YC

io

til

of

ra

aff

no

lei

re

ni

hi

T

his

lowed thereon. And many times, parents and kindred have beene the occasion (although perhaps beyond their expectation) of very strange and extraordinary accidents, by names of familiaritie passing betweene Boves and Girles, as King, and Queene, sweete heart, and fweete heart, friend, and friend, husband, and wife, and divers other fuch like kinde tearmes, proving afterwards to be true indeede. It fell out so with our young Icronimo; for, among a great number of prettie Damofels, daughters to men of especiall respect. and others of farre inferiour qualitie: a Tailors daugh. ter, excelling the reft in favor and feature (albeit her Father was but poore) leronimo most delighted to sport withall; and no other titles passed between them, even in the hearing of their Parents and friends, but wife and husband : fuch was the beginning of their young affection, prelaging (no doubt) effectually to follow.

Nor grew this familiarity (as yet) any way distasted, till by their daily conversing together, and enterchange of infinite pretty speeches, Ieronimo felt a strange alsoration in his soule, with such enforcing and powerfull afflictions, as he was never well but in her company, nor she enjoyed any rest if Ieronimo were absent. At the length, this being noted by his mother, shee began to rebuke him, yet, many times gave him both threatnings and blowes; which proving to no purpose, nor hindering his accesse to her; shee complained to his Tutor, & like one that in regard of her riches, thought to plant an Orenge upon a blacke thorne, spake as

followeth.

ings,

n be

re is

npti-

ileft:

incis

nat I

remo

thee

The

tudi-

con-

hall

eicil.

foule

leile)

cient

weal-

y his

vith-

very

rder;

The

fittelt

nd his

other

flom

on in

of his

rt (as

much

udge-

natter

th fol-

This Sonne of mine Ieronimo, being as yet but foureteene yeares of age, is so deepely enamoured of a yong Girle, named Silvestra, daughter unto a poore Taylor, our necre dwelling neighbour: that if we doe not send him out of her company, one day (perhaps) he may

The Fourth Day. Novell.8.

make her his wife, and yet without any knowledge of ours, which questioniesse would be my death. Otherwife he may pine and confume himfelfe away, if her fee us procure her marriage to some other. Wherefore, I hold it good, that to avoid fo great an inconvenience, we should fend teronimo some far distance hence, to remain wherefome of our Factors are employed:because, when he shall be out of her fight, and their open meetings utterly disappointed his affection to her will the fooner cease, by frustrating his hope for ever enjoying her, and so we shall have the better meanes, to be match him with one of greater quality. The Tutors dil pr like well of her advice, not doubting but it would take the answerable effect : and therefore, calling Jeronimo in- re to a private Parlor, one of them began in this man- ly ner.

el

EL

W

er

fe

Ieronimo, you are now growne to an indifferent fta- ga ture, and (almost) able to take government of your av felfe. It cannot feeme any way inconvenient, to ac an quaint you with your deceased Fathers affaires, and by aff what good courfes he came to fach wealth. You are to his onely fonne and heire, to whom hee hath bequeathed his rich possessions (your Mothers moity ever- fp. more remembred) and travell would now feeme fitting for you, as well to gaine experience in Trafficke and en Merchandize, as also to let you see the worlds occur- Si rences. Your Mother therefore and we have thought me it expedient, that you hould journey from hence to the Paris, there to continue for fome fuch fitting time, as up may grant you full and free opportunity, to furvey he what flocke of wealth is there employed for you, and ho to make you understand, how your Factors are furthe-Sil rous to your affaires. Befide, this is the way to make an you a man of more folid apprehenfion, and perfect in wh fruction in civill courles of life ; rather than by con Ne tinuing here to fee none but Lords, Barons, and Gen be tlenien

tlemen, whereof we have too great a number. When you are fo fufficiently qualified there, and have learned what belongeth to a worthy Merchant, fuch as was cfore, Leonardo Sighiero your famous Father ; you may reveni-

turne home againe at your owne pleafure-

ge of

therf het

ience,

The youth gave them attentive hearing, and (in few edibe words) returned them answer : That hee would not open give way to any fuch travell, because he knew how to c will employ himselfe profitably, and dispose of himer enfelf in Florence, as well as in any other place he should cs, 10 be fent too. Which when his Tutors heard, they reors dil proved him with many fevere speeches: and feeing d take they could win no other answer from him, they made moin- returne thereof to his Mother, She storming extreameman- ly thereat, yet not fo much for denying the journey to Paris, as in regard of his violent affection to the maid; nt star gave him very bitter and harsh language. All which yout availing nothing, she began to speake in a more milde and gentle straine, entreating him with flattering and and by affable words, to be governed in this case by his Tuou are tors good advice. And so farre (in the end) the prevaiques- led with him, that hee yeelded to live at Paris, for the

fitting leronimo being gone to remaine at Paris, his love to and encreasing more and more, by reason his absence from occur- situestra, under faire and friendly promises, of this ought moneth, and the next moneth, fending for him home; nce to there they detained him two yeares together. Whereme, as upon, his love was growne to fuch an extremitie, that furvey he neither would or could abide any longer there, but u, and home he returned, hefore hee was expected. His love furthe Silvestra, by the cunning compacting of his Mother make and Tutors, he found married to a Tent-makers Sons fect in whereat hee vexed and greeved beyond all measure. y con Neverthelesse, seeing the case was now no way to d Gen be holpen; hee strove to beare it with fo much lemen patiences. patience, as fo great a verong, and his hearts tormen-

ting griefe, would give leave to doe.

Having found out the place where the dwelt, he began (as it is the custome of young Lovers) to use divers daily walkes by her doore: as thinking in his minde, that her remembrance of him was constantly constanted, as his was most intirely fixed on her. But the case was very strangely altered, because she was now grown no mote mindeful of him, than if she had never seen him before. Or if she did any way remember him, it appeared to be so little, that manifest signes declared the contrary. Which seems were quickly perceived, albeit not without many melancholly preturbations. Notwithstanding hee laboured by all possible meanes, to recover her former kindnesse againe; but sinding his paines stivolously employed; hee resolved to die, and

yet to compaffe fome freech with her before.

By meanes of a neare dwelling neighbour (that was his very deare and intimate friend) he came acquainted with every part of the house, and prevailed so far, that one evening, when the and her husband fupt at a neighbours houle; he compassed accesse into the same bed chamber, where Silveffra used most to lodge. Finding the Curtaines ready drawne, he hid himselfe behind them, on the further fide of the bed, and fo tarried there untill Silvafire and her husband were returned home, and laide downe in bed to take their reft. The husbands fences were soone overcome with sleepe by reason of his painefull toyling all the day, and bodies that are exercised with much labour, are the more defirous to have case. She staying up last to put out the light, and hearing her husband fleeping fo foundly, that his fnoring gave good evidence thereof: layed her selfe downe the more respectively, as being very loath any way to discase him, but sweetly to let him enjoy his cft.

Silvefira

Silvefra lay on the fame fide of the bed, where leronime had hid himselfe behinde the Curtaines; who stepping foftly to her in the darke, and laying his hand gently on her breft, faid : Deare Love, forbeare a little while to fleepe, for here is thy loyall friend lerenimo. The young woman flarting with amazement, would have cried out, but that he intreated her to the contrarie ; protesting, that he came for no ill intent to her. but onely to take his lateft leave of her. Alas Jeronimo (quoth the) those idle dayes are past and gone, when it was no way unfeemely for our youth, to entertaine equality of those defires which then well agreed with our young bloud. Since when, you have lived in forraine Countries, which appeared to mee to alter your former disposition: for, in the space of two whole yeares, either you grew forgetfull of me (as change of aire, may change affection) or (at the best) made fuch account of me, as I never heard the least falutarion from you. Now you know me to be a married wife. in regard whereof, my thoughts have embraced that chaffe and honourable resolution, not to minde any man but my husband, and therefore, as you are come hither without my love and license, so in like manner I doe defire you to be gone. Let this priviledge of my Flusbands found fleeping, be no colour to your longer carrying here, or encourage you to finde any further favour at mine hand : for if my husband (hould awake, befide the danger that thereon may follow to you, I cannot but lose the sweet happinesse of peacefull life, which hitherto wee have both mutually em braced.

The young man, hearing these words, and remembring what loving kindnesse head formerly found, what secret love Letters he had sent from Paris, with other private intelligences and tokens, which never came to her receite and knowledge, so cunningly his

X. P

Mother

enjoy veftra

en-

gan

vers

INI-

the

now

ever

im,

wed,

oas.

nes,

his

and

W38

far,

at a

Fin-

e be-

arri-

reft.

leepe

d bo-

more at the

d her

loath

Nove'l.8. The Fourth Day,

Mother and Tutors had carried the matter: immediately felt his heat-firings to breake; and lying downer upon the beds fide byher, uttered thefe his very laft words, Silvefra farewell, thou haft killeft the kindeft heart that ever loved a woman; and speaking no more, gave up the ghoft. She hearing these words delivered with an intire fighe, and deepe-fetcht groane, did not imagine the ftrange confequence following thereon 3 yet was moved to much compassion, in regard of her former affection to him. Silent the lay an indifferent while, as being unable to returne him any answer; and looking when hee would be gone, according as before the had earneftly intreated him. But when the perceived him to lie fo ftill, as neither word or motion came from him, the faid: Kinde levonimo, why doet thou not depart and get thee gone? So putting forth her hand, it hapned to light upon his face, which the felt to be as cold as ice : whereat marvelling not a little, as also at his continued filence, thee jogged him, and felt his hands in like manner, which were fliffely extended forth, and all his body cold, as not having any life remaining in him, which greatly amazing her, and confounding her with forrow beyond all measure, the was in fuch perplexity, that shee could not devise what to doc or fay.

In the end, sheeresolved to trie how her husband would take it, that so strange an accident should thus happen in his house, and putting the case as if it did not concerne them, but any other of the neighbours; awaking him fift, demanded of him what was best to be done, if a man should steale into a neighbours house, unknowne to him, or any of his family; and in his bed chamber to be found dead. He presently replied (as not thinking the case concerned himselfe) that, the onely helpe in such an unexpected extremity, was to take the dead body, and convey it into his own house, if he had

any; whereby no scandall or reproach would follow tothem, in whose house hee had so unfortunately dyed.
Hercupon she immediatly arose, and lighting a candle,
shewed him the dead body of Ieroximo, with protestation of every particular, both of her innocency, either
of knwoledge of hiscomming thither, or any other
blame that could concerne her. Which hee both constanly knowing and believing, made no more ceremonie, but putting on his garments, tooke the dead body upon his shoulders, and carried it to the Mothers
doore, where he left it, and returned to his own house-

1

it

15

is

ed

e-

n-

25

to

nd

did

;2-

to

ale,

bed

not

the

had iny;

When day light was come, and the dead body found lying in the Porch, it moved very much griefe and amazement, confidering, hee bad beene feene the day before, in perfect health to outward appearance, Nor neede wee to urge any question of his Mothers forrow upon this ftrange accident, who, caufing his body to be carefully searched; without any blow, bruile, wound, or hurt upon it, the Physitians could not give any other opinion, but some other conceit of griefe had caufed his death, as it did indeede, and in no way otherwife, To the cheefe Church was the dead body carried, to be generally feene of all the people, his Mother, and Friends weeping heavily by it, as many more did the like befide, because hee was beloved of every one. In which time of vniverfall mourning, the honest man (in whose house he died) spake thus to his wife = disguise thy selfe in somedecent manner, and goe to the Church, where (as I heare) they have laide the body of leronimo. Crowde in amough the women, as I will doe the like amongst the men, to heare what opinion paffeth of his death, and whether wee shall be scandalized thereby, or no.

Situestra, who was now become full of pitty too late, quiekly condescended, as desiring to see him dead, who ma sometime she dearely affected in life. Being come to the

Church, it is a matter to be admired, if advisedly wee confider on the powerfull working of love; for the heart of this weman, which the prosperous fortune of terenime could not pierce, now in his wofull death did folit in funder; and the ancient sparkes of love so long concealed in the embers, brake forth into a furious flame, and being violently furprized with extra. ordinary compassion, no sooner did she come neere to the dead body, where many flood weeping round about is but strangely faricking out aloud, shee fell downe upon it: and even as extremitie of griefe finished his life, fo did it hers in the same manner. For the moved neither hand nor foote, because her vitall powers had quite forfaken her. The women labouring to comfert her by all best meanes they could devise ; did not take any knowledge of her, by reason of her disguised garments: but finding her dead indeede, and knowing her also to be Silvestra, being overcome with unspeakeable compassion, and danted with no meane admiration, they flood strangely gazing each upon other.

Wonderfull crouds of people were then in the Church; and this accident being now noised among the men, at length it came to her husbands understanorng, whose griefe was so great, as exceeded all capacitie of expression. Afterward he declared what had hapned in his house the precedent night, according as his wife had truly related to him, with all the speeches, which passed betweene Silvestra and Ieronimo; by which discourse, they generally conceived, the certaine occasion of both their fodgine death, which moved them to great compassion. Then taking the young womans body, and ordering it as a coarie ought to be: they laied it on the same Biere by the young man, and when they had fufficiently forrowed for their difastrous fortune, they gave them honourable buriall both in one grave. So this poore couple, whom love in (life) could not

456

of

· fo

II i=

ra -

out

vne

his

ved

had

fcrt

ake

ar-

her

able

ion,

the

ong

an-

aci-

isp-

his

hes,

; by

cer-

mo-

oung

be:

and

TOUR

one

ould

not

not joyne together, death did unite in an unseparable conjunction,

Messer Guiglielmo of Rossiglione having staint Messer Guiglielmo Guardastagno, whom he imagined to love his wife, gave her his heart to eate. Which she knowing afterward, threw her softe out of an high windew to the ground; and being dead, was then buried with her friend.

The ninth Novell.

Whereby appeareth, what ill successe attendeth on them, that love contrary to reason: in offering injurie both to friendship and marriage together.

When the Novell of Madam Neiphila was ended, which occasioned much passion in the whole assembly; the King would not infringe the priviledge granted to Dioreus, no more remaining to speake but they two, began thus. I call to minde (gentle Ladies) a Novell, which (seeing we are so farre entred into the lamentable accidents of successels less of will urge you unto as much commisseration, as that so lately reported to you. All so much the rather, because the persons of whom wee are to speake, were of respective qualitie; which approve the the accident to be more cruell, than these whereof we have formerly discoursed.

According as the people of Provence doe report, there dwelt sometime in that jurisdiction, two noble Knights, each well possessed with Castles and followers; the one being named Messes Guiglielmo de Resaligatione, and the other Messes Guiglielmo Guardassagn. Now, in regard that they were both valiant Gentlemen, and singularly expert in actions of Armes; they loved together the more mutually, and held it as a kind of custome to be seene in all Tilts and Tournaments, or any other exercises of Armes, going commonly alike

Novell. 8. The Fourth Day,

like in their wearing garments: And although their Cassels stood about five miles distant each from other, yet ivere they daily conversant together, as very lowing and intimate friends. The one of them, I meane Meser Guigitelmo de Rossilione, had to wise a very gallant beautifull Lady, of whom Messer Guardasseno (forgetting the lawes of respect and loyall friendship) became over-sondly enamored, expressing the same by such outward meanes, that the Lade her selse tooke knowledge thereof, and not with any dislike, as it seemed, but rather lovingly entertained; yet she grew not so forgetfull of her honour and estimation, as the

other did of faith ro his friend; Wich such indiscretion was this idle love carried. shat whether it forted to effect, or no, I know not; but the husband perceived fome fuch maner of behaviour, as hee could not eafily digeft, nor thought it fitting to endure. Whereupon, the league of friendly amity fo long continued, began to faile in very ftrange fashion. and became converted into deadly hatred: which yet he very cunningly concealed, bearing an outward thew of conftant friendfhip flill, but (in his heart) hee had vowed the death of Guardaftagno. Nothing wanted, but by what meanes it might best be effected, which fell out to be in this manner. A publike fouft or Tourney, was proclaimed by found of Trumpet throughout all France, wherewith immediatly, Meffer Guiglielmo Roffiglione acquanted Meffer Guardaftagno, entreating him that they might further conferre thereon together, and for that purpose to come and visite him, if he intended to have any hand in the bufineffe. Guardastagno being exceeding glad of this accident, which gave him liberty to fee his Miftreffe, fent answer back by the messenger, that on the morrow at night, hee would come and Sup with Roffiglione; who upon this reply, projected to himselfe in what manner to kill him.

On

heir

ther,

canc

very

Car-

end-

the

lelfe.

c, as

rcw

the

ricd.

but

our,

gto

y fo

ion,

yet

hew

had ted,

nich

-זוני

lme

ing

ge-

, if

AT-

ich

ack

hee

rc-

m. On

On the morrow, after dinner, arming himselfe, and two more of his fervants with him; fuch is hee had folemnely fworne to secrecie, he mounted on horsebacke, and rode on about a mile from his owne Castle. where hee lay closely ambushed in a Wood, thorough which Guardaftagno must needs passe. After hee had fluied there fome two houres space and more, he espied him come riding with two of his attendants, all of them being unarmed, as no way diffrusting any such intended treason. So soone as hee was come to the place, where hee had resolved to doe the deede; he rushed forth of the ambush, and having a sharpe Lance readily charged in his reft, ranne mainely at him, faying : Falle villaine, thou art dead. Guarda fagno, having nothing wherewih to defend himfelie, nor his fervants able to give him any fuccour; being pierced quite through the body with the Lance, downe he fel dead to the ground, and his men (fearing the like misfortune to befall them) gallopped mainely backe again to their Lords Caftle, not knowing them who had thus murthered their Master, by reason of their armed dilguiles, which in those martiall times were usually worne.

Messer Guiglielmo Rossiglione, alighting from his horse, and having a keene knife ready drawne in his hand 30-pened therewith the brest of dead Guardastagno, and taking forth his heart with his owne hands, wrapped it in the Bandelore belonging to the Lance, commanding one of his men to the charge thereof, and never to disclose the deede. So mounting on horse-backe againe, and darke night drawing on apace, he returned home to his Casse. The Lady, who had heard before of Guardassagnos intent, to suppe there that night, and (perhaps) being earnessly desirous to see hims marvelling at his so long tarrying, said to her husband: Beserve mee Sir (quoth shee) mee thinkes it

Y

is somewhat strange, that Messer Guiglichino Guardistagno delayes his comming so long, he never used to doe to till now. I received tidings from his wife (faid he) that he cannot be here till to morrow. Whereat the Lady appearing to be displeased, conceiled it to her

felic, and uled no more words.

Roffighone leaving his Lady, went into the Kitchin, where calling for the Cooke, hee delivered him the heart, faying: Take this heart of a wilde Boare, which it was my good happe to kill this day, and dreffe it in the daintieft manner thou canft devile to doe; which being to done, when I am fet at the Table, fend it to me in a filver diffe, with fauce beforming fo dainty a morfell. The Cooke tooke the heart, beleeving it to be no otherwife, than as his Lord had faid : and using his utmost skill in dreffing it, did divide it into artificiall small flices, and made it most pleasing to be rafted. When supper time was come, Rolligtione sate downe at the table with his Lady: but he had little or no appente at all to eate, the wicked deede which he had done fo perplexed his foule, and made him to fie very flrangely muling. At length, the Cooke brought in the daintie dith, which he himfelfe fetting before his wife, began to finde fault with his owne lacke of flomacke yet provoked her with many faire speeches, to tafte the Cooks cunning in fo rare a dish.

The Lady having a good appetite indeede, when the had first tasted it, sed afterward so heartily thereon, that she left very little, or none at all remaining. When he perceived that all was eaten, he said unto her. Tell me Madam, how you doe like this delicate kinde of meat In good faith Sir (quoth she) in all my life I was never better pleased. Now trust me Madame, answered the Knight, I doe verily believe you, nor doe I greatly wonder thereat, if you like that dead, which you loved so dearely being alive. When she heard these words, a

long

rais.

d to

faid

the

her

lin.

E.c

chit

the

be-

me

-101

no

his

iail

ed.

36

tite

efe

cly

ric

an

10-

oks

the

ma

C13.

cll

of

as.

ed.

ly

ed

, 2

long while the fate filent, but afterward faid. I pray you tell me Sir; what meate was this which you have made me to eate? Muse no longer (faid he) for therein I will quickly resolve thee. Thou hast eaten the heart of Messer and precious to thee, thou sale, persidious, and disloyall Lady: I pluckt it out of his vile body with my owne hands, and made my Cooke to dresse it for thy diet.

Poore Lady, how flrangely was her foule afflicted, hearing thefe harsh and unpleasing speeches? Teares flowed aboundantly from her faire eyes, and like tempestuous windes embowelled in the earth, so did vehement fighes breake mainely from her heart, and after a tedious time of filence, free fpake in this manner . My Lord and husband, you have done a most disloyall and damnable deede, milguided by your owne wicked jealous opinion, and not by any just cause given you, to murther so worthy and noble a Gentleman. I protell unto you upon my foule, which I with to be coafounded in eternall perdition, if ever I were unchaste to your bed, or allowed him any other favour, but what might well become so honourable a friend. And seeing my body hathe beene made the receptacle for fo precious a kinde of foode, as the heart of fo valiant and . contreous a Knight, such as was the noble Guardastagno; never shall any other foode hereafter have entertainement there, or my felie live the wife to lo bloudie a husband.

So starting up from the Table, and stepping unto a great gazing window, the casement whereof standing wide open behind her: violently she leaped out thereat, which being an huge heigth in distance from the ground, the fall did not onely kill her, but also shive-red her body into many peeces. Which Rossilione perceiving, he stoode like a body without a soule, consoun-

ded.

ded with the killing of so deare a friend, losse of a chaste and honourable wife, and all through his owne

over-credulous conceit.

Vpon further conference with his private thoughts, and remorfefull acknowledgement of his hainous offence, which tepentance (too late)gave him eyes now to fee, though rathrefte before would not permit him of confider; these two extreamities in larged his dulled understanding. First, he grew searefull of the followers to murthered Guardasstagno, as also the whole Country of Provence, in regard of the peoples generall love unto him; which being two mains and important motives, both to the detestation of so horridan act, and immediate severe revenge to succeede thereon; hee made such provisions best he could, and as so sodaine a warning would give leave, hee fled away secretly in the night season.

These unpleasing newes were soone spread abroad the next morning, not onely of the unfortunate accidents, but also of Rossiglians slight; in regard whereof, the dead bodies being found, and brought together, as well by the people belonging to Guardastagno, as them that attended on the Lady: they were layed in the Chappell of Rossigliances Cassle; where, after so much lamentation for so great a missortue to befall them, they were honourably interred in one faire Tombe, with excellent Versesengraven thereon, expressing both their noble degree, and by what unhappie meanes, they chanced to have their butiall.

there

A Physicians wife laide a Lover of her maides (supposing bim to be dead) in a Chest, by reason that he had drunk Water, which usually was given to procure a steepy entrancing. Two Lumbard usurers, stealing the Chest,

£

onv

its,

of-

OW

ımı

led

CIS

try

nto

es,

IT.-

ade c a

in

oad

cci-

erc-

ier,

25

din

· fo

fall

aire

cx-

ap-

iall

fine

unk

epy

the eft,

thest, in hope of a rich booty, carried it into their owne bouse, where afterward the man awaking, was taken for a Theese. The Chamber-maide to the Physicians wise, going before the bench of Justice, accuse there selfe for putting the imagined dead body into the Chest, by the which meanes he escapeth hanging. And the theeves which stole away the Chest, were condemned to pay a great summe of money.

The tenth Novell.

B'herein is declared, that sometime by adventureus accident, rather than any reasonable comprehension, a man may escape out of manifold perils, but especially in occurrences of Love.

A Fter that the King had concluded his Novell, there remained none now but Dieneus to tel the laft, which himselfe confessing, and the King commanding him to proceede, he beganne in this manner. So many miferies of unfortunate Love, as all of you have already related, hath not onely fwolne our eyes with weeping, but also made ficke our hearts with fighing : yea (Gracious Ladies). I my selfe finde my spirits not meanely afflicted thereby Wherefore the whole day hath beene very irkesome to me, and I am not a little glad, that it is to necre ending. Now, for the better fautting it up akogether, I would be very loath to make an addition, of any fuch fad and mournefull matter, good for nothing but to feede melancholy humour, and from which (I hope) my faire Starres will defend me. Tragicall discourse, thou art no fit companion for me; I will therefore report a Novell which may minister a more joviall kinde of argument, unto those Tales that must be told to morrow, and with the expiration of our present Kings reigne, to rid us of all heart-burming hereafter.

Know then (gracious affembly) it is not many yeares fince, where there lixed in Salerne, a very famous.

Physitian,

Novell.7. The Fourth Day,

Physician, named Signieur Mazzeo della Montagna; who being already well entred in yeares, would (nevertheleffe) marrie with a beautiful young maiden of the Citie, bestowing rich garments, gaudy attires, Rings, and lewels on her, luch as few women elle could equall, because he loved her most dearely. Yet being an aged man, and never remembring, how vaine and idle a thing it is, for age to make fuch an unfitting election, injurious to both; and therefore endangering that domeflicke agreement, which ought to be the fole and maine comfort of marriage : it maketh mee therefore to mildoubt, that as in our former Tale of Signieur Ricciardo de Cinquea, some dayes of the Caiender here feeme as diftaftefull, aschole that occasioned the other womans discontentment. In such unequal choifes, Parents commonly are more blame-worthy, than any imputation, to be laide on the young woman, who gladly would enjoy such as in heart they have elected; but that their l'arents, looking through the glaffe of greedy lucre, doe overthrow both their owne hopes, and faire fortunes of their children together.

Yet to speake uprightly of this young married wife, she declared her selfe to be of a wise and cheerefull spirit, not discouraged with her unequalitie of marriage: but bearing all with a contented brow, for feare of urging the very least missive in her husband. And he, one the other side, when occasions did not call him to visite his Patients, or to be present at the Colledge among his fellow-Dectours, would alwayes be cheering and comforting his wise, as one that could hardly affeord to be out of her company. There is one especiall fatall missortune, which commonly awaiteth on old mean marriages; when freezing December will match with flourishing May, and greene desires appeare in age, beyond all possibilitie of performance.

200

ne-

res,

be-

ine

ge-

the

mce

cot

Ca-

Go-

qua!

hy,

WO-

hey

ugh

heis

10-

ife.

eful!

arri-

And

him

cdec

hee-

rdly

eci-

hon.

Mill

ap-

No

g:1151

Nor are there wanting good stoore of wanton Gallants, who hating to see beauty in this manner betraied, and to the embraces of a loathed bed, will make their folly seene in publike appearance, and by their daily proffers of amorous services (seeming compassionate of the womans disaster) are usually the cause of jealous suspicions, and very heinous houshold discontentments.

Among divers other, that faine would be nibling at this beautic: there was one, named Ruggiero de Ieroly, of honourable parentage, but yet of such a deboshed and disordered life, as neither kindred or friends, were-willing to take any knowledge of him, but utterly gave him over to his dissolute courses: so that, throughout all Salerne, his conditions caused his generall contempt, and he accounted no better but even as a thee-ving and lewd companion. The Dostours wise, had a Chamber-maide attending on her; who notwithstanding all the ugly deformities in Ruggiero, regarding more his person than his impersections (because hee was a complease and well-featured youth) bestowed her affection most intirely on him, and oftentimes didsupply his wants, with her owne best meanes.

Ruggiero having this benefite of the maides kinde love to him, made it a hopefull mounting Ladder, whereby to derive fome good liking from the Miftrefle, prefuming rather on his outward comely parts, than any other honeft qualitie that might commend him. The Miftrefle knowing what choife her maide had made, and unable by any perfivations to remove hermooke knowledge of Ruggierors private reforting to her houfe, and in meere love to her maide (who had very many especiall deservings in her) oftentimes sheet would (in kinde manner) rebuke him, and advise him to a more settled course of fife; which counsell, that it might take the bettes effect, she graced with liberall

Novell. 10. The Fourth Day,

gifts: one while with Gold, others with Silver, and often with garments, for his comlier accesse thither's which bounty, hee (like a lewde mistaker) interpreted as affurances of her affection to him, and that he was more gracefull in her eye, than any man else could be.

In the continuance of these proceedings, it came to paffe, that Matter Doftor Marzeo (being not onely a most expert Physitian, but likewise as skilfull in Chirurgery belide) had a Patient in cure, who by great misfortune, had one of his legges broken all in pieces, which some weaker judgement having formerly deale withall, the bones and finewes were become fo foulely putrified, as he told the parties friends, that the legge must be quite cut off, or elie the Patient must needs die yet he intended so to order the matter, that the perill flould proceede no further, to prejudice any part of the body. The case being thus resolved on with the Patient and his friends, the day and time was appointed when the deede should be done: and the Doctor conceiving, that except the Patient were fleepily entranced, he could not by any meanes endure the paine, but must needes hinder what he means to doe : by di-Allation hee made fuch an artificiall Water, as fafter the Patient hath received it)it will procure a kinde of a dead fleepe, and indure follong a space, as necessitie requireth the ule thereof, in full performance of the worke.

After he had made this fleepy water, he put it into a glaffe, wherewith it was filled (almost) up to the brimme; and till the time came when he should use in he set it in his owne Chamber-window, never acquainting any one, to what purpose hee had provided the water, nor what was his reason of setting it there; when it drew towards the evening, and he was returned home from his Patients, a Messenger brought him Letters from Malfy, concerning a great conflict hap-

pening

Pening there betweene two noble Families, wherin divers were very dangeroufly wounded on either fide, and without hit speedy repairing thither, it would prove to the losse of many lives. Hereupon, the cure of the mans legge must needs be prolonged, untill he was returned backe againe, in regard that many of the wounded perfors were his worthy friends, and liberall bountiewas there to bee expected, which made him presently goe aboord a small Barke, and forthwith see away to-

wards Malfy.

and

cr;

ted

vas

be.

cto

ly a

hi-

gran

ces.

alg

lely

ege

eds

pc-

tof

the

ın-

for

en-

ne,

di-

ter

of

tic

he

01

he

IR

ac-

ed

re;

11-

m

P-

This abience of Mafter Doctor Mazzeo, gave opportunitie to adventurous Ruggiero, to vifite his house (he being gone) in hope to get more Crownes, and currehe from the Mistreffe, under formall colour of courting the maide. And being closely admitted into the house, when divers neighbours were in conference with her Miffresse, and held her with much pleasing discourse, as required longer time than was expedted; the maide had no other roome to conceale Ruggiero in, but onely the bed Chamber of her Matter, where thee lock'd him in; because none of the household people should discry him, and stayed attending on her Mistreffe, till all the neighboures tooke their leave, and were gone. Ruggiero thus remaining alone in the Chamber, for the space of three long houres and more, was visited, neither by maide nor Mistreffe, but awaited when he should be fet at libertie.

Now, whether feeding on falt meats before his comming thither, or customary use of drinking, which maketh men unable any long while to abstaine, as being never satisfied with excesse; which of these two ex treams they were, I know not but drink needs he must. And, having no other meanes for quenching his thirst, espied the glasse of water standing in the Window, and thinking it to be some soveraigne kinde of water,

referved

referved by the Doctor for his owne drinking, to make him lustic in his old yeares, hee tooke the glasse; and finding the water pleasing to his pallate, drinke it off every droppe; then sitting downe on a Coffer by the beds side, soone after he fell into a sound sleepe, accor-

ding to the powerfull working of the water.

No fooner were all the neighbours gone, and the maide at liberty from her Mittreffe, but unlocking the doore, into the Chamber the went; and finding Ruggiero fitting fast alleepe, the began to hunch and punch him, entreating him (foftly) to awake : but all was to no purpole, for he neither moved, or answered word; whereather patience being fomewhat provoked, thee punched him more rudely, and angerly faid: Awake for thame thou drowfie dullard, and if thou be fo defirous of fleeping, get thee home to thy owne lodging, because thou art not allowed to fleepe here. Ruggiere being thus rudely punched, fell from off the Coffer flat on the ground, appearing no other in all respects, than as if he were a dead body. Whereat the maide being fearefully amazed, plucking him by the nofe and yong beard, and what elfe the could devife to doe, yet all her labour proving fill in vaine: thee was almost beside her wits, stamping and raving all about the roome, as if fenfe and reason had forfaken hers so violent was her extreame diftraction:

Vpon the hearing of this noise, her Mistresse came suddenly into the Chamber, where being astrighted as so strange an accident, and suspecting that Ruggiero was dead indeede: shee pinched him strongly, and burnt his singer with a candle, yet all was as fruitlesse as before. Then sitting downe, shee began to consider advisedly with her selfe, how much her honour and reputation would be endangered hereby, both with her husband, and in vulgar opinion when this should come to publike notice. For (quoth shee to her maide) it is

make

and

it of

y the

ccor-

the

ethe

Rug-

unch

as to

ord;

thee

wake

de-

ing,

erero

f fat

han

eing

ong

her

fide

. 35

her

me

dar

icro

effe

der

IC-

her

me

is

100

not thy fond love to this unruly fellow that can fway the cenfure of the monfter multitude, in beleeving his accesse hither onely to thee; but my good name, and honest repute, as yet untoucht with the very least taxation, will be rackt on the tenter of infamous judgement, and (though never so cleere) branded with generall condemnation. It is wisedome therefore, that we should make no noise but (in silence) consider without selves, how to clear the house of this dead body, by some such helpefull and witty device, as when it shall be found in the morning, his being here may passe without suspicion, and the worlds rash opinion no way touch us.

Weeping and lamenting is now laide ande, and all hope in them of his lives refloring: onely to rid his body out of the houle, that now requires their care and cunning: whereupon the maide thus began, Miltreffe (quoth the) this evening, although it was very late, at our next neighbours doore (who you know is a loyner by his trade) I faw a great Cheft fland; and, asit feemeth, for a publike fale, because two or three nights together, it hath not beene thence removed : and if the owner have not lockt it, all inventions elfe cannot furnish us with the like helpe. For therein we will lay his body, whereon I will bestow two or three wounds with my knife; and leaving him fo, our house can be and more suspected concerning his being here, man anv other in the ftreete befide ; nay tarner farre leffe, in regard of your husband; credite and authority. Moreover, hereof i am certaine, that hee being of fuch bad and disordered qualities; it will the more likely be imagined, that he was flaine by some of his own loose companions, being with them about some pilfering bufinelle, and afterward hid his body in the chelt, it ftanding fo fidy for the purpole, and darke night also favoring the deed.

The

Novell. 10: The Fourth Day,

The maides counsell past under the seale of allowance, onely her Mistresse thought it not convenient, that (having affected him to dearely) the should mangle his body with any wounds; but rather let it be gathered by more likely-hood, that villaines had ftrangled him, and then conveyed his body into the Cheft. Away the Sends the maide, to fee whether the Cheft flood there Itill, or no; as indeede it did, and unlockt, whereof they were not a little joyfull. By the kelpe of her Mistresie, the maide tooke Ruggiero upon her shoulders, and bringing him to the doore, with diligent respect that none could discover them; in the Cheff they laide him, and fo there left him, cloting downe the lidde according as they found it.

In the same freete, and not farre from the loyner, dwelt two young men who were Lumbards, living upon the interest of their moneys, covering to get much, and to spend little. They having observed where the Cheft stood, and wanting a necessary moveable to houshold, yet loath to lay out money for buying it; complotted together this very night, to fteale it thence and to carrie it home to their house, as accordingly they did; finding it somewhat heavy, and therefore imagining, that matter of worth was contained there. in. In the Chamber where their wives lay, they left it; and so without any further fearch till the next morning, they laide them downe to rest likewise.

Ruggiero, who had now fleept a long while, the drinke being digested, and the vertue thereof fully consummated; began to awake before day. And although his naturall fleepe was broken, and his fenfes had recovered their former power, yet notwithstanding, there remained fuch an aftonishment in his braine, as not onely did afflift him all the day following, but also divers dayes and nights afterward. Having his eyes wide open, & yet not discerning any thing, he stretched forth

his

his a

felfe

awak

12 D

that I

ber, a

What

ned h

wher

me t

when

Ican

Co

woul

Was

diver

on th

any:

the c

Rbeg

ic m

beds:

feare

Rug

perce

he th

thou

up fo

as all

about

door histr

wind

210, 1

when

loun

his armes every where about him, and finding himfelse to be enclosed in the Chest, he grew more broad
awake, and said to himselse. What is this? Where am
1? Doe I wake or sleepe? Full well doe I remember,
that not long since I was in my sweete-hearts Chamber, and now (methinkes) I am mewed up in a Chest.
What should I thinke hereof? Is Master Doctor returned home, or hath some other inconvenience hapned,
whereby finding me asseepe, she was inforced to hide
me thus? Surely it is so, and otherwise it cannot be;
wherefore, it is best for me to be still, and listen when

I can heare any calking in the Chamber.

t, le

d

١,

ne

re

e,

at n,

r-

r,

h,

he

to

t;

ce ly

re

e•

r-

ke

2-

a-

-

e-

h

is

Continuing thus a longer while than otherwise hee would have done, because his lying in the bare Chest was somewhat uneasse and painefull to him; turning divers times on the one fide, and then as often againe on the other, covering still for ease, yet could not finde any: at length, hee thrust his backe so strongly against the chefts fide, that (it flanding on an un-even ground) it began to totter, and after fell downe. In which fall, it made fo loud a noise, as the women (lying in the beds franding by awaked, and were fo overcome with feare, that they had not the power to speake one word. Ruggiero also being affrighted with the chefts fall, and perceiving how by that meanes it was become open; he thought it better, leaft some other finister fortune should befall him, to be at open liberty, than inclosed up fo ffrictly. And because he knew not where he was, as also hoping to meete with his Mistreffe; he went all about groaping in the darke, to find either flaires or doore, whereby to get forth. When the women heard his trampling, as also his justling against the doores & windowes; they demanded, Who was there? Ruzgino, not knowing their voyces, made them no answer; wherefore they called to their husbands, who lay very foundly aceping by them, by reason of their so late walking walking abroad, and therfore heard not this noise in the house. This made the women much more timorous, and therefore rising out of their beds, they opened the Casement towards the freete; crying out aloude, Theeves, Theeves. The neighboures arose upon this outcry, running up and downe from place to place, some engirting the house, and others entring into it; by meanes of which troublesome noise, the two Lumbards awaked, and seizing there upon poore Ruggiero, (who was well-neare affrighted out of his wits, at so strange an accident, and his owne ignorance, how hee happened thither, and how to escape from them) he stood gazing on them without any answer.

By this time, the Sergeants and other Officers of the Citte, ordinarily attending on the Magiffrate, being raifed by the turnult of this uproare, were come into the house, and had poore Ruggiero committed unto their charge: who bringing him before the Governor, was forthwith called in question, and knowne to be of a most wicked life, a shame to all his friends and kindred. He could say little for himselfe, never denying his taking in the house, and therefore desiring to finith all his fortunes together, desperately confessed, that he came with a fellonious intent to rob them, and the

Governor gave him fentence to be hanged.

Soone were the newes spread throughout Salerne; that Ruggiero was apprehended, about robbing the house of the two usuring Lumbards: which when Mistresse Doctor and her Chamber-maide heard, they were confounded with most strange admiration, and scarfely credited what they themselves had done the night before, but rather imagined all matters past, to he no more than meerely a dreame, concerning Ruggleroes dying in the house, and their putting him into the cheft, so that by no likely or possible meanes, he could be the man in this perilous extremitie,

In

1

וכז

m

he

for

rag

bei

an

ma

wh

wh

bot

bee

mo

kin

flee

Pac

pre by

ast

fucl

resp

deth

med

con

Citi

mar

Miff

Mill

€TO,

I car

that

In a fhort while after, Mafter Doctor Margeo was returned from Malfy, to proceede in the cure of the poore mans leggee; and calling for his glaffe of water, which he left standing in his owne Chamber-window, it was found quite emptie, and not a drop in it; whereat hee raged to extreamely, as never had the like impatience beene noted in him. His wife, and her maide, who had another kinde of bufinelle in their braine, about a dead man fo ftrangely come to life againe, knew not well what to fay; but at the laft, his wife thus replied somewhat angerly. Sir (quoth the) what a coyle is here about a paltry glaffe of Water, which perhaps it hath beene fpilt, yet neither of us faulty therein? Is there no more fuch water to be had in the world? Alas deare wife (faid hee) you might repute it to be a common kinde of Water, but indeede it was not fo ; for I did purpolely compound it only to procure a dead-feeming fleepe: And so related the whole matter at large, of the Pacients legge, and his Waters loffe.

1

,

.

0

c

e

e

0

0

67

of ad

19

th

be

1

he

1-

cy

nd he

to

le-

he

ald

In

When thee had heard thele words of her husband, presently the conceived, that the water was drunke off by Ruggiero, which had fo fleepilyentranced his fences, as they verily thought him to be dead, wherefore thee faid. Beleeve me Sir, you never acquainted us with any fuch matter, which would have procured more eareful! respect of it : but seeing it is gone, your skill extendeth to make more, for now there is no other remedy. While thus Mafter Doctor and his Wife were conferring together, the maide went speedily into the Citie, to understand truly, whether the condemned man was Ruggiero, and what would now become of him. Being returned home againe, and alone with her Mistreffe in the Chamber, thus the spake. Now trust me Mistrelle, not one in the Citie speaketh well of Ruggiero, who is the man condemned to die; and, for ought I can perceive, hee hath neither Kinsman nor Friend that will doe any thing for him; but he is left with the Provost, and must be executed to morrow morning. Moreover Mastrelle, by such instructions as I have received, I can well-neere informe you, by what meanes he came to the two Lumbards house, if all be true as I

have heard.

You know the Joyner, before whose doore the chest flood, wherein wee did put Ruggiero; there is now a contention betweene him and another man, to whom (it seemeth) the cheft doth belong; in regard whereof, they are ready to quarrell extreamely each with other. For the one owing the cheft, and trufting the loyner to fell it for him, would have him to pay him for the cheit. The loyner denieth any fale thereof, avouching, that the last night it was stolne from his doore. Which the other man contrarying, and denying, maintaineth that he fold the cheft to the two Lumbard vinrers, as himselfe is able to affirme, because he found it in his house, when he (being present at the apprehension of Ruggiero) faw it there in the fame house. Hereupon, the loyner gave him the lye, because he never fold it to any man; but if it were there, they had robd him of it, as he would make it manifest to their faces. Then falling into clamorous speeches, they went together to the Lombards house, even as I returned home. Wherefore Miftreffe, as you may eafily perceive, Ruggiero was (questionlesse) carried thither in the cheft, and so there found; but how hee revived againe, I cannot comprehend.

The Mistresse understanding now apparantly, the full effect of the whole businesse, and in what manner it had beene carried, revealed to the maide her hulbands speeches, concerning the glasse of sleepy Water, which was the engine of all this trouble, clearly acquitting Ruggiero of the robbery, howfoever (in despetate sury, and tomake an end of a life so contestible)

he

di

m

Wi

to

0

O:

(d

to

be

aff

no

10

the

ich

diff

fell

dor

ded

(911

19110

and

ly I

harl

gon

por

mad

hou

fron

fer a

eith

unab

Mift

Sifter

IR yo

he had wrongfully accused himselfe. And notwithstanding this his hard fortune, which hath made him much more infamous than before, in all the diffolute beliaviour of his life; yet it could not quaile her affect on towardshim; but being loath hee should die fer some other mans effence, and hoping his future reformation; thee fell on her knees before her Millielle, and (drowned in her teares) moft earneftly entra ted her, to advise her with some such happy course, as might be the fafetie of poore Ruggieroes life. Miftrille Doctor, affecting her maid dearely, and plainly perceiving, that no difafterous fortune whatfocyer, could alter her love to condemned Rugglero; hoping the best hereafter, as the maid did, and willing to fave life rather than fuffer it be be loft without juft eaufe, the directed her in fach difereet maner, as you wil better coceive by the fucceffe.

h

15

is

n,

to

t

1-

07

e-

25

rc.

11-

the

ICE

uf-

cr,

ac-

ef-

he

According as the was instructed by her Mistrelle, the fell at the feete of Mafter Doctor, defiring him to pardon a great error, whereby thee had over-much offended him. As how? faid Mafter Dofter. In this manner (quoth the maide) and thus proceeded. You are not ignorant Sir, what a levede liver Ruggiero de Iero!y is. and notwithstanding all his imperfections, how decrely I love him, as he proteffeth the like to me, and thus hath our love continued a yeare and more. You being gone to Mally, and yourabsence granting me apt opportunitie, for conference with fo kinde a friend; I made the bolder, and gave him entrance into your house, yea even into mine owne Chamber, yet free from any abuse, neither did he (bad though he be) offer any. Thirfy he was before his comming thither. either by faltmeate, or diffempered diet, and I being unable to fetch him Wine of Water, by reason that my Mistreffe fate in the Hall, feriously talking with her Sifters; remembred, that I fave a viall of water flanding in your Chamber Window, which hee drinking quite

off, I fet it emptie in the place againe. I have heard your discontentment for the faid water, and confesse my fault to you therein: but who liveth so justly, without offending at one time or other? And I am heartily sory for my transgression; yet not so much for the water, as the hard forme that hath followed thereon; because thereby Ruggiero is in danger to lose his sie, and all my hopes are utterly lost. Let me intreate you therefore (gentle Master) first to pardon me, and that to grant me permission, to succour my poore condemned friend, by all the best meanes I can devise.

When the Doctor had heard all her discourse, angry though he were, yet thus he answered with a smile. Much better had it beene, if thy follies punifiment had falme on thy felfe, that it might have paide thee with deferyed repentance, upon thy Mistresses finding thee slee. ping. But goe and get his deliverance if thou canft, with this caution, that if ever hereafter he be feene in my house, the perill thereof shall light on thy felie. Resciving this answer, for her first entrance into the attempt, and as her Mistresse had advised her, in all haste the went to the prison, where thee prevailed so well with the laylor, that he granted her private conference with Ruggiero. Shee having instructed him what hee should fay, to the Provost, if he had any purpose to efcape with life; went thither before him to the Provoft, who admitting her into his presence, and knowing that the was Mafter Doctors maide, a man especially respe-Red of all the City, hee was the more willing to heare her mellage, hee imagining that the was fent by her Mafter.

Sir (quoth the) you have apprehended Ruggiero de Jeroly, as a theete, and judgement of death is (as I heare) pronounced against him: but hee is wrongfully secured, and is clearely innocent of such a heinous detection. So entring into the History, she declared e-

V73

m

an

he

the

tro

Lon

ma

very circumstance, from the originall to the end relating truly, that being her Lover, the brought him into her Masters house, where hee dranke the compounded sleepy Water, and reputed for dead, thee laide him in the Chest. Afterward, thee rehearsed the speeches between the Ioyner, and him that laide claime to the Chest, giving him to understand thereby, how Raggi-

ero was taken in the Lombards houfe.

4

1;

111

n

1-

17

ch

ne

01-

:0:

ıft,

in

20-

at-

afte

well

nce

hec

ef-

roft,

that

efpe-

care

her

ero de

(as I

gfully

is de-

ed c-

YETY

The Provost presently gathering, that the truth in this cafe was cafe to be knowne; fent first to Master Dollor Mazzeo, to know, whether he compounded amy fuch water, or no : which he affirmed to be true, and upon what occasion hee prepared it. Then the loyner, the owner of the Cheft, and the two Lombards, being severally questioned withall: it appeared evidently, that the Lombards did steale the Cheft in the night leafon, and carried it home to their owne house. In the end, Ruggiero being brought from the prison, and demanded, where he was lodged the night before, made answer, that hee knew not where, Onely hee well remembred, that bearing affection to the Chambermaide of Mafter Docto: Mazzeo della Montagna, flice brought him into a Chamber, where a viall of water stood in the Window, and he being extreamely thirty, dranke it offall. But what became of him afterward fill being awake, he found himfelf enclosed in a chefle and in the house of the two Lombards) hee could not lay any thing.

When the Provost had heard all their answers, which he caused them to repeate over divers times, in regard they were very pleasing to him, he cleared Ruggiero from the crime in posed on him, and condemned the Lombards in three hundred Ducates, to be given to Ruggiero, in way of an amends, and to enable his marriage with the Doctors maide, whose constance was much commended, and wrought such a miracle on

Z 2 penitent,

penitent Ruggiero; that after his marriage, which was graced with great and honourable pompe, he regained the intimate love of all his kindred, and lived in most noble condition, even as if he had never been any dis-

ordered man.

If the former Novels had made all the Ladies fad and fighe, this left of Dioneus as much delighted them, as reftoring them to their former jocond humor, and banishing Tragicall discourse for ever. The King perceiving that the Sun was neere letting, and his governe ment as neere ended, with many kinde and courteous speeches, excused himselfe to the Ladies, for being the motive of fuch an argument, as expressed the infelicitie of poore Lovers And having finished his excuse,up he role, taking the Crowne of Lawrell from off his owne head, the Ladies awaiting on whose head hee pleased next to set it, which proved to be the gracious Lady Flawmetta, and thus he spake: Here I place this Crowne on her head, that knoweth better than any other, how to comfort this faire affembly to morrow, for the forrow which they have this day endured.

Madam Fianmetta, whose lockes of haire were curled, long, and like golden wiers, hanging somewhat downe over her white and delicate shoulders, her visage round, wherein the Damaske Rose and Lilly contended for prioritie, the eyes in her head, resembling those of the Faulcon messenger, and also a daintie mouth; her lippes looking like two little Rubyes, with

z comfortable imile thus the replied.

Philostratus, gladly I doe accept your gift; and to the end that yo may the better remember your felfe, concerning what you have done hitherto: I will and command, that generall preparation be made against to morrow, for faire and happy fortunes happing to Lovers, after former cruell and unkind accidents. Which proposition was well pleasing to them all.

Then

2:

tie

150

€0

20

an

200

Whi

That

Then calling for the Master of the Household, and taking order with him, what was most needfull to be done; the gave leave unto the whole company (who were all risen) to goe recreate themselves until supper time. Some of them walked about the Garden, the beauty whereof banished the least thoughts of wearinesse. Others walked by the River to the Mill, which was not farre off, and the rest fell to exercises, fitting their owne fancies, until they heard the summons for Suppers. Hard by the goodly Fountaine (according to the wonted manner) they supped altogether, and were served to their no meane contentment thus being risen from the Table, they sell to their delight of singing and dancing. While Philomena led the dance, the Queene spake in this manner.

Philostratus, I intend not to varie from those courfes heretofore observed by my predecessors, but even as they have already done, so it is my authority to command a Song. And because I am well assured, that you are not unsurnished of Songs answerable to the qualitic of the passed Novels: my define is, in regard wee would not be troubled hereafter, with any more discorrecs of unfortunate Love, that you shallfing a Song agreeing with your owne disposition. Philostratus made answer, that he was ready to accomplish her command, and without all further ceremony, thus he began,

The Song.

Chorus. My teares do plainely prove, How infly that poore heart hath cause to grieve, Which (under trust) findes treason in his love.

When fuft I fam her, that now makes me figh, Diffrust did never enter interny thoughts.

So many vertues clearely shin'd in her,
That I effected dall martyrdome was light,

Z 3

Which

ing ntie with

d

n,

ıd

T-

J.

us

he

1.

up

115

icc

ous

isis

iny

OW,

ur-

hat

rvi-

othe conomoft to

hich Then

Novell. 10. The Fourth Day,

Which love could lay on me. Nor did I greeve, Although I found my liberty was lost. But now mine error I doe plaintly see: Not without forrow, thus hetray d to be. My teares doe, &c.

For, being left by hafest treachery
Of her in whom I most reposed trust:
I then could see apparant statterie
In all the fairest showes that she did make.
But when I strove to get forth of the space,
I found my felse the further pluoged to.
For I beheld another in my place.
And I cast off, with manifelt distrace. My, Get.

Then felt my heart fuch hels of heavier wees,
Not utterable. I curft the day and houre
When fuft I fam her lovely countenance,
Enricht with beauty, farre beyond all other:
Which fet my foule on fire, enflands each part,
Making a martyrdome of my poore heart.
My faith and hope being bafely thus betraide 3
I durft not move, toffeache I was affraide.
My teates doces.

Then can't (then powerfull god of Love) perceive,
My ceafeleffe forrow, voide of any comfort:
I make my meane to thee, and doe not fable,
Defining, that to end my mifer;
Theath may come speedily, and with his Dart
With one screef troke, quite pircing to my heart:
To cut off future sell contending strife.
An happy end be made of Love and Life:
My teares do. Gr.

No other meanes of comfort dath remaine. To eafe me of fuch (harpe a splittions. But onely death Grant then that I may die, To finsh griefe and tife in one bieft houre. For being hereft of any future loyes, Come, take me quickly from for alfe a friend. I clia my death, let thy great power approve, That I died true, and confeant in my love. My teares do, &c.

Happy shall I account this sighting some,
If some (beside my selfe) do learne to singit,
And so consider of my miseries,
As may incite them to lament my mrongs.
And to be warned by my wretched fate;
Least (like my selfe) themselves do sighteo late.
Learne Lovers, le arne, what is to be unjust,
And be betrayed, where you repose best trust.

The words contained in this Song, did manifeftly declare, what torturing afflictions poore Philogratus felt, and more (perhaps) had beene perceived by the lookes of the Lady whom he spake of, being then prefent in the dance; if the sudden ensuing darkenetic had not hid the crimson blush, which mounted up into her face. But the Song being ended, and divers other befide, lasting till the houre of rest drew on by command of the Queene, they all repaired to their Chambers.

THE FIFT DAY.

Whereon, all the Discourses doe passe under the Government of the most noble Lady Flammeten: concerning such persons, as have been fuccesseful in their love, after many hard and perilous missortunes.

The Induction.



OW began the Sunne to datt forth his golden beames, when Madam Fiamm tta (incited by the fiveet finging Birds, which fince the breake of day, (ate merrily chan-

Novellas. The Fifth Day,

sing on the trees) grofe from her bed : as all the other Ladies likewife did, and the three young Genliemen defeending downe into the fields, where they willed an a gentle pace on the greene graffe, untill the Sunne was usen a little higher. On many pleasant matters they conferred together, as they walked in feverall companies till at the length the Queene finding the heate to mlarge it felfe ftrongly, returned backe to the Caffle: where when they were all arrived, thee commanded, that after this mornings walking, their Homackes flould be refreshed with wholfome Wines. and also divers forts of banqueting stuffe. Afterward, they all repaired into the Garden, not departing thence, untill the house of dinner was come; at which time, the Master of the Houshold, having prepared every thing in decent readineffe, after a folemne fong was fung, by order from the Queene, they were feated at the Table.

When they had dined, to their owne liking and contentment, they began (in continuation of their former order) to exercife divers dances, and afterward voyces to their infiruments, and many pretty Madrights and Roundelayes. Vpon the finishing of these delights, the Queene gave them leave to take their rest, when such as were so minded, went to sleepe, others so laced themselves in the Garden. But after midday was overpast, they met (according to their wonted manner) and as the Queene had commanded, at the faire Fonniaine; where she being placed in her scate Royall, and casting her eye upon Pamphilus, she bade him begin the dayes discourses, of happy succession love, after dissertions and troublesome accidents; who yeelding thereto with humble reverence, thus began.

Many Novels (gracious Ladies) doe offer themselves to my memory, wherewith to begin so pleasant a day, as it is her Highnesse desire that this should be: among

Which

22

n

cd

ne

13

11

10

10

100

s,

h

-

Which plentie I esteeme one above all the rest, because you may comprehend thereby, not onely the fortunate conclusion, wherewith we intend to begin our day; but also, how mighty the forces of Love are, deferving to be both admired and reverenced. Albeit there are many (who searfely knowing what they say) doe condemne them with infinite grosse imputations: which I purpose to disprove, and (1 hope) to your no little pleasing.

Chynon, by falling in Love, became mife, and by force of Arnes, winning his faire Lady lphigenia on the Seas, was afterward imprificed at Rhodes. Being delivered by one named Lylimachus, with him he recovered his lphigenia againe, and faire Callundra, even in the middefe of their warriage. They fled with them into Candy, where after they had married them, they were called home to their own dwelling.

The first Novell.

Whereby is approved, that Love (oftentimes) maketh a man both wife and valiant.

A Coording to the ancient Annales of the Capriots, there fometime lived in Cyprus a noble Gentleman, who was commonly called Ariftippus, and exceeded all other of the Countrey in the goods of Fortune. Divers children he had, but (among it the reft) a Sonne, in whose birth he was more infortunate than the rest;act continually grieved, in regard, that having all compleate perfections of beautie, good forme, and man'y parts, furpassing all other youths of his age or frames yet he wanted the reall ornament of the tonle, realon and judgement; being indeed a meere Ideoc or Foole, and no better hope to be expected from him. His true name, according as hee received it by Bapcifine, was Galefus, but because neither by the laborious paines of his Tutors, inculgence, great care, and faire enendevous.

Novell.t. The Fifth Day,

devour of his Parents, or ingenuitie of any other, hee could not be brought to civilitie of life, understanding of Letters, or common carriage of a reasonable creature; by his grosse and desormed kinde of speech, his qualities also saveuring rather of brouth feeding, than any way derived from manly education; and as an Epithite of scorne & derision, generally, they gave him the name of Chynen, which in their native Countrey language, and divers other beside, significant a very Sot or Foole, and so was he termed by every one.



This loft kinde of life in him, was no meane burthen

uicd

of gricfe unto his noble Father, all hope being already fount, of any future happy recovery, he gave command (because he would not alwayes have such a forrow in his fight) that befould live at a Farme of his owne in a Countrey Village, among his Peazants and Plough-Swaines. Which was not any way diftaftefull to Chynon, but well agreed with his owne naturall disposition; for their rurall qualities, and groffe behaviour pleased him beyond the Cities civilitie. Chypon living thus at his fathers Countrey Village, exercifing nothing eliebut rurall demeanour, fuch as then delighted him above all other: it chanced upon a day, about the houre of noone, as he was walking over the fields, with a long staffe on his necke, which commonly hee uled to carry; beentred into a small thicker, reputed the goodlieft in all those quarters, and by reason it was then the moneth of May, the Trees had their leaves fairely fhot forth.

When he had walked through the thicket, it came to palle, that (even as good Fortune guided hum)he came into a faire meadow, on every fide engire with Trees, and in one corner thereof flood a goodly Fountaine, whole currant was both coole and cleare, Hard by it, upon the greene graffe, he efpied a very beautifull young Damofell, feeming to be fift affeepe, astered in fach loofe garments, as hid very lattle of her white body; onely from the girdle downeward, thee were a kutle made close unto her, of interwoven delicate filke, and at her feete lay two other Damolols fleeping, and a fervant in the fame manner. No fooner had Chynon fix ed his eye upon her, but he flood leaning on his flaffe; and viewed her advisedly, without speaking a word, and in no meane admiration, as if hee had never feene the forme of a woman before. He began thes to feele m his rurall underft inding (whereun'o never uil now, either by pamefull inftruction, or any good meanes

used to him, any honest civility had power of impression) a strange kinde of humour to awake, which informed his grosse and dull spirit, that this Damosell was the very fairest, which ever any living man beheld.

Then he began to diffinguish her parts, commending the treffes of her haire, which hee imagined to be of gold, her forehead, note, mouth, necke, armes, but (above all) her brefts, appearing (as yet) but onely to they themselves, like two little mountaines. So that of a fielden clownish lout, he would needes now become a dge of beauty, covering earnestly in his foule, to fee hereyes, which were veiled over with found fleepe, that kept them fast inclosed together, and onely to looke on them, he wished a thousand times, that thee would awake. For in his judgement, thee excelled all the womentinat ever he had teene, and doubted, whether the were some Goddelle, or no; so trrangely was he metal merphofed from folly, to a fenfible apprehenfion, more than common.' And fo farre did this fodaine know . ledge in him extend; that he could conceive of divine and celeftiall things, and that they were more to be admired and reverenced, than those of humane or terrene confideration; wherefore the more gladly he contented hunfelfe, to carry till fice awaked of her owne accord. And although the time of flay feemed tedious to him, yet notwithitanding, he was overcome with fach extraordinary contentment, as hee had no power to depart thence, but flood as if he had beene glaci fall to the ground-

After fome indifferent respite of time, it chanced aborthe young Daniosell (who was named Ipingenia) awaked before any of the other with her, and liking up her head, with her eyes wide open, the saw Chynen standing before her, leaving still on his staffe; whereat maivelling not a little, the said unto him: Chynen, whither wanderest thou, or what dost thou seeke for in

this

th

this wood? Chynen, who not onely by his conntenance but likewife his folly, nobility of birth, and wealthy possessions of his Father, was generally knowne throughout the Countrey, made no answer at all to the demand of Iphigenia : but fo foone as he beheld her eyes open, hee began to observe them with a constant regard, and being persivaded in his scule, that from them flowed fuch an unutterable firgularitie, as he had neverfelt till then. Which the young Gentlewoman well noting, the began to wax fearefull, leaft thefe ftedfaft lookes of his, should incite his ruflicity to some attempt, which might redownd to her diffeonour; wherefore awaking her women and icroants, and they all being riten, the faid. Farewell Chyana, I leave thee to thine owne good Fortune; whereto hee prefently replied, faying: I will goe with you. Now although the Gentlewoman refused his company, as dreading some all of incivilitie from him : yet could fle not devile any way to be rid of him, till he had brought her to her owne dwelling, where taking leave mannerly of her, he went directly home to his Fathers Louie, faying : Nothing should compel him to live any longer in the muddie Countrey. And albeit his Father was much offended hereat, and all the rest of his kindred and friends: (yet not knowing how to helpe it) they suffered him to continue there ftill, expecting the cause of this his fo fodaine alteration, from the course of life, which contented him to highly before.

Chynon being now wounded to the heart (where never any civil infittetion could before get entrance) with loves piercing dart, by the bught beauty of Iphigenis, moved much admiration (falling from one change to another) in his father, kindred, and all elfe that knew him. F. 1 fiff the requested of his father, that he might be habred and respected like to his breathren, whereto right gladly lace condescended. And

it

frequen-

frequenting the company of civil youths, observing alto the carriage of Gentlemen, especially such as were amoroully inclined : hee grew to a beginning in a fhort time (to the wonder of every one) not onely to understand the fust influction of Letters, but also became most skilfull, even among it them that were best exers cifed in Philotophy. And afterward, love to Iphigenia being the fole occasion of this happy alteration, not onely did his harsh and clownish voyce convert it selfe more mildely, but also he became a singular Musician, and could perfectly play on any inftrument. Befide, hee tooke delight in the riding and managing of great horles, and finding himselfe of a flrong and able body, he used all kindes of Military Disciplines, as well by sea, as on the land. And, to be breefe, because I would not feeme tedious in the repetition of all his vertues, scarlely had he attained to the fourth yeare, after he was thus falne in love, but hee became generally knowne, to be the most civil, wife, and worthy Gentleman, as well for all vertues enriching the mind:, as any syhatloe. ver to beautifie the body, that very hardly he could be equalled throughout the whole kingdome of Cypras.

What shall wee say then (vertuous Ladies) concerning this Chyner? Surely nothing esse, but that those high and divine vertues, insused into his gentle soule, whereby envious Fortune, bound and shut up in some small angle of his intellect, which being shaken and see at libertie by love, (as having a starre more potent power than Fortune, in quickning and reviving the dull and drowshe spirits;) declared his mighic and soveraigne authoritie, in setting free so many sure and precious vertues unjustly detained, to set the worlds eye behold them truly, by manifest testimony from whence hee can deliver those spirits subjected to his power, and guide them (afterward) to the highest de-

C

lu

grees of honour. And although Chynea by affecting 1porgenia, failed in fome particular things; yet notwithflanding, his Father Arifrippus duely confidering, that love had made him a man, whereas (before) hee was no better than a heaft : not onely endured all patiently, but also advised him therein, to take such courses as best liked himselfe. Nevertheleste, Chynon (who refufed to be called Galefas, which was his natural name indeede) remembring that iphigenia tearmed him chynon, and covering (under this title) to compaffe the iffue of his honest amorous defire: made many motions to Cipheus the Father of Iphigenia, that he would be pleased to let him enjoy her in marriage. But Ciphases to i him, that he had already pasted his promise for her, to a Gentleman of Rhodes, named Pasimondo, which promife he religiously intended to performe.

The time being come, which was concluded on for Iphigeniaes marriage, in regard that the affianced hufband had fent for her; Chynon thus communed with his owne thoughts. Now is the time (quoth he) to let my divine Miftreffe fee, how true and honourably I doe atfeet her, because (by her) I am become a man. But if I could be poffeffed of her, I should grow more glorious, than the common condition of a mortall man, and haveher I will, or lose my life in the adventure. Being thus refolved, he prevailed with divers young Gentlemen his friends, making them of his faction, and fecretly prepared a Shippe, furnished with all things for a Navall fight, fetting fodainely forth to Sea, and hulling abroade in those parts by which the vessell should passe, that must convey Iphigenia to Rhodes to her husband. After many honeurs done to them, who were to transport her thence unto Rhodes, being imbarked, they fet faile upon their Bon visggio.

Cinnon, who flept not in a bufineffe fo earneffly importing him, fet on them (the day following) with his

Ship, and flanding alofe on the decke, cried out to them that had the charge of Iphigenia, faying. Strike your fayles, or elie determine to be funke in the Sea. The enemies to Chynon, being nothing danted with his words, prepared to fland upon their owne defence; which made Chynon, after the former Decches delivered, and no answer returned, to command the grapling Irons to be cast forth, which tooke so fast hold on the Rhodians flip, that (whether they would or no) both the Veffels joyned clote together. And he thewing himselfe fierce like a Lyon, not tarrying to be seconded by any, Repped aboord the Rhodians thip, as if hee made no respect at all of them, and having his fivord ready drawne in his hand (incued by the venue of unfaigned love) laied about him on all fides very manfully. Which when the men of Rhodes perceived, cafling downe their weapong, and all of them (as it were) with one voyce yeelded themselves his prisoners : whereupon hee faid. Honest friends, neither defire of booty, nor hatred to you, did occision my departure from Cyprus, thus to affaile you with drawne weapons, but that which hereto hath moved mee, is a matter highly importing to me, and very cafe for you to grane and fo enjoy your present peace. I defice to have faire Iphigenia from you, whom I love above all other Ladies living, because I could not obtaine her of her father, to make her my lawfull wife in marriage. Love is the ground of my inftant conquest, and I must use you as my mortall enemies, if you fland upon any further tearmes with me, and doe not deliver her as mine owne : for your Pafiner to, must not enjoy what is my right, first by vertue of my leve, and now by Conqueft : Deliver her therefore, and depart hence at your pleasure,

The men of khoder, being ratherconstrained thertoathan of any free disposition in theselvess with tears 111

hi

m

10

ry

of

in

an Fo

for

ho fro

2110

the

blo

arc

tic

hoy

IF

in their eyes, delivered Iphigenia to Chynon; who beholding her in like manner to weepe, thus pake onto
her. Noble Lady, doe not any way discomfort your
salfe, for I am your Chynon, who have more right and
true title to you, and much better doe deserve to enjor you, by my long continued assection to you, than
Passando can any way pleade; because you belong
to sum but onely by promise. So, bringing her aboord
his owne ship, where the Gentlemen his companions
gave her kinde welcome, without touching any thing
elie belonging to the Rhodians, he gave them free li-

berry to depart.

e

S.

...

10

C

1-

1-

ie Co

r-

ny

n-

ur

1-

irs

317

Chypen being more joyfull, by the obtaining of his hearts defire, than in any other conquest else in the world could make him, after he had fpent some time in comforting Iphigenia, who as yet fate fadly fighing; hee confulted with his companions, who joyned with him in opinion, that their lafelt course was, by no meanes to returne to Cyprus; and therefore all (with one accord) resolved to set faile for Candie, where every one made account, but especially Chynon, in regard of ancient and new combined Kindred, as also very intimate friends, to find very worthy entertainement, and to continue there fafely with Iphigenia. Bug Fortune, who was fo favourable to Chynon, in granting him to pleating a Conquest, to thew her inconstancy, fo lodainely changed the ineftimable joy of our jocond Lover, into as heavy forrow and difafter. For, foure houres were not fully compleated, fince his departure from the Rhodians, but darke night came upon them, and he fitting conversing with his faire Mistresse, in the sweetest solace of his soule; the windes began to blow roughly, the feas swelled angerly, and a tempest arose imperuously, that no man could see what his dutie was to doe, in fuch a great unexpected diffreste, nor how to warrant themselves from perithing.

If this accident were displeasing to poore Chynan, I chinke the question were in vaine demanded; for now it seemeth to him, that the gods had granted his chiefe define, to the end hee should die with the greater angusth, in losing both his love and life together. His triends likewise felt the selfe-same afflictions, but especially spingeaia, who wept and grieved beyond all measure, to see the ship beaten with such stromy billowes, as threatned her sinking every minute. Impariently she cursed the love of chynon, greatly blamed his desperate boldnesse, and maintaining, that so violent a tempest could never happen, but onely by the gods displeasire, who would not permit him to have a wife against their will; and therefore thus punished his proud presumption, not only in his unavoidable death,

but also that her life must perish for company.

She continuing in these wofulllamentations, and the Mariners labouring all in vaine, because the violence of the tempest encreased more and more, so that every moment they expeded wracking: they were carried (contrary to their owne knowledge) very neere to the Ifle of Rhodes, which they being no way able to avoide, and utterly ignorant of the Coast; for safetie of their lives, they laboured to land there if poslibly they might. Wherein Fortune was somewhat furtherous to them, driving them into a fmall gulfe of the Sea, whereinto (but a little while before) the Rhodians, from whom Chynoa had taken Iphigenia, were newly entred with their thip. Nor had they any knowledge each of other, till the breake of day (which made the heavens to looke more electely) gave them difcovery of being within a flights thoote together. Chinen looking forth, and coving the farne thip which he had left the day before, hee grew exceeding forrowfull, as fearing that which after followed, and therefore hee willed the Mariners, to get away from her by all their

belt

n

rh.

th

in

m

di

de

jo

th

af

tei

ch

ap

an

RJ

of

pr:

th

gei

foo

phi

an

boft endeavour, and let fortune afterward dispole of them as the pleased; for into a worse place they could

not come, nor fall into the like danger.

W

fe

1-

15

11

1-

is

m

ids

nis

th,

the

cry

icd

the

12-

etic

bly

the

di-

rere

ow-

ico-

non

had

1,38

heer

beit

The Mariners employed their very utmost paines, and all proved but loffe of time: for the winde was to tierne, and the waves to turbulent, that fill they drove them the contraty way : fo that ftriving to get torth of the gulfe, whether they would or no, they werere driven on land, and instantly knowne to the Rhodians, whereof they were not a little joyfull. The men of Rhodes being landed, ranne prefently to the neere-neighbouring Villages, where dwelt divers worthy Gentlemen, to whom they reported the arnvall of Chynon, what fortune befell them at fea, and that Ipingenia might now be recovered againe, with chastilement to Chynon for his bold insolence. They being very joyfull of these good newes, tooke so many men as they could of the fame Village, and ran immediately to the Sea fide, where Chynon being newly landed and his people, intending flight into a neere adjoyning Forrest, for defence of himselfe and Iphigenia, they were all taken, led thence into the Village, and afterward unto the chiefe Citie of Rhodes.

No fooner were they arrived, but Passimondo, the intended Husband for Iphigenta (who had already heard the tydings) went and complained to the Senate, who appointed a Gentleman of Rhodes, named Lysimachus, and being that yeare foveraigne Magistrate over the Rhodians, to goe well provided for the apprehension of Chynon and his company, committing them them to prison, which accordingly was done. In this manner, the poore unfortunate lover Chynon, lost his faire Iphigenia, having won her in so short a while before, and scarlely required with so much as a kisse. But as for Iphigenia, she was royally welcommed by many Lords and Ladies of Rhodes, who so kindely comforted her,

t'aat

that the foone forgot all her griefe and trouble on the Sea, remaining in company of those Ladies and Gentlewomen, until the day determined for her marriage.

At the earnest entreaty of divers Rhodian Gentlemen, who were in the Ship with Iphigenia, and had their lives courteously saved by Chynon: both he and his friends had their lives likewise spared, skhough Passimens had their lives likewise spared, skhough Passimens had their lives likewise spared, skhough Passimens had their lives likewise spared important limportant which (you must thinke) was most affection to them, as being now hopelesse of any deliverance. But in the meane time, while Passimondo was ordering his nuptall preparation, Fortune seeming to repent the wrongs she had done to Chynon, prepared a new accident, whereby to comfort him in this deepe distresse, and in such manner as I will relate un-

to you.

Pasimondo had a Brother, yonger than he in yeeres, but not a jot inferiour to him in vertue, whose name was Hormifda, and long time the case had beene in queflion, for his taking to wife a faire yong Gentlewoman of Rhodes, called Caffandras whom Lyfimachus the Governour loved very dearely, and hindred her marriage with Hormifda, by divers firinge accidents. Now Pasimondo perceiving, that his owne Nuptials required much cost and solemnity, he thought it very convenient, that one day might lerve for both their Weddings, which elfe would lanch into more lavish expences, and therefore concluded, that his brother Hormilda should marry Cassandra, at the same time as he wedded Iphignia. Hereupon, he confulted with the Gentlewomans parents, who liking the motion as well as he, the determination was fet downe, and one day to effect the dutics of both.

When this came to the hearing of Lyfimachus, it was greatly displeasing to him, because now he saw him-

felfe

v

1

v

tı

n

20

0

b

O

n.

ce.

10-

iad

nd

124.

t to

mi-

ec-

VC_

vas 2 to

da

his

un-

res,

me

uc-

nan

Go-

rri-

low

red

ni-

igs,

and

ould

phi-

ans

ter-

du-

was

im-

felfe

felfe utterly deprived of all hope to attaine the iffue of his defire, if Hormifda received Caffandra in marriage. Yet being a very wife and worthy man, he diffembled his diffaffe, and began to confider on fome apt meanes, whereby to difappoint the marriage once more, which he found impossible to be done, except it were by rape or steakh. And that did not appeare to him any difficult matter, in regard of his Office and Authority; onely it would feeme dishonest initially giving such an unfitting example. Neverthelesse, after long deliberation, honour give way to love, and resolutely he concluded to steak her away, whatsoever became of it.

Nothingwanted now, but a convenient company to affift him, and the order how to have it done. Thei. he remembred Clynon and his friends, whom he detained as his prisoners, and perswaded himse fe, that hee could not have a more faithfull friend in fuch a bufines than Chynon was. Hercupon, the night following, he fent for him into his Chamber, & being alone by themfelves, thus he began. Coynon (quoth he) as the gods are very bountifull, in bestowing their bleffings on men, fo do they therein most wifely make proof of their vertues, and fuch as they finde firme and constant, in all occurrences which may happen, them they make worthy (as valiant spirits) of the very best and highest merites. Now, they being willing to have more certaine experience of thy vertues, than those which heretofore thou halt thewne, within the bounds and limits of thy fathers polleflions, which I know to be fuperabounding: perhaps doe intend to prefent thee other occasions, of more important weight and consequence.

For first of all (as I have heard) by the piercing solicitudes of love, of a senselesse creature, that made thee to become a man endued with reason. Afterward, by adverse fortune, and now againe by wearssome im-

prifon-

prisonment, it seemeth that they are desirous to make triall, whether thy manly courage be changed, or no, from that which heretofore it was, when thou enjoyeds a matchlesse beauty, and lost her again in so short a while. Wherefore if thy vertue be such as it high been, the gods can never give thee any blessing more worthy any acceptance, than shee whom they are now minded to bestow on thee; in which respect, to the end that thou maiest re-assume thy worted heroicke spirit, and become more couragious than ever hereto-

fore, I will acquaint thee more at large.

Vinderstand then noble Chynon, that Pasimondo, the onely glad man of thy misfertune, and diligent futor after thy death, maketh all hafte he can possibly devise to doe, to celebrate his marriage with thy faire Mistris: because he would pleade possession of the prey, which Fortune (when the finiled) did first bestow, and (afterward frowning) tooke from thee againe. Now, that it must needes be very irkesonie to thee (at least if thy love be fuch, as I am perswaded it is) I partly can collect from my felfe, being intended to be wronged by his brother Hormifda, even in the felfesame manner, and on his marriage day, by taking faire Caffandra from me, the onely lewell of my love and life. For the prevention of two fuch notorious in juries, I fee that Fortune hath left us no other meanes, but onely the vertue of our courages, and the help of our right hands, by preparing our felves to Armes, opening a way to thee, by a fecond rape or ftealth; and to me the first; for absolute possession of our divine Mistresses. Wherefore, if thou art defirous to recover thy losse, I will not onely pronounce liberty to thee (which I thinke theu doft lutle care for without her but dare also affure thee to enjoy Iglizenia, fo thou wilt affit me in mine enterprile, and follow me in my fortune, if the gods doe let them fall into our power,

You

B

Ot

ne

of

mo

eni

the

tha

thip

fing

You may well imagine, that Chynons dismayed foule was not a little cheared at thefe speeches; and therefore, without craving any longer respit of time for antwer, thus he replied. Lord Ly simachus, in such a busineffe as this is, you cannot have a fafter friend than my felfe, at least, if fuch good hap may betide me, as you have more than halfe promifed: and therefore doe no more but command what you would have to be effested by me, and make no doubt of my courage in the execution: Whereon Ly finachus, made this answer. Know then Chy 101 (quoth he) that three dayes hence. these maringes are to be celebrated in the houses of Pafinando and Hormifda: upon which day, thou, thy friends, and my felfe (with some others, in whom I repose especials trust) by the friendly favour of night, will enter into their houses, while they are in the middest of their loviall feafting; and (feizing on the two Brides) beare them thence to a thip, which I will have he in fecret, waiting for our comming, and kill all fuch as shall presume to impeach us. This direction gave great contentment to Chynen, who remained still in prison, without revealing a word to his owne friends, untill the limited time was come.

Vpon the Wedding day, performed with great and magnificent Triumph, there was not a corner in the Brethrens houses, but it sung joy in the highest key. Lysimachus, after hee had ordered allthings as they ought to be, and the houre for dispatch approached neere; hee made a division in three parts, of Chynon, of his followers, and his own friends, being all well armed under their outward habits Having first used some encouraging speeches, for more resolute prosecution of the enterprize, he fent one rroope fecretly to the Port, that they might not be hindered of going abourd the thip, when the ingent occasion should require it. Paf fing with the other two traines of Pasimondo, hee left

the

is doc You

9

V

c

S

)•

10

ic

15:

ich

er.

tit

thy

00

by

ner,

ndra

For

that

the

nds,

ayto

firft;

acre-

ll no:

theu

chiec

ne en-

the oneat the doore, that fuch as were in the house, might not shut them up fast, and so impeach their passage forth. Then with chynon, and the third band of Confederates, he ascended the staires up into the Hall, where he found the Brides with store of Ladies and Gentlewomen, all fitting in comely order at Supper, Rushing in roughly among the attendants, down they throw the Tables, and each of them laying hold of his Mistresse, delivered them into the hands of their folz lowers, commanding that they should be carried abourd the ship, for a voiding of further inconveniences.

This hurrie and amazement being in the house, the Brides (weeping), the Ladies Immenting, and all the forwards confusedly wondering; Chyaen and Lysmachus (with their Friends) having their weapons drawne in their hands, made all opposers to give them way, and so gained the staires for their owne descending. There should be a simple stair their passage downe the stayres; but Chyaon faluted him so foundly on the head, that it being elest in twaine, he fell dead before his seete. His Brother Hormissage he held dead before his feete. His Brother Hormissage manner as he had done; so did divers other beside, whom the companions to Lysmachus and Chymon, either slew out-tight, or wounded.

So they left the houle, filled with blood, teares, and out cries, going on together, without any hinderance, and so brought both the Brides aboord the ship, which they rowed away instantly with their Oares. For, now the shore was full of armed people, who came in refeue of the shore hadies; but all in vaine, because they were lanched into the maine, and sayled on merrily towards candie. Where being arrived, they were worthily entertained by honourable Friends and Kinsmen, who paties all unkindnesses betweene them and their Missesses. And, having accepted them in lawfull mar-

riage,

re

21

co

th

C

an

de

fel

Fa

efpe

Æn

the !

that

Who

to t

wal

ny c

ifc.

af-

d of

all,

and

er.

hey

his

fol=

oord

the

chus

C III

and

ore

dito

fa-

it in

Hor.

the

ther

chy.

and

nce,

hich

now

clcue

were

ards

у сп.

o pa-

Mi-

mar-

iage,

tiage, there they lived in no meane joy and contentment: albeit there was a long and troublesome diffetence (about these rapes) betweene Rindes and cyprus.
But yet in the end, by the meanes of Noble Friends
and Kindred on either side, labouring to have such discontentment appeased, endangering warre betweene
the Kingdomes: after a limited time of banishment,
Chynon returned joyfally with Ipigenia home to Cyprus,
and Lysimachus with his beloved Cassandra unto Rhodes, each living in their severall Countries, with mucht
felicity.

Faire Constance of Liparis, fell in love with Martuccio Gomitto: and hearing that he was dead, desperately she entered into a Barke, which being transported by the windes to Susa in Barbary, from thence she went to Thunis, where she made her selfe knowne to him, or he being in great authority, as a privile Counseller to the King: he married the sayd Constance, and returned richly home with her, to the Island of Liparis.

The second Novell.

Wherein is declared, the firme loyalty of a true Lover 2
And how Fortune doth sometime humble men, to raise
them afterward to a farre higher degree.

When the Queene perceived, that the Novell recited by Pamphilus was concluded, which the graced with especiall commendations: thee commanded Madam Emilia, to take her turne as next in order; whereupon the thus began. Me thinkes it is a matter of equity, that every one should take delight in those things, whereby the recompence may bee noted, answerable to their owne affection. And because I rather defire to walke along by the pathes of pleasure, than dwell in any ceremonious or scrupulous affectation, I shall the

A :

more

at re gladly obey our Queene to day, than yesterday

Vnderstand then (Noble Ladies) that neer to Sicily, there is a small Island, commonly called Liparis, wherein (not long fince) lived a young Damofell, named confrance, borne of very fufficient parentage in the fame Island. There dwelt also a young man called Martuccio Gemito, of comely feature, well conditioned, and not unexpert in many vertuous qualities; affeeling constance in hearty manner; and the fo answerable to him in the same kinde, that to be in his company, was her onely felicity. Martuccio coveting to enjoy her in marriage, made his intent knowne to her Father: who upbraiding him with poverty, told him plainely that he should not have her. Martuccio greeving to fee himfelfe thus despised, because hee was poore: made fuch good meanes, that he was provided of a fmall barke; and calling fuch friends (as he thought fit) to his affociation, made a folemne yow, that hee would never returne backe to Liparis, until hee was wich, and in better condition.

In the nature and course of a Rover or Pirate, so he put thence'to fea, coafting all about Barbarie, robbing and spoyling such as he met with; who were of no greater Arength than himselfe: wherein fortune was so favourable to him, that he became wealthy in a very thort while. But as felicities are not alwayes permament, to he and his followers not contenting themselves with sufficient riches: by greedy seeking to get more, happened to betaken by certaine thips of the Sarazins, and so were robbed themselves of al that they had goteen, yet they refifted them floutely a long while together, though it proved to the loffe of many lives among them. When the Sarazens had funke his thip in the Sea, they tooke him with them to Thunis, where hee was imprisoned and lived in extreame milery. Newes

/y,

is.

12-

he

ed

0-

af-

10-

m-

to

to

old

cto

25

led

ght

ace

vas

put

ind

ter

u-

110

nt,

ves

re,

ns,

ot-

EC-

ng

the

nce

237

Newes came to Liparis, not onely by one, but many more befide, that all those which departed thence in the Small Barke with Martuccio, were drowned in the Sea. and not a man escaped. When Constance heard these unwelcome tydings (who was exceeding full of greefe, for his fo desperate departure) the wept and lamented extraordinarily, defiring now rather to dye, than live any longer. Yet she had not the heart to lay any violent hand on her felfe, but rather to end her dayes by some new kinde of necessity. And departing privately from her Fathers house, the went to the Port or Haven, where (by chance) the found a small Fisher-boate, lying diffant from the other veffels, the owners whereof being all gone on thore, and it well furnished with Mafts, Sailes, and Oares, the entred into it; and putting forth the Oares, being some-what skilfull in fayling, (as generally all the women of that Illand are) the fo well guided the Sailes, Rudder, and Oares, that the was quickely farre off from the Land, and foly remained at the mercy of the windes. For thus the had resolved with her felfe, that the Boat being uncharged, and without aguide, would either be over-whelmed by the windes, or split in preces against some Rocke; by which meanes thee could not escape although thee would, but (as it was her defire) must needes be drowned.

In this determination, wrapping a mantle about her head, and lying downe weeping in the boates bottome, she housely expected her finall expiration: but it fell out otherwise, and contrary to her desperate intention, because the wind turning to the North, and blowing very gently, without disturbing the Seas a jot, they conducted the small boate in such fort, that after the night of her entering into it, and the morrowes saling on untill the evening, it came within an hundred leagues of Thunis and to a strond neere

Novell. 2: The Fifth Day;

a Towne called Sufa. The young Damosell knew nor whether she were on the sea or land; as one, who not by any accident happening, listed up her head to looke about her; neither intended ever to doe. Now it came to passe, that as the boate was driven to the shore, a poore woman stood at the Sea side, washing certaine Fishermens Nets; and seeing the boate comming towards her under faile, without any person appearing in it, she wondered thereat not a little. It being close at the shore, and she thinking the Fishermen to be assequent the saw not any body, but only the poore distressed Damosell, whose sorrowes having brought her now into a found sleepe, the woman gave many cals before shee could awake her, which at the length she did, and loo-

ked very strangely about her.

The poore woman perceiving by her habite that she was a Christian, demanded of her (in speaking Latine) how it was possible for her, being al alone in the boate to arrive there in this manner? When Constance, heard her speak the Latine tongue, the began to doubt least some contrary winde had turned her backe to Liparis againe, and starting up fodainly, to looke with better advice about her, the faw her felfe at Land; and not knowing the Country, demanded of the poore woman where the was? Daughter (quoth thee) you are here hard by Sufa in Barbary. Which constance hearing and plainely perceiving, that death had denied to end her miseries, fearing least the should receive some difhonour, in such a barbarous unkinde country, and not knowing what should now become of her, the fate downe by the boate fide, wringing her hands and weeping bitterly.

The good woman did greatly compaffionate her case, and prevailed so well by gentlespeches, that she conducted her into her owner poore habitation, where at

length the understood, by what meanes thee happened thicker so strangely. And perceiving her to be fafting, the fer such homely bread as the had before her, a few small Fishes, and a Crewse of Water, praying her for to accept of that poore entertainement; which meere necessity compelled her to doe, and showed her

felfe very thankefull for it.

Conflance hearing that the Spake the Latine language so well; defired to know what the was. Whereto the old woman thus answered; Gendewoman (quoth the) I am of Trapanum, named Caraprefa, and am a fervant in this Country to certaine Christian Fishermen. The young Maiden (albeit the was very full of forrow) hearing her name to be Caraprefa, conceived it as a good augury to her felfe, and that the had heard the name before, although the knew not what occasion should move her thus to do. Now began her hopes to quicken againe, and yet the could not rely upon what ground; nor was the fo defirous of death as before, but made more precious estimation of her life, and without any further declaration of her felfe or Country, the entreated the good woman (even for charities fake) to take pitty on her youth, and helpe her with fuch good advice, to prevent all injuries which might happen to her, in such a solitary wofull condition.

Carapte fa having heard her request, like a good woman as she was, left Constance in her poore Cottage, went hastily to leave her nets in safety: which being done, she returned backe againe, & covering Constance with her mantle, led her on to Susawith her, where being arrived, the good woman began in this manner. Constance, I will bring thee to the house of a very worthy Sarazin Lady, to whom I have done many homest services, according as she pleased to command me. She is an ancient woman, full of charity, and to her I will commend thee as best I may, for I am well assured,

Novell.3. The Fifth Day,

that the will gladly entertaine thee, and use thee as if thou were her owne daughter. Now, let it be thy part, during thy time of remaining with her, to employ thy utmost diligence in pleasing her, by deserving and gaining her grace, till heaven shall blesse thee with better fortune: and as she promised so the performed.

The Sarazine Lady, being well ftept into yeares, upon the commendable speeches delivered by Carapresa, did the moreferjoufly fatten her eye on Conflance, and compaffion provoking her to teares, thee tooke her by the hand, and (in loving manner) kiffed her forehead. So thee led her further into her house, where dwelt divers other women (but not one man) all exercifing themselves in severall labours, as working all forts of filke, with Imbroideries of Gold and Silver, and fundry other excellent Arts befide, which in thore time were very familiar to conflance, and fo pleafing grew her behaviour to the old Lady, and all the reft belide; that they loved and delighted in her wonderfully, and (by little and little) the attained to the spea king of their language, although it were very harsh and difficult.

Conflance continuing thus in the old Ladies service at Susa, and thought to be dead or lost in her owne Fathers house; it fortuned, that one reigning then as King of Thunis, who named himselfe Mariabdelathere was a young Lord of great birth, and very powerfull, who lived as then in Granada, and pleaded that the Kingdome of Thunis belonged to him. In which respect he mustered together a mighty Army, and came to assume the King, as hoping to expell him. These newes comming to the eare of Mariuccio Gomito, who spake the Barbarian Language perfectly; and hearing it reported, that the King of Thunis made no meane preparation for his owne desence: he conferred with one of his keepers, who had the custody of him, and the rest

taken with him, faying: If (quoth he) I could have meanes to speake with the King, and he were pleased to allow of my counsel, I can enstruct him in such a course as shall assure him to win the honour of the field. The Guard reported these speaches to his master, who presently acquainted the King therewith, and Martuccio being sent for she was commanded to speake his mind:

Whereupon he began in this manner.

if

rt,

OY

nd

ct-

p-

14,

nd by

e-

ere

X-

all

er.

ort

ng

est

cr.

4 -

nd

nc

23

:10

IJ.

he

a

16-

es ke

C.

aof

n.

My gracious Lord, during the time that I have frequented your Country, I have heedefully observed that the Military Discipline used in your fightes and battles, dependeth more upon Archers, than other men imployed in your warre. And therefore, if it could be so ordered, that this kinde of Artillery may faile in your enemies Campe, and yours bee sufficiently furnished therewith, you neede make no doubt of winning the battaile: whereto the King thus replyed. Doubtleffe, if fuch an aft were possible to be done, it would give great hope of successefull prevailing. Sir, faid Martuccio, if you please it may be done, and I can quickely resolve you how. Let the strings of your Archers bows be made more foft and gentle, than those which heretofore they have formerly used; and next, let the nockes of the A?rowes be so provided, as not to receive any other, than those pliant gentle strings. But this must be done so secretly, that your enemies may have no knowledge thereof, leaft they should provide themselves in the same manner. Now the reason (Gracious Lord) why thus I counsell you, is to this end, When the Archers on the Enemies fide have thor their arrowes at your men, and yours in like manner at them: it followeth, that (upon meare constraint) they must gather up your arrowes, to shoote them backe againe at you, for so long while as the battell endureth; as no doubt but your men will doe the like to them. But your enemies will finde themselves much deceived, because they can make no A. a. 4

Novell. 3. The Fifth Day,

ase too narrow to receive their boystrous strings; which will fall out contrary with your followers; for the plant strings belonging to your Bowes, are as apt for their enemies great nockt Arrowes, as their owner, and so they shall have free use of both, reserving them in plentiful store, when your adversaries must stand unsurabled of

any, but them that they cannot any way ufe.

This counsell pleased the King very highly, and he being a Prince of great understandig, gave order to have it accordingly followed, and thereby valiantly vanquified his enemies. Hereupon, Martuccio came to bee great in his grace, as also consequently neh, and seated in no meane place of authority. Now as worthy and commendable actions are foone forcad abroad, in honour of the man by whom they happed; even fo the fame of this rare got victory, was quickely noyfed throughout the Country, and came to the hearing of poore Confrage , that Martuceio Gomitto (whom thee Supposed folong fince to be dead) was living, and in honourable condicion. The love which formerly the bire unto him, being not altogether extiret inher heart; of a fm. il tparke, brake forth into a fodaine flame, and to encreased day by day, that her hope (being before almost quite dead) revived agoine in chearfull manner-

Having imparted all her fortunes to the good old Lady with whom the dwelt; the told her befide, that the lead earnest desire to see Thunis, to fatisfie her eyes as well as her cares, concerning the remot blazed abroad. The good old Lady commended her cestre, and seven as she had beene her Mother) tooke her with her aboord a Barke, and so sayled thence to Thunis, where both thee and Constance found honourable welcome, in the house of a kinsman to the Sarazin Lady. Carapresa also went with them thinter, and her they

fent

ckes

hich

iant

ire-

they

ifull d of

be-

ave

bee

ca-

ind ho-

the

fed

of

in

rly

ne

e-

10

1-

30

25

d.

n

1

fent abroad into the Citie, to understand the newes of Maruccio Gomito. After they knew for a certaintie that he was living, and in great authoritie about the King, according as the former report went of him: Then the good old Lady, being desirous to let Martuccio know, that his faire friend Constance was come thither to see him; went her selfe to the place of his abiding, and spake unto him in this manner. Noble Martuccio, there is a servant of thine in my house, which came from Liparis, and requireth to have a little conference with thee: but because I durst not trust any other with the message, my selfe (at her entreaty) and come to acquaint thee therewith. Martuccio gave her kinde and hearty thankes, and then went along with her to the house.

No fooner did constance behold him, but she was ready to die with conceit of joy, and being unable to containe her passion: sodainely the threw her armes about his necke, and in meere compassion of her many misfortunes, as also the instant solace of her soule (not being able to atter one word) the teares trickled aboundantly downe her cheekes. Martuccio also seeing his faire friend, was overcome with exceeding admiration, and flood awhile, as not knowing what to fay; till venting forth a vehement fighe, thus he foake. My dearest love Constance! Art thou yet living ? It is a tedious long while fince I heard thou wast lost, and never anytidings of thee in thy fathers houle. With which words, the teares standing in his eyes most lovingly he embraced her; Confrance recounted to him an her fortunes, and what kindnesse she had received from the Sarazine Lady, fince ber firk home of comming to her. And after much other discourse pating betweene them, Martuccio departed from her, and reconning to the King his mafter, told him all the hatory c. his tortunes , and those beside of his deare love to flance.

Aas

being

being purposely minded (with his gracious liking) to

marry her according to the Christian Law.

The King was much amazed at so many strange accidents, and sending for Constance to come before hims from her owne mouth he heard the whole relation of her continued affection to Martuccio, whereupon he said. Now trust me saire Damosell, thou hast dearly deserved him to be thy husband. Then sending for very costly lewels, and rich presents, the one halfe of them he gave to her, and the other to Martuccio. graunting them license withall, to marry according to their owner mindes.

Martuceio did many honours, and gave great gifts to the aged Saratine Lady, with whom Conflance had lived to kindly respected; which although the had no neede of, neither ever respected any such rewarding, yet (conquered by their urgent importunity, especially Conflance, who could not be thankefull enough to her) the was enforced to receive them, and taking her leave of

thom weeping, fayled backe againe to Sufa.

Within a fhort while after, the King licenting their departure thence, they entered into a small barke, and Carapres with them, failing on with prosperous gales of wind, untill they arrived at Liparis, where they were entertained with generall rejoycing. And because their marriage was not sufficiently performed at Thunis, in acgard of divers Christian ceremonies there wanting, their Nuprials were againe most honourably solemnized, and they lived (many yeares after) in health and much happinelle.

Pedro Bocamanio, escaping away with a young Damojell which he loved, named Angelina, met with theevesin his journey. The Damosell stying searefully into a
Forrest, by chance arrived at a Casse. Pedro being
taken by the theeves, happening afterward to escape from
thems

governed by Madam Fiammetta.

ac-

ım;

of

he

de-

cry

cm

ng

nc

to

cd.

de

na

1-

c

of

ir

d

c

275

them; commeth (accidentally) to the same Cassle where Angelina was. And marrying her, they then returned home to Rome.

The third Novell.

Wherein the feweral powers both of Love and Fortune.ie more at large approved.

There was not any one in the whole company, but much commended the Novell of Madam Amilia: and when the Queene perceived it was ended, the turned towards Madam Eliza, commanding her to continue on their delightfull exercife: whereto the declaring her willing obedience, began to speake thus. Courteous Ladies, I temember one unfortunate night which happened to two Lovers, that were not enduated with the greatest discretion. But because they had very many and happy dayes afterwards, I am the more willing for to let you heare it.

In the Citie of Rome, which (in times paft) was called the Lady and Mistresse of the world, though now scarfely so good as the waiting maide : there dwelt sometime a young Gentleman, named Pedro Boccamazzo, descended from one of the most honourable Families in Rome, who was much enamoured of a beautifull Gentlewoman, called Angelina, Daughter to one named Giglivezzo Saullo, whole fortunes. were none of the fairest, yet he greatly esteemed amongst the Romanes. The entercourse of love betweene these twaine, had so equally enftructed their hearts and foule, that it could hardly be judged which of them was the more fervent in affection. But hee, not being inured to luch oppressing passions, and therfore the leffe able to support them, except hee was fore to compaffe his defire, plainely made the motion, that he might enjoy her in honourable marriage. Which his-Parents and friends hearing, went to conferre with him, blaming him with over-much basenesse, so farre

10

to difference himselfe and his stocke. Beside, they advifed the Father to the Maide, neither to credite what Pedro said in this case, or to live in hope of any such

match, because they all did despise it.

Pedro perceiving, that the way was flut up, whereby (and none other) he was to mount the Ladder of his hopes; began to wax weary of longer living ; and if he could have wonne her Fathers confent, he would have married her in the despight of all his friends. Nevertheleffe, hee had a conceit hammering in his head, which if the maide would be as forward as himselfe, Chould bring the matter to full effect. Letters and fecret intelligences paffing ftill betweene, at length he understood her ready resolution, to adventure with him chorough all fortunes whatfoever, concluding on their Sodaine and seeret flight from Rome: For which Pedro did fo well provide, that very early in a morning, and well mounted on horse-backe, they tooke the way leading to Alagna, where Pedro had some honely friends, in whom he reposed especiall trust. Riding on thus thorow the country, having no leafure to accomplish their marriage, because they stood in feare of pursuite: they were ridden above foure leagues from Rome, ful fhorts ming the way with their amorous discoursing.

It fortuned, that Pedro having no certaine knowledge of the way, but following a trackt guiding too farre on the left hand; rode quite out of course, and came at left within fight of a small Castle, out of which (before they were aware) issued twelve Villaines, whom Angelina sooner espied, than Pedro could do; which made her cry out to him, saying: Helpe deare Love to save us, or esse wee shall be assailed, Pedro then turning his horse so expeditionsly as he could, and giving him the spurres as neede required; mainely he gallopped into a neete adjoyning Forrest, more minding the following of Angelina, than any direction of his way, or them that

11-

ch

C-

of nd

ild c-

d,

ct

m-

re

nd

18.

o-

1

n

re

ie.

is

e

at

endeavoured to be his hindrance. So that by often winding and turning about, as the paffage appeared troublefome to him, when her thought him felfe free and furtheft from them, he was round engitt, and feized on by them. When they had made him to difmount from his horfe, questioning him of whence, and what he was, and he refolving them therein, they fell into a fecret consultation, saying thus among themselves. This man is a friend to our deadly enemie, how can we then otherwise dispose of him, but draine him of all he hath, and in dispight of the Orsini (men in nature hatefull to us) hang him up here on one of these trees?

All of them agreeing in this dismall resolution, they commanded Pedro to put off his garments, which hee yeelding to doe (albeit unwillingly) it so fell out, that five and twentie other theeves, came sodainely rushing an upon them, crying, Kill, kill, and spare not a man.

They which before had furprized Pedre, defiring now to fhift for their owne fafette; left him standing quaking in his flurt, and so ranne away mainely to defend themselves. Which the new crew perceiving, and that their number-farre exceeded the other; they followed to robbe them of what they had gotten, accounting it as a present purchase for them. Which when Pedro perceived, and saw none tarrying to prey upon him; he put on his cloathes againe, and mounting on his owne horse, gallopped that way, which Angelina before had taken; yet coold he not deserve any tracke of path, or so much as the footing of a horse; but thought himselfe in sufficient securitie, being rid of them that first seized on him, and also of the rest, which followed in the pursuite of them.

For the loffe of his beloved Angelina, he was the most wofull man in the world, wandring, first one way, and then again another, calling for her al about the Forrest, without without any answer returning to him. And not daring to ride backe again, on hee travelled still, not knowing where to make his arrivall. And having formerly heard of savage ravenous beasts, which comonly live in such unfrequenced Forrests: hee not onely was in scare of losing hisowne life, but also despaired much for his Angelina, least some Lyon or Woolse, had torne her

body in peeces.

Thus rode on poore unfortunate Pedro, untill the breake of day appeared, not finding any meanes to get forth of the Forreit, still crying and calling for his faire friend, riding many times backeward, when as he thought he rode forward, untill he became so weake and faint, what with extreame seare, loud calling, and continuing so long a while without any sustenance, that the whole day being thus spent in vaine, and dake might sodainely come upon him, he was not able to

hold out any longer.

Now washee in farre worfe cafe than before, not knowing where, or how to dispose of himselfe, or what might best be done in so great a necessitie. From his horse he alighted, and trying him by the bridle unto a great tree, up he climbed into the fame tree, fearing to be devoured (in the night time) by fome wilde beaft, choofing rather to let his horfe perifh than himfelfe. Within a while after, the Moone began to rife, and the skies appeared bright and cleare : yet durft he not nod, or take a nap, least he should fall out of the tree; but fate still greeving, fighing, and mourning, despairing of ever feeing his Angelina any more, for he could not be comforted by the smallest hopefull persivation, that any good Fortune might befall her in such a defolate Forrest, where nothing but difmal feares was to be expeded, and no likelihood that thee thould escape with life.

Now, concerning poore affrighted Angelina, who

ing

ard

uch

of

his

her

the

gee

his

he

ake

ind

ce.

ike

to

10t

123

his

a

to

ıft,

fe.

nd

ot

ci

li-

ld

n,

c-

to

10

25

enemies

(as you heard before) knew not any place of refuge to flie unto, but even as it pleafed the horfe to carry her: the entred fo farre into the Forrest, that the could not devise where to seeke her owne safetie, And therefore, even as it fared withher friend Pedro, in the fame manner did it fall out with her, wandering the whole night, and all the day following, one while taking one hopefull tracke, and then another, calling, weeping, and wringing her hands, and grievoully complaining of her hard fortune. At the length, perceiving that Pedro came not unto her at all, the found a little path (which the lighted on by great good fortune) even when darke night was apace drawing on, and followed it fo long, til it brought her within the light of a finall poore Cottage, whereto thee rode on to fast as thee could, and found therein a very old man, having a wife rather more aged than he; who feeing her to be without companic, the old man spake thus unto her.

Faire Daughter (quoth he) whither wander you as fuch an unfeafonable houre, and all alone in a place fo defolate? The Damofell weeping, replied; that she had left her company in the Forrett, and enquired how neere the was to Alagna. Daughter (answered the old man) this is not the way to Alagna, for it is above fixe leagues hence. Then the defired to know, how farre off the was from fuch houses, where the might have any reasonable lodging & There are none so neere, said the old man, that day light will give you leave to reach, May it please you then good Father (replied Angelina) feeing I cannot travellany whither elfe; for Gode fake, to let mee remaine here with you this night. Daughter, answered the good old man, we can gladly give you entertainement here, for this night, in fuch poore manner as you fee: but let metell you withall, that up and downe thefe woods (as well by night as day) walke companies of all conditions, and rather

enemies than friends, who doe many grievous displeafures and harmes. Now if by misfortune, you being here, and any such people should come, and seeing you followely faire, as indeede you are, offer you any shame or injury: Alas you see, it lies not in our power to lend you any helpe or succour. I thought it good (therefore) to acquaint you therewith, because if any such mischance doe happen, you should not afterward com-

plaine of us.

The young maiden, seeing the time to be so far spent, albeit the old mans words did much difmay her, yet the thus replied. If it be the will of heaven, both you and I shall be defended from any misfortune : but if any fuch mischance doe happen, I account the meanes lesse deferving griefe, if I fall into the mercy of men, than to be devoured by wilde beafts in this Forrest. So, being dimounted from her horse, and entred into the homely house; the supe poorely with the old man and his wife, with fuch meane cates as their provision afforded and after supper, lay downe in her garments on the poore pallat, where the aged couple tooke their rest, and was very well contented therewith, albeit she could not refraine from fighing and weeping, to bee thus divided from her deare Pedro, of whose life and welfare the greatly despaired.

When it was almost day, shee heart a great noise of people travelling by, whereupon sedainely shee arose, and ranne into a Garden plot, which was on the backfide of the poore Cottage, espying in one of the corners a great stacke of Hay, wherein she hid her selfe, to the end, that travelling strangers might not readily sinde her there in the house. Scarsely was shee fully there hidden, but a great company of Placeves and Villaines, finding the doore open, rushed into the Cottage, where looking round about them for some booty, they saw the Damosels horse stand ready sadied, which

made

made them demand to whom it belonged. The good old man, not feeing the maiden present there, answered thus. Gentlemen, there is no body here but my wise and my selse: as for this horse, which seemeth to be escaped from the Owner; hee came hither yesternight, and we gave him house-roome here, rather than to be devoured by Wolves abroad. Then said the principall of the Theevish crew: This horse shall be outs, in regard hee hath no other Master, and let the

Owner come claime him of us.

-139

ng

EO

me

nd

re)

il-

m-

nt,

The

nd

117

fle

an

e -

he

nd

af-

en

eir

he

ee

nd

of c,

k-

r-

ta

ly

1-

(-

y,

ch.

When they had fearched every corner of the poore Cottage, and found no fuch prey as they looked for . some of them went into the backefide; where they had left their lavelins and Targets, wherewith they used commonly to travell. It fortuned that one of them, being more lubtily suspitious than the rest, thrust his Iavelin into the stacke of Hay, in the very same place where the Damofell lay hidden, missing very little of killing her; for it entred fo farre, that the iron head pierced quite thorough her garments, and touched her left bare breft: whereupon, the was ready to cry out, as fearing that shee was wounded: but confidering the place where the was, the lay still and spake not a word. This disordered company, after they had fed on some young Kids, and other flesh which they brought with them thither, they went thence about their theeving excreife, taking the Damofels horse along with them.

After they were gone a great distance offi, the good old man began thus to question his wife. What is become (quoth he) of our yong Gentlewoman, which came so late to us yesternight? I have not seene her to day since our arising. The old woman made answer, that sheeknew not where shee was, and sought all about to finde her. Angelinger seare being well over blowne, and hearing none of the former noise, which made her the better hope of their departure, came forth

0

of the Hay-flacke; whereof the good old man was not a little joyfull, and because shee had so well escaped from them: fo feeing it was now broad day-light, he faid unto her. Now that the morning is so fairely be gun, if you can be so well contented, we will bring you to a Castle, which stands about two miles and a halit hence, where you may be fure to remaine in fafetie, But you must needs travell thither on foote, because the night-walkers that hapned hither, hath takena-

way your horse with them.

Amelina making little or no account of fuch a loffe, entreated them for charities fake , to conduct her to that Castle, which accordingly they did, and arrived there betweene feaven or eight of the clocke. The Caftle belonged to one of the Orfini, being called, Liello di Campo di Fiore, and by great good fortune, his Wife was then there, the being a very vertuous and religious Lady. No fooner did thee looke upon Angeling, but shee knew her immediately, and entertained her very willingly, requesting, to know the reason of her arriving there: which the at large related, and moved the Lady (who likewise knew Pedro perfectly well) to much compassion, because he was a kinsman and deare friend to her Husband; and understanding how the theeves had surprized him, the feared that he was flain among them, whereupon thee spake thus to Angelina. Seeing you know not what is become of my kinfman Pedro, you shall remaine here with mee, untill such time, as (if we heare no other tidings of him) you may with fafety be fent backe to Rome.

Pedro all this while fitting in the Tree, fo full of griefe, as no man could be more; about the houre of midnight (by the bright splendour of the Moone) elpied about some twentie Wolves, who, so soone as they had got a fight of the horse, ran and engirt him round about. The horse when hee perceived them so neere

te

te

T

d

as not

Caped

t, hee

ly be

g you

halfe

fetie.

caule

en a-

offe,

erto

rived

The

Zi-

, his

re-

her

her

ved

to

are he

in

h

ıy

ρf

him, drew his head fo ftrongly backward, that breaking the reines of his bridle, hee laboured to escape away from them. But being befet on every fide, and utterly unable to helpe himselfe, he contended with his teeth and feete in his owne defence, till they haled him violently to the ground, and tearing his body in pieces, left not a jot of him but the bare bones, and afterward ran ranging thorow the Forrest. At this fight poore Pedrowas mightily difmaied, fearing to speede no better than his horse had done, and therefore could not devise what was best to be done, for he saw no likelihood, of getting out of the Forrest with life. But daylight drawing on apace, and he almost dead with cold, having stood quaking so long in the Tree; at length by continual looking every where about him, to difeerne the least glimpse of any comfort; he espied a great fire, which feemed to be about halfe a mile off from him.

By this time it was broade day, when he descended downe out of the Tree , (yet not without much feare) and tooke his way toward the fire, where being arrived he found a company of Shepheards banqueting about it, whom he courteoully faluting, they tooke pitte on his diffresse, and welcommed him kindely. After bee had tafted of fuch cheere as they had, and was indifferently refreshed by the good fire; he discoursed his hard difasters to them, as also how he happened thither, defiring to know, if any Village or Casile were neere there about, where he might in better manner releeve himselfe. The Shepheards told him, that about a mile and a halfe from thence, was the Caftle of Signior Liello di Campo di Fiore, and that his Lady was reliding there; which was no monne comfort to poore Pedro, requesting that one of them would accompany him thither, as two of them did in loving manner, to rid him of all further feares.

When

When hee was arrived at the Caftle, and found there divers of his familiar acquaintance; hee laboured to Procure some meanes, that the Damosell might be lought for in the Forrest. Then the Lady calling for her, and bringing her to him; hee ran and caught her in his armes, being ready to fwound with conceit of joy, for never could any man be more comforted, than he was at the fight of his Angelina; and questionlesse, her joy was not a jot inferiour to his, fuch a simpathy of firme love was feeled betweene them. The Lady of the Castle, after she had given them very gracious entertainement, and understood the scope of their bold adventure; the reproved them both somewhat tharpely, for prefuming so fatre without the consent of their Parents. But perceiving (notwithstanding all her remonstrances) that they continued stil constant in their resolution, without any inequalitie of either side; Ge faid to her felfe. Why should this matter be any way offensive to me? They love each other loyally; they are not inferiour to one another in birth, but in fortune; they are equally loved and allied to my Husband, and their defire is both honest and honourable. Moreover, what know I, if it be the will of Heaven to have it fo? Theeves intended to hang him, in malice to his name and kindred, from which hard face he hoth happily elcaped. Her life was endangered by a sharpe pointed laveline, and yet her fairer ftarres would not luffer her so to perish : beside, they have both escaped the furie of ravenous wilde beafts; and all thefe are apparant fignes, that future comforts should recompence former passed misfortunes; farre be it therefore from me, to hinder the appointment of the Heavens.

Then turning her felfe to them, thus the proceeded. If your defire be to joyne in honovrable marriage, I am well contented therewith, and your Nuprials shall here be folemnized at my Husbands charges. After-

ward

ward

LIVEC

not 3

more Cast

terta first

Lad

tend whe

Pedr

till

mut

Rice

No

Fai

100

Cho

io

governed by Madam Fiammetta.

Sist

d to

for

her

t of

effe,

y of

en-

old cly,

re-

rise

(lie

of-

are

ne;

nd

er,

me el-

ed

er

u-

nt

1-

e,

d.

m

ıll

1-

rd

ward both he and I will endeavour to make peace betweene you and your discontented Parents. Pedro was not a little joyfull at her kind offer, and Sugelina much more than he; so they were married together in the Castle, and worthily feasted by the Lady, as Forrest entertainement could permit, and there they enjoyed the first fruits of their love. Within a short while after, the Lady and they (well mounted on horse-backe, and attended with an honourable traine) returned to Rome; where her Lord Lietlo and she prevailed so well with Pedroes angry Parents: that the variance ended in love and peace, and afterward they lived lovingly together, till old age made them as honourable, as the true and mutuall affection formerly had done.

Ricciardo Manardy, was found by Messer Lizio Volbonna, as he sate sast a sleepe at his Daughters chamber window, having his hand sast in hers, and she sleeping in the same manner. Whereupon they are joyned together in marriage, and their long loial love mututually recompensed.

The fourth Novell

Declaring the discreete providence of P arents, incare of their childrens love and their own credit, to cut off inconveniences, before they doe proceede too farre.

Madam Eliza having ended her Tale; and heard what commendations the whole company gave thereof: the Queene commanded Philostratus, to tell a Novell agreeing with his own mind, who, thur replied. Faire Ladies, I have bin so often checkt for yesterdayes argument of discoursing, which was very offensive to you; that if I intended to make you any amends, I should now undertake to tell such a Tale, as might put you into a mirthfull humor. Which I am determined to for in relating a briefe and pleasant Novell.

Not long fince, there lived in Romania, a Knight, a

very honest Gentleman , and well qualified , whose name was Meffer Lizio da Valbonna, to whom it fortuned, that (at his entrance into age) by his Lady and wife, callen laquemina, he had a Daughter, the very choifest and goodliest Gentlewoman in all those places. Now because such a happy bleffing (in their old yeares) was not a little comfortable to them; they thought themselves the more bound in duty, to be circumfpe& of her education, by keeping her out of overfrequent companies, but onely fuch as agreed best with their gravitie, and might give the least ill example to their Daughter, who was named Catharina; as making no doubt, but by this their provident and wary respect, to match her in marriage answerable to their liking. There was also a young Gentleman, in the very flou. rishing estate of his youthfull time, descended from the Family of the Manardy da Brettinero, named Meffer Ricciards, who oftentimes frequented the House of Meffer Ligio, and was a continuall welcome guest to his Table, Meffer Lizio and his wife making the like account of him, even as if he had beene their owne Sonne.

60

A

th

21

m

W

ke

en

B

to

TC.

CH

th

IC

pr

OV

to

ve

ma

de:

con

Siv

wi

fpe

par

din

pla

au

The young Gallant, perceiving the Maiden to be very beautifull, of fingular behaviour, and of fuch yeares as was fit for marriage, became exceeding enamented of her, yet concealed his affection to closely as he could, which was not to covertly carried, but that the perceived it, and grew into as good liking of him. Many times hee had an earnest defire to have conference with her, which yet fill he deferred, as fearing to displease her; at the length he lighted on an apt opportunitie, and boldly spake unto her in this manner. Faire Catharina, I hope thou wilt not let mee die for thy love? Signior Ricciardo (replied she suddenly againe) Thope you will extend the like mercy to me, as you desire that I should shew to you. This answer was

ole

-10

nd

cry

la-

old

hey

cir-

cr-

rith

to

ing

ect,

ng.

ou -

the

fer

e of

ft to

like

wnc

o be

fuch

enae

ly 25

that

him.

onfe-

ring

t op-

nner.

e for

ly a-

nc,25

C Was

So

meeting.

so pleasing to Messer Ricciardo, that presently he said-Alas deare Love, I have dedicated all my faireft fortunes onely to thy fervice, fo that it remaineth foly in thy power, to dispose of mee as best shall please thee, and to appoint fach times of private convertation, as may yeeld more comfort to my poore afflicted foule. Catharina standing musing a while, at last returned him this answer, Signior Ricciardo, quoth the, you fee what a restraint is set on my liberty, how short I am kept from converting with any one, that I hold this out enterparlance now almost miraculous and very rate. But if you could devile any convenient manes, to admit us more familiar freedome, without any pre judice to mine honour, or the least distaste to my Pa rents ; doebut instruct it ; and I wil adventure it. Ric ciardo having confidered on many wayes and meanes, thought one to be the fitteft of all; and therefore thus replied. Catharina (quothe he) the onely place for our private talking together, I conceive to be the Gallery over your Fathers Garden. If you can win your Mother to let you lodge there, I will make meanes to climbe over the wall, and at the goodly gazing window, wee may discourse so long as wee please. Now trust mee deare Love (answered Catharina) no place can be more convenient for our purpose, there thall we heare the sweete Birds fing, especiall the Nightingale, which I have heard finging there all the night long; I will breake the matter to my Mother, and how I speede, you hall heare further from me. So with divers

On the day following, which was towards the enling of the moneth of May, Catharina began to complaine to her Mother, that the feafon was over-hot and tedious, to be still lodged in her Mothers Chamber, beaufe it was an hinderance to her fleeping; and wan-

parting kiffes, they brake off conforence, till the next

Sun

ting reft, it would be an empairing of her health. Why Daughter (quoth the Mother) the weather (as yet) is not fo hot, but (in my minde) you may very well endure it. Alas Mother, faid the, aged people, as you and my Father are, doe not feele the heates of youthfull bloud, by reason of your far colder complexion, which is not to be measured by younger yeeres. I know that well Daughter, replied the Mother; but is it in my power, to make the weather warme or coole, as thou perhaps wouldft have it ? Seafons are to be fuffered, according to their feverall qualities; and though the last night might feeme hot, this night enfuing may be cooler, and then thy rest well be the better. No Mother, quoth Catharina, that cannot be; for as Sommer proceedeth on, to the heate encreaseth, and no expectation can be of temperate weather, untillit grow to Winter againe. Why Daughter, faid the Mother, what wouldest thou have me to doe? Mother (quoth she) if it might fland with my Fathers good liking and yours, I would be spared to the Garden Gallery, which is a great deale more cools lodging. There shall I heare the Ivecete Nightingale fing, as every night thee ufeth to do, and many other pretty Birdes befide, which I cannot doe, lodging in your Chamber.

The Mother loving her Daughter deerely, as being fome-what over-fond of her, and very willing to give when her contentment; promised to impart her minde to her Father, not doubting but to compasse what she re- and r quested. When the had moved the matter to Meffer upte Lizio, whose age made him somewhat froward and that testy; angerly said to his wife. Why how now woman? Lade Cannot our daughter sleepe, except shee heare the wen, and there let the Crickets make her Melody. When catharina heard this answer from her Father, born and faw her desire to be disappointed; not onely could the

bo

pr

¢3

m

let

ble

cra

flic

chi the

lye

the

1

you

We

Gal

lock Wo:

ue a

and

Wife

hy

15

n-

nd

full ich

hat

my

hou

aclaft

00-

er,

oro-

tion nter

oul-

if it

rs, I

is a

the

hto

can-

he take any rest the night following, but also complained more of the heate than before, not fuffering her Mother to take any refl, which made her goe angerh to her Husband in the morning, faying. Why Hufhand, have wee but onely one Daughter, whom you pretend to love right dearely, and yet can you be fo carcleffe of her, as to deny her a request, which is no more than reason? What matter is it for you or me, to lether lodge in the Garden Gallery ? Is her young bloud to be compared with ours? Can our weake and crazie bodies, feele the frolike temper of hers ? Alas, heis hardly (as yet) out of her childish yeares, and children have many defires farre differing from ours : the finging of Birds is rare mulicke to them, and chiefe. ly the Nightingale; whose sweete notes will provoke them to reft, when neither Art or Physicke can do it.

Is it even fo Wife? answered Meffer Lizio. Must your will and mine be governed by our Daughter? Well, be it fo then, let her bed be made in the Garden Gallery, but I will have the keeping of the key, both to lock her in at night, & fet her at liberty every morning. Woman, woman, young wenches are wily, many wanon crotchets are busie in their braines, and to us that we aged, they fing like Lapwings, telling us one thing, being and intending another; talking of Nightingales, being when their mindes run on Cocke-Sparrowes. Seeing de to wife, the must needes have her mind, let yet your care and mine extend so farre, to keepe her chastity uncorapted, and our credulitie from being abused. Catharia whaving so prevailed now with her Mother, her bed made in the Garden Gallery, and secret intelligence re the even to Ricciardo, for preparing his meanes of accesse the O- o her window; old provident Lizio lockes the doore to clody. td-ward, and gives her liberty to come forth in the ther, sorning, for his lodging was neere to the Gallery. could In the dead and filent time of night, when all (but

the Lovers) ВЬ

Novels. The Fifth Day,

Lovers) take their rest: Ricciardo having provided a Madder of Ropes, with grapling hookes to take hold labove and below, according as hee had occasion to use it. By helpe thereof, first he mounted over the Garden avail, and then climbed up to the Gallery window, before which (as is every where in Italy) was a little round engirting Tetras, onely for a man to strand upon, for making cleane the window, or otherwise repairing it. Many nights (in this manner) enjoyed they their metings, entermixing their amoreus conference with instinct kisses and kinde embraces, as the window gave leave, he sitting in the Terras, and deputting always before breake of day, for seare to be discovered by any.

î

f

U

L

h

L

21

h

17

lu

fo

fp

DI

ta

la

di

14

ha

17

But, as excelle of delight is the Nurse to negligence, and begetteth fuch an over-prefuming boldnefle, as af. ecryard proveth to be fauced with repentance: fo came at to palle with our over-fond Loveys, in being taken eardy through their owne folly. After they had many times met in this manner, the nights (according to the Season) growing thorter and thorter, which their Holne delight made them leffe respective of , than was requifite in an adventure fo dangerous : it fortuned, that their amorous pleasure had so far transported them and dulled their fenies in fuch fort, by thefe their contimuall nightly watchings; that they both fell faft affeepe, he having his hand closed in hers, & the one arme folded about his body, and thus they flept till broad day light. Old Meffer Ligio, who continually was the morning Cocke to the whole house, going forth into his Garden, faw how his Daughter and Ricciard were feated at the window. In he went againe, and go ing to his wives Chamber, faid to her. Rife quickly wife, and you fiall fee what made your Daughter le defirous to lodge in the Garden Gallery. I perceiv that the loved the Nightingale, for the hath caught one and holds him fult in her hand. Is it pellible, faid th Mother

Mother, that our Daughter should earth a live Nightingale in the darke? You shall see that your self, answered Meffer Lizio, if you will make hast and go with me.

She, putting on her garments in great haft, followed her Husband, and being come to the Gallery doore, he opened it very foftly, and going to the window, shewed her how they both fate fait affeepe, and in fuch manner as hath beene before declared: whereupon, the perceiving how Ricciardo and Catharina had both deceiyed her, would have made an out-cry, but that Meller Liz: e lpake thus to her. Wife, as you love me. fpeake not a word, nor make any noise : for, feeing the hath loved Ricciarde without our knowledge, and they have had their private meetings in this manner, yes free from any blamefull imputation; he shaltenjoy here and the him. Ricciardo is a Gentleman, well derived, and of rich podeffions, it can be no disparagement to us, that Catharina match with him in mari iage, which he neither shall, or dare denie to doe, in regard of our Lawes severitie; for climbing up to my window with his Ladder of Ropes, wherby his life is forfeited to the Law, except our Daughter please to spare it, as it remaineth in her power to doe, by accepting him as her hisband, or yeelding his life up to the Lawarhich furely the will not fuffer, their love agreeing together in luch mutual maner, and he adventuring to dangeroufly for her. Madam laquemina, perceiving that her husband spake very reasonably, and was no more offended at the matter; stept aside with him behinde the drawne Curtaines, until they should awake of themselves. At the last, Ricciardo awaked, and feeing it was fo farre in the day, thought himselfe halfe dead, and calling to catharing, faid. Alas deare Love! what shall we doe? We have flept too long, and shall be taken here. At which words, Meffer Ligio Rept forth from behind the Curtaines, faying, Nay, Signior Ricciardo, feeing you have Bb 2

erceive at one and the

led a

O UE

1 den

be-

ound , for

ng it.

hin-

192VC

Vayes

any.

as af.

came

many

ng to

n was

uned,

them

lcepe,

e fol-

is the

h into

ciardi nd go

pickl

ater le

found fuch an unbelitting way hither, we will provide you a better way for your backe returning. When Ricciardo faw the Father and Mother both there, he could not devife what to doe or fay, his senses became to strangely confounded; yet knowing how hainously he had offended, if the structuration of Law should be challenged against him, falling on his knees, he faid. Alas, Messer Lizio, I humbly crave your mercy, confessing my selse well worthy of death, that knowing the share rigour of the Law, I would presume so audaciously to breake it. But pardon me, worthy Sir, my loyall and unseigned love to your Daughter Catharina, hath beene

the onely cause of my transgressing.

Ricciardo (replied Meffer Lizio) the love I beare thee, and the honest confidence I doe repose in thee, flep up to pleade thy excuse, especially in regard of my Daughter, whom I blame thee not for loving, but for this unlawfull way of prefuming to her. Nevertheleffe, perceiving how the case standeth, and considering withall, that youth and affection were the ground of thine offence: to free thee from death, and my selfe from dishonour, before thou depart hence, thou shale espouse my Daughter Catharna, to make her thy lawfuil wife in marriage, and wipe off all scandall to my Honse and me. All this while was poore Catharina on her knees likewise to her Mother, who inotwithfanding this ber bold adventure) made earnest suite to her Husband to remit all, because Ricciardo right gladly condescended, as it being the maine iffue of his hope and defire; to accept Catharina in marriage, where the was as willing as he. Meffer Lizio prefently called for the Confessour of his House, and borrowing one of his Wives Rings, before they went out of the Gallery; Ricsiardo and Catharina were espoused together, to their no little joy and contentment.

1

Now had they more leafure for further conference,

with the Parents and kindred of Ricciardo, who being no way disconted with this sodain match, but applaiding it in the highest degree; they were publikely matried againe in the Cathedrall Church, and very honourable triumphs performed at the Nuptials, living long after in happie prosperitie.

Guidotto of Cremona, departing out of this mortall life, left a Daugter of his, with Iacomino of Pavia. Giovanni di Sevenno, and Menghino da Minghole, fell both in love with the yong Maiden, and fought for her; who being afterward knowne to be the Sifter to Giovanni, the was given in marriage to Menghino.

The fith Novell.

Wherein may he observed, what quarre's and contentions are occasioned by Love; with some particular description, concerning the sincerity of a loyall friend.

Althe Ladies laughing heartily, at the Novell of the Nightingale, so pleasingly delivered by Philostratus, when they saw the same to be fully ended, the Queene thus spake. Now trust me Philostratus, though yesterday you did much oppresse me with melancholity, yet you have made me such an amends to day, as we have little reason to complaine any more of you. So turning to Madam Neiphila, commanded her to succede, which willingly she yeelded to, beginning in this maner. Seeing it pleased Philostratus, to produce his Novell out of Romania: I meane to walke with him in the same jurisdiction, concerning what I have to say.

There dwelt in the City of Fano, two Lombards, the one being named Guidotto of Cremona, and the other Jacomino of Pavia, men very aged, having followed the wars (as Souldiers) all their youth. Guidotto feeling fickneffe to over-mafter him, and having no fonne, or friend, that he might repole more trust in, than he did in 1.3comino: having long conference with him about

Bb 3

his

ence,

vide

Ric-

ould

nefo

ly he

hal-

Alas, fling

arpe

lyto

and

ecne

peare

thee,

rd of

, but

rthe-

ering

nd of

Celfe

fhalt

law-

o my

na on

ftan-

o her

ladly

hope

ro fhe

ed for

of his

Ric-

their

his worldly affaires, and fetled his whole effate in good ordershe left a Daughter to his charge, about ten yeares of age, with all fuch goods as he enjoyed, and then departed out of this life. It came to paste, that the Citie of Facura, long time being molefted with tedious warres. and subjected to very servile condition; began now to recover her former ftrength, with free permiffion (for all (uch as pleased) to returne and pessesse their former dwellings. Whereupon Jacomino (having fomerime beene an inhabitant there) was defirous to live in Faenza againe, conveying thither all his goods, and taking with him alfo the young Girle, which Guidotto had left him, whom he loved and respected as his owne child As the grevy, in flature, fo the did in beauty and vertuou, qualities, as none was more commended throughous the whole Cive, for faire, civill, and honeft demeanour, which incited many amoroufly to affect her. But (above all the reft) two very honest yong men, of good fame and repute, who were so equally in love addicted to her, thee being jealous of each others fortune, in preventing of their leverall hopefull expectation ; a deadly harred grew fuddenly betweene them, the one being named Giovanni de Severino, and the other Menghino de Minghole. Either of these two young men, before the maide was fifteene yeares old, lapoured to be possessed of her in marriage, but her Guardian would give no confent thereto: wherefore perceiving their honest intended meaning to be fruitrated, they now began to busie their braines, how to forestall one an other by craft and circumvention.

Iscomiae had a maide-fervant belonging to his house, formerwhat aged, and a man-fervant beside, named Grizello, of mirthfull disposition, and very friendly, with whom Giovanni grew in great familiarity; and when he foundtime sit for the purpose, he discovered his love to him, requesting his furtherance and affistance, in

compal-

n gond

yeares

en de-

itie of

arres,

OI VVO

(for

time

Fadta-

dotto

and

ided

nest

ffe &

en,

OVC

or-

11-

m,

ng

OU.

10

c

fort, upon fo poore and filly a queffion; for Guion began to elevate his dejected countenance, and looking on the Admirall, returned him this answer. Sir, heretofore I have beene the man which you speake of; but now, both that name and man must dye with mee. must dye with me. What misfortune (laid the Admirall) hath thus unkindly croft thee? Love (answered Guion) and the Kings pleasure. Then the Admirall would needes know the whole hiftery at large, which briefely was related to him, and having heard how all had happened; as he was turning his horfe to ride away thence, Gwon called to him, faying. Good my Lord, entreat one favour for me, if possible it may be. What is that replyed the Admirall. You fee Sir (quoth Guion that I am very thortly to breathe my last; all the grace which I doe most humbly entreat, is, that as I am here with this chafte Virgin, (whom I honour and love beyond my life) and miferably bound backe to backe : our faces may be turned each to other, to the and, that when the fire shall finish my life, by looking on her, my foule may take her flight in ful felicity. The Admirall fmiling, faid; I will doe for thee what I can, and (perhaps) thou mayft to long looke on her, as thou wilt be weary, and defire to looke off her.

At his departure, he commanded them that had the charge of this execution, to proceede no further, untill they heard more from the King; to whom he galloped immediately, and although he beheld him to bee very angerly mooved, yet he spared not to speake in this manner. Sir, wherein have those poore couple offended you, that are to be burnt at Patermo? The King told him: wherein the Admirall (pursuing faill his purpose) thus replyed Beleveme Sir, if true love bee an offence, then theirs may be termed to be one; and albeit it deserved death, yet farre be it from thee to inflict it on them; for as faults doe justly require pumsing

ment

Novell, 4. The Fifth Deg.

his worldly affaires, and feeled his whole effate in good order:he left a Daughter to his charge, about ten yeares of age, with all fuch goods as he enjoyed, and then departed out of this life. It came to passe, that the Citie of Facura, long time being molefted with tedious warres and subjected to very servile condition; began now to recover her former ftrength, with free permission (for all (uch as pleased) to returne and pesselle their former dwellings. Whereupon Jacomino (having fometime beene an inhabitant there) was defirous to live in Faenza againe, conveying thither all his goods, and taking with him also the young Girle, which Guidotte had left him, whom he loved and respected as his owne child As the grew, in flature, fo the did in beauty and vertuous qualities, as none was more commended throughous the whole Citie, for faire, civill, and honeft demeanour, which incited many amoroufly to affect her. But (above all the reft) two very honest your men. of good fame and repute, who were fo equally in love addicted to her, thee being jealous of each others fortune, in preventing of their leverall hopefull expe &ation ; a deadly hatred grew fuddenly betweene them, the one being named Giovanni de Severino, and the other Menghino de Minghole. Either of these two young men, before the maide was fifteene yeares old, lapoured to be possessed of her in marriage, but her Guardian would give no confent thereto: wherefore perceiving their honest intended meaning to be frustrated, they now began to bufie their braines, how to forestall one an other by craft and circumvention.

Iscomias had a maide-fervant belonging to his house, somewhat aged, and a man-fervant beside, named Grizello, of mirthfull disposition, and very friendly, with whom Giovanni grew in great familiarity; and when he foundtime sit for the purpose, he discovered his love to him, requesting his surchestance and assistance, in

compal-

fort, upon fo poore and filly a question; for Guion began to elevate his dejected countenance, and looking on the Admirall, returned him this answer. Sir, heretofore I have beene the man which you speake of; but now, both that name and man must dye with mee. must dye with me. What misfortune (laid the Admirall) hach thus unkindly croft thee? Love (answered Guion) and the Kings pleasure. Then the Admirall would needes know the whole history at large, which briefely was related to him, and having heard how all had happened; as he was turning his hotfe to ride away thence, Guion called to him, faying. Good my Lord, entreat one favour for me, if possible it may be. What is that replyed the Admirall. You see Sir (quoth Guion) that I am very thortly to breathe my last; all the grace which I doe most humbly catreat, is, that as I am here with this chafte Virgin, (whom I honour and love beyond my life) and miserably bound backe to backe : our faces may be turned each to other, to the end, that when the fire shall finish my life, by looking on her, my foule may take her flight in ful felicity. The Admirall smiling, faid; I will doe for thee what I can, and (perhaps) thou mayft to long looke on her, as thou wilt be weary, and defire to looke of her.

At his departure, he commanded them that had the charge of this execution, to proceede no further, untill they heard more from the King; to whom he galloped immediately, and although he beheld him to be very angerly mooved, yet he spared not to speake in this manner. Sir, wherein have those poore couple offended you, that are to be burnt at Palermo? The King told him: whereto the Admirall (pursuing fittlihis purpose) thus replyed Beleveme Sir, if true love bee an offence, then theirs may be termed to be one; and albeit it deserved death, yet farre be it from thee to infinite in them; for as faults doe justly require punish-

mene

Novell.6. The Fifth Day,

ment, so do good turnes as equally merit grace and requitall. Knowest thou what and who they are, whom thou hast so dishonourably condemned to the fire Nor I quoth the King. Why then I will tell thee, answered the Admirall, that thou may est take the better knowledge of them, and forbeare have after, to be so over vio

lently transported with anger.

The young Gentleman, is the fonne to Landolfo di Procida, the onely Brother to Lord John di Procida, by whose meanes thou becamest Lord and King of this Country. The faire young Damosell, is the Daughter to Marino Bulgaro, whose power extendeth so farre, as to preserve thy prerogative in Ischia, which four for him) had long fince beene out-rooted there. Befide, thefe two maine motives, to challenge justly grace and favour from thee; they are in the floure and pride of their youth, having long continued in loyall love together, and compelled by fervency of endeared affection, not any will to displease thy Majesty: they have offended (if it may be termed an offence to love, and in fuch lovely young people as they are. Canft thou then finde in thine heart to let them die, whom thou rather oughtest to honour, and recompence with no meane rewards?

When the King had heard this, and beleeved for a certainty, that the Admir altold him nothing but truth; he appointed not onely, that they should poceede no further, but also was exceeding forrowfull for what he had done, sending presently to have them released from the stake, and honourably to bee brought before him. Being thus enstructed in their severall qualities, and standing in duty obliged, to recompence the wrong which he had done, with respective honours; he caused them to be cloathed in royall garments, and knowing them to be knit in unitie of soule; the like he did in marrying them solemnely together and bestowing

nany

man

ron

wit

many rich gifts and prefents on them, fent them hononcably attended home to Ifchia, where they were with much joy and comfort received, and lived long after in great felicity.

Theodoro, falling in love with Violenta, the Daughter, to his Master, named Amarigo, and she conceiving with child by him; was condemned to be hanged. As they were leading him to the Gallowes, heating and missing him all the way: he happened to be knowne of his owne Father, whereupon he was released, and afterward enjoyed Violenta in marriage.

The feventh Novel!.

therein is declared, the fundry travels and perillous accidents, occasioned by those two powerfull Comm anders, Love and Fortune, the insulting Tyrants over humane

life.

1

GReatly were the Ladies mindes perplexed, when they heard, that the two poore Lovers were in danger to be burned; but hearing afterward of their happy deliverance, for which they were as joyfull againe; upon the concluding of the Novell, the Queene looked on Madam Lauretta, enjoyning her to tell the next tale, which willingly she undertooke to doe, and thus becan.

Faire Ladies, at such time as the good King William reigned in Sieily, there lived within the same Dominion, a young Gentleman, named Signior Amarigo, Abbot of Trapani, who among his other worldly bleffings, (commonly termed the goods of Fortune) was not unfurnished of children; and therefore having need of servants, he made his provision of them the best hee might. At that time, certaine Gallies of Genemay Pyrates comming from the Easterine parts, which coasting along Ameria, had taken divers children; he bought some of them, thinking they were Turkes. They all

refembling clownish Peazants, yet there was one atmong them, who feemed to bee of more tractable and gentle nature, yea, and of a more affible councemance than any of the rest, being named, Theodore: who growing on in yeeres, abbeit he lived in the condition of a servant) was educated among Amarigaes. Children, and as enstructed rather by nature, than accident, his conditions were very much commended, as also the feature of his body, which prooved so highly pleasing to his Master Amarigo, that hee made him a free man, and imagining him to be a Turke, caused him to be baptized, and named Pedro, creating him superintendent of all his affaires, and reposing his chiefest trust in him.

As the other Children of Signior Amorigo grew in yeeres and flature, fo did a Daughter of his, named V.olenta, a very goodly and beautiful Damofell, some. what over-long kept from marriage by her Fathers covetoninelle, and casting an eye of good liking on poore Pedro. Now, albeit the loved him very decrely, and all his behaviour was most pleasing to her, yet maiden modefly forbad her to reveale it, till Love (too long concealed) must needes disclose it selfe. Which Pedro at the length tooke notice of, and grew fo forward towards her in equality of affection, as the very fight of her was his onely happinelle. Yet very fearefull he was, least it should be noted, either by any of the house, or the Mayden her selfe : who yet well obferved it, and to her no meane contentment, as it sppeared no leffe (on the other fide) to honeft Pedro.

While thus they loved together meerely in dumbe thewes, not during once to speake to each other, shough nothing more desired) to finde some ease in whe this their oppressing passions: Fortune, even as if she so we pittied their so long languishing, enstructed them drev

how

1:

20

EV

er

te

t

3

ch

ce

fai

da

th

of

the

pc)

III :

She

fall

flo

the

thit

and

cou

25 0

wil.

how to finde out a way, whereby they might both better releeve themselves. Signior Amoriga, about some two or three miles distance from Trapaui, had a Country-house or Farme, whereto his wife, with her Daughter and some other women, used oftentimes to make their refort, as it were in sportfull recreation: Pedro alwayes being dilige note man them thither. One time a nong the reft, the faire skie became fuddenly overclouded, even as they were returning home towards Trapani, threatning a stome of raine to overtake them,ex-

cept they made the foeedier hake.

le

e.

01

n-

130

C.-

23

ily

1.0

im

::-

cit

rin

ned

ne.

icis

on

dy.

Yes

(100

nich

for-

very

are.

y ot

lob-

t sp-

Pe-

imbe

hove

Pedro, who was young, and likewife Violenta, went farre more lightly than her Mother and her company, as much perhaps provoked by love, as feare of the fuddaine raine falling, and paced on fo fast before them, that they were wholly out of fight. After many flathes of lightning, and a few dread ull clappes of thunder, there fell fuch a tempeftuous thowere of hayle, as compelled the Mother and her traine to fleker themselves in a poore Country-mans Cottage. Pedro and Violen-2a, having no other refuge, ranne likewife into a poore Sheepe-coate, fo over-ruined, as it was in danger to fall on their heads; and no body dwelt in it, neither flood any other house neere it, and it was scarfely any thelter for them, howbest necessity enforceth to make thift with the meaned. The ftorme encreasing more and more, and they coveting to avoyd it as well as they could fighes and dry hemmes were often inter vented, as dumbly (before) they were wont to doe, when willingly they could affoord another kind of speaking.

At last Pedro tooke heart, and faid : I would this showre would never cease, that I might bee alwayes ther, ife in where I am. The like could I with, answered Violenta, if the fo we were in a better place of fafety. These withes them drew on other gentle language, with modest killes

and

Novell. 7. The Fifth Day,

and embraces, the onely ease to poore Lovers soules; so that the raine cealed not till they had taken order for their oftner conversing, and absolute plighting of their faiths together. By this time the storme was fairely over-blowne, and they attending on the way, till the mother and the rest were come, with whom they returned to Trapani, where by wife & provident meanes, they often conferred in private together, and enjoyed the benefit of their amorous defires, yet free from all ill

furmile or suspition.

But, as Lovers felicities are fildome permanent, without one encountring croffe or other; fo these stolne pleasures of Pedro and Violenta, met with as sowrea fauce in the farewell. For, the proved to be conceived with child, then which could befall them no heavier affliction, and Pedro fearing to loofe his life therefore, determined immediate flight, and revealed his purpofe to Violenta. Which when the heard, the told him plaine. ly, that if he fled, forth-with the would kill her felfe, Alas deare Love (quoth Pedro) withwhat reason can you with my tarrying here? This conception of yours, doth discover our offence, which a Fathers pitty may cafily pardon in you: but I being his lervant and valfall, shall be punished both for your sinne and mine, because hee will have no mercy on me, Content thy felfe Pedro, replyed Violenta; I will take fuch order for mine own offence, by the discreet counsell of my loving Mother, that no blame shall any way be laide on thee, or fo much as a furmife, except thou fondly betray thy felf. If you can doe fo, answered Pedro, and constantly maintaine your promise; I will not depart, but see that you prove to be fo good as your word.

Violenta, who had concealed her amiffe fo long as the could, and fave no other remedy, but now at last it must poffib needes be discovered; went privately toher mother, and (in teares) revealed her infirmity, humbly craving

her the din nec Da al wi fery

of h ture Sie (un ther

pani clou leop feth her o fcvv Sign Gen den, him

born called in his ming and p now (nedto

room

leefe, taule ! to any

Ruth,

her pardon and furtherance in hiding it from her Father. The mother being extraordinarily displeased, chiding her with many harpe and angry speeches, would needes know with whom the had thus offended. The Daughter (to keepe Pedro, from any detection) forged a Tale of her owne braine, far from any truth indeeds which her Mother verily bleeving, and willing to preferve her daughter from fhame, as also the fierce anger of her husband, he being a man of very implacable nature : conveyed her to the Countrey Farme, whither Signior Amarigo fildonic or never reforted; intending (under the fhadow of ficknesse) to let her lye in there, without the least suspition of any in Tra-

pani.

d

11

.

e

1

d

cr

c,

e

e.

c,

211

rs.

ay

ai-

10,

thy

for

ing

ice,

thy

ntly

Sinne and frame can never be so closely carryed, or clouded with the greatest cunnings but truth batha loop-light whereby to discover it, even when it suppofeth it felfe in the fureft faftey, For, on the very day of her deliverance, at fuch time as the Mother, and some few friends (fovorne to fecrecy) were about the bulines. Signior Amarigo, having beene in the company of other Gentlemen, to flye his Hawke at the River, upon a fudden, (but very unfortunately, albeit he was alone by himselfe) stept into his Farme house, even to the next roome where the women were, and heard the newborne Babe to cry, whereat marvelling not a little, he called for his Wife, to know what young child cryed in his house. The Mother, amazed at his ftrange comming thither, which never before he had used to doe, and pittying the wortull diffreffe of her daughter, which now could be no longer covered, revealed what happethat ned to Violenta. But he, being nothing forashin beleefe, as his Wife was, made answere, that it was imsthe nuft poffible for his Daughter to be conceived with child, because he never observed the least signe of love in her her, to any man whatfoever, and he would be faisfied in the ring buth, as the expected any favour from him, or elfe hes

Cc

and embraces, the onely ease to poore Lovers soules; so that the raine ceased not, till they had taken order for their oftner conversing, and absolute plighting of their faiths together. By this time the storme was fairely over-blowne, and they attending on the way, till the mother and the rest were come, with whom they returned to Trapani, where by wife & provident meanes, they often conferred in private together, and enjoyed the benefit of their amorous desires, yet free from all ill

furmile or fulpition.

But, as Lovers felicities are fildome permanent, without one encountring croffe or other; fo thefe ftolne pleasures of Pedro and Violenta, met with as sowre a fauce in the farewell. For, the proved to be conceived with child, then which could befall them no heavier affliction, and Pedro fearing to loofe his life therefore, determined immediate flight, and revealed his purpole to Violenta. Which when the heard, the told him plaine. ly, that if he fled, forth-with the would kill her felfe, Alas deare Love (quoth Podro) with what reafon can you with my tarrying here? This conception of yours. dorh discover our offence, which a Fathers pitty may cafily pardon in you: but I being his tervant and valfall, shall be punished both for your sinne and mine, because hee will have no mercy on me. Content thy felfe Pedro, replyed Violenta; I will take fuch order for mine own offence, by the discreet counsell of my loving Mother, that no blame shall any way be laide on thee, or fo much as a furmife, except thou fondly betray thy felf. If you can doe fo, answered Pedro, and constantly maintaine your promife; I will not depart, but fee that you prove to be fo good as your word.

Violenta, who had concealed her amiffe fo long as the could, and faw no other remedy, but now at last it must needes be discovered; went privately to her mother, and (in teases) revealed her infirmity, humbly craving

105

di

ne

w

fer

of

tur

Sig

the

D:37

clos

leo

her

fcvv

Sign

Gen

den:

himi

roon

born

calle

in his

ming

and p

HOW (

nedto

leefe,

poffib

caule l

to any

truth,

her pardon and furtherance in hiding it from her Father. The mother being extraordinarily displeased, chiding her with many sharpe and angry speeches, would needes know with whom she had thus offended. The Daughter (to keepe Pedro, from any detection) forged a Tale of her owne braine, far from any truth indeeds which her Mother verily bleeving, and willing to preferve her daughter from shame, as also the fierce anger of her husband, he being a man of very implacable nature : conveyed her to the Country Farme, whither Signior Amarigo sildome or never reforced; intending (under the shadow of sicknesse) to let her lye in there, without the least suspicion of any in Tra-

pani.

.

8

.

-

c,

34

30

n'i

ce,

hy

rly

has

the

luit

her,

ing

hes

Sinne and frame can never be so closely carryed, or clouded with the greatest cunning; but truth batha loop-light whereby to discover it, even when it suppofeth it felfe in the fureft fattey. For, on the very day of her deliverance, at fuch time as the Mother, and some few friends (fworne to fecrecy) were about the busines. Signior Amarigo, having beene in the company of other Gentlemen, to flye his Hawke at the River, upon a fudden, (but very unfortunately, albeit he was alone by himselfe) stept into his Farme house, even to the next roome where the women were, and heard the newborne Babe to cry, whereat marvelling not a little, he called for his Wife, to know what young child cryed in his house. The Mother, amazed at his ftrange comming thither, which never before he had used to doe, and pittying the wortll diffreffe of her daughter, which now could be no longer covered, revealed what happened to Violenta. But he, being nothing forashin beleefe, as his Wife was, made answere, that it was impoffible for his Daughter to be conceived with child because he never observed the least signe of love in her to any man whatfoever, and he would be faisfied in the muth, as the expected any favour from him, or elfe C¢ there

Novell.7. The Fifth Day,

there was no other way but death.

The Mother laboured by all meanes the could devile, to pacific her Husbands fury, which prooved all in vaine; for being thus impatiently incenfed; hee drew forth his Sword, and Acpping with it drawne into the. Chamber (where the had beene delivered of a goodly Son) he faid unto her. Either tell me who is the Father of this Bastard, or thou and it shal perish both together. Poore Vicienta lefferrespecting her owne lite, than The did the childes; forgot her folemne promite made 10 Pedro, and discovered all. Which when Amariga had heard, he grew to desperately enraged, that hardly he could for beare from killing her. But after he had spoken what his fury enftructed him, hee mounted on Horsebacke againe riding backe to Trapani, where he difelofed the injury which Pedro had done him, to a noble Gentleman, named Signior Conrado, who was Capcame for the King over the City.

Before poore Pedro could have any intelligence, or fo much as suspected any trechery against him; ae was iuddenly apprehended, and being called in question, flood not on any deniall, but confessed truely what he had done: whereupon, within some few dayes after, he was condemned by the captaine, to be whipt to the place of execution, and afterward to be hanged by the necke. Signior Americe, because he would cut off (at one and the fame time) not onely the lives of the two poore Lovers, but their childes allo; as a franticke man violently carried out of all sense of compassion, even when Pedro was led and whipe to his death; he mingled ftrong poylon in a Cup of wine, delivering it to a crusty servant of his owne, and a naked Rapier withall. Goe carry their two prefents to my late daughter Violenta, and tell her from mee, that in this inftant houre, two feverall kinds of death are offered unto her, and one of them the must make choyce of, either to drinke the poylon, and to dve, or to run her body on Silis

A

bo

be

ho

2:10

CI

22:

hai

by.

auc

on

me

me

her

SEV?

Filte

tydi

and

this

this Rapiers point; which if the deny to do, the shall be haled to the publicke market place, and presently bee burned in the sight of her leved companion, according as the hath worthily deserved. When thou hast delivered this message, take her bastard beat, so lately since borne, and dash his braines out against the walles, and afterward throw him to my Dogges to feede on.

When the Father had given this cruell fentence, both against his owne Daughter, and her young Son, the fervant readier to doe evill, than any good, went to the place where his Daughter was kept. Poote condemned Pedro, (as you have heard) was led whipt to the Gibbet, and paffing (as it pleafed the Captaines Others to guide him by a faire Inner at the fame time were lodged there three chiefe persons of Arminia. whom the King of the Countrey had fent to Rome, as Ambassadours to the Popes Holinesse, to negociate about an important bufineffe neerely concerning the King and State. Repoling there for lome few dayes, as being much wearied with their journey, and highly honoured by the Gentlemen of Trapani, especially Sigwior Amarizo; these Ambalfadours standing in their Chamber window, heard the wofull lamentation of Pedro in his passage by.

ť

10

e

10

32

VO

an

n

7-

ta

h-

235

int

er,

20

OIL

Pedro was naked from the middle upward, and his hands bound fast behind him, but being well observed by one of the Ambassadours, a man aged and of great authority, named Phinio: he espyed a great red spot upon his brest, not painted, or procured by his punishment, but naturally imprinted in the sless, which women (in these parts) terme the Rose. Vpon the sight hereof, he suddenly remembered a son of his own, which was stoln from him some sisteen yeeres before, by Pyrates on the Seacoast of Lajazzo, never hearing any tydings of him afterward. V pon surther consideration, and comparing his sonnes age with the likelyhood of this poere wratched mans, thus he conserved with

Cc z

Nove'l.7. The Fifth Day,

his owne thoughts. If my Sonne (quoth he) be living, his age is equall to this mans time, and by the red blemish on his breft, it plainely speakes him for to be my Sonne.

Moreover, thus he conceived, that if it were he, he could not but remember his owne name, his Fathers, and the Armenian Language; wherefore, when he was just opposite against the window, hee called aloudtohim, faying: Theodoro Pearo hearing the voyce, prelently lifted up his head, and Phineo lpeaking Armenian fayd: Of whence art thou, and what is thy Fathers name? The Sergeants (in reverence to the Lord Ambaffador) flayed a while, till Pedro had returned his anlivere, who fayd. I am an Armenian borne, Sonne to one Phinee, and was brought hither I cannot tell by whom. Phinco hearing this , knew afferedly, that this was the fame Sonne which he had loft; wherefore, the seares standing in his eyes with conceite of joy, downe he afcended from the window, and the other Ambaf. Lidors with him, running in among the Sergeants to embrace his Sonne, and casting his owne rich Cloake about his whipt body, entreating them to . srbeare and proceed no further, till they heard what command he should returne withall unto them; which very willingly they promised to doc.

Already, by the generall rumor dispersed abroad, Phinco had understood the occasion, why Pedro was thus punished, and sentenced to be hanged; wherefore accompanied with his fellow Ambashdors, and all their attending trains, he went to Signior Conrado, and spake thus to him. My Lord, he whom you have sent to death as a slave, is a free Gentleman borne, and my Sonne, able to make her amends whom he hath dispensed, by taking her in marriage to his lawfull wise. Let me therefore entreate you, to make stay of execution, untill it may be knowne, whether the will accept him as her husband, or no; least (if she be so pleased)

ć

3

\$

e

8

e

o

4

c

١,

15

31

11

bi

nà

c.

u-

pt

d)

you offend directly against your owne Law When Signior Conrado heard, that Pedro was Sonne to the Lord Ambassado, he wondred thereat not a little, and being somewhat assamed of his fortunes errour, confessed, that the claime of Phineo was conformable to the Law, and ought not to be denyed himsgoing presently to the Counsels chamber, sending for Signior Amazing immediately thither, & acquainting him fully with the case.

Amarigo, who beleeved that his daughter and her childe was alread dead, was the wofullelt man in the world, for his fo rash proceeding, knowing very well, that if the were not dead, the scandall would eastby be wipt away with credit. Wherefore he fent in all post hatte, to the place where his Daughter lay, that if his command were not already executed by no meanes to have it done at all. He who went on this speedy errand, found there Signior Amarigoes fervant standing before Violenta: with the Cup of of poylon in the one hand, and the drawne Rapier in the other, reproaching her with very foule and injurious speeches, because the had delayed the time fo long, and would not accept the one or other, ftriving (by violence) to make her take the one. But hearing his Masters command to the contrary, he left her, and returned backe to him, certifying him how the case stood.

Most highly pleased was Ameriga with these glad newes, and going to the Ambassador Phineo, in teares excused himselse (so well as he could) for his severity, and craving pardon; assured him, that if Theodora would accept his Daughter in marriage, willingly hee would bestow her on him. Phineo allowed his excuses to bee tollerable, and said beside; If my Son will not marry your Daughter, then let the sentence of death be executed on him. Amariga and Phineo being thus accorded, they went to poore Theodora, fearefully looking every minute when he should die, yet joyful that he had found his Father, who moved the question to him.

Cc. 3

Theodora

Theodoro hearing that Violenta flould be his Wife, if he would fo accept herewas overcome with fuch exceeding joy, as if he had leapt out of hell into Paradife; confessing, that no greater felicity could be fall him, if Vio-

genta her seite were so well pleased as he.

The like motion was made to her, to understand her disposition in this case, who hearing what good hip had be fall Theodoro, and now in like mannermust happen to her: whereas not long before, when two such violent deathes were prepared for her, and one of them she will needes embrace, she accounted her mifery beyond all other womens: but she now thought her selfe above all in happinesse, if she might be wife to her beloved Theodoro, submitting her selfe wholy to her fathers disposing. The marriage being agreed on between them, it was celebrated with great pompe and solemnity, a generall Feast being made for all the Utizens, & the yong married couple nourished up their sweete son, which exew to be a very comely childe.

After that the Embassie was dispatched at Rome, and Phineo (with the rest) was returned thither againe; Viosenia did reverence him, as her owne naturall Father, and he was not a little proud of so lovely a daughter, beginning afresh feashing againe, continuing the same a whole moneth together. Within some short while after, a Galley being fairely furnished for the purpose, Phineo, his son, daughter, and their young son, went aboard, sayling away thence to Lajaza, where after-

ward they lived in much tranquility.

Anastasio, a Gentleman of the family of the Honesti, by loving the daughter to Signor Paulo Traversatio, lavishy wasted agreat part of his substance, without receiving any love of ber againe. By perswassion of some of his kindred and friends, he went to a country a welling of his, easted Chiasso, where he saw a knight desperately pursue a young Damosells, whom he slew,

and afterward gave her to be devoured by his Hounds:
Anastasio inuited his friends, and hers also whom hee
so dearely loved, to take part of a dinner with him, who
likewise saw the same Damosell so torne in peeces:
which his unkind love perceiving, as fearing least the
tike ill fortune should happen to her she accepted Anastatio to be her bushand.

The eighth Novell.

Declaring, that love not onely makes a man prodigall, hus also an enemy to himselfe. Moreover, adventure oftentimes beingeth such matters to passe, as wit and cunning in man can never comprehend.

GO foone as Madam Lauretta held her peace, Madam Pampinea (by the Queenes command) began, and faid. Lovely Ladyes, as pitty is most highly commended in our fexe, even so is cruelty in us as feerely revenged softentimes) by divine ordination. Which that you may the better know, and learne likewise to shun, as a deadly evill; I purpose to make apparant by a Novell, no lesse full of compassion, than delestable.

Ravenna being a very ancient City in Romanta, there dwelt sometime a great number of worthy Gentlemen. among whom I am to speak of one more especially,named Anastago, descended from the family of Honesti, who by the death of his Father, and an Vncle of his. was left extraordinarily abounding in riches, and growing to yeares fitting for marriage, (as young Gallants are eafily apt enough to doe) he became enamored of a very beautifull Gentlewoman, who was danghter to Signier Paulo Traverfarie, one of the molt ancient and noble families in all the Country. Nor made he any doubt, by his meanes and industrious endeavour to derive affection from her againe; for he carried himfelfe ike a brave-minded Gentleman, liberall in his expences . honek and affable in all his actions, which commonly are the true notes of a good nature, and highly

C.C 4

to be commended in any man. But, howfoever Fortune became his enemy, these laudable parts of manbood did not any way friend him, but rather appeared nurtfull to himselfe: so cruell, wikind, and almost meerely favage did the frew her felte to him; perhaps in pride of her fingular beauty, or prefuming on her nobility by birth, both which are rather blemifhes, than ornaments in a woman, especially when they be abused The harsh and uncivill usage in her, grewvery distalte. full to Anastasio, and so unsufferable, that after a long time of fruitleffe fervice, requited ftill with nothing but coy disdaine; desperate resolutions entred into his braine, and often he was minded to kill himfelfe. But better thoughts supplanting those furious passions, hee abstained from such a violent act; & governed by more manly confideration, determined, that as free hated him; he would require her with the like, if hee could : wherein he became altogether deceived, because as his hopes grew to a dayly decaying, yet his love enlarged it fele more and more.

Thus Anaftafio perfevering faill in his bootlesse affection, and his expences not limited within any compasse; it appeared in the judgement of his kindred and Friends, that he was faine into a mighty consumption, both of his body and meanes. In which respect, many times they advised him to leave the City of Ravenza, and live in some other place for such a while, as might set a more moderate thint upon his spendings, and bridle the indiscreete course of his love, the onely

fuell which fed this furious fire.

Anastasio held out thus a long time, without lending an eare to such friendly counsell: but in the end, he was so neerely followed by them, as being no longer able to deny them, he promised to accomplish their request. Wherepon, making such extraordinary preparation, as is the were to set thence for France or Spaine or else into some further country; hee mounted on horse-

her horsebacke, and accompanied with some sew of his samiliar friends, departed from Ravenna, and rode to a countrey dwelling house of his owne, about three or source miles distant from the City, which was called Chiasso, and there suppose a very good greene, erecting divers. Tents & Pavillions, such as great persons make use of in the time of Progresse; hee said to his friends, which came with himsthither, that there he determined to make his abiding, they all returning backe unto Ravenna, and might come to visite him againe so of-

ten as they pleafed.

Now, it came to paffe, that about the beginning of May, it being then a very milde and ferene featon, and he leading there a much more magnificent life, than ever he had done before, inviting divers to dine with him this day, and as many to morrow, and not so leave him till after supper : upon a sodaine falling into remembrance of his cruell Miltrelle, he commanded all his fervants to forbeare his company, and fuffer him to walke alone by himfelf a while, hecause he had occasion of private medications, wherein he would not (by any meanes) be troubled Iz was then about the ninth houre of the day, and he walking on folitaricall alone, having gone some halfe a mile distance from the Tents, entred into a groave of Pine -trees, neuer minding dinner time, or any thing elfe, but onely the unkinde requitall of his love.

Sodatnely he heard the voyce of a woman, feering to make most mournful complaints, which breaking off his filent considerations, made him to lift up his head, to know the reason of this noise. When he saw himselfe so far entred into the Grove, before he could imagine where he was i he looked amazedly round about him, and out of a little thicket of bushes and briers, round ingitt with spreading trees, he espied a yong. Damotell come running towards him, naked from the middle upward, her haire lying on her shoulders, & hee-

Ccs

faire skinne rent and torne with the bryers and brambles, so that the blood ran trickling downe maintly; she weeping, wringing her hands, and crying out for mercy so loud as she could. Two sierce Blood-hounds also followed swiftly after, and where their teeth tooke hold, did most cruelly bite her. Last of all (mounted on a lusty blacke Courser) came gallopping a Knight, with a very sterne and angry countenance, holding a drawne short Sword in his hand; giving her very dreadfull speeches, and threatning every minute to kill her.

This strange and unequeh fight, bred in him no meane admiration, as also kind compassion to the unfortunate woman; out of which compassion, spring an carneft defire to deliver her (if he could) from a death is full of anguish and horror ; but feeing himfelie to be evithout Armes, he ranne and pluckt up the plant of a Tree, which handling as if it had beene a ftaffe, he oppoled himfelfe against the Dogs and the Knight, who freing him comming cryed out in this manner to him, Anaslafio, put not thy selfe in any opposition, but referre to my hounds and me, to panish this wicked woman as the hath jully deferved. And in speaking thefe words, the Hounds rooke fast hold on her body, so Raying her untill the Knight was come neerer to her, and alighted from his horse. when Anasta stofafter some other anary foceehes) spake thus unto him : I cannot tell what or who thouart, albeit thou takest such knowledge of me, yet I must fay it is meere cowardize in a Knight, being armed as thou art, to offer to kill a naked woman, and make thy dogges thus to feize on her, as if the were a favage beaffitherefore beleeve me, I will defend her so farre as I am able.

Anastasio, answered the Knight, I am of the same City as thou art, and doe well remember, that thou wast a little Laddo, when I (who was then named Guido Amastasio) and thine Vnele) became as interely in love with this woman, as now thou art of Paulo Traverfatioes daughter. But through her coy diddaine and cruelry, such was my heavie fate, that desperately I flew my felse with this short sword which thou beholdest in mine hand; for which rash sinful deede, I was, and am condemned to eternall punishment. This wicked woman, rejoycing immessurably in mine unhappy death, remained no long time alive after me, and for her mercilesse sinne of erselty, and taking pleasure in my oppressing torments, dying unrepentant, and in pride of her score, the had the like sentence of condemnation prenouncedon her, and sentto the same place

where I was tormented.

There the three impartial Iudges, imposed this further infliction on u both; namely, that the should flye . in this manner before me, and I (who loved her fo decrely while I lived) must pursue her as my deadly cnemy, not like a woman that had a tafte of love in her. And to often as I can overtake her, I am to kill ber with this food, the fame Weapon wherewith I flew my felfe. Then am I enjoyned, therewith to open her . accurred body, and teare out her heart, with her other inwards, as now thou feed me doe, which I give to my Hounds to feed on. Afterward, fuch is the appoint ment of the supreame powers, that thee re-affumeth life againe, even as if the had not beene dead at all, and falling to the fame kinde of flight, I with my bounds am fill to follow her; without any respit or intermission. Every Friday, and just at this houre, our course is this way, where the sufferech the just punishment inflicted on her. Nor doe we relt any of the other dayes, but are appointed unto other places, where the cruelly executed her malice against me, being now (of her deare affectionate friend) ordained to be her endleffe enemy, and to purfix her in this manner, for fo many yeares, as the exercised moneths of cruelty toswards me. Hinder me not then, in being the executi-

oner of divine juffice; for all thy interpolition is but in vaine, in feeking to croffe the appointment of fu-

preame powers.

Anasta ho having heard al this discourse, his haire stood upright like Porcupins quils, and his foule was to shaken with the terror, that he ftept backe, to fuffer the Knight to do what he was enjoyned, looking yet with milde comifferation on the poore woman, Who kneeling most humbly before the Knight, and sternely feized on by the two bloud-hounds, hee opened her breft with his weapon, drawing forth her heart and bowels, which instantly hee threw to the dogges, and they devoured them very greedily. Soone after, the Lamofell (as it none of this punishment had beene inflicted on her) frarted up fodainely, running amaine towards the See thore, and the hounds swiftly following her, as the Knight did the like, after he had taken his fword, and was mounted on horsebacke; so that Anastasio had Toone loft all fight of them, and could not geffe what could become of them.

After he had heard and observed all these things, hee flood a while as confounded with feare and pitty, like a simple filly man, hoodwinks with his owne passions, not knowing the subtile enemies cunning illusions in offering falle fuggestions to the fight, to worke his own ends thereby, and encrease the number of his deceived feryants. Forthwith hee persyaded himselfe; that hee might make good use of this womans tormenting, fo justly imposed on the Knight to prosecute, if thus it fhould continue Rillevery Friday. Wherefore, fetting a good note or marke upon the place, he returned back to his owne people, and at fuch times as hee thought convenient, fent for divers of his kindred and friends from Ravenna, who being present with him, thus hee

Ipake to them.

Deare Kinfmen and Friends, ye have long while amportuned me, to discontinue my over-doating love

Te

ric

no

dos

tot

gai

1ta:

An

to her, whom you all thinke, and I finde to be my mortall enemie : as allo to give over my lavish expences. wherein I confesse my selfe too prodigall; both which requests of yours, I will cond icend to, provided, that you will performe one gracious favour for me; Namely, that on Friday next, Signior Paulo Traverfario, his wife, daughter, with all other women linked in linage to them, and fuch befide onely as you shall please to appoint, will vouchfafe to accept a dinner here with me; as for the reason thereto moving mee, you shall then more at large be acquainted withall. This appeared no difficult matter for them to accomplish: wherefore, being returned to Ravenna, and as they found the timeanswerable to their purpole, they invited such as Anafassio had appointed them. And although they found it Some-what an hard matter, to gaine her company whom he had to dearely affected; yet notwithstanding, the other women won her along with them.

A most magnificent Dinner had Anastafia provided, and the tables were covered under the Pine-trees, where he faw the cruell Lady fo purfued and flaine:directing the guests so in their feating, that the young Gentlewoman, his unkind Mistrelle, fate with her face opposite unto the place, where the dismall spectacle was to be feene. About the clofing up of Dinner, they began to heare the noise of the poore profecuted Woman, which drove them all to much admiration; defiring to know what it was, and no one refolving them. they rose from the tables, and looking directly as the noise came to them, they espied the wofull Woman, the dogs eagerly pursuing her; the Knight gallopping after them with his drawn weapon, and came very necre unto the company, who cryed out with loude exclaimes against the dogs, and the Knight, stepping forth in affi-

Stance of the injured Woman.

d

d

at

e

æ

5,

in

d

ce.

it

ng

ck

ht

ds

ce

1 0

10

The Knight spak unto the, as formerly he had done to Anastrasio which made them draw backe, possessed with

feare

Novell.9. The Fifth Day,

feare and admiration) acting the fame crueltie as hee did the Fryday before, not differing in the least degree. Most of the Genelewomen there prefent, being neere allied to the unfortunate Woman, and likewife to the Knight, remembring well, both his love and death, did shed teares as plentifully, as if it had beene to the very perfors themselves, in usuall performance of the action indeede. Which tragicall Science being passed over, and the Woman and Knight gone out of their fight: all that had seene this strange accudent, fell into diversity of consuled opinions, yet not daring to disclose them, as doubting some surther danger to ensure thereon.

But beyond all the reft, none could compare in feare and aftonithment with the cruell your Maide affected by Anastasio, who both saw and observed all with a more inward apprehension, knowing very well, that the moral of this difmall spectacle, carried a much neerer application to her, than any other in the company. For now the could call to mind, how makinde and crus ell the had thowne her felf to Anaftafio, even as the other Gentlewoman formerly did to her Lover, fill flying from her in great contempt and fcorne: for which, the thought the Bloud-hounds also purfued her at the heeles already, and a forord of vengeance to mangle her body. This feare grew fo powerfull apon her, that to prevent the like heavie doome from falling on her; One fludied (and therein bestowed all the night scason) how to change her hatred into kinde love, which at the length the fully obtained, and then purposed to procure in this manner. Secretly the fent a faithfull Chambermaide of her own, to greete Anaftafo on her behalfe; humbly entreating him to come fee her: because nove the was absolutely determined to give him fatisfaction in all which (with honour) hee could request of her; Wherto Anoftafio answered, that he accepted her mesfage thankefully, and defired no other favour at her hand, but that which stood with her owne offer, namely, to be his wife in honourable marriage. The Maide knowing fufficiently, that he could not be more defirous of the march, than her Miltreffe shewed her felfe to be, made answer in her name, that this motion would be most welcome to her.

Hereupon, the Gentlewoman her felfe became the foliciter to her Father and Mother, telling them plainely, that the was willing to be the wife of Anaftafio: which newes did fo highly content them, that upon the Sunday next following the marriage was very worthisly folemnized, and they lived and loved together very kindely. Thus the divine bounty, out of the malignant enemics fecret machinations, can caufe good effects to arife and fucceede. For from this conceit of feareful imagination in her, not only happened this long defired conversion of a maide so obstinately scornefull and proud : but likewise all the women of Kavenna, (.being admonified by her example) grew afterward more tractable to mens honest motions, than ever they shewed themselves before. And let me make some use hereof. (faire Ladies) to you, not to stand over-nicely concerted of your beauty and good parts, when men folicite you with their belt fervices. Remember then this difdainefull Gentlewoman, but more especially her, who being the death of fo kind a Lover, was therefore condemned to perpetuall punishment, and he made the minifter thereof, whom the had caft off with coy difdaine, from which I wish your minds to be free, as mine is ready to doe you any acceptable fervice.

Frederigo, of the Alberighi Family, loved a Gentlemoman, and was not requitted with like love againe. But by bountifull expences, and over liberall invitations he mafted all his lands and goods, having nothing left him, but a Hawke or Faulcon. His unkind Miftreffe happeneth to come visite him, and he not having any other foode for her dinner; made a daintie dish of his

Faulcan

Novelles. The Fifth Day,

Faulcon for her to feede on. Being conquered by this exceeding kinde courtesse; she changed her former hatred towards him, accepting him as her Husband in marriage, and made him a man of wealthy possessions.

The pinth Novell.

Wherein is figured to the life, the notable kindnesse and courtesse, of a true and constant lover: As also the

magnanimous minde of a famous Lady.

MAdam Philomena having finished her discourse, the Queene perceiving that her turne was the next, in regard of the priviledge granted to Dioneus; with a fmiling countenance, thus the fpake. Now or never am I to maintaine the order which was instituted when we began this commendable exercife, whereo I yeeld with all bumble obedience. And (worthy Ladyes) lam to acquaint you with a Novell, in some fort answerable to the precedent, not only to let you know, how powerful your kindnesses doe prevaile, in such as have a free and gentle soule: but also to advise you, in being bountifull, where vertue doth juftly challenge it. And evermore, let your favours thine on worthy defervers, without the directions of chance or fortune, who never be-Roweth any gift by differetion; but rashly without confideration, even to the first shee blindly meets withall.

You are to understand then, that coppe di Borghese Domenichi, who was of our owne City, and perhaps (as yet) has name remaineth in great and reverend authority, now in these dayes of ours, as well deserving eternal memory; yet more for his vertues and commendable qualities, than any boost of Nobilitie from his predecessor. This man being well entred into yeares, and drawing towards the snithing of his dayes; it was his onely delighe and felicities, in conversation among the his neighbours, to talke of matters concerning antiquitie, and some other things within compasse of his owne knowledge; which he would deliver

P

63

P

th

CC

to

fa

OU

14

in such singular order, (having an absolute memory) and with the best Language, as very sew or none could doe the like. Among the multiplicitie of his queint discourses, I remember he told us, that sometime there lived in Florence a yong Gentleman, named Frederige, Son to Signior Phillippo Alberigo, who was held and reputed, both for Armes, and all other actions beseeming a Gentleman, hardly to have his equall shrough all

Tulcany.

13

This Friderizo (as it is no tare matter in young Gentlemen) became enamored [of a Gentlewoman, named Madam Giana, who was effeemed (in her time) to be the fairest Lady in all Florence In which respect, and to reach to the beight of his defire, he made many fumptuous Feafts and Banquers, loufts, Tilties, Tournaments, & all other noble actions of Armes, befide, sending her infinite rich & costly prefents, making spare of nothing, but I shing all out in lavish expence. Notwithstanding, she being no lesse honest than faire, made no reckoning of whatfoever he did for her fake, or the least respect of his own pyrson. So that Frederigo, spending thus daily more, than his meanes and ability could mainetaine, and no supplies any way redounding to him, or his faculties (as very easily they might) diminishing in such fort, that hee became so poore, as he had nothing left him but a small Farme to live upon, the filly revenewes wherof were fo meane, as fearfely allowed him meate and drink; yet had he a faire Hawke or Faulcon, hardly any where to be fellowed, fo expeditious and fure the was of flight. His low eb and poverty, no way quailing his love to the Lady, but rather fetting a keener edge thereon; he faw the city life could no longer containe him, where most he coveted to abide; and therefore betooke himselfe to his poore Country Farme, to let his Faulcon get his dinner and supper, patienly supporting his penurious estate, with . out fuite or meanes making to one, for helpe or reliefe in any fuch necessity. While

While thus hee continued in this extremity, it came to. paffe, that the husband to Madam Giana fell ficke, and his debilitie of body being fuch, as little or no hope of life remained he made his last Will and Testament, ordaining thereby, that his Sonne (already growne to indifferent flature) should be heire to all his Lands and riches, wherein he abounded very greatly. Next unto him, if he chanced to die without a lawful heire, he fub-Attured his wife, whom most dearely he affected, and fo departed out of this life. Madam Giana being thus left a widdow; as commonly it is the custome of our City Dames, during the Sommer feafon, the went to a house of her own in the Country, which was fomewhat necre to poore Frederigoes Farme, and where he lived in fuch an honeit kinde of contented poverty.

Hercupon the yong Gentleman her Sonstaking great delight in Hounds and Hawkes; grew into familiaritie with poore Frederige, and having feene many faire flights of his Faulcon, they pleafed him fo extraordinarily, that hee earnestly defired to enjoy her as his owne; yet durft not move the motion for her, because he faw how choisely Frederigo eff cemed her. Within a short while after, the young Gentleman became very ficke, wherear his mother grieved exceedingly, as (having no more but he) & never parting from him either night or day, comforting him to kindly as thee could, demanding, if he had a defire to any thing, willing him to reveale it, and affuring him withall, that (if it were within the compaffe of possibilities) he should have it. The youth hearing how many times the had made him these offers, and with such vehement protestations of

performance, at last thus spake.

Mother (quoth he) if you can do fo much for me, as that I may have Frederigoes Faulcon, I am perswaded, that my fickenelle foone will ceafe. The Lady hearing this, fate fome thort while musing to her felfe, and began to confider, what the might belt do to compatie her

Sons

So

ne

hi

.1

qt fle

ÉT H

fe!

ot

his

in

ly

re

in

yo

60

D(

ar

th

Eh

th

be

I

li

0

21

a

nd

OF

710

10

nd

01

b-

(o

fe

ty

re

at

1

re

1-

le

7

1,

n

c

t.

n

£

S

Sons defire: for well the knew, how long a time Frederigo had most lovingly kept it, not suffering it ever to be out of his fight. Moreover, thee remembred, how earneft in affection hee had beene to her, never thinking himfeife happy, but only when he was in her company; wherfore, the entred into private savice with her own thoughts: Shall I fend or go my felie in person, to requelt the Faulcon of him, it beine the best that ever flew? It is his onely lewell of delight, and that taken from him, no longer can he wish to live in this world. How farre then voide of understanding, shall I shew my felfe, to rob a Gentleman of his fole felicity, having no other joy or comfort left him ? These and the like confiderations, wheeled about her troubled braine, onely in tender love to her Son, perswading her selfe affuredly, that the Faulcon were her owne, if the would but request it: yet not knowing whereon it were best to refolve, file returned no answer to her Son, but fate ftil in her filent meditation. At the length, love to the youth, fo prevailed with her, that the concluded on his contentation, and (come of it what could) the would : not fend for it, but goe her felfe in perfen to request it, and then returne home again with it: whereupon this the fpake. Son, comfore thy felfe, and let languishing thoughts no longer offend thee: for here I promife thee, that the first thing I do to morrow morning, shall be my journey for the Faulcon, and affure thy felf, that I will bring it with me. Whereat the youth was fo joyed, that he imagined, his ficknesse began instantly a litle to leave him, and promifed him a speedy recovery. Somewhat early the next morning, the Lady, in care of her ficke Sonnes health, was up and ready betimes, and taking another Gentlewoman, with her; onely as a morning recreation, the walked to Frederigoes poore Countrey Farme, knowing that it would not a little glad him to sceher. At the time of his arrivall there,

he was (by chance) in a filly Garden on the backe-fide

of the House, because (as yet) it was no convenient time for flight; but when hee heard, that Madam Giana was come thither, and defired to have some conference with him ;as one almost confounded with admiration, in all hafte he ran to her, and laluted her with most humble reverence. She in all modest and gracious manner, requited him with the like falutations, thas speaking to him. Signior Frederigo, your owne best wishes befriend you. I am now come hither, to recompence some part of your passed travels, which here. tofore you pretended to fuffer for my fake, when your love was more to me, than did well become you to offer, or my felfe to accept. And fuch is the nature of my recompence, that I make my felf your guest, and mean this day to dine with you, as alfothis Gentlewoman, making no doubt of our welcome : whereto with lowly

reverence, thus he replied.

Madam, I doe not remember, that ever I sustained anyloffe or hinderance by you, but sather fo much good, as if I was worth any thing, it proceeded from your deservings, and by the service in which I did stand engaged to you. But my present happinesse can no way be equalled, derived from your super-abounding gracious favour, and more than common course of kindnesse, youchsafing (of your own liberall nature) to come and vifite fo poore a fervant. Oh that I had as much to fpend again, as heretoforeriotoally I have run thorow: what a welcome would your poore Hoft beflow on you, for gracing this homely house with your divine presence ? With these words, he conducted her into his house, and then into his simple Garden, where baying no convenient company for her, he faid, Madam, the poverty of this place is fuch, that it affordeth none fit for your conversation; this poore woman, wife to an honest Husbandman will attend on you, while that I (with fome speede) shall make ready Dinmer.

223

in

fte

ar

W

11

ient

dam on-

20-

vith

ious.

lins

belt

cre-

our

of-

my an

in,

ed ch

m

id

'n

1-Ce

:)

2

n

.

u

ľ

Poore Frederizo, although his necessitie was extreame, and his griefe great, remembring his former inordinate expences, a mosty wherof would now have flood him in fome fleade; yet he had a heart as free and forward as ever, not a jor dejected in his minde, though utterly overthrowne by Fortune. Alas! how was his good foule aflicted, that he had nothing to honor his Ladywith ? Vp and downe heruns, one while this way, then againe another, exclaiming on his difafterous Fate, like a man enraged, or bereft of his fenses: for he had not one penny of money, neither pawne or pledge, wherewith to procare any. The time hafted on, and he would gladly (though in meane measure) expresse his honourable respect to the Lady. To beg of any, his nature denied it, and to borrow hee could not, because his neighbours were as needy as himselfe. At last, looking round about, and seeing his Faulcon standing on ker pearch, which hee fele to be very plumpe and fat, being voide of all other helpes in his neede, and thinking her to be a Fowle fit for fo noble a Lady to feede on: without any further demurring or delay, he pluckt off her necke, and caused the poore woman presently to pull her Feathers : which being done; he put her on the spit, and in thort time the was daintily roafted. Himfelfe covered the Table, fet bread and falt on, and laide the Napkins, whereof hee had but a few left him: Going then with cheerefull lookes into the Garden, telling the Lady that dinner was ready, and nothing now wanted, but her presence. She, and the Gentlewoman went in, and being seated at the Table, not knowing what they fed on the Faulcon was all their foode , and Frederigo not a little loyfull, that his credite was fo well faved. When they were rifen from the table, and had spent some small time in familiar conference :- the Lady thought it fit, to acquaint him with the reason of her comming thither, and therefore (in very kinde manner) thus began. Frederigo,

bech

lv d

day

Wh

tha

grie

con

20 1

did

afre

M

can

cro

and

fee

her

the

rol

Iw

ma

2hi

2718

itf

an

21

EUG

me

he

foo

an

you

Frederizo, if you doe yet remember your former care ringe towards me, as also my many modest and chafte denials, which (perhaps) you thought to favour of a harsh, crueil, and unwomanly nature, I make no doubt, but you will wonder at my prefent prefumption, when you understand the occasion, which express moved me to come hither. But if you were poffeifed of children, or ever had any, wherby you might comprehend what love (in nature) is due unto them : then I durft affure my felf, you would partly hold me excused. Now in regard that you never had any, and my felfe (for my part) onely but one, I stand not exempted from those Lawes, which are in common to other mothers. And being compelled to obey the power of those Lawes; contrary to mine owne will, and those duries which reason ought to maintaine, I am to request such a gift of you, which I am certaine, that you doe make most precious account of, as in manly equitie you can do no leffe. For Fortune hith beene extreamely adverse to you, that the hath robbed you of many other pleafures, ailowing you no comfort or delight, but onely that poore one, which is your faire Faulcon. Of which bird, my Sonne is become to ftrangely defirous, as, if I doe not bring it to him at my comming home; I feare for much, the extreamitie of his ficknesse, as nothing can enfue thereon, but his loffe of life. Wherefore I befeech you, not in regard of the love you have borne me, for thereby you stand no way obliged: but in your own genule nature (the which hath alwayes declared it felf ready in you, to doe more kinde offices generally, than any other Gentleman that I know) you will be pleafed to give her me, or at the leaft, let me buy her of you. Which if you doe, I shall freely then confesse, that only by your meanes, my Sonnes life is faved, and we both shall for ever remaine engaged to you.

When Federgo had heard the Ladies request, which was quite out of his power to grane, because it had

becne

beene her fervice at dinner; he stood like a man meerely dulted in his fences, the teares tricking amaine
downe his cheekes, and he not able to inter one word.
Which the perceiving, began to conjecture immediatly
that these teares and passions proceeded rather from
griese of mind, as being loather to pass with his Faulcon, than any kinde of manner; which made her ready
to say, that she would not have it. Neverthelesse thee
did not speake, but rather to attend his answes. Which,
after some small respite, he returned in this massion.

Madame, fince the houre, when first my affection became foly devoted to your services. Fortune hash been crosse and contrary to me, in many occasions, as justly, and in good reason. I may complaine of her; Yet all seemed light and easie to be indured, in comparison of her present malicious contradiction, to my utter overthrow, and perpetual molestation. Confidening, that you are come hither to my poore house, which (while I was rich and able) you would not so much as vouchafee to looke on. And now you have requested a small matter of mee, wherein the hath also most crookedly thwarted me, because she hath disabled me, in bestowing so meane a gift, as your selfe will confesse, when it shall be related to you in few words.

So foone as I heard, that it was your gracious pleafore to dine with me, having regard to your excellency,
and what (by merit) is justly due unto you. Ithought it
a part of sny bounden duty, to entertaine you with
fuch excellent viands, as my poore power could any
way compasse, and farre beyond respect or welcome, to
other common and ordinary persons. Whereupon, remembring my Faulcon, which now you aske for; and
her goodnesse excelling all other of her kinde; I suppose
sed, that shee would make a daintie dish for your diet,
and having dressed her so well as I could devise to doe;
you have sed hartily on her, and I am proud that I have
so well bestowne her. But perceiving now, that you

would have her for your licke Son; it is no meane affliction to me, that I amdifabled of yeelding you contenement, which all my life time I have defired to do.

To approve his words, the teathers, feete, and beake, were brought in; which when the faw, the greatly blamed him for killing fo rare a Faulcon, to content the appetite of any woman, Yet the commended his fpirit, which poverty had no power to abase. Laftly, her hopes being frustrate for enjoying the Faulcon, and fearing the health of her Son, thanked Frederigo for his kindneffe, returning home very melancholy. Shortly after, her Sonne, either grieving that hee could not have the Faulcon, or by extremity of his difease, chanced to die, leaving his mother a wofull Lady. After so much time was expired, as might agree with mourning; her brethren made motions to her, to marrie againe, because the was very rich, and yet but yong. Now although the was well contented to remaine a widdow; yet being continually importuned by them, and remembring the honorable honefty of Frederigo, his last poore, yet magnificent dinner, in killing his Faulcon for her fake, faid to her brethren. This kind of life doth like me fo wel, as willingly I would not leave it : but feeing you are fo earnest, let me plainly tell you, that I will never accept of any other husband but onely Frederigo di Alberino.

ture

(hou)

the b

inna

decds

way (

paine:

this p

your n

Ladie

ofimi

fame c

liveete

Which

of a fo

ties of

thers, v

Her brethren in Corntull maner reproved her, telling her, he was a begger, and had nothing left. I know it well (quoth the) & am heartily forry for it. But give me a man that hath need of wealth, rather than wealth that bath neede of a man. The brethren hearing how fbee flood addicted, and knowing Frederigo to be a worthy Gentleman, though poore, consented thereto ; so shee bestowed her felf & her riches on him. He on the other fide, having fo noble a Lady to his wife, and the fame whom he had folong dearely loved, submitting all his fairelt Fortunes unto her, became a better husband (for the world) than before, and they lived, and loved in ca Pedro

qual joy and nappinesse.

There

Pedro di Vinciolo went to fup at a friends house in the titie. His wife (in the meane while) had a yong man whom the loved at supper with her. Pedro returning home on a fod sine, the young man was hidden under a coope for Hens. Pedro in excuse of his so some comming home. declareto, how in the house of Herculano (with whom he should have supt) a friend of his wives was found. which was the reason of the Suppers breaking off. Pedroes wife reproving the error of Herculanoes wife, an Affe (by chance) treades on the yong mans fingers that lay hidden under the Hen-coope. Vpon his crying out Podro stoppeth thitber, fees him, knowes him, and finderly the fallacy of his wife; with whom (nevertheleffe) bee groweth to agreement, in regard of fome imperfection in The tenth Novell.

Reprehending the cunning of immodest women, who by abufing themselves, do throw evil afterfions on al their Sext

e

g-id

ci,

lo

pt

0.

ng

V IC

ic a

hat

bee

thy

flice

ther

ame

l his

d (for

In Ca

THe Queenes Novell being ended, and all applauding the happy fortune of Frederige, as also the noble na. twe of Giana : Dioneus expeding no command, delivered his discourse in this manner. I know not whether I should tearme it a vice accidentall, and infuing thorom the badnetle of complexions on us mortals; or an error in nature, to rejoyce rather at lewd accidents, than at deeds deferving commendation, especially whenthey no way concerne our felves. Now, in regard that all the paines I have hitherto taken, and am also to undergo at this prefent, aimeth at no other end, but onely to purge your minds of melancholly:pardon me I pray you faire Ladies) if my Tale trip in some part, and savour a litle of immodesty; yet in hearing it, you may observe the fime course, as you doe in delightfull Gardens, plucke 2 sweete Rose, and preserve your fingers from pricking. Which easily you may do, winking at the imperfections of a foolish woman, and smiling at the amorous subulties of his wife, compaffionating the misfortune of others, where urgent necessity doth require it. Pedro

Nove'l. 10. The Fifth Day,

There dwelt not longlince in Perugia, a wealthy man named Pedro di Vinciolo, who perhaps more to deceive fome other, and reftraine an evil opinion which the Perugians had conceived of him, in matter no way befeeming a man, than any beauty or good feature remaining in the woman, entred into the effate of marriage, And Fortune was to conforme to him in his election, that the woman whom hee had made his wife, had a yone, and enabled body, a red-haired Wench, hot spirited, it anding more in neede of three husbands, than he, who could not any way well content one wife, because his minderanne more on his money, than those offices belonging to wedlocke; which time acquainted his wife withall, conteary to his owne expectation, and those delights which the citate of marriage afforded, knowing her felfe also to be of a sprightly disposition, and not to be easily tamed by houshold cares, thee waxed weary of her husbands unkind courfes, upbraided him daily with harth ipeeches, making his own home as hell to him.

When the faw that this domefticke disquietnesse returned her no benefit, but rather tended to her owne confumption, than any amendment in her miferable husband, thee began thus to conferre with her private thoughts. This husband of mine liveth with me, as if he were no husband, or I his wife; the marriage bed, which should be a comfort to us both, seemeth hatefull to him, and as little pleasing to me, because his minde is alwayes on his money, his head bufied with worldly cogitations, and early and late in his counting-house, admitting no familiar converfation with mee. Why should not I be as respectlesse of him, as hee declares himselse to be of mee? I tooke him for an husband, brought him a sufficient Dowry, thinking him to be a man, and affected a woman as a man ought to doe, elfe he had never beene any husband of mine. If hee be a wom in later, why did he make choise of me to be his wife ? If I had not intended to be of the world, I could

ave

he

(pi

Co

fon

fuc

turi

is to

in t

tob

than

.

١,

i-

fe

es

ife

te-

ng

to

of

ith

re-

inc

ble

ate

s if

full

le is

diy

ule, Vhy

ares

nd,

be a

elle

be a

e his

ould:

have

have coope my felf up in a Cloyfter, and fnorne my felf like a Nunne, but that I was not borne to fuch feverity of life. My youth shall be blasted with age before I can truly understand what youth is, and I shall be branded with the diffracefull word barrennesse, knowing mylelf meete and able to be a Mother, were my husband but worthy the name of a Father, or expeded iffue and po-Steritie, to leave our memoriall to after times in our race, as all our predecessours formerly have done, and for which marriage was chiefely instituted. Castles long befieged, doe yeeld at the last, and women wronged by their owne husbands, can hardly warrant their owne frailety, especially living among so many temptations, which fleth and bloud are not alwayes able to refift. Well, I meane to be advised in this case, before I will hazard my honest reputation, either to suspition or scandall; than which, no woman can have two heavier enemies, and very few there are that can elcape them.

Having thus a long while confuked with her felf, and (perhaps) oftner than twice or thrice; the became fecretly acquainted with an aged woman, generally reputed to be more than halfe a Saint, walking alwayes very demurely in the Areets, counting (over and over) her Pater Nofters, and all the Cities holy pardons hanging at her girdle, never talking of any thing, but the lives of the hely Fathers, or the lives of the hely Saints, or the wounds of Saint Francis, all the world admiring her fanditie of life, as if the were divinely inspired: this shee Saint must be our distressed womans Counsellour, and having found out a convenient feafon, in large the imparted all her minde to her, in fome fuch manner as formerly you heard, whereto the returned this answer. Now trust me Daughter, thy case is to be pittied, and fo much the rather, because thou age in the flowre of thy youth, when not a minute of time is to be left: for there is no greater an errour in this life, than the lolle of time, because it cannot be recovered a-

Dd a

grime

gaines and when the fiends themselves affright us, yet if we kepe our embers still covered with warme ashes on the hearth, they have not any power to heart us. If any one can truly speake thereof, then I am able to deliver true testimony; for I know, but not without much perturbation of minde, and piercing afflictions in the spritishow much time I lost without any profit. And yet I lost not all, for I would not have thee thinke me to be so soolish, that I did altogether neglect such an especiall benefit; which when I call to minde, and consider no win what cortlition I am, thou must imagine, it is no small hearts griefe to me, that age should make me utterly despised, and no fire afforded to light my tinder.

With men it is not forthey are borne apt for a thoufand occasions, as well for the present purpose we talke of as infinite others belide; yea, and many of them are more esteemed being aged, than when they were yong. But women serve onely for mens contentation, and to bring children; and therefore are they generally beloved, which if they faile of, either it is by unfortunate marriage, or some impersection depending on nature, or want of good will in themselves. We have nothing in shis world but what is given us, in which regard, we are to make use of our time, and employ it the better while we have it. For, when we grow to be old, our husbands, yea our dearest friends, will scarfely looke on us. We are then fit for nothing, but to fit by the fire in the Kitchin, telling tales to the Car, or counting the Pots and Pans on the shelves. Nay, which is worse, Rimes and Songs are made of us, even in meere contempt of our age, and commendation of fuch as are yong, the daintiest morfels are fittest for them, and we referred to feede on the scrappes from their Trenchers, or such reversion as they can spare us. I tell thee daughter, thou couldst not make choise of a meeter woman in all the City, to whom shou mightft safely open thy mind, and knowes better to advife thee than I doe. But Remember withall, that I

6

le

1×

gh

vvi

he:

fift

am

the

the

c's

2.

le-

ch

he

yet

be

ci-

der

tis

me

er.

ON-

lkc

are

d to

lo-

ate

e,ot g in

are

ads,

are hin,

ans

ngs

and

nor-

the

they

nake

iom

etter

hatl

am

am poore, and it is not your part to fuffer poverty to be unsupplied. I will make thee partaker of all these bleffed pardons, at every Altar I will ay a Pater Nofter, & an Ave Maria, that thou mail prospers in thy hearts defires, and be defended from soule tione and shome.

Within a while after it came to palle that her husband was invited forth to Supper, with one named Herculane, i kind friend of his; but his wife refuted to goe, because the had appointed a friend to supper with her, to whom the old woman was imployed as her medlenger, and was well recompensed for her labour. This friend was a gallant proper youth, as any Perugia yeelded, and scarcely was hee seated at the Table, but her hulband was returned backe, and called to be let in at the doore. Which when the perceived, the was almost halfe dead with feare, and covering to hide the young man, out of her husbands fight, the had no other meanes, but in an entry, hard by the Parlour where they purposed to have fupt, stood a Coope or Hen-pen, wherein the ufed to keepe her Pullen, under which he crept, and then the covered it with an old emptie facke, and after ran to let her husband come in. When he was entred into the house ; as halfe oftended at his so sudden returne; anger ly the laid : It feemes Sir you are a thaver at your meat, that you have made to thore a Supper. In troth Wife (quoth he) I have not fupt at all, no not fo much as caten one bit. How hapned that, faid the woman? Marry wife (quoth he) I will tell you, and thus he began.

where counts not a written you, and thus no began.

A Herculano, his wife, and I were fitting downe at the Table, very neere unto us wee heard one fneeze, whereof at the first we made no reckoning, untill wee heard it against the second time, yea, a third, fourth, and fifth, and many more after, whereas we were not a little amazed. Now wife I must tell you, before wee entited, the roome where we were to supt. Herculances wife kept the doore fast shut against us, and would not let us enter in an indifferent while; which made him somewhat.

D4 3

offended -

Novell. 10. The Fifth Day,

offended, but now much more, when he had heard one to ineeze so often. Demanded of her a reason for it, and who it was that thus ineezed in his house: hee started from the Table, and stepping to a little doore necrethe staires head, necessarily made, to set such things in, as otherwise would be troublesome to the roome (as in all houses we commonly see the like) he perceived that the party was hidden there, which we had heard so often

to Inceze before.

No sooner had he opened the doore, but such a smell of brimftone came forth (whereof we felt not the leaft favour before) which made us likewise to cough and fneeze, being no way able to refraine it. She feeing her husband to be much moved, excused the matter thus : that (but a little while before) the had whited certaine linnen with the smoake of brimstone, as it is a usuall thing to doe, and then fet the Paninto that fpare place, because it should not be offensive tous, By this time, Hercu'ano had espied him that Incezed, who being almost stifled with the smell, and closenetie of the small roome wherein he lay, had not any power to help him. felfe, but fill continued coughing and fneezing, even as if his heart would have split in twaine. Forth hee pluckt him by the heeles, & perceiving how the matter had past, he said to her- I thanke you wase, now I see the reason, why you kept us so long from comming into this roome; let mee die, if I beare this wrong at your hands. When his wife heard thele words, and law the discovery of her shame ; without returning either excufe or answer; forth of doores the ran, but whither, we know not. Herculano drew his Dagger, and would have flaine him that still lay incezing : but I diffwaded him from it, as well in respect of his, as also mine own danger, when the Law thould confure on the deede. And afterthe yong man was indifferently recovered; by the per-Iwalian of lome neighbours comming in : he was closeconveied out of the house, and all the noise quietly pa.

ified.

220

tit

ar

an

10

ye:

W

be

Wo

per

tro

the ble

the

nec

WO

OW

a ge

mit

afh

bo

cified. Onely (by this meanes, and the flight of Herculances wife) we were disappointed of our Supper, and how you know the reason of my so soone returning.

When the had heard this whole discourse, then thee perceived, that other Women were subject to the like infirmitie, and as wife for themselves, as the could be. though these or the like finister accidents might sometime croffe them : and gladly the withed, that Herculamoes wives excuse, might now serve to acquite her; but because in blaming others errours, our owne may sometime chance to escape discovery, and cleare us, albeit we are as guiltie; in a tharpe reprehending manner, thus the began: See husband, here is hanfome behaviour, of an holy faire-feeming, and Saint-like woman, to whom I durft have confest my finnes, I conceived fuch a religious persivation of her lives integrity, free from the least scruple of taxation. A woman so forre stept into yeares as the is, to give fuch an evill example to yonger women, is it not a finne beyond all fufferance? Accurred be the houre, when thee was berne into this world, and her felfe likewife, to be fo kwdly and incontinently given; an univerfall thame and flander, to all the good women of our City.

Shall I tearme her a woman, or rather some savage monster in a womans shape? Hath she not made an open prostitution of her honesty, broken her plighted took to her husband, and all the womanly reputation she had in this world? Her husband being an honourable Cirizen, entreating her alwayes, as few men est in the City do their wives, what an heart-breake must this needs be to him, good man? Neither I, nor any honest woman elsought to have any pitty on her, but with our owne hands toure her in peeces, or dragge her along to a good fire in the Market place, wherein shee and her minion should be consumed together, and their base after side after selected abroad in the winde, least the pure Aite

bould be infected with them.

now over-late to make any thing ready.

It fortuned, that certaine Husbandmen, which had the charge of Pedroes Farme house in the Countrey, and there followed his affaires of Husbandry, were returned home this instant night, having their Asses laden with fuch provision, as was to be used in his Cityhouse. When the Affes were unladen, and fee up in a finall stable, without watering; one of them being (belike) more thirfly than the reft, brake looie, and wandering all about smelling to seeke water, happened into the energy, where the yong man lay hidden under the Hen-pen. Now, he being constrained (like a Carpe) to lie flat on his belly, because the Coope was over-weighsie for him to carry, & one of his hands more extended forth, than was requifice for him in fo urgent a fhift; it was his hap (or ill fortune rather) that the Affe fet his foote on the young mans fingers, treading fo hard, and the paine being very irkefome to him, as he was inforced to cry out aloude: which Pedre hearing, he woundered thereat not a little.

Knowing that this cry was in his house, he tooke the Candle in his hand, and going forth of the Parlour, heard the cry to be louder; because the Asse removed not his foote, but rather trod the more firmely on his hand. Comming to the Coope, driving the Asse, and taking off the qld sacke, he espied the yong man, who,

befide

ne

yo

Cr

mi

ly

hol

rep

lan

hay

WO

fine

the

befide the painefull anguish he felt of his singers, arose up trembling, fearing some outrage beside to be offered by Pedro, who knew the youth perfectly, and demanded of him, how he came thither? No answer did hee make to that question, but humbly entreated (for charities sake) that he would not doe him any harme-Feare not (quoth Pedro (I will not offer thee any violence; onely tell me how thou camest hither, and for what oc-

casion; wherein the youth fully resolved him.

Pedro being no leffe joyfull for thus finding him, than his wife was forrowfull, tooke him by the hand, and brought him into the Parlour, where the fate trembling and quaking, as not knowing what to fay in this diffresse. Seating himselfe directly before her, and holding the youth still fast by the hand, thus he began. Oh wife! What bitter speeches did you use (even now) againft the wife of Herculano, maintaining that thee had shamed all other women, and justly deserved to be bur ned ? Why did you not fay as much of your felfe? Or, if you had not the heart to speake, how could you be so cruell against her, knowing your offence as great as hers? Questionlesse, nothing else urged you thereto, but that all women are of one and the fame condition, covering their owne groffe faults by farre inferiour infrmities in others. You are a perverle generation, meerely falle in your fairest shewes.

c

d

19

¢

2

When shee saw that he offered her no other violence, but gave her such vanting and reproachfull speeches, holding still the young man before her sace, meerely to vexe and despight her: she began to take heart, and thus replied. Doest thou compare me with the wife of Hereulano, who is an old dissembling Hypocrite? Yet she can have of him what shee desireth, and he useth her as a woman ought to be, which savoir I could never yet finde at thy hands. Put the case, that thou keepest mee in good garments; allowing me to go neatly holed and shod; yet well thou knowest, there are other meere

matters

matters belonging to a woman, and every way as neceffully required, both for the prefervation of Household quietnesse, and those other rites betweene a husband and a wise. Let me be yearser garmented, courser dieted, yea, debarred of all pleasures and delights; so I might once be worthy the name of a Mother, and leave some remembrance of voomanhood behinde me. I tell thee plainely Petro, I am a woman as other women are, and subject to the same desires, as (by nature) attendeth on sleth and bloud: looke how thou sailest in kindnesse towards me, thinke it not amisse, if I do the like to thee, and endeavour thou to win the worthy title of a Father, because I was made to be a Mother.

When Pedro perceived, that his wife had spoken nothing but reason, in regard of his over-much neglect, towards her, and not using such Houshold kindnesse, as ought to be between Man and wife, he returned her this answer. Well wife (quoth he) I confesse my fault, and hereafter will labour to mend it; conditionally, that this youth, nor any other, may no more visite my House in my absence. Get me therefore something to cate, for doubtleffe, this young man and thy felfe fell thort of your supper, by reason of my so soone recurning home. In troth husband, faid the, we did not eate one bit of any thing, and I will be a true and a loyall wife to thee, fo thou wilt be the like to mee. No more words then wife, replied Pedro, all is forgotten, and forgiven, let us to Supper, and wee are all friends. She feeing his anger was fo well appealed, lovingly kiffed him, and laying the cloth, fet on the supper, which she had provided for her felfe and the youth, and fo they fupt together merrily, not one unkinke word passing betweene them. After supper the youth was sent away in a friendly manner, and Pedro was alwayes afterward more loving to his Wife, than formerly he had beene, and no complaint palled on either fide, but mutuall joy and Houshold contentment, such as cught to be betweene Man and Wife. Dieneus

Ladie frow vern Crow Mad to co all re

hisc

tent

dv a chice non fing and thall or W tred blan the wit: WCF vera W befo und

Dios likis alto leng cons then Dioneus having ended this his Tale, for which the Ladies returned hum no thankes, but rather angerly frowned on him: the Queene, knowing that her Government was now concluded, arose, and taking off her Crowne of Lawrell, placed it graciously on the head of Madam Eliza, saying. Now Madam, it is your turne to command. Eliza having received the honour, did (in all respects) as others formerly had done, and after the had enstructed the Master of the Houthold, concerning his charge during the time of her Regionent, for contentation of all the company; thus she spake.

We have long fince heard, that with witty words, ready anfivers, and (udden jefts or taunts, many have cheekt and reproved great folly in others, and to their no meane commendations. Now, because it is a pleafing kinde of argument, ministring occasion of mirth, and wit; my defire is, that all our Discourse to morrow shall tend thereto. I meane of such persons, either Men or Women, who with some witty answer, have encountred a scorner in his owne intention, and laied the blame where it justly belonged. Every one commended the Queenes appointment, because it savored of good wit and judgement; and the Queene being rifen, they were all discharged till supperting, falling to such severall exercises as themselves best funcied.

When Supper was ended, and the inftruments layed before them; by the Queenes confent, Madam Amilia undertooke the dance, and the Song was appointed to Dioness, who began many, but none that proved to any liking, they were so palpably obscene &idle, savouring altogether of his owne wanton disposition. At the length, the Queene looking strangely on him, and commanding him to sing a good one, or none at all s

thus he began.

ic-

uf-

fer

fo

nd

ne.

VO-

re)

m

he

ti-

a,

as

nis

nd

at

ny.

to

cll

12

ne

to

ds

n,

18

id

0-

e-

d-

0

ic

The Fifth Day.

The Song.

Eres, can you not refraine your hourely weeping?

Eares, how are you destrived of five ete attention?

Thoughts, have you lost your quiet filent sleeping?

Wit, who hath robed thee of thy rave invention?

The tacke of these, being life and motion giving:

Are senself shapes, and no true signes of living.

Eyes, when you gaz dupon her Angell beauty;
Eares, while you heard her freche delicious finaints,
Thoughts (fleeping then) did yet performs their duty,
Wit, tooke frightly pleafure in his paines.
White she did live, then none of these were scanting,
But now (being dead) they all are gone and manting.

"After that Dioneus (by proceeding no further) declared the finishing of his Song; many more were sung beside, and that of Dioneus highly commended. Some part of the night being spent in other delightfull exercises, and a fitting houre for rest drawing on; they betooke themselves to their Chambers, where wee will leave them till to morrow morning.

FINIS.

BREEREEREEREEREEREEREERE THE

MODELL Wit, Mirth, Elo-

quence, and Conversation.

Framed in Ten Dayes, of an hundred curious Peeces, by feven Honourable Ladies, and three Noble Gentlemen.

Preserved to Posterity by that Renewned Iohn Boecacio, the first Refiner of Italian profe: And now translated into English.

e-

The third Edition.

LONDON. Printed by Tho. Cotes, and are to be fold by Benjamine Allen, and Williams Hope. 1634.

BEEBBEBBBBBBBBBBBBBBB



To the Right Honourable, Sir Phillip Herbert, Knight of the Bath at the Coronation of our Soveraigne Lord King James, Lord Baron of Sherland, Earle of Montgome-

ry, and Knight of the most Noble Order of the Garter.

A PANHE Philosoper Zene (Right hononrable, and my most worthily esteemed Lord) being demanded on a time, by what meanes a man might attaine to happines,

made answere: By resorting to the dead, and having familiar conversation with them. Intimating thereby, The reading of ancient and moderne Histories, and endeavouring to learne such good instructions, as have beene observed wour Predece fors A question also was mored by great King Ptolomy, to one of the leared wife Interpreters : In what occasions a king (hould exercise himselfe? Whereto thus ereplied; To know those things which formerbave beene done; And to reade Books of those latters which offer themselves dayly, or are fitteff The Epistle

firsest for our instant affaires. And lastly, in jeeking those things what soever, that make for a Kingdomes preservation, and the correction

of evill manners or examples.

Vpon these good and warrantable grounds (most Noble Lord) beside many more of the fame Nature (which I omit to avoyd prolixigy)I dare boldly affirme, that fuch as are exercited in the reading of Histories, although they feeme but young in yeeres, and flenderly instructed in worldly matters: yet gravity and gray-headedage speaketh maturely in themato the no meane admiration of common and vulgar judgement. As contrarywife, fuch as are ignorant of things done and past, before themselves had any being; continue still in she estate of children, able to speake or behave themselves no otherwise; and, even within the bounds of their native Countries (inrespect of knowledge or manly capacity) they are no more than well-feeming dumbe Images.

In due consideration of the precedent allegations, and upon the command, as also mell noble encouragement of your Honour from time to time; this volume of fingular and exquifite histories, varied into fo many andex act natures, appeareth in the worlds view, un der your noble patronage, to be fafely shield ded from foule-mouth'd flander and detra

Cio

el

fir

fu ch

Ter

W

me

rie

18 17 wh

gra

Mai

that

ame cite

ciou

thy

Fo

man

trava

flive

could

it wa

Aion which is too eafily throwne upon the

very best deferving labours.

n

n

h

re

e-

en

es

y)

be

lle.

Of

om

ex-

ex-

eld

tra lio

I know (most worthy Lord) that many of them have long fince bin published before, as stoln from the first original! Author, and yet not beautified with his sweete style and elocution of phrase, neither savouring of his fingular morall applications. For as it was his full scope and aime by discovering all vices in their ugly deformities, to make their mortal! enemics (the facred Vertues) to Shine the cleeser, being fet down by them and compared with them: fo every true and upright judgement, in observing the course of these wel-carried Novels, shall plainely perceive, that there is no spare made of reproofe in any degree whatfoever, where finne is embraced, and grace neglected; but the just deserved shame and punishment thereon inflicted; that others may bee warned by their example. In imitation of witty Afope, who recitethnota Fable, but gracethit with a judicious morrall application, as many other worthy Writers have done the like.

For instance let me here insert one. A poore man having a pikestaffe on his shoulder, and travailing thorows country village, a great Mastive Cur ran mainly at him, so that hardly he could defend him from himself. At the length, it was his chance to kill the Dog; for which,

A 3 the

The Epiftle, &c.

the owner immediately apprehending him.& bringing him before the Judge, alledged; That he had flaine his fervant which defended his life, house, and goods, & therefore challenged farisfaction. The ludge leaning more in favour to the Plaintiffe, as being his friend, neighbour and familiar, than to the justice of the cause; reproved the poore fellow very fharpely, and peremptorily commanded him to make fatisfaction, or elfe he would commit him to prifon. That were injustice, replyed the poore man because I kild the dog in defence of my ownelife, which deserveth much better refpest than a million of such Curres. Sirra, firra, faid the Indge, then you should have turned the other end of your staffe, and not the pike. fo the dogs life had bin faved, and your owne in no danger. True fir (quoth the fellow) if the dog would have turn'd his taile, and bit me with that, and not his teeth, then we both had parted quietly.

I know your Honour to be so truely judicious, that your selfe can make the morall allusion, both in defence of my poore paines, and acceptation of the same into your protection; with most humble submission of my selfe, and all my uttermost endeavours, to be alwayes at

your fervice.

I base sed

fed vai

rale prev

puni on h.

fide,

mifd.

man, nestly de la

and f

eredaerenerrerrerrerrerrer

The Table.

The First Day governed by Madame Pampinea.

r. Novell.

Effre Chapplet du Prat, by making a falfe confe f. fion-beguited an holy religious man, and after died And having during his life time, beene a very had man, at his death was reputed to be a Saint, and calsed S. Chappelet.

2. Novell. Abraham a Iem, being admonished or advifed by a friend of bis, named lehannot de Chevigny, travailed from Paris to Rome : and beholding there the wicked behaviour of men in the Church, returned to Patis againe, where (nevertheleffe) be became a Christian.

2. Novell. Melchigedech a Iem, by recounting a tale of three Rings to the great Soldan, named Saladine, prevents a great danger which was prepared for him-

Novell. 4. A Monne committed an offence worthy punishment, freed himselfe from the paine to be inflisted on him, by wittily reprehending the Abbot of the very fame fault.

5. Novell. The Lady Marqueffe of Mont ferrat, with abanquet of Hens, and divers other excellent Becebes befide, represented the fond love of the King of France.

6. Novell. An honest plaine meaning man, simply and conscionably, reprehended the malignity, hypocrific, and

mildemeanour of many Religious persons.

7. Novell. Bergamino, by telling a Tale of a skilfull man, named Primaffo, and of an Abbot of Clueni, honeftly checkt a new kinde of coverousness in Master Can de la Scala.

8. Novell. Guillaume Bourfier, with a few queing and familiar words, the ched the miferable coverousness;

of Signiar Herminio de Grimaldi.

9. Novell. How the King of Cyprus was mitting to prehended by the words of a Gentlewoman of Gafcogue, and became vertuoufly aftered from his vicious disholitie.

pr

10. Novell. Master Albert of Bullen, honestly made a Lady to blush, that did thinke to have done as much to him, because she perceived him to be amorously affelled somands her.

The II. day governed by Madam Philomena.

The first Novell.

Mareliao counterfetting to be lame of his members, caused himselfe to be set upon the body of Saint Arrizuo, where (in sessing manner) he made show of his so-daine recovery; but when his dissimulation was discovered, he was well beaten, being asterwards taken prisoner, and in great danger of being hanged, and yet estaped in the end.

2. Novell. Rinoldo de Este, after he mas robbed by aheeves, arrived at Chastleau Guillaume, where he was friendly lodged by a faire wildiom, and recompensed like, wife for all his toffes: returning afterward jafe and well

bore unto his owne houfe.

3. Novell. Three young Gentlemen being brethren, & having front all their lands & possessions vainely, became poere. A Nephew of theirs salling almost tota as desperate a condition) became acquainted with an Abbot, whom he afterward found to be the King of Englands daughter, on made him her husband in marriage, recompensing all his Vokles losses, and seating them agains in good estate.

4. Novell. Landolpho Ruffolo, falling into poverty, became a Pyrate upon the Seas, and being taken by the Genewayes hard'y escaped drowning. Which yet nevertheless he did, upon a little chest or coffer sult of very rich sew's being carried thereon to Corfu, where he was well entertained by a good moman, and after returned richty have to his organ longe.

 Novell. Andrea de Piero travaling from Persufe to Naples to buy herfes, was (in the space of one night) furprized by three admirable accidents: out of all which,

with a rich Ring, he fertunately escaped.

6. Novell. Madam Beritota Caracalla, was found in a frange Island with two Goats, having lost her two fons, is theace travailed into Lunigiana: where one of her fous became servant to the Lotal thereof, or was found a little over-familiar with his Massers daughter, who increfore caused b m to be imprisoned. Afterward when the Country of Siciy rebelled against King Charles, the aforesaid some chanced to be knowne by his mother, or was married to his masters daughter. And his brother being found likewise, they returned to great estate & credite.

7. Novell. The Soldane of Babylon fent one of his daughters to be joyned in marriage with the King of Cholcos; who by diverse accidents (in the space of four yeares) happed into the custody of nive men, and in sundry places. At length, being restored backe to her Father, shee went to the said King of Cholcos, as a maid, and as at single

The was intended to be his wife.

8. Novell. Count d'Angiers being fally accafed, was banished out of France, and lest his two Children in England in diverse places. Returning afterward (unknowne) through Scotland, he found them advanced in great dignity. Then repairing in the habit of a Servitor, into the King of France his Army, and his innocency made publikely knowneshe was reseated in his sermer honoura-

ble degree.

ie,

zi.

lea

to

led

0-

0-

r,

in

y

25

3

9. Novell. Bernardo a Merchant of Geneway, being deceived by another Merchant, named Ambroficstoft a great part of his goods: and commanding his innocent wife to be murthered, she escaped, and in the habit of a man, became servant to the Soldan. The deceiver being found at last, she compassed such meanes, that her Husband Bernardo came into Alexandria, and there after

ducquaifnment infilled on the falle desciver, the refumed the garments againe of a woman, and returned home

with her Husband to Geneway.

on the feas, carried away the wife of Signior Ricciards Chinzica, who understanding where she was, went this ther; and falling into friendship with Pagamino, demanded his wife of him, whereto he yeelded, provided, that she would willingly goe away with him; she denied to part thence with her Husband: and Signior Ricciardodying, she became the wife of Pagamino.

The III, day governed by Madam Neiphila.

The first Novell.

Masserto di Lamporcchio, by counterseitting himselse clumbe, became a Gardiner in a Monastery of Numes, where he had samiliar conversation with them all.

2. Novell. A Duerry of the stable belonging to A-giluffo, King of the Lombards, found the meanes of accesse to the Queenes bed, without any knowledge or confent in her. This being secretly discovered by the King, and the party knowne, heegave him a marke, by shearing the haire of his head. Whereupon, he that was so shorne, sheared likewise the heads of all his fellowes to the lodging, and so escaped the punishment intended to him.

3. Novell. Under colour of confession, and of a most pure conscience assaire young Gentlewoman being amorously affected to an honest man, induced a devout and solemne religious Friar, to advise her in the meanes (without his suspition or perceiving) how to enjoy the benefit of her

friend, and bring her defires to effett.

4. Novell. A young Scholler named Felice, enfirtiled Puccio di Rinieri, how to become rich in a very short time. While Puccio made experience of the instruction taught him, Felice obtained the favour of his daughter.

5. Novell. Ricciardo, furnamed the Magnifico, gave

1

byl

pre

(m

wi

100

ere

ter

noin Red

kin

ret

Pi

uni

dea

by c

wa

ana

tha

tha

kee

10

fili

pifi

ile

her

a borfe to Signior Francefco Vergillifi, upon condition, that by bis leave and licenfe, he might speake to his wife in his presence; which he did: and she not returning hiv-any an-(wer, made answer to himfelfe on her behalfe, and accer-

ding to his an iver, fo the effect followed.

me

ate

rde

hi-

7%-Me

372 g,

lfe

5,

1-

20

3-

ţ,

g

:,

-

2

7

1

t

6. Novell. Ricciardo Minutolo, fell inlove with the wife of Philippello Fighinotfi, and knowing her to be very jealous of her husband, gave him to under stand, that he was great'y enamored of his wife, and had appointed to meete her privately in a bathing house on the next day following: where the boping to take him tardy with his close compa-Red Miftreffe, found ber fetfe to be deceived.

7. Novell. Theobaldo Elifei, having received an unkinde repulse by bis beloved, depasted from Florence, and teturning thather (a long while after) in the habite of a Pilgrime, we spake with her, and made his wrongs knowne unto her. He delivered her Father from the danger of death, because it was proved, that he had flaine Theobatdo : be made peace with his brethren, and in the end, wifely enjoyed his hearts de fire.

8. Novell. Ferando, by drinking of a certaine kinde of pouder, was buried for dead : and by the Abbot who was enamoured of his wife, was taken out of his grave, and put into a darke prison, where they made him believe that he was in purgatory : afterward when time came that hee should bee raised to life againe, hee was made to

keepe a childe, which the Abbot got by his wife.

9 Novell. I'Vliet of Narbona, cured the King of a Fiftula : in recompence whereof, thee requested to enjoy in marriage, Bertrand the Count of Reusfilion. Hee having married her against his will, defpifing her's went to Florence, where he loved a young Gen-Juliet by a cunning policy compassed the ilewoman. meanes (instead of his chosen friend) to tye with her owne Husband, by whom thee bad two formes;

which after ward being made knowne, the Count accepted

toff

had

ma

Ther

his

dea

20.0

Pa

me

the

94.

of

2/26

be

m

ter

his

10

The

her againe for his wite.

10. Novell. The chafte resolved continency of Serietha Daughter to Simalde King of Denmarke, being such unto by many worthy persons that loved her, would not looke any man in the face, till the time she was married.

The IIII. day governed by Philoftraius.

The first Novell.

Tancrede, Prince of Salerne, caused the amorous friend of hisdaughter to be slaine, and sent her his beart in a cup of gold: which afterward shee sleeped in an impossioned water. G then drinking it, so dyed.

2. Novell. Fryer Albert made a young Venetian Genth woman believe, that god Cupid was falme in love with her, and he reforted oftentimes unto her, in diffuile of the fame god; afterward being frighted by the Gentle-womans kindred and friends, he cast himselfe out of her Chamber window. O was hidden in a poore mans house. On the day following, in shape of a wilde or savage man, he was brought upon the Rialto of S. Marke, being there publikely knowne by the Brethren of his Order, he was committed to prison.

3. Novell. Three young Gentlemen affelling three Sifters, fled with them into Candy. The eldeft of them (through jealoufie) becommethine death of her Lover. The feond, by confenting to the Duke of Candy, favet's her life Afterward her owne friend killeth her, & flieth away with the elder fifter. The third couple, both man & woman, are charged with her death, being cast into prifon, confesse the fast: but corrupting the keepers with movey, escaped thence to Rhodes, and there died poore.

4. Novell- Gerhine, contrary to the firmer plighted faith to Gutielmo, fought with the King of Thunis, to take away his daughter. She being flaine by them that had the possession

tosselfion of her, he likewise slew them; & afterward had nis own head smitten off by the command of Gutieline

5. Novell. I fabellaes three Brethren slew a Gentleman that fecretly loved her. His Ghost appearing to her, shewed her in what place they had buried his body. Ge.

6 Novell. Andreana faking in tope with Gabriello, the declareda dreame of hers to him, and he another of his unto her; whereupon Gabriello fell downe foldamly

dead, tre.

ea

e-

172

ve

e

8=

27

e.

7,

c

73

3

75

r.

e

7. Novell. Faire Simonida affecting Pafquine, & watking with him in a pleafant Gudenat fortuned, that Pafaino rubbed his teeta with a leafe of Sage, & immediately fell downe dead. Simonida being brought before the bench of Inflice, & charged with the death of Pafauino, sherubbed her teeth lifewise with one of the leaves of the same sage, as declaring what she saw him doe, & thereon she dyed also in the same manner.

8. Novell. Ieronimo affecting Silvestra, went by the carnest entreaty of his mother to Paris. Returning backe, he found his Love Silvestra married. By secret meanes he get into her house, or dyed upon the bed by her. His body being to be buried, she likewise died upon this coarse.

9. Novell. Messer Guiglielmo having staine Messer Guiglielmo Guardastagno whom he imagined to love his wife, gave her his heart to eate. Which she knowing afterward, threw herselfe out of an high window to the ground: & being dead, was then buried with her friend.

10. Novell. A Phylitians wife, had a Lover of her maids, supposing him to be dead, in a Coeffish reason that he had drunke a sleeping water. Two Lumbard Vsurers sealing away the Chest, carrid it to their own bouse, see.

The first Novell.

CHynon, by falling in Love, became wife, and by force of Armes, winning his faire Lady Iphigenia on the

The V. day governed by Madam Fiammetta.

the Seas, was afterward imprisoned at Rhodes. Being delivered by one named Lysimachus, with him he recovered his Iphigenia againe, and faire Caffandra, even in the middest of their marriage. They fled with them into Candy, where after they had married them, they were called home to their owne dwelling.

2. Novell. Faire Constance of Liparis, fell in love with Martuccio Comitto: & hearing that he was dead, de (perately the entered into a Barke, which being tranforted by the windes to Sula in Barbary, from thence the went to Thunis, where the made her felfe knowne to him, W' he being in great authority, as a privie Counfeller to the King : be married the fayd Conftance, and returned richly home with her, to the I fland of Liparis.

3. Novell. Pedro Bocamazzo: escaping away with a young Damofell which be loved, named Angelina, met with theeves in his journey. The Damofell flying fearefully into a Forcest, by chance arrived at a Castle Pedro being taken by the theeves, happened afterward to escape from them, coc.

4. Novell. Ricciardo Manardy, mas found by Melfer Lizio Volbonna, as he fate fast afteepe at his Danghters Chamber window, having his hand fast in hers, and the Aceping in the fame manner. IV hereupon they are joy. ned together in marriage, and their long loial love mutu-

tually recompensed.

5. Novell. Guidotto of Cremona, departing out of this mortall life, left a Daughter of his, with Iacomino of Pavia. Giovanni di Severino, and Menghino da Minphole, fellboth in love with the yong Maiden, and fought for her; who being efterward knowne to be the Sister to Giovanni, she was given in marriage to Menghino.

6. Novell. Guion di Procida, being found familiarly converfing mith a young Damofell, which he lowed; and had beene given (formerly) to Frederigo, King

of S Fro bnor cily 7. 23, 1

conc ged. ting kno: and

of t

Tra with 010 dwe delp and Ana dear 20:/

tune hous 9, love invi notin

his 1

any Fau ceed war and;

of Sicilie: was bound to a Hake, to be confumed with fire. From which danger (neverthelesse) he escaped, being knowne by Don Rogieso de Oria, Lord Admirall of Si-

cily, and after mard married the Damofell.

ŋ

0

.

-

e

Q,

0

d

a

et

c-

ro

pe

1

N-

nd

y.

11-

of

of

n-

nd

Si-

n-

ni-

10-

ing

of

7. Novell. Theodoto, falling in love with Violenca, the Daughter, to his Master, named Amarino, and she conceiving with child by him; was condemned to be hanged. As they were leading him to the Gallowes, beating and misling him all the way: he happened to be knowne of his owne Father, whereupon he was released,

and afterward enjoyed Violenta in marriage

8. Novell. Analtasio, a Gentleman of the family of the Honesti, by loving the daughter to Signior Paulo Traversatio, lavishly masted agreat part of his substance, without receiving any love of her againe. By personation of ome of his kindred and friends, he went to a country dwelling of his, called Chiasso, where he saw a kaight desperately pursue a young Damosell, whom he slew, and afterward gave her to be devouved by his Hounds. Anastasio invited his friends, and hers also whom heese dearety loved, to take part of a dinner with him, who likewise saw the same Damosell so torne in peeces: which his unkind love perceiving is fearing least the tike it fortune should bappen to hers she accepted Anastasio to be her huband.

9. Novell. Frederigo, of the Alberighi, Family loved a Gentlewoman, and was not requitted with the love agains. But by bountifull expenses, and over liberall invitations he wasted all his lands and goods, having nothing left him, but a Hawke or Faulcon. His unkind Mistresse happeneth to come visite him. & he not having any other foode for her dinner; made a daintie dish of his Faulcon for her to seed on. Being conquered by this exceeding kinde courtesse; she changed her former harred towards him, accepting him as her Husband in marriage, and made him a man of wealthy possessions.

10. No.

The tenth Novell.

Pedro di Vinciola ment to sup at a friends house in the citie. His mise (in the meane) had a yong man whomshe
toved at supper with her. Pedro returning home on a
fodaine, the yonug man was hidden under a Coope sot
Hiens. Pedro in excuse of his so some comming home,
declareth, how in the house of Herculano (with whom
he should have supt) a friend of his mives was sound,
which was the reason of the Suppers breaking off. Pedroes wife reproving the error of Herculanoes wise, an
Ase (by chance) treades on the yong mans singers that
lay hidden under the Hen-coope V pon his crying out Pedro steppeth thither, sees him, knowes him, and findeth
the fallocy of his wise; with whom (neverthelesse) hee
groweth to agreement, in regard of some impersection in
himself.

The end of the Table.

178. 200

in ;

tol Tol Wit

gal wii paj fur

he against the wo

she ber

hon buk

Chi The s

mes He

The VIII.day governed by Madam Lauretta.

The first Novell.

GUlfardo made a match or wager, with the wife of Gafbarvolo, for the obtaining of ber amourous favour. in regard of a farame of money first to be given her. The money he borrowed of her Hushand, and gare it in payment to her, as in cafe of discharging him from her Hufbands debt. After his returne home from Geneway, hee told him in the prefence of his mife, how he had payd the whole fumme to her, with charge of delivering it to her Husband, which fhe confessed to be true, albeit greatly again t her will.

m

11

12

c-

eh

990

in

2. Novell. A lufty Priest of Varlungo, fell in love with a prety moman, named Monna Belcolore. To compaffe his amorous defire, be left his cloake (as a pledge of further payment) with her. By a fubtile fleight afterward, he borrowed a morter of her, which whenhe fent home againe in the presence of her Husband, he demanded to have his cloake (ent him, as having left it in pawne for the morter. To pacific her Husband, offended that thee wou'd not lend the Prieft the morter wirbout a pamne : the feat him backe his cloake againe, albeit greatly against ber will.

3. Novell. Calandrino, Bruno, and Buffalmaco, being Painters by profession, travailed to the Plaine of Muznone, to finde the precious fone called Heliotropium Calandrino per [wading bimfelfe to have found it , returned, home to bis house beavie loaden with flones. His wife rebuking him for his absence, he groweth into anger, and firewally beatesher. Afterward when the cafe is debated by his other friends Bouno and Buffalmaco, all is found tobe meere folly.

4. Novel!. The Provost belonging to the Cathedral Church of Fiefola, fell in love with a Gentlewoman, named Piccarda, who hated bim as much as hee loved her. He imagining that hee lay with her: by the Gentiere-

womans Brethren, and the Bilhop under whom he ferved, was taken in bed with her mayd, an ugly foule deformed Stul

5. Novell. Three pleafant companions, playd a merry pranhe with a tudge (belonging to the Marquefate of Antona), at Florence, at fuch time as he jat on the bench,

and criminall causes.

6. Novell. Bruno and Buffalmaco fiele a yong Brawne from Calandrino, and for his recovery thereof, they used a kinde of pretended conjuration, with Plls made of Ginger and strong histomesey. But instead of this application, thee gave him two pils of a Dogges dates or doufets, confected in Alloes, by meanes whereof they made him believe, that he had rold himselfe. And for feare they should report this thest tonis Wise, they made him to buy another Brawne.

7. Novell. A young Gentleman being a scholler, sell in tove with a Ladie, named Helena, she being a woman, and additied in affection to another Gentleman. One whole right in told winter, she caused the Scholler to expets her comming, in an extreame frost and farm in revenge whereof, by his imagined Art and skill, he made her shand naked on the top of a Tower, the space of a whole day, and in tuty, to be Sun-burst and bitten withstraspes and Flies.

200

ti

211

im

cei

201

ter

me

Con

2147

8. Novell. Two neere dwelling neighbours, the one going named Spinelocio Tavena, and the other Zeppa di Mino, frequenting each others company dayly together? Spinellocio Cuckolded his Friend and Neighbour. Which happening to the knowledge of Zeppa, hee prevailed fo well with the wife of Spinelleccio, that hee being lockt up in a Cheft, he revenged his wrong at that instant, fothat neither of them complained of his misfortune.

9. Novell. Maestro Simone, an idle headed Dostor of Physicie, was throwne by Benno and Bussalmaco into a common Leystalt of fitte): the Physician fondly belowing that (in the night time) he should be made one of a new created compane, who usually went to see monders at Confice

fica, and there in the Leyftall they left him.

10. Novell. A Curtezan, named Madam Biancafiore, It her subtle policy deceived a young Merchant called Salabetto, of all his money he had taken for his wares at Palermo. Afterward he making shew of coming thither agains with far richer Merchandises than before: made the meanes to borrom a great summe of money, leaving her so hase a pawne, as well requited her for some consequence.

The ninth day governed by Madam & milia.

The first Novell.

Adam Francesca, a Widow of Pistoya, being affealced by two Florentine Gentlewomen, the one named Rinuccio Palermini, and the other Alessandro Chiarmontessi, and she bearing no good will to either of them, ingeniously freed her selfe from both their importunate suites. One of them she caused to by eas dead in a grave, and the other to fetch him from thence: so neither of them accomplishing what they were enjoyned, failed of

their expectation.

i-

of

r-

ce

2 Novell. Madam V simbalda, Lady Abbesse of a Monassery of Nuns in Lombardie, arising hastily in the night time without a Candle, to take one of her Daughter Nuns inbed with a young Gentleman, whereof she was enviously accused, by certains of her other Sisters: The Abbesse her selfe (being at the same time in bed with a Priess) imagining to have put on her head a plaited vaile, put on the Priess to have put on when the poore Nunne perceived, by causing the Abbesse to see her owne error, she got her selfe to be absolved, and had the freer liberty afterward, to be more familiar with her friend, then formetly she had bin.

3. Novell. Master Simon the Physician, by the perfuafocts of Bruno, Buffalmaco, and a third Companion, named Nette, made calandrino to believe, that hee was

conceived great with child. And having Phylicke ministred to him for the disease: they got both good fat Capons, and woncy of him, and so cured him, without any other

manner of deliverance.

4. Novell. France so Fortarigo, placed away all that he had at Buonconvento, and likewise the money of Francesso Aniolliero, being his Master: then running after him in his shirt, and avouching that hee had robbed him: hee caused him to be taken by Pezants of the Country, clothed him selfe in his Masters wearing garments, and (mounted on his horse) rode thence to Stenna, leaving Aniolliero in his shirt, and wathed bare-sooted.

3. Novell. Caland in o became extraordina ily enamoured of a young Damosell, named Nicoletta. Bruns
prepared a Charme or writing for him, avouching confant's that as soone as hee touched the Damosell therewith, she should follow him whithersoever he would have
ber. She being gone to an approinted place with him, hee
was sound there by his wife, and dealt withall according

to bis deferving.

6. Novell. Two young Gentlemen, the one named Panuccio, and the other Adriano, lodged one night in a poore inne, wheref oncof them went to bed with the Hoss daughter, and the other (by milaking his way in the dark) to the Hoss wife. He which lay with the daughter, hapmed after ward to the Hoss bed, and told him what hee had done, as thinking he spake to his owne companion. Discontinentent growing between them, the mother perceiving her error, went to bed to her daughter, and with discrete language, made a generall pacification.

7. Novell, I alano de Molese dreamed, That a Wolse rent and tore his wives face and throate. I hich dreame he told to her, with advise to keepe her selse out of danger; which she resusing to doe, received what sollowed.

8. Novell. Blondello (in a merry manner) caused Guiotto to beguide himselse of a good dinner: for which decit, Guinto became cumingly revenged, by procuring

Blondella

Blondello to be unreasonably beaten and misused.

9, Two young Gentlemen, the one one named Meliffo, borns in the City of Laiazzo: and the other Giosefo of Antioche, travelled together unto Salomon, the famous King of Great Britaine. The one defiring to learne what he should doe, whereby to compasse and winne the love of men. The other craved to be enstructed, by what meanes be might reclaime an headstrong and unruly wife. And what answers the wife King gave unto them both, before they departed away from him.

10. Novell. John de Barolo, at the inflance and request of his Gossip Pietro da Tresanti, made an enchantment, to have his Wife become a Mule. And when it came to the sastening on of the taile, Gossip Pietro by saying she should have no taile at all, spoyled the whole en-

chantment.

7-

725

33

ed

ed

in

3-

128

71-

16-

oue bec

ing

ned

23

ofis

rk)

ap-

bee

ion.

oct-

eith

olje

ame

1217-

cd.

u fed

bich

ring della

The X. Day, governed by Pamphilus.

The first Novell.

A Florentine Knight, named Signior Ruggiero de Figiovanni, became a servant to Alphonso, King of Spaine,
who (in his owne opinion) seemed but sleightly to respect
and reward him. In regard whereof, by a notable experiment, the King gave him a manifest testimonic, that it
was not through any desect in him, but onely occasioned
by the Knights ill fortune; most bountiously recompensed
him ast wards.

2. Novell. Ghinetto di Taccostocke the Lord Abbot of Clugni as his prisoner, and cured him of a grievous difece, which hee had in his stomacke, and afterward set him at liberty. The same Lord Abbot, when he returned from the Court of Rome, reconciled Ghinetto to Pope Boniface; who made him a Kuight, and a Lord Prior of a

goodly Hofpitall-

3. Novell. Mithridanes en vying the life and liberality of Nathan, and travelling thither, with a fettle drefolu-

65 3

11078

tion to kill him: chanceth to conferre with Nathan unknowne. And being instructed by him, in what mannet he might best performe the bloody deede, according as hee gave direction, he meeteth him in a small Thicket or Wood, where knowing him to be the same man, that taught him how to take away his life: Confounded with shame, he acknowledgeth his horrible intention, and becommeth his loyall friend.

4. Novell. Signior Gentile de Curifendi, heing come from Modena, tooke a Gentlewoman, named Madam Catharina, forth of a grave, wherein she was buried for dead: which at he did, in regard of his former hovel affection to the sayd Gentlewoman. Madam Catharina remaining there after ward, and delivered of a good; Son: was (by Signior Gentile) delivered to her owne hus band, named signior Nicoluccio Caccianimico, and the young in-

fant with her.

5. Nov. II. Madam Dianora, the wife of Signior Gilberto, being immodestly affected by Signior Anfaldo, to free her felfe from his todious importantly, shee appointed bim to performe (in her judgement) an aft of impossibility, manely to give her a Garden, as plentifully froved with fragrant Flowres in Lanuary, as in the flourishing moneth of May. Ansaldo, by meanes of a bond which hee made to a Magitian, performed her request. Signior Gilberto, the Ladges Huband, gave consent, that his Wife should fulfill her promise made to Ansaldo, who heating the boundiful minde of her husband; released her of her promise: And the magitian likewise discharged Signior Ansaldo, without taking ought of him.

6. Novell. Victorious King Charles, firnamed the Aged, and first of that Name, fell in love with a young Maiden, named Genevera, daughter to an ancient Knight, easted Signior Neri degli Vberti. And waxing ashamed of his amorous foll, caused both Genevera, and her faire Sister 1sotta, to bee soyned in marriage with

two Noble Gentlementhe one named Signior Maffee ds Palizzi, and the other, Signior Gulie'mo della Mazna.

un-

net

bee

ood.

him

ac.

his

me

10-

red

selt

ma

on: nd,

in-

il-

20

ted

bi-

red.

ng

nee

il-

ife

ng

er

01

he

20

t,

1-

id

di

20

- 7. Novell, Lifana, the Daughter of a Florentine Apothecary, named Bernardo Puccino, being at Palermo. and feeing Piero, King of Aragon run at the Tilt; fell To affectionately enamored of him, that thee languished in an extreame and long fichene fe. By her owne devife, and meane sof a Song, fung in the hearing of the King: he wouch safed to vifite her, and giving her a kiffe, terming him felfe also to be her Knight for ever after, he honourably bestowed her in marriage on a young Gentleman, who was called Perdicano, and gave him liberall endowment with her.
- 8. Novell. Soprenia, thinking her felfe to be the married wife of Gifippus, was (indeed) the wife of Titus Quintus Fulvius, and departed thence with him to Rome. Within a while after, Gifippus alfo came thither in very poore condition, and thinking that he was despifed by Titus, grew weary of his life, and confessed that bee had murdered a man, with full intent to die for the fall. But Titus taking knowledge of him, and defining to fave the life of Gilippus, charged himselfe to have done the bloody deed. Which the murderer himfelfe (franding then among the multitude) feeing, truely confessed the deed. By meanes whereof, all three were delivered by the Emperor Octavius: and Titus gave his Sifter in warriage to Gisippus, giving them also the most part of his goods and inheritances.
- 9. Novell. Saladine, the great Soldan of Babylon, in the habite of a Merchant, was honourably received and welcommed, into the houfe of Signior Thorello d' 1/6ria. Who travelling to the hely Land, prefixed a certaine time to his Wife, for his returne backe to her againe 66 4 wirerein,

micreinishe failed, it was law ull for her to take another Husband. By clouding himselse in the disguise of a Faulkner, the Soldan tooke notice of him, and did bim many great honours. Afterward, Thoredo falling sicke, by Magicall Art, he was conveighed in one night to Pavia, when his Wise, was to be married on the morrow: where making himselse knowne to her, all was disappointed,

and the went bome with him to his owne boule.

10. Novell. The Marque fe of Saluzzo, named Gualtiero, being constrained by the importunate solliciting of his Lords, and other inferiour people; to joyne himfelfe in m triages tooke a woman according to bis owne liking, salled Grizelds, the being daughter to a poore Countreman, name a laniculo, by rohom be had two children, which he pretended to be fecretty murdered. Afterward, they being growne to yeeres of more stature, and making them of. taking in maringe another wife, more worthy of his elegree and calling : made a feeming publike liking of his owne daughter, expulsing his wife Grize'da poorely from bim . But finding ber incomparable patience; more dearchy (then before) he received her into favour againe, brought her home to his owne Pallace, where (with her children) be caused her and them to be respectively honeured, in despight of all her adverse enemies.

THE SIXT DAY.

Governed under the Authoritic of Madam Ehra, and the Argument of the Discourses or Nevels there to be recounted, doe concerne such persons; who by some witty words (when any bave checkt and tanuted them) have revenged themselves, in a sodden, unexpected and discreete answer, thereby preventing tosse, danger, scorne, and disgrace, returning them on the busie-headed Questioners.

The Induction.



im by ia,

d,

in

go m, he

of,

.

He Moone having past the heaven's lost her bright splendor, by the arising of a more powerful light, and every part of our world began to looke cleare: when the Queene (being risen) caused all the Company to be called, walked forth af-

terward upon the pearled dew (so faire as was supposed convenient) in faire and familiar conference together, according as severally they were disposed, and repetition of divers the passed Novels, especially those
which were most pleasing, and seemed so by their present commendations. But the Sunne being somewhat
higher mounted, gave such a sensible warmth to the
aire, as caused their returne backe to the Passec,
where the Tables were readily covered against their
comming, strewed with sweet hearbes, and odoriserous
flowers, seating themselves at the Tables (before the
heate grew more violent) according as the Queene
commanded.

After to

The In uttion.

After dinner, they fung divers excellent Canzonners, and then some went to sleepe, others played at the Cheffe, and some at the Tables : but Dioneus and Madam Lauretta, they fung the love-conflict betweene Troylus and Creffida. Now was the houre come, of repairing to their confiftory or meeting place; the Queen having thereto generally fummoned them, and feating themselves (as they were wont to doe) about the faire Fountaine. As the Oucene was commanding to begin the first Novell, an accident suddenly happened, which sever had befalne before: to wit, they heard a great noise and tumult, among the houshold servants in the Kitchin Whereupon, the Queene caused the Master of the Houshold to be called, domanding of him, what noise it was, and what might be the occasion thereof? He made answer, that Lacifes and Tindaro were at fome words of discontentment, but what was the occasion thereof, he knew not. Whereupon, the Queene commanded, that they should be fent for, (their anger and violent speeches still continuing) and being come into her prefence, thee demanded the reason of their differd; and Tindaro offering to make answer, Lacifes (being formerwhat more ancient than he, and of a fiercer fiery fpirit, even as if her heart would have leapt out of her mouth) turned herselfe to him, and with a leornefull frowning countenance, faid. See how this bold, unmannerly, and beaftly fellow, dare prefume to speake in this place before me: Stand by (saucy impudence) and give your better leave to answer; then turning to the Queene, thus the proceeded.

Madam, this idle fellow would maintaine to me, that Signior Sicophanto marrying with Madama della Grazza, had the victory of her verginity the very first night; and I avouched the contrary, because shee had been a mother twife before, in very faire adventuring of her fortune. And hee dared to affirme beside, that young Maides are so simple, as to lose the Sourishing

Aprill

5,

ac

2-

ne

e-

en

ng

in

ch

3:

he

of

at

f?

at

C-

ne

er

ne

ir

ca

T-

pt

12

iis

10

U.

71-

31

la

ıı

ad

at

Aprill of their time, in meere feare of their Parents, and great prejudice of their amourous friends. Onely being abused by infinite promises, that this yeare, and that yeare, they shall have husbands, when, both by the lawes of nature and reason, they are not tied to tarry so long, but rather ought to lay hold upon opportunitie, when it is fairely and friendly offered, so that seldome they come maides to marriage. Beside, I have heard, and know some married wives, that have plaied divers wanton prancks with their husbands, yet carried all so demurely and smoothly sthat they have gone free from publicke detection. All which this Woodcocke will not credit, thinking mee to be so young a Novice, as if I had been borne but yesterday.

While Lacifea was delivering thefe focches, the Ladies fimiled on one another, not knowing what to fay in this canfe : And although the Queene (five or fixe feyerall times) commanded her to filence; vet fuch was the carnell neffe of her spleene, that she gave no attention, but held on fill, even untill the had uttered all that the pleased. But after the had concluded her complaint, the Queene (with a fmiling countenance) turned towards Dioneus, faying. This matter feemeth most properly to belong to you; therefore I dare to 12pofe fuch truft in you; that when our Novels (for this day) shall be ended, you will conclude the case with a definitive sentence. Whereto Dioneus presently thus replied. Madam the Verdict is already given, without any further expectation: and I affirme, that Lacifca hath spoken very fensibly, because she is a woman of good apprehension, and Tindaro is but a Puny, in pra-

Office and experience, to her.

When Lacifea heard this, the fell into a lowed laughter, and turned her felfe to Tindaro, faid: The honour of the day is mine, and thy owne quarrell hath overthrowne thee in the field. Thou that (as yet) hath fearfely learned to fucke, wouldeft thou prefume to

know

know so much as I doe? Couldst thou imagine me, to be such a trewant in losse of my time, that I come hither as an ignorant creature? And had not the Queena (looking verie frowningly on her) strictly injoyned her to silence; thee would have continued still in this triumphing humour; But fearing surther chassisement for dilobedience, both she and Tindaro were commanded thence, where was no other allowance all this day, but onely silence and attention, to such as should be enjoyned Speakers.

And then the Queene, somewhat offended at the folly of the former controversie, commanded Madam Philomena, that she should give beginning to the dayes. Novels: which (in dutiful) manner) she undertooke to doe, and seating her selfe in formall fashion, with mo-

deft and very gracious gedureathus the began.

A Knight requested Medant Oretta, to ride behinde him on horseback, and promised, to tell ber an excellent Tale by the may. But the Lady processing, that his discourse massidle, and much morse delivered: entreated him to let her matke on soote againe.

The first Novell.

Reprehending the folly of fuch men. as undertake to report diffeourfes, which are beyond their wit and capacitie, and gaine pothing but blame for their labour.



Racious Ladies, like as in ourfaire, cleare, and ferenc Scasons, the stars are bright ornaments to the heavens, and the flowry fields (so long as the Spring time laste ch) we are their good liest Liveries, the Trees likewise bragging in

their best adornings: Even so at friendly meetings, short, sweet and sententious words, are the beautic and ornament of any discourse, savouring of wit, and sound judgement, worthily deserving to be commended. And so much the rather, because in sew and witty words,

aptly

apely fitting with the time and the occasion, more is delivered than was expected, or sooner answered, than rashly apprehended : which, as they become men very highly, yet doe they shew more singular in women.



True it is, what the occasion may be, I know not, either by the badnesse of our wits, or the especial enmitie betweene our complexions and the celestial bodies: there are searsely any, or very few women to be found among us, that well knowes how to deliver a word, when it should, and ought to be spoken; or, if a question be moved, under stands to suite it with an apt answer, such assigntly is required, which is no meane disgrace

d

d

Novell. The Sixt Day;

diffrace to us women. But in regard that Madam Pampinea hath already spoken sufficiently of this matter, I meane not to presse it any further; but at this time it shall satisfie me, to let you know, how wittily a Lady made due observation of opportunity, in answering of a Knight, whose talke seemed tedious and offensive

to her.

No doubt there are some among you, who either do know, or (at the leaft) have heard, that it is no long time fince, when there dwelt a Gentlewoman in our Citie, of excellent grace and good discourse, with all other rich endowments of Nature remaining in her, as pitty it were to conceale her name: and therefore let me tell you, that the was called Madam Oretta, the wife to Signior Gere Spina. She being upon some occasion (as now wee are) in the Countrey, and passing from place to place, by way of neighbourly invitations) to vifite her loving friends and acquaintance, accompanied with many Knights and Gentlewomen, who on the day before had dined and fupt at her house as now (belike) the felfe-fome courtefie was intended to her: walking along with her company upon the way; and the place for her welcome being further off than the expected ; a Knight chanced to overtake this faire troop, who well knowing Madam Oertta, using a kind and courteous falutation, fpake thus unto her.

Madam, this foot travell may be offensive to you, and were you so well pleased as my selfe, I would ease your journey behinde mee on my Gelding, even so farre as you shall command me: and beside, will shorten your wearinesse with a Tale worth the hearing. Courteous Sir, (replied the Lady) I embrace your kind offer with such acceptation, that I pray you to performe it; for therein you shall do me an especiall savor. The Knighe, whose sword (perhaps) was as unsutable to his side, as his wit out of fashion for any ready discourse, having the Lady mounted behinde him; rode on with a gen-

tle pace, and (according to his promife) began to tell a Tale, which indeede (of it felfe) deferved attention, because it was a knowne and commendable Historie, but yet delivered so abruptly, with idle repetitions of some particulars, three or source severall times, mistaking one thing for another, and wandring erroniously from the essential subject, seeming neere an end, and then beginning againe: that a poore Tale could not possibly be more mangled, or worse tortured in telling, than this was; for the persons therein concerned, were so abusively nicke-named, their actions and speeches so monstrously mistaken, that nothing could appeare to be more ugly.

Madam Oretta, being a Lady of unequalled ingenuitie, admirable in judgement, and most delicate in her speech, was afflicted in soule, beyond all measure; oversome with many cold sweates, and passionate heartaking qualmes, to see a Foole thus in a Pione-fold, and unable to get out, albeit the doore stood wide open to him; whereby she became so sicke; that converting her distaste to a pleasing kinde of acceptation, merrily thus she speece me Sir, your horse trots so hard, and travels so uneasie, that I intreate you to let me walke on

foote againe.

200-

, [

eit

dy

of

do

ng

ur

lle

r,

re

he

c-

ng

1-

C-

n,

(e

d

n

e

d

The Knight, being (perchance) a better understander, than a Discourser; perceived by this witty taunt, that his Bowle had run a contrary bias, and he as farre out of Tune, as he was from the Towne. So singering the time, until her company was neerer arrived; hee left her with them, and rode on as his wisedome could

best direct him.

Cistio a Baker, by a mitty answer which hee gave unto Messer Geri Spina, 'caused him to acknowledge a very indiscreet motion, which de had made to the said Cistio. The second Novell.

Approving, that a request ought to be civill, before it should be granted to any one relationerer. The

Nove'l. 2: The Sixt Day;

The words of Madam Oretta, were much comended by the men and women; and the discourse being ended, the Queene gave command to Madam Pampinea, that she should follow next in order, which made

her to begin in this manner.

Worthy Ladies, it exceedeth the power of my capacitie, to censure in the case where of I am to speake, by faying, who finned most, either Nature, in seating a noble foule in a vile body, or Forume, in bestowing on a body (beautified with a noble foule) a base or wretched condion of life. As we may observe by Ciftio, a Citizen of our owne, and many more befide; for, this Giftio being enducd with a fingular good spirit, Fortune hath made him no better than a Baker. And beleeve me Ladies, I could (in this case) lay as much blame on Nature, as on Fortune; if I did not know Nature tobe most absolutely wife, and that Fortune hath a thousand eyes, albeit fooles have figured her tobe blinde. Burupon more mature and deliberate confideration, I finde, that they both (being truely wife and judicious) have dealt juffly, in imitation of our best adviled mortals, who being uncertaine of fuch inconveniences, as may happen unto them, doe burie (for their owne benefit) the very best and choisest things. of esteeme, in the most vile and abject places of their houses, as being subject to least suspition, and where they may be fure to have them at all times, for supply cfany necessitie whatsoever, because so base a conveyance hath better kept them, than the very best Chamber in the house could have done. Even so these two great Commanders of the world doe many times bide their most precious lewels of worth, under the clouds of Arts or Professions of worst estimation, to the end, that fetching them thence when neede requires, their splendor may appeare to be the more glorious, Nor was any fuch matter noted in our homely Baker Ciftio, by the best observation of Meffer Geri Spinas, who was ipoken

and.

spoken of in the late repeated Novell, as being the husband to Madam Oretta; whereby this accident came to my remembrance, and which (in a short tale)

I will relate unto you.

led

ing

pi-

de.

01-

by:

23

on

et.

, 2

is.

1-

c-

W.

ne

to-

i-

1-

r

3

1

e

Let me then tell ye, that Pope Beniface (with whom the fore-named Meffer Geri Spina was in great regard) having fent divers Gentlemen of his Court to Florence as Ambassadours, about very serious and important businesse: they were lodged in the house of Meffer Geri Spina, and he employed (with them) in the faid Popes negotiation. It chanced, that as being the most convenient way for passage, every morning they walked on foote by the Church of Saint Marie d'Ughi, where Ciffio the Baker dwelt, and exercifing the trade belonging to him. Now although Fortune had humbled him to so meane a condition, yet the added a bleffing of wealth to that contemptible qualitic, and (as fmiling on him continually) no difafters at any time befell him, but ftill he flourished in riches, lived like a jolly Citizen, with all things fitting for honest entertainement about him, and plentie of the best Wines (both White and Ciaret) as Florence, or any part thereabout yeelded.

Our frolike Baker perceiving, that Messer Geri Spina and the other Ambassadors, used every morning to passe by his doore, and afterward to returne backe the same way: seeing the Season to be somewhat hot and soutress, to make them an offer of tasting his white wine. But having respect to his owne meaned egree, and the condition of Messer Geri: hee thought it farre unsitting for him, to be so forward in such presumption; but rather entred into consideration of some such meanes, whereby Messer Geri might be the inviter of himselfe to taste his wine. And having put on him a trusse or thin doublet, of very white and fine Linnen cloath, as also breeches, and an apron of the same,

Novell.2. The Sixt Day.

and a white cap upon his head, so that he semeed rather to be a Miller than a Baker; at such times as Messer. Geri and the Ambassadors should daily passe by, he set before his doore a new Bucket of faire water, and another small vessell of Bologna earth (as new and sightly as the other) sull of his best and choisest white wine, with two small Glasses, looking like silver, they were so cleare. Downe he sate, with all this provision before him, and emptying his stomack twice or thrice, of some clotted slegmes which seemed to offend it even as the Gentlemen were passing by, he dranke one or two rouses of his Wine so heartily, and with such a pleasing appetite, as might have moved a longing (almost) in a dead man.

Messer Geri well noting his behaviour, and observing the very same course in him two mornings together; on the third day (as he was drinking) he said unto him. Well done Gistio, what, is it good, or no? Cistio statting up, forthwith replied: Yes Sir, the wine is good indeede, but how can I make you to believe me, except you taste of it? Messer Geri, either in regard of the times qualitie, or by reason of his paines taking, perhaps more than ordinary, or else because he saw Cistio had drunke so sprightly, was very destrous to taste of the wine, and turning unto the Ambassadors, in merriment he said. My Lords, me thinks it were not much amisse, if wee tooke a taste of this honest mans wine, perhaps it is so good, that wee shall not neede to

repent our labour.

Hereupon, hee went with them to Cistio, who had caused a kandsome seate to be setched forth of his house, whereupon he requested them to sit downe, and having commanded his men to wash cleane the Classes, he said. Fellowes, now get you gone, and leave me to the performance of this service; for I am no worse a skinker, than a Baker, and tarry you never so long, you shall not drinke a drop. Having thus spoken, himselfe

waffied

fier

fer

: fet

an-

ht-

hite

hey

ion

ce,

it :

one

h-a

al-

cr-

ge-

n-

i-

is

le,

Of

g,

to

s,

ot

28

0

is

washed foure or five small Glasses, faire and new, and causing a Viall of his best wine to be brought him: he diligently filled it out to Messer Geri and the Ambassadours, to whom it seemed the very best Wine that they had drunke of in a long while before. And having given cistionnost hearty thanks for his kindnesse, and the wine his due commendation: many dayes afterwards (so long as they continued there) they found the like courteous entertainement, and with the good liking of honest cistio.

But when the affaires were fully concluded, for which they were fent to Florence, and their parting preparation in due readinesse: Meffer Geri made a very sumptuous Feast for them, inviting thereto the most part of the honourable Citizens, and Cifio to be one among & them; who (by no meanes) would be seene in an assembly of such State and pompe, albeit he was thereto (by

the faid Meffer Geri) molt earneftly intreated.

In regard of which deniall, Meffer Geri commanded one of his fervants, to take a small Bottle, and request ciftio to fill with his good Wine; & to serve it in fuch sparing manner to the Table, that each Gentleman might bee allowed halfe a glaffe-full at their downe-fitting. The Serving man, who had heard great report of the wine, and was halfe offended, because he could never tafte thereofe tooke a great flaggon Bottle, containg foure or five Gallons at the least, and comming therewith unto Ciftio, faid unto him. Ciftio, because my Master cannot have your company among his friends, he prayes you to fill this Bottle of your best wine. Ciftie looking upon the huge Flaggon, replied thus. Honest Fellow, Meffer Geri never lent thee with fuch a message to me : which although the Servingman very floutly maintained, yet getting no other answer, he returned backe therewith to his Mafter.

Meffer Geri returned the Servant backe againe unto Ciftio, faying: Go and affure Ciftio, that I lent thee to

him

Novell.2. The Sixt Day.

him, & if he makethee any more such answers, then demand of him, to what place else I should send thee? Being come againe to Cifio, hee avouched that his Maister had sent him, but Cistio affirming, that he did not: the Servant asked to what place else hee should send him? Marrie (quoth Cistio) unto the River of Arno, which runneth by Florence, there thou mayest be sure to fill thy Flaggon. When the Servant had reported this answere to Messer Geri, the eyes of his understanding began to open, and calling to see what bothe he had carried with him: no sooner looked hee on the hage Flagon, but severely reproving the sawinesse of his servant, he sayd. Now trust me, Cistio told thee nothing but truth, for neither did I send thee with any such dishonest message, nor had the reason to

yceld or grant it.

Then he fent him with a bottle of more reasonable competencie, which as soone as Ciftio saw : Yea marry my friend, quoth he, now I am fure that thy Mafter fent thee to me, hee shall have his defire with all my heart So, commanding the bottle to befilled, he fent it away by the fervant, and prefently followed after him; when he came unto Meffer Geri, he spake unto him after this manner. Sir, I would not have you to imagine, that the huge flaggon (which first came) did any jot dismay me; but rather I conceived, that the small Viall whereof you rafted every morning, yet filled many mannerly Glasses together, was fallen quite out of your remembrance; in plainer tearmes, it being no Wine. for Groomes or Peazants, as your felfe affirmed yesterday. And because I meane to be a Skinker no longer, by keeping Wine to please any other pallate but mine owne: I have fent you halfe my ftore, and hereafter thinke of me as you hall pleafe. Meffer Geri tooke both his gift and speeches in most thankefull manner, accepting him alwayes after, as his intimate Friend, because he had fo graced him before the Ambastadors. Madam : Madam Nonna de Pulci, by a fudden an froer, did put to filence a Bishop of Florence, and the Lord Marshall : having mooved a question to the faid Lady, which seemed to come short of honesty.

The third Novell.

Wherein is declared, that mothers dee sometimes meete with their matches in mockery, and to their own shame.

When Madam Pampines had ended her Discourse, and by the whole company) the answer and bountie of Cistio, had past with deserved commendation: it pleased the Queene, that Madam Lauretta should next succeede; whereupon very cheerefully thus shee be-

ganne.

le :

669

his

hid

uld

of

eft

re-

m-

01-

ciold

ith

to

ble

rry

ter

my

mt

m; im

a-

ny all

12-

of ne

..

r,

ne

er th

p-

ile

773

Faire Affembly, Madam Pampinea (not long time fince) gave beginning, and Madam Philomena hath alto feconded the same argument, concerning the slender vertue remaining in our fexe, and likewisethe beauty of witty words, delivered on apt occasion, and in convenient meetings. Now, because it is needelesse to proceede any further, than what hath beene already spoken : let me onely tell you (over and beside) and commit it to memory, that the nature of meetings and speeches are such, as they ought to nippe or touch the Hearer, like unto the Sheepes nibling on the tender graffe, and not as the fullen Dogge biteth, For, if their biting be answerable to the Dogges, they deserve not to be termed witty jefts or quips, but foule and offenfive language: as plainely appeareth by the words of Oretta, and the mery, yet lensible answer of Ciftio.

True it is, that if it be spoken in way of answer, and the answer biteth doggedly, because himselfe was bitten in the same manner before: hee is the lesse to be blamed, because he maketh paiment but with coine of the same stampe. In which respect, an especiall care is to be had, how, when, with whom, and where we just or gibe, whereof very many prove too unmindefull, as

appeared

appeared (not long fince) by a Prelate of ours, who met with a biting, no leffe sharpe and bitter, than had first come from himselfe before, as very briefely I in-

tend to tell you how.

Messer Antonio d'Orso, being Bishop of Florence, a vertuous, wise, and reuerend Prelate; it fortuned that a Gentleman of Catalogna, named Messer of Naples, came thirher to visite him. Hee being a man of very comely personage, and great observer of the choisest beauties in Court spamong all the other Florentine Dames, one proved to be most pleasing in his eye, who was a very faire woman indeede, and Necce to the

Brother of the faid Meffer Antonio.

The Husband of this Gentlewoman (albeit descended of a worthy Family), was nevertheleffe, immeafurably coverous. Which the Lord Marshall understanding, made such a mad composition with him, as to give him five hundred Duckets of Gold, on condition, that he would let him he one night with his wife, not thinking him fo base minded as to give consent. Which in a greedy avaritious humour he did, and the bargaine being absolutely agreed on, ; the Lord Marshall prepared to fithim with a payment, fuch as it should be. He caused so many peeces of filver to be cunningly guilded, as then went for currant money in Florence, and called Popolines; and after he had lien with the Lady (contrary to her will and knowledge, her husband had fo closely carried the bufinesse) the money was duely paide to the cornuted Coxcombe. Afterwards this impudent shame chanced to be generally known, nothing remaining to the wilfull Wittoll, but loffe of his expected gaine, and scorne in every place where he went. The Bishop likewise (being a discreete and sober man) would feeme to take no knowledge thereof, but bare out all fcoffes and mockes with a well feiled countenance.

Within

W

CO

ly

Ma

fine

(re

to !

the

we

TiOU

bite

governed by Madam Eliza.

Within a short while after, the Bishop and the Lord Marshall (alwayes conversing together) it came to paffe, that upon Saint Johns day, they riding thorow the Citie, fide by fide, and viewing the brave beauties, which of them might best deserve to win the prize: the Bishop cipied a young married Lady (which our late grievous pettilence beraved us of) the being named Madam Nonna de Pulci, and Coufine to Meffer Alexio Rinneci, a Gentleman well knowne unto us all. A vez ry goodly beautifull young woman the was, of delicate language and fingular spirit, dwelling close by S. Peters gate. This Lady did the Bishop shew to the Marshall, and when they were come to her, laying his hand upon her shoulder, he said Madam Nonna, What think you of this Gallant? Dare you adverture another wager with him ?

Such was this apprehension of this witty Lady, that these words seemed to taxe her honour, or else to contaminate the hearers understanding, whereof there were great plenty about her, whose judgement might be as vise as the speeches were scandalous. Wherefore, never feeking for any further purgation of her cleare conscience, but only to retort taunt for taunt, presently thus shee replied. My Lord, if I should make such a vise adventure, I would looke to be paide with better

money.

æ

0

e

h

e

-

le

1.

n.

So

ly

r.-

ng

X-

nt.

n)

ın-

hin

These words being heard both by the Bishop and Marshall, they felt themselves touched to the quicke, theone, as the Factor or Broker, for so dishonest a buassactive, to the Brother of the Bishop; and the other, as (receiving in his owne person) the shame belonging to his brother. So, not so much as looking each on other, or speaking one word together all the rest of that day, they rode away with blushing cheekes. Whereby we may collect, that the young Lady, being so injuritionsly provoked, did no more than well became her, to bite their basenesse merely, that so abused her openly.

Chichibio

The Sixt Day,

Chichibio, the Cooke to Meffer Currado Granfiliazzi, by a sudden pleasant answer which hee made to his Mafter; converted his anger into laughter, and thereby escaped the punishment, that Messer meant to impose upoz him. The fourth Novell '

Whereby plainely appeareth, that a sudden witty, and merry answer, doth oftentimes appeale the furious chol.

ler of an Angry man.

MAdam Lauretta fitting filent, and the answer of Lady Nonna having past with generall applause; the Queene commanded Madam Neighila to follow next in orders who instantly thus began. Although a ready wit (faire Ladies) doth many times afford worthy and commendable speeches, according to the accidents happening to the speaker: yet notwithstanding, Fortune (being a ready helper divers wayes to the timorous) doth often tippe the tongue with fuch a prefent reply, as the party to speake, had not so much leasure as to thinke on, nor yet to invent; as I purpole to let

you perceive, by a pretty short Novell.

Meffer currado Gianfiliazzi (as most of you have both scene and knowne) living alwayes in our City, in the eftate of a noble Citizen, being a man bountifull, magnificent, and within the degree of Knighthoode: continually kept both Hawkes and Hounds, taking no meane delight in fuch pleasures as they yeeelded, neglecting (for them) farre more ferious imployments, wherewith our present subject presumeth not to meddle. Vpon a day, having kilde with his Faulcon a Crane, neere to a Village called Peretola, and finding her to be young and fat, he fent it to his Cooke, a Venetian borne, named Chichibio, with command to have it prepared for his supper. Chichio, who resembled no other than (as he was indeede)a plaine, umple, honest, merry fellow, having dreft the Crane as it ought to be, put it on the fpit, and laid icto the fire.

Oi

to

up

to W

C

oth

tur

but

ang

no

Cra

in h

noti

mak

M

he h

by

oje

nd ol-

the

ext

ady

thy

nts

mo-

Cent

fure

o let

have

ty,in

ifull,

ode:

ng no

neg-

ents,

med.

con a

nding

a Ve-

o have

ed no

moneft,

ight to

When it was well neere rofted, and gave forth a verie delicate pleafing favour; it fortuned that a young woman dwelling not farre off, named Brunetta, and of whom Chichibio was fomewhat enamored, entred into the Kitchin, and feeling the excellent finell of the Crane, to pleafe her beyond all favors, that ever fine that felt before, the entreated Chichibio very earnefly, that he would beflow a legge thereof on her. Whereto Chichibio (like a pleafan companion, and exermore delighting in finging) fung her this answer.

My Bronetta, faire and foata, Why frould you fay fo? The meate of my Master, Allowes you for no Tafter, Go from the Kitchin, go.

Many other speeches past betweene them in a short while, but in the end Chichibio, because hee would ? not have his Miftrelle Bruretta angry with him; cut off one of the Cranes legges from the fpit, and gave it to her to cate. Afterward, when the Fowle was ferved up to the Table before Meffer Currado, who had invited certaine ftrangers his friends to fup with him, wondering not a little, hee called for Chichibio his Cooke; demanding what was become of the Cranes other legge? Whereto the Venetian (being a lyer by nature) fodaincly answered: Sir, Cranes hath no more but one legge each Bird. Meffer currade, growing very angry replied. Wilt thou tell me, that a Crane hath no more no more but one legge? Did I never see a Crane before this? Chichibio perfifting resolutely in his deniall, faid. Beleeve mee Sir, I have told you nothing but the truth, and when you pleafe, I will make good my words, by fuch fowles as are living.

Meffer Currado, in kinde love to the firangers that he had inuited to supper, gave over any further conteflation; onely he faid. Seeing thou affurest me, to let me fee thy affirmation for truth, by other of the fame Fowles living (a thing which as yet I never favy, or heard of) lam content to make proofe thereof to morrow morning; till then I shall rest satisfied : but, upon my word, if I finde it otherwise, expect such a found paiment, as thy knavery juftly deserveth, to make thee remember it all thy life time. The contention ceasing for the night feafon, Meffer Currado, who, although he had flept well, remained full discontented in his mind: arose in the morning by breake of day, and puffing, and blowing angerly, called for his horses, commanding Chichibio to mount on one of them; foriding on towards the River, where early (every morning) he had feene plentie of Cranes, hee faid to bis man; We shall fee anon Sirra, whether thou or I lied yesternight,

Chichibio perceiving, that his Mafters anger was not (as yet) affwaged, and now it flood him upon to make good his lye ; not knowing how he should doe it, rode after his Mafter, fearefully trembling all the way, Gladly hee would have made an escape, but he could not by any possible means, and on every fide he looked, about him, now before, and after behinde, to espica ny Cranes standing on both their legges, which would have beene an ominous fight to him. But being come neere to the River, he chanced to fee (before any of the reft) upon the bancke thereof, about a dozen Cranes in number, each standing upon one legge, as they use to doe when they are fleeping. Whereupon, flewing them quickly to Meffer Currado, he faid. Now Sir your felie may fee, whether I told you true yesternight, or no: I am fure a Crane hath but one thigh, and one · legge, as all here prefent are apparant witnesses, and have beene as good as my promile.

Messer Currado looking on the Cranes, and wellunderstanking the knavery of his man, replied: Stay but a little while sirra, and I will show thee, that a Crane

hash

hath two thighes, and two legges. Then riding somewhat neerer to them, hee cryed out aloud. Shough, shough; which caused them to set downe their other legges, and all fled away, after they had made a few paces against the winde for their mounting. So going unto Chichibio, he said: How now you lying Knave, hath a Crane two legges or no? Chichibio being wellneere at his wits end, not knowing now what answer he should make; but even as it came suddenly in his minde, said: Sir, I perceive you are in the right, and if you would have done as much yesternight, and had cryed Shough, as here you did: questionlesse, the Crane would then have set downe the other legge, as these here did; but if (as they) she had sled away too, by that meaues you might have lost your Supper-

This fudden and unexpected fudden answer, comming from such a logger-headed Loute, and so seasonably for his owne safety: was so pleasing to Messeo Currado, that he fell into a hearty laughter, and forgetting all anger, said. Chichibio, thou hast quitthy selfe well, and to my contentments albeit I advise thee, to teach me no more such trickes hereafter. Thus Chichibo, by his sudden and metry answer, escaped a sound beating, which (otherwise) his Master had in-

flicted on him.

ne

10

17-

on

nd

100

ing

he

nd:

ng

an-

on

had

thall

not

nake

rode

way.

could

oked.

pica

vould

of the

ey use

ewing

r your

int, of

d one

, and I

rellun-

cay but

Crane

hath

Messer Foreso da Rabatte, and Maister Giotto, a Painter by his Profession, comming together from Mugello, scornefully reprehended one another for their deformity of body.

The fifth Novell-

Whereby may be observed, that such as will speake contemptibly of others, ought (first of all) tolooke respelively on their owne impersedions.

So foone as Madam Neiphila fate filent (the Ladies having greatly commended the pleafant answer of cc 2 Chichibio)

Chichibio) Famphilus, by command from the Queene, Spake in this manner. Worthy Ladies, it commeth to passe oftentimes, that like as Fortune is observed divers wayes, to hide under vile and contemptible Arts, the great and unvaluable treasures of vertue (as, not long fince was weldifcourfed unto us by Madam Pampinea:) fo in like manner hath appeared; that Nature hath infuled very fingular spirits into most mishapen bodies of men. As hath bin noted in two of our owne Citizens. The one of them was named Meffer Forefe de Rabatta, a man of little and low person, but yet deformed in body, with a flat nose, like a Terrier or Beagle, very ugly to behold. But notwithstanding all his deformity, he was fo fingularly experienced in the Lawes, that no man was his equall, but reputed him as a Treasury of civill knowledge. The other man, being named Giotto, had a spirit of fuch great excellency, as there was nothing in Nature, the work-mistrelfe of all, by continual motion of the heavens; but he by his pen could perfectly portrait; shaping them allfo truly alike, that they were taken for the real matters indeede; and, whether they were present or no there was hardly any possibility of their distinguishing. So that many times at happened, that by the variable devises he made, the visible sence of men become deceived, in crediting those things to be natural, which were but painted. By which meanes, he reduced that fingular Art to light, which long time before had lien buried, under the groffe error of some; who, in the Mystery of Painting, delighted more to content the ignorant; than to please the wife, hee justly deserving to be tearmed one of the Florentines med glorious lights. And fo much the rather, because he performed all his actions in true humihty : for while he lived, and was a Mafter in his Art above all other Painters: yet he refused any such title, which shined the more majestically in him, as appeazed by fuch, who knew much leffe than hee : yet his Now, knowledge was much defred of them,

V

CO

tr

dl

m

he

his

mi

Now, notwithflanding, all this excellency in him:hewas not a jot the handfommer a man, than was our fore named Lawyer Meffer Forefe, therefore my Novel concerneth them both. Vnderstand faire affembly) the possessions of Meffer Forese & Gietto, lay in Mugello; wherefore, when Holi-dayes were celebrated by Order of Court, and in the Sommer time, upon the admittance of lo apt a vacation; Forefe rode thither upon a very unlightly lade. The like did Giorro the Painter, as illfitted every way as the other; & having dispatched their bufineffe there, they both returned backe towards Florence, neither of them could boaft which was the best mounted. Riding on a fostly pace, because their horles could goe no fafter: and they being well entred into yeares; it fortuned that a fodaine showre of raine over-rooke them; for avoiding whereof they made all possible haste to a poore mans Cottage, well known to them both. Having continued there an indifferent while, and the raine unlikely to cease : to prevent all further protraction of time, and to arrive at Florence in due leason; they borrowed two old cloakes of the poore man, of over-worne and ragged Country gray, as allo two hoods of the like complexion, which did more mishape them, than their owne ugly deformity, and made them flouted & scorned of all that fave them.

n

e,

d.

ny

C\$

he

ofe

ich

ich

ror

red

the

the

11-

mi-

rt a-

itle,

pea-

t his

lovy,

After they had ridden some distance of ground, much moyled & bemired with their shuffling lades, dinging the dirt every where about them, that well they might be tearmed two filthy companions: the raine gave over, and the evening somewhat cleare, they began to confer familiarly together. Foreferiding a lofty French trot, every ftep being ready to hoise him out of his faddle, hearing Giottees answers to every idle question be made, began to furveigh him, even from the foot to the head. And perceiving him to be greatly deformed, in his opinion: without any confideration of his owne

mithaping as bad, or rather more unfightly than hee ;

Novell. 6. The Sixt Day,

in a fcoffing laughing humour, he faid Giotto, dost thou imagine that a stranger, who had never scene thee before, and should now happen into our company, would believe thee to be the best Painter in the world, as indeede thou art? Presently Giotto (without any further meditation) returned him this answer. Signior Forese, I thinke hee might then believe it, when so below you hee could imagine that you had learned your A.B. C. Which when Forese heard, he knew his owne error, and saw his paiment returned in such Coine, as he sold his Wares for.

A joing ingenious Scholler, being unfindly reviled and finitten by his ignorant Father, and through the procurrement of an unlearned Vicar; afterward attained to be doubly revenged on him.

The firth Novell.

serving as an advertiem note unlearned Parents, not to be over-rash in consuling on Schollers perfections, through any bad or unbe seeming per sive stons.

THe Ladies Smiled ve y heartily, at the ready an-Iwer of Giotto suntill the Queene charged Madam Figurmette, that the should next succeede in order: whereupon . thus the began. The very greatest infelicitie that can happen to a man, and most insupportable of all other, is Ignorance; a word (I fay) which hath beene so generall, as under it is comprehended all imperfections whatfoever. Yet notwithstanding, whofoever can cull (graine by graine) the defects incident to humane race; will and must confesse, that we are not all borne to knowledge : but only fuch whom the heavens illuminating by their bright radiance (wherein confifteth the course and well-spring of all Science) by little and little doe bestow the influence of their boun. ty, on such and so many as they please, who are to expreffe themselves the more thankefull for such a blef-

fing. And although this grace doth leffen the misfortune of many, which were over-mighty to be in all, yet fome there are, who by faucie prefuming on themfelves, doe bewray their ignorance by their owne fpeeches; fetting fuch behaviour on each matter, and foothing every thing with such gravitic, even as if they would make comparison or (to speake more properly) durft encounter in the liftes with great Salomon or Soerates. But let us leave them, and come to the matter of our purpoied Novell.

In a certaine Village of Piccardie, there lived a Prieft or Vicar, who being meerely an ignorant blocke, had yet fuch a peremptoric prefuming spirit; as, though it was fufficiently difcerned, yet he beguiled many thereby, untill at last he deceived himselfe, and with due

chaftifements to his folly.

0

n

A plaine Husbandman dwelling in the same Village possessed of much Land, and Livings , but very grosse and dull in understanding; by the entreaty of some of his friends, and well-willers, fome-thing more intelligible than himfelfe : became incited, or rather provoked, to fend a Sonne of his to the Vniverfitie of Paris, to fludy there as was fitting for a Scholler. To the end (quoth they) that having but this Son onely, and Fortunes bleffings abounding in ftore for him : hee might likewise have the riches of the minde, which are those true treasures indeede, that Aristippus giveth us advice to be furnished withall.

His friends perswasions having prevailed, and hee continued at Paris for the space of three yeares : what with the documents he had attained to, before his going thither, and by meanes of a happy memory in the time of his being there, wherewith no young man was more fingularly endued (in fo fnore a while) he attained and performed the greater part of his Studies.

Now, as oftentimes it commeth to paffe, the love of a Father (furmounting all other affections in man) made made the old Farmer delirous to fee his Sonne: which caufed his fending for him with all convenient speede, and obedience used his as forward willingnesse thereso. The good old man, not a little joyfull to see him in so good condition and health, and encreased so much in stature since his parting thences smiliarly told him, that he earnessly desired to know; if his minde and body had attained to a competent and equall growth, which in three or source dayes he would put in practise.

No other helpe had he fily fimply man, but Mafter Vicar must be the questioner of his Son: wherein the Priest was very unwilling to meddle, for feare of discovering his own ignorance, which passed under better opinion than hee descreed. But the Farmer being importunate, and the Vicar many wayes beholding to him, dust not returne deniall, but undertooke it very formally, as if he had beene an able man indeede.

h

t

Ь

1

Ci

W

fo

ge

1230

Vel

But fee how Fooles are borne to be fortunate, and where they least hope there they finde the best successe; the fimplicity of the Father, must be the meanes for abuling his Schollerly Son, and a skreene to fland betweene the Priest and his ignorance. Earnest is the old mon to know, what, and how far his Son had profited at Schoole, and by what note he might best take understanding of his answers: which jumping fit with the Vicars vanity, and a warantable cloake to cover his knavery; he appoints him but one word onely, namely Nescie, wherewith if hee answered to any of his demands, it was an evident token, that hee understood nothing. As thus they were walking and conferring in the Church, the Farmer very carefull to remember the word Nifcio: it came to passe upon a sudden, that the yong min entred in to them, to the great contentment of his Father, who prayed Mafter Vicar, to make approbation of his Sonne, whether hee were learned, or no, and how he had benefited at the Vniverfity?

After the time of the dayes fulutations had past be-

tweene them, the Vicar being subtle and crafty, as they walked along by one of the Tombes in the Church; pointing with his singer to the Tombe, the Priest uncertil these words to the Scholler.

Quis hiceft Sepn!tus?

The young Scholler (by reason it was erected since his departure, and finding no inscription whereby to informe him) answered, as well as hee might Nescio. Immediatly the Father, keeping the word perfectly in his memory, grew very angerly passionate; and defining to heare no more demands: gave him three or source boxes on the cares; with many harsh and injurious speeches, tearming him an Affe and Villaine, and that he had not learned any thing. His Sonne was patient, and returned no answer, but plainly perceived, that this was a tricke intended against him, by the malicious Priest, on whom (in time) he might be revenged.

Within a short while after, the Suffragan of those parts (under whom the Priest was but a Deputy, holding the Benefice of him, with no great charge to his conscience) being abroad in his visitation, tent word to the Vicar, that he intended to preach there on the next Sunday, and he to prepare in a readinesse, Bonum & Commodum, because he would have nothing essentially dinner. Hereat Master Vicar was greatly attaized, because he had never heard such words before, neither could hee find them in all his Berviary. Hereupon hee went to the young Scholler, whom he had so lately before abused, and crying him mercy, with many impurent and shallow excuses, defired him to reveale the meaning of those words, Bonum & Commodum.

The Scholler (with a fober countenance) made anfiver; That he had him over-much abused, which (neverthelesse) he tooke not so impatiently, but he had already both forgot and forgiven it, with promise of comfort in this his extraordinary distraction, and griese of minde. When the had perused the Suffragans Letter, well observing the blushlesse ignorance of the Priest, seemed (by outward appearance) to take it strangely, he cryed out aloud, saying; In the name of Vertue, what may be this mans meaning? How? (quoth the Priest) What manner of demand doe you make? Alas, replied the Scholler, you have but one poore Asse, replied the Scholler, you have but one poore Asse, which I know you doe love dearely, and yet you must stew his genitories very daintily, for your Patron will have no other meate to his dinner. The genitories of my Asse, answered the Priest? Passion of me, who then shullcarrie my corne to the Mill? There is no remedy, said the Scholler, for hee hath so fet it

downe for an absolute resolution.

After the Priest had considered thereon a while by himfelfe, remembring the yearely revennewes, which clearely he put up into his purse, to be ten times of far greater worth than his Affe; hee concluded to have him gelded, what danger foever fhould enfue thereon. preparing them in readinesse against his comming. So soone as the Suffragan was there arrived, heavily hee complained to him for his Affe : which kinde of Language he not understanding knew not what he meant, nor how he should answer. But being (by the Scholler) acquainred with the whole History, he laughed hartily at the Priests ignorant folly, wishing that all such bold Bayards (from time to time') might be fo ferved. Likewife, that all ignorant Priefts, Vicars, and other Grashoppers of Townes, or Villages, who sometime have only seene Partes orationis quod funt, not to stand over-much on their owne fufficiencie, grounded foly upon their Grammer; but to beware whom they jest withall, without medling with Schollers, who take no injuries as dullards doe, least they prove infamous by their disputations.

W

Madame Philippa, being accufed by her husband Rivaldo de Pugliefe, because he took her inadultery, with a young Gentic-

ıê

of

V?

ou

et

ie

of

c

it

e

0

t,

d

This

Gentleman named Layarino de Guazzagliotori: coufed ber to be cited before the tudge. From whom the deltwered ber felfe, by a fudden witty, and pleasant anfwer, and moderated a severe first Statute formerly made against women.

The fe venth Novell.

Wherein is declared, of what worth it is to confesse a. truth, with a facetious and witty excuse.

A Fter that Madam Fiammetta had given over speaking, and all the Auditory had sufficiently applauded the Schollers honest revenge, the Queene enjoyed Philostratus, to proceede on next with his Novell, which caused him to begin thus. Beleeve me Ladies, it is an excellent and commendable thing, to speake well, and to all purposes: but I hold it a matter of much greater worth, to know how to doe it, and when necessite doth most require it. Which a Genelewoman (of whom I am now to speake) was so wellenstructed in, as not onely it yeelded the Hearers mithestall contentment, but likewise delivered her from the danger of death, as (in few words) you shall heare telated.

In the Citic of Pirato, there was an Edict or Statute, no less blame worthy (to speake uprightly) than most severe and cruells, which (without making any distinction) gave strict command; that every woman should be burned with sire, whose husband found her in the acte of Adultery, with any secret or familiar friend, as one deserving to be thus abandoned, like such as prostunced their bodies to publike sale or hire. During the sharpe Edict, it fortuned that a Gentlewoman, who was raised Puill ppa, was sound inher Chamber one may, that he armes of a young Gentleman of the same City, in each Lazarino it Suarquightoteri, and by her come in share, called Ricallo de Pugliefe, shee loving the voin. It sillars, as her owns life, because hee was most complete in all perfections, and every way as

de a cay and acted to her,

This fight was foir kefome to Rinaldo, that, being overcome with extreame rage, he could hardly containe from running at him, with a violent intent to kil them both: but feate of his owne life caused his forbearance, meaning to be revenged by some better way. Such was the heate of his spleene and sury, as, setting assist as respect of his owne shame: he would needs prosecute for him to doe, although it extended to the death of his wife. Hercupon, having witnesses sufficient, to approve the guiltinesse of her offence: a day being appointed (without desiring any other counsels) he went in person to accuse her, & required justice against her.

The Gentlewoman, who was of a high and undantable spirit, as all such are, who have fixed their affection resolutely, and love upon a grounded deliberation : concluded, quite against the counsell and opinion of her Parents, kindred, and friends sto appeare in the Court, as deliring rather to die, by confessing the truth with a manly courage, than by denying it, and her love unto fo worthy a person as he was, in whose armes the chanced to be taken; to live bafely in exile with shame, as an eternall scandall to her race. So, before the Potestate, she made her appearance, worthily accompanied both with men and woman, all advising he to deny the act : but the not minding them or their perfualions, looking on the Judge with a constant countenance, and a voyce of fetled refolve, craved to know of him, what he demanded of her?

The Potestate well noting her brave carriage, her singular beauty and praise-worthy parts, her words apparantly withesting the height of her minde: began to take compassion on her, and doubted, least thee would confesse such matter, as should enforce him to pronounce the sentence of death against her. But shee boldly scorning all delayes, or any further protraction of time; demanded againe, what was her accusation?

Madam

CO

nie

her

tu₂

ver

the

mo

con

trat

onl

ner:

And

any

calle

bete

dice

of fo

But

may

name ail ti

pany

lingly

feltat

Madam, answered the Potestate, I am forry to tell you what needs I must, your husband (whom you see present here) is the complainant against you, avouching that he tooke you in the act of adultery with another man; and therefore he requireth, that, according to the rigour of our Statute here in force with us, I should pronounce sentence against you, and (consequently) the infiliction of death. Which I cannot doe, if you consessed not the fact, and therefore be well advised, how you answer me, and tell mee the truth, if it be as your

hasband accuseth you, or no.

c

y

ıt

0

0

d

O

99

n

n

The Lady, without any difmay or dread at all, pleafantly thus replied. My Lord, true it is, that Rinaldo is my husband, and that hee found me, on the night named, between the arms of Lagarine, where many times heretofore he hath embraced me, according to the mutuall love re-plighted together, which I deny not nor ever will. But you know well, and I am certain of it, that the Lawes enacted in any Countrey, ought to be common, and made with confent of them whom they doe concerne; which in this Edict of yours is quite contrary. For it is rigorous against none, but poore women only, who are able to yeeld much better fatisfactiongenerally, than remaineth in the power of men to doe. And moreover, when this Law was made, there was not any woman that gave confent to it, neither were they called to like or allow thereof: in which respect it may be tearmed, an unjust Law. And if you will, in prejudice of my body, & your own foule, be the executioner of so unlawfull an Edict, it lies in your power so to doe.

But before you proceede to pronounce any fentence, may it please you to favour me with one small request, namely, that you would demand of my husband, if at all times, and whensoever he took delight in my company, I ever made any curiosity, or came to him unwillingly. Whereto Rinaldo, without tarrying for the Pogestate to move the question, sodenly answered; that

(undoub-

Novell 7. The Sixt Day,

(undoubtedly) his wife at all times, and oftner than he could request it, was never sparing of her kindnesse, or put him off with any denials. Then the Lady, continuing on her former specehes, thus replied. Let me then demand of you, my Lord, being our Potestate and Judge, if it be so, by my Husbands owne free confession, that he hath alwayes had his pleasure of mee, without the least resusall in me, or contradiction; what should I doe with the over-plus remaining in my owne power, and whereof he had no neede? would you have me cast it away to Dogges? Was it not more fitting for me, to pleasure therewith a worthy Gentleman, who was even at deaths doore for my love, than (my husbands surfeitting, and having no neede of me) to let him lie languishing and die?

te

lo

ha

dif

(pe

a li

foo.

fion

lo m

2000

and

Fran

none

coun

as we

of mi appea stowe

blame

ever f

felfe,0

as a w

to come from a woman of such worth, the most part of the honourable Piratosians (both Lords and Ladies) being there present, who hearing her urge such a necessary question, cried out all aloud together with one voyce (after they had laughed their fill) that the Lady had said well, and no more than she might. So that, before they departed thence, by comfortable advice proceeding from the Potestate: the Edist (being reputed over-cruell) was modified, and interpreted to

Never was heard fuch an examination before, and

concerne them onely, who offered in jurie to their hufbands for money. By which meanes, Rinaldo standing as one confounded, for such a sooish and unadvised enterprize, departed from the Auditory and the Lady, not a little joyfull to be thus freed and delivered from the fire, returned bome with victory to her owne

houle.

Fresco da Celatico, counselled and advised his Neece Cesca; That if such as described to be looked on, were offensive to ner eyes, as the had often told him; she should forbeare extenses on any.

The eighth Novell.

In just scorne of such unsightly and unpleasing surly Stars, who imagin none to be faire or well-savoured, but themselves.

A L L the while Philofratus was recounting his Novell; it feemed, that the Ladies (who heard it) found themselves much moved thereat, as by their wanton bloud mounting up into their cheecks, it plainely appeared. But in the end, looking on each other with strange behaviour, they could not forbeare smiling which the Queene interrupting by a command of attention, turning to Madam Æmilia, willed her to follow next. When she, pussing and blowing, as if shee had beene newly awaked from sleepe, began in this manner.

Faire Beauties; My thoughts having wandred a great distance hence, and further than I can easily collect them together agains: in obedience yet to our Queene, Ishall report a much shorter Novell, than otherwise (perhaps) I should have done, if my minde had beene a little neerer home. I shall tell you the grosse fault of a foolish Damosell, well corrected by a witty reprehension of her Vnckle; if she had beene endued but with

fo much fence, as to have understood it.

10

ly

ce

e-

to

ul-

ng

(ed

dy,

om

ane

ould

An honest man, named Fresco da Celatico, had a good fulsome wench to his Neece, who for her folly and squemishnesse, was generally called Cesca, or nice Francesca. And although she had stature sufficient, yet none of the handsomesse, and a good hard savoured countenance, nothing neere such Angelicall beauties, as we have seene; yet she was endued with such height of minde, and so proud an opinion of her selfe, that it appeared as a custome bred in her, or rather agist befored on her by nature (though none of the best) to blame and despite both men and women, yea, whose ever she lookt on; without any consideration of ker selfe, she being as unsightly, ill shaped, and ugly faced, as a worse was very hardly to be found.

Nove'l. 8. The Sixt Day,

Nothing could be done at any time, to yeeld her liking or content: moreover, thee was fo waspith, nice, and squemish, that when the came into the royall court of France, it was hatefull and contemptible to her. Whensoever she went through the streets, every thing stunke and was notiome to her; so that she never did any thing but stop her nose; as if all men or women she met withall; and whatsoever else she lookt on, were shinking and offensive. But let us leave all further relation of her ill conditions, being every way (indeede) so bad, and hardly becomming any sensible body, that we cannot condemne them so much as we should.

It chanced upon a day, that the comming home to the house where her Vacle dwelt, declared her wonted scarvy and scornefull behaviour; swelling, puffing, and pouting extreamely, in which humor the sat down by her vackle, who desiring to know who did displease her, said. Why how now Franceseas what may the meast ning of this be? This being a solemne Feathvall day, what is the reason of your so soone returning home? She coily biting the lip, and bridesling her head, as if the had bin some mans Gelding, sprucely thus replied. Indeede you say true Vackle. I am come very early.

Indeede you fay true Vnckle, I am come very early, because, since the day of my birth, I never saw a City so pestered with unhansome people, both men and women, and worse this high Holiday, than ever I did observe before. I walked thorow some store of streets, and I could not see one proper man: and for the women, they are the most mishapen creatures, that, if God had made me such an one, I should be sory that ever I was borne. And being no longer able to endure such unpleasing sights; you will not think (Vncle) in what an anger I am come home. Fresco, to whom these stinking qualities of his Neece seemed so unsufferable, that hee could not (with patience) endure them any longer, thus short and quickly answered. Francesea, if all people of our City (both men and women) be so odious in

Si Si Ge

16

21

ar

co

ni.

for

of !

Fair of two make unfur clusion and be mall co

where hath b only fu there w thy eyes, and offensive to thy nose, as thou hast often reported to me: be advised then by my counsell. Stay still at home, and looke upon none but thy selfe onely, and then thou shalt be sure that they cannot displease thee. But she, being as emptic of wit as a pich-lesse cancy and yet thought her judgement to exceede Salomons, could not understand the least part of her Vnckles meaning, but stood as senselssee as a sheepe. Only the replied, that she would refort to some other part of the countrey, which is she found as weakely surnished of handsome people as here she did, she would conceive better of her selfe, than ever she had done before.

Signior Guido Cavalcante, with a foldine and witty anfroce, reprehended the rash folly of certaine Florentine Gentlemen, that thought to feorne and flout him.

The ninth Novell.

Notably discovering the great difference that is bet meen learning and ignorance, upon judicious apprehension.

When the Queens perceived, that Madam Æ milia was discharged of her Novell, and none remained now to speake next, but only her self, his priviledge alwayes remembred to be last, the began in this manner. Faire Company, you have this day disappointed mee of two Novels at the least, whereof I had intended to make use. Neverthelesse, you shall not imagine mee so unfurnished, but that I have less one in store; the conduston whereof, may minister such instruction, as will not be reputed impertinent: but rather of such matenial consequence, as better hath not this day past.

.

d

19

d

13

10

n

ıg

cc

.

0-

in

hy

Vnderstand then (most faire Ladies) that in former time, our City had many commendable customes in it; whereof we cannot say that poore one remaineth, such hath bin the too much wealth and covetous nesses, the only supplanters of all good qualities. Among many, there was one of note, that in many places of Florence, men of the best houses in every quarter, had a sociable

and neighbourly meeting, creating their company to confift of a certaine number, such as were able to supply their expences; as this day one, and to morrow another; and thus in a kinde of friendly course, each drily furnished the Table for the rest of the company. Oftentimes, they did honourto divers Gentlemen and strangers, upon their arrivall in our City, by inviting them into their affembly, and many of our worthiest Citizens besides; so that it grew to a customary use, and one especiall day in the yeare appointed, in memory of this so loving a meeting, when they would ride (triumphantly as it were) on horsebacke thorow the City, sometimes performing Tilts, Tourneyes, and other Martiall exercises, but they were reserved tor.

Feaft vall dayes.

Among which company, there was one called, Signier Betto Beanelefeht, who was earnefly defreus, to procure Signier Guido Cavalcante de Cavalcanti, to make one in their friendly fociety. And not without great reason: for over and beside his being one of the best Logitians as those times not yeelded a better: He was also a mest absolute natural Philosopher (which worthy qualities were little effeemed among thefe honett meeters) a very friendly Gentleman, fingularly well spoken, and whatsoever else was commendable in any man, was no way wanting in him, being wealthy withall, and able to returne equall honours, where he found them to be duly deserved, as no man therein could goe beyond him. But Signior Betto, notwithstanding his long continued importunitie, could not draw him into their affembly, which made him, and the rest of his company conceive, that the solitude of Guido, rettring himfelfe alwayes from familiar converfing with men, provoked him to many curious spetulations : and because he retained some part of the Epicurean Opinion, their vulgar judgement paffed on him, that his speculations tended to no other end, but only to finde out that which was never done,

fre ale

and and To ger apa

tob

dain you upo he t

had red of brain when

whe Al of un

Iwer

It chanced upon a day, that signior Guido departing from the Church of Saint Michaeld Horta, and paffir g along by the Adamari, to far as to Saint Johns Church, which evermore was his customary walke: many goodly Marble Tombes were then about the faid Church, as now adayes are at Saint Reparata, and divers more beside. He entring among the Collumbes of Porphiry, and the other Sepulchers being there, because the doore of the Church was shut: Signior Betto and his company, came riding from Saint Reparata, and elpying Signior Guido among the Graves and Tombes, faid. Come, let us goe make some jests to anger him. So putting the fours to their horses, they rode apace rowards him: and being upon him before hee perceived them, one of them faid. Guido thou refuseft to be one of our focietie, & feekest for that which never was : when thou haft found it, tell us, what wilt thou doe with it?

n

d

20

0

11

ne

łe

ch

0-

ly

in

hy

he

in

h-

10

nd

of

er.

11-

(11-

m,

nly

I

Guido sceing himselfe round engirt with them, fodainely thus replied : Gentlemen, you may use me in your owne house as you please. And serting his hand upon one of the Tombes (which was somewhat great) he tooke his rifing, and leapt quite over it on the further fide, as being of an agile and sprightly body, and being thus freed from them, he went away to his own lodging. They stood all like men amazed, strangely looking one upon another, and began afterward to murmure among themselves : That Guido was a man without any understanding, and the answer which he had made unto them, was to no purpole, neither favoured of any discretion, but meerely came from an empty braine, because they had no more to doe in the place where now they were, than any of the other Citizens, and Signior Guido (himfelfe) as little as any of them; whereto Signior Bette thus replied.

Alas Gentlemen, it is you your felves that are void of understanding : for, if you had but observed the an-

Novelleg. The Sixt Day,

fiver which he made unto us : he did honefly, and (in very few words) not onely notably expresse his owne wifedome, but also deservedly reprehend us. Because, if we observe things as we ought to doe, Graves and Tombes are the houses of the dead, ordained and prepared to be the latest dwellings. He told told us moreover, that although we have here (in this life) our habitations and abidings; yet thefe (or the like) must at last be our houses. To let us know, and all other foolish, indifereete, and unlearned men, that we are worfe than dead men, in comparison of him, and other men equall to him in skill and learning. And therefore, while we are here among the Graves and Monuments. it may well be faid, that wee are not farre from our owne houses, or how soone we shall be possessors of them, in regard of the frailty attending on us.

Then every one could fay, that Signior Guido had spoken nothing but the truth, and were much ashamed at their own folly, and thallow estimation which they made of Guido, defiring never more after to meddle with him fo groffely; and thanking Signier Betto, for . So well reforming their ignorance, by his much better

apprehension.

Fryer Onyon promised certaine houest people of the Countrey, to flew them a Feather of the fame Phanix, that was with Noah in his Arke. In stead whereof he found Coales, which he avouched to be those very coales wherwith the same Phanix was roafted.

The tenth Novell.

Wherin it may be observeed, what palpable abuses do meny times passe under the counterfeit Cloake of Religion.

WHen all of the had delivered their Novels Dioneus knowing, that it remained in him to relate the last for this day; without attending for any command (after he had imposed filence on them, that could not fufficiently commend the witty reprehension of Guide)

thu

the

Spea

stan

fron

to v

foot

Ran

giou

whi

let i

thar

com

it, th

fore

Cer

lage

Flor

mer

and

Sain

time

whic

gave whe

felve

the r

for,

nam

man

far n

in T

thos

petit

red h

thus he began. Wife and worthy Ladies, although by the priviledge you have granted, it is lawfull for me to speake any thing best pleasing to my selfer, yet notwithstanding, it is not any part of my meaning, to varry from the matter and method, whereof you have spoken to very good purpose. And therefore following your sootseps, I intend to tell you, how crastily, and with a Rampiar suddenly raised in his owne defence: a Religious Friar of Saint Automies Order, shunned a shame, which two will companions had prepared for him. Nor let it offend you, if irunne into more luge discounse, than this day hath beene used by any, for the apter compleating of my Novell-Because, if you will observe it, the Sun is as yet in the middest of heaven, and there-

fore you may the better forbeare me.

•

C

e

d

ed

ey

le

or

er

m-

at

nd

er-

ne-

0%.

eus

aft

af-

luf-

de)

hus

Certold, as (perhaps) you know, or have heard, is a Vil. lage in the vale of Etfa, and under the command of our Florence, which although it be but small . yet (in former times) it hath beene inhabited with Gentlemen, and people of especiall respect. A Religious Frint of Saint Anthonies Order, named Friar Onyna, had long time used thither, to receive the benevolent almes, which those charitably affected people in simplicitie gave him, and chiefely at divers dayes of the yeare, when their bounty and devotion would extend themselves more largely than at other seasons. And so much the rather, because they thought him to be a good Paflor, of holy life in outward appearance. and carried a name of nuch greater matter, than remained in the man indeed; befide, that part of the Countrey yeelded far more plentiful abundance of Onyons, than al other in Tufcany elfewhere, a kind of food greatly affected by those Friars, as men alwayes of hungry and good appetite. This Fryar Onyon was a man of little stature, red haire, a cheerefull countenance, and the world afforded not a more crafty companion, than he. Moreover, albeit hee had very little knowledge, wit, or learning,

learning, yet he was so prompt, ready, and voluble of fpeech, uttering often he knew not what himfelfe : that fuch as were not well acquainted with his qualities. supposed him to be a singular Rhetoritian, excelling either Cicero or Quintilian themselves ; and he was a goffip, friend, or dearely affected, by every one dwelling in these parts. According to his wonted custome. one time he went thither in the moneth of August, and on a Sunday morning, when all the dwellers thereabout, were prefent to heare Maffe, and in the chiefest Church above all the rest: when the Frier Cawtime convenient for his purpole, he advanced himselfe, and

began to speake in this manner.

Gentlemen and Gentlewomen, you know you have kept a commendable custome, in sending yearely to the poore brethren of our Lord Baron Saint Anthony, both of your Corne and other provision, some more, some leffe, all according to their power meanes, and devotion, to the end that bleffed Saint Anthony should be the more carefull of your Oxen, Sheepe, Affes, Swine, Pigs, and other cattle. Moreover, you have used to pay (especially such as have their names registred in our Fracernity) those duties which annually you fend unto us. For the collection whereof, I am lent by my Superiour, namely our Lord Abbot, and therefore (with Godsbleffing) you may com after noone hither, when you shall heare the Bels of the Church ring : then will I make a predication to you; you shall kisse the Crosse, and befide, because I know you all to be most devouce fervants to our Lord Baron Saint Anthony, in especial grace and favour, I will shew you a most holy and goodly Relique, which I my felie (long fince) brought from the holy Land beyond the feas. If you defire to know what it is, let mee tell you, that it is one of the Feathers of the same Phanix, which was in the Arke with the Patriarch Noah. And having thus fpoken, he became filent, returning backe to heate Maffe.

While

fe

hir

fay

Fe

for

fuci

Lip

Poe

Fry

and

Boy

fuch

onely

troub

finet

likete

Vertue

of Fra

he has

anlyve

While he delivered thefe and the like speeches, among the other people then in the Church, there were two threwde and craftie companions; the one, named John de Brageniero, and the other, Biagio Pizzino. Thele subtile fellowes, after they had heard the report of Fryer Onyons Relique : although they were his intimate friends, and came thither in his company; yet they concluded betweene themselves, to shewhim a tricke of Legierdumaine, and to fleale the Feather from him. When they had intelligence of Friar Onyons dining that day at the Caffle, with a worthy friend of his: no fooner was he fet at the Table, but away went they in al haft, to the Inne where the Frier frequented, with this determination, that Biegio should hold conference with the Friars Boy, winle his fellow ranfackt the Waller, to find the Feather, and carry it away with him, for a future observation, what the Friar would fay unto the people, when hee found the loffe of the Feather, and could not performe his promife to them.

The Friers Boy, whom some called Guccio Balena. some Guccio Imbrata, and others Guccio Porco, was fuch a knavish Lad, and had so many bad qualities, as Lippo Topo the cunning Painter, or the most curious Poeticall wit, had not any ability to describe them. Fryer Onyon himselfe did often observe his behaviour, and would make this report among his Friends. My Boy (quoth he) hath nine rare qualities in him, and fuch they are , as if Salomon, Arifotle, or Seneca, had onely but one of them: it were sufficient ro torment and trouble all their vertue, all their fenses, and all their fancticie. Consider then, what manner of man hee is like to be, having nine fuch rarities, yet voide of all vertue, wit, or goodnesse. And when it was demanded of Frier Onyon, what thefe nine rare conditions were ; he having them all ready by heart, and in rime, thus

answered .

h

10

be

e,

ay

in-

bu-

ith

nen

will

ffe,

ciall

and

ight

reto

the

the

fpu-

Aaffe.

Vhile

Boyes I have knowne and feene. And heard of many :

But.

For Lying, Layering, Lazineffe, For Facing, Filching, Filthineffe's For Care'effe, Graceleffe, all unthriftineffe, My Boy excelleto any.

Now, over and befide all thefe admirable qualities, he hach many more fuch fingularicies, which (in falvour towards him) I am faine to conceale. But that which I finile most at in him, is, that he would have a Wife in every place where hee commeth, yea, and a good house to boot too; for, in regard his beard beginneth to thew it felfe, rifing thicke in haire, blacke and amiable, he is verily perswaded, that all Women will fall in love with him; and if they refuse to follow him, he will in all hafte run after them. But tru'y he is a notable fervant to me, for I cannot speake with any one, and in never fo great fecrecy, but he will be fure to heare his part; and when any question is demanded of me, he stands in such awe & feare of my displeasure : that he will be fure to make the first answer, yea, or no, according as he thinketh it most convenient.

Now, to proceede where we left, Fryar Onyon having left this serviceable youth at his lodging, to see that no body should meddle with his commodities, especially his Wallet, because of the facred things therein contained: Guccio Imbrata, who as earneftly affected to be in the Kitchin, as Birds to hop from branch to branch,cf. pecially, when any of the Chamber-maides were there; espied one of the Hostesses Female attendants,2 groffe fat Trugge, low of stature, ill faced, and worse tormed: with a paire of brefts like two bumbards, fmelling loathformely of greafe and sweate; downe she descended into the Kitchin, like a Kite upon a peece of Carion. This Boy, or Knave, chuse whether you will

a

óf

Spe

vin

he

bey

brin

grea

been

or ha

and I

Con

mean

in his

body,

came f

or unfi

n to h

weene

Eluch :

andod

eleast o

nents, 1

ohis N

trfrom

ouldlin

murable

2

e.

ce

en

W

18

ny

to

ded

re:

or,

ving.

t no

cially

ntei-

file

Rile him, having carelelly left Friars Onyons Chamber doore open, and all the holy things fo much to be neglected, although it was then the moneth of August. when heate is in the highest predominance, yet hee would needs fit downe by the fire, and began to confer with this amiable creature, who was called by the name of Nuta.

Being fet close by her, he told her, that hee was a Gentleman by Atturneiship, that he had more millions of Crownes, than all his life time would ferve him to spend, beside those which he paied away daily, as having no convenient imploiment for them. Moreover, he knew how to Speake, and doe fuch things, as were beyond wonder and admiration. And, never remembring his old Friars Cowle, which was fo Inottic and greazie, that good store of kitchin stuffe might have beene boilyd out of it; and also a foule flovenly Truffe orhalfe doubler, all baudied with bouling, far, greazie, and lubbberly fweating, and other drudgeries in the Convent Kitchin, where hee was an Officer in the meanest credite. So that to describe this sweete youth inhislively colours, both for naturall perfections of body, and artificiall composure of his Garments:never came fowler filks out of Tartaria or India, more ugly arunfightly to be lookt upon. And for a further additim to his neate knavery, his breeches were forent beweene his legges, his shooes and stockings had beene tluch a mercilelle maffacre: that the gallantest 60m-Mandodor of Castile (though he had never so lately bin bein theast out of flavery) could have witht for better garh,cf. tents, than he; or make larger promifes, than hee did work ohis Nuta. Protesting to intitle her as his only, to free ints, a work work old live with him, be his Love, partaker of his preattromether of h neece of mirable infinuations: yet they coverted into finoke, as dd all

all such braggadochio behaviours doe, and he was as

wife at the ending, as when he began. Our former named craftie Companions, seeing Guccio Porce lo seriously employed about Nuta, were therewith not a little contented, because their intended labour was now more than halfe ended. And perceiving no contradiction to croffe their proceeding, into Friars Onyons chamber entred they, finding it ready open for their purpole; where the first thing that came into their hand in fearch, was the Wallet. When they had opened it, they found a small Cabinet, wrapped in a great many foldings of rich Taffata; and having unfolded it, a fine formall Key was hanging thereat; wherewith having unlockt the Cabinet, they found a faire feather of a Parrots taile, which they supposed to be the very fame, that hee meant to flew the people of certaldo. And truly (in those dayes) it was no hard matter to make them beleeve any thing , because the idle vanities of Ægypt, and those remoter parts, had not (as yet) beene scene in Tuscany, as since then they have beene in great aboundance, to the utter ruine (almost) of Italy.

And although they might be known to be very few, yet the inhabitants of the courry generally, understood little or nothing at all of them. For there, the pure simplicitie of their ancient Predecessours still continuing; they had not seen any Parrots, or so much as heard any speech of them. Wherfore the crafty conforts not a little joyfull of finding the Feather, tooke it thence with them, and because they would not leave the Cabinet empty. espying Char-coales lying in a corner of the chamber, they filled it with them, wrapping it upagaine in the Tassat, and in as demure manner as the found it. So, away came they with the Feather, neither seen or suspected by any one, intending now to hear what Fryar Onyon would say, upon the losse of his precious Relique, and finding the coales there placed in

CO

fan

the

tion

che

feve

Taf

the f

he b

les o

fead there of.

The simple men and women of the Countrey, who had beene at morning Masse in the Church, and heard what a wonderfull Feather they foould fee in the after noone ; returned in all haft to their houses, where one telling this newes to another, and goffip with goffip confulting there; they made the fhorter dinner, and afterward flocked in maine troopes to the Caftle, contending who thould first get entrance, such was their devotion to fee the holy Feather. Fryar Onyon having dined, and reposed a little after his wine, hee arole from the table to the window, where beholding what multitudes came to fee the Feather, hee affured himselfe of good store of money. Hereupon, he sent to his Boy Guccio Imbrata, that upon the Bels ringing, he thould come and bring the wallet to him. Which (with muchadoe the did, so soone as his quarrel was ended in the kirchin, with the amiable Chaber-maid Nuts, away then he went with his holy comodities : where he was no fooner arrived, but because his belly was ready to burft with drinking water, he fent him to the Church to ring the Bels, which not onely would warme the cold water in his belly, but likewise make him runas gaunt as a Grey-hound.

n-

la

to of

ard

the

had

ney

(al-

fim-

ing;

rd a-

t tor

with

binet

f the

up a-

the

either

hear

is pro

ed in

Th

When all the people were affembled in the Church together, Fryar Onyon (never miftrufting any injury offered to him, or that his close commodities had beene medled withall) began his predication, uttering a thousand lies to fit his purpose. And when he came to shew the feather of the Phænix (having first in great devotion finish the conclusion) he caused two goodly torches to be lighted, and ducking downe his head three severall times, before hee would so much as touch the Tafata, he opened it with much reverence. So soone as the Cabinet came to be seene, off went his Hood, lowly he bowed downe his body, and uttering especiall praises of the Phænix, and sacred properties of the wondtrfull Relique, the cover of the Cabinet being listed

dd 3

up, he faw the fame to be full of Coales. He could not suspect his Villaine boy to doe the deede, for he knew him not to be endued with fo much wit, onely he cutft him for keeeping it no better, and curft kimfelfe alfo. for repoling trult in fuch a careleffe knave, knowing him to be flothfull, disobedient, negligent, and void of all honest understanding or grace. Sodainely (without blufhing) left his loffe flould be differened, he lifted his lookes and hands to heaven, speaking out so loude, as every one might cafily heare him, thus: Othou omnipotent providence, for ever letthy power be praised. Then making fast the Cabinet againe, and turning himselfe to the people, with lookes expressing admirazion, he proceeded in this manner.

Lords, Ladies, and you the rest of my worthy Auditors: You are to understand, that I (being then very young) was fent by my Superiour, into those parts, where the Sun appeareth at his first rifing. And I had received charge by expresse command, that I should Tecke for (fo much as confifted in my power to doe) the especiall vertues and priviledges belonging to Porcellane, which although the boyling thereof be worth but little, yet it is very profitable to any but us. In regard whereof, being upon my journey, and departing from Venice, passing along the Borgo de Grecia, I proceeded thence (on horsebacke) through the Realme of Garbo, fo to Baldacca, till I came to Parione; from whence, mot without great extremitie of thirst, I arrived in

Sardignia.

But why doe I trouble you with the repetition of fo many Countries? I coasted on still, after I had put Saint Georges Arme, into Truffis, and then into Buffis, which are Countries much inhabited, and with great people. From thence I went into the Land of Lying, where I found flore of the Brethren of our Religion, and many other beside, who thunned all paine and labour, onely for the love of God, and cared as little for

I

P2

chi

ver

EDO

ver

Lor

ho!

who ther

But forme

rir

low

the (payr the paines and travels which other stooke, except some benefite arised thereby to them; nor spend they any money in this Countrey, but such as is without stamp. Thence I went into the Land of Abruzzi, where the men and women go in Galoches-over the Mountaines, and make them garments of their Swines guts. Not farre from thence, I found people that carried bread in their staves, and wine in satchels, when parting from them, I arrived among the Mountaines of Bacchus, where all the waters run downe with a deepe fall, and in short time, I went on so farre, that I sound my selfe to be in India Passinaca; where I (weare to you by the holy habit which I were on my body, that I saw Serpensslie, things incredible, and such as was never seene before.

But because I would be loath to lie, so soon as I departed thence, I met with Mafo de Saggio, who was a great Merchant there, and whom I found cracking Nuts, and felling Cockles by retale. Nevertheleffe, all this while I could not find what I fought for, and therfore I was to paffe from hence by water, if I intended to travell thither, and so in returning backe, I came into the Holy Land, where coole fresh bread in fould for foure pence, & the hot is given away for nothing. There I found the venerable Father (blame me not I beseech you) the most worthy Patriarch of Ierusalem, who for the reverence due to the habite that I weare, and love to our Lord Baron S. Anthony, would have mee to fee all the holy Reliques, which hee had there under his charge: whereof, there were fo many, as if I should recount them all to you, I never could come to a conclusion. But yer, not to leave you discomforted, I will relate lome fevy of them to you.

m

ed

c,

in

So

off

Fin,

cat

INES

on,

lla-

for

the

First of all, he shewed me the finger of the holy Ghost so whole and perfect, as ever it was. Next the nose of the Cherubin, which appeared to S. Francis; with the payring of the nash of a Seraphin; and one of the ribbes of Verbum care, fastened to one of the Windowes, covered with the holy garments of the Catholike Faith. Then he tooke me into a darke Chappell, where he shewed mee divers beames of the Starte that appeared to the three Kings in the East. Alio a Viall of Saint Michaels sweate, when he combatted with the divell: And the jaw-bone of dead Lazarus, with manic other precious things beside. And because I was liberall to him, giving him two of the Plaines of Monte Morello, in the Vulgar Edition, and some of the Chapters del Caprezto, which he had long laboured in search

of he bestowed upon me some of his Reliques.

First he gave me one of the eye-teeth of Santa Crux; and a little Viall, filled with some part of the found of those Belles, which hung in the sumptuous Temple of Salomon. Next he gave me the feather of the Phoenix, which was with Noah in the Arke, as before I told you, And one of the Woodden Pattens, which the good Saint Gerrard de Magnavilla used to weare in his travels, and which I gave (not long fince) to Gerrardo di Bouly at Florence, where it is respected with great devotion. Moreover, he gave me a few of those Coales, wherewith the Phoenix of Nosb was roafted; all which things I brought away thence with mee. Now, most true it is, that my Superiour would never fuffer mee to thew them any where, untill he was faithfully certified, whether they were the fame precious Reliques, or no. But perceiving by fundry miracles which they have wrought, and Letters of fufficient credence received from the reverend Patriarch, that all is true, hee hath granted me permission to shew them, and because I would not trust any one with matters of such moment, I my felfe brought them hither with me.

Now I must tell you, that the Feathers of the same Phoenix, I conveied into a small Cabinet or Casket, because it should not be bent or broken. And the coales wherewith the said Phoenix was roasted, I put into an-

other

th

C

another Casket, in all respects so like to the former, that many times I have taken one for another. As now at this instant it hath beene my fortune; for, imagining that I brought the Casket with the Feather, I mistooke my felie, and brought the other with the Coales. Wherein doubtleffe I have not offended, because I am certaine, that we of our Order doe not any thing, but it is ordered by divine direction, and our bieffed Patron the Lord Baron Saint Anthony. And fo much the rather , because about a senight hence , the Feaft of Saint Anthony is to be folemnized, against the preparation whereof, and to kindle your zeale with the greater fervencie: hee put the Casket with the coales into my hand, meaning to let you fee the Feather, at some fitting season. And therefore my bleffed sonnes and daughters, put off your Bonnets, and come hither with devotion so looke upon them. But first let me tell you, that wholoever is marked by any of these coales, with the figure of the Croffe: hee or free shall live all this years happily, and no fire whatfoever shall come necre to touch or hurt them. So finging a folemne Autheme in the praise of Saint Anthony, hee unveiled the Casket, and thewed the coales openly.

The simple multitude, having (with great admiration and reverence) a long while beheld them, they thronged in crouds to Friar Onyon, giving him farre greater offerings, than before they had, and entreating him to marke them each after other. Whereupon, hee taking the coales in his hand, began to marke their garments of white, and the reiles on the womens heads, with Crosses of no meane extendure: affirming to them, that the more the coales wasted with making those great crosses, the more they still encreased in the Cas-

ket, as often before he had made triall.

0

0.

re

d

1

E,

ne

et,

cs

m.

cr

In this manner, having croffed all the Gertaldanes (to his great benefit) and their abuse; he smiled at his sodaine and dexterious devise, in mockery of them, dd 4 who

who thought to have made a fcorne of him, by dispossessing him of the Feather. For Brogeniero and Pizzino, being present at his Learned Predication, and having heard what a cunning shift he found, to come off cleanely, without the least detection, and all delivered with such admirable protestations: they were faine to for lake the Church, least they should burst with laughing.

But when all the people were departed and gone, they met Friar Onyon at his Inne, where closely they discovered to him, what they had done, delivering him his Feather againe: which the yeare following, did yeeld him as such money, as now the Coales had

done.

This Novellafforded equall pleafing to the whole company, Friar Onyons Sermon being much commended, but especially his long Pilgrimage, and the Reliques hee had both seene, and brought home with him. Afterward, the Queene perceiving, that her reigne had now the full expiration, graciously she arose, and taking the Crowne from off her owne head, placed it on the head of Dioneus, saying, It is high time Dioneus, that you should taste part of the charge & paine, which poore women have felt and undergone in their Soveraigntic and government: wherefore, be you our King, and rule us with such awefull authoritie, that the ending of our dominion may yeelde us all contentment. Dioneus being thus invested with the Crowne, returned this answer.

I make no doubt bright Beauties but you many times have feen a better King among the Cheffe-men, than I am. But yet of a certainty if you would be obedient to me, as you ought in dutie unto a true King: I should grant you a liberall freedome of that, wherein you take the most delight, and without which, our choisest defires can never be compleate. Neverthelesse, I meane, that my government shall be according to mine owne

minde.

CE

fhi

fad

minde So, causing the Master of the Houshold to be called for, as all the refl were wont to doe for conference with him : hee gave him direction, for all things fitting

the time of his Regiment, and then proceeded. Honest Ladies, we have already discoursed of varia-

ble devifes; and fo many feverall manners of humane . industry, concerning the bufinesse wherewith Licifea came to acquaint us : that her very words, have minifired me matter, fufficient for our morrows coference, or elfe I ftand in doubt, that I could not have devised a more convenient Theame for us to talke on. She (as you have all heard) faid, that thee had not any neigh -. bour, who came a true Virgin to her Husband, and added moreover, that face knew fome others, who had beguiled their Husbands, in very cunning and craftie manner. But fetting afide the first part, concerning the proofe of children, I conceive the fecond to be more apt for our intended argument. In which respect, my will is (feeing Licifea hath given us lo good an occafion) that our discoursing to morrow, may onely concerne fuch flie cunning and deceits, as women have heretofore used, for fatisfying their owne appetites, and beguiling their owne Husbands, without their knowleege, or fulpition, & cleanly escaping with them, or no. .

h

C

it

c-

g,

n-

ıt.

ed

ics

an

to

old

akc

de-

nc,

vnc

de.

This argument feemed not very pleasing to the La dies, and therefore they urged an alteration thereof, to some matter better futing with the day, and their difcourling: whereto thus he answered. Ladies, I know as well as your felves, why you would have this inflant argument altered; but to change me from it you have no power, confidering the feafon is fuch, as thicking all(both men and women) from medling with any diffionest action; it is lawfull for us to fpeake of what wee please. And know you not, that through me fad occasion of the time, which now over ruleth us, the ludges have forfaken their venerable benches, the Layes (both Divine and Humane) ceasing, granting

dd 5

ampl:.

The Sixt Day,

ample license to every one, to doe what best agreeth with the conservation of life? Therefore, if your honesties doe straine themselves a litte, both in thinking or speaking, not for prosecution of any immodest deed, but onely for familiar and blamestise entercourse: I cannot devise a more convenient ground, at least that carrieth apparant reason, for reproofe of perils, to ensue by any of you. Moreover, your company, which hath beene most honest, since the first day of our meeting, to this instant: appeareth nor any jot to be difgraced, by any thing either said or done, neither shall

be (I hope) in the meanest degree.

And what is he, knowing your choise and vertuous dispositions. So powerfull in their owne prevailing, that wanton words cannot misguide your wayes, no not the terrour of death it selfe, that date infinuate a distempered thought? But admit, that some slight or shallow judgements, hearing you(perhaps sometimes) talke of such amorous sollies, thould therefore suspitiously imagine you to be faultie, or else you would be more sparing of speech? Their wit and censure are both alike, savouring rather of their owne vile nature, who would brand others with their basebred imperfections. Yet there is another consideration beside, of some great injurie offered to my honour, and I know not how you can acquit your selves.

I that have beene obedient to you all, and borne the heavy load of your businesse, having now (with full consent) created mee your King, you would wrest the law out of my hands, & dispose of my authority as you please. Forbeare (gentle Ladies) all frivolous suspitions, more fit for them that are full of bad thoughts, than you, who have true Vertue shining in your eyes; and therefore, let every one freely speake their minde,

according as their humours best pleaseth them.
When the Ladies heard this, they made answer, that
all should be answerable to his minde. Whereupon the

King

for

Wit

the

T

mol

Wed

eft p

King gave them all leave to dispose of themsalves till Suppertime. And because the Sun was yet very high, in regard all the re-counted Novels had beene fo fhort: Dieneus went to play at the Tables with another of the young Gen: lemen, and Madam Eliza, having withdrawne the Ladies afide , thus fpake unto them. During the time of our being heere, I have often beene defirous to let you fee a place somewhat neere at hand, which I suppose you have never seene, it being called The Valley of Ladies. Till now, I could not finde any convenient time to bring you thither, the Sunne continuing still aloft, which firteth you with the apter leafure, and the fight (I am fure) can noway discontent you.

11

he

0.7 ti-

15, 3 3

de,

hat

the

ing

The Ladies replied, they were ready to walke with her thither : and calling one of their women to atend on them, they fet on, without fpeaking a word to any of the men. And within the distance of halfe a mile, they arrived at the Valley of Ladies, whereinto they entred by a strait passage at the one side, from whence there issued forth a cleare running River. And they found the faid Valley to be fo goodly and pleafant, cfpecially in that feafon, which was the hottest of all the yeare; as all the world was no where able to yeeld the like. And, as one of the faid Ladies (fince then) related to me, there was a plaine in the Valley fo directly round, as if it had beene formed by a compasse, yet rather it resembled the Workemanship of Nature, than tobe made by the hand of man : containing in circuite fomewhat more than the quarter of a mile, invironed with fixe small hills, of no great height, and on each of. them flood a little Palace, shapen in the fashion of Castles.

The ground-plots descending from those hills or mountaines, grewleffe and leffe by variable degrees, as we observe at entring into our Theaters from the highelt part to the lowest, succinel to narrow the circle

by order. Now, concerning these ground-plots, or lide meadowes, those which the Sun Southward looked on, were full of Vines, Olive-trees, Almond-trees, Cherry-trees, and Figge-trees, with divers other Trees befide, so plentifully bearing fruites, as you could not discerne a hands bredth of loffe. The other Mountaines, whereon the Northren windes blow, were curioufly covered with small Thickets, or Woods of Oakes, Afhes, and other Trees fo greene and fraite, as it was impossible to behold fairer. The goodly plaine it selfe, not having any other entrance, but where the Ladies came in, was planted with Trees of Firre, Cipreffe, Laurel, and Pines, so fingularly growing in formall order, as if some artificiall or cunning hand had planted them, the Sun hardly piercing through their branches, from the top to the bottome, even at the highest, or any part of his course.

All the whole field was richly spred with grasse, and such varietie of delicate Flowers, as Nature yeelded out of her plenteous Store-house. But that which gave no lesse delight than any of the rest, was a small running Brooke, descending from one of the Vallies, that devided two of the little hils, and feil directly through a Veine of the intire Rocke it selfe, that the fall and murmure thereof was most delightfull to heare, seeming all the way in the descent, like Quicke-silver, weaving it selfe into artificiall workes, and arriving in the plane beneath, it was there received into a small. Channell, swiftly running through the midst of the plaine, to a place where it staied, and shaped it selfe into a Lake or Pond, such as our Citizens have in their Orchards or Gardens, when they please to make use of

CO

in

bei

run

han

ther

their

garn

turni

Sive (

nen

ling th

three !

Pampi

Att

Such a commodity.

This Pond was no deeper, than to reach the breast of a man, and having no mud or soyle in it, the bottome thereof shewed like small beaten gravell, with pretty pibble stones intermixed, which some that had nothing

nothing elic to doe, would fit downe and count them as they lay, as very eafily they might. And not onely was the bottome thus apparantly feene, but also such plensie of Fishes swimming every way, as the minde was never to be wearied in looking on them. Nor was this water bounded in with any bankes, but only the sides of the Medow, which made it appears the more sightly, as it arose in swelling plenty. And alwayes as it superabounded in his course, least it should overflow disorderly: it fell into another Channell, which conveying it along the lower Valley, ran forth to water

other needefull places.

h

c-

in.

all

n-

of

aft

ot-

had

ing

When the Ladies were arrived in this goodly Valley, and upon advised viewing it, had sufficiently commended it : in regard the heate of the day was greate, the place tempting, and the Pond free from the fight of any they refolved there to bathe themselves. Wherefore they fent the waiting Gentlewoman to have a diligent eye on the way where they entred, least any one thould chance to fteale upon them. All feaven of them being ftript naked, into the water they went, which hid their delicate white bodies, like as a cleare Glasse concealeth a Damaske Rose within it. So they being in the Pond, and the water nothing troubled by their being there, they found much prety pastime together, running after the Fishes, to catch them with their hands, but they were over-quicke and cunning for them. After they had delighted themselves there to their owne contentment, and were cloathed with their garments, as before: thinking it fit time for their returning backe againe, least their overlong flay might give offence, they departed thence in an eafie pace, doing nothing elfe all the way as they went, but extolling the Valley of Ladies beyond all comparison.

At the Palace they arrived in a due houre, finding the three Gentlemen at play, as they left them, to whom Rampinea pleafantly thus spake, Now trust me gallants,

this

The Sixt Day,

this day we have very cunningly beguiled you. How now? aniwered Dioneus, begin you first to act, before you Speake? Yestruly Sir, replied Madam Pampinea: Relating to him at large, from whence they came, what they had done there, the beautie of the place, and the diffance thence. The King (upon her excellent report) being very defirous to fee it; fodainely commanded Supper to be ferved in , which was no fooner ended, but they and their three fervants (leaving the Ladies) walked on to the Valley, which when they had confidered, no one of them having ever beene there before; they thought it had beene the Paradife of the world.

They bathed themselves there likewise, as the Ladies formerly had done, and being re-vefted, returned home to their Lodgings, because darke night drew on apace : but they found the Ladies dancing, to a Song which Madam Fiammette fung. When the dance was ended, they entertained the time with no other difcourse, but only concerning the Valley of Ladies, wheref they all spake liberally in commendations. Wherupon, the King called the Mafter of the Houshold, giving him command, that (on the morrow) dinner should be ready betimes, and bedding to be thence carried, if any

defired rest at mid-time of the day.

All this being done, varietie of pleasing Wines were brought, Banquetting stuffe, and other dainties; after which they fell to dancing And Pamphilus, having received command, to begin a special dance, the King turned himselfe to Madam Eliza, speaking thus. Faire Ladie, you have done me so much honour this day, as to deliver me the Crowne : in regard whereof, be you this night the Miftreffe of the Song; and let it be fuch as best may please your selfe. Whereupon Madam Eliza with a modest blush arising in her face, replied; That his will thould be fulfilled, and then (with a delicate

voyce) the began in this manner.

Deli

Relea

Such

Be no

The Song.

The CHORVS fung by all.

LOVE, if I can scape free from forth toy hold, Beleeve it for a truto,

Never more shall try falfood me enfold.

When I was young, I entred first thy fights, Supposing there to finde a solemne peace: I three off all my Armes, and with delights Fed my poore hopes, as still they did encrease. But like a Tyrant, full of rancorous bate,

Thou tooks advantage:
And I fought refuge, but it was too hate.
Love, if I can scape fier, &c.

But being thus surprized in thy snares, To my missfortune, thou mads me her slave. Was onely borne to seede me with despaires, And keepe me dying in a living grave, For I saw nothing daily fore mine eyes,

But rackes and tortures; From which I could not get in any wife. Love, if I can scape free, &c.

n,

2.

ny

ere

ter

re-

ing

aire

you

luch

liza

That

icate

The

My fighes and teares I vented to the mindes For none mould beare, or pitty my complaints; My torments fill encreased in this kinde, And more and more I felt these sharpe restraints. Release me now at last from forth this hell.

Affwage thy rigour, Delight not thus in cheelty to dwell. Love, if I can feape free, & c.

If this thou wilt not grant, be yet fo kinde,
Releafe me from those worse than service bands,
Which new vaint hopes have bred, wherein i finde,
Such violent seares, as comfort quite with stands.
Be now (at length) a little mov'd to pitty:
Be it never so little:

Or in my death liften my Swan-like Ditty.

Love.

The Seventh Day,

Loves if I can scape free from forth thy hold, Beleeve it for a truth, Neve, more shall thy falshood me exfold.

After that Madam Eliza had made an end of her Song which the fealed up with an heart breaking fight they all face amazedly wondering at her moanes, not one among them being able to conjecture, what should be the reason of her singing in this manner. But the King being in a good and pleasing temper, calling Tindaro, commanded him to bring his Bagge-pipe, by the found whereof they danced divers dances : and a great part of the night being spent in this manner, they all gave over, and peparted to their Chambers.

The Seventh Day.

Whenthe Affembly being met togecher, and under the Regiment of Dioneus : the Discourses are diretted, for the discoverie of such policies and deceits, as women have used for beguiling of their Husbands, citier in respect of their love, or for the prevention of some biame or feandall, escaping without fight, knowledge, or other wife.

The Indu dion to the Dayes Difcourfes.

LL the Starres were departed out of the East, but onely that, which we commons ly call bright Lucifer, or the Day Starre, gracing the morning very glorioufly:

when the Mafter of the Houshold, being rifen, went with all the provision, to the Valley of Ladies, to make every thing in due and decent readineffe, according as his Lord over-night had commanded him, After which departure of his, it was not long before the King arole, being awaked with the noise which the carriages made; and when he was up, the other two Genelemen and

Sate

ner

in t talke

in as

harm

Value ding :

enclo

lomet

led, we

that w

times,

the Ladies were quickly ready fooneafter. On they fet rowards the Valley, even as the Sunne was rifing: and all the way as they went, never before had they heard fo many sweete Nightingales, and other pretty Birds melodiously finging, as they did this morning; which keeping them company throughout the journey, they arrived at the Valley of Ladies, where it seemed to them, that infinite Quires of delicate Nightingales, and other sweete singing Birds had purposely made a meeting, even as it were to give them a glad welcome thither.

Divers times they walked about the Valley, never fatisfied with viewing it from one end to the other; because it appeared farre more pleasing unto them, than it had done the precedent day: and because the dayes splendour was much more conforme to the beauty thereof. After they had broken their fast, with excellent Wines and Banqueting ftuffe, they began to tune their Instruments and fingsbecause (therein) the sweet Birds should not excell them, the Valley (with delicate Echoes) answering all their notes. When dinner time drew neare, the Tables were covered under the fpreading trees, and by the goodly ponds fide, where they fate downe orderly by the Kings direction; and all dinner while, they faw the Fishes swimme by huge shoales in the Pond, which sometimes gave them occasion to talke, as well as gaze on them.

d,

0-

er

me

02:

rre,

illy:

went

make

ng as

which

rofe,

made;

n and

When dinner was ended, and the Tables withdrawn, in as jocond manner as before, they renued again their, harmonious finging. In divers places of this pleafant-Valtey, were goodly field-beds readily furnished, according as the Master of the Houshold gave instruction, teaclosed with Pavillions of costly stuffes, such as are sometimes brought out of France. Such as were disposed, were licensed by the King to take their rest. & they that would not, he permitted them to their worted palimes, each according to their minds. But when they

WCTC

ovell.r. The Seventh Day,

were risen from sleepe, and the rest from their other exercises, it seemed to be more than halfe time, that they should prepare for talke and conference. So, fitting downe on Turky Carpets, which were spred abroad upon the greene grale, and close by the place where they had dined; the King gave command, that Madam Amilia should first begin, whereto shee willingly yeelding obedience, and expecting fuch filent artention, as formerly had bin observed, thus she began.

John of Lorraine heard one knocke at his doore in the night time, whereupon he awaked his wife Monna Tell a She made him beleeve, shat it was a Spirit which knocked at the doore, and fo they arose, going both together to conjure the Spirit with a prayer ; and afterwards, they heard no more knocking.

The first Novell.

Reprehending the simplicity of some sottish Husbands: And discovering the manton subtileties of some women, to compaffe their unlawfull defires.

be) you may by the diligent observation of my Novell,

Y Gracious Lord (quoth Madam Æmilis)

It it had beene a matter highly pleafing me, thatany other (rather than my felf /fhould have begun to speake of this argument, which it hath pleased you to appoint. But seeing it is your Highnelle pleasure, that I must make a passage of affurance for all the rest; I will not be irregular, because obedience is our chiefe Article. I shall therefore (Gras cious Ladies) ftrive to Speake Something, which may be w'advantageable to you hereafter, in regard, that if other women be as fearefull as we, especially of Spirits, of which all our fexe have generally beene timorous (although, upon my credite, I know not what they are, nor never could meete with any, to tell me what they

learne a wholesome and holy prayer, very availeable,

of Br

raine:

elle be

gory,

was m

vers,

la, and

their m

and of precious power, to conjure and drive them away, whenfoever they shall presume to assault you in any place.



he ed to

di:

me, ould ent, it is e of aule

ay be

other

s (al-

are,

they

ovell,

able

and

There dwelt sometime in Florence, and in the street of Brancazio, a woollen Weaver, named Iohn of Lortaine; one more happy in his Art, than wise in any thing else beside: because, savouring somewhat of the Gregory, and sin very deede) little lesse than an Ideot; He was many times made Captain of the Woollen-Weavers, in the quarters belonging to Santa Maria Novella, and his house was the Schoole or receptacle, for all their meetings and affemblies. Hee had divers other pretty

petty Offices beside, by the dignitie and authority whereof, he supposed himselse much exalted or elevated, above the common pitch of other men. And this humour became the more tractable to him; because he addicted himselse offententimes (as being a man of an easie inclination) to be a benefactor to the holy Fathers of Santa Maria Novella, giving (beside his other charitable almes) to some one a paire of Breeches, to another a Hood, and to another an whole Habite. In reward whereof they taught him (by heart) many wholesome prayers, as the Pater noster in the vulgar tongue, the Song of Saint Alexis; the Lamentation of Saint Bernard, the Hymne of Madam Matisda, and many other such like matters, which hee kept charily, and repeated usually, as rending to his soules salvation.

This man, had a very faire and love I wife, named Monna Tessa, the daughter of Manuscio della Cuentia, wise and well advised; who knowing the simplicitie of her husband, and affecting Frederigo di Neri Pegoloti, who was a comely young Gentleman, si esh, and in the slower of his time, even as the was, therefore they argreed the better together. By meanes of her Chamber, maide, Frederigo and she met often together, at a Countrey Farme of John of Lorraynes, which hee had neere to Florence, and where she used to lodge all the Summer time, called Camerata, whither John resorted sometimes to supper, and lodged for a night, returning, home againe to his Lity house the next morning; yet often he would stay there longer with his owne companions.

Frederigo, who was no meane man in his Miltresses favour, and therefore these private meetings the more welcome to him; received a summons, or assignation from her, to be there on such an night, when her husband had no intent of comming thither. There they supped merrily and (no doubt) did other things, not thing appertaining to our purpose, she both acquain-

ing,

Io

he

on

Fi

at :

mai

reft

Moi

dref

com

whe:

fligh

vilio

the n

maid

ino (

Wine

her G

a one

ting, and well instructing him, in a dozen (arthe least) of her Husbands devour prayers. Nor did she make any account, or Frederigo either, that this should be the last time of their meeting, because (indeed) it was not their suff : and therfore they set downe an order and conclusion together (because the Chambermaide must be no longer the messenger) in such manner as you shall heare.

Frederigo was to observe especially, that alwaies when he went or came from his owne house, which stood much higher than Iohn of Lorayaer did, to looke upon a Vine, closely adjoyning to her house, where stood the scull of an Asses head, advanced upon an high pole, and when the face thereof looked towards Florence, he might safely come, it being an assured signe, that Iohn kept at home; and if he found the doore sast thut, he should softly knocke three severall times, and thereen be admitted entrance. But if the face stood towards Fiesola; then he might not come, for it was the signe of Iohns being there, and there might be no medling at all.

r

ıd

y,

n,

ed

ia,

of

itt,

the

1 24

ber.

at 3

had

the

rted

ning

syct

com-

reffes

more

ation

r hul-

: they

, no

quain-

ting

Having thus agreed upon this conclusion, and had many merry meetings together: one night above the reft, where Frederigo was appointed to Suppe with Monna Teffa, who had made ready two fat Capons, dreft in most daintie and most delicate manner : it fell out fo unfortunately, that Iohn (whose Kue was not to come that night) came very late, yet before Frederigo, wherewith the being not a little offended, gave John 2 light Supper, of Lard, Bacon, and such like coarse proulion, because the other was kept for a better gueft, In the meane time, and while John was in Supper, the maide (by her Mistresses direction) had converghed the two Capons, with boyled Egges, Bread and a Bottle of Wine (all folded up in a faire cleane table cloth) into her Garden, that had a paffage to it, without entring into the house, and where thee had divers times supe with

with Frederigo. She further willed the Maide, to fet all those things under a Peach-tree, which adjoyned to the fields fide: but, fo angry the was at her husbands unexpected comming, that the forgot to bid her tarry there, till Frederigoes comming, and to tell him of Johns being there : as also, to take what he found pre-

pared ready for his Supper.

John and the being gone to bed together, and the Maide likewise, it was not long after, before Frederigo came, and knocking once foftly at the doore, which was very neere to their lodging Chamber , John heard the noile, and so did his wife. But to the end, that Tohn might not have the least scruple of suspicion, thee seemed to be falt asleepe; and Frederigo pansing a while, according to the order directed, knockt agains the second time. Tohn wondring thereat very much, jogd his wife a little, and faid to her : Teffa, hearest thou nothing? Me thinkes one knocketh at our doore. Monna Teffa, who was better acquainted with the knocke, than plaine honest meaning John was, diffembling as if the awaked out of a drowfie dreame, faid: Alas Husband, dost thou know what this is? In the name of our bleffed Lady, be not afraid, this is but a Spirit which haunts our Countrey houses, whereof I have often told thee, and it hath many times much difmaied me, living here alone without thy comfort. Nay, fuch hath beene my feare, that in divers nights paft, fo foone as I heard the knockes : I was feigne to hide my felfe in the bed over head and cares (as we usually fay) never daring to be so bold, as to looke out, untillit was broad open day. Arife good wife (quoth John) and if it be fuch a Spirit of the Countrey, as thou talkell of never be afraide; for before we went to bed, I faid the Telucis, the Intemerata, with many other good prayer beside. Moreover, I made the signe and shape of the Croffe at every corner of our bed, in the name of th Father, Sonne, and holy Ghoft, so that no doubt at 2

n

fo

pre

lay

Ion

get

Was

and

out, atten

W

faid to

25] (h

you. I

16

ch

rd

nat

hee

3 2

a.ne

uch,

arest

.5700

the

ffem.

nid:

nthe

a Spi-

I have

maied

y, fuch

aft, fo

ide my

illy (ay) untill it

bn) and

Ikel of

faid the

prayer pe of the ne of the

need

acede to be made, of any power it can have to hurt or touch us.

Monna Teffa, because (perhaps) Frederigo might receive some other suspition, and so enter into distaste of her by anger of offence: determined to arise indeede, & toler him coverely understand, that loin was there, and therefore faid unto her husband. Beleeve me Iohn, thy counfell is good, and every one of thy words hath wifedome in it:but Ihold beft for our own fafety, then being heere, ; rhat wee should conjure him quite away, to the end he may never more haunt our house; Conjure him wife? quoth tohn , By what meanes? And how? Be patient good man (quoth Teffa) and I will inftru& thee. I have learned an excellent kinde of conjuration; for, the last weeke, when I went to procure the Pardone at Fiefola, one of the holy recluse Nuns, who (indeed John) is my indeared Sifter and Friend, and the most fanctimonious in life of them all; perceiving me to be troubled and terrified by Spirits staught me a wholesome and holy prayer, and protested withall, that the had often made experiment thereof, before the became a Recluse, and found it (alwayes) a present helpe to her. Yet never durst I adventure to effay it, living here by my selfe all alone : but honest lohn, feeing thou art here with me, we will go both together, and conjure this Spirit. John replied, that hee was very willing; and being both up, they went faire and foftly to the doore, where Frederigo flood fill without, and was growne somewhat suspitious of his long attendance.

When they were come to the doore, Monna Teffa faid to Iohn: Thou must cough and spee, at such time as I shall bid thee. Well (quoth Iohn) I will not faile you. Immedediatly she began her prayer in this maner.

Spirit, that walkest thus in the night, Poore Countrey people to affright:

Thou hast mistane thy marke and aime, The head food right , but lohn home came ; And therefore thou must packe away, For I have nothing e'fe to fay: But to my Garden get thee gone, Vnder the Peach-tree stands alone, There halt thou finde two Capons dreft, And Egges laide in mine owne Hennes nelt. Bread, and a Bottle of good wine, All wrapt up in a cloath most fine. Is not this good Goblins fare? Packe and fay you have your share's

Not doing harme to lohn or me, Who this night keepes me company.

No fooner had the ended her devoute conjuring prayer, but the faid to her husband : Now 10im, cough, and fpet : which Tobn accordingly did. And Frederigo, being all this while without, hearing her witty conjuration of a Spirit, which he himselfe was supposed to be, being rid of his former jealous suspition: in the middest of all his melancholy, could very hardly refraine from laughing, the jeast appeared so pleasing to him . But when John cought and fpet, foftly he faid to himselfe: When next thou spetst, spet out all thy teeth.

The woman having three severall times conjured the Spirit, in such manner as you have already heard; returned to bed againe with her husband: and Frederigo, who came as perswaded to sup with her, being supperleffe all this while; directed by the words of Monna Teffa inher prayer, went into the Garden. As the foore of the Peach-tree, there he found the linnen cloth, with the two hot Capons, Bread, Egges, and a Bottle of Wine in it, all which he carried away with heart, him, and went to Supper at better leafure. Oftentimes Red efterward, upon other meetings of Frederigo and thee

rogether,

oth

the

Was

Nek

proto

dies '

which

ifyou

ftrang

(upon

therefo

together, they laughed heartily at her enchantment,

and the honeft beleefe of filly John.

I cannot deny , but that some doe affirme, that the woman had turned the face of the Affes head towards Fiefoia, and a Countrey traveller passing by the Vine, having a long piked staffe on his necke : the staffe, (by chance) touched the head, and made it turne divers times about, and in the end faced Florence, which being the call for Frederigoes comming, by this meanes he was disappointed. In like manner some say, that Monna Teffacs prayer for conjuring the Spirit, was in this order.

Spirit, Spirit, goe thy way, And come againe some other day . It was not I that turnd the head But some other. In our bed Are Iohn and 1 : Goe from our doore, And fee thou trouble us no more.

ng h,

go,

juto the

TC-

g to

d to shy

ured

eardi

rede-

being

ds of

n. As

innen

ether,

So that Frederigo departed thence, both with the loffe. othis labour and supper. But a neighbour of mine, who is a woman of good yeares, told me that the one and the other were true, as the her felfe heard, when thee was a little Girle: And concerning the later accident, it was not John of Lorayne, but to another, named John de Nelle, that dwelt at Saint Peters Gate, and of the fame protession as John of Lorayne was. Wherefore (faire Ladies) it remaineth in your owne choife, to entertaine which of the two prayers you please, or both together if you will: for they are of extraordinary vertue in fuch frange occurrences, as you have heretofore heard, and (upon doubt) may prove by experience. It shall not and a merefore be amiffe for you, to learne them both by with leart, for (peradventure) they may standyou in good times led, if ever you chance to have the like occasion. ad thee

Peronella

Novell. 2. The Seventh Day,

Peronellahid a young man her friend and Lover, under a great brewing Fat, upon the fodaine returning home of her husband i who told her, that hee had fould the faid Fat, and brought him that bought it, so carry it away. Peronella, replied, that she had formerly foldit unto another, who was underneath it, to see whether it were whole or sound, or no. We rereupon, he being come forth from under it; she caused her Husband to make it neate and cleane, and so the last buyer carried it away.

The second Novell.

Wherein is declared, what hard and narrow shifts and difresses, such as be seriously linked in Love, are many times enforced to undergo: according as their own wit, and capacitic of their surprizers, drive them to, in extremities.

No T without much laughter and good liking, was the Tale of Madam Amilia liftened unto, and both the prayers commended to be found and foveraigne: but it being ended, the King commanded Philoffratus, that he should follow next in order, where

upon thus he began.

Deare Ladies, the deceits used by men towards your Sexe, but especially by Husbands, have bin so great and many, as when it hath fometime happened, or yet may, that husbands are requited in the felte-fame kinde: you neede not finde fault at any such accident, either by knowledge thereof afterward, or hearing the fame reported by any one; but rather you should referre it to generall publication, to the end that immodest men may know, and finde it for truth, that if they have apprehension and capacity; women are therein not a jot inferiour to them. Which cannot but redound to your great benefite, because, when any one knoweth, that another is as cunning and subtile as himselfe, he will not be forashly adventurous in deceite. And who maketh any doubt, that if those fleights and trickes, wheref **this**

n

t

fo

this dayes argument may give us occasion to speake, should afterwards be put in execution by men: would it not minister just reason, of punishing themselves for beguiling you, knowing, that (if you please) you have the like ability in your owne power? Mine intent is to tell you, what a woman (though but in meane qualitie) did to her husband, upon a sodaine, and in a mo-

ment (as it were) for her owne fafetie.

er a

ne of

faid

way.

0 01-

mere

forto

geate

s and

m2-

Owa

mito,

king,

into,

nd fo-

nded

vher-

s your

at and

may,

inde:

either

e fame

erre it

t men

ve ap.

ta jot

o your

, that

ie will

0 ma-

wherof

this

Not long since, there lived in Naples, an honest meane man, who did take to wife a faire and suffice young woman, being named Peronella. He professing the Trade of a Mason, and she Carding and Spinning, maintained themselves in a reasonable condition, abating and abounding as their fortunes served. It came to passe, that a certaine young man, well observing the beautic and good parts of Peronella, became much addicted in affection towards her: and by his often and servet sollicitations, which he found not to be unkindly entertained; his successe proved answerable to his hope, no unindifferencie appearing in their purposes, but where her estate seemed weakest, his supplies made an addition of more strength.

Now, for their securer meeting, to stand cleare from all matter of scandall or detection, they concluded in this order betweene themselves. Layaro, for so was Peronellaes Husband named, being an early rifer every morning, either to seeke for worke, or to effect it being undertaken: this amorous friend bing therewith acquainted, and standing in some such convenient place, where he might see Layaroes departure from his house and yet himselfe no way discerned; poore Layaro was no sooner gone, but presently he enters the house, which stood in a very solitary streete, called the Avoito. Many mornings had they thus meet together, to their no meane delight and contentation, till one especiall morning among the rest, when Layaro was gone forth to worke, and Striguario (so was the amorous

Finding his doore to be fast lockt, and hee having knockt foftly once or twice, hee spake in this manner to himselfe. Fortune I thanke thee, for albeit thou haft made me poore, yet thou hast bestowed a better blef. fing on me, with matching me, with fo good, honest, and loving a wife. Behold, though I went early out of my house, her selfe hath risen in the cold to shut the doore, to prevent the entrance of theeves, or any other that might offend us. Perenella having heard what her husband faid, and knowing the manner of his knocke, Said fearefully to Striguario. Alas, deare friend, what shall we doe? I am little leffe than a dead woman : For Lagaro my husband is come backe againe, and I know not what to doe or fay. He never returned in this order before now, doubtleffe, hee faw when you entred the doore; and for the fafetie of your honour and mine, creepe under this brewing Fat, till I have opened the doore, to know the reason of his so some returning.

Striguario made no delaying of the matter, but got himself under the Fat, and Peronella opening the door for her husbands enterance, with a frowning countenance, spake thus unto him. What meaneth this so early returning home againe this morning? It seemed thou intendest to doe nothing to day, having brought backe thy tooles in thy hand. If such be thine intens, how shall welive? Where shall weehave bread to sll our bellies? Dooest thou thinke, that I will suffer the to pawne my gowne, and other poore garments, as herete fore thou hast done? I that card and spinne both night and day, till I have worne the sless from my singers; yet all will hardly finde oyle to maintaine our Lampe. Husband, husband, there is not one neighbour dwelling by us, but makes a mockery of me, and the

me plainely, that I may be ashamed to drudge and moyle as I doe 3 wondering not a little, how I am able to endure it; and thou returnest home with thy hands in thy hole, as if thou hadft no worke at all to

doe this day.

fe: up.

cke a-

forth

aving

anner

ou haft

r blef.

ionest.

out of

ur the

other

at her

nocke, what

: For

know

s order

redthe

mine,

ned the

out got

e doore

ounte.

cemeth

rought

intent

d to fill

er thee

nts, as

ne both my fin-

ine ow

ghbout and tel

m

ning.

Having thus spoken, thee fell a weeping, and then thus began againe. Poore wretched woman as I am, in an unfortunate houre was I borne, and in a much worse, when I was made thy wife. I could have had a proper, handlome young man; one that would have maintained me brave and galantly : but, beaft as I was. to forgoe my good, and cast my selfe away on such a begger as thou art, and whom none would have had, but fuch an Affe as I. Other women live at hearts eafe a and in sollity, having their amoreus friends and loving Paramoures, yea, one, two, three at once, making their husbands looke like a Moone creffent, whereon they fine Sun-like, with amiable lookes, because they know not how to helpe it : when I (poore foole) live here at home a miserable life, not daring once to dreame of fuch follies, a poore innocent foule, heartleffe and harmeleffe.

Many times, fitting and fighing to my felfe : Lord. thinke I, of what mettle am I made? Why should I not have a Friend in a corner, aswell as others have ? I am fleth and bloud, as they are, not made of braffe or iron, and therefore subject to womens frailty. I would thou shouldest know it husband, and I tell it thee in good earnest; That if I would doe ill, I could quickly finde a friend at a neede. Gallants there are good store, who (of my knowledge) love mee dearely, and have made me very large and liberall promises, of gold, filver, lewels, and gay garments, if I would extend them the least favour. But my heart will not fuffer me, I nevera was the daughter of fuch a mother, as had fo much as a thought of such matters, no, I thanke our blessed Lady and Saint Friswid for it:and yet thou returnest home

Novell,2. The Seventh Day,

againe, when thou shouldest bee at Worke.

Lazaro, who stood all this while like a well-beleeving Logger-head, demurely thus answered. Alas good wife! I pray you be not fo angry, I never had fo much as an ill thought of you, but know well enough what you are, and have made good proofe thereof this morning. Vnderstand therefore patiently (sweet wife) that I went forth to my worke, as daily I use to doe, little dreaming (as I thinke you doe not) that it had beene Holy-day. Wife, this is the Feaft day of Saint Galeone; whereon we may in no wife worke, and this is the reafon of my fo foone returning. Nevertheleffe (deare wife) I was not carelesse of our Houshold provision : For, though we worke not, yet wee must have foode, which I have provided more than a moneth. Wife, I remembred the brewing Far, whereof we have little or nouse at all, but rather it is a trouble to the house, than otherwife. I met with an honest friend, who staieth without at the doore, to him I have fould the Fat for ten Gigliatoes, and hee tarrieth to take it away with him-

How Husband? replied Peronella. Why now I am worse offended than before. Thou that art a man, walkest every where, and shouldest be experienced in worldly affaires : wouldest thou be so simple, as to sell fuch a brewing Fat for ten Gigliatoes? Why, I that am 2 poore ignorant woman, a house Dove, sildome going out of my doore; have fold it already for twelve Gigliatoes, to a very honest man, who (even a little before thy comming home,) came to me; wee agreed on the bargaine, and he is now underneathe the Fat, to fee whether it be found or no. When credulous Lazaro heard this, hee was better contented than before, and went to him that carried at the doore, faying. Good man, you may goe your way; for, whereas you offered me but ten Gigliatoes for the Fat, my loving wife hath fold it for twelve, I must maintaine what the hath done:

so the man departed from thence, and the variance ended.

Peronella then faid to her husband. Seeing thou art come home to luckily, helpe me to lift up the Far, that the man may come forth, and then you two end the bargaine together. Striguario, who though hee was mewed up under the tubbe, had his eares open enough; and hearing the witty excuse of Peronella, tookehimlelfe free from future feare: and being come from under the Fat, pretending alfo, as if he heard nothing, nor law Lazaro, looking round about him. faid. Where is the good woman? Lazaro Repping forth boldly like a man, replied: Here am I, what would you have Sir? Thou? quoth Striguario, what art thou? I aske for the good wife, with whom I made my match for the Fat. Honest Gentleman (answered Lazaro) I am the honest womans Husband, for lacke of a better, and I will maintaine whatfoever my wife hath done.

I crie you mercy Sir, replied Striguario, I bargained with your wife for this brewing Fat, which I find to be whole and found: onely it is uncleane within, hard crufted over with fome dry foile upon it, which I knownot how to get off, if you will be the meanes of making it cleane, I have the money here for it. For that Sir (quoth Peronella) take you no care, although no match at all had bin made, what ferves my husband for, but to make it cleane? Yes forfooth Sir, answered fily Lazaro, you shall have it neate and cleane before you pay the

money.

ce-

ood

uch

hat

or-

ttle

one;

rea-

are

n: de,

c, I

10

ale,

ai-Fat

yay

am.

an,

l in [e]]

am

ing

ia-

he

fee

170

nd

od

ed

th

e:

to

So, stripping himselfe into his shirt, lighting a candle, and taking tooles fit for the purpose; the Fat was whelmed over him, and hee being within it, wrought until he sweated, with scraping and scrubbing. So that these poore Lovers, what they could not accomplish as they would, necessitie enforced the to performe as they might. And Peronella, looking in at the vent-hole, where the Liquor runneth forth for the meshing; see-

CC 4

med

Novell. 3. The Seventh Day,

med to instruct her husband in the businesse, as espying those parts where the Fat was sowlest, saying: There, there Lazaro, tickle it there, the Gentleman payes well for it, and is worthy to, have it: but see thou doe thy selfe no harme good Husband. I warrant these Wise, answered Lazaro, hurt not your selfe with leaning your stomacke on the Fat, and leave the cleansing of it to me. To be breefe, the brewing Fat was nearly cleansed, Perous Ma and Strigmario both well pleased, the money paide, & honest meaning Lazaro not discontented.

Friard Reynard, failing in love with a Gentlewoman, Wife to a man of good account 3 found a meanes to become her Gossep. Afterward, he being conferring closely with her in her Chamber, and her Husband comming sodainely thither: she made him believe, that he came thither for no other end; but to cure his God-son by a charme, of a dangerous disease which he had by wormer The third Novell.

Serving as a friendly advertisement to married momen, that Monless, Friars, and Priells may be none of their Gossips, inregard of unavoidable perils ensuing, thereby.

Hilostratus told not this Tale so covertly, concerning Lazaroes simplicity, and Peronellaes witty policy; but the Ladies sound a knot in the rush, and laughed not a little, at his queint manner of discoursing it. But upon the conclusion, the King looking upon Madam Eliza, willed her to succeede next, which as willingly shee granted, and thus began. Pleasant Ladies, the charme or conjustion wherewith Madam Æmilia laid her night-walking Spirit, maketh me to remember a Novell of another enchantment; which although it carrieth not commendation equall to the other, yet I intend to report it, because it succeeds to the other, yet I intend to report it, because it succeeds to the other, yet I intend to report it, because it succeeds to the other, yet I intend to report it, because it succeeds to the other, yet I intend to report it, because it succeeds the our present purpose, and I cannot sodainely be furnisht with another, answerable thereto in nature.

You are to understand then, that there lived in Siena, a proper young man, of good birth, and well friended, being named Reynard. Earnestly he affected his neere dwelling neighbour, a beautiful Gentlewoman, and wife to a man of good esteeme: of whom he grew half perswaded, that if he could (without suspition) compasse private conference with her, hee should reach the height of his amorous desires. Yet seeing no likely great with child, he resolved to become a Godfather to the child, at such time as it should be brought to Christening. And being inwardly acquainted with her husband, who was named Credulano; such familiar entercourses passed betweene them, both of Reynards kinde offer, and Credulanoes as courteous acceptance, that he

was fet downe for a Goffip.

ying

ere,

rell

thy

ife.

VOUL

10

an-

mo-

ted.

nan,

lose-

aine

ame

by a

mes

nen,

e of

cer-

po-

gh-

2 it.

11-

ril-

cs,

ilia

ber

hit

t I

ur-

er,

ou

Reynard being thus embraced for Madam Agnefiaes Goffip, and this proving the onely colourable meanes, for his fafer permiffion of fpeech with her, to let her now understand by word of mouth, what long before the collected by his lookes and behaviour : it fell out no way beneficiall to him, albeit Agnesia scemed not nice or scrupulous in hearing, yet she made a more precious care of her honour. It came to paffe, within nolong while after (whether by feeing his labour fpent, or fome other urgent occasion moving him therto, I know not) Remard weuld needs enter into Religion, and whatfoever ftricktneffe or aufteritie hee found to be in that kinde of life, yet hee determined to persevere therein, whether it were for his good or ill. And although within a short space, after he was thus become a Religious Monke, heefeemed to forget the former love which he bare to his Goffip Agnefia, and divers other enormous vanities beside : yet let me tell you, successe of time tutord him in them againe; and, without any respect to his poore holy habite, but rather in great derition and contempt thereof (as it were) he tooke an especial! CC 5

especiall delight, in wearing garments of much richer effects, yet favoured by the same Monasticall profession, appearing (in all respects like a Court-Minion or Favorite, of a sprightly and Poeticall disposition, for composing Verses, Sonnets, and Canzons, singing them to fundry excellent instruments, and yet not greatly curious of his company, so they were some of the best, and Madam Appelia one, his former Gossip.

But why doe I trouble my selfe, in talking thus of our To lately converted Friar, holy Father Rynard, when they of longer standing, and reputed meerely for Saints in life, are rather much more vile than he? Such is the wretched condition of this world, than they shame not (fat, foggie, and naftie Abby-lubbers) to shew how full-fedde they live in their Cloysters, with cherry checkes, and smooth thining lookes, gay and gaudy garments, farre from the least expression of bumility, not walking in the ftrees like Doves: but high-crefted, like Cockes, with well cramd gorges. Nay, which is worfe, if you did but fee their chambers furnished with Gally-pots of Elcauaries, precious unquents, Apothecarie Boxes, filled with various Confedions, Conferves, excellent Perfumes and other goodly Glaffes of artificiall Oyles and Waters : beside Rundlets and finall Barrels full of Greeke Wine, Mufcatella, Lacrime Christi, and other such like most precious Wines, so that (to fuch as fee them) they feeme not to be Chambers of Religious men; but rather Apothecaries Shops, or appertaining to Druggists, Grocers, or Perfumers.

It is no difgrace to them to be Gowty; because when other men know it not, they alledge, that strict fasting, feeding on grosse meates (though never so little) continuals studying, and such like restraints from their bodies freer exercise, maketh them subject to many infermities. And yer, when any one of them fall sicke, the Physitian must minister no such counsels to them, as Chastiry, Abstinence from voluptuous meats, Discipline

4

m

th

h

sh

cher

ofel-

n or

, for

ging

not

ne of

lip.

four

vhen

aints

s the

e not

how

erry

audy

lity,

fted,

ich is

with

othe-

Con-

csof

and

rime

, fo

am-

ops,

ners.

when

ting,

con-

r bo-

y in-

e,the

n, 25

difci-

pline

pline of the body, or any of those matters appertaining to a modest religious life. For, concerning the plaine, vulgar, and Plebeian people, these holy Fathers are perswaded, that they know nothing really belonging to a fanctimonious life; as long watching, praying, discipline and fasting, which (in themselves) are not able. to make men looke leane, wretched, and pale. Because Saint Dominicke, Saint Francis, and divers other holy Saints belide, observed the selfesame religious orders and conflicutions, as now their carefull successors doe. Moreover, in example of those fore-named Saints, who went well cloathed, though they had not three Garments for one, nor made of the finest Wo ollen excellent cloath; but rather of the coarfest of all other, and of the common ordinary colour, to expell cold onely, but not to appeare brave or gallant, deceiving thereby infinite simple credulous soules, whose purses (nevertheleffe) are their beft pay-mafters.

But leave we this, and returne we backe to vertuous Fryar Reynard, who falling agains to his former appetites; became an often vifitant of his Goffip Agnefia, and now he had learned fuch a blufhlefic kind of boldrefie; that he durft be more inflant with her (concerning his privie fute) than ever formerly he had been, yea, even to folicite the enjoying of his immodest defires. The good Gernlewoman, seeing her selfe so importanguely pursued, and Fryar Reynard appearing now (perhaps) of sweeter and more delicate complexion, than at his entrance into Religion: at a fet time of his skeeter communing with her; the answered him in as apt tearnes, as they use to doe, who are not greatly squeamish, in granting matters demanded of them.

Why how now Friar Reynard? quoth she, Doe Godfathers use to more such questions? Whereto the Friar thus replied. Madam, when I have laide off this holy habite (which is a matter very easie for me to doe) I shall seeme in your eye, in all respects like another

man

man, quite from the course of any Religious life. Agnefia, biting the lip with a pretty fmile, faid; O my faire Starres! You will never be so unfriendly to me. What? You being my Goffip, would you have mee confent to fuch a finne? Our bleffed Lady shield me, for my ghostly Father hath often told me, that it is utterly unpardonable; but if it were, I feare too much confiding upon mine owne strength. Gossip, Gossip, answered the Friar, you speake like a Foole, and feare (in this case) is wholly trivolous, especially the motions moved by fuch an one as my selfe, who (upon repentance) can grant you pardon and indulgence prefently. But I pray you let me aske you one question; Who is the neerest kiniman to your Sonne, either I that flood at the Font for his Baptifine, or your husband that begot him? The Lady made answer that it was her husband. You fay very true Goffip, replied the Friar, and yet notwithding, doth not your husband (both at boord and bed) enjoy the sweete benefit of your company? Yes, said the Lady, why fhouldhe not? Then Lady (quoth Reynard) I, who am not so neere a Kinsman to your Son, as your Husband is, why may you not afford me the like favour, as you doe him? Agnefia, who was no Logitian, and therefore could not fland on any curious answer, especially being so cunningly moved; beleeved, or rather made thew of beleeving, that the Godfather faid nothing but truth, and thus answered. What woman is the (Goffip) that knoweth how to answer your ftrange speeches? And, how it came to paffe, Iknow nor, but fuch an agreement passed betweene them, that, for once onely (to it might not infrindge the league of Goffip-flip, but that title to countenance their further intent) such a favour should be afforded, so it might Hand cleare from suspition.

An especial time being appointed, when this amorous Combate should be fought in loves field, Friar Regnard came to his Gossips house, where none being

prefent

ne-

aire

at?

t to

oft-

oar-

up-

the

afe)

by

can

тач

rest

The

fay

ith-

ed)

Gaid

Rey-

Son,

e the

Lo.

ious

ved.

ther

WO-

your

now

that,

ue of

ther

ight

mo-

Priar

eing

present to hinder his purpose, but only the Nurse which attended on the child, who was an indifferent faire and proper woman his holy brother that came thither in his company (because Friars were not allowed to walke alone) was fent afide with her into the Pigeon loit , to enftruct her in a new kinde of Pater nofter. lately devised in their holy Convent. In the meane while, as Friar Reynard and Agnesia were entring into her Chamber, thee leading her little fon by the hand, and making faft the doore for their better fafety: the Friar laide by his holy habite, Cowle, Hood, Booke, and Beads, to be (in all respects) as other men'were. No fooner were they thus entred the Chamber, but her husband Credulane, being come into the house. and unfeene of any, staid not still he was at the Chamber doore, where he knockt, and called for his wife.

She hearing his voyce: Alas Goffip (quoth fhe) what shall I doe? My Husband knocketh at the doore, and now he will perceive the occasion of our so familiar acquaintance. Reynard being flupt into his Truffe and ftraite Strouses, began to tremble and quake exceedingly. I heare your Husbands tongue Goffip, faid he, and feeing no harme as yet hath beene done, if I had but my garments on againe; we would have one excule or other to ferve the turne, but till then you may not open the doore. As womens wits are fildome gadding abroad, when any necessitie concerneth them at home: even lo Agnefia, being todainely provided of an invention, both how to speake and carry her selfe in this extremity, faid to the Friar. Get on your garments quickly, and when you are cloathed, take your little Godfon in your armes, and liftning well what I shall fay, shape your answers according to my words, and then referre the matter to me. Credulano, had fearfely ended his knocking, but Agne fia stepping to the doore, laid: Husband I come to you. So thee opened the doore, and (going forth to him) with a chearefull counte-

Novell. 3. The Sevent's Day,

countenance thus spake. Beleeue mee Hosband, you could not come in a more happy time, for your young Son was sodainely extreamely sicke, and as good Fortune would have it) our loving Gossip Reynard chanced to come in 5 and questionlesse, but by his good prayers, and other religious paines, we had utterly lost

our child for he had no life left in him.

Credulano, being as credulous as his name imported, feemed ready to swoune with fodaine conceit: Alas good wife (quoth he) how hapned this? Sit downe Iweete Husband faid flice, and I willtell you all. Our childe was fodainely taken with a fwounding, wherein I being unskilfull, did verily suppose him to be dead, not knowing what to do or fay. By good hap our Goffip Revneril came in, and taking the child in his armes, faid to me. Goffip his is nothing elic but Wormes in the belly of the child, which ascending to the heart, must needs kill the child, without all question to the contrary. But be of good comfort Goffip, and feare not. for I can charme them in such fort, that they shall all die, and before I depart hence, you shall see your Son as healthfull as ever. And because the manner of his charme is of fuch nature, that it required prayer and exercifing in two places at once: Nurse went up with his holy Brother into our Pigeon loft, to exercise their devotion there, while wee did the like here. For none but the Mother of the childe must be present at such a mystery, nor any enter to hinder the operation of the charme; which was the reason of making faft the Chamber doore. You shall see husband anon the childs which is indifferently recovered in his armes, and if Nurse and his holy Brother were returned from their meditations; he faith, that the charme would then be fully effected : for the child beginneth to looke cheerefull and merry.

So dearely did Credulano love the child, that he verily beleeved what his wife had faid, never mildoubting ate

B

nie other treacherie : and lifting up his eyes, with a vehement figh, faid, Wife, may I not goe in and take the child into my armes? Ob no, not yet good busband (quoth the) in any cafe, least you thould overthrow all that is done. Stay but a little while, I will goe in againe, and if all be well, then will I call you. In went Agnefia againe, making the doore fast after her : The Friar having heard all the paffed speeches, by this time he was fitted with his habite, and taking the childe in his armes, he faid to Agne fia. Goffip, me thought I heard your Husbands voyce, is hee at your Chamber doore ? Yes Goffip Reynard (quoth Credulano without, while Agnesia opened the doore, and admitted him entranca) indeede it is I. Come in Sir, I pray you, replied the Friar, and here receive your child of me, who was in great danger, of your ever feeing him any more alive. But you must take order, to make an Image of waxe, agreeing with the flature of the thild, to be placed upon the Altar before the Image of Saint Francis by whole merites the child is thus restored to health.

The child beholding his Father, made fignes of comming to him, rejoycing merrily, as young infants use to doe; and Credulano classing him in his armes, wepe with conceit of joy, kissing him infinitely, and heartily thanked his Gossian Regnard for the recovery of his God-son. The Friars brotherly Companion, who had given sufficient enstructions to the Nurse, and a small purse sull of Sisters white thread, which a Nunne (after shrift) had bestowed on him, upon the husbands admittance into the chamber (which they casily heard) came in also to them, and seeing all in very good termes, they holpe to make a joyfull conclusion, the Brother saying to Friar Reynard: Brother, I have finished all those foure I aculatory prayers, which you com-

manded me.

17

1-

d

ft

d,

25

ne

ur

in

d,

lip

es,

in

rt,

he

ot,

all

on

his

ind

ith

rigi

one

h a

the

the

ild,

d if

heir

n be

ere-

rily

THE

Brother, answered Reynard, you have a better breath than I, and your successe hath prooved happier than mine.

Novell.4. The Seventh Day,

mine, for before the arrivall of my Gossip Credulano, I could accomplish but two Iaculatory prayers onely. But it appeareth, that we have both prevailed in our devote desires, because the child is perfectly cured. Credulano calling for wine and good cheere, feasted both the Friars very jocondly, and then conducting them forth of his house, without any further intermission, caused the childs Image of waxe to be made, and sent it to be placed on the Alear of S. Francis, among many other the like oblations.

To sano in the night season, did locke his wise out of his house, and she not prevailing to get entrance againe, by all the entreaties shee could possibly use: made him beleeve that she had throwne her selse into a Well, by casting a great shore into the same well. To sano hearing the fall of the stone into the well, and being persmaded that it was his wife indeede; came sorth of his house, and ran to the Wells side. In the meane while, his wife get into the house, made saft the doore against her husband, and gave him many repreachfull speeches.

The south Novell.

Wherein is manifested, that the malice and subtilty of memen, surpasseth all the Art and Wit in man.

So foone as the King perceived, that the Novell reported by Madam Eliza was finished; hee turned himselfe to Madam Lauretta, and told her that it was his pleasure, that she should now begin the next; whereto she yeelded in this manner. O Love: What, and how many are thy prevailing forces? How strange are thy foresights? And how admirable thine attempts? Where is, or ever was the Philosopher or Artist, that could enstruct the wiles, escapes, preventions, and demonstrations, which sodainely thou teachest such, as are thy apt and understanding Schollers indeed? Certaine it is, that the documents and eruditions of allows.

G

el

de

co

to

hi

qu

ther whatfoever, are of weake or of no worth, in respect of thine: as hath notably appeared, by the demostrances already past, and whereto (worthy Ladies)
I will adde another of a simple woman, who taught her
husband such a lesson, as she never learned of any, but
Love himselse.

There dwelt sometime in Arezzo (which is a faire Village of Tufcany) a rich man named Tofano, who enjoyed in marriage a young beautifull woman, called Cheta: of whom (without any occasion given, or reafon knowne to himselse) he became exceeding jealous. Which his wife perceiving, the grew much offended thereat, and tooke it in great scorne, that she should be fervile to fo vile and flavish a condition, Ottentimes, the demanded of him, from whence this jealoufie in him received originall, he having never heard of any; he could make her no other answer, but what his owne bad humour suggested, and drove him every day (almost to deaths doore, by feare of that which no way needed. But whether as a just scourge for this his grosse folly, or a fecret decree, ordained to him by Fortune and the Fates, I am not able to diffinguish: It came fo to palle, that a young Gallant made meanes to enjoy her favour, and the was fo difcreetly wife in judging of his worthinesse; that affection passed so farre mutually betweene them, as nothing wanted, but effects to anlwer words, fuited with time and place convenient, for which order was taken as belt they might, and to avoide all evill suspition, which should make against their honours.

Among many other evill conditions, very frequent and familiar in her husband Tofano; he tooke a great delight in drinking, which not onely he held to be a commendable quality, but was alwayes folicited thereto: that Cheta her felfe began to like and allow it in him, feeding his humour to effectually, with drinking, quaffing, and carowfing, that (at any time when

Che

no he th

be

ron

ĭ,

his e,by be-

use, wife hus-

rned was hereand e are

that do do as. Cer-

Novell.4. The Seventh Day,

the lifted) the could make him bowfie beyond all meafure: and leaving him fleeping in this drunkennesse, would alwayes get her selfe to bed. By helpe, hereof, the compassed the first familiarity with her friend, yea, divers times after, as eccasion served: and so considently did shee build on her Husbands drunkennesse, that not only the adventured to bring her friend home into her owne house; but also would as often go to his, which was some-what neere at hand, and abide with

him there, the most part of the night season.

While Cheta thus continued on these amorous courfes, it fortuned that her flie suspicious husband, began to perceive, that though thee drunke very much with him, yea, untill he was quite spent and gone ; yet shee remained fresh and sober still, and thereby imagined ftrange matters, that he being fast a sleepe, his Wife tooke advantage of his drowfinefle, and might and fo forth. Being defirous to make experience of this his diffrust, he returned home at night (not having drunke anything all as day) diffembling both by his words and behaviour, as if hee were notorioufly drunke indeede. Which his wife conftably beleeving, faid to her felfe: That hee now had more neede of fleepe than drinke; getting him immediatly into his warme bed; and then going downe the staires againe, foftly went out of doores unto her Friends haufe, as formerly the had used to doe, and there the remained untill midnight.

Tofano perceiving that his Wife came not to bed, and, imagining to have heard his doore open and thut: aroke out of his bed, and calling his wife Cheta divers times, without any answer returned: hee went downe the flaires, and finding the doore but closed too, made it fast and fure on the inside, and then got him up to the window, to watch the returning home of his Wife, from whence the came, and then to make her conditions apparantly knowne. So long there he staied, till 4

he

£

ro

n

th

fu

ful

thi

3U

dro

wh

app

ken

tha

tery

flie

ban

the last the returned indeede, and finding the doore so furely shat, she was exceeding forrowfull, essaying how she might get it open by strength: which when Tofano had long suffered her in vaine to approve, thus he spake to her. Cheta, Cheta, all thy labour is meerely lost, because here is no entrance allowed for thee; therefore returne to the place from whence thou camest, that all thy friends may judge of thy behaviour, and know what

a night-walker thou art become.

Te,

of,

ca,

fic,

me

rith

ur-

gan

Thee

ined Wife

and

s his

unke ords

ein-

o her

bed;

ly the

mid-

d,and

imes

ne the

to the

Wife

onditt-

tillat

the

The woman hearing this unpleasing language, began to use all humble intreaties, defiring him (for charities (ake) to open the doore and admit her entrance, because the had not beene in any such place, as his jealous suspition might suggest to him; but onely to visite a weake ficke neighbour, the nights being long, thee not (as yet) capeable of fleepe, nor willing to fit alone in the house. But all her perswasions served to no purpole, he was so settled in his owne opinion, that all the Towne should now see her nightly gadding, which before was not fo much as suspected. Cheta feeing, that faire meanes whould not prevaile, thee entred into rough speeches and threatnings, saying : If thou wilt not open the doore and let me come in, I will fo hame thee, as never bale man was. As how I pray thee? anfwered Tofano, what canft thou do to me?

The woman, whom love had infpired with sprightfull council, ingeniously enstructing her what to do in this distresse; sternely thus replied. Before I will suffer any such shame as thou intendest towards me, I will drowne my selfe here in this Well before our doore, where being found dead; and thy villanous jealouse to apparantly knowne, beside thy more than beastly drunkennesse: all the neighboures will constantly beleeve, that thou didst first strangle mee in the house, and afterwards threw me into this Well. So either thou must slie upon the supposed offence, or lose all thy goods by banishment, or (which is much more fitting for thee)

have

Novell.4. The Seventh Day,

have thy head smitten off, as a wilfull murtherer of thy wise; for all will judge it to be no otherwise. All which words, moved not Tofano a jot from his obstinate determination: but hee still persisting therein, thus shee spake. I neither can nor will longer endure this base Villanie of thine; to the mercy of heaven I commit my soule, and stand there my wheele, a witnesse against ro

hard-hearted a murtherer.

No fooner had the thus spoke, but the night being fo extreamely darke, as they could not differne one another; Chera went to the Well, where finding a very great stone, which lay loose upon the brim of the well, even as if it had beene laide there on purpole, the cried out aloud, faying. Forgive me faire heavens, and fo threw the flone downe into the Well. The night being very fill and filent, the fall of the great stone made fucha dreadfull noise in the Well; that he hearing it at the window, thought verily the had drowned her felfe indeed. Wherupon, running downe hastily, and taking a Bucket fastened to a strong cord ; hee left the doore wide open, intending speedily to helpe her. But shee standing close at the doores entrance, before he could get to the Wells fide; fhee was within the house, loftly made the doore fast on the infide, and then went up to the window, where Tofano before had flood talking to her.

While hee was thus dragging with his Bucket in the Well, crying and calling Cheta, take hold good Cheta, and fave thy life: shee flood laughing in the Window, saying. Water should be put into wine before a man drinkes it, and not when he hath drunke too much already. To saw hearing his wife thus to floute him out of his window, went backet othe doore, and findings made fast against him: hee willed her to grant him entrance. But she forgetting all gentle Language, which formerly she had used to him: in meere mockery and derision (yet intermixed with some sighes and tears, which

fi

n

n

ch

fo ka ich de-

hee

pale

my

t ro

ng fo

very

well,

cried

nd fo

made

git at

aking

doore

could

at up to

talking

t in the

Cheta,

indow,

e a man

nuch al-

DE OUT OF

ndingi

him en,

ery and

which

which women are faid to have at command) out aloud (because the neighboures should heare her) thus shee replied.

Beafily drunken Knave as thou art, this night thou shalt not come within these doores, I am not able to endure thy base behaviour, it is more than high time, that thy course of life should be publikely knowne, and at what drunken houres thou returness home to thy house. To fano, being a man of very impatient Nature, was as bitter unto her in words on the other side, which the neighbours about them (both men and women) hearing 3 looked forth of their windowes, and demanding a reason for this their disquietnesse. Cheta (seeming as if the wept) said.

Alas my good Neighbours, you fee at what unfitting houres, this bad man comes home to his house, after he hath lyen in a Taverne all day drunke, sleeping and snorting like a Swine. You are my honest witnesses, how leng I have suffered this be utilized in him, yet neither your good counsell, and my too often, lowing admonitions, can worke that good which wee have expected. Wherefore, to trie if shame can procure any amendment, I have shut him out of doores, untill his drunken fit be over-past, and so he shall stand

to his diffembling speeches, when he told you, that I was at the Welles fide, and threw fomething into the Well: but that I know your better opinion of me, and how fildome I am to be scene out of doores, although he would induce your sharper judgement of mue, and lay that shame upon me, wherein he hath sinned him. felfe.

The Neighbours , both men and women, were all very leverely incenfed against Tofano, condemning him for his great fault that night committed, and avouching his wife to be vertuous and honest. Within a little while, the noise passing from neighbour to neighbour, at the length it came to the eares of her Kindred, who forthwith reforted thither, and hearing how sharpely the neighbours reprehended Tofano: they tooke him, foundly baftanadoed him, and hardly left any bone of him unbruised. Afterward, they went into the house, tooke all fuch things thence as belonged to her, taking her also with them to their dwelling, and threatning Tofaxo with further infliction of punishment, both for his drunkennesse, and caustelesse jealousie.

d

10

W

m

lo

wh

upo

con

the

thin

dain

ted a

алу

of th

ong,

Tofano perceiving how curftly they had handled him, and what crooked meanes might further be uledagainst him, in regard her Kindred and Friends were very mightie: thought it much better, patiently to fuffer the wrong already done him, than by obstinate contending, to proceede further, and fare worfe. Hee became a futer to her Kindred, that all might be forgotten and forgiven, in recompence whereof, hee would not onely refraine from drunkennelle, but alfo, never more to be jealous of his wife. This being faithfully promised, and cheta reconciled to her Husband, all Arife was ended, thee enjoyed her Friends favour, 3 occasion served, but yet with such discretion, as it was not noted. Thus the Coxcombe foole, was faine to purchase his peace, after a notorious wrong sustained, and further injuries to be offered.

e

d

ela

ad

TI.

16.

m

ing

ttle

our,

vho

pely

ne of

oule,

king

ning

h for

him,

fed a-

were

to fuf-

te con-

lee be-

forgot-

e would

, never

ichfully

and, all

your, 35

as it was

faine to

Mained,

A lealous man, cloathed with the habite of a Priest, became the Confession to his owne Wife; who made him believe, that shee was deepely in love with a Priest, which came every night, and lay with her; by meanes of which confession, while her je alous Husband watched the doore of his honse; to surprive the Priest when he came: shee that never meant to doe amisse, had the company of a secret Friend, who came over the top of the house to wiste her, while her foolish Huusband kept to doore.

The fifth Novell.

Injuff corne and mockery of fuch tealous husbands, that will be so idie headed upon no occasion. And yet when they have good reason for it, doe least of all suspell any such injury.

MAdam Lametta having ended her novell, every one commended the Woman, for fitting Tofanoin his kinde; and, as his jealousie and drundennelle justly deserved the King (to prevent all losse of time) turned to Madam Fiametta, commanding her to follow nexts whereupon, very graciously, shee beganne in this manner.

Noble Ladies, the precedent Novell delivered by Madam Laureria, maketh me willing to speake of anolous jealous man; as being halfe perswaded, that whatsoever is done by their Wives, and especially upon no occasion given, they do no more than well becommeth them. And if those grave heads, which were the first infliturers of lawes, had diligently observed all things; I am of the minde, that they would have ordained no other penalty for women, than they appointed against such as (in their owne defence I doe offend any other. For jealous husbands, are meere insidators of their Wives lives, and most diligent pursuers of their deaths, being lockt up in their houses all the Weeke long, imployed in nothing but domesticke drudging affaires?

affaires: which makes them defirous of high Festivall dayes, to receive some little comfort abroad, by an honest recreation or passime, as Husbandmen in the Fields, Artizans in our Citie, or Governours in our judiciall Courts; yea, as the Lord himselfe, who refled the seaventh day from all his travels. In like manner, it is fo willed and ordained by the Lawes, as well divine as humane, which have regard to the glory of God, and for the common good of every one; making diftination betweene those dayes appointed for labour, and the other determined for reft. Whereto jealous persons (in no case) will give consent, but all those dayes (which for other women are pleafing and delightfull) unto fuch, over whom they command, are most irkesome, sad and sorrowfull, because then they are locke up, & very frielly restrained. And if question were urged, how many good women doe live and confume away in this torturing hell of affliction: I can make no other answer, but such as feele it, are bestable to discoverit. Wherefore to conclude the proheme to my present purpose, let none be over rash in comdemning women, for what they do to their husbands, being jealous without occasion; but rather commend their wit and providence.

Sometime (faire Ladies) there lived in Arimino, a Merchant, very rich in wealth and worldly possessions, who having a beautiful! Gentlewoman to his wise, he became extreamely jealous of her. And he had no other reason for this foolish conceit; but, like as helowed her dearely, and found her to be very absolutely faire: even so he imagined, that although she devised by her best meanes to give him content; yet other would grow enamored of her, because she appeared so lovely to all. In which respect, time might tutor her of affect some of her beside himself; the only common argument of every bad minded man, being weake & shallow in his owne understanding. This jealous humos see the state of the source of the s

increating

increasing in him more and more, hee kept her in such narrow restraint, that many persons condemned to death, have enjoyed larger liberty in their imprisonment. For, thee might not be prefent at Feaftes, Weddings, nor goe to Church, or fo much as to be feene at the doore: Nay, thee durft not frand inher Windows nor looke out of her house, for any occasion whatsoever. By meanes whereof, life formed most redious and offensive unto her, and the supported it the more impatently, because the knew her felfe not any way guilty.

Seeing her husband still perfist in this shamefull coarle towards her ; free fludied, how the might belt comfort her felfe in this defolate cafe ; by devifing one meane or other (if any were to be found) whereby hee might be requited in his kinde, and weare that Badge of mame whereof hee was now but onely affraid, And because the could not gaine so small a permission, asto te feene at any window, where (haply) thee might have observed some one passing by in the freet, diffeering a litle parcell of her love; the remembred at length, that in the next house to her husbands (they both joyning close together) there dwelt a young proper Gentleman, whole perfections carried correspondentie with her defires. She also confidered with her felfe, that if there were any partition wall; fuch a chinke or cranny might eafily be made therein, by which (at one time or other) thee thould gaine a fight of the young Gentleman, and finde an houre fo fitting, 2s to conferre with him, and bestow her lovely favour on him, if he pleased to accept it. If successe (in this case) proved answerable to her hope, then thus she resolved to outrun the rest of her wearisome dayes, except the catedio frentie of mad jealousie did finish her husbands loaor herto thed life before.

Walking from one roome to another, thorough evee & that re part of the house; and no wall escaping without diis humor light furveying ion a day, when her husband was absent

wife, he d no o. as he lofolutely devised t others mon are

creating

ivail

n ho-

nthe

n our

orc-

man-

s well

ory of

aking

abour,

ealous

thole

id de.

d, are

n they

eftion

id con-

: I can

beft a-

oheme

n com-

bands

mmend

nino, a

effions,

from home, thee espied in a corner very secret, an indifferent eleft in the wall, which though it yeelded no full view on the other fide, yee the plainely perceived is to be an handsome Chamber, and grew more than halfe perswaded, that it might either be the Chamber of Philippo (for fo was the neighbouring young Gentleman named) or else a passage guiding thereto. A Chambermaide of hers, who compassioned her case very much; made fuch observance, by her Mistrelles direction, that the found it to be Philippoes bed Chamber, and where alwayes he used to lodge alone. By often visiting this rife or chinke in the wall, especially when the Gentleman was there; and by throwing in little flones, flowers, and fuch like things, which full fell in his way as hee walked: fo farre the prevailed, that he stepping to the chinke, to know from whence they came; thes called lofely to him, who knowing her voyce, there they had fuch private conference together, as was not any way displeating to either. So that the chinke being made a little larger; yet fo, as it could not be easily discerned : their mouthes might meete with killes together, and their hands folded each in other; but nothing elfe to be performed, for continuall feare of her jealous husband.

Now the Feaft of Christmasse drawing neere, the Gentlewoman said to her Husband; that, if it shood with his liking, she would doe such dutie as fitted with so solver, there to be confessed, and receive her Saviour, as other Christians did. How now? replied the jealous Asse, what sinnes have you committed, that should neede confession? How Husband? quoth shee, what doe you thinke me to be a Saint? Who knoweth not, I pray you, that I am as subject to sinne, as any other woman living in the world? But my sinnes are not to be revealed to you, because you are no Priest. These words instanced his jealousse more violently than be-

fore,

E

L

h

le

n

er

n-A

Ce

cs

n

By

lly

hill

d,

ice

her

CE,

the

not

vith

er:

arc

the

ood

with

avi-

the

that

thee,

weth

ny o-

e not

Thele

n be-

fore,

fore, and needes must hee know what sinnes shee had committed, and having resolved what to do in this case, made her answer: That hee was contented with her motion, alwayes provided, that shee went to no other Church, than unto their owne Chappell, betimes in a morning; and their own Chaplaine to confesse her, or some other Priest by him appointed, but not any other: and then she to return home presently againe. She being a woman of acute apprehension, presently collected his whole intention: but seeming to take no knowledge thereof, replied, that she would not swerve from his direction

When the appointed day was come, thee arose very early, and being prepared answerably to her owne liking, to the Chappell the went as her husband had appointed, where her jealous Husband (being much earlier rifen than fhe) attended for her comming : having fo ordered the matter with his Chaplaine, that he was cloathed in his Cowle, with a large Hood hanging over his eyes, that she could not know him, and so hee went and fate downe in the Confessors place. She being entred into the Chappell, and calling for the Priest to heare her confession, he made her answer; that hee could not intend it, but would bring her to another holy Brother, who was at better leifure than hee. So to her Husband he brought her, that feemed (in all respects) like the Confessor himselfe : fave onely his Hood was not fo closely veiled, but the knew his beard, and faid to her felfe. What a mad world is this, when jealoufie can metamorphole an ordinary man into a Prieft? But, let me alone with him, I meane to fit him with that which he lookes for.

So, appearing to have no knowledge at all of him, downe the fell at his feete, and he had conveied a few Cherry flones into his mouth, to trouble his speech from her knowledge; for, in all things elfe, he thought himselfe to be sufficiently fitted for her. In the course

Novelles. The Seventh Day,

from home, thee espied in a corner very secret, an indifferent cleft in the wall, which though it yeelded no full view on the other fide, yee the plainely perceived it to be an handsome Chamber, and grew more than halfe perswaded, that it might either be the Chamber of Philippo (for fo was the neighbouring young Gentleman named) or elle a paffage guiding thereto. A Chambermaide of hers, who compassioned her case very much; made fuch observance, by her Mistreffes direction, that the found it to be Philippoes bed Chamber, and where alwayes he used to lodge alone. By often viliting this rife or chinke in the wall, especially when the Gentleman was there; and by throwing in little flones, flowers, and fuch like things, which full fell in his way as hee walked: fo farre the prevailed, that he stepping to the chinke, to know from whence they came; thes called lofely to him, who knowing her voyce, there they had fuch private conference together, as was not any way displeating to either. So that the chinke being made a little larger; yet fo, as it could not be eafily difcerned : their mouthes might meete with kiffes together, and their hands folded each in other: but nothing elle to be performed, for continuall feare of her jealous husband.

Now the Feaft of Christmasse drawing neere, the Gentlewoman said to her Husband; that, if it stood with his liking, she would doe such dutie as fitted with so solemne a time, by going early in a morning unto Church, there to be confessed, and receive her Saviour, as other Christians did. How now? replied the jealous Asse, what sinnes have you committed, that should neede confession? How Husband? quoth shee, what doe you thinke me to be a Saint? Who knoweth not, I pray you, that I am as subject to sinne, as any other woman living in the world? But my sinnes are not to be revealed to you, because you are no Priest. These words instanted his jealousse more violently than be-

fore,

ti

B

H

I

n

h

ca

le

W

CI

fro

hi

fore, and needes must hee know what sinnes shee had committed, and having resolved what to do in this case, made her answer: That hee was contented with her motion, alwayes provided, that shee went to no other Church, than unto their owne Chappell, betimes in a morning; and their own Chaplaine to confesse her, or some other Pricst by him appointed, but not any other: and then she to return home presently againe. She being a woman of acute apprehension, presently collected his whole intention: but seeming to take no knowledge thereof, replied, that she would not swerve from his direction

ly

m

111

d,

ce

cr,

net

ith

er;

the

ood

vith

into

avi-

the

that

hee,

weth ny o-

e not

hele

n be-

fore,

When the appointed day was come, thee arose very early, and being prepared answerably to her owne liking, to the Chappell the went as her husband had appointed, where her jealous Husband (being much earlier rifen than fhe) attended for her comming : having fo ordered the matter with his Chaplaine, that he was cloathed in his Cowle, with a large Hood hanging over his eyes, that she could not know him, and so hee went and fate downe in the Confessors place. She being entred into the Chappell, and calling for the Prieft to heare her confession, he made her answer : that hee could not intend it, but would bring her to another holy Brother, who was at better leifure than hee. So to her Husband he brought her, that feemed (in all respects) like the Confessor himselse : fave onely his Hood was not fo closely veiled, but she knew his beard, and faid to her selfe. What a mad world is this, when jealoufie can metamorphole an ordinary man into a Priest? But. let me alone with him, I meane to fit him with that which he lookes for.

So, appearing to have no knowledge at all of him, downe the fell at his feete, and he had conveied a few Cherry stones into his mouth, to trouble his speech from her knowledge; for, in all things else, he thought himselfe to be sufficiently sixed for her. In the course

ff 2

of her confession, the declared, that she was married to a most wicked jealous Husband, and with whom shee lead a avery hatefull life. Neverthelesse (quoth shee) I am indifferently even with him, for I am beloved of a holy Friar, that every night commeth and lieth with me. When the jealous husband heard this, it stabbed him like a dagger to the hart, & but for this greedy covetous desire to know more; hee would faine have broke off confession, and got him gone. But, perceiving that it was his wisest course, he questioned turther with his wise, saying: Why good Woman, doth not your Husband lodge with you? Yes Sir, quoth she. How is it then possible (replied the husband) that the Friar

can lodge there with you too?

She diffembling a farre fetched figh, thus answered. Reverend Sir, I know not what skilfull Art the Friar wierh, but this I am fure, every doore in our house will Hie open to him, fo foone as hee doth but touch it. Moreover, he told me, that when hee commeth up:o my Chamber doore, hee speaketh certaine words to himselfe, which immediatly caffeth my Husband into a dead fleepe, and, understanding him to be thus fleepily entranced : he openeth the doore, entreth in lieth downe by me, and this every night he faileth not to doe. The jealous Coxcombe angerly feratching his head, and wishing his wife balfe hang'd, said : Mi-Arelle, this is very badly done, for you fhould keepe your selfe from all men, but your husband onely. That finall I never doe, answered the, because (indeed) I love him dearely. Why then (quoth our supposed Confesfor) I cannot give you any absolution. I am the more forry Sir, faid the, I came not hither to tell you any leafings, for ife I could, yet I would not, because it is not good to fable with fuch Saint-like men as you are. You doe therein (quoth he) the better, and furely I am very forry for you, because in this dangerous condition, will be the utter loffe of your foule: nevertheleffe,

both

et

e)

ed

th

6.

dy

ve

ng

ith

our

vis

iar

ed.

iar

vill

it.

2:0

to

nto

lee-

ieth

t to

his

Mi-

eepe

hat

love

ifel-

nore

any

cit is

arc.

I am

tion,

lefk,

bodi

both for your husbands fake and your owne, I will take fome paines, and use such especiall prayers in your name, which may (perchance) greatly availe you. And I purpole now and then, to fend you a Novice or young Clearke of mine, whom you may fafely acquaint with your minde, and fignific to me, by him, whether they have done you good, or no : and if they proove helpefell, then will we proceede therein. Alas Sir, faid fire, never trouble your felfe, in fending any body to our house; because if my husband should know it, he is so extreamely jealous, as all the world cannot otherwife perswade him, but that he commeth thither for no honest intent, and then I shall live worse than now I doc. Feare not that, good woman, quoth he, but beleeve it certainely, that I will have fuch a care in this cafe, as your Husband shall never speake thereof to you. If you can doe fo Sir, faid thee, without any prejudice to my honour, and my husbands further jealousie, proceede I pray you, and I am well contented.

Confession being thus ended, and the receiving such pennance as he appointed, the arole on her feete, and went to heare Maffe; while our jealous woodcocke (te-Bily puffing and blowing) put off his Religious habite, returning home presently to his house, beating his braines all the way as he went, what meanes he might belt devile, for the taking of his wife and the Fryer together, whereby to have them both feverely punished. His wife bing come home from the Chappell, difcerned by her Husbands lookes, that he was like to keepe but a fory Christmaffe: yet he used his utmost industry, to conceale what hee had done, and which the knew as well as himselfe. And he having fully resolved, to watch his owne threete doore the next night enfuing in perfon, in expectation of the Friars comming, faid to his wife. I have occasion both to sup and lodge out of my house this night, wherefore see you the streets doore that it be furely made falt on the infide, and

ff 3

. 1.

the doore at the middest of the staires, as also your owne Chamber doore, and then (in Gods name) get you to bed. Whereto shee answered, that all should be

done as he had appointed.

Afterward, when the favy convenient time, the went to the chinke in the Wall, and making such a signe as the was wont to doe: Phillippe came thither, to whom the declared her mornings affaires, and what directions her husband had given her. Furthermore thee faid, certaine I am that he will not depart from the house, but fit and watch the doore without, to take one that comes not here. If therefore, you can climbe over the house top, and get in at our gutter window, you and I may conferre more familiarly together. The young Gen:leman being no dullard, had his lesson quickly raught him; and when night was come, Gelofo (for lo must we tearme the Cocke-braind husband) armes himselfe at all points, with a browne Bill in his hand, and so he fits to watch his owne doore. His wife had made fast all the doores, especially that on the midst of the flaires, because hee flould not (by any meanes) come to her Chamber; and fo, when the houre ferved, the Gentleman adventured over the house top, found the gutter window, and the way conducting him to her Chamber, where Ileave them to their further amo. rous conference.

Geloso more than halfe mad with anger, first, because he had lost his supper:next, having fitten almost all the night (which was extreamely cold and windie) his Armor much molesting him, and yet he could see no Friar come: when day drew neere, and he ashamed to watch there any longer; conveied himselfe to some more convenient place, where putting off his Armes, and seeming to come from the place of his Lodging; about the ninth houre, hee found his doore open, entred in, and went up the staires, going to dinner with his wife. Within a while after, according as Geloso had ordered

ordred the businesse, a youth came thither, seeming to be the Novice sent from the Confessor, and he being admitted to speake with her, demanded, whether shee was troubled and molested that night passed, as formerly she had beene, or whether the party same or no? The Woman, who knew well enough the Messenger (notwithstanding all his formall disguise) made answed; that the partie expected, came not; but if hee had come, it was to no purpose; because her minde was now otherwise altred, albeit she changed not a jos from her amorous conclusion.

What should I now further fay unto you? Geloso continued his watch many nights together, as hoping to surprize the Friar at his entrance, and his wife kept ftill her contented quarter, according as opportunity ferved. In the conclusion, Geleso being no longer able to endure his bootlesse watching, nor some /more than ordinary) pleafing countenance in his wife; one day demanded of her (with a very sterne and frowning brow) what fecret finnes free had revealed to the ghoftly Father, upon the day of her fhrift? The woman replied, that the would not tell him, neither was it a matter reasonable, or lawfull so to doc. Wicked woman, anfwered Gelofo: I know them all well enough, even in despight of thee, and every word that thou spakeft unto him. But Hulwife, now I must further know, what the Friar is, with whom you are fo farre in love, and (by meanes of his enchantments) lieth with youeverie night; tell me what and who he is, or elfe I meane to cut your throate.

The woman immediatly made answer, it was not true that the was in love with any Friar. How? quoth Gelofo, didft not thou confesse so much to the ghostly Father, the other day when thou wast at shrift? No Sir,
said she, but if I did, I am sure he would not disclose it
to you, except he suffered you to be there present, which
is an Article beyond his dutie. But if it were so, then I

ff 4

confelle

d be went ne as

vour

faid, oufe, that

nd I oung ickly or to mes

and, had It of nes)

ved, ound n to

the his

d to ome nes, ng;

envith had red

Novell.5. The Seventh Day,

confesse freely, that I did say so unto him. Make an end then quickly wife (quoth Geloso) and tell me who the Friar is. The Woman sell into a heartie laughter, saying. It liketh me singularly well, when a wise man will suffer himselfe to be led by a simple Woman, eyen as a sheepe is to the slaughter, and by the hornes. If once thou wast wise, that wisdome became utterly lost, when thou sell into that divellish frensie of jealousie, without knowing any reason for it: for, by this beastlike and no manly humour, thou hast ecclipsed no meane part of thy glory, and to the disgrace of my honour, and

womanly reputation.

Doft thou imagine Husband, that if I were fo blinded in mind, as thou in that which should informe thy understanding; I could have found out the Priest, that syould needs be my Confessor ? I knew thee husband to be the man , and therefore I prepared my wit accordingly, to fit thee with the foolith imagination which thou foughted for, and (indeed) gave it thee. For, if thou hadft beene wife, as thou makeft the world to beleeve by outward apparance, thou wouldest never have expressed such a basenesse of minde, to borrow the colour of a fanctified cloake, thereby to undermine the fecrets of thine honest meaning wife. Wherefore, to feede thee in thy fond suspition and imagination, I was the more free in my Confession, and sold thee truely, with whom I had transgressed. Did I not tell thee, that I loved a Friar? And art not thou he whom I love, being a Friar, and my ghoftly Father , though (to thine owne fhame) thou madeit thy felfe fo? Ifaid moreover, that there is not one doore in our house, that can keepe it felfe fhut againft him, but (when hee pleaseth) hee comes and lies with me. Now tell mee Husband, What doore in our house hath (at any time) beene shut against thee, but they are freely thine owne, and grant thee free entrance? Thou art the fame Friar that confest mee, and lieth every night with me, and

n end

o the

fay-

liw c

1252

once

when

vith-

Alike

cane

and

nded

un-

that

nd to

cor-

nich

r, if

be-

ave

the

line

ore.

, I

hee

tell

om

aid

le,

ee

ne)

121

nd lo fo often as thou fentst thy young Novice or Clearke to me, as often did I truly returne thee word, when the same Friar lay with me. But by jealouse thou hast lost thine understanding and wit, that thou will hardly believe all this.

Alas good man, like an armed Watchman, thou faift at thine owne doore all a cold Winter night, perfiva-ding me poore filly credulous woman, that, upon argent occasions, thou must needs suppe and lodge from home. Remember thy selfe better hereafter, become a true understanding man, as thou shouldest be, and make not thy self a mocking stocke to them, who knoweth thy jealous qualities as well as I doe, and be not so watchfull over me, as thou art. For stweare by my rue honestie, that if I were but as willing, as thou art sufficious: I could deceive thee, if thou hadst an hundred eyes, as Nature affords thee but two, and have my pleasures freely, yet thou be not a jot the wifer, or my credite any way impaired.

Our wonderfull wife Geleso, who (very advisedly considered) that he had wholly heard his wives secret consession, and dreamed on no other doubt beside, but (perceiving by her speeches) how he was become a feorne to all men; without returning other answer, confirmed his wife to be both wife and housest, and now when he had just occasion to be jealous indeede, he uterly forsware it, and counted them all Coxcombes that would be so milguided. Wherefore, shee lawing thus wisely women the way to her owne desires, and he reduced into a more humane temper: I hope there was no neede, of clambring over houses in the night time like Cats, nor walking in at gutter Windowes; but

all abuses were honestly reformed.

Madam Isabella, delighting in the company of her affelied friend, named Lionello, and shockerise beloved by Sig. Lambertuccionat the same time as she had interif 5

tained Lionello, she was also visited by Lambertuccio Her Bushand returning home in the very instant; she caused Lambertuccio to run forth with a drawn sword in his hand, and (by that meanes) made an excuse sufficient for Lionello to her husband.

The Sixth Novell.

Wherein is manifestly discorned, that if Love be drived to a narrow straight in any of his attempts; yet he can accomplish is purpose by some other supply.

W Ondrously pleasing to all the company, was the reported Novell of Madam Fiammetta, every one applauding the Womans wisedome, and that shee had done no more, than as the jealous foole her husband justly deserved. But shee having ended, the King gave order unto Madam Pampinea, that now it was her turne to speake, whereupon, thus she began. There are no meane store of people who say (though very false and foolishly) that Love maketh many to be out of sheir wits, and that such as fall in Love, do utterly lase their understanding. To me this appeareth a very idle opinion, as already it hath beene approved by the related discourses, and shall also be made manifest by an other of mine owne.

In our City of Florence, famous for some good, though as many bad qualities, there dwelt (not long since) a Gen: levyoman, endued with choise beauty and admirable perfections, being wife to Signior Beltramo, a very valiant Knight, and a man of great possessions. As oftentimes it commetts to passe, that a man cannot alwayes seeds on one kinde of bread, but his appetite will be longing after change: so fared it with this Lady, named Islatella, she being not fatisfied with the delights of her Husband; grew inamoured of a young Gentleman, called Lionella, compleate of person, albeit not of the fairest tortunes, yet his affection every way sutable to hers. And still well you know (faire Ladies)

Ladies) that where the minds irreciprocally accordes, no diligence wanteth for the defires execution: so this amourous couple, made many solemne protestations,

untill they should be friended by opportunity.

ccio

Me

ord

Mi-

ULD

can

the

one

had

ind

ave

her

are

alfe

of

of

dle

la-

10-

igh

ni-

, a

As al-

La-

de-

ng

al-

cry

irc

(3)

It fortuned in the time of their hopefull expectation a Knight, named Signior Lambertuccio, fell likewise in love with 1/abella: but because hee was somewhat unsightly of person, and utterly unpleasing in the eye, she grew regardlesse of his frequent solicitings, and would not accept either tokens, or letters. Which when he saw, (being very rich, and of great power) he sought to compasse his intent by a contrary course, threatning her with scandall and disgrace to her reputation, and with his associates to bandy against her best friends. Shee knowing what manner of man he was, and how able to abuse any with infamous imputations, wisely returned him hopefull promises, though never meaning to performe any, but onely (Lady-like) to statter and soole him therewith.

Some few miles from Florence, Beltrame had a Caftle of pleasure, and there his Lady Isabella used to be all Summer, as all other doe the like, being so posfeffed. On a day, Beltramo being ridden from home, and the having fent for Lionello, to take advantage of her husbands absence ; accordingly he went, not denbring but to winne what he had long expected. Signior Lambertuccio on the other fide, meeting Beltramo riding from his Caftle, and I fabella now fit to enjoy his company : gallops thither with all poffible speede, because hee would be no longer delaid. Scarcely was Lionello entred the Coffle, and receiving directions by the waiting woman, to her Ladies Chamber: but Lambertuccio gallopped in at the Gate, which the woman . perceiving, ranne prefently and acquainted her Lady with the comming of Lambertuccio.

Now was thee the onely forrowfull woman in the world; for nothing was now to be feared, but fformes

and

and tempests, because Lambertuccio, spake no other than Lightning and I hunder, and Lionesto, (being no lesse affraid than shee) by her perswasion crept behinds the bed, where he hid himselfe very contentedly. By this time Lambertuccio was dismounted from his Courser, which he fastened (by the bridle) to a ring in the wall, and then the waiting woman came to him, to guide him to her Lady and Mistresse; who stood at the staires head, graced him with a very acceptable welcome, yet marvelling much at his so sodaine comming. Lady (quoth he) I met your Husband upon the way, which granting mine accesse to see you; I same to claime your long delaied promise, the time being now so favourable for it.

Before he had uttered those words, Beltrame, having forgot an especial evidence in his study, which was the onely occasion of his journey, came gallopping backe againe into the Caffle Court, and feeing fuch a goodly Gelling frand faftened there, could not redily imagine who was the owner thereof. The waiting woman, upon the fight of her Mafters entring into the Court, came to her Lady, faying : My Mafter Beltramois returned backe, newly alighted, and (queffionlelle) comming up the flaires. Now was our Lady Ifabella, ten simes worfe affrighted than before, (having two feverall amourous futers in her house, both hoping, neither speeding, yet her credite lying at the stake for either) by this unexpected returne of her husband Moreover, there were no possible meanes, for the concealing of Signior Lambertuccio , because his Gelding food in the open Court, and therefore made a threwd presumption againft her, upon the least doubtfull question unged.

Neverthelete, as womens wits are alwayes best upon sudden constraints, looking forth of her Window, and cipying her Husband preparing to come up: shee shrew her selse on her day Couch, speaking thus (earan

fe

the

118

er,

Ill

im

res

yct

ch

our

4-

ng

he

ke

d-

n,

111

e-

11 .

en

C-

1-

1-

c-

n-

g

d

٧,

:

nessly to Lambertuccio. Sir, if ever you loved mee, and would have me faithfully to beleeve it, by the instant safety both of your own honour, and my life, doe but as I advise you. Forth draw your sword, and with a stearn countenance, threatning death and destruction: run downe the staires, and when you are beneath, say, I sweare by my best fortunes, although I misse of thee now here, yet I will be sure to sinde thee somewhere else. And if my Husband offer to stay you, or move any question to you: make no other answer, but what you formerly spake in sury. Beside, so soone as you are mounted on horsebacke, have no sutther conference with him, upon any occasion what soever; to prevent all suspicion in him, of our suture resolutions and intendments.

Lambertuccio sware many terrible oathes, to observe her directions in every part, and having drawne forth his fword, grasping it naked in his hand, and setting worfe lookes on the businesse, than ever Naturegave him, because he had spent so much labour in vaine : he failed not in a jot of the Ladies injunction. Beltrame having commanded his horie to fafe custody, and meeting Lambertuccio descending downe the staires, fo armed, fweating, and most extreamely storming, wondring extraordinarily as his threatning words, made offer to imprace him, and understand the reason of his diftemper. Lambertuccie repulling him rudely, and letting soote in the ftirrup, mounting on his Gelding, and spake nothing else but this. I sweare by the fairelt of all my fortunes, although I miffe of thee here : yet I will be fure to finde thee some where else, and so hee gallopped mainely away.

When Beltrame was come up into his wives Chamber, he found her cast down upon her Couch, weeping, full of feare, and greatly discomforted; wherefore hee faid unto her, What is hee that Signior Lambertuccio is so extreamely offended withall, and threatneth

Novell. 6. The Seventh Day;

in such implacable manner? The Lady arising from her Couth, going necre to the Beds, because Lionello might the better heare her returned her husband this answer, Husband (quoth shee) never was I so dreadfully affrighted till now, for a young Gentleman, of whence, or what he is, I know not, ame running into our Castle for refere, being pursued by Signior Lamber tuccio, with a wapon ready drawne in his hand. Ascending up our staires, by what fortune, I know not, hee found my Chamber doore standing open, finding me also working on my Sampler, and in wonderfull seare and trembling.

Good Madam (quoth lie) for Gods sake helpe to save my life, os else I shall be slaine here in your Chamber. Hearing his pitious cry, and compassionating his desperate case; I arose from my worke, and in my demanding of whence, and what he was, that durst presume so boldly into my bed-chamber: presently came up Signior Lambertuccio also, in the same unevill sort, as before I told you, swaggering and swearing; where is this traiterous villaine? Hereupon, I slept (somewhat stoutly) to my Chamber doore, and as he offered to enter; with a womans courage I resisted him, which made him so much enraged against me, that when he saw me to debarre his entrance; after many terrible and vile oathes and vowes, he ran downe the slaires agains, in such like manner, as you chanced to meete him.

Now trust me deare wife (sad Beltramo) you have behaved your selfe very well and worthily: for, it would have been a most notorious scandall to us, if a man should be fluine in our bed-chamber: and Signior Lambertuccio carried himselfe very dishonestly, to pursue any man so ourragioasly, having taken my Castle as his Sanctuary. But also wife, what is become of the poore affrighted Centleman? In troth Sir (quoth the) I know not, but (somewhere or other) here about hee is hudden. Where art thou honest friend? said plaine

meaning

meaning Beltramo; Come forth and feare not, for thine

her ght

ver.

af-

ice,

Ale

vich

out

my

ork-

em-

ave

ber.

def.

an-

ame

Sig-

be-

this

has

en-

ade

me

vile

e, in

SYE

r, it

, if a

nior

pur-

ic as

the

the)

hee

aine

enemy is gone. Lionello, who had heard all the fore-paffed discourse, which shee had delivered to her Husband Beltrame, came creeping forth amazedly (as one now very fearefull affrighted indeede) from under the further fide of the bed, and Beltramolaid to him, What a quarrell was this, betweene thee and and furious Lambertuccio? Not any at all Sir, replied Lionello, to my knowledge, which verily perferadeth mee; that either hee is not well in his wits, or elle he mistaketh mee for some other; because, so soone as he saw me on the way, somewhat necre to this your caffle, he drew forth his fword, and swearing an horrible oath, faid. Traitor, thou are a dead man. Vpon these rough words, I staied not to question the occasion of mine offending him : but fled from him fo tait as poffibly I could; but confesse my felfe (indeede) over-bold, by prefuming into your Ladies bed chamber, which yet (equalled with her mercie) hath beene the only meanes at this time, of faving my life.

She hath done like a good Lady, answered Beltramo, and I doe very much commend her for it. But, recollect thy dismaied spirits together, for I will see thee safely secured hence, afterward looke to thy selfe so well as thou canst. Dinner being immediatly made ready, and they having merrly seasted together: hee bestowed a good Celding on Lionello, and rode along with him to Florence, where he less thim quietly in his owne lodging. The selfe-same Evening (according as Isabella had given enstruction) Lionello conferred with Lambertuccio: and such an agreement passed betweene them, that though rough speeches were noised abroad, to fet the better colour on the businesse; yet all matters were so cleanely carried, that Beltramo never

knew this queint deceitfull policy of his wife.

Lodovico

Novell. 7. The Seventh Day,

Lodovico discovered to his Missiresse Madam Beatrix, how amorously he was affected to her. Shee cunningly fent Egano her husband into his Garden, in all respects disguised like her selfe, while (friendly) Lodovico conferred with her in the means while. Afterward, Lodovico pretending a lascivious asurement of his Missiresse, thereby to wrong his honest Masser, instead of her, beateth Egano sendly in the Garden.

Whereby is declared, that fuch as keepe many honeft feeming fervants, may sometimes finde a knave among them, and one that proves to be over-sawcy with his Master.

This is obtaine dexterity of wit in Isabella, related in very modest manner by Madam Pampinea, was not onely admired by all the company; but likewise passed with as generall approbation. But yet Madam Philomena (whom the King had commanded next to succeede) peremptorily said. Worthy Ladies, if I am not deceived, I intend to tell you another Tale presently; as much to be commended as the last.

You are to understand then, that it is no long time since, when there dwelt in Paris a Florentine Gentleman, who falling into decay of his estate, by overbountifull expences; undertooke the degree of a Merchant, and thrived so well by his trading, that he grew to great wealth, having one onely sonne by his wife, named Lodovico. This sonne, partaking somewhat in his Fathers former height of minde, and no way inclinable to deale in Merchandize, had no meaning to be a Shop-man, and therefore accompanied the Gentlemen of France, in sundry services for the Kingjamong whom, by his singular good carriage and qualities, hee happened to be not meanely esteemed. While thus he continued in the Court, it chanced, that certaine Knights, returning stom servases, having there visi-

cal

th

m

up

VO

ob

mi

ot

int

in

lon

atte

ted the holy Sepulcher, and comming into company where Lodovico was: much discourse passed among them, concerning the faire women of France, England, Italy, and other parts of the world, where they had beene, and what delicate beauties they had seene.

ela

as

:60

rd.

his

ead

ee-

one

h13

din

not

fied

me-

de)

cei-

23

ime

tle-

ver-

rew vife,

t in

o be

nile-

hee

she

aine.

icd

One in the company confantly avouched, that of all the women by them fo generally observed, there was not any comparable to the wife of Egano de Galazzi, dwelling in Bologna, and her name was Madam Beatrix, reputed to be the only faire woman of the world. Many of the reft maintained as much, having beene at Belogna, and likewife seene her. Ledovico hearing the woman to be so highly commended, and never (as yet) feeling any thought of amorous inclination; became fodainely toucht with an earnest defire of keing her, and his minde could entertaine no other matter, but onely of travelling thither, yea, and to continue there, if occasion to ferved. The reason for his journey urged to his Father, was to vifite lerufalem, and the holy Sepulcher, which with much difficulty, at length he obtained his leave.

Being on his journey towards Bologna, by the name of Anichino, and not of Lodovico, and being there arrived; upon the day following, and having underflood the place of her abiding: it was his good hap, to fee the Lady at her Window; thee appearing in his eye farre more faire, than all reports had made her to be. Hereupon, his affection became so inflamed to her, as hee vowed, never to depart from Bologna, until hee had obtained her love. And devising by what meanes hee might effect his hopes, he grew perswaded (setting all other attempts aside) that is hee could be entertained into her Husbands service, and undergo some businesse in the house, time might tutor him to obtaine his long expected, & much wished desire. Having given his attendants sufficient allowance, to spare his company,

Novell.7. The Seventh Day,

and take no knowledge of him, felling his Horfes alfo, and other notices as might differer him: he grew into acquaintance with the Hoafte of the house where hee lay, revealing an earnest desire in himselfe, to serve fome Lord or worthy Gentleman, if any were willing

to give him entertainment.

Now beleeve mee Sir (answered the Hoaste) you feeme worthy to have a good fervice indeede, and I know a noble Gentleman of this Citie, who is named Egano: he will (without all question)accept your offer, for he keepeth many men of very good deferving, and you shall have my furtherance therein so much as may be. As he promised, so he performed, and taking Anichino with him uno Egano; to farre he prevailed by his friendly protestations, and good opinion of the young Gentleman ; that Anichino was (without more adoe) accepted into Eganoes fervice, than which, nothing could be more pleasing to him. Now had he the benefit of daily beholding his hearts Mistreffe, and so accept table proved his fervice to Egano, that he grew very far in love with him : not undertaking any affaires whatfoever, without the advice and direction of Anichino, so that he reposed the most especiall trust in him, as a man altogether governed by him.

It fortuned upon a day, that Egano being ridden to flie his Hawke at the River, and Anichino remaining behinde at home, Madam Beatrix, who (as yet) had taken no notice of Anichinoes love to her (albeit her felfe observing his faire carriage and commendable qualities, was highly pleased to have so seeming a servant) called him to play at Chesse with her; and Anichino, covering nothing more than to content her, carried himselfe to dexteriously in the game, that he permitted her still to win, which was no little joy to her. When all the Gentlewomen, and other friends there present, as spectators to behold their play, had taken their fareweil, and were departed, leaving them all a

lone,

lone, yet gaming still: Anichino breathing forth an intire sigh, Madam Bentrix looking merrily on him, said. Tell me Anichino, art not thou angry, to see me win less should appear so by that solemne sigh. No truely Madam, answered Anichino, a matter of farre greater moment, than loss of infinit games at the Chesse, was the occasion why I sighed. I pray thee (replied the Lady) by the love thou bearest me, as being my servant sif any love at all remains in thee towards mee) give

me a reason for that hearty sigh.

Ifc,

into

hee

TVC

ling

you

nd I

med

ffer.

and

may

Ini-

his

ung

oe)

ing

ne-

cra.

far

at-

0,60

nan

to

ing

nad

her

ble

er-

ni-

11-

210

er.

re

en

2.

C,

When he heard himfelfe fo feverely conjured, by the love he bare to her, and loved none elfe in the world befide: hee gave a farre more heartficke figh, than before. Then his Lady and Mistreffe entreated him ferioully, to let her know the cause of those two deepe fighes : whereto Antchino thus replied. Madam, if I should tell you, I stand greatly in scare of offending you : and when I have told you, I doubt your discovery thereof to some other. Beleeve me Anechino (quoth the) therein thou neither cank, or fhalt offend me. Morcover, affure thy felfe, that I will never disclose it to any other, except I may doe it with thy confent. Madam (faid hee) feeing you have protested such a folemne promile to me, I will reveale no meane fecret unto you. So, with teares flanding in his eyes, he told her what he was ; where he heard the first report of her fingular perfections, and instantly became enamored of her ,as the maine motive of his entring into her fervice. Then he humbly he intreated her, that if it might agree with her good liking, she would be pleased to commisserate his case, and grace him with her private favours. Or.if the might not be fo merciful to him; that yet the would vouchfafe, to let him live in the lowly condition as hee did, and thinke it a thankefull duety in him, onely to love her. O fingular sweetnesse, naturally living in faire feminine bloud! How justly art thou worthy of praise

in the like occasions? Thou couldst never be wonne

b

Novell.7. The Seventh Day,

by fighes and teares; but heartis imprecations have alwayes prevailed with thee, making thee apt and cafe to amorous defires. If I had praifes answerable to thy great and glorious deservings, my voyce should never faint, nor my pen waxe weary, in the due and obsequi-

ous performance of them.

Madam Beatrix, well observing Anichino when hee spake, and giving credite to his so solemne protestations; they were so powerfull in prevailing with her, that her fenfes (in the same manner) were inchanted; and fighes flew as violently from her, as before he had vented them ; which flormy tempests being a little overblowne, thus fhee fpake, Anichino, my hearts deare affected friend, live in hope, for I tell thee truly, never could gifts, promifes, nor any Courtings used to me by Lords, Knights, Gentlemen, or other (although I have beene folicited by many) win the least grace or favour at my hand, no, nor move mee to any affection. But thou, in a minute of time (compared with their long and tedious luing) haft expressed luch a soveraigne potencie in thy sweete words, that thou hast made mee more thine, than mine owne: and beleeve it unfainedly, I hold thee to be worthy of my love. Wherfore, with this kiffe I freely give it thee, and make thee a further promise, that before this night shall be fully past, thou shalt in better manner perceive it. Adventure into my Chamber about the houre of midnight, I will leave the doore open: theu knowest on which fide of the bed I use ro rest, come thither and feare not : if I sleepe, the least gentle touch of thy hand will wake me, and then thou shalt see how much I love thee, So with a kinde kiffe or two, the bargaine was concluded, the licenting his departure for that time, and hee staying in hope of his hearts happinelle, he thought every houre a yeare.

In the meane while; Egano returned home from Hawking, and so soone as hee had supt (being very weary) he went to bed, and his Lady with him, lea-

Co

ving her chaber doore open, according as she had promised. At the houre appointed, Anichizo came, finding the doore but easily put too, which (being entred) softly he closed agains in the same manner as she found it. Going to the beds side where the Lady lay and gently touching her brest with his hand, hee found her to be awake, and perceiving he was come according unto promise, the caught his hand sast with hers, and held havery strongly. Then turning (as she could) towards Egano, shee made such meanes, as hee awaked, where-

upon the spake unto him as followeth.

fie

hy

ver

ui-

ice

ti-

120

and

en-

er-

2f-

ver

by

lave

our

But

ong

po-

mce

red-

with

ther

thou

my

cave

bed

,the

then

inde

ing

30 Ot

Irc.

from

very

ica-

YING

Sir, yesternight I would have had a few speeches with you : but, in regard of your wearinesse and early going to bed, I could not have any opportunity. Now, this time and place being most convenient, I defire to be refolved by you: Among all the men retained into your fervice; which of them doe you thinke to be the beft, most loyall, and worthich to enjoy your love ? Egano answered thus : Wife, why should you move such aquestion to me? Doe not you know, that I never had any fervant heretofore, or ever shall have hereafter, in whom I repoled the like trust as I have done, and doe in Anichine? But to what end is this motion of yours? I will tell you Sir (quoth fhee) and then be ludge your felfe, whether I have reasom to moue this question, or no. Mine opinion every way equalled yours, concerning Anichino, and that hee was more just and faithfull to you, than any could be amongst the rest : But hasband, like as where the water runneth stilleft, the Foordis deepeft, even fo, his smooth lookes have beguiled both you and me: Fo, no longer agoe than this present day, no looner were you ridden forth on Hawking, but hee (belike purposely) tarrying at home, watching such a leilure, as best fitted bis intent : was not ashamed to folicite mee, born to abuse your bed, and mine owne spotlesse honour.

Moreover, he profecuted his vile purpose with fuch

alluring personations; that being a weake woman, and not able to endure over many amotous proofes (onely to acquaint you with his most faweie immodestie, and to revenge your selfe upon him as best you may; your selfe being best able to pronounce him guilty) I made him promise, to meete him in our Garden, presently after unid night and to finde me fitting under the Pinetree; never meaning (as I am vertuous) to be there. But, that you may know the deceit and falsehood of your servant, I would have you to put on my night-gowne, my head attire, and Chinne-cloath, and sitting but a short while there underneath the Pinetree; such is his insatiate desire, as he will not falle to come, and then you may proceede, as you finde occasion.

When Egano heard these words, sodainely he started out of bed, faying. Doe I foster such a Snake in mine owne bosome? Gramercie Wife for this politicke promile of thine, and beleeve me, I meane to follow it effectually. So on he put his Ladies Night-gowne , her formall head Attire and Chin-cloth, going presently downe into the Garden to expect Anichinoes comming to the Pine-tree. But before the matter grew to this iffue, let me demande of you, faire Ladies, in what a lamentable condition (as you may imagine) was poore Anichino; to be so detained by her, heare all his amorous fuite discovered, and likely to draw very heavy afflictions on him? Vindoubredly, hee looked for immediate apprehension by Egano, imprisonment, and publike punishment for his to malapart prefumption ; and had it proved to, the had much renowned her felfe, and dealt with him but as he had justly deserved.

But frailty in our teminine fex is too much preualent, and makes us wander from vertuous courses, when we are wellonward in the way to them. Madam Beatrix, whatsoever passed between eher and Anichino, I know not, but, either to continue this new begunne league for further time, or, to be revenged upon her

husbands

in

82

nd

civ

nd

our

ade

tly

ne-

erce

dof

ht-

ing

luch

and

rted

nine

pro-

it ef-

her

ently

ming

1511-

a la-

poore

amo-

vy af

mme-

pub-

and

e,and

prena-

when

Bea-

pino, I

gunne

on her

sbands

husbands simplicitie, in over-rashly giving credite to fo fanooth a lie; this was her advice to him, Anichino, quoth the, Take a good Cudgell in thy hand, then goe into the Garden le farre as the Pine; and there, as it formerly thou hadft folicited me unto this feeret meeting, onely but by way of approving my honeftie: in my name revile thy Mafter fo bitterly as thou canft , bestowing many found blowes on him with thy cudgell; yet urge the shame still (as it were) to me, and never leave him, till thou halt beaten him out of the Garden, to teach him keepe his bed another time. Such an apt Scholler as Anichino was in this kinde, needs no tutoring, but a word is enough to a ready Wit. To the Garden goes he; with a good Willow Cudgell in his hand, and comming neere to the Pine tree, there hee found Egano disquised like to his Lady; who arising from the place whete he fate, went with cheerefull geflure to welcome him; but Anichine (in rough and fterne manner) thus fpake unto him. Wicked, thameleffe, and most immodes Woman. Art thou come, acacording to thine unchaste and lascivious promise? Couldest thou so easily credite (though I tempted thee, to trie the vertue of thy continencie) I would offer fuch adamnable wrong to my worthy Mafter, that fo dearely loves me, and repofeth his especial confidence in me? Thou are much deceived in me, and thale finde, that I hate to be falle to him.

So lifting up the Cudgell, hee gave him therewith halfe a fcore good baftinadoes, laying them on foundly, both on his armes and shoulders: and Egawo feeling the smart of them, durst not speake one Word, but fled away from him so fast as he could: Anichino still following, and multiplying may other injurious speeches against him, with the Epethites of strumper, lustfull and unsatiable Woman. Goethou levede beast (quoth he) most unworthy the title of a Lady, or to be Wife unto lo good a nature a man, as my Matter is, to whom I will

reveale

reveale thy most ungracious incivility to morrows that he may punish thee a little better than I have done.

Egano being thus well beaten for his Garden walke, got within the doore, and fo went up to his Chamber againe : his Lady there demanding of him, whether A. nichino came according to his promise, or no ? Come? quoth Egano. Yes Wife, hee came, but dearely tomy cost: for he verily taking me for thee, hath beaten mee very extreamely, calling me an hundred Whores and Strumpers, reputing thee to be the wickedst woman living. In good fadnesse Beatrix, Iwondered not a little at him, that he would give thee any fuch vile speeches, with intene to wrong me in mine honour. Questionleffe, because hee faw thee to be joviall spirited, gracious and affable towards all men; therefore he intended to make triall of thine honest carriage, Well Sir (faid the) twas happy that kee tempted mee with words, and let you tafte the proofe of them by decdes: and let him thinke, that I brooke those words as dista-Rably, as you doe or can, his ill deeds. But feeing hee is so just, faithfull, and loyall to you, you may love him the better, and respect him as you finde occasion.

Whereto Egano thus replied. Now trust mee Wife, thou haft faid very well: And drawing hence the arev ment of his fetled perlivation; that he had the chaffelt woman living to his wife, and fo just a servant, as could not be fellowed; there never was any further difcovery of this Garden-night accident. Perhaps, Madam Beatrix and Anichino might fubrilly fimile thereatin fecret, in regard that they knew more than any other elle belide did, But, as for honest meaning Egano, hee never had so much as the least mistrust of ill dealing, either in his Lady, or Anichino; whom hee loved and fin highly effeemed farre more respectively upon this my proofe of his honesty towards him, than hee would or for could possibly have done, without a triall to plaine and

pregnant.

Arriguccio

te

me 10

fin

mer

Arriguccio Berlinghieri, became immeasurably jealous of his Wife Simonida, who fastened a thred about her creat toe, for to ferve as a fignall, when her amorous friend fould come to vifite her. Arriguccio findeth the fallacie, and while he pursueth the amorous friend. the canfeth her maide to lie in her bed against his rerarne, whom be beateth extreamely, cutting away the tockes of her baire (thinking he had done all this violence to his wife Simonida :) and afterward fetcheth her Mother and Brethren, to Shame her before them. and fo be rid of her. But they finding all his freeches to be falle; and reputing him to be a jealous foole; all the blame and difgrace falleth upon bimfelfe.

The eight Novell.

Whereby appeareth , that an Husband ought to be very well advised, when he meaneth to discover any wrong offered bis wife ; except hee himfefe doe rashly runne into all the fhame and reproach.

IT feemed to the whole affembly, that Madam Beatrin, dealt fomewhat ftrangely, in the manuer of beguiling her husband; and affirmed alfo, that Anichino had greate cause of feare, when thee held him fo from ely by her beds fide, and related all his amorous tempeations. Bue when the King perceived, that Madam Philomena face filent , he turned to Madam Neiphile, willing her to supply the next place; who modefly familing thus began.

Faire Ladies, it were an heavie burthen imposed on me, and a matter much furmounting my capatity if ino, hee I should vainely imagine, to content you with so pleacaling, ling a Novell, as those have already done, by you fo ved and fingularly reported: nevertheleffe, I muft discharge on this my dutie in obeying my Soveraigne, and take my gould of fortune as it fallerh out, albeit I hope to finde you ine and mercifull.

You are to know then, that fometime there lived in

rriguccio

OW

once

ilke.

nber

A.

med

PITIC

mee

and

man

a lit-

pee-

Que-

rised.

ic in-

Well

with

cdes: dista-

ng hee

y love

Gon

Wife,

earcu

hafteft

int, as

ner dif-

Madam

reatin

y other

our City, a very wealthy Merchant, named Arriguccio Berlinghieri, who (as many Merchants have done) fondly imagined, to make him a Gentleman by marriage. Which that he might the more affuredly doe, he tooke to wife a Gentlewoman, one much above his degree and element, the being named Simonida. Now. in regard that he delighted (as it is the usuall life of a Merchant) to be often abroad, and little at home. whereby the had small benefit of his company; the grew very forward in affection with a young Gentleman. called Signior Roberto, who had folicited her by many amorous meanes, and (at length) prevailed to win her favour. Which favour being once obtained; affection gaddes fo farre beyond all discretion, and makes Lovers To heedeleffe of their private conversations: that either they are taken tardy in their folly, or elfe subjected to Scandalous suspition.

It came to passe that Ariguecio, either by remour, or some other more sensible apprehension, had received such intelligence concerning his wife Simonida, as he grew into extraordinary jealouse of her, reframing travellabroad, as formerly he was wont to doe, and ceasing from his very ordinary affaires, addicting all his care and endeavour, onely to be watchfull of his wise; so that he never durst sleepe, untill shee was by him in the bed, which was no meane molestation to her, being thus curbd from her familiar meetings with Roberto. Neverthelesse, having a long while consulted with her wits, to finde some apt meanes for convessing with him, being thereto also very earnestly still solicited by him; you shall heare what course shee under

Her Chamber being on the streete side, and some what justing over it, the observed the disposition of he

husband, that every night it was long before he felia fleepe: but being once falne into it, no noise whate ever, could casily wake him. This his solemne and found sleeping, emboldened her so farre, as to meete with Roberto at the streete doore, which (while her husband sleet) softly shee would open to him, and

there in private converse with him.

But because shee would know the certaine houre of his comming without the least suspicion of any: shee hung a thread forth of her Chamber window, descending downe, within the compasse of Robertoes reach in the streete, and the other end thereof, guided from the window to the bod, being conveied under the cloathes, and being in bod, shee fastned it about her lest great Toc, wherewith Roberto was sufficiently acquainted, and thus enstructed withall; that at his comming, hee should plucke the thred, and if her husband was in his dead sleepe, shee would let goe the thred, and come downe to him: but if he slept not, shee would hold it strongly, and then his tarrying would proove but in vaine, there could be no meeting that night.

This device was highly pleasing to Roberto and Simonida, being the intelligencer of their often meeting, and many times also advising the contrary. But in the end, as the quaintest cunning may faile at one time or other; so it fortuned one night, that Simonida being in a sound sleepe, and Arriguecio waking, because his drowsie houre was not as yet come: as hee extended forth his legge in the bed, hee found the thred, which feeling in his hand, and perceiving it was tied to his wives great toe; it proved apt tinder to kindle further jealousie, and now he suspected some treachery indeed, and so much the rather, because the thred guided (under the cloathes) from the bed to the window, and there hanging downe into the street, as a warning to

some further bufinesse.

Now was Arriguctio fo furiously inflamed, that hee must needs be further resolved in this apparent doubt: and because therein hee would not be deceived, softly he cut the thred from his wives toe, and made it fast

gg 2

ahou

on of he he felia whatfo mane and

Loun

Becia

me)

mar-

e his

vov.

e of a

grew

many

in her

Cover

either

fed to

recei-

nida, as

, and

tingall

of his

was by

tion to

gs with

nfulted

rerling

Il folici-

e under-

Nevell.8. The Seventh Day,

about his given; to trie what fuccesse would ensue thereon. It was not long before Koberto came, and according as he used to doe, he plucke the thred, which Arrieuccio felt, but because he had not tied it fast, and Koberto pulling it over hardly, it fell downe from the window into his hand, which he understood as his leffon, to attend her comming, and fo he did. Arriguecio fealing foftly out of bed from his wife, and taking his Sword under his arme, went downe to the doore, to fee who it was, with full intent of further revenge. Now, albeit hee was a merchant, yet hee wanted not any courage, and boldnesse of spirit, and opening the doore without any noyle, only as his wife was went to do: Roberto, there waiting his entrace, perceived by the doores unfathionable opening, that it was not Simonide, but her husband, whereupon he betooke himfelie to fight, and Arrigaccio fiercely followed him. At the length, Roberto perceiving flight availed him not, because his enemy still perfued him: being armed also tyich a Sword, as Arriguccio was ; hee returned backe upon him, the one offering to offend, as the other flood upon his defence, and foin the darke they fought together.

Simonida awaking, even when her husband went forth of the Chamber, and finding the threed to be cut from her tee; and conjectured immediately, that her fubile cunning was differently and fuppeling her husband in purfitte of Roberto, prefently the arole; and confidering what was likely to enfue thereon, called her Chamber-maide (who was not ignorant in the buthactic) and by perfivations prevailed to with her, that he lay downe in her place in the bed, upon following protestations and liberail promifes, not to make her felte knowne, but to fuffer all patiently, either blowes, or any ill usage of her husband, which the would recompence in such bountifull fort, as the should have no occasion to complaine. So, putting forth the watch-

light

light, which every night burned in the Chamber, face departed thence, and fate downe in a close corner of the house, to see what would be the end of all this stirre

after her husbands comming home.

ere-

-100

179-

the

eccio

his

, to

nge.

not

nt to

v the

10/12-

tero

the

be-

alfo

acke

AL TO

e cut

cher

huf-

alled

nthe

her.

n fo-

make

ther

bluov

have

arch-

light

The fight (as you have formerly heard) continuing betweene Roberto and Arriguecio, the neighbours hearing of the clashing of their Swords in the streets, arofa out of their beds , and reproved them in very harsh manner. In which respect Arrignecie, fearing to be knowne, and ignorant alfo what his adverfaryavasino harme being as yet done on either fide)permitted him to depart; and extreamely full of anger, returned backe againe to his house. Being come up into his bed-chamber, Thus he began; Where is this levede and wicked woman? What? Hast thou put out the light, because I should not finde thee ? that shall not availe thee, for I can well finde a drab in the darke. So, groping on to the beds fide, and thinking he had taken hold of his wife, he grasped the Chamber-maide, so beating her with his fifts, and fourning her with his feete, that all her face was bloudy and bruised. Next, with his knife he cut off a great deale of her haire, giving her the most villanous speeches as could be devised : swearing that he would make her a shame to all the world.

You neede make no doubt, that the poore maide wept exceedingly, as the had good occasion to doe; and albeit many times the defired mercy, and that he would not be to cruell to her; yet notwithstanding, her voyce was to broaken with crying, and his impacience to extreame, that rage hindered all power of distinguishing, or knowing his wives tongue from a firangers. Having thus madly beaten her, and cut the leckes off from her head, thus hee spake to her. Wicked woman, and no wife of mine, be sure I have not done with thee yets for, although I meane not now to beate thee any longer: I will go to thy brethren, and they shall understand thy dishonest behaviour. Then will I bring them with

Novell.8. The Seventh Day,

mee, and they perceiving how much thou haft abused both their honour and thine owne; let them deale with thee as they finde occasion, for thou are no more a companion for me. No sooner was these angry words uttered, but he went forth of the Chamber, bolting it fast on the outward side, as meaning to keepe her safely in alosed, and out of the house he went alone by himselfe.

Simonida, who had heard all this tempefluous conflict perceiving that her Husband had lockt the ffreete doore after him, and was gone whither he pleafed:unbolted the Chamber doore, lighted a waxe candle, and went in to fee her poore maide, whom the found to be most pitiously misused. Shee comforted her as well as the could, brought her againe into her owne lodging Chamber, where washing her face and hurs in very soversigne waters, and rewarding her liberally with Arriguccioes owne gold; the held her felfe to be fufficiently fatisfied. So, leaving the maide in her lodging, and returning againe to her owne Chamber: thee made up the bed in such former manner, as if no body had lodged therein that night. Then hanging up her Lampe fresh fild with oyle, and clearely lighted, she deckt her felie in fo decent fort, as if the had been in no bed at all that night.

Then taking fowing worke in her hand, either shirts or bands of her Husbands; hanging the Lampe by her, and sitting downe at the staires head, shee fell to worke in very serious manner, as if she had undertaken some

imposed taske.

On the other fide, Arriguccio had travelled to farre from his house, till he came at last to the dwelling of Simenidaes brethren: where he knockt so soundly, that he was quickly heard, and (almost as speedily) let in: Simonidaes brethren, and her mother also, hearing of Arriguccioes comming thither so late, rose from their beds, and each of them having a waxe Candle lighed, came presently to him, to understand the cause of this

his so unseasonable visitation. Arriguecio beginning cathe originall of the matter, the thred found tied about his wives great toe, the fight and houshould conflict after following: related every circumstance to them. And for the better proofe of his words, hee shewed them the thread it selfs the lockes supposed of his wives haire, and adding withall; that they might now difpose of Simonida as themselves pleased, because she

fhould remaine no longer in his house.

P

ts

r,

kc

ne

rre

of

rat

in:

of

cir

d.

his

The brethren to Simonida were exceedingly offended at this relation, in regard they beleeved it for truth, and in this fury, commanded Torches to be lighted, preparing to part thence with Arriguccio home to his owne house, for the more tharpe reprehension of their Sifter. Which when their mother faw, thee followed them weeping, first intreating one, and then the other, not to be over rash in crediting such a slader, but rather fearch the truth thereof advisedly: because the Husband might be angry with his Wife upon some other occasion, and having outraged her, made this the meanes in excuse of himselfe. Moreover shee said, that shee could not chuse but wonder greatly, how this matter should thus come to passe; because she had good knowledge of her daughter, during the whole course of her education, faultleffe and blameleffe in every degree; with mamy other good words of her befide, as proceeding from naturall affection of a mother.

Being come to the house of Arriguetio, entring in: and ascending up the staires, they heard Simonidas sweet-ly singing at her working; but pausing, upon hearing their rude trampling, shee demanded, who was there. One of the angry brethren answered: Lewde woman as thou art, thou shalt know soone enough who is here: Our blessed Lady be with us (quoth Simonida) and sweet Saint Francis helpe to defend me, who dare use such unseemely speeches? Starting up, and meeting them on the staire head: Kinde brethren, (said shee)

Ave Maria (quoth Simonida, croffing her felfe) Ales deare Brethren, I know not what you fay, or mean, nor wherein my husband should be offended, or make any complaint at all of me. Arriguccio hearing this, looking on her like a man that had loft his Senfes : for well he remembred, how many cruell blowes hee had given her on the face, befide feratches of his nailes, and frames of his feere, as alfo the cutting of her haire, the least thew of all which misugage, was not now to be feene. Her brethren likewise briefely told her, the whole effect of her hasbands speeches, shewing her the thred, and in what cruell manner he sware he did beate her. Simonida; turning then to her husband, and feeming as confounded with amazement, faid. How is this hufband? what doe I heare? would you have mee suppofed (to your owne shame and difgrace) to be a bad woman, and your felfe a cruell curft man, when (on either fide) there is no fuch matter? When were you this night here in the house with me ? Or when should you beate me, and I not feele or know it ? Beleeve me (fweet heart) all thefe are meerely miracles to me.

Now was driguccio ten times more mad in his mind, than before, faying. Divell, and no woman, did we not this night go both rogether to bed? Did not I cut this thred from thy great toe, tied it to mine, and found the craftic compact betweene thee and thy Minion? Did-I not follow and fight with him in the firette? Came I not backe againe, and beate thee as a Strumpet should be? And are not these the locks of haire, which I my selfe did cut from thy head?

Alas Sir (quoth thee) where have you beene? Doe you know what you tay? you did not lodge in this house this night, neither did I see you all the whole day

and night till novy.

255

ur

ne

2-

d,

m

en

at

nd

er

er

1,

ce

5,

or

d

d

e

e

le

,

.

Byt leaving this, and come to the matter now in quefion, because I have no other testimony but my owne words. You fay, that you did beate me, and cut those lockes of haire from my head Alas Sir, why should you . flander your felfe ? in all your life time you did never Atike me. And to approve the truth of thefe speeches doe you your felfe, and all elfe here prefent, looke on me advisedly, if any figure of blow or beating is to be frene on me. Nor were it an eafie matter for you to do either to finite, or fo much as lay your hand (in anger) on me, it would coft dearer than you thinke for. And. whreas you fay, that you did cut thefe lockes of haire from my head; it is more than either I know, or felt, nor are they in colout like to mine: but because my Mother and brethren thall be my witnesses therein, and whether you did it without my knowledge; you shall all fee, af they be cut, or no. So, taking off her head actire, the displaced her haire over her thoulders, which had fuffered no violence, neither feemed to be fo much as uncivilly or judely handled.

When the mother and be thren faw this, they begun to murmure against Arrequecia, faying. What thinke you of this Sir? You tell us of strange matters which you have done, and all proving falle and unlikely, we wonder how you can make good the rest. Arriguecia looked wilde and confusedly, striving still to maintaine his accusation; but hee seeing every thing fall.

to be flutly against him, he durst not attempt to speake one word. Simonida tooke advantage of this distraction in him, and turning to her brethren, said. I see now the marke whereat he aimeth, to make me doe what I never meant: Namely, that I should acquaint you with his vile qualities, and what a wretched life I leade with him, which seeing hee will needs have me to reveale;

beare with me if I doe it upon compulsion.

Mother and brethren, I am verily perfwaded, that those accidents which he disclosed to you, hath doubt-less in (the same manner) happened to him, and you shall heare how. Very true it is, that this seeming honess man, to whom (in a lucklesse houre) you married me, stileth himselfe by the name of a Merchant, covering to be so accounted and created, as holy in outward appearance, as a Religious Monke, and as demure in lookes, as the modestess maid the a notorious common drunkard, is a Taverne hunter, where making his luxurious matches, one while with one whore, then againe with another; he causeth me every night to sit tarrying for him, even in the same fort asyou found me: sometimes till midnight, and other whiles all broad day light in the morning.

And questionlesse, being in his wonted drunken humour, he hath lien with one of his sweete Consorts, about whose toe he found the thred, and finding her as false to him, as he hath alwayes becare to me: Did not onely beat her, but also cut the haire from her head. And having not yet recovered his sences, is verily perswaded, and cannot be altered from it; but that he personned all this villany to me. And if you doe but advisedly observe his countenance, hee appeareth yet to be

more than halfe drunke.

But whatfoever he hath faid concerning me, I make no account at all therof, because he spake it in his drunkennesse; and as freely as I doe forgive him, even so fogood Mother, and kind brethren) let me intreate you so doe the like.

When

age

ion

OVV

at I

ith

ith

le;

hat

ot-

OU

0-

ica

re-

ut-

e-

us

12-

res

ht

OM

c3

U-

2-

as

ot

d.

t-

r-

1-

30

ce

When the Mother had heard these words, and confidently beleeved her Daughter: the began to tormene her felfe with anger, faying. By the faith of my body Daughter, this unkindneffe is not to be endured, but rather let the dogge be hanged, that his qualities may be known, he being utterly unworthy, to have fo good a woman to his wife, as thou art. What could he have done more, if he had taken thee in the open ftrete, and . in company of fome wanton Gallant? In an unfortnnate house wast thou married to him, base jealous Coxcombe as he is; and it is quite against lense, or reason, that thou fouldest be subject to his fooleries. What was hee, but a Merchant of Eale skinnes or Orenges; bred in some paltry Countrey Village; taken from Hogge-rubbing; cloathed in Sheepes-Sattin, with Clownish Startops , Leather stockings, & Caddies garters .: His whole habite not worth three fillings : And yet he must have a faire Gentlewoman to his Wife, of honest fame, riches and reputation; when, comparing his pedegree with hers , hee is farre unfit to wipe her Doocs.

Oh my deare Sonnes. I would you had followed my counfell, and permitted her to match in the honourable Family of Count Guido, which was much moved, and feriously pursued. But you would needs bestow her on this goodly lewell; who, although the is one of the fairest beauties in all Florence, chaste, honest and truely vertuous: Is not ashamed at midnight, to proclaime her for a common whore, as if we had no better knowledge of her. But by the blessed Mother of Saint Iohns if you would be ruled by mine advise; our law should make him dearely smart for it.

Alas my fonnes, did I not tell you at home in our owne house, that his words were no way likely to prove true? Have not your eyes observed his unmannerly behaviour to your Sister? If I were as you are, hearing what hee hath said, and noting his drunken

carriage

carriage belide ; I should never give over, as long as he had any life left in him: And were f a man, as I am a woman, none other than my felfe, fould revenge her wrongs, making him a spectacle to all drabbing drunkards.

When the breihren had heard and observed all these occurrences; in most bitter manner they railed on Arriguecio, beflowing some good bastinadoes on him befide, concluding thus with him in the end. Quoth one of them, We will pardon this thamefull abusing of our Sifter, because thou art a notorious drunkard; but looke to it (on perill of thy life) that wee have no more fuch newes hereafter; for, beleeve it unfainedly, if any fach impudent rumours happen to our cares, or fo much as a flying fame thereof thou thalt furely be paid for both faults together.

So home againe went they, and Arriguecio food like one that had neither life or motion, nor knowing whether what he had cone) was true or no, or if he dreamed all this while, and for without uttering any word) he left his wife, and went quietly to bed. Thus by her wifedome, the did not onely prevent an imminent perill : but made a free and an open pattage, to further contentment with her amourous friend, yet dreadleffe

of any distalte or inspicion in her husband.

Frerein is declared, that great Lords sometime be decei-

Ludia, a Lady of great beauty, birth and honor, being wife to Nicoffatus, Governor of Argos, falling in love with a Gentleman, named Pyrrhus; was requested by him (as a true testimony of her unfeigned affiction) to performe three feverall allions of her felfe. She did accomplish them all, and imbraced and kiffed Pyrohus in the presence of Nicostratus; by persivading him, that what foever he fam, was meerely falle. The ninth Novell.

wed by their wives, as well as men of meaner condition THe Novelldelivered, by Madam Neiphila, feemed fo pleasing to all the Ladies; as they could not refraine from hearty laughter, belide much liberalitie of speech. Albeitthe King did oftentimes uige filence, and commanded Pamphilus to follow next. So, when attention was admitted, Pamphi's began in this order. I am of opinion, faire Ladies, that there is not any marter, how uneafic or doubtfull foever it might feeme to besbut the man or woman that affecteth fervently, dare boldly attempt, and effectually accomplife. And this perswasion of mine, although it hath beene sufficiently approved, by many of our passed Novels: Yet notwithstanding, I shall make it much apparent to you, by a prefent discourse of mine owne. Wherein I have occasion to speake of a Lady, to whom Fortune was more favourable, than either reason or judgement, could give direction. In which regard, I would not advice any of you, to entertaine fo high an imagination of minde, as to tracke her foothers of whom I am now to fpeake: because Fortune containeth not alwayes one and the fame disposition, neither can all mens eyes be blinded after one manner. And so proceede we to our Tale.

In Argos, a most ancient City of Achaya, much more renowned by her precedent Kings, than wealth, or any other great matter of worth: there lived as Lieutemant or Governour thereof, a Noble Lord, named Nicosfratus, on whom (albeit he was well stept in yeares) Forume bestowed in a marriage a great Lady, no lesse bold of spirit, than choisely beautified. Nicosfratus, abounding in treasure and wealthy postessions, kept a goodly traine of Servants, Horses, Hounds, Hawkes, and what else not, as having an extraordinary felicity, in all kinde of game, as singular exercises to maintaine

his health.

he

12

er

n-

cie

14-

-3

ne

ke

ch

ch

25

die

ke

10-

2-

(b)

131

e-

er

Ec.

ife

irls

109

270

773-

the

Among his other Servants and Followers, there was a yong Gentleman, gracefull of person, excellent in speech,

Novell, 9. The Seventh Day.

speech, and every way as active as no man could be more; his name Pytrhus, highly affected of Nicofratus, and more intimately trusted than all the rest. Such seemed the perfections of this Pytrhus, that Lydia (for so was the Lady named) began to affect him very earnestly, and in such fort, as day or night she could take no rest, but devised all meanes to compasse her hearts desire. Now, whether he observed this inclination of her towards him, or else would take no notice thereof, it could not be discerned by any outward apprehension; which moved the more impaciencie in her, and drove her inopes to despairing passions. Wherein to finde some comfort and case, shee called an ancient Gentlewoman of her Chamber, in whom she reposed considence, and thus she spake to her.

Lefca, The good turnes and favours thou haft received from me, thould make thee faithfull and obedient to me : therefore fet 2 locke upon thy lipres, for revesling to any one whatfoever, fuch matters as now I shall impart to thee; except it be to him that I command thee. Thou perceivest Lefta, how youthfull lam, apt to all fprightly recreations, rich, and abounding in all that a woman can wish to have, in regard of Fortunes common and ordinary favours : yet I have one especials cause of complaint : namely, the inequality of my marriage, my Hasband being over-ancient for me; in which regard, my youth finds it felfe too highly wronged, being defeated of those duties and delights which women (farre inferior to mee) are continually cloyed withall, and I am utterly deprived of. I am subject to the same defires they are, and deferve to tafte the benefite of them, in as ample manner, as they do or can.

Hitherto have I lived with loffe of time, which yet (in fome measure) may be releeved and recompenced: For, though Fortune were my enemy in marriage, by such a disproportion of our conditions: yet size may be friend in another nature, and kindely redeeme the injury done

me. Wherefore Lesta, to be as compleate in this case, as I am in all the rest beside; I have resolved upon a private friend, and one more worthy than any other, Namely, my servant Pyrthas, whose youth carrieth some correspondency with mine, and so constantly have I selled my love to him, as I am not well, but when I thinke on him, or seehim: and sindeede) shall die, except the sooner I may enjoy him. And therefore, if my life and well-fore be respected by thee, let him understand the integrity of mine affection, by such good meanes as thou findest it most expedient to be done; intreating him from mee, that I may have some conference with him, when hee thall thereto be solici-

ted by me,

1-

ch

or

110

ke

rts

of

ofe

fi -

nd

to

ent

fed

ei.

cnt

t:1-

hall

and

t to

har

om-

1211

nar-

nich:

be-

men

iall,

ame

e of

t(in

For,

ich a

iend

done

The Chamber-Genelewoman Lefea, willingly undertooke the Ladies Embassie; and so soone as opportunity did favour her: having drawne Pyrruus into an apt and commodious place, free delivered the Meffage to him, in the best manner shee could devise. Which Parrings hearing, did not a little wonder thereat, never having noted any fuch matter; and therefore fodainely conceived, that the Lady did this only to try him; wherupon, fornewhat roundly and roughly he returned this answer. Lefea, I am not so simple, as to credit any fuch Meffage to be fent from my Lady, and therefore be better advised of thy words. But admit that it should come frem her, yet I cannot be perswaded, that her foule consented to such harsh Language, farre differing from a forme so full of beauty. And yet, admit againe, that herhart and tongue herein were relatives: My Lord and Mafter bath fo farre honoured me, and so much beyoud the least part of merit in me : as I will rather die. than any way offer to difgrace him: And therefore I charge thee, never more to move me in this matter.

Lesca, not a jot danted at his stearne words, presently she said. Pyrthus, Both in this and all other messages my Lady shall command mee, I will speake to thee

whenfoever

Novell, 9. The Seventh Day;

whenfoever the pleafeth, receive what discontent thou canst thereby; or make prefumption of what doubts thou mailt devife. But as I found thee a fenfeleffe fellow, dull, and not shaped to any understanding, fo I leave thee: And in that anger parted from him, earrying backe the fame answer to her Lady. She no fooner heard it, but instantly the wified her selfe to be dead ; and within fome few dayes after, the conterred agains with her Chamber-woman, faving. Lefes, theu knoweft well enough, that the Oxe falterh not at the first blow of the Axe, neither is the victory won, upon a filly and the llow adventure: Wherefore I thinke it convenient, that once more thru mouldest make another trial of him , who (in prejudice to mee) frandech fo Briefly on his loyalty; and chooling fuch an house as feen eth most commedious, foundly policie him with my tormenting passions. Besture thy wits, and tippe thy towner with a womans cloquence, to effect what I fo. carnelly I defire : because by languishing in this loveficke affection, it will be the danger of my death, and fome feyere detriment to him, to be the occasion of fo great a loffe.

Lefea, comforted her Lady, so much as lay in her power to doe, and having sought for Pyrrhas, whom she found at good leisures and, in a pleasing humor, thus she began. Pyrrus, some sew dayes since I told thee, in white extreame agonies thy Lady and mine was, onely in regard of her love to thee: and now agains I come once more, to give thee further assurance thereof a Wherefore believe it unseignedly, that if thy oblimatic continue still, in like manner as the other day it did, expect very shortly, to be are the tidings of her death.

It is my part therefore, to entreate thee, to comfort her long languishing defires: but if thou perfift in thy harsh opinion, in stead of reputing thee a wife and fortunate young man, I shall confesse thee to be an ignorant Asse, What a glory is it to thee, to be affected of so ou

1-

I

7-

er 15

no

VY-

rit

a

130

er

fo

:33

min.

iny

lo.

VC+

nd

fo

ופו

the

143

113

10.19

me.

if :-

icie

er.

ort

thy

01-

110-

ffo

us

1.

faire a Lady, beyond all men whatfoever? Next to this, tell me, how highly maift thou confesse thy selfe bound to Fortune, if thou but duely confider, how she hath elected there as sole soveraigne of her hopes, which is a crowne of honour to thy youth, and a sufficient refuge against all wants and necessities? Where is any to thy knowledge like thy selfe, that can make such advantage of his time, as thou maist doe, if thou wert wise? Where canst thou sind any one to goe beyond thee in armes, horses, sumptenous garments, and gold, as will be given to thee, if Lydia may be the Lady of thy love? Open then thy understanding to my words, returne into thine own soule, and be wise for thy selfe.

Remember (Pyrthus) that Fortune presents her selfe but once before any one, with cheerefull lookes, and her lappe wide open of richeit favours, where if choife be not quickly made, before the fould it up, and turne her backe; let no complaint afterward be made of her, if the Fellow that had fo faire an offer, prove to be milerable, wretched, and a Begger, onely thorow his owne negligence. Beside, what else hath formerly beene said, there is now no fuch neede of lovalty in fervants to their Ladies, as should be among deare Friends and Kindred : but fervants ought rather (as best they may) be fuch to their Mafters, as they are to them. Doft thou imagine that if thou hadft a faire wife, Mother, Daughter, or Sifter, and pleafing in the eye of our Nicofratus, he would fland on fuch nice tearines of dutie or Loyaltie, as now thou doeft to his Lady? Thou were a verie foole to rest so personaded. Affure thy life , that if intreaties and faire meanes might not prevaile, force and compulsion would win the mafterie; Let us then use them, and the commodities unto them belonging, as they would use us and ours. Vie the benefite of thy Fortune, and beware of abuting her favour. She yet fmiles on thee; but take heede leaft the turne her backe, it will then be over-late to repent thy folly. And it my Lady

The Seventh Day, Novell.9.

Lady die through thy difdaine, beaffured, that thou canft not elcape with life, befide open fhame and dif-

grace for ever.

Pyrrhus, who had often confidered on Lescaes first meffage, concluded with himfelfe; that if any more the moved the fame matter, he would return her another kinde of answer; wholly yeelding to content his Lady ; provided, that he might remaine affured, concerning the invite truth of the motion, and that it was not urged to trie him, wherefore, thus he replied, Lefca, doe not imagine me fo ignorant, as not to know the certaintie of all thy former allegations, confessing them as freely as thou doeft, or canft. But yet let me tell thee withall, that I know my Lord to be wife and judicious; and having committed all his affaires to my care and trust, never blame me to mildoubt, least my Lady (by his counfell and advise) make thee the mellenger of this motion, thereby to call my Fidelitic in que-Rion.

To cleare which doubt, and for my further affurance of her well meaning toward me; if the will undertake the performance of three fuch things as I must needs require in this case : I am afterward her owne, in any fervice shee can command me. The first of them, is: that in the presence of my Lord and Master, she kill his faire faulcon, which fo dearely he affecteth. The fecond, to fend me a locke or tuft of his beard, being puld away with her own hand. The third and left, with the same hand also, to plucke out one of his best and foundell teeth, and fend it me as her loves true token, When I finde all these three effectually performed, I

am wholly hers, and not before.

Thefe three strict impositions, seemed to Lefes, and her Lady likewife, almost beyond the companie of all possibility. Neverthelesse, Love, being a powerfull Oratour in persyvading, as also so adventurous even on the most difficult dangers ; gave her courage to underhou

dif-

first

The

her

ing

ur-

doe

cer-

em

hee

lici-

care

.ady

nger

luc-

ince

take

eeds

any

is;

ing

with

and

cen,

and

0.

1 011

der-

take them all; fending Lesca backe againe to him, with full affurance, of their more than Herculean labours. Moreover, her selfe did intend to adde a fourth taske, in regard of his strong opinion concerning the great Wilcolome of his Lord and Master. After the had effected all the other three; the would not permit him to kiffe her, but before his Lords face; which yet should be accomplished in such fort; as Nicostratus himselfe, should not beteve it; although apparantly kee saw it. Well, (quoth Pyrrhus) when all these wonders are performed, assure my Lady, that I am truly hers.

Within a fhort while after, Nicoftratus made a folemne Feastivall (according as yearely he used to do) in honour of his birth day, inviting many Lords and Ladies thereto. On which rejoycing day, fo fonne 25 dinner was ended, and the Tables withdrawne : Lydia came into the great Hall, where the Feast was folemnlykept; very rich and costly apparrelled; and there, in presence of Pyrrhus, and the whole assembly, going to the Perch whereon the Faulcon fate, wherein her hufband tooke no little delight, and having untied her, as iffhe meant to beare her on her Fift : tooke her by the Ieffes and beating her against the wall, killed her. Ni. coffratus beholding this, called out aloud unto her, faying. Alas Madam! What have you done? She making him no answer, but turning to the Lords and Ladies, which had dined there, spake in this manner.

Ill should I take revenge on a King, that had offended me, if I had not so much heart, as to wreake my spleene on a paltry Hawke. Understand then, worthy Lords and Ladies, that this Faulcon hath long time robbed me of those delights, when men (in meere equity) ought to have with their wives: because continually, so soone as breake of day hath appeared, my Husband, starting out of bed, makes himselfe readie, presently to horse, and the Faulcon on his Fist, rides abroad to his recreations in the Fields. And I, in such for sakes

Novelleg. The Seventh Day,

for faken fort as you fee, am left all alone in my bed, discontented and despited: often vowing to my selfe, to be thus revenged as now I am, being with held from it by no other occasion, but onely wint of a sit and aptume, to doe it in the presence of such persons, as might be just ludges of my wrongs, and as I conceive

you all to be.

The Lords and Ladies hearing these words, and beleeving this deede of hers to be done no otherwise, bus out of herentire affection to Micostratus, according as her speeches sounded: compassionately turning towards him (who was exceedingly displeased) and all smiling, said. Now in good sadnessees in Madam Lydia hath done well, in acting her just tevenge upon the Hawke, that bereft her of her husbands kinde company; than which nothing is more precious to a loving wise, and a hellit is to live without it. And Lydia, being sodamely withdrawne into her Chimber; with much other striendly and familiar-talke, they converted the anger of Nicostratus into mirth and smiling.

Pyrrhus, who had diligently observed the whold carriage of this businesse, trid to himselfe, My Lady hath begun well, and proceeding on with no world facceffe, will (no doub:) bring her love to an happy conclusion, As for the Lady her felfe, flice having thus kild the Hawke, it was no long while after, but being in the Chamber with her husband, and they converting familiarly together: the began to jest with him, and he in the like manner with her, tickling and toying eich the other, till at the length the placed with his beard, and now the found occasion aprly ferving, to effect the iecond taske imposed by Pyrrhus. So, taking fast hold on a fmall tuft of his beard, the gave a fodaine fratch, and plucked it a way quite from his chin Whereat Nicoffretus being angerly moved, thee (to appeale his diffifte) pleafantly thus toake. How now my Lord? Why doz you looke to frowningly? What? Are you anery for a ed,

e,to

PIOT

apt

, as

cive

be-

, bus

10 25

10-

d all

ydia

nthe

mpa-

pring

be-

with

erted

car-

hath

ceffe,

ufenn.

d the

n the

fami-

hein

ch the

, and

lic ic-

old on

i, and

coltra-

liste)

y do:

ytora

few.

few loofe haires of your beard? How then should I take it, when you plucke me by the haire of my head, and yet I am not a jot discontented , because I know you doe it but in jeafling manner? Thefe friendly speeches cut off all further contention, and thee kept charily the tufe of her Husbands beard, which (the very felie-fame day) the fent to Pyribas her hearts cholen friend.

But now concerning the third matter to be adventured, it drove her to a much more ferious confideration. than those two which she had arready so well and exactly performed. Notwithstanding, like a Lady of unconquerable spirit, and (in whom) Love inlurged his power more and more: She fodamely conceited what course was best to be kept in this case, forming her attempt in this manner. Vpon Nicoftrasus waited two young Gentle men, as Pages of his Chamber, whole Tathers had given them to his fervice, to learne the manners of honourable Courthip, and those qualities nec flarily required in Gentlemen. One of them, when Ni offratus face downe to dinner or supper, food in Office of his Carver, delivering him all the meaces whereon he fed. The other (as Taiter) attended on his Cup, and he deanke no other drinke, but what hee brought hum, and they both were very pleafing unto them.

Lydia called thefe two youths afide, and, among fome other speeches, which ferved as an induction to her intended policy; the perfwaded them, that their mouths yeelded an unfavory and ill-pleafing fmeil, wherof their Lord feemed to take diflike. Wherefore thee advised them, that at fuch times as they attended on him in their severall places : they should (fo much as possibly they could) withdraw their heads aside from him, because their breath might not be noyous unto him. But withall, to have an especiall care, of not disclosing to any person, what thee had told them;

because

Novelle : The Seventh Day.

because (out of meere love) shee had acquainted them therewith: which very constantly they believed, and followed the same direction as the had advised, being loath to displace, where service bound them to obey. Choosing a time fitting for her purpose, when Nicosirates was in private conference with him, thus the began. Sir, you oberve not the behaviour of your two Pages, when they waite on you at the Table? Yes but I doe wise (quoth he) how squemishly they turne their heads aside from me, and it hath often beene in my minde, to

understand a reason why they doe so.

Seating her felfe by him, as if the had fome weightie matter to tell him; the proceeded in this manner. Alas my Lord, you shall not neede to question them, because I can sufficiently resolve therein: which (nevertheleffe) I have long concealed, because I would not be offenfive to you. But in regard, it is now manifeftly apparant, that others have tafted, what (I imagined) none but my felfe did, I will no longer hide it from you. Affuredly Sir, there is a most strange and unwonted illfavour, continually iffuing from your mouth, imelling most noyfomely, and I wonder what should be the occasion. In former times I never felt any such foulebrezthing to come from you, and you who do daily converfe with to many worthy perfons, should fecke meanes to be rid of fo great an annoyance. You fay very true wife (answered Nicoffratus) and I protest to you on my Credite, I feele no luch ill timill, neither know what should cause it, except I have some corrupted tooth in my mouth. Perhaps Sir (quoth she) it may be so, and yet you feele not the favour which others doe, yea,verie offenfively.

So, walking with her to the window, he opened wide his mouth, the which nicely five furvered on either fide, and, turning her head from him, as feeding unable to endure the favour: ftarting, and first king out aloud, she faid. Santa Maria! What a fight is this? Also 9

re

my good Lord, How could you abide this, and for fo long a while? Here is a tooth on this fide, which (for farre as I can perceive) is not onely hollow and corrupted : but alle putrified and rotten : and if it continue fell in your head, believe it for a truth, that it will infeet and spoile all the rest neere it. I would therefore countell you, to let it be pluckt out, before it breede your further danger. I like your counfell well Lydia, replied Nicostratus, and prefently intend to follow it; Let therefore my Barber be fent for, and, without any longer delay, he shall plucke it out instantly.

How Sir? (quoth she) your Barbar? Vpon mine honour, there shall come no Barber here. Why Sir, it is fuch a rotten tooth, and flandeth fo fairely for my hand : that, without helpe or advice of any Barber, let me alone for plucking it forth, without putting you to any paine at all. Moreover, ler mee tell you Sir, those Tooth-drawers are fo rude and cruell, in performing fuch Offices, as my heart cannot endure, that you shall come within compafe of their curriff courtefe, neither thall you Sir, if you will be ruled by me, If I thould faile in the manner of their facility, yet love and dutie hath enftructed me, to iorbeare your leaft paining, which no unmannerly Barber will doe.

Having thus spoken, and he well contented with her kinde offer, the instruments were brought, which are used in such occasions, all being commanded forth of the Chamber, but onely Lesca, who evermore kept still in her company. So, locking fast the doore, and Nicofiratus being feared, as shee thought fittest for her purpole, the put the Tanacles into his mouth, catching fast hold on one of his founded reeth; which, notwithflanding his loud crying, Lefca held him fo frongly, that forth the plucke it, and hid it, having another tooth readic made hot and bloudy, very much corrupted and totten, which the held in the Tanacles, and thewed to him, who was well neere dead with anguish. See Sir,

(quoth

DIV

ang out s ? Alas

m

nd

ing

cy.

12-

an.

es,

doc

ads

03,0

htie

Alas

aule

the-

or be

y ap-

ned)

you.

ed ill-

elling

ac oc-

bre2-

nycife

nes te

e wife

on my

vvh at

ocla in

o, and

ca,vc-

d wide

cither

us nn-

The Seventh Day, Novell.o.

(quoth the) was this tooth to be fuffered in your head, and to yeeld to foule a finell as it did? He verily belierving what the faide, albeit he had endured extreame paine, and full complained of her harin and violent pulling it outre joyced yet, that he was now rid of it, and the comforting him on the one fide, and the anguifb allwaging him on the other, he departed forth of the Chamber.

In the meane while, by Lefca the fent the found tooth to Pyrrhus, who (wondring not a little at her fo many ftrange attempts, which he urged to much the rather, as thinking their performance impossible, and in nicere loyall duty to his Lord) seeing them all three to be notably effected; he made no further doubt of her intire love towards him, but fent her affurance likewife of his readines and ferviceable diligence, when foever the wold command him.

Novy, after the passage of all these adventures, hardly to be undertaken by any other Weman : yet fhe held them infufficient for lustecurity, in the grounded perfwafion of her love to him, except the performed another of her owne, and according as the had boldly promifed. Houres do now feemed nes , and dayes multiplicity of years, all the kille may be given, and received in the prefence of Nicofratus, yet he manfelie to ayouth the contrary.

Madam Lydia (upon a pretended ficknes)keeperh her chamber, and as women can hardly be exceeded in diffimulation: fo, the wanted no wit, to feeme exquifitely cunning, in all the outward apparances of ficknes. One day after dinner, the being vifited by Nicofratus, and none attending on him but Pyrrbus onely: the earnestly entreated, that as a mitigation, to lome inward affile-Ctions which the felt, they would helpe to guide her into the Garden.

Most gladly was her motion granted, and Nicoftra- buft tus gently taking her by one arme, and Parrhus by the rolling

Die

the

can

eje

ind

dott

repli

won

other, fo they conducted her into the Garden, feating her in a faire floury Graffe-plot, with her backe leaning to a Pearetree Having fitten there an indifferent while, and Pyrrius, being formerly instructed, in the directions which the had given him, thus thee spake, somewhat faintly. Pyrrbss, I have a kinde of longing defire upon a sudden, to tafte of these Peares: Wherefore, climbe up into the tree, and caft me downe one or two: which instantly hee did. Being alofe in the Tree, and throwing downe some of the best and richest Peares; at length (according to his premeditated Lefton) loo-

king downe, he faid.

Forbeare my Lord, Doe you not fee, in how weake and feeble condition my Lady is, being thaken with fo violent a fickneffe? And you Madam, how kinde and loving foever you are to my Lord, are you so little carefull of your health, being but now come forth of your ficke Chamber, to be ruffled and rumbled in fuch rough manner? Though fuch dalliances are not amille in you both ; being fitter for the private Chamber, than an open Garden, and in the presence of a fervant :yet time and place should alwayes be respective. ly confidered, for the avoiding of ill example, and better teltimony of your owne vuledomes, which ever should be like your felves. But if to soone, and even in the heare of a yet curbulent ficknesse, your equal love can admit these kisses and embraces : your private lodgiags were much more convenient, where no fervants ejecan fee fuch wantonnesse, nor you be reproved of indiferetion, for being too publique in your familiarity.

Lydia, fodainly turning to her husband, faid. What doth Pyrthus prate? Is he well in his wits? No Mad ine. uplied Pyrhus, I am not franticke. Are you fo fond as to thinke that I doe not fee your folly? Nicoftratue wondering at his words, presently answered. Now offra- tust me Pyrrhus, I thinke thou dreamest. No my Lord, by the tiplied Pyrrhus, I dreame not a jot, neither doe you,

hh

other,

id,

20

me

ent

113

111-

of

Quit

any

ier,

cere

no-

TITE

fhis

wold

rdly

held

-rog.

2110-

pro.

cipli-

ed in

youch

h her

n dif-

ificely

.One

, and

neftly

daille-

her :n-

or my Lady; but if this Tree could afford the like kindnes to me, 25 you doe to her, there would not a Peare be left upon it. How now Pyrrhus? (quoth Lydia) this language goeth beyond our understanding, it seemeth thou knowest not what thou kinst. Beleeve me husband, if I were as well as ever I have been, I would climb this tree ito see those idle wonders which he talketh of: for while he continued thus above, it appeareth, he can find no other practile, albeit he taketh his marke amisse.

Heerenpon, he commanded Pyrrhus to come downe, and being on the ground : Now Pyrrhus (quoth he) tell me what thou faidit. Pyrrbus, pretending an alteration into much amazement, ftrangely looking about him, faide; I know not very well(my Lord) what answer I should make you, fearing least my fight hath bin abufed by error: for when I was aloft in that Tree, it ice. med manifestly to me: that you embraced my Lady (though somewhat rudely, in regard of her perillous ficknesse, yet lovingly) and as youthfully as in your yonger daies, with infinite hiffes, and wanton dalhances fuch as (indeed) deserved a far more private place in my poore opinion. But in my descending downe, me thought you gave over that amorous familiarity, and I found you feated as I left you. Now trust me Pyrrhas, answered Nicostratus, Thy tongue and wit have very ftrangely wandred, both from reason and all reall apprehention: because we never flirred from hence, fince thou didft climbe up into the Tree; neither mooved otherwife, then as now thou feeft us. Alas my Lord faid Pyrrhus I humbly crave pardon for my prefumption,ia tepropring you for medling with your own: which that make me hereafter better adviled, in any thing whatleever I heare or fee.

Mervaile and amazement, encreased in Nicostrata far greater than before, heating him to avouch stills constantly what he had seene, no contradiction being able to alter him, which made him rashly sweare an

2

b

fo

ti

th

12

is

th

ıd,

his

nd

ne,

he)

שטנים

wer

abu-

iec.

Lady llous

your

ances

ace in

ic, nie

, and I

yrrinas,

e very

call ap-

e, fince

oved o-

ord (faid

ption,in

nich thall

whatle

coftrata

uch Rills

ion bein

veare and

horfes,

fay, I will fee my felfe whether this Peare-tree be enchanted, or no : and fuch wonders to be feene when a man is up in it, as thou would have us to beloeve. And being mounted up to hie, that they were fafe from his fodaine comming on them, Lydia had foone forgotten her ficknes, and the promifed kiffe coft her above twenty more, belide very kind and hearty embraces, as lovinely respected and entertained by Pyrrhus. Which Nicoffratus, beholding aloft in the tree; cryed out to her, faying. Wicked woman what doeft thou meane? And thou villaine Pyrrhus, Darft thou abuse thy Lord, who high reposed so much trust in thee? So, descending down againe, yet crying to them still: Lydia replyed, Alas my Lord, why doe you raile and rave in fuch fort? So, he found her feared as before, and Pyrrhes waiting with dutiful reverence, even as when he climbed up the tree: but yet he thought his fight not deceived, for all their demore and formall behaviour; which made him walk up and downe, extreamely fuming and fretting unto himselfe, and which in some milder manner to qualifie, Pyrrhas spake thus to him.

I deny not (my good Lord) but freely confesse, that even as your felfe, to I, being above in the tree, had my fight most falfely deluded: which is so apparantly confirmed by you, and in the fame fort, as there needeth no doubt of both our beguiling, in one and the fame fufpitious nature; in which case to be the more affuredly refolved, nothing can be questioned, but whether your beleefe doe fo far mifleade you, as to thinke that my Lady (who hath alwaies beene most wife, loyall, and vertuous,) would fo shamefully wrong you, yea, and to performe it before your face, wherein I dare gadge my life to the contrary. Concerning my felfe, it is not fit for me, to argue or contest in mine owne commendation: you that have ever knowne the fincerity of my feruice, are best able to speake in my behalfe: and rathat would I be drawne in pieces with foure wilde

hh 2

Novell.9. The Seventh Day,

horses, than be such an injurious slave to my Lord and

Now then, it can be no otherwise, but we must neede rest certainly perswaded, that the guile and offence of this false appearance, was occasioned by thee only. For all the world could not make me believe, but that I faw you kille and most kindly imbrace my Lady: if your owne eics had not credited the like behaviour in me to her, of which fin, I never conceived fo much as a thought. The I adv (on the other fide) feeming to be very angerly incented, flaring faintly up on her feete, yet furporting het felf by the tree, faide. Trappeareth Sir, that you have encerpsined a goodly opinion of me, as if I were to levede and lasciviously disposed, or ad. dicted to the le. It defire of wanconnes: that I would be fo forgetfull of mine owne honour, as to adventure it in your fight, and with a fervant of my house? Oh Sir, fuch women as are fo familiarly affected, need learne no wit of men in amorous matters; their privat Chambers firll be better trufted, than an open blabbing and zeitale Garden.

Nicoftratus, who verily beleeved what they had both faide, and that neither of them would adventure fuch familiarity before his face : would talke no more of the matter, but rather studied of the rarity of fuch a miracle, not feene, but in the height of the tree, and changing againe upon the descent. But Lydia, containing still ner colourable kind of impatience, and angerly fromning upon Nicoffratus, flearnely faid. If I may have my will, this vilianous, and deceiving tree, fhal never more thame me, or any other woman; and therefore Pyrrhas, run for an Axe and by felling ir to the ground, in an infragt, revenge both thy wrong and mine. Doeft not thou ferve a worthy Lord? And bave not I a wife Husband, who, without any confideration, will fuffer the eye of his understanding to be fo dazeled, with a foolift imagination beyond all possibility For, though his

10

eyes did apprehend fuch a folly; and it seemed to be a truth indeed: yet in the depth of a seried judgement, all the world should not perswade him, that it was so.

Pyrthus, had quickly brought the Axe, and hewing downe the tree, to foone as the Lady (a wit fall; turned her selfe to Nitostratus, the said. Now that I have seene mine honour and honesties enemy laid along, mine anger is past, and Husband, I freely pardon you increasing you heartily henceforward, not to presume or imagin, that my love either is, or can be altered from you.

Thus the mocked and derided Nicoll atus, recorned in again with his Lady and Pyribus, where perhaps (thogh the Peare-tree was cut downe) they could find as cun-

ning meanes to over-reach him.

nd

de

of

or

ac

if

in

15 3

be

etc.

eth

me,

ad.

lbe it in Sir, arne

am-

and

both

fuch

fthe

nira-

chan-

g ftill

trow-

ve my

more

rrhas,

in an

eft not

Hus-

fer the

a foo-

cycs

Two cittizens of Stena, the one named Tingoccio Nini, and the other Meucro di Tura, affetled both one moman, colled Mouna Mita, to whom one of them was a Goffip. The Goffip dyed, and appeared afterward to his companion, according as he had formerly promifed him to do, and told him what firange wonders be had feene in the other world.

The tenth Novell.

wherein fuch men are coverty reprehended, who make no care or confeience at alof those things that should prefer them from some.

Now there remained none but the King himfelfer laft of all to recount this Novell; who, after hee heard the Ladies complaints indifferently pacified, for the raft felling downe of fuch a precious Peare-tree is thus he began. Faire Ladies, it is a cafe more than manifelt, that every King, who will be accounted just and upright: should first of all, and rather than any other, observe those Laws which he himselfe hath made; otherwise to be reputed as a servant, worthy punishment.

ment, and no King. Into which fault and reprehension I your King, shall well neere be constrained to fall; for yesterday I enacted a Law, upon the forme of our discoursing, with full intent, that this day I would not use any part of my priviledge; but being subject (as you all are) to the same Law, I should speake of that argu-

ment, which already you have done.

Wherein, you have not onely performed more than I could with, upon a subject so surable to my minde; but in every Novell, such variety of excellent matter, such fingular illustrations, & delicate eloquence hath flown from you all: as I am utterly unable to invent any thing (notwithstanding the most curious search of my brain) apr or fit for the purpose, to paragon the meanest of the already related. And therefore feeing I must needs fin in the Law established by my selfest tender my submiffion as worthy of punishment, or what amends else you please to enjoyne me. Now, as returned to my wonted priviledge, I fay, that the Novell recounted by Madam Eliga, of the Fryer Godfather, and his Goffip Agnefia, as also the sottishnes of the Senese her Husband, hath wrought in me(worthy Ladies) to fuch effect; as, forbe:ring to speake any more of these wily prancks, which witty wives exercise on their simple Husbands; I am to tell you a pretty thort Tale; which, though there is matter inough in it, not worthy the crediting, yet partly it will be pleasing to heare.

Sometime there lived in Sienna two popular men, the one being named Tingoccio Mini, and the other Meusio de Tora; Men simple, &t of no understanding, both of them dwelling in Porta Salaja. These two men lived in such familiar conversation together, and expressed such cordials affection each to other, as they seldome walked assunder; but (as honest men use to doe) frequented Churchs and Sermons, oftentimes hearing, both what miseries and beatstudes were in the world to come, according to the merits of their soules that were departed

buc

h

un

her

he adi

fore

prog

out of this life, and found their equal repaiment in the other. The manifold repetition of these matters, made them very desions to know, by what means they might have tydings from thence, for their further confirmation. And finding altheir endeavours utterly frustrated, they made a solemne vow and promise (each to other under oath) that he which first dyed of them two, shold returne backe againe (so soone as possibly he could) to the other remaining alive, and tell him such tydings as

he defired to heare.

in

ut

m

ng

n)

hé

in

on

ou

ted

am

131

ath

e:-

ich

nto

13

art.

the

feu-

h of

d in

fuch

val-

nted

what

, ac-

rted

ONE

After the promise was thus faithfully made, and they fill keeping company as they wonted to do: It fortuned that Tingoccio became Goffip to one, named Ambiofio Anselmino, dwelling in Camporeggio, who by his wife, called Monna Mitashad a sweete and lovely Son. Tingoccio often reforted thither, and conforted with his companion Meucie; the the Goffip, being a woman worthy the loving, faire and counly of her person: Tingoccio, notwithstanding the Gossipship between them, had more than a moneths minde to his God-childes Mother. Meucio alfo fell ficke of the same disease, becaule the feemed pleafing in his eye, and Tingeccio gave her no meane commendations; yet, carefully they conrealed their love to themselves, but not for one and the fame occasion. Because Tingoccie kept it close from Meucio, leaft he should hold it disgracefuil in him, to beare amorous affection to his Goffip, and thought it unfitting to be knowne. But Meucio had no fuch meaming, for he knew well enough that Tingoccio loved her, and therefore conceived in his minde, that if he discovered any such matter to him : He will (quoth he) be jealous of me, and being her Geffip (which admitteth his conference with her when himselfe plea feelighe may eafily make her to distaste me, and therefore I must rest contented as I am.

Their love continuing on still in this kind, Tingoccio prooved so fortunate in the busines, that having better

meanes than his companion, & more prevailing courfes, when, where, and how to Court his Miftris, which feemed to forward him effectually. All which Mencie plainly perceived, and thought it was tedious and wearifom to him, yet hoping to find fome fucceif at length, he would not take notice of any thing, as fearing to infringe the amity betweene him and Tingoccio, and fo his hope to be quite supplanted. Thus the one triumphing in his loues happines, and the other hoping for his felicity to comesa lingering ficknes feafed on Tingoccio, which brought him to fo low a condition, as at

the length he dyed.

About some three or foure nights after, Meucto being fast asleepe in his bed, the ghost of Tiagoccio appeared to him, and called fo loude, that Meucio awa. king, demanded who called him ? I am thy friend Tingoccio, replied the ghoft, who according to my former promife made, am come againe in vision to thee, to tell thee tidings out of the neather world. Mewio was a while fornewhat amazed; but, recolleding his more manly spirits together, boldly he said. My brother and friend, thou art heartily welcome: but I thought thou hadft been utterly loft. Those things (quoth Tingoccio) are loft, which cannot be recovered againe and if I wer loft, how could I then be heere with thee? Alas Tingoccio, replyed Meucio, my meaning is not fo; but I wold be refolved, whether thou are among the damned fouls in the painefull fire of hell corments, or no? No (quoth Tinzoccio) I am not fent thither, but for divers fins by me committed I am to fuffer very great and grievous pains. Then Mencio demanded particularly, the punishe ment inliced there, for the feverall finnes committed beere: Wherein Tingoccio fully refolved him. And upon further question, what hee would have to be done for him here, made answere. That Moucio should cause Masses, Prayers, and Almes-deedes, to be performed for him, which (he faide) were very helpefull to

live

who

IVOI

term

(inc

lau:

tha:

Bop

the foules abiding there, and Meucio promifed to fee them done.

10

2h,

n-

10

11-

or

7-

at

e-

P-

¥2.

171-

ner

ell

5 4

ore

ind

HOE

10)

WCT

iu.

rold

uls

oth

by

ous

itin

red

nog

for

ausc

for-

lito

the

As the ghost was offering to depart, Meucio remembred Tingoccioes Goffip Mor na Mita, and raifing himfelfe higher upon the pillow, laide. My memory informeth me friend Tingoccio, of your kind Goffip Monne Mita, with whom (when you remained in this life) I knew you to be very familiar ; let me intreate you then to tell me what punishment is inflicted on you there, for that wanten fin committed here: Oh Brother Mensio, answered Tingoccie, so some as my soule was landed ther, one came immediatly to me, who feemed to know all mine offences readily by heart, and forthwith commanded, that I should depart thence into a certain place where I must weep for my fins in very guevous pains. There I found more of my companions; condemned to the fame punishment as I was, and being among them, I called to minde fome wanton dalliance, which had palled between my Goffip and me, and expedling therfore faire greater afflictions, than as yet I felt (although I was in a huge fire, and exceedingly hot) yet with concelle of feare, I quaked and trembled wondroufly.

One of my other Conforts being by me, and perceiving in what an extreame agony I was; prefently faidd muo me. My friend, what haft thou done more, then any of us here condemned with thee, that thou tremble faind quakeft, being in so hot a fire! Oh my friend (qd.l). I am in seare of a greater judgement than this, for a grievous offence by me heretofore commuted while I lived. Then he demanded of the what offence it was, where thus I answered. It was my chance in the other world, to be Golfather at a childs Christining, and afterward I prevs so affectionate to the childs mother, as (indeed) it his do her twice or thrife. My companion laughing as me in mocking manner. Golike an Affe as thou are, and be no more alraid hereafter, for here is appuninthment inflicted, in any kind whatsoever, for

hh s

fuch

fuch offences of frailty committed, specially with Goffips, as I my selfe can witnesse.

Now day drew on, and the Cockes began to crow, a dreadfull hearing to walking spirits, when Tingoccio faide to Meucio. Farewell my friendly companion, for I may tarry no longer with thee, and instantly he vanished away. Meucio having heard this confession of his friend, and verily beleeving it for a truth, that no punishment was to be inflicted in the future world, for offences of frailty in this life, and chiefly with Goffips: began to condemne his owne folly, having beenea Goffip to many wives, yet modefty restrained him from fuch familiar offending. And therefore being forry for this grolle ignorance, he made a vow to be wifer hereafter. And if Fryer Reynard had beene acquainted with this kinde of thrift (as doubtleffe he was, though his Goffip Agnefia knew it not) he needed no fuch Sillogismes, as he put in practife, when he converted her to his luftfull knavery, in the comparison of kinred by him mooved concerning her husband, the childe and himselfe. But, these are the best fruits of such Fryerly Confessions, to compasse the issue of their inordinate appetites; yet clouded with the cloake of Religion, which hath beene the overthrow of too many.

By this time the gentle blast of Zephirus began to blow, because the Sun grew neere his setting, wherewith the King concluded his Novell, and none remaining more to be thus imployed: taking the Crowne from off his owne head, he placed it on Madam Lauretaes, saying, Madam, I Crowne you with your owne Crowne, as Queene of our Company. You shall henceforth command as Lady and Missiresse, in such occasions as shall be to your liking, and for the contentment of us all; With which words he set him downe. And Madam Lauretta being now created Queen, she caused the Master of the houshold to be called, to whom she gave command, that the Tables should be prepared in the

pleafant

21

CO

Pre

0

ger

An

and

dre

dyer

then fing;

ance

pleafant vally, but at a more convenient houre than formerly had beene, because they might (with better ease) returne backe to the Pallace. Then she tooke order likewise, for all such other necessary matters, as should be required in the time of her regiment; and then turning her selie to the whole Company, she began in this manner.

V,

OF

a. of

or

ps:

e a

om for

re-

igh Sil-

her by

and

erly

nate

ion,

1 to

nai-

WHE

wiel-

fions

nt of

Mad the

gave

n the

afant

It was the Will of Dioness yesternight, that our discourses, for this day, shold concerne the deceits of wives to their Husbands. And were it not to avoyde taxation of a spleenitive desire to be revenged, like the dog being bitten, biteth againe: I could command our to mortowes conference, to touch mens treacheries towards their wives. But because I am free from any such stery humor, let it be your generall consideration, to speake of such queint beguings, as have hertofore past seither of the woman to the man, or the man to the woman, or of one man to another: and I am of opinion, that they will yield us no lesse delight, than those related (this day) have don. When she had thus spoken, she rose granting them all liberty, to go recreate themselves until Supper time.

The Ladies being thus at their owne disposing, some of them bared their legs and seere, to wash them in the coole current. Others, not so minded, walked on the greene graffe, and under the goodly spreading trees. Dieneus, and Madam Fiammetta, they late singing together, the love-war betweene Arcite and Palamon. And thus with diversity of disports, in choice delighe and much contentment, all were imployed, till Supper drew neere When the houre was come, and the Tables covered by the Ponds side: we neede not question their dyet and Aninties, infinite birds sweetly singing about them, as no musicke in the world could be more pleasing, beside calme windes, sanning their faces from the neighbouring hill street from slyes, or the least annoyance) madea delicate addition to their pleasure.

No

Novellio. The Seventh Day,

No fooner were the Tables, withdrawne, and all rifen: but they fetcht a few turnings about the vally, because not (as yet) quite set. Then in the coole evening according to the Queenes appointment : in a foft and gentle pace, they walked homward: deviling on a thoufand occasions, as well those which the daies discourses had yeelded, as others of their owne inventing befide. It was almost darknight, before they arrived at the Pallace; where, with variety of choice Wines, and abounding plenty of rare Banquetting, they our-wore the little toile and wearineffe, which the long walke had charged them withall. Afterward according to their wonted order, the Instruments being brought and played on, they fell to dancing about the faire Fountaine; Tindare intruding (now and then) the found of his Bagpipe, to make the muficke feeme more melodious. But in the end, the Queene commanded Madam Philomena to fing; whereupon the Inftruments being tuned fit for the purpofe, thus fhe began.

The Song.

The Chorus Sung by the whole Company.

nearifon is mylife to me, Because I cannot once agains returne; Vato the place which made me first to mourne.

Nothing I know, yet feele a powerfull fire, B. tracing within my breft, Through deepe defire? To be once wore where first I felt unrest, which cannot be exprest. Omy fole good! Omy best happines! Why am I thus restrainde? Is there up comfort in this wretchednesse?

Tixa

Uni

Then let me live content, to be thus painde. We carifeme is my life to me, &c.

I cannot tell what was that rare delight,
Which first enstande my soule.
And gave command in spigot,
That I should finde no case by day or night,
But still live in controute.
I see, I heare, and seele a kinde of birste,
Yet sinde no forme at all:
Others in their desire, seele biessednesse,
But I have none, nor thinke I ever shall.

Wearifome is my life to me, & c.

Tell me, if I may hope in following dayes,
To have but one poore fight,
Of those bright Sunny rayes,
Dazeling my seace, did overcome me quite,
Bequeate dio wandring wayes.
If I be possied off, and may not prove,
To have the smallest grace:
Or but to know, that this proceeds from love,
Why should I live destrible in every place?
We can some is my life to me, er c.

Me thinkes milde favour whifters in my ears.

And bids me not despaire;

There will a time appeare

To quell and quite confound confuming care.

And joy sur mount proud searc.

In hope that gracious time will come at length,

To cheere my long dismay:

My spirits reassame your former strength.

And never dread to see that joy sull day.

We carisome is my life to me.

Because I cannot once againe returne;

Unto the place, which made me first to mourne.

cs

le.

ne

ad

eir

c;

us.

red

Novell, 1. The Eighth Day,

This Song gave occasion to the whole Company, to imagine, that some new and pleasing apprehension of Love, constrained Madam Philomena to sing in this manner. And because (by the discourse thereof) it plainely appeared, that she had selt more than shee saw, shee was so much the more happy, and the like was wishedalso by all the rest. Wherefore, after the Song was ended; the Queene remembring, that the next day sollowing was Fryday, surning her selfe gra-

cioully to them all, thus the spake.

You know, noble Ladies, and you likewise most noble Gentlemen, that to morrow is the day confecrated to the paffion of our bleffed Lord and Saviour, which (if you have not forgotten it, as eafily you cannot) we devously celebrated, Madam Neiphila being then Queene, ceasing from all our pleasant discoursing, as we did the like on the Satur day following, lanctifying the facred Sabboth, in due regard of it felf. Wherefore, being desirous to imitate precedent good example, which in worthy manner thee began to us all: I hold it very decent and necessary, that wee should abstaine to morrow, and the day ensuing, from recounting any of our pleasant Novells, reducing to our memories, what was done (as on thole dayes) for the falvation of our foules. This holy and Religious motion made by the Queene, was commendably allowed by all the Assembly, and therefore, humbly taking their leave of her, and an indifferent part of the night being already spent; severally they betooke themselves to their Chambers.

The end of the Seventh Day.

ły.

th

ha

the

ted

WC

nec

100

the

mil com

iollo

governed by Madam Lauretta, THE EIGHTH DAY.

7

Whereon all the Discourses, passe under the rule and government, of the honourable Lady Lauretta. And toe Argument imposed, is, concerning such wittle deceivings, as have, or may be put in practise, by Wives to their Husbands; Husbands to their Wives: or one man towards another.

The Induction.

Plants, Trees, and all things elfe, were very evidently to be differenced. The Queene and her Company, being all come forth of their Chambers, and having walked a while abroad, in the goodly greene Meadowes, to tafte the fweetness of the fresh and wholesome aire, they returned backe againe into the Palace, because it

was their duty fo to doe.

to

115

it

ce

ike

the

the

ra-

roft

ra-

our,

311-

ing

ing,

tify"

ere-

am-

1:1

dab.

ouc-

me.

e fal-

otion

by al

their

being

vesto

THE

Afterward, betweene the houres of seven and eight, they went to heare Masse, in a faire Chappell neere at hand, and thence returned to their Lodgings. When they had dined merrily together, they fell to their wonted singing and dancing: Which being done, such as were so pleased (by License of the Queene first obtained) went either to their rest, or such exercises as they tooke most delight in. When midday, and the heate thereof was well over-pass, so that the aire seemed milde and temperate: according as the Queene had commanded; they were all seated againe about the seuntaine, with intent to prosecute their former passime. And then Madam Neiphila, by the charge imposed on her, as first Speaker for this day, began as followeth.

Gulfardo

Novell. 1. The Eighth Day,

Gulfardo masie a match or wager with the wife of Gafpervolo, for the obtaining of her amorous favour, in regard of a summe of money first to be given her. The money be becomed of her husband, and gave it in parment to be a sin case of discharging him from her husbands debt. After his returns home from Geneway, be told him in presence of his wife, her hee had paide the whole some to her, with charge of delivering it to her husband, which he confessed to be true, albeitgreatly against her will.

The first Novell.

Wherein is declared, that fuch momen as will make fall of their honefile, are fometimes over-reached in their payment, and justif ferved as they fhould be.

Eeing it is my fortune, Gracious Ladies.

that I must give beginning to this dayes discoursing, by some such Novell which I thinke expedient; as day bindeth mee, I am therewith well contented. And because the deceits of women to men, have beene at large and liberally related; I will tell you a subtile tricke of a man to a woman. Not that I blame him for the deede, or thinke the deceite not well fatted to the woman; but I speake it in a contrary nature, as commending the man, and condemning the woman very juttly; as also to shew, how men can as well beguise those crastic companions.

which least believe any such cunning in them, as they that stand most on their artificiall skill.

Howbeit, to speake more properly, the matter by me to be reported, deserveth not the reproachfull title of deceit, but rather of a recompence duly returned: because women ought to be chasted and honest, and to preserve their honour as their lives, without yielding to the contamination thereof, for any occasion whatlover. And ye: (neverthelesse (in regard of our frailty) many times we prove not so constant as we should be:

yet I am of opinion, that thee which felleth her honeflie for money, deferveth juftly to be burned. Whereas by the contrary, the that falleth into the offence, onely by intire affection (the powerfull lawes of Love being above all refistance) in equitie merriteth pardon, effecally of a Judge not over-rigorous: as not long fince we heard from Philoftratus, in revealing what hapned to Madam Phillippa de Piato, upon the dangerous Edict.

0

27

8,

I ts ly 3 ke 12 nd N's 23, cy ne of eto ng 10+

y)

be :

yes



Vaderstand then, my most worthy Auditors, that here lived sometime in Millaine an Almaigne souldier, named Gulfardo, of commendable carriage in his perfon,

person, and very faithfull to such as he served, a matter not common among the Almsignes. And because hee made just repaiment, to every one that lent him monics; he grew to fuch especiall credit, and was so familiar with the very best Merchants; as (many times) he could not be fore ady to borrow, as they were willing alwayes to lend him. Hee thus continuing in the Citie of Millaine, faltened his affection on a very beautifull Gentlewoman, named Miftreffe Ambrefis, wife unto a rich Merchant, who was called Signior Gaffarvolo Sagastraccio, who had good knowledge of him, and respectively used him-Loving this Gentlewoman with great discretion, without the least apprehension of her husband; bee fent upon a day to entreate conference with her, for enjoying the fruition of her love, and the should find him ready to fulfill whatsoever shee pleased to command him, as, at any time he would make good his promise.

The Gentlewoman, after divers of these private folen licitings, resolutely answered, that the was as ready to WC fulfill the request of Gulfardo, provided, that two espe- ma ciall confiderations might enfue thereon. First, the G faithful concealing thereof to any person living. Next, mai because she knew him to be rich, and she had occasion deptouse two hundred Crownes, about businesse of important consequence; he should freely bestow so many on her, and (ever after) she was to be commanded by him. Gulfardo perceiving the covetous nesses of this woman, whom (notwithstanding his doting aftersion) to Gilfardo free she was to be commanded by the she was to thought to be intirely honest to her husband: became filted for deepely offended at her vile answer, that his fervent ion love converted into as earnest loathing her; determined ning constantly to deceive her, and to make her available tious motion, the onely meanes whereby to effect ion the fent her word, that hee was willing to perform design her request, or any farre greater matter for her: is then which respect, he onely desired for to know, when the wealth would be the control of the control

h

ter

hee

no-

fa-

nes)

Wil-

a the

cau-

wife.

par-

and

with

of her

rence

ad the

leafed

good

would be pleased to have him come fee her, and to receive the money of him? No creature hee acquainted with his fetled purpose, but onely a deare friend and kinde companion, who alwayes used to keepe him company, in the nearest occasions that concerned him. The Gentlewoman,or rather most disloyall wife,upon this answer sent her, was extraordinarily jocond and contented, returning him a fecret Letter, wherein fhee fignified: that Gafparwolo her husband, had important affaires which called him to Geneway: but he should understand of his departure, and then (with fafety) hee might come see her, as also, his bringing of the two hundred Crownes.

In the meane while, Gulfardo having determined what hee would doe, watched a convenient time, when he went unto Gafparvole, and faid : Sir, I have some businesse of maine importance, and shall neede toule but two hundred Crownes onely: I defire you to te fo- lend me fo many Crownes, upon such profite as you

let for lend me fo many Crownes, upon such profice as you ady to were wont to take of me, at other times when I have made use of you, and I shall not faile you at my day.

Gasparvolo was well contented with the motion, and Mext, add no more adoe, but counted downe the Crownes: departing thence (within sew dayes after) for Geneway, according to his wives former messagesshe giving o mad by (with safetie) hee might come see her, and bring the mis voo (with safetie) hee might come see her, and bring the mis voo wondered Crownes with him.

Gulfardo, taking his striend in his company, went to became side Mistresse Ambrosia, whom he found in expectation of his arrivall, and the first thing he did, he countered downe the two hundred Crownes; and delivering the motoria, receive these two hundred Crownes, which thereform desire you to pay unto your husband on my behalfe, when she cithe two hundred Crownes, ambrosia, receive the striet of the two hundred Crownes, which her; in the ne is returned from Geneway. Ambrosia, receive the striet of the two hundred Crownes, and regarding where-youlk would

fore Guifardo nied thele words : because thee verily beleeved, that he foake in fuch manner because his friend fhould take no notice, of his giving them to her, upon any covenant paffed betweene them; whereupon, fice faid. Sir, I will pay them to my husband for you; and caufe him to pive you a sufficient discharge : but firft I will count them over my felic, to fee whether the fumme be juft, or no. And having drawne them over upon the Table, the furning containing truly two hundred Crowns (wherewich the was most highly contented) the looke them fafe up in her Cupboord, and Gulfundoes friend being gone (as formerly it was compaeted betweene them the came to converse more familiarly with him, having provided a banquet for him. What paffed betweene them afterward, both then, and oftentimes belide, before her husband returned home, is a matter out of my element, and rather requires my ignorance, than knowledge.

When Gaspapuolo was come from Geneway, Gulfardo observing a convenient time, when he was fitting at the doore with his wife; tooke his Friend with him, and comming to Gaffarvolo, faid. Worthy Sir, the two hundred Crownes which you lent mee, before your journey to Geneway, in regard they could not ferve my turne, to compafie the bufineffe for vehich I borrowed them : within a day for two after, in presence of this Gentleman my friend, I made repaiment of them to your wife, and therfore I pray you croffe me out of your booke. Gafparvolo turning to his wife, demanded; syncther it was fo, or no? She beholding the witnesse standing by, who was allo present at her receiving them : dutft not make deniall, but thus answered. Indeede husband, I received two hundred Crownes of the Gentleman, and never remembred, to acquaint you therewith fince your comming home : but hereafter I will be made no more your receiver, except I carried a

quicker memory.

Then

alv

20 3

neff

of

ted

pay

whi

fioi

the c

fuce

wife

and

her l

Aluj

fur

he.

he

den

in s

fen

11/11

albe

Appro

70.4

fan

Bor

ê.

nd

on

ice

nd

rft.

the

154

in-

cn-

111-

p3-

mi-

im.

me,

my

Tul-

ting

two

our

my

wed

this

n to

your

ded ; nelle

. In-

ies of

e you

fter I

ried 2

Then

Then faid Gasparvelo: Signior Gustardo, I finde you alwayes a most honest Gentleman, and will be ready army time, to doe you the like, or a farre greater kind-nessedpare at your pleasure, and so are not the crossing of my Booke. So Gustardo went away merily contented, and Ambrosia was served as the justly merited; shee paying the price of her owne lendueste to her husband, which the had a more coverous intent to keepe, questionlesse, not caring how many like lustfull matches see could make, to be so liberally rewarded, if this had succeeded to her minde: whereas hee shewed himsesse wise and discreete, in paying nothing for his pleasure, and well requiring a coverous queane according to let kinde.

Alufty youthfull Prieti of Varlungo, fell in love with a pretty woman named Alonna Belcolore. To compaffe his amorous defire, her left his Cloake (as a predge of further paintent) with her By subtre Seignt after mard, he made meanestabotrom a Morte of her husbands he feat some againe in the prefere of her husbands the demanded to have his Cloake lent him, as having left it in tenne for the Morter. To passife her his and, offended that shee did not lend the Priest hie Morter hishard a prime if he feet him backe his Cloake againe, aboit greatly againsheer will.

Chefecond Novell.

Approving, that no promife is to be keet with fuch IV obecase will make fule of their bonefty for come. A marring it fo for men, not to juster Pringle to be over faulture with their wives.

Our the Gentlemen and Ladies gave equal commendations of Gulfardees quent beguiling the Milme Gentlevroman ambrofia, and withing all other ther mind) might alwayes be fo terved. Then the teene, faciling on Pamphinas, commanded him to law next swhercupon, thus he began. Novell. I. The Eighth Day,

fore Guifardo nied these words : because shee verily beleeved, that he foake in fuch manner, because his friend fhould take no notice, of his giving them to her, upon any covenant paffed betweene them; whereupon, face faid. Sir, I will pay them to my husband for you; and cause him to pive you a sufficient discharge : but first I will count them over my felic, to fee whether the fumme be juft, or no. And having drawne them ever upon the Table, the fumme containing truly two hundred Crowns (wherewith the was most highly contented) the locke them fafe up in her Cuplooid, and Gulfuldoes friend being gone (as formerly it was compa-Sted betweene them; the came to converte more familiarly with him, having provided a banquet for him. What paffed betweener hem afterward, both then, and ofrentimes belide, before her husband returned home, is a matter out of my element, and rather requires my ignorance, than knowledge.

When Gaffapvolo was come from Geneway, Gulfarde observing a convenient time, when he was fitting at the doore with his wife; tooke his Friend with him, and comming to Gaffarvolo, faid. Worthy Sir, the two hundred Crownes which you lent mee, before your journey to Geneway, in regard they could not ferve my turne, to compaffe the bufineffe for which I borrowed them : within a day for two after, in presence of this Gendeman my friend, I made repaiment of them to your wife, and therfore I pray you croffe me out of your booke. Gaffarvolo turning to his wife, demanded; whether it was fo, or no? She beholding the witnesse standing by , who was also present at her receiving them : dutft not make deniall, butthus answered. Indeede husband, I received two hundred Crownes of the Gentleman, and never remembred, to acquaint you therewith fince your comming home : but hereafter I will be made no more your receiver, except I carried a

quicker memory.

Then.

nef

of

ted

wh:

Itio

the o

fuce

wife

and

her

he

be

in i

jen

11/12

albi

20.4

100

Lic

faci

CIV

Then faid Gasparvelo: Signior Gulfardo, I finde you alwayes a most honest Gendeman, and will be ready at any time, to doe you the like, or a farre greater kindnesse, depart at your pleasure, and feare not the crossing of my Booke. So Gulfardo went away merily contented, and Ambrosa was served as the justly merited; thee paying the price of her owne lendnesse to her husband, which the had a more covetous intent to keepe, questionlesse, not caring how many like lustfull matches the could make, to be to liberally rewarded, if this had succeeded to her minde: whereas hee sheved himselse wife and discreete, in paying nothing for his pleasure, and well requiring a covetous queane according to her kinde.

1

Ĉ

d

ie

10

n•

1

3-

1-

m. nd

ne,

my

ul-

ing

im,

110

our

my

red

this

1 10

your

ed;

neffe

ving

es of

ter I

ried a

Then

duffy youthfull Priest of Parlungo, fell in love with a pretty woman named Alenna Belcolore. To compasse his amorous desire, her less this Cloake (as a predge of suther paintent) with her by subtrie seignt after ward, he made meases to borrow a Alorte of very which when he shout no row a game in the presence of her husband; he demanded to bouch is Cloake sent vino, we have ingleft it in a some for the Morter. To passife her his sand, official, that shee did not lend the Priest vice Morter without a private; she sent him backe his Cloake againe, about greatly agains her will.

Chefecond Novell.

Approving, that as promife is to be kest with fuch Wowar as will make fale of their bonefty for come. A marriag also for men, not to suffer Pries to be over faulture with their wives.

Our the Gentlemen and Ladies gave equill commendations of Gulfardees quent beguling the Miliae Gentlewoman America, and villing all other fact mind) might alwayes be for irved. Then the leane, faciling on Pamphius, commended him to low next twhereupon, thus he began.

I can tell you (faire Ladies) a fhort Novell, againft fuch as are continually offenfive to us, yet we being no way able to offend them; at least, in the same manner as they doe injurie us. And for your better understanding what and who they be, they are our lustie Priests, who advance their Standart, and make their publike predications against our wives, winning such advantage over them, that they can pardon them both of the finne and punishment, whenfoever they are once fubjected unto their perswasions, even as if they brough the Soldane bound and captived, from Alexandriato Avignon. Which imperious power, wee (poore fouls) cannot exercise on them, considering we have neither heart nor courage, to doe our devoire in just revenge on their mothers, fifters, daughters, & friends, with the fhri like spirit as they rife in armes against our wives. And ding therefore, I meane to tell you a tale of a Country mans and wife, more to make you laugh at the conclusion there cing of; than for any fingularitie of words or matter; yo could this benefite you may gaine thereby, of an apparant livee proofe, that fuch Sinamon, amorous and pertivading vious Priests, are not alwayes to be credited on their word had n or promiles.

cor promites.

Let me then tell you, that at Varlungo, which you he had know to be not far distant hence, there dwelt a youh would full Pricst, lustie, gallant, and proper of person (especially for womens service) commonly called by the name at had of sweet Sir Simon. Now, albeit he was a man of sleet the correction, yet notwith standing, hee had store of Landal time sentences by heart; some true, but twice so may maimed and salle, Saint-like thewes, holy speeches, and she car ghostly admonitions, which he would preach under wrany rishioners together. When women lay in child bed, was their daily comfortable visitant, and would make leaded them from their houses, when they had any occasion, and would make them from their houses, when they had any occasion. them from their houses, when they had any occasi tay, as to walke abroade: carrying alwayes a bottle of highered

th

as

all

the

any

pla An

ded tho

thou

water about him, wherewith he would sprinkle them by the way; peeces of hallowed Candles, and Chrisome Cakes, which pleafed women extraordinarily, and all the Countrey afforded not fuch another frohke Pricit, as this cur nimble and active fweete Sir Simon.

0

t

1.

5,

ke

n-

he

13gh

ato les)

cher

enge

n the

And mans

Among many other of his feminine Purishioners, all of them being hanfome and comely women: yet there was one more pleasing in his wanton eye, than any of the rest, named Moma Belcolore, and wife to a plaine mechanicke man, called Beativegna del Mazzo. And, to speake uprightly, few Countrey Villages yealded a woman, more freth and lovely of complexion, although not admirable for beauty, yet sweet Sir Simon, thought her a Saint, and fame would be offering at her fhrine. Divers pretty pleafing qualities the had as founding the Cymball, playing artificially on the Timbrill, and finging there: o as it had beene a Nightingale, danthere cing allo fo dexteriously, as happy was the man that : ye could dance in her company. All which to enflamed aran liveet Sir Simon, that he loft his wonted fprightly beharadia viour, walked fuilen, fad, and melancholly, as if hee word had melted all his mettall, because hee could hardly have a fight of her. But on the Sunday morning, when chyo hee heard or knew that thee was in the Church, hee youth would tickle it with a Kyrie and a Santhus, even as if youth would tickle it with a Kyrie and a Santhus, even as if (elpsi the contended to thew his fingular skil in finging, when he may that beene as good to heare an Affe bray. Whereas on of the the contrary, when thee came not to Church, Maffe, e of he and all elfe were quickly thaken up, as if his devotion from wated upon her prefence. Yet hee was to cunting in thes, in the carriage of his amorous businesse, both for her creanders dite and his owne, as Bentivegna could not perceive it, and his or any neighbour so much as tusped it.

d.bed, But to compasse more familiar acquaintance with hald in Beleatore, he sent her severall gifts and presents, day by yoccas day, as sometimes a bunch of deintie greene Garlicke, e of his thereof he had plenty growing in his Garden, which he

The Eighth Day, Novell-2.

he manured with his owne hands, and better than all the countrey yeelded; otherwhiles a small basket of Peale or Beanes, and Onyons or Scallions, as the fea. fon ferved, But when he could come in place where the was; then hee darted amorous wincks and glances at her, with becks, neds, and bluthes, Loves private Ambaffadours; which the (being but countrey-bred) fceming by outward appearance, not to fee, retorted difdainefully, and forthwith would absent her felf, so that fweet Sir Simon laboured fill in vaine, and could not

compaffe what be coveted.

It came to paffe within a while after, that on a time, (about high moone) Sir Simon being walking abroad, chanced to meete with Bentivegna, driving an Affebefore him, laden with divers commodities, and demanding of him, whether he went: Bentivegna, thus anfivered In trach Sir Simm. I am going to the City, about tome elect all befine fe of mine owne, and I carrie thefe things to Signiot Bonacorei da Gineftreto, because he should helpe me before the sudge, when I shall be called in question concerning my patrimony. Sir Si mon looking menty on how, Laid. I nou doc't well Bentivegna, to make a friend fure before thou neede him; goe, take my ble fing with dice, and returne againe with fuccesse. But it i you meet with Laguein, or Natdino, for yet not to tell them, that they touft bring mee my thooc-ties before Sunday. Bentive and faid, he would per pe discharge his errand, and so parting trom him, driving his Affe on towards Fierence,

Nowbegan Sir Simento Gaur, and ferarch his head, thinking this to be a fit convenient time, for him to go vilite Betcolore, and to make triall of his fortune: where simon fore, letting aside all other businesse, he stated no where it like came to the house, whereinto being entred, he sayed said: All happinesse be to them that dwell here. Bet byou, colore being then above in the Chamber, when she were heard his tongue, replied. Sweet Sir Simon I you are

hearm

veh

and

red

Bele

they

10 01

re, .

Belee

canyl

which

(quo

plyed

ty: 1

Ducke

mins.

folong

Bel

of

3.

he

25

n.

cc.

16-

hat

net

me,

ad,

be-

nan-

an-

, 2-

€21°

bc-

thall

ir Si

Ben-

him;

leartily welcome, whither are you walking if the quefion may be demanded? Beleeve me dainty Duck, anfrered Su Simon, I am come to fit a while with thee, because I mer thy husband going to the Citty. By this time, Belco'ore was descended downe the staires, and having once againe given welcome to Sir Simon, the fate downe by him, cleanling of Colewort feeds from fuch other courie chaffe, which her husband prepared before his departure.

Sir Simon hugging her in his armes, and fetching a when ent figh, faid. My Belcolore, how long shall I pine and languish for thy love? How now Sir Simon? answered the, is this behaviour for an holy man ? Holy-men. Beleelore, are made of the fame matter as others be, they have the fame affections, and therefore subject to their infirmities. Santa Maria, answered Belcolote, Dare Priests doe such things as you talke of? Yes Echolore (quoth he) and much better than other men can, because they are made for the very best busines, in which regard they are restrained from marriage. True (quoth Beleafore) but much more from medling with other mens wives. Touch not that Text Belcolore, replyed Sir Simon, it is somewhat above your capaci-Ducke, and my Dove, Six Simon is thine, I pray thee be

g mee Beleafore, observing his smerking behaviour, his prowould. would per person pretty calke, and quient infinuating; felt a riving motion to semale frailty, which yet she wold withstand motion to female frailey, which yet the wold withfrand folong as the could, and not be over hafty in her yeelding. Sir Simon promifed her a new paire of thooes, arrers, ribbands, or what elfe the would requeft. Sir simon (quoth thee) all these things which you talke of, are sie for women: but if your love to me bee such a you make choyce of, fulfull what I will motion e. Bet by you, and then (perhaps) I shall tell you more. Sir Siand the significant made him hasty to promise whatsever the you ar was heate made him halfy to promife whatfoever the would hearm

Novell.2. The Eighth Day,

would defire, whetupon thus the replyed, On Saturday faide the, I must goe to Florence, to carry home such yarne as was fent me to spin, and to amend my spinning wheelest you will lend me ten Florines, wherewith I know you are alwayes surnished, I shall redeeme from the Vsurer my best pericote, and my wedding gowne (both well neere lost for lacke of repayment) without which I cannot be seene at-Church, or in any other good place els, and then atterward other matters.

may be accomplished.

Alas, sweet Belcolore answered Sir Simon, I never bare any fuch fum about me . for men of our profession, doe teldome carry any money at all: but beleeve me on my word before Saturday com, I will not faile to bring the hither. Oh Sir (quoth Belcelore) you men are quicke promifers, but flow performers. Doe you thinke to use me, as poore Billegga was, who trufted to faire words, and found her felte deceived? Now Sir Simon, her example in being made scandall to the world, is a sufficient warning for me: if you be not (o provided, go and make use of your friend, for I am not otherwise to be mooved. Nay Belcolore (quoth he) I hope you will not ferve me fo, but my word shall be of better worth to you. Confider the conveniency of time, we being fe privately here alone; whereas at my returning hither againe, some hinderance may thwart me, and the like opportunity be never obtained. Sir, Sir, (faid the) you have heard my resolution; if you will fetch the Floring do,otherwise, walke about your busines, for I am a wo man of my word.

Sir Simon perceiving, that the would not trust him up on bare words, nor any thing was to be done, with ont Saluum me fae, wheras his meaning was Sine custa dia; thus answered. Well Beleatore, leeing you dare no credit my bringing the ten Florines, according to mpromised day, I wil leave you a good pawne, my verbect Cloake, lined quire thorow with rich Silk, & mad up in the choisest manner.

Bela

the keeping of my cloak, for feare it go to gage indeed, Bentivegna was a little displeased at his wives words, because he thought she spake but in jest; albeit Belcologivas so angry with Sir Simon, that she wold not speak to him, till vintage time following. But then Sir Simon, what by sharpe threatnings, of her soule to be in danger of hel siré, coatinuing so long in hatred of a holy Priest which words did not a little terrise her; beside daily presents to her, of sweet new Wines, roasted Chessenuts, Figs and Almonds, all unkindnes became converted to former familiarity; the garments were redeemed: he gave her Sonnets which she would sweetly sing to her Cimball, and further friendship increased between her and sweete Sir Simon.

Calandrino, Bruno, and Buffalmaco, all of them being Painters by profession, travelled to the Plaine of Mugnone, to finds the precious Stone called Helistropium. Calandrino per mading himself that he had found it, returned home to his house heavily loden with stones. His Wife rebuking him for his absence, he groweth into anger, and shrewdly beatern her. Afterward, when the case is debated among his other friends Bruno and Buffalmaco, all is found to be meere foolery.

The Third Novell.

ufly reprehending the simplicity of fuch men, as are too much addicted to credulity, and mil give credit to every thing they heare.

D. Amphilus having ended his Novell, wherat the Ladies laughed exceedingly, so that very hardly they ould give over: The Queen gave charge to Madam Edge, that she should next succeed in order; when, being tarcely able to refraine from smyling, thus she began. I know not (Gracious Ladies) whether I can moove ou to as hearty laughter, and with a breefe Novell of time owne, as Pamphilus did with his; yet lassure you,

Novell.3. The Eighth Day,

it is both true and pleasant, and I will relate it in the best manner I can.

In our City, which evermore hath contained all forts of people, not long fince there dwelr, a Painter, named Calandrino, a fimple man; yet as much addicted to matters of noveky, as any man whatfoever could be. The most part of his time, he spent in the company of two other Painters, the one called Brune, and the other Buffalmaco, men of very recreative spirits, and indifferent good capacity, often reforting to the faide Calandring, because they tooke delight in his honest simplicity, and pleasant behaviour. At the same time likewife, there dwelt in Florence, a yong Gentleman of fingular disposition, to every witty conceite, as the world did not yeeld a better companion, he being named Ma-To del Saggio, who having heard formwhat of Calandrinos fillines:determined to jeft with him iu merry manner, and to suggest his longing humors after Novelties, with some conceit of extraordinary nature.

He happening (on a day) to meete him in the Church of Saint 10hm, and feeing him ferious busied, in beholding the rare pictures, and the curious carved Tabernacle, which (not long before) was placed on the high Altar in the said Chuch: considered with himselfe, that he had now fit place and opportunity, to essed what he had long time desired. And having imparted his mind to a very intimate friend, how he intended to deale with simple Calandrine, they went both very necre him where he sate all alone, and making shew as if they saw him nots began to consult betweene themselves, concerning the rare property of precious stones; whereof Maso discoursed as exactly, as he had been a most skilfull Lapidary; to which conference of theirs, Calandrino lent an attentive eare, in regard it was matter of sin-

gular rarity.

Soone after, Calandrino started up, and perceiving by their loude speaking, that they talked of nothing which required

required fecret Counfell : he went into their company (the only thing which Mafe defired) and holding on fill the former Arguments Calandrino would needs request to know, in what place these precious stons were to be found, which had fuch excellent vertues in them ?-Malo made answer, that the most of them were to be had in Berling ona, neere to the Citty of Bajcha, which was in the Territory of a Country, called Bengodi, where the Vines were bound about with Sawcidges, a Goofe was fold for a penny, and the Goffings freely given in to boote. There was also an high mountaine, wholly made of Parmezane, grated Cheefe, wheren dwelt people, who did nothing elfe but make Micharones and . Ravivolies, boyling them with broth of Capons, and afterward hurled them all about, to who foever can or will catch them, Neere to this mountaine runneth a faire River, the whole stream being pure white Bastard, none fuch was ever fold for any money, and without one drop of water in it.

Now trust me Sir, (said Calandrino) that is an excellent country to dwell in: but I pray you tel me Sir, what do they with the Capons after they have boyld them? The Baschanes (quoth Maso) cate them all. Have you Sir, said Calandrino, at any time beene in that Countrey? How? answered Maso, do you demand if I have bin there? Yes man, above a thousand times, at the least. How far Sir. I pray you (quoth Calandrino) is that worthy Countrey, from this our Citty? In troth, replyed Maso, the miles are hardly to be numbred, for the most part of them, wee travell when we are nightly in our beds, and if a man dreame right; he may be there upon

a fudden.

Surely Sir, faid calandrino, it is further hence, then to Abruz ?? Yes questionles, replyed Mafo; but, to a willing mind, no travell feemeth tedious.

Calandrino well noting, that Majo delivered all these speeches, with a stedfast countenance, no signe of smy-

ling.

ling, or any gesture to urge the least missike: he gave fuch credit to them, as to any matter of apparent and manifest truth, and upon this considence he said.

Beleeve me Sir, the journey is over-force for me to undertake, but if it were neerer; I could afford to go in your Company; onely to see how they make Machero-

nes, and to fill my belly with them.

But now we are in talke Sir, I pray you pardon me to aske, whether any fuch precious stones, as you speak of are to be found in that Country, or no? Yes indeed, replyed Mafo, there are two kinds of them to be found in those Territories, both being of very great vertue. One kind, are gritty ftones, of Settignano, and of Montifca, by vertue of which places, when as any Mill-stones or Grind-ftones are to be made, they knede the fand as they use to do meal, & so make them of what bignes they pleafe. In which respect, they have a saying there: that Nature maketh common stones, but Montifes Mill-flones. Such plenty are there of these Mill-flones, fo flenderly here effeemed among us, as Emeralds are with them, whereof they have whole mountains, farre greater than our Montemorello, which thine most glorioully at midnight. And how meanly foever we account of their Mill-Rones; yet they drill them, and enchase them in Rings, which afterward they fend to the great Soldaine, and have whatfoever they will demaund for them.

fa

fe

fil

The other kind is a most precious Stone indeed, which our best Lapidaries call the Helitropium, the vertue whereof is to admirable; as whosoever beareth it about him so long as he keepeth it, it is impossible for any cie to discerne him, because he walketh meerely invisible, O Lord Sir (quoth Calandrino) those stones are of rare vertue indeed; but where els may a man find that Helitropium? Whereto Maso thus answered: That Country only doth not containe the Helitropium; for they be many times found upon our plain of Mugnons. Of what bignes

governed by Madam Lauretta.

bignette Sir (quoth Calandrino) is the Stone, and what colour? The Helitropium, answered Maso, is not alwaies of one quality, because some are hig, and others

leffe; but all are of one colour, namely blacke.

ave

and

e to

in

70-

to

cof

rc. iR

ne

ĉa,

nes

nd

105

e:

Ca

cs,

are

rre

ri-

mt

afe

at

or

ch

uc

ut

ie

le.

re

e-

n-

be

at

CS

Calandrine committing all thefe things to respective memory, and pretending to be called thence by fome other especial affaires; departed from Maso, concluding refolvedly with himfelf, to find this precious ftone if pollibly he could: yet intending to do nothing, untill he had acquainted Bruno and Buffalmaco therwith, whom he loved dearely: hee went in all hafte to feeke them; because, (without any longer crifling the time) they three might be the first men, that should find our this precious fron fpending almost the whole norning. before they were all three met together For they were painting at the Monastery of the Sifters of Faenga, where they had very felious imployment, and followed their builines diligently:where having found them, and faluting them in fuch kinde manner, as continually he uled to doe, thus he began.

Loving friends, it you were pleased to follow mine advile, we three will quickly be the richest men in Florence; because, by information from a Gentleman (well deferving to be credited on the Plain of Mugnone, ther is a precious stone to be found, which who loever cartieth it about him, walketh invifible, and is not to be feen by any one. Let us three be the first men to go and finde it, before any other heare thereof, and goe about it, and affure our felves that we thall but it for I know it (by description) so soone as I see it. And when we have it, who can hinder us from bearing it about us? I hen will we got to the Tables of our Bankers, or money Changers, which we feed any with planty of gold and hiver, where we may take fo much as we lift, for they (nor any) are able to descry us. So, (in there time) thall we all be wealthy, never needing to drudge any more, or paint muddy wals, as hitherto we have done; and, as

many

nany of our poore profession are forced to doc.

Brune and Buffalmaco, hearing this, began to fmile, & looking merrily each on other, they feemed to wonder thereat, and greatly commended the counfell of Calandrino, Buffalmaco demanding how the stone was called. Now it fortuned, that Calandrine (who had but a groffe and blockish memory) had quite forgot the name of the stone, and therefore saide, What need have we of the name, when we know and are affured of the ftones vertue? Let us make no more ado, but (fetting afide all other bufineffe)go feeke where it is to be found, Well my friend (answered Bruno) you say we may find it, but how and by what meanes?

There are two forts of them (quoth Calandrino) some big others smaller, but all carry a blacke colours therefore (in mine opinion) let us gather all fuch ftons as are blacke, fo shall we be fore to finde it among them, with-

out any further loffe of time.

Buffalmaco and Bruno, liked and allowed the counsel of Calandring, which when they had (by feverall commendations) given him affurance of, Bruno faide, I doe not thinke it a convenient time now, for us to go about fo weighty a busines: for the Sunne is yet in the highest degree and Arike th fuch a heate on the plaine of Mugmone, as all the stones are extreamely dryed and the very blackett will now feeme whiteft. But in the morning after the dew is falne, and before the Sun thineth forth, every stone retaineth his true colour. Morcover, there be many Labourers now working on the plaine, about fuch busines as they are severally assigned, who seeing us in so ferious a ferch: may imagin what we feeke for, and partake with us in the same inquisition; by which meanes they may chance to speed before us, and so we may lofe both our trot and amble. Wherefore by my confent : if your opinion jumpe with mine, this is an enterprize onely to be performed in an earely morming when the black flones are to be diftinguish: from

W

C

G

fir

k

W

fa

fo

2

of

40

ar

20

te.

fre

60

the white, and a Festival day were the best of all other, for then there will be none to discover us.

Buffalmaco applauded the advise of Bruno, and calandrino did no leffe, concluding altogether; that Sunday moraing (next enfuing) thould be the time, and then they all three would go leeke the stone. But Calandrino was very earnest with them, that they shold not reveale it to any living body, becauseit was told him as an efpeciallifecretedisclosing further to them, what he had heard concerning the Countrey of Bengodi, maintaining (with folemn oaths and protestations) that every part thereof was true. Vpon this agreement, they parted from Calandrino who hardly enjoyed any rest at als either by night or day, so greedy he was to be possessed of the stone. On the Sonday morning, he called up his Companions before break of day, and going forth at S. Galls Port, they flayed not, till they came to the plaine of Singnone, where they fearched all about to finde this

Brange ftone.

1-

of

28

ut

10

ve

ie

1 -

ð,

id

10

re

el

c

A

Calandrino went ftealing before the other two, and verily perswading himselfe, that he was borne to finde the Heittrophum, and looking on every fide about him, he rejected all other Stones but the blacke, whereof first he filled his bosom, and afterwards, both his Pockets. Then he tooke of his large painting Aprona which he faftened with his girdle in the manner of a facke, and that he filled full of flones likewife. Yet not lo fatisfied, he fpred abroad his Cloake, which being also full of stones, he bound it up carefully, for feare of looling the very least of them. All which Buffalmaso and Bruno well observing (the day growing on, and hardly they could reach home by dinner time) according as merrily they had concluded, and pretending not to fee Catandrino, albeit he was not farre from them: What is become of Calandrino? faide Buffalmaco. Bruno gazing strangely every where about him, as if he were desirous to finde him, replyed.

Isaw him not long since, for then he was hard by before us questionles, he hath given us the slip, is privily
gone home to dinner, and making starke fooles of as,
hath left us to picke up black stones, upon the parching
plaines of Magnone. Well (quoth Buffalmace) this is but
the tricke of an hollow-hearted friend, and not such as
he protested himselfe to be to us. Gould any but we
have bin so south, to credit his rivolusts perswasions,
hoping to finde any stone of such ver ue, and here on
the fruitses plains of Mugaene? Ho, no, none but we

would have beleeved aim.

Calandrino (who was close by them) hearing these words, and feeing the whole manner of their wondering behaviour: became conflantly personaded, that he had not only found the precious frome; but also had some fore of them about him, by reason hee was so neare them, and yet they could not fee him, therefore he walked before them. Now was his joy beyond all compafe of expression, and being exceeding proud of Sobappy an adventure, did not meane to speake one word to them, but (heavily laden as he was) to fteale home faire and foitly before them; which indeede he did, leaving them to follow after if they would. Bruno perceiving his intent, faide to Buffalmaco: What remaineth now for us to do? Why should not we go home as well as he? And reason too, replyed Bruno, It is in vaine to tarry any longer here; but I folemnly protest, Calandrino shall no more make an Affe of me; and were I now as nere him, as not long fince I was, I would give him fuch a remembrance on the heele with this Fline ftone, as should flicke by him this moneth, to teach him a leston for abusing his friends.

Hee threw the frone, and hit him shrewdly on the heele therewith; but all was one to Calandrino, whatforver they faide, or did, as thus they thill followed after him. And though the blow of the stone was painfull to him; yet he mended his pace so well as he was able,

be-

ily

as,

ing

but

1 25

WC

ns,

on

WC

efe

dehe

ad

fo

ore

all

of

ne

ale he

mo

e-

ne

in A,

re

ve

ne

m

10

f-

ii

٠,

in regard of being over-laden with stones, and gave them not one word all the way, because he tooke him-selfe to be invisible, and utterly unseene of them. Buffalmacotaking up another Flint-stone, which was indifferent heavie and sharpe, said to Bruno. Seefe thou this Flint? Calting it from him, smote Calandrino just in therewith, saying. Obtinat, Calandrino had beene fo necre, as I might have hit nim on the backe with the stone. And thus all the way on the plaine of Magnone, they did nothing else but pelt him with stones even so farre as the Port of Saint Gall, where they threw downe what other stones they had gathered, meaning not to molest him any more, because they had done enough al ready.

There they fleps before him into the Port, & acquainted the Warders with the whole matter, who laughing heartily at the jeft, the better to uphoid it would feeme not to fee Calonarino in his poffase by the but suffered him to goe on. fore wearied with his burthen, and fweating extreamly. Without refting himfelfe in any any place, her came home to his houfe, which was necree to the country of the Milles, Fortune being fo favourable to him in the cearse of this mockerie, that as he passed along the Rivers side, and afterward through part of the Citie, he was neither met nor feene by any, in regard they were all in their houses, because it was

dinact time.

Calandriv 1, every minute ready to finke under the Weighey burthen, entred into his owne house, where (by great ill lucke) his wife, being a comely and very honest woman, and named Monna Triffa, was thanding alost on the staires head. She being somewhat angue for his so long basence, and seeing him come in grunting and groaning, frowningly said. I thought that the divest woldwever let thee come home: all the whole city have dined, and yet we must remaine without our dineer; When Calandrino heard this, and perceived that

he

he was not invisible to his wife; full of rage and wroth, he began to raile, saying: Ah thou wicked woman, where art thou? Thou hast utterly undone me; but (as I live) I will pay thee soundly for it. Vp the staires he ascended into a small Parlour, where when hee had spred all his burthen of stones on the sloore; hee ran to his vise, catching her by the haire of the head, and throwing her at his feete; giving her so many spurnes and cruell blowes, as she was not able to move either armes or legges, notwithstanding all her teares, and humble submission.

Now Buffalmaco and Bruno, after they had spent an indifferent while, with the Warders at the Portia laughter; in a faire and gentle pace, they followed Calandrino home to his house, and being come to the doore, they heard the harsh bickering betweene him & his wife, and feeming as if they were newly arrived, they called out aloud to him, Calandrino being in a fweat, stamping and raving still at his wife; looking out of the window, entreated them to ascend up to him, which they did, counterfetting grievous displeasure against him. Being come into the roome, which they fiw all covered over with flones, his wife fitting in a corner, all the haire (well-neere) torne off her head, her face broken and bleeding, and all her body cruelly beaten; on the other fide, Calandrine standing unbraced and ungirded, ftruggling and wallowing, like a man quite out of breath: after a little pauling, Bruno thus spake.

Why how now Calandrino? What may the meaning of this matter be? What, art thou preparing for building, that thou hast provided such plentie of stones? How fitteth thy poore wife? How hast thou misused her? Are these the behaviours of a wise or honest man? Calandrino, utterly over-spent with travell, and carrying such an huge burthen of stones, as also the toyle-some beating of his wife, (but much more impatient

nd

im

get

fat

an

co

th

ftc

ne

bu

LVY

the

CO

tef

be

yo

101

m

W

in

for

yo

the

ter

and offended; for that high good fortune, which hee imagined to have lost:) could not collect his spirits to, gether, to answer them one ready word, wherefore he sate fretting like a mad man. Whereupon, Buffalmato thus began to him. Calandrino, if thou be angry with any other, yet thou shouldest not have made such a mockery of us, as thou hast done: in leaving us (like a couple of Coxcombes) to the plaine of Mugnone, whither thou leaddest us with thee, to seek a precious stone called Helitropium. And couldst thou steak home, never bidding us so much as farewell? How can wee but take it in very evill part, that thou shouldest abuse two honest neighbours? Well, assure thy selfe, this is the last time that ever thou shalt ferve us so.

calandrino (by this time) being somewhat better come to himselfe, with an humble protestation of courtesse, returned them this answer. Alas my good friends, be not you offended, the case is faire otherwise than you imagine. Poore unfortunate man that I am, I found the rare precious stone that you speake of: and marke mee well, if I doe not tell you the truth of all. When you asked one another (the first time) what was become of me; I was hard by you: at the most, within the distance of two yards length; and perceiving that you saw me not, (being still so neere, and alwayes before you:) I went on, smiling to my selfe, to he are

you brabble and rage against me.

d

ıĉ

d

15

So, proceeding on in his discourse, he recounted every accident as it hapned, both what they had said and did unto him, concerning the severall blowes, with the two Flint-stones, the one hurting him grievously in the heele, and the other paining him as extremely in the backe, with their speeches used then, and his laughter, notwithstanding hee felt the harme of them both, yet being proud that hee did so invisibly beguile them. Nay more (quoth hee) I cannot forbeare to tell you, that when I passed thorow the Port, I saw you standing

Novell.3 . The Eighth Day,

with the Warders; yet, by vertue of that excellent Stone, undiscovered of you all. Beside, going along the streets, I met many of my Gossips, friends, and familic acquaintance, such as vice daily to converse with me, and drinking together in every Taverne: yet not one of them spake to me, neither used any courtesse of faluration, which (indeede) I did the more freely forgive them, because they were not able to see me.

21

fi

bi

ir

21

car

ber

to

In the end of all, when I was come home into mine owne house, this diveilinh and accurfed woman, being aloft upon my flaires head, by much misfortune chinced to see me; in regard (asse is not unknowne to you) that women cause all things to lose their vertice. In which respect, I that could haveflild my selfe the onely happy man in Florence, amnow made most miserable. Therefore did I justly beate het, so long as she was able to fland against me, and I know no reason to the contrary, why I should not yet teare her in a thousand precess; for I may well curse the day of our marriage, to hinder and bereave me of such an invisible blessense.

Buffahnaco and Bruso hearing this, made thew of verie much merveiling thereat, and many times majotatned what Calandrino faid; being well ne re ready to burft with laughter 5 confidering how confidently hee flood upon it, that he had found the wonderfuli Stone, and lost it by his wives speaking onely to kim. But when they law him tile in fury once more, was intent to beate her againe : then they flipt betiveene them; affirming, that the woman had no way offended in this cafe, but rather he himfelie: who knowing that women cause all things to lose their vertue, h & not therefore exprelly commanded her, not to be teene in his prefence all that day, untill he had made full proofe of the stones vertue. And questionlesse, the consideration of a matter fo availeable and important, was quite taken from him, because such an especiali happineste, should not belong to him onely; but (it. part) to his friends, whom

ent

ong

fa-

rich

not

cor

or-

ine

ing

in-

ou)

in

ble.

able

on-

ric-

to

cs.

VC-

111-

1:0

hee

ne, But

ent

m;

his

nen

ore

re-

the

ofa

cen.

uld

ds,

om

whom he had acquainted therewith, drew them to the plaine with him in company, where they tooke as much prines in fearch of the stone, as possibly hee did, or could; and yet (dishonestly) he would deceive them, and beare it away coverously, for his private benefite.

After many other, as wife and wholesome perswafions, which he constantly credited, because they spake
them, they reconciled him to his wife, and she to him:
but not without some difficulty in him: who falling
into wonderfull griese and melancholy, for losse of such
an admirable precious stone, was in danger to have
died within lesse than a moneth after.

The Provost belonging to the Church of Fiesola, fell in love with a Gentle woman, being a widdow, and named Piccarda, who hated him as much as he loved her. He imagining, that hee lay with her: by the Gentlewomans Brethren, and the Bishop under whom he served, was taken in bed with her mayd, an ugly soute deformed Slut.

The fourth Novell.

Wherein is declared, how love of tentimes is so powerfull in aged men, and driving them to such deating, that it redoundeth to their great disgrace and punishment.

L Ady Eliza having concluded the Novell, not without infinite commendations of the whole company: the Queene turning her lookes to Madam Entita, gave her such an expresse signe, as thee must needs sollow next after Madam Eliza, whereupon she began in this manner.

Vertuous Ladies, I very well remember (by divers Novels formerly related) that sufficient hath bin said, concerning Priests and Religious persons; and all other carrying shaven Crowns, in their suscious defires. Fur because no one can at any time say so much, as thereto no more may bee added: beside them already

fpoken

fpoken of, I will tell you another concerning the Provoff of a Cathedrall Church, who would needs (in defpight of all the world) love a Gentlewoman whether the would or no: and therefore, in due chaftifement both unto his age and folly, thee gave him such enter-

tainement as he juftly deserved.

It is not unknowne unto you all, that the Citie of Ficosola, the mountaine whereof wee may very easily hither difference, hath beene (in times past) a very great and most ancient City: although at this day it is well-neere all ruined: yet neverthelesse, it alwayes was, and yet it is a Bishops See, albeit not of the wealthiest. In the same Citie, and no long while since, neare unto the Cathedrall Church, there dwelt a Gentlewoman, being a Widdow, and commonly there shield Madam Piccarda, whose house and inheritance was but sinall, wherewich yet she lived very contentedly (having no wandering eye, or wanton desires) and no company but her two brethren, Gentlemen of especials house and gracious disposition.

This Gentlewoman, being yet in the flourishing condition of her time, did ordinarily refort to the Cathe. drall Church, in holy zeale, and religious devotion; where the Provost of the place, became so enamored of ber, as nothing (but the fight of her) yeelded him any contentment. Which fond affection of his , was forwarded with fuch an audacious and bold carriage, as he dared to acquaint her with his love, requiring her enterchange of affection, and the like opinion of him, as he had of her. True it is, that he was very farreentred into yeares, but young and luftic in his own proud conceir, prefuming Grangely beyond his capacity, and thinking as well of his ability, as the youthfulleft gallant in the world could doe. Whereas (in very deede) his person was utterly displeasing his behaviour immodest and scandalous, and his usuall Language, savouring of fuch fenfuality, as, very few or none cared for his

com-

con

it w

for

COTT

Ger

fpal

as y

our

in d

har

end

ver:

mae

tual

mad

con

and but:

ten :

COM

on.

how

you

causi

WOU

her

Vate

Gnu

Chu

no li his t

the n

noe

T

company. And if any woman feemed respective of him, it was in regard of his one fide and profession, and more for feare, than the least affection, and alwayes as wel-

come to them, as the head-ake.

ro-

de-

her

icik

ter-

e of

fily

reat ell-

and

the

be-

lam

all,

no

any

neit

on-

on:

of

any

or-

as her

im,

en-

ind

le)

10-

ing his

m-

His fond and foolish carriage still commung to this Gentlewoman ; the being wife and vertnoully advited, spake thus unto him: Holy Sir, if you love me according as you proteft, and manifest by your outward behaviour: I am the more to thanke you for it, being bound in dutie to love you likewife. But if your love have any harsh or unsavory tafte, which mine is no way able to endure, neither dare entertaine in any kinde whatfoever: you must and shall hold me excused, because I am made of no fuch temper. You are my ghoftly and spirituall Father, an holy Prieft. Moreover, yeares have made you honourably aged; all which severall weighty confiderations, ought to confirme you in continencie and chastitie, Remember with all (good Sir) that I am but a child to you in years, and were I beneto any wanton appetites, you should justly correct me by fatherly counfell, fuch as mot beaurifieth your facred profestion. Befide, I am a widdow, and you are not ignorant, how requifite a thing honestie is in widdowes. Wherefore, pardon me (holy Father:) for, in fuch manner as you make the motion : I defire you not to love me, bes cause I neither can or will at any time so affect you.

The Provost gaining no other grace at this time, would not give over for this first repulse, but pursuing her still with unbesceming importunitie; many private meanes he used to her by Letters, tokens, and infiniating ambassages; yea, whensoever she came to the Church, hee never ceased his wearisome solicitings. Whereat she growing greatly offended, and perceiving no likelihood of his desisting; became so tired with his tedious suite, hat the considered with her selfe, how she might dispatch him as he deserved, because the first no other remedy. Yet she would not attempt any thing

127

Novell.4. The Eighth Day,

in this cale, without acquainting her Brethren fift therewith. And having told them, how much shee wis importuned by the Provost, and also what course she meant to take (wherein they both counselled and encouraged her:) within a few dayes after, she wento Church as she was wont to doe; where so soone as the Provost espicialist: forthwith he came to her, and according to his continued course, he sell into his amortous courting. Shee looking upon him wish a smilling countenance, and walking aside with him out of any hearing: after he had speat many impertinent speeches, she (venting forth many a grievous sighe) at length to turned him this answer.

Reverend Father, I have often heard it faid; That there is not any Fort or Castle, how strongly munited foever it be; but by continuall assayling, at length (of necessitie) it must and will be surprized. Which comparison, I may full well allude to my selfe. For, you having so long time solicited me, one while with assayling fo long time solicited me, one while with assayling power, as have broken the very barticado of my former deliberation, and yeelded mee up as your prisoner, to be commanded at your pleasure,

for now I am onely devoted yours:

Well may you (Gentle Ladies) imagine, that this answer was not a little welcome to the Provost; who, shrugging with conceite of joy, presently thus replied. I thanke you Madam Piccarda, and to tell you true, I held it almost as a miracle, that you could stand upon such long resistance, considering, it never so fortune to me with any other. And I have many times said in my selfe, that if women were made of silver, they hard ly could be worth a penny, because there can scarsely one be found of so good allay, as to endure the test and essay. But let us breake off this frivolous conference, and resolve upon a conclusion; How, when, and where we may safely meete together. Worthy Sir, answere

his night, another hereafter may more fortunarly performent hope whereof, commend my love and dutious ervice to her, and (what elfe remained mine) to your

entle felfe.

So, our halfe frozen Scholler, scarcely able to walke pon his legges, returned home, (so well as he could) o his owne lodgings where, his spirits being grievously ut of order, and his eyes staring gastly through lacke of leepe: he lay downe on his bed, and after a little rest, e found himselfe in much worse condition than beer, as meerely taken lame in his armes and his legs. Whereupon he was inforced to send for Phystions, to e advised by their counsell, in such an extremity of old received. Immediatly, they made provision for his health (albeith nerves and sinewes could very hardy extend themselves) yet in regard he was young, and summer swiftly drawing on; they had the better hope if effecting his safetie out of so dangerous a cold.

But after hee was become almost well and lusty aaine, he used to be seldome seene abroade for an inifferent while; conceasing his intended revenge seeret ohimselse, yet appearing more assectionate to Madam

Helena, than formerly he had beene.

Now it came to passe (within no long while after) hat Fortune being favourable to our injured Scholler, repared a new accident, whereby he might fully effect is hearts defire. For the lufty yong Gallant, who was sadam Helenaes deare darling and delight, and (for hose fake) she dealt so inhumanely with poore Renie, there weary of her amorous service, and was falne alking of another Lady, scorning and distaining his ormer Mistresse, whereast she grew exceedingly displeated; and began to languish most grievously in sighes and teares.

But Ancilla her waiting-woman, compassionating to perilous condition of her Lady, & knowing no likemeanes whereby to conquer this oppressing griefe, ich shee suffered for the losse of her hearts chosen and at length she began to consider, that the Scholar still walked daily by the doore, as he formerly used a do, and (by him) there might some good be done.

A fond and foolish opinion overswayed her, that the Scholler was extraordinarily skilfuil in the Arr of Negromancy, and could thereby fo over-rule the heart of her loft friend, as he fhould be compelled to love her once againe, in as effcetual! manner as before ; herewith immediately the acquainted her Lady, who being as rathly credulous, as her maid was opinionative (never confidering that if the Scholler had any experience in Negromancy, hee would thereby have procured his owne fucceste) gave releefe to her furmise, in very joviall and comfortable manner, and intreated her in all kindnesse, to know of him, whether he could worke fuch a bufineffe, or no, and (upon his undertaking to effect it) the would give absolute affurance, that (in recompence thereof) hee should unfainedly obtaine his hearts defire. Antika was quicke and expeditious, in delivering this meffage to discontented Reniere; whole foule being ready to mount out of his body, onely by conceit of joy; cheerefully thus he faid within himselfe. Gracious Fortune! how highly am I obliged to thee for this fo greet a favour? Now thou haft bleft mee with a happy time, to be justly revenged on fo wicked a woman, who fought the utter ruine of my life, in recompence of the unfained affection I bare her. Returne to thy Lady (quoth he) and fatuting her first on my behalfe, bid her to abandon all care in this bufineffe; for if her amorous friend were in India, I would make him come (in meere defpight of bis heart) and crave mercy of her for his bafe transgreffion. But concerning the meane, how, and in what masmer it is to be done, efpecially on her owne behalfe. I mi impart it to her fo foon as the pleaseth : faile not to tell he fo conftantly from mee, with all my utmoft paines at he fervice. Ancilla

Antilla came jocondly home with her answer, and a conclusion was fet downe for their meeting together: Santa Lucia del prato, which accordingly was perfomed, in very solemne conference betweene them. He affection had such power over her, that she had forgot, into what perill she brought his life, by such an unnaturall night-walke; but disclosed all her other intention to him, how loth she was to lose so deare a friend, and defining him to exercise his utmost height of skill, with large promises of her manifold favours to him, where-

to our Scholler thus replied.

en

ol-

fed

the

Ve-

t of

her

10-

ing ne-

nce

his

jo-

orke

g to

his

de-

hole

y by

elfe.

ee for

ith a

man,

of the

work

riend

gref.

ell be

at he

acilla

Very true it is Madava, that among other fludies at Paris, I learned the Art of Negromancy, the depth whereof I am as shilfull in, as any other Scholler whatfocver. But, because it is greatly displeasing unto God, I made a vom never toufe it, either for my felfe or any other. Nevertheleffe, the love I beare you is of fuch power, as I know not well how to deny, what foever you pleafe to command me: in which respect, if in doing you my very best service; ? were fure to be feized on by all the divils: I will not faile to accomplish your defire, you onely having the power to command mee. But let me tell you Madam, it is a matter not fo eafie to be performed, as you perhaps may rafely imagine, especially, when a woman would repeale a man to her, or a man a woman: because it is not to be done. but by the person whom it properly belongeth. And there. fore it behoveth, that fuch as would have this bu fineffe effetted, muft be of a confrant minde, without the leaft firuple of feare : because it is to be accomplished in the darke night feafon, in which difficulties I doe not know. how you are able to warrant your felfe, or whether you have fuch courage of fririt, as (with boldneffe) to adventure.

Madam Helena, more hot in pursuite of her amorous contentment, than any way governed by temperate discretion, presently thus answered. Sir, Love hath ser such a keene edge on my unconquered affection, as

11 :

there

there is not any danger fo difficule but I dare refolutely undertake it, for the recovery of him, who hath fo samefully refused my kindnesse: wherefore (if you eafe they me wherein I must befo constant & dreadfife. The Scholler, who had (more than half) caught a Ninny-hammer by the beake, thus replied. Madame. of necessitie I must make an Image of Tinne, in the name of him whom you defire to recall. Which when I have fent you, the Moone being then in her full, and your felfe flript flarke naked : immediately after your fift fleepe, feven times you must bathe your felfe with it in a fwift running River. Afterward, naked as you are, you must climbe up upon some tree, or else apon an uninhabited house top, where standing dreadrelie of any perill, and turning your face to the North, with the Image in your hand, feaven times you muft sperke some certaine words, as I will deliver to you in writing.

After you have so often spoken them, two goodly Ladies (the very fairest that ever you beheld) will appeare unto you, very graciously saluting you, and demanding what you would have them to performe for you. Safely you may speake unto them, and orderly tell them what you defire; but be very carefull, that you name not one man insted of another. When you have attered your minde, they will depart from you, and then you may descend againe, to the place where you did leave your garments, which having put on, then returne to your house. And undoubtedly, before the midst of the next night following, your friend will come in teares to you and humbly crave your pardon on his sinces; being never able afterward to be faile to you, or

Seave your Love for any other whatfoev ...

The Lady hearing these words, gave very settled befeese to them, imagining unfainedly, that shee had (more than halfe) recovered her friend already, and held him embraced betweene her armes: in which jo-

cond perswasion, the cheerefull bloud mounted up into her cheekes, and thus the replied. Never make yourny donbt Sir, but that I can fufficiently performe whatfoever you have faid, and am provided of the onely place in the world, where fuch a weightie bufineffe is to be effeded, For I have a Farme, or Dairy house, necreadjoyning to the Vale of Arno, and closely bordering upon the same River. It being now the moneth of July the most convenientest time of all the yeare to bathe in I can be the easier induced thereunto. Morcover, there is hard by the Rivers fide a small Tower or Turret uninhabited; whereinto few people doe fildome enter, but only Heardsmen or Flock-keepers, who ascend up (by the help of a woodden Ladder) to a Tarraffe on the top of the faid Tower, to looke all about for their beafts, when they are wandred aftray : it fanding in a folitary place, or out of the common way or refort. There dare I boldly adventure to mount up, & with the invincible courage of a wronged Lady (not fearing to looke death in the face) doe all that you have prescribed, yea, and much more, to recover my deare loft Lover again, whom I value equal! with my owne life.

Reniero, who perfectly knew both the Dairy Farme, and the old small Turret, not a little joyfull, to heare how forward the was to thame her felie, answered in this manner. Madam, I was never in those parts of the Country; albeit they are fo neere to our Citie, and therefore I must needs be ignorant, not only of your Farme, but the Turret alfo. But if they fland in fuch convenient manner as you have described, all the world could not yeeld the like elfewhere, fo apt and futable to your purpole : wherefore, with fuch expedition as poslibly I can ufe, I will make the Image, and fend it you, as alfo the charme, very fairely written. But let mee intreate von. that when you have obtained your hearts defire, and are able to judge truly of my love and fervice; not to be unmindful of me, but to performe, that you have with fich protestaprotestations promised; which she gave him her hand and faith to doe, without any impeach or hinderance : and so they parted, and shee returned home to her house.

Our over-joved Scholler, applauding his happy flars, for furthering him with fo faire a way to his revenge; imagining that it was already halfe executed, made the Image in due forme, and wrote an old Fable, in Read of a Charme; both which he feat to the Lady, fo foone as he thought the time to be fitting : and this admonition with all, that the Moone being entering into the full, without any longer delay, the might venter upon the bulineffe, the next night following, and remaine affured to repostesse her friend. Afterward for the better pleasing of himselfe, he secretly attended, only by his fervant, went to the house of a trufty friend of his, who dwelt fom what neere to the Turret, there to expect the iffue of this Lady-like enterprize. And Ma. dam Helens accompanied with none but Ancilla, walked on to her dairy Farme, where the night ensuing, preteding to take her reft fooner than formerly the used to doe, the commanded Ancilla to go to bed, referring her felfe to her best liking.

After thee had flept her first fleepe (according to the Schollers direction) departing foftly out of her chamber, thee went on towards the ancient Tower, Randing hard to the River of Arno, looking heedefully about her, leaft free fould be fpied by any person. But perceiving her felfe to be fo fecure as the could defire; putting off all her garments, thee hid them in a finall brake of bushes: afterward, helding the Image in her hand, seaven times shee bath'd her body in the River, and then returned backe with it to the Tower. The Scholler, who at the nights cloting up of day, had hid himselfe among the Willowes and other trees, which grew very thicke about the Tower, faw both her going and returning from the River, and as thee pailed thus naked

and

ce :

ars,

ge ;

ade

in

, fo

ing

en-

ard ed.

end

to

11.

al-

ıg,

fed

ng

he

m-

n.

1-

ut

il

cr

1,

d

h

maked by him, hee plainely perceived, that the nights obscuritie could not cloud the delicate whitenesse ofher body, but made the Starres themselves to gaze amorously on her, even as if they were proud to behold her bathing, and (like so many twinkling Tapers) shewed her emulation of another Diana. Now what consists this caused in the minde of our Scholler, one while, quenching his hatefull spleene towards her, all covering to imbrace a piece of such perfection; and another while, thinking it a purchase his for one of Cupids souldiers, to seize and surprise her upon so faire an advantage, none being here to yeeld her rescue; in the fiery triall of such temptations, I am not able to judge, or to say, what resistance sless and bloud could make, being opposed with such a sweet enemy.

But he well confidering what she was, the greatnesse of his injury, as also how, and for whom: he forgot all wanton allurements of love, scorning to entertaine a thought of compassion, continuing constant in his refolution, to let her suffer, as he himselfe had done. So, Helena being mounted up on the Turret, and turning her face towards the North; she repeated those idle frivolous words (composed in the nature of a charme) which she had received from the Scholler. Afterward, by soft and stealing steps, hee went into the old Tower, and tooke away the Ladder, whereby shee ascended to the Tarras, staying and listening, how she proceeded

in her amorous exorcifine.

Seven times the rehearfed the charme to the Image, looking still when the two Ladres would appeare in their likenesse, and so long she held on her imprecations (feeling greater cold, than willingly she would have done) that breake of day began to shew it selfe, and halfe despairing of the Ladres comming, according as the Scholler had promised, she said to her selfe: I much missouth, that Reniero hath quitted me with such another piece of night-service, as it was my lucke to be show

11

on him ; but if he have done it in that refpect, hee was but ill advised in his revenge, because the night wants now three parts of the length, as then it had: and the cold which he fuffered, was farre superior in qualitie to mine, albeit it is more sharpe now in the morning, than

all the time of night it hath beene.

And because day-light should not discover her on the Tarraffe, the went to make her descent downe againe : but finding the Ladder to be taken away, and thinking how her publike fhame was now inevitable, her heart dismaied, and thee fell downe in a swoune on the Tarraffe : yet recovering her fenfes afterward, her griefe and forrow exceeded all capacity of utterance. For now fle became fully perfivaded that this proceeded from the Schollers malice, repenting for her unkinde ulage towards him, but much more condemning her felfe, for reposing any trust in him, who stood bound (by

good reason) to be her enemy.

Continuing long in this extreame affliction, and furveighing all likely meanes about her, whereby thee might descend from the Tarraffe, whereof shee was wholly disappointed: shee began to fighe and weepe. exceedingly, and in this heavie perplexitie of spirit, thus the complained to her felfe. Milerable and unforsunate Helens, what will be faid by thy Brethren, Kindred, Neighbours, and generally throughout all Florence, when they shall know, that theu wast found here on this Turret, Itarke naked? Thine honourable carringe and honefly of life, heretofore free from 2 thought of suspition, shall now be branded with deteflation; and if they wouldst cloud this mishap of thine by fuch lies & excuses, as are not rare amongst women: yet Regiero who knoweth all thy privy compacting, wil fland as a thousand witnesses against thee, and shame shee before the whole Citic, lo both thine honour and loved friend are loft for ever.

Having thus confulted with her felfe, many desperate

e was

Mants

id the

tic to

than

a the

ine :

king

neart

Tar-

riefe

VIOI

rom

age

fe,

by

ur-

ice

Vas

pe

2 3

r -

1,

:11

d

le

2

e

motions entred ber minde, to throw her felie headlong from off the Tarras; till better thoughts won polleflion of her foule. And the Sunne being rifen, thee went to every corner of the Tarras, to efpie any Lad come abroad with his beafts, by whom the might lend for her waiting-woman About this inflant, the Scholler, who lay fleeping (all this while) under a bufh, fuddealy awaking; faw her looke over the wall, and thee likewife espied him ; whereupon he faid unto her. Good morrow Madam Helena . What ? Are the Ladies come yes er no' Helens hearing his fcorning queftion, & grieving that he should so delude her : in teares and lamentations, the intreated him to come necre the Tower, becaule the defired to speake with him. Which courtefie he did not denie her, and the lying groveling upon her breaft on the Tarras, to hide her body that no part thereof might be feene, but her head; weeping, thee spake thys to him.

reft, thou haft well revenged that wrong on mee; for, athough wee are now in the moneth of July, I have beene plagued with extremitic of cold (in regard of my nakednesse) even almost frozen to death : beside my continuall teares and lamenting, that folly persivaded me to believe thy protestations, wherein I account it well-neere miraculous, that mine eyes should be capeaof any fight. And therefore I pray thee, not in respect of any love which thou canst pretend to beare me; but for regard of thine owne selfe, being a Gentleman and a Scholler, that this punishment which thou haft already infflicted upon me, may fuffice for my former injuries towards thee, and to hold thy felfe revenged fully, as also permit my garments to be brought mee, that I may descend from hence, without taking that fro me, which

afterward, thou canft never restore me, I meane mine honor. And confider, that albeit thou didft not injoy me

Reniero, npon my credit, if I gave thee an ill nights

that unhappy night, yet thou haft power to comand me 25 at any time whenfoever, with making many diversities of amends, for one nights offence onely committed. Content thyselfe then good Reniero, and as thou art an honest gentleman say thou art sufficiently reuenged on me, in making me dearely confesse mine owne errour. Never exercise thy malice upon a poore weake woman, for the Eagle distaineth to prey on the yeelding Dover and therefore in meere pitty, and for manhoods sake,

be my release from open shame and reproach.

The Scholler, whose envious spleene was swolne very great, in remembring fuch a malicious cruelty exercised on him, beholding her to weepe and make fuch lamens tations; found a fierce conflict in his thoughts, betweene content and pitty. It did not a little joy and content him, that the revenge which hee fo earnestly defired to compaffe, was now by him to effectually inflifted: And yet (in meere humanity) pitty provoked him, to commifferate the Ladies diffreffed condition ; but clemency being over-weake to withftand his rigor, thus hee replied. Madam Helena, if mine entreaties (which, to speake truly, I never knew how to fteepe in reares, nor wrap up my words in fugar Candie, fo cunningly as you women know how to doc) could have prevailed, that miferable night, when I was well-neere frozen to death with cold, and meerely buried with snow in your Court, not having any place of rescue or helter; your complaints would now the more easily over-rule me. But if your honour in estimation, be now more precious to you than heretofore, and it feemeth fo offenfive to ftand there naked: convert your perswafions and prayers to him, in whose armes you were that night imbraced, both of your triumphing in my mifery when poore I, trotted about your Court, with the teeth quivering in my head, and beating my armes about my body, finding no compassion in him, or you. Let him bring thee thy garments, let him come help thee down with the Ladder, and let him have the care of thine honour:

109

honour, on whom thou haft beene fo prodigall heretofore in bestowing it, and now hast unwomanly thrown thy felfe in perill, onely for the maintenance of thine immodest desires. Why dost thou not call on him to come helpe thee? To whom doth it more belong, than to him? For thou art his, and he thine. Why then thould any other but he help thee in this diffresse? Call him (foole as thou art) and trie, if the love he beareth thee, and thy best understanding joyned with his, can deliver thee out of my fortish detaining thee. I have not forgot, that when you both made a pastime of my misery, thou didf demand of him, which feemed greatest in his opinion, either my fortish simplicitie, or the love thou bareft him. I am not now fo liberall or courreous to defire that of thee, which thou wouldst not grant, if I did request it : No, no, referve those night favours for thy amourous friend, if thou doft escape hence alive to fee him againe. As for my felfe, I leave thee freely to his use and service: because I have sufficiently paid for a womans fallehood, and wifemen take fuch warning, that they scorne to be twice deceived, and by one woman. Proceede on fill in thy flattering perswafions, terming me to be a Gentleman and a Scholler, thereby to win such favour from me, that I should thinke thy wicked villany towards mee, to be already sufficiently punished. No, treacherous Helena, thy blandishments cannot now hoodwinke the eyes of my understanding, as when thou didft out-reach me with thy thy difloyall promises and protestations. And let me now tell thee plainely, that all the while I continued in the Vniverfitie of Paris, I never attained unto fo perfect an understanding of my selfe, as in that one miserable night thou diddeft instruct me. But admit, that I were inclined unto a merciful and compassionate mind, yet thou art none of them, on whom milde and gracious mercy should any way declare her effects. For the end of pennance among layage beafts, fuch as thou art, and likewife

rhties itted. art an ed on

man, Dove: fake,

very caled nens beand

vinoked on: gor,

e in unave

ere ith cue Gly

ow fo

ry

m

Novelly. The Eighth Day,

wife of due vengeance, ought to be death, whereas among men, it should suffice according to thine saying. Wherefore, in regard that I am neither an Eagle, nor thou a Dove, but rather a most venonous Serpett I purpose with my utmost hatred, and as an ancient enemy to all such as thou art, to make my revenge samous on thee.

I am not ignorant, that whatfoever I have already done unto thee, cannot properly be called revenge, but rather chastisement; because revenge ought alwayes to exceede the offence, which (as yet) I am farre enough from. For, if I did intend to revenge my wrongs, and remembred thy monitrous cruelty to me: then thy life, if I tooke it from thee, and an hundred more fuch as thy felfe, were far infufficient, because in killing thee, I should kill but a vile inhumane beaft, yea, one that deserved not the name of a woman. And, to speake truly, Art thou any more, or better (fetting afide thy borrowed haire, and painted beauty, which in few yeares will leave thee wrinkled and deformed) than the bafell beggarly Chamber stuffe that can be? Yet thou foughteff the death of a Gentleman and Scholler as (in fcorne) not long fince, thou didft terme me: whose life may hereafter be more beneficiall unto the world, than millions of fuch as thou art, to live in the like multiplitie of ages. Therefore, if this anguish be sensible to thee, learne what it is to mocke men of apprehenfion, and (amongst them especially) such as are Schollers: to prevent thy falling hereafter into the like extremity, if it be thy good lucke to escape out of this. It appeareth to me thouart very defirous to come downe hither to the ground; the best counsell that I can give thee, is to leape slown headlong, that by breaking thy necke (if thy forrune be fo faire) thy life and loathfome qualities ending together, I may fit and smile at thy deserved destruction. I have no other comfort to give thee, but onely to boall my happinelle, in teaching thee the way to afcend

235 0-

ying.

, nor

iit : I

CRC-

nous

cady

e, but

Cs to

ough

and

ifc,

h as

ace,

de-

uly,

-100

2715

ha-

hou

(in

life

han

oli-

to

on,

to

, if

to

he

pe

ol'm

ng

i-

to

nd at that Tower, and in thy descending down (even by what meanes thou canst devise) make a mockery of me, and say thou hast learned more, than I could instruct thee.

All the while as Reniero uttered thefe fpeeches, the miserable Lady fighed and wept very grievously; the time running on, and the Sunne afcending higher and higher; but when the heard him filent, thus the answered. Vnkind and cruell man, if that wretched night was fo grievous to thee, and mine offence appeared fo great, as neither my youth, beauty, teares, and humble interceflions, are able to derive any mercy from thee;yet let the latt confideration move thee to some remorfe; namely, that I reposed new confidence in thee (when I had little or no reason at all to trust thee) and discovered the integritie of my foule unto thee, whereby thou didft compalle the meanes, to punish me thus defervedly for my finne. For, if I had not reposed confidence in thee, thou couldit not (in this maner) have wroughe revenge on me, which although thou didft carneftly covet, yet my rash credulitie was thy only helpe. Asswage then thine anger, and gracioully pardon me, wherein if thou wilt be fo mercifuil to me, and free me from this fatall Tower : I doe here faithfully promise theo, to forfake my most false and disloyall friend, electing thee as my Lord and constant Love for ever.

Moreover, although thou condemnest my beauty greatly, esteeming it as a trifle, momentary, and of slender continuance; yet, such as it is (being comparable with any other womans whatsoever) I am not ignorat, that were there no other reason to induce liking therose yet men in the vigour of their youth (as I um sure you think your selfe not aged) do hold it for an especiall delight, ordained by nature for them to admire & honour. And notwithstanding, all thy cruelty extended to mee, yet I cannot be perswaded, that thou art so flinty or iron hearted, as to desire my miserable death, by casting my self sheadlong down (like a mad woman) before thy sace

0

fo to destroy that beauty, which (if thy Letters lied not) was once so pleasing in thine eyes. Take pittle then on me for charities sake, because the Sunne beginneth to heate extreamely; and as over-much cold (that unhappy night) was mine offence, so let no over-yiolent

warmth be now my utter ruine and death.

The Scholler, who (onely to delight himfelfe) maintrined this long discoursing with her returned her this answer. Madam, you did not repose such confidence in mee; for any good will or affection in you towards me, but in hope of recovering him whom you had loft; wherein you merit not a jot of favour, but rather the more tharpe and levere infliction. And whereas you inferre, that your over-raft credulity, gave the onely meanes to my revenge: Alas! therein you deceive your felfe; for I have a thousand crochets working continually in my braine, whereby to entrap a wifer creature than a woman, yet veiled all under the cunning cloake of love, but fauced with the bitter Wormewood of hate. So that, had not this hapned as now it doth, of necesfitie you must have falne into another ; but , as it hath pleased my happy flarres to favour mee therein, none could proove more to your eternall scandall and difgrace, than this of your owne deviling; which I made choife of, not in regard of any eale to you, but onely to content my felfe.

But if all other devices else had failed, my pen was and is my prevailing Champion, wherewith I would have written such and so many strange matters, concerning you in your very dearest reputation; that you should have curst the houre of your conception, and wisht your birth had beene abortive. The powers of the pen are too many and mighty, whereof such weake wits as have made no experience, are the lesse able to use any relation. I sweare to you Lady, by my best hopes, that this revenge which (perhaps) you esteeme great and dishonourable, is no way comparable to the

wounding

fo i

tio

ftr

governed by Madam Lawetta.

wounding lines of a Pen, which can charract fo infinite infamics (yet none but guilty an tions) as will make your owne hands it ftruments, to teare your eyes from forth to our head, and fo bequeath your after dayes unto perpetuall dark . neffe. Now concerning your loft lover, for whose sake you fuffer this unexpected pennance; although your choife hath proved but bad, yet fill continue your affection to him; in regard that I have another Lady and Miftreffe, of higher and greater defert than you, and to whom I will continue for ever conftant. And whereas you thinke, the warme beames of the Sun, will be too hot and scorching for your nice body to endure: remember the extreame cold which you caused mee to feele, and if you can intermixe some part of that cold with the present heate, I dare affure you, the Sun (in his highest heare) will be far more temperate for your feeling.

The disconsolate Lady perceiving, that the Schollers words sayoured of no mercy, but rather as coveting her most desperate ending with the teares streaming down her clacekes, thus she replied. Well Sir, seeing there is no matter of worth in me, whereby to derive any compassion from you: yet for that Ladies sake, whom you have elected worthy to enjoy your love, and so farre excelleth me in Wisedome; youchfase to pardon mee, and suffer my garments to be brought me, wherewith to cover my nakednesse, and so to descend downe from this Tower, if it may stand with your gentle Nature

to admit it.

lied

pittie

egin.

that

lent

ain-

this

cin

irds

off;

the

in-

cly

ur

u-

re

ke

C.

5

h

.

Now began Reviers to laugh very heartily, and perceiving how swiftly the day ran on his course, hee said unto her. Beleeve me Madam Helena, you have so conjured mee by mine endeered Lady and Mistresse, that I am no longer able to deny you; wherefore, tell me where your garments are, and I will bring them to yon, that you may come downe from the Turret. She beleeving his promise,

told

7. The Eighth Day,

him where the had hid them, and Reniero deme the Tower, commanded his fervant, ner yee; but to abide field fo neere it, as none might generalized the till his returning. Which charge was no fooner given to his man, but he went to the house of a neere neighbouring friend, where hee dined well, and afterward hid him downe to fleepe.

In the meane while, Madam Helens remaining full on the Tower, began to comfort her felfe with a little vaine hope, yet lighing and weeping inceffantly, feating her felie as well as the could, where any fmall Rielter might yeelde the least shade, in expectation of the Scholiers returning: one while weeping, then againe hoping, but most of all despairing, by his so long tary. ing away with her Garments; fo that being over-wearied with anguish and long watching, she fell into a littie flumbering. But the Sunne was fo extreame hot, the houre of noone being already paft, that it meetely parched her delicate body, and burnt her bare head fo violently; as not onely it scared all the flesh it touched; but alio cleft and chinkt it strangely, besides blifters and other paintfull fcorchings in the flesh which hindred her fleeping, to helpe her felfe (by all possible meanes) and the Turret being covered with Lead, gave the greater addition to her terment; for, as fire removed from one place to another, it yeelded no mitigation to the burning heate, but parched and wrinkled the flesh extraordinarily, even as when a piece of parchment is shrown into the fire, and recovered out again, can never be extended to his former forme.

Moreover, she was so grievously pained with the head-ake, as it seemed to split in a thousand pieces, whereat there needed no great marvell, the Lead of the Turret being so exceedingly hot, that it afforded not the least defence against it, or any repose to qualific the torments but drove her still from one place to another, in hope

of cale, but none was there to be found.

Nor

(in

he

mic

pro

the

an

Cur

ail

and

cre

me

hel

but

hea

the

OVV

Sw

felfe

CXI

cres

of t

200

her

lend

cou!

con

of el

near

her,

·ha:

darl

yea,

med

Nor was there any winde at all stirring, whereby to Myage the Suns violent scalding, or keepe away huge Swarmes of Waspes, Hornets, and terrible biting Flies, which vexed her extreamely, feeding on those parts of her body, that were rifte and chinkt, like crannies in a mortered wall, and pained her like fo many points of pricking needles, labouring fill with her hands to beate them away, but yet they fallened on one place or other, and afflicted her in grievous manner, causing her to curse her owne life, her amorous friend, but (mot of all) the Scholler, that promifed to bring her Garments, and as yet returned not. Now began the to gaze upon every fide about her, to espie some labouring Husbandmen in the fields, to whom the might call or cry out for helpe, not fearing to discover her desperate condition: but Fortune therein also was adverse to her, because the heates extreamity, had driven all the Village out of the fields, caufing them to feede their Cattle about their own houses, or in remote and shadie Vaileyes: so that the could fee no other creature to comfort her, but Swannes swimming in the River Arno, and wishing her felie there a thousand times with them, for to coole the extremity of her thirst, which so much the more encreased, onely by the fight thereof, and utterly disabled of having any. She faw befide in many places about her, goodly Woods, faire coole shades, and Country houses here and there dispersed; which added the greater violence to her affliction , thather defires (in all thefe) could no way be accomplished. What shall I say more concerning this difastrous Lady? The parching beames of the Sun above her, the scalding heat of the Lead beneathe her, the Hornets and Flies every way ftinging her, had made fuch an alteration of her beautiful body; that , as it checkt and controlled the precedent nights darkenes, it was now fo metamorpholed with rednesse, yea, and bloud iffuing forth in many places, as the feemed (almost) losthlome to looke on , continuing ftill

in this agonie of torment, quite voide of all hope, and rather expecting death, than any other comfort.

Reniero, then when some three houres of the afternoone were over-paft, awaked from fleeping : and remembring Madam Helena, hee went to fee in what e-State the was 3 as alfo to fend his fervant unto dinner, because he had fasted all that day. She perceiving his arrivall, being all together weake, faint, and wondesoufly over-wearied; the crept on her knees to a corner of the Turret, and calling to him, fpake in this manner. Reniero, thy revenge exceedeth all manhood and respect: For if thou wast almost frozen in my Court, thou haft roasted me all day long on this Tower, yea, meerely breyled my poore naked body, befide ftarving mee thorough want of foode and drinke. Be now then fe mercifall (for manhoods fake) as to come up hither, and inflict that on me, which mine own hands, are not strong enough to doe, I meane the ending of my loathed and wearisome life, for I defire it beyond all comfortelfe, and I shall honour thee in the performance of it. If thou deny me this gracious favour; at least fend me up a glaffe of water, onely to moisten my mouth, which my teares (being all meerely dried up) are not able to doe, fo extreame is the violence of the Sunnes burning heate.

Well perceived the Scholler, by the weakenede of her voyce, and feorching of her body by the Suns parching beames, that the was brought now to great extremities which fight, as also her humble intercession, began to touch him with some compassion, neverthelesse, thus replied. Wicked woman, my hands shalbe no means hethy death, but make use of thine owne, if shou be so desirous to have it: and as much water shalt thou get of me to asswer that thou get of me to asswer that thou was the thouse the comfort my freezing, when thou wast in the luxurious heat of thy immodest desires, and I well-neere frozen to death with extremity of cold. Pray that the Evening

may raine downe Rose-water on thee, because that in the River of Arno is not good enough for thee; for as little pitty doe I take on thee now, as thou didst extend

compassion to mee then.

and

frer-

ner.

e his

ade-

mer

ner.

haft

rely

mee

n fe

ter,

not

01-

m-

ice

nd th,

101

Cs

Cr.

19

e:

0

15

5

Miferable woman as I am, answered Helena; Why did the beavens bestow beauty on mee, which others have admired and honoured, and yet (by thee) is utterly despised? More cruell are thou than any savage beaft; thus to vexe and torment me in fuch mercileffe manner. What greater extreamity couldft thou inflict on me, if I had beene the destruction of all thy kindred, and left no one man living of thy race ? I am verily per-Swaded, that more cruelty cannot be used against a Traitor, who was the subversion of an whole Citie, than this tyranny of thine, roafting me thus in the beames of the Sun, and fuffering my body eo be devoured with Flies, without fo fmall a mercy, as to give mee a little coole water, which murtherers are permitted to have, being condemned by Iustice, and led to execution; yea wine also if they request it.

Out, feeing thou art art fo constant in thy pernitious resolve, as neither thy owne good nature, nor this lamentable sufferance in me, are able to alter thee: I will prepare my selfe for death patiently, to the end, that heaven may be mercifull to my soule, and reward thee justly, according to thy cruelty. Which words being ended, thee withdrew her selfe towards the middest of the Tarras, despairing of escaping (with life) from the violence of heates; and not once onely, but infinite times beside (among her other grieuous extreamities) she was ready to die with drought, bemoaning inces-

fantly, her dolorous condition.

By this time the day was well-neere spent, and night began to hasten on apace: when the Scholler (imagining that hee afflicted her sufficiently) tooke her garments, and wrapping them up in his mans cloak, went thence to the Ladies house, where hee found Ancilla

the

the waiting woman fitting at the doore, fad and disconsolate for her Ladies long absence, to whom this he spake. How now Ancilla? Where is thy Lady and Millresse? Alas Sir (quotifice) I know not. I thought this marning to have found her in her bed, as usually I was want to doe, and where I left her reserving that our parting: but there she was not, nor in any place else of my knowledge, neither can I imagine what is become of her, which is to me no meane discomfort.

But can you (sir) fay any thing of her? Ancilla, faid he, I would thou hadft beene in her company, and at the fame place where now thee is, that fome punishment for thy fault might have falne upon thee, as already it hath done on her. But believe it affairedly, that thou shalt not freely escape from my singers, till I have justly paide thee for thy paines, to teach thee to abuse

any Gentleman, as thou didft me.

Having thus spoken, he called to his servant, saying, give her the garments, and let her goe looke her Lady, if she will. The Servingman sulfilled his Masters command, and Ancilla having received her Ladies cloathes, knowing them perfectly, and remembring (withall) what had beene said: shee waxed very doubtfull, least they had slaine her, hardly refraining from exclaiming on them, but that griefe and heavie weeping overcame her; so that upon the Schollers departing, shee ran in all haste with the garments towards the Tower.

Vpon this fatall and unfortunate day to Madam Helesa, it chanced that a Clowne or Countrey Peafant belonging to her Farme or Dairy house, having two of his young Heyfers wandred astray, and hee labouring in diligent search to finde them; within a while after the Schollers departure, came to seeke them in woods about the Tower, and notwithstanding all his crying and calling for his beasts, yet he keard the Ladies grievous moanes and lamentations. Wherefore, hee cryed out so loud as he could, saying: Who is it that mourneth

iloi

her

this

C

An

his

no.

140

no

100

det

216

pla

an

7

25

ire

an

an

da

50

re

W

ne

m

fo

Pe

fo

01

di

201

to

gi

qu

224

h

sloft on the Tower? Full well sheek new the voyce of her Pezant, and therefore called unto him, and faid in this manner.

f-

tig

nd

he

1

111

ni

cr,

iid

at

fh-

2]-

hat

ave

ule

ng,

dy,

m-

all)

eaft

ing

me

nin

He-

be.

of

ing

fier

ods

ying

ric-

icth

10

Goe (quoth the) I pray thee for my Waiting-woman Ancilla, and bid her make fome meanes to come up hither to me. The Clown knowing his Lady, faid. How now Madam? Who hath carried you up to high? Your woman Ancilla hath fought for you all this day, yet moone could ever have immagined you to be there. So looking about him, he effied the two fides of the Ladder, which the Scholler had pulled in funder; as also the steepes, which hee had scattered thereabour, placing them in due order againe as they should be; and binding them fast with Withies and Willowes.

By this time Ancilla was come thither, who fo foone as thee was (making all possible speede thee could) enmed into the Tower, could not refraine from teares and grievous complaints, beating her hands one against another, and crying out, thus thee faid. Madam, Madam my deare Lady and Mistresse! Alas, Where are you? So foone as flie heard the tongue of Antilla, thee replied (fo well as thee could) taying : Ah my invecto Woman, I am here aloft upon the Tarras; weepe not, neither make any noise, but quickly bring me some of my garments. When the heard her answer in this com. fortable maner, the mounted up the Ladder, which the Pezant had made very firme and Brong, holding it faft for her fafer ascending; by which meanes thee went up on the Tarras. Beholding her Lady in fo ftrange a condition, resembling no humane body, but rather the trunke of a tree halfe burned, lying flat on her face, naked, feerched and strangely deformed : she beganne to teare the lockes of her owne haire, raving and raging in as pittifull manner, as if her Lady had beene quite dead. Which formy tempest, Madam Helewa toone pacified, entreating her to use filence, and helpe to put on her garments. Having Novell.7. The Eighth Day.

Having understood by her, that no one knew of her being there, but such as brought her cloathes, and the poore Peazant, attending there still to doe her any service: she became the better comforted, entreating them by all meanes, that it might be concealed from any surther discovery, which was on either side most faith-

fully protested.

The poore Clowne hope to beare downe his Lidy upon his backe, because the Ladder stood not convenently enough for her descending, neither were her limbes pliable for her owne use, by reason of their rits and smarting. Ancilla following after, and being more respective of her Lady, than her owne securitie in decending missing the step in the midst of the ladder, fell downe to the ground, and quite brake her legge in the fall, the paine whereof was so grievous unto her, that the cried and roared extraordinarily, even like a Lyon in the Desert.

When the Clowne had fet his Lady fafe on a faire greene banke, he returned to fee what the waiting woman ailed, and finding her legge to be quite broken: he carried her alfo to the fame banke, and there feated her by her Lady, who perceiving what a milchance had hapned, and the (from whom the expected her onely best hope) to be now in farre greater necessitist her felse: she lamented exceedingly, complaining on Fortunes cruell malice towards her, in thus heaping one miserie upon another, and never ceasing to torment her, especially now in the conclusion of all, and when she thought all future perils to be past.

Now was the Sun upon his fetting, when the poore honest Countrey-man, because darke night should not overtake them, conducted the Lady home to his owne house; and gaining the affistance of his two brethren and wife, setting the waiting-woman in a Chaire, this ther they brought her in like maner. And questionles, there wanted no diligence and comfortable language.

10

W

(fi

fo

12

ni

by

23

fic

13

an

th

fer

co

de

he

tre

(fi

to pacifie the Ladies continual lamentations. The good wife led the Lady into her own poore Lodging, where (fuch cates as they had to feede on) lovingly the fet beforeher conveying her afterward into her own bed, and taking fuch good ordee, that Ancilla was carried in the night time to Florence, to preyent all ensuing danger,

by reason of her tees breaking.

her

the

fer-

acm

any

ich-

. 1dy

en-

her

rifes

nore

def-

fell

1 the

that yon

faire

WC-

en:

ated

e had

onely

felfe:

unes

iserie

r, ef-

thee

poore

d not

owne

thren

e,thi-

onles,

uage,

10

Madam Helena, to colour this misfortune of her own: asalio the great mishap of her woman ; forged an artificiall and cunning Tale, to give forme formall apparance of her being in the Tower, periwading the poore Countrey people, that in a strange accident of thunder and lightning, and by the illusion of wicked spirits, all this adventure hapned to her. Then Physitions were fent for; not without much anguish and affliction to the Lady (by reason of her fleshes flaying off with the Medicines and Emplaisters applied to the body) who was glad to fuffer whatfoever they did, beside falling into a very dangerous Feavour; out of which thee was not recovered in a long while after, but continued in daily despaire of her life; beside other accidents hapning in her time of Phylicke, utterly unavoideable in fuch extreamities : and hardly had Ancilla her leg cured.

By this unexpected pennance imposed on Madame Helena, the utterly forgot her amourous friend; and (from hence forward) carefully kept her selfe from fond loves allurements, and fuch fcornfull behaviour, wherein thee was most disorderly faulty. And Revierothe Scholler, understanding that Ancillahad broken her leg, which he reputed as a punishment sufficient for her, held himfelfe fatisfied, because neither the Miftreffe nor her Maide, could now make any great boaft, of his nights hard entertainement, and so concealed all

matters elfe.

Thus a wanton-headed Lady, could finde no other lubject to worke her mocking folly on, but a learned scholler, of whom the made no more respect, then any

other

other ordinary men, never remembring, that fuch men are expert (I cannot fay all, but the greater part of them) to helpe the frenzie of foolish Ladies, that must injoy their loofe defires, by Negromancy, and the divels meanes. Let it therefore (faire Ladies) be my loving admonition to you, to detest all unwomanly mocking and fcorning, but more especially to Schollers.

I mo neere dwelling neighbours, the one heing named Spinellocio Tavena, and the other Zeppa di Mino, fregansing each others company dayly together; Spineffiction Euckoleied his Friend and Neighbour. Which happening to the knowledge of Zeppa, hee prevailed fo well with the wife of Spineffaccio, that hee being lackt up in a cheft, be revenged his wrong at that instant, fotiat neither of them complained of his misfortune. The eighth Novell.

Wherein approved, that hee which offereth shame and diffrace to his Neighbour ; may reserve the like twjurie (if not in worse manner) by the same man.

GReevous, and full of compassion, appeared the had sa Fortunes of Madam Helena to be, having much districted, and (well-neere) wearied all the Ladies in hyan hearing them recounted. But because they were justly like inflicted upon her, and according as (in equity) she had been deserved, they were the more moderate in their combodies in the combodies of the combodi fevere, Wherefore, when Madam Pampiaea had finish is to the Novell, the Queene gave command to Madam refused hat Novell, the Queene gave command to Madam refused hat the finametta, that sheethould follow next with her distribution of the flewing obedience, thus began.

Because it appeareth in my judgement (faire Ladies) y and that the Schollers cruelty much displeased you, making But, you more melancholly than this time requireth: I hold ving to the fore years convenient that the schollers in the state of the first transfer of the second part of the second p

it therefore very convenient, that your contrifted fpirit er a f

to

VC

to

Vot

nei

Cit

oth.

wilk

hour

of

Pu

di-

10-

ck-

pi-

1:22ccio

ning.

mit's

27.3

that

e and e tu-

should be chearefully revived, with matter more pleafine and delightfull. And therefore, I meane to report a Novell of a certaine man, who took an injury done him in much milder manner, and revenged his wrong more moderately, than the incenfed Scholler did. Whereby you may comprehend, that it is sufficient for any man, and so he ought to esteeme it, to serve another with the same sawce, which the offending party caused him first to take of : without covering any arider revenge, man agreeth with the quality of the injury recei-

Know then (Gracious affembly) that as I have heretofore heard, there lived not long fince in Sienna, two young men, of honest parentage and equal condition. neither of the best, nor yet the meanest calling in the City: the one being named Spinelloccio Tavena, and the other tearmed Zeppa di Mino, their houses Neighbouring together in the ftreete Camollia. Seldome the one wilked abroade without the others Company, and their houses allowed equal welcome to them both; so that by outward demonstrations, and inward mutuall affection, had safar as humane capacity had power to extend, they lih dis red and loved like two Brethren, they both being weal-

ities in ay, and married unto two beautifull women.
juffly It came to passe that Spinelloccio, by often resorting to he had be kouse of Zeppa, as well in his absence, as when he com-bode at home; began to glance amorous lookes on ler not Zeppas wife, and pursued his unneighbourly purpose as and such fore: that he being the stronger perswader, and finish a chelike that he being the kronger periwader, and finish achelike too credulous in beleeving, or else over feeble hadam are fisting, from private imparlance, they fell to action; and continued their close fight a long while together, ascene and without suspition, no doubt to their equal to action and contentment.

The wing a contentment of punishment, for breaking so it hold ving a league of friendship and neighbor-hood, or radio first at a fatall institution ever more attending on the closest of the content of the co

fhou!

Cuckoldry

Novell. 8. The Eighth Day ,

Cuckoldry, their felicity still continuing in this kinde: it fortuned on a day, Zeppa abiding within doores, contrary to the knowledge of his wife, Spinelloccio came to enquire for him, and she answering (as she verily supposed) that he was gone abroad: up they went both together into the Hall, and no body being there to hinder what they intended, they fell to their wonted recreation without any seare, kissing and embracing as Lovers we to doe-

Zeppa feeing al this, spake not one word, neither made any noyle at all; but kept himfelfe closely hidden, to obferve the iffue of this amorous conflict. To be briefe, he favy Spinelloccio goe with his wife into the Chamber, and make the doore fast after them, whereat he could have beene angry, which he held to be no part of true wisedome. For he knew well enough, that to make an out cry in this case, or otherwise to reveale this kinde of injury, it could no way make it leffe, but rather give a greater addition of fhame and scandall: he thought this no course for him to take ; wifer considerations entred his braine, to have his wrong fully revenged, yet with fuch a discreete and orderly carriage, as no neighbours knowledge thould by any meanes apprehend it, or the least figne of discontent in himselfe blab it, because they were two dangerous evils.

Many notable courses wheeled about his conceit, every one promising fairely, and ministring meanes of formall apparance, yet one sabove the rest won his absolute allowance, which he intended to prosecute as best he might. In which resolution, he kept still very close, so long as Spinelloccio was with his Wise; but he being gone, he went into the chamber, wherehee found his write, amending the forme of her head attyre, which spinelloccio had put into a disordered sahion. Wise (quoth he) what art thou doing? Why? Doe you not see Husband? answered thee. Yes that I doe wise, replied Zeppa, and somethings else happened to my sight

C

W

fa

qi bo

ni

fo

for

which

which I could wish that I had not seene. Rougher Language growing betweene them, of his avouching and her as stout denying, with defending her cause over weakely, against the manifest proofes both of eye and care: at last shee fell on her knees before him, weeping incessantly, and no excuses now availing, shee contest her long acquaintaince with Spinelioccio, and most humbly entreated him to forgive her. Vpon the which penitent confession and submission, Zeppa thus

answered.

e:

n-

t0

e-

der

ion

u e

ade

ob-

,he

ber, ould

truc e an

e ot

ive a

this

ured

with

ours

, 00

caule

it, e-

es of

is ab-

s beft

close,

being

nd his

which

Wife

ou not

e, re-

y fight

which

Wife, if thy inward contrition be answerable to the outward feeming forrow, then I make no doubt, but faithfully thou doet acknowledge thine owne faults and evill dooing a for which, if thou expecteft pardon of mee; determine then to fulfill effectually, fuch a bulinelle as I must enjoyne, and thou must performe it. I commaund thee to tell Spinelloccio, that to morrow morning, about nine of the clocke, when wee are both abroad walking, hee mint finde fome apt occasion to leave my company, and then come hither to visite thee. When hee is here, sodainely will I returne home, and upon thy hearing of my entrance : to fave his owne eredite, and thy felfe from detection, thou shalt require him to enter into this Cheft, untill such time as I am gone forth againe ; which hee dooing, for both your fafeties, fo foone as hee is in the cheft, take the key and locke him uppe faft. When thou hafte effected this, then shall I acquaint thee with the rest remaining, which also must bee done by thee, without dread of the leaft harme tohim or thee, because there is no malicious meaning in mee, but fuch as (I am perswaded) thou canft not justly missike. The Wise. to make some fatisfaction for her offence committed, promifed that the would performe it and fo she did

On the morrow morning, the houre of nine being come, when Zeppa and Spinelloccio were walking a-

m 2 3

broad

broad together. Spinelloccio remembring his promise unto his Mistris, and the clocketelling him the appointed houre, he saide to Zeppa. I am to dine this day with an especiall friend of mine, who I would be loath should tarry for my comming, and therfore hold my departure excused. How now? answered Zeppa, the time for dinner is yet farre enough off, where fore then should we part so soone? Yea but Zeppa, ceplied Spinelloccio, wee have weighty matters to confer on before dinner, which will require three houres space at the least, and therefore it

behoveth me to respect due time.

Spinelloscio being departed from Zeppa (who followed faire and lofely after bim) being come to the house, and kindly welcommed by the wife: they were no foo. per gone up the flaires, and entring in at the Chamber doore; but the Woman heard her husband cough, and also his comming up the fleyres. Alas deare Spinelloccio 1 quoth the) what shall we doe? My Husband is comming up, and we shall be both taken tardy; step into this Cheft, lye downe there and stirre not, till I have have lent him forth againe, which shall be within a very fhort while. Spinelloccio was not a little joyfull for per good advice; downe into the Cheft lay he : and the lockt him in : by which time Zeppa was entred the Chamber, Where are you wife ? faide he, (speaking fo loud, as he in the cheft might heare hime) What, is it aime to goe to dinner? It will be anon Sir answered the, as yet it is over early, but feeing you are come, the more hafte shall bee made, and every thing will bee ready quickly.

Zeppa, fitting downe upon the Cheft, wherein Spizellocciolay not a little affrighted, speaking fill aloud, as formerly he did: Come hither Wise (quoth hee) how shall wee doe for some good company to dine with us? Mine honest kinde neighbour Spinelloccio is not at home, because he dineth forth to day with a deare friend of his, by which meanes, his wife is left at

home

to

yo

th

th

be

in

do

geo

Cor

wh

WIG

home alone; give her a call out at our Window, and defire her to come dine with us, for we two can make no merry Musicke, except some more come to fill up the confort.

His Wife being very timorous, yet diligent to doe whatfoever he commanded, so prevailed with the Wife of Spinelloccio; that the came to them quickly, and fo much the rather, because her Husband dined abroad. Shee being come up into the Chamber, Zepta gave her most kinde cutertainement, taking her gently by the hand, and winking on his wife, that the thould betake her felfe to the kitchin, to fee dinner speedily prepared, while he fate converting with his neighbour in

the Chamber.

e

er

rt

ve

ıll

it

W-

fe,

00-

ber

and

ccio

om-

omi

ave

1 ve-

l for

d the

d the

nglo . 18 12

I fhe,

more

ready

Spi-

loud

hee)

o dine

llo ccio

with 2

left at

home

His wife being gone, hee shutthe doore after her's which the newcome Neighbor perceiving the faid. Our bleffed Lady defend me, Zeppa, What is your meaning in this? Have you caused mee to come hither to this intent ? Is this the love you beare to Spinelloccie, and your professed loyalty in friendshippe? Zeppa, feating her downe on the Cheft. wherein her husband was inclosed, entreating her patience, thus began. Kinde and loving Neighbour, before you adventure too farre in anger, youchfafe to heare what I fall tell

I have loved and still doe love, Spinelloccio as my brother, but yesterday (albeit he knoweth it not) I found, the honeft truft I reposed in him, deserved no other, or better recompence, but even to be bold with my wife, in the felfefame manner as I am, and as hee ought to doe with none but you. Now, in regard of the love which I beare him, I intend to be no otherwise revenged on him, but in the fame kinde as the offence was committed. Hee hath beene more than familiar with my wife, I must borrow the selfesame courtesie of you, which in equity you cannot deny me, weighing the Wrong you have fustained by my wife. Our injuries

m m ?

as they, fo we; for in this case there can be no juster re-

The Woman hearing this, and perceiving the manifold confirmations thereof, protested (on solemne oath) bp Zeppa; her beleife grew fetled, and thus fhee answered. My loving neighbor Zeppa, seeing this kinde of revenge is (in meere justice) imposed on me, and ordained as a due scourge, as well to the breach of friendship and neighbour-hood, as abuse of his true and loyall wife: I am the more willing to confent: alwaits provided, that it be no imbarrement of love betweens your wife and me, albeit I have reason to alledge, that: the began the quarrell first and what I do is but to right my wrong, as any other woman of spirit would doe: Afterwards, we may the more eafily pardon one another. For breach of peace (answered Zeppa) betweene my wife and you, take my honest word for your warrant. Moreover, in requirall of this fayour to mee, I will bestow a deare and precious lewell on you, excelling all the rest which you have befide.

In delivering these words, he sweetly kissed and embraced her, as she sate on the Chest wherein her husband lay: now, what they did else beside, in recompence of the wrong received, I leave to your imagination, as rather deserving silence, than immodest blabbing. Spinelloccio, being all this while in the Chest, hearing aasily all the words which Zepps had uttered, the answere of his wise, as also what Austreed, the answere of his wise, as also what a case he was, his heart being ready to split with rage, and but that hee stood in searce of Zepps he would haveraild and exclaimed on his wise, as thus he lay shut up in the Chest. But entring into better consideration, that so great an injuty was first begunne by himselfe, and Zepps did ne

more,

Ga

Ot

ar

is

ali

let

03

re-

ni-

ne

hee

nde

and

of

and

aics

ens

hat

ight

00 :

no-

be-

for

fa-

s Ic-

be-

em-

hus.

om.

nati-

oing.

aring

e an-

TOYO

, his

t hee

xclai-

1.But

n in-

id ne

nore.

more, than in reason and equity he might well do (having evermore carried himselfe like a kinde neighbour & friend towards him, without the least offer of distast) he faithfully resolved, to be a firmer friend to Zeppa than formerly he had bin, if it might be embraced and accepted on the other fide.

Delights and pleafures, be they never fo long in contenting and continuance, yet they come to a period and conclution at last : So Zeppa, having ended his amorous combate, and over the head of his perfidious friend, thought himselfe sufficiently revenged. But now in confideration of a further promise made on the bargaine : Spinelloccioes vvife challenged the Icwell, thin which kinde of recompence, nothing can be more welcome to women, Heerevpon, Zeppa calling for his owne wife, commanded her to open the Cheft; which fhee did, and he merrily smiling, saide. Well wife, you have given me 2 Cake instead of bread, and you shall lose nothing for your labour. So Spine Hoccio comming forthof the cheft, it requireth a better wit than mine, to tell you, which of them Rood most confounded with shame, either Spinelleccio seeing Zeppa, and knowing well enough what he had done: or the woman beholding her husband, who tafily heard all their familiar conference, and the action thereupon to defervedly performed.

See neighbour, is not this your dearest lewell: Having kept it a while in my wives custody; according to my promise, here I deliver it you. Spinessocio being glad of his diliverance out of the Chest, albeit not a little ashamed of himself without using many impertinent words saide. Zepps, our wrongs accequally required on each other, and therefore I allow thy former speeches to my Wise, that thou wast my friend, as I am the like to thee, and so I pray thee let us still continue. For nothing else is now to be divided betweene us, seeing we have shared alike in our wives, which none knowing but our selves, let it be as closely kept to our selves. Zeppa was well plea-

m m A

fed

Novell.9. The Eighth Day,

fed with the motion, and so all foure dined lovingly together, without any variance or discontentment. And thence forward, each of the Women had two Husbands, as either Husband enjoyed two Wives, without further contention or debate.

Maestro Simone, an idle headed Doller of Physicke, was throwne by Bouno and Bussalmaco into a common Leyslad of fit hithe Physician fondly beloeving that (in the might time) he should be made one of a new created company, who usually went to see wonders at Corsica; and there in the Leystall they lest him.

The Ninth Novell.

Wherein is approaced, that Titles of Honour, Learning, and Dignity, are not alwayes bestowne on the wifest men.

A Fter that the Ladies had a while confidered, on the communication betweene the two wives of Sienza, and the falshood in friendship of their Husbands: the Queene, who was the last to recount her Novell, without offering injury to Dieneus, beganne to speake shus.

The reward for a precedent wrong committed, which Zeppa retorted upon Spinelloccio, was answerable to his desert, and no more than equity required; in which respect, I am of opinion, that such the ought not to be over-sharpely reprooved, as doe injurie to him who seeketh for it, and justly should have it, although Madam Pampinea (not long since) avouched the contrary. Now, it evidently appeareth, that Spinelloccio well deserved what was done to him, and I purpose to speake of another, who needs would seeke after his own disgrace. The rather to consirme my former speeches, that they which beguile such wilfull soolish men, are not to be blamed, but rather commended. And he unto whom the shame was done, was a Physicion, which came from Bologna to Florence; and returned thicher

againe

(v

te

th

againe like unto a Beaft, notoriously baffulled and dif-

graced.

to-

ids, her

751

ey-

zhe

0*m*1*

and

and

the

Ha,

ell,

ke

ch

his

iot

gh

n-

cio

to 7n

:5,

re

n-

cr

C

It is a matter well knowne unto us, and (almost) obferved day by day, that diverse of our Cittizens, when they returns from their fludying at Bo'ngna one becommethan Advocate, another a Phylitian, and a third a Notary, with long and large gownes, some of Scarlet, and hoods furred with miniver, befide divers other great apparances, fucceeding effectually daily in their feveral kinds. Among whom, there returned (not long fince) thence, one Mafter Simon da Villa, more rich in poffetfions left him by his parents, than any knowledge therto obtained; yet cloathed in Scarler, with his Miniver hood, and ftyled a Doctor of Phylicke, which title he onely bestowed on himselfe, and tooke a goodly house for his dwelling, in the streete which wee commonly call La via del Cocomero. This Mafter Doctor Simm, being newly come thither, among other notable qualities in him, had one more especiall than any of the rest, namely, to know the names and conditions of fuch persons, as daily passed by his deore, and what professions they were of, whereby any likelyhood might be gathered of needing his helpe, and being his patients, observing them all with very great vigilant care.

But among all the rest by him thus warrily noted, he most observed two Painters, of whom wee have heere-tosore twice discoursed. Bruno and Bustalmato, who walked continually together, and were his neere dwelling neighbours. The matter which most of all he noted in them, was; that they lived merrily, and with much lesse care, then any esse in the Citty beside, and verily they did so indeed. Wherefore, he demanded of divers persons, who had good understanding of them both, of what estate and condition they were. And hearing by every one, that they were but poore men and Painters: hee greatly mervailed, how a could be possible.

Novelle. The Eighth Day,

fible for them, that they should live so jocondly, and in such poverty. It was related to him further beside, that they were men of a quicke and ingenious apprehension, whereby he politickely imagined, that their poore condition could not so well maintaine them; without some courses essay being not publiquely knowne unto men, yet redounding to their great commodity and profite. In which regard, hee grew very desirous, by what means, he might becom acquainted, and grow into familiarity with them both, or any of them, at the least; wherein (at the length) he prevailed, and Brano proved to be the man.

Now Bruso plainly perceiving (within a fhort while of this new begun acquaintance) that the Physitian wasa Logger-head, and meerely no better than a Gregorian Animall: he beganne to have much good pastime with him, by telling him strange and incredible tales, such as none but a Coxcombe would give credit too; yet they delighted Doctor Dunce excraordinarily, and Brunoes familiarity was so highly pleasing to him, that he was a daily guest at dinner and supper with him, and he was not meanely proud of enjoying his company. One day as they fate in familiar conference together, he told Bruno that he wondered not a little at him and Buffalmaco, they being both to poore people, yet lived far more jovially than Lords, and therefore defired to understand, by what means they compassed such mirthfull maintenance. Bruno, hearing the Deftors demand, and perceiving that it favoured more of the foole, than any the very leafte tafte of wisedome; smiled unto himselfe, and determined to returne him such an an-Tweer, as might be fitting for his folly, wherupon, thus he replied.

Beleeve me Master Dostor, I would not impart to many people, what private helpes we have for our maintenance: but yet I dare boldly acquaint you therewith an regard you are one of our most intimate friends,

89

O

at

n,

n-

ne

ret

In

les

ty at

he

of

58

41

ith

ch

ret

nd

at

nd

ıy.

er.

nd

ed

to

h-

6.

le,

to

n-

he

2.

1-

th

ls,

ıd

and of fuch secrecie, as (Iknow) you will not reveale it to any. True it is, that mine honest neighbour and my selse, doe leade our lives in such merry manner as yousee, and better than all the world is aware of; for I cannot imagine you to be soignorant, but are certainely perswaded; that if wee had no better meanes, than our poore manuall trade and profession; we migh sit at home with bread and water, and be nothing so lively spirited as we are. Yet Sir, I would not have you to conceive, that we doe either rob or steale, or use any other unlawfull courses; onely weetravell to Carsias, from whence we bring (without the least prejudice to any other) all things we stand in need of, or whatsoever we can defire. Thus doe wee maintaine our selves well and honestly, and live in this mirthfull disposition.

Mafter Doftor hearing this discourse, and beleeving it constantly, without any further instruction or intelligence : became possessed with very much admiration, and had also the most earnest defire in the world, to know what this travelling to corfee might be: entreating Bruno with very great instances, to tell him what it was, and made many protestations never to disclose it to any one. How now Mafter Doctor? answered Bruno. What a strange motion doe you make to mee ? It is too great a secret, which you desire to know, yea, a matter of mine owne ruine, and an utter expulsion out of this . world, with condemnation into the mouth of Lucifer da San Gallo, if any man whatfoever should know it from me, therefore I pray you to urge it no more. O my deere and honest neighbour Bruno (quoth the Doctor) affure thy felf upon my foule, that whatfoever thou revealest to mee, shall be under seale from all, but onely our selves. Fie, fie, Mafter Doctor, answered Bruno, you are too prefling and importunate. So fitting finiling to himselfe, shaking his head, and beating his brett, as if hee were in some strange distraction of minde, stamping with his feete, and beating his Fiste oftenNovelle: The Eighth Day,

oftentimes on the Table, at laft hee started up, and

fpake in this manner.

Ah Master Doctor, the love I beare to your capricious and rarely circumcised experience, and likewise, the confidence I repose in your ferutinous taciturnitie, are both of such mighty, and prevailing power; as I cannot concease any thing from you, which you cover to know. And therefore if you will sweare unto one by the crosse of Montesson, that never (as you have already fair brully promised) you will disclose a secret so admirable; I will relate it unto you, and not otherwise. The Doctor sware, and sware again, then Bruno thus hegan.

Know then my learned and judicious Doctor, that it is not long time fince, when there lived in this Citie of ours, a man very excellent in the Art of Negromancie, who named himselfe Michale Scoto, because he was a Scottishman borne: of many worthy Gentlemen (very few of them being now living) he was much honoured and respected. When he grew destrous to depart from hence, upon their garnest motion and entreavy; he left two of his Schollers behinde him, men of absolute skill and experience: giving them especiall charge and command, to doe all possible services they could devise, for those Gentlemen who had so highly honoused him. The two famous Schollers, were very helpefull so those Gentlemen, in divers of their amorous occasions, and very many other matters beside.

Noc long after, they finding the City, and behaviour of the people sufficiently pleasing to them; they resolved on their continuance here, entring into a league of love and friendship with divers, never regarding, whether they were Gentlemen, or no, or distinguishing the poore from the rich; but onely in being conformable to their complexions, sociable and sit for friendship.

They created a kind Societie, confifting of about five and twentie men, who should meete together twice in a moneth, and in a place reputed convenient for them:

where

t

03

21

ea ab

pe

tai

M1€

Ma

con

no

(M

thir

nd

ci.

fe,

ic,

in-

t to

the

ady

ni-

he

an.

c it

יתו

bee

nen

10-

part

iv.

rge

uld

CU-

full ali•

OUL

ol-

ng,

ing

na-

hip.

five

na

m;

twhere being so assembled, every man uttered his minde to those two Schollers, in such cases as they most desired, to have wherewith they were all satisfied the self-same night. It came so to passe, that Buffalmaco and I, grew into acquaintance with those two worthy Schollers, and our private similarity together proved so prosperous, that we were admitted into the same Societie, and so have ever since continued. Now Sir, I am to tell you matter deserving admiration, and which (in very good judgements) would seeme to exceede all be-lette.

For at every time when we were affembled together a you are not able to imagine, what fumptious hangings of Tapeffrie, did adorne the Hall where wee fate at meate, the Tables covered in fuch Royall maner, waited on by numberleffe Noble and goodly attendants, both men and women, ferving readily, at each mans command of the company. The Bafins, Ewers, Pots, Flaggons, and all the veffels effe which flood before, and for the fervice of our diet, being composed onely of gold and filver, and out of no worse did wee both eate and drinker the viands being very rare and dainty, abounding in plenty and variety, according to the appetite of every person, as nothing could be wished for or defired here in this world, but it was infantly obtained.

In good fadnesse Sir, I am not able to remember and tell you (within the compasse of a thousand yeares) what, and how many severall kinds of Mossicall Instruments, were continually placed on before us; what multiplicate of Waxe lights burned in all parts of the roomes; neither the excessive store of rich Drugs, Marchpanes, Comsites, and rare Banquetting stuffe, consumed there at one seasting, wherein there wanted no bounty of the best and puress Wines. Nor doe I (Master Doctor) repute you so weakely witted, as to think, that when we were assembled there, any of us all

MCIC

Novell.9. The Eighth Day,

were cloathed in such simple and meane Garments, as ordinarily are worne in the streets on mens bodies, or any so filly as the very best you have: No Sir, not any one man among us, but appeared by his apparell, equall to the greatest Emperont on the earth, his robe most sumptrously imbroidered with precious Stones, Pearles, and Carbuncles, as all the world affoorded not the like. But above all the rest, the delights and pleasure there, are beyond my capacity to expresse, or (indeede) any compartison: as namely, store of goodly and beautiful evomen, brought thither from all parts of the world 5 alwayes provided, if men be desirous of their company: but for your easier comprehension, I will make some briefe relation of them to you, according as I heard them there named.

There is the great Lady of Barbanicchia; the Queen of Baschia; the wise to the great Soldane, the Empresse of Osbeccho; the Ciantiansera of Norniera; the Semistante of Beelingona; and the Scalpedra of Narsia. But why doe I breake my braine, in numbring up to many to you? All the Queenes of the world are there, even so far as to the Schinchimurra of Preser John, that hath a horne in the midst of her posteriores, albeit not visit

W

01

fr

Co

he

yo

FCI

Ia

ex

fuc

COL

ble to avery eye.

Now I am further to tel you, that after we have tafted a Cup of precious Wine, fed on a few delicate Comfits, and danced a dance or two to the rare Musicke; every one taketh a Lady by the hand, of whom he please the make his election, and shee conducteth him to her Chamber, in very grave and gracious manner. Concerning the Chambers there, each of them resemblesh a Paradise to look on, they are so faire & goodly; and no lesse odoristerous in smel, than the sweetest persumes in your Apothecaries Shoppes, or the rare compounds of Spices, when they are beaten in an open Morter. And as for the beds, they are infinitely richer, than the very cossiliest belonging to the Duke of Venice; yet (in such)

such) each man is appointed to take his rest, the Musicke of rare Cymbals lasting all night long, much better to be by you considered, than in my rude eloquence

expressed.

33

70

20

6.

be

25,

100

1-

n-

dly

arts

of

, I

-10:

een

reffe

emi-

But

ימונו

even

hath

vifi-

bofte

ifits,

every

thto

oher

ncer-

eth 2

nd no

nes in

nds of

. And

ne ve-

et (in

(uch)

But of all those rich and sumptuous beds (if pride of mine owne opinion doe not deceive me) them two provided for Buffelmaco and me, had hardly any equall: he having the Queene of France as his Lady and Mifirefle, and I, the renowned Queene of England, the onely two choife beauties of the whole world, and we appeared to pleafing in their eyes, as they would have refuled the greatest Monarkes on the earth, rather than to be rejected by us. Now therefore, you may eafily confider with your felfo, what great reason we have to live more merrily, than any other men can doe : in receiving also from them (whensoever we please to command them) a thousand or two thousand Florines at the least, which are both truely and duly fent us. Enjoying thus the benefite of this high happineffe, we that are companions of this Societic, doe tearme it in cur vulgar Language, The Pyrates vuyage to Corfica Becaule, as Rovers or Pyrates robbe and take away the goods of fuch as they meete withall, even fo doe wee; onely there remaineth this difference betweene us, that they never restore what they have taken : which we doe immediately afterward, whether it be required or no. And thus Mafter Doctor, as to my most indeered friend, I have now revealed the meaning of fayling to Corfua, after the manner of our private Pyracie, and how important the close retention of the voyage is, you are best able your selfe to judge; In which regard, remember your Oathes and faithfull promifes, or elfe I am undone for ever.

Our worthy wife Doctor, whose best skill searfely extended so farre as to cure the itch in children; gave such sound beleefe to the relation of Bruno, as any man sould doe, to the most certaine truth of life and death:

having

having his defire iramcafurably enflamed, to be made a member of this strange Societie, which his more covered, than any thing in the world beside, accounting it a felicity surre beyond all other.

Whereupon he answered Bruno, that it was no great matter of marvell, if he lived so merrily as he did, having such a singular supply, to avoide what necessities whatsoever: and very hardly could he refraine from immediate request, to be accepted into the company. But yethe thought sit to deferre it surcher, until hee had made Bruno more beholden to him, by friendly entertainements and other courteses, when he might (with better hope) be bold to move the motion.

B

fe

C

fe

10

th

po

ca

th

of

his

cre

th

ha

bot

der

the

the

der

kno

aeq

vin

Soc

as d

hin

me

Well may you conceive that nothing more hammerd in the Doctors head, than this rate veyage to Corfica, and Bruno was his daily Guest at dinner and supper, with such extraordinary apparances of kindnesse and courtest, as if the Physician could not tive, except he had the company of Bruno. Who seeing himselfe to be so lovingly respected, and hating inguatitude, for savours so abundantly heaped on him: hee painted the whole story of Lent about his Hall, and an Agnus Dei sairely guilt, on the portall of his Chamber, as also a goodly Vrinal on his streete doore, to the end that such as had neede of his counsell, might know where so judicious a Doctor dwelt. In a Gallery likewise by his Garden, hee painted the surrous battell between the Rats and Cats, which did (not a little) delight Master Doctor.

Moreover, at such times as Brune had not supt with our Physician, be would be sure to tell him on the morrow, that the night passed, he had beene in the company which he did wote of. And there (quoth hee) the Queene of England having somewhat offended mee, I commanded, that the Gomedra, belonging to the Grand Cham of Tartaria, should be brought me, and instantly shee was. What may the meaning of Gomedra be? said the Doctor, I understand not those difficult names.

20

hée

20-

feat

1124

2213

mon

ייתו

hee

ndiy ight

n the

mitia

te fie,

0770-

nely

eun-

ryof

no, i

inall

cede

Do-

215,

with

mor.

npa-

the

e, I

the

din.

icula

mes,

names. I beleeve you Sir, answered Bruno, nor doe I neede to marvell thereat; and yet I have heard Porcograffo fpeake, and also Vannacenna, and both unexperenced in our Language. You would fay (replied the Doctor) Hippecrates and Avicenna, who were two admirable Physitians. It may be so (faid Brune) and as hardly doe I understand your names : but Gomedra, in the Grand Chams Language, fignifies Empreffe in outs. But had you once feene her Sir, thee would make you forget all Physicali observations, your arguments, receits, and medicines, onely to be in her heavenly prefence, which words hee used (perceiving his forward longing) to enflame him the more. Not long after ; as the Doctor was holding the candle to Bruno, at the perfecting the bloudy battell of the Cats and Rats, because he could never be wearied in his company, and therefore was the more willing to undergoe the office of the Candle-holder; he refolved ro acquaint him with his minde, being alone by themselves, thus he began.

Bruno, as heaven knoweth, there is not this day any creature living, for whom I would gladly doe more, than for thee, and the very least word of thy mouth, hath power to comand mee to goe bare-footed, even from hence to faire as to Peretela, and account my labour well emploied for thy fake, wherefore, never wonder at my continual kindeneffe towards thee, using thee as my Domeflicke companion, and embracing thee as my bosome friend, and therefore I am the bolder in moving one request unto thee. As thou well knowest, it is no long while fince, when thou diddest aequaint mee with the behaviour of the corficane Roving Company, to be one in so rate and excellent a society, such hath beene my earnest longing ever since, sday nor night have I enjoyed any rest, but should hinke my felicitie beyond all compare, if I should be

Nor is this defire of mine but upon great occasion,

Novell.9. The Eighth Day,

as thy felfe thalt perceive, if I prove accepted into your Societie, and let me then be made a mocking fockeier ever, if I cause not to come thither, one of the most de licate young women, that every any eye beheld, and which I my felfe faw (not above a yeare fince) at Cacavincizlia, on whom I bestowed my intirest affection, and by (the best Vrinall that ever I gazed on) would have given her ten faire Bologninaes, to yeeld the matter I moved to her, which yet I could not (by any meanes) compasse. Therefore, with all the flowing faculties of my foule I intreare thee, and all the very uttermost of my all indeede : to instruct mee in those wayes and means, whereby I may hope to be a member of you. Which if thou doft accomplish for me, & I may find it effectually performed: I shall nor onely bethy crue and loyall friend for ever, but will honour thee be. fide, beyond all men living.

I know thee to be a man of judgement, deepely informed in all well-grounded experience: thou feel what a propper, portly, and comely man I am, how fitly my legges are answerable to my body, my looks amiable, lovely, and of a Rosie colour: beside I am i Doctor of Physicke, of which profession (being one) most expedient) I thinke you have not one in your Societie. I have many commendable qualities in mecasiplaying on diners instruments, exquiste in finging, and composing rare ditties, whereof I will instantly sing you

one. And to he began to fing.

Bruno was swoine so bigge with desire of laughten that he had scarfely any power to refraine from it : neverthelesse, he made the best meanes he could devise; and the Song being ended, the Physicion said. How now Bruno? What is thine opinion of my singing? Beleeve me Sir, replied Bruno, the Violles of Sagginas, will loose their very, best tunes, in contending against you so mirilissically are the sweet accents of your voice heard. I tell thee truely Bruno (answered Master Do

tor

Bi

ac

m

B

in

dw

25

Bo

Ph

up

rea

MO

let

the

lar

me

&1

one

and

ma

fou

ligh

of

cla

the

do

me.

tob

any

refi

litt

tie

WO

your

e fer

A de.

, and

Ca-

tion,

vould

mat-

yany

ng fa-

y ut-

thole

mber

may

cthy

e be.

ly in-

feeft

how

ookes

am t

onely

r So.

C, 25,

z,and

g you

hter,

: ne-

vife:

How

ing?

inal,

ainst

voice

Do.

(tor)

for thou couldeft not by any possibilitie have beleeved it, if thou hadd not heard it. In good fadnesse Sir (faid Brune) you speake most truly. I could (quoth the De-(tor) fing thee infinite more beside, but at this time I must forbeare them. Let me then further informe thee Brune, that befide the compleate perfections thou feeft in me, my Father was a Gentleman, although hee dwelt in a poore Countrey Village, and by my mothers fide, I am derived from them of Vallecchio. Moreover, as I formerly thewed thee, I have a goodly Library of Bookes, yea, and so faire and costly garments, as few Physitions in Florence have the like. I protest to thee upon my faith, I have one gowne, which cost mee (in ready money) almost an hundred pounds in Bagattinoes, and it is not yet above ten yeares old. Wherefore let me prevaile with thee good Brune, to worke fo with the rest of thy friends, that I may be one of your singular Society; and, by the honest trust thou reposest in mee, be boldly licke whenfoever thou wilt, my paines & Phylick shall be freely thine, without the payment of one fingle peny. Bruno hearing his importunate words, and knowing him (as all men else did beside) to be a man of more words than wit, faid. Mafter Doctor, fouffe the candle I pray you, and lend mea little more light with it hitherward, untill I have finished the tailes of thefe Rats, and then I will answer you.

When the Rats tailes were fully finished, Bruno declaring by outward behaviour, that he greatly distasted the matter moved, thus answered. Worthy Master Dostor, the courtesies you have already extended towards me, and the bountifull favours promised beside. I know to be exceeding great, and farre beyond the compasse of any merit in me. But concerning your request, albeit in respect of your admired braine and wisedome, it is of little or no moment at all; yet it appeareth over-mightie to me, and there is not any man now living in the world, that hath the like authoritie over me, and can

more

more command me, than you (with one poore fillable) eafily may doe: as well in regard of my Love and Dutie, as also your fingular and fententious speeches, able not onely to make me breake a found and feeled refoletion, but almost to remove mountaines out of their places; and the more I am in your Learned company, & much the fafter am I lincked unto you, in immoveable affection, fo farre am I in love with your admirable qualities. And had I no other reason, to affect youin fuch endeared manner, as I doe; yet because you are enamoured of for are a beauty, as you have already related to me, it onely were a motive fufficient to compell me. But indeede I must needs tell you, that I have not fo much power in this case, as you (perhaps) doe imagine, which barreth me from fuch forward readineffe, as otherwise needed not to be urged. Neventheleffe, having fo folemnly ingaged your faith to me, and no way mildoubting your faithfull fecrecy, I shall in-Aruct you in some meanes to be observed; and it appear reth plainely to mee, that being furnished with such plentie of Bookes as you are, and other rich endowments, as you have before rehearfed, you cannot but attaine to the full understanding and period of your longing defire.

V

Cap

cve

nec and

221

tain

pois

It V

pro

3179 he p

cret

who

nich 20q

tou

to d

him

ly:

tod

ficio

mag

and

kno

terr

fron

Ditt

don

mac

f N

Speake holdly thy minde Bruno, answered the Doftor : for, I perceive thou halt no perfect knowledge of me as yet, neither what an especiall gift I have of secre cie. Meffer Gafparino da Salicete, when he was Judge and Potestate over the people of Forling, made choice of me (among infinite of his molt endeared friends) to acquaint with a fecter of no meane moment. And fuch a faithfull Secretary hee found me, as I was the onely man, that knew his marriage with Bergamino; Why then should any distrust be made of me? If it be so as you fay Sir(antivered Bruno) your credit is the founder, and I dare the better adventure on your fidelity: the meanes then which you are to worke by, I shall now di-

rect you in.

()

u-

10-

ble

in

are

re-

IR.

ave

doe

di-

he-

and

in-

pea-

uch

ow-

OUT

Do

cro

idge

oife

s)to

fuch

nely

Why

lo 25

der,

the

w di-

We

Wee have alwayes in this noble Society of ours, a Captaine, and two Counfellors, which are changed at every fixe moneths end; and now at Christmas next (fo neere drawing on) Buffalme ofhall be elected Captain. and my felfe one of the Counfellers; for fo it is already agreed on, and orderly fet downe. Now he that is Captaine, may doe much more than any other can, and appoint matters as himfelfe pleafeth. Wherefore, I thinke it very expedient, that fo foone as possibly you may, you procure acquaintance with Buffalmaco, entreating him with all respective courtesie. He is a man, who when he perceiveth youto be so wonderfully Wife and distrete, hee will immediately be in love with you: fo, when you have your best senses about you, and your ncheft Garments on (alwayes remembred) that your acquaintance first be fully confirmed) than never feare tourge your request, for hee can have no power at all to deny you; because I have already spoken of you to him, and finde him to fland affected to you very intires ly: thus when you have begun the bufineffe, leave mee to deale with him in the reft.

Now trust me kinde friend Bruno, replied the Phyficion, Ilike your advice exceeding well. For, if he be a min, that taketh delight to converie with men of skill and judgement, and you have made the way for his knowing methe will even thirst, and long to follow afterme, to understand the incredible eloquence flowing from mee, and the rare composition of my Musicall Ditties, out of which hee may learne no meane wifedome. When the matter was thus agreed on betweene them, Binno departed thence, and acquainted Buffal-Maco with every circumstance; which made him think very day a yeare, untill he might joyne in the fooling Mafter Doctor, according to his owne fancie. Who teing also as desirous on the other side, to make one in he Corficane Voyage; could take no manner of reft, wher by day or night, till hee was greatly linked in friend-

The Eighth Day, Novell.9.

riendship with Buffalmaco, which very quickly he comalled.

For now there wanted no costly dinners and suppers, with all delicates could be devised, for the entertainement of Buffalmaco and B uno; who, like Gueffs very easie to be invited (where rich wines and good cheete are never wanting) needed little fending for, because his house was as familiar to them, as their owne. Inthe end, when the Physitian espied an opportunities upt for the purpole, hee made the same request to Buff alraus, as formerly he had done to Brana Whereat Buff alman, fodainely starting, and looking frowningly on Bruss, as if hee were extraordinarily incenfed against him; the clapping his hand furioufly on the Table, hee faid I ver fweare by the great god of Pasignano, that I can hardy kno refraine from giving thee such ablow on the face, as don to make thy Nofe full at thy heeles; vile Traitor as the att; for none belief thy felte, could diffeover for are at the excellent a fecret unto this famous Physitian. The Dofter, with very plausibly and pleasing tearmes, exceld the matter very artificially; protesting, that another light had revealed it unto him: and after many wife circum now flamiall allegations, at length hee prevailed for are; thou that Buffalmaco was pacified, who afterwards turning in kinder manner. Thus he began. in kinde manner, thus he began.

Master Doctor, you have lived both at Bolongna, and lid, i here in these parts with us, having (no doubt) suffice ently understood, what it is to keepe a close mouth, meanethe true Charracter of taciturnitie. Question states decreased by the control of the doctors doe, blabbing their lessons all about the Towns has haven it is much better apprehended by rumination; and tarin surely (if I be not much deceived) your Nativities have he we pened upon a Sonday morning. Solveing at that time farm, I cond of the ascendent, joyned with Mercurie in a fer taring the conference as I have had with an under the not conceived (as he himselfe did) that you were reader singular to conceived (as he himselfe did) that you were reader singular to the sure of the sure of

fingul

6

e. I

c

711

lin his

Oi

to f

infive

fingular in Physicke onely : but it feemeth, your Studies reached a higher ftraine, for you have learned, fare know very skilfully, how to steale mens hearts fre them, yea, to bereave them of their very foules; which I perceive that you can farre better doe, than any man elfe living to my knowledge, onely by your wife, we try, judicious, and more than meere Mercuriag cloquence, fuch as I never heard before.

The Physician interrupting him bashfolly, turned himself to Bruno, faying Did not I tell hee this before? Observe what a notable thing it is, to speake well, and to frequent the company of the Wife. A thouf and other, meerely blockes and dullards by nature, could neid. I ver fo foone comprehend all the particularities of my ardy knowledge, as this honeft and apprehenfive man harly e, as done. Thou didft not scarch into it halfe so soone, nor sthol (indeed) did I expresse a quarter of my ingenuitie to read thee, as (fince his comming) hath prodigally flowne

n.

ers,

nc-

ety

eete

aule the.

fut

1,40,

20.00

eping,

im:

welld Well doe I remember thy words, that Buffalmaco denother lighted to be among men of wifedome: and have I not
ircum nowfitted him unto his owne defire? How thinkeft
of farte, thou Bruno? The best (quoth Bruno) that any man liturning in the World could doe. Ah worthy Buffalmaco,
answered the Physition: What wouldst thou then have inswered the Physicion: What wouldst thou then have had, and hid, if thou hadst seene me at Bologna, where there was sufficient teither great nor small, Doctor, nor Scholler, but lought them selves happy by being in my company? I lought any debts, I discharged them with my wittie solids and whensoever I spake, I could fer them all Towns and heartie laughter; so much pleasure they tooke in itichap he world could be more forrowfull than they, as that time them on the string mothing more than my remaining among in a ser sem; which they expressed so apparantly, that they with British such in the service the service of the Physicke Lecture, to all the Schollers stufing. fingul dying

The Eighth Day, Novell.9:

dying our profession. But I could not be so perswaded, rause my minde was wholly addicted hither, to enjoy alleue goods, Lands, and Inheritances, belonging line-Fally to them of our house, and accordingly I did per-Wisrme it.

How now Buffalmaco (quoth Bruno) what is thine opigion now? Thou moulde fe not beleeve me when I told thee, that there is not a Doctor in all thefe parts, more skilfull in distinguishing the Vrine of an Ase, from any other, than this expert and fingular min: and I dare bothly maietoine it, that his fellow is not to be found, from bence to the very gates of Paris. Goe then, and doe the uttermost endeavour that thou canst , to grant the request which he bath made.

Beleeve me Buffalmaco, faid the Doctor, Bruno hath spoken nothing but truth, for I am scarlely known here in this City, where (for the most pare) they are all groffe witted people, rather than any jot judicious: but I would thou hadit feene mee among the Doctors, in manner as I was wone to be. Introth Sir, replied Buffalmaco, you are much more learned than ever I imagined, in which respect, speaking unto you as it becommeth me, to a man so excellent in wit and understanding: I dare affure you that (without any faile I will

procure you to be one of our Company.

E After this promise made, the good cheere, favours and kindnesses done by the Doctor to them, was beyoud the companie of all relation : whereof they made no more than a meere mockery, flouting him to his face, and yet his wisedone could not discerne it, More over, they promifed, that they would give him to Wife, the faire Counteffe di Civiliari, who was the only goodlieft creature to be found in the whole Culattario of humane generation. The Doctor demanded what Counteile that was? Oh Sir, answered Buffalmaco, the isa great Lady, one worthy to have iffue by; and few houes are there in the world, where thee bath not fome

jurifdi-

tic

me

w

M

an

you

me

(if

the

of a

togs

tear

and

bro

for l

day

be n

then

Vific

pany

hee

med

not,

1

jurisdiction and command : so that not meane people onely, but even the greateft Lords, at the found of her Trumpets, doe very gladly pay her tribute. And I dare boldly affirme, that whenfoever thee walketh to any place, the yeelderha hot and fentible favour, albeit the keepeth most of all close. Yet once every night, shee duly observeth it (as a Custome) to passe from her own house, to bathe her feete in the River of Arno, and take a little of the feveete Aire: albeit her continual relidence, is within the Kingdome of Latering.

She feldome walketh abroad, but goeth with her are tending Officers about her, who for more demonstration of her greatnesse) doe carrie the Rod and Plummet of Lead. Store of her Lords and Barons are every where to be seene; as the Tamagnino della porta, Don Meta di Sirropa; Manico di Scopa; Signior Squacchera, and others befide, who are (as I suppose) oftentimes your daily visitants, when of necessitie they must be remembred, Al our care and courteffe thal extend to farre (if wee doe not faile in our enterprize) to leave you in the armes of fomajesticke a Lady, quite forgetting her of Cacavinciglia.

The Physition that was borne and brought up at Bologna, and therefore understood not thefe Florentine tearmes : became fully contented to enjoy the Lady; and, within some few dayes following, the Painters brought him tidings, that they had prepared the way for his entertainement into the Society of Rovers. The day bring come, when the supposed affembly was to be made the night following: The Physician invited them both to dinner; when he demanding, what provision he should make for hisentrance into their company, Buffalmace, returned him this answer, wherete hee gave heedfull attention.

Mafter Doctor, you must befirst of all, strongly armed with refolution and confidence: for, if you be not, you may not onely receive hinderance, but alfo dos

U.

n-

2

H-

ne

di-

doe us great harme belido : and now you hall heare in what manner, and how you are to be bold and confrant . You must procure the meanes this instant night, when all the people be in their foundest fleepe, to stand upon one of those high exalted Tombs or Monuments, which are in the Churchyard of Santa Maria Novella, with the very fairest gowne you have about you, because you may appeare in the more honourable condition, before the affembly feated together, and likewife to make good our speeches already delivered of you, concerning your qualitie and profession : that the Counteffe. perceiving you to be a worthy Gentleman, may have you first honoured with the Bathe, and afterward Knighted at her owne coft and charge. But you must continue still upon the Tombe (dreadlesse of nightly apparitions and visions) untill such time as we

01

do

W

m

try

in

lin

and

An

par

the

WO

Yet

buil

hon

Scar

duas

joyc

the

ate

how

whi

feen

chul

Whit

am :

end for you.

And for your better information in every particular; a Beaft, blacke and horned, but of no great flature, will come to fetch you: perhaps he will ale some gastly noifes, strange leapes, and lostie trickes, onely to terrifie and affright you: but when hee perceiveth that hee cannot dant you, hee will gently come necre you, which when hee hath done, you may descend from off the Tombejand, without naming or thinking on God, or any of his Saints, mount, boldly on his backe, for hee will stand ready to receive you. Being fo feated, close your armes over your breft, without prefuming to touch or handle the Beaft, for hee will carrry you thence foftly, and bring you along to the company. But if in all this time of your travell, you call on heaven, any Saint, or be poffessed with the least thought of feare: I must plainely tell you, that either hee will cast you dangeroully, or throw you into some noisome place. And therefore, if you know your felfe, not to be of 2 constant courage, and sprightly bold, to undertake Such an adventure as this : never presume any further, because because you may doe us a great deale of injurie, without any gaine or benefite to your felf, but rather such wrong, as wee would be very forry should happen unto

fo deare a friend.

u

ut.

20

c:

ou

ke

er,

use

Alas honeft Buffa'maca, answered the Phyfician, thou are not halfe acquiinted with me as ver : because I walke with gloves upon my hands, and in a long Gowne, thou perhaps doeft imagine me a faint-hearted fellow. If thou didft know, what I have heretofore done at Bologna in the night time, when I and my Conforts went to vifite prettie wenches, thou wouldst wonder at my couragious attempts. As I am a Gentleman, one night, we met with a yong Bona Roba, a paltry greene-ficknesse baggage, scarsely above a Cubite in height, and because shee refused to goe with us willingly, I gave her a kicke on the bum, and fpurnde her more than a Croffe-bow shoote in distance from mee. and made her walke with us whether the would, or no. Another time I remember, when having no other company but my Boy, I went thorow the Churchyard of the Fryers Minors, after the founding of Ave Marie: a woman had beene buried there the very fame day, and yet I was not a jet afraid.

Wherefore, never be distrustfull of me, but resolutely build upon my courage. And in regard of my more honourable entertainement, I will then weare my Scarlet Gowne and Hood, wherein I received my graduation; and then doe both of you observe, what a rejoycing will there be amongst the whole company, at the entertaining of such a man as I am, enough to create me Captaine immediatly. You shall perceive also how the case will goe, after I have been ethere but a while, in regard that the Countesse (having as yet never seene me) is so deepely enamoured of me: she cannot thuse but bestow the Bathe and Knight-hoode on mee, which she shall have the more honour of, in regard I am well able to maintaine it, therefore referre all the

reft to me, and neve mildoubt your injury or mine. Spoken like a Gallant, replied Buffaimace, and I feare not now, but we shall winne credite by your com-

pany. But be carefull I pray you, that you make not a mockery of us, and come not at all, or faile to be there, when the Beaft shall be fent for you; I speake it the rather, because it is cold weather, and you Gentlemen Phyfitians can hardly endure it. You are carefull of me (quoth the Doctor) and I thanke you for it, but I appland my faire Starres, I am none of your nice or eafiefrozen fellowes, because cold weather is very familiar to me. I dare affure you, when I arife in the night time for that naturall office whereto all men are subject, I weare no warmer defence, than my thin wastcoat over my thirt, and finde it sufficient for the coldest weather

at any time.

When Bruno and Buffalmaco had taken their leave. the Philitian, fo foone as night drew neere, uled many apt excules to his wife, Bealing forth his Scarlet gown and hood unfeene of any, wherewith being cloathed: at the time appointed, hee got upon one of the Marble Tombes, flaying there (quaking with cold) awaiting when the Beaft should come. Buffalmaco, being a lustic calle man of person, had got an ugly masking suite, such as are made use of in Tragedies and Plaics, the outfide being of blacke shagged haire, wherewith being cloathed, he seemed like a strange deformed Beare, and a divels vizard over his face, with two ghaftly horrible hornes ; and thus disguised, Bruno following him, they event to behold the iffue of the bufineffe, fo farre as the new Market place, close to Santa Maria Nevella.

Having efficed Mafter Doctor upon the Tombe, Baffalmaco in his mishapen habite, began to bound, leaps, and carriere, fnuffling and blowing in mad and raging manner: which when the Physician saw, his haire stood on end, he quaked and trembled, as being more fearefull than a woman, wishing himselfe at home a

gaine in his house, rather than to behold a fight fo dreadfull. But because he was come for h, and had such an earnest defire, to fee the wonders related to him; he made himselfe so couragious as possibly he could, and bare all out in formall manner. After that Buffalmaco had (an indifferent while) plaide his horfe-trickes, ramping and stamping somewhat strangely: seeming as become of much milder temper, hee went neere to the Tombe whereon the Phylitian stood, and there appea-

red to flay contentedly.

ır

ic

I

er

cr

c,

ny

NR

at

ble

ing

fic

nch

ut-

ing

rible

they

the

Baf-

apc,

iging

hair

more

ne a gain

Mafter Doctor, trembling and quaking ftill extremely, was fo farre difmated, as he knew not what was best to be done, either to mount on the beafts backe, or not to mount at all. In the end, thinking no harme could happen to him, if hee were once mounted, with the second feare, hee expelled the former, and delecinding downe foftly from the Tombe, mounted on the beaft, faying out alowde: God, Saint Dominicke, and my bleffed Angett helpe to defend me. Seating himfelfe lo well as he could, but trembling still exceedingly; he croffed his armes over his stomacke, according to the

Leffon given him.

Then Buff almaco shaped his course in milde manner, toward Santa Maria della Scala, and groping to finde his way in the darke, went on lo farre as the Sifters of Ripole, commonly called the Virgine Sanchuary. Not far offfrom thence, were divers trenches and ditches wherin fuch men as are imployed in necessary night-fervices, used to emptie the Countesie di Cimmillari, and afterward imployed it for manuring of Hushandmens grounds. Buffalmaco, being come neere one of them, he staied to breathe himself awhile, and then catching fast hold on one of the Doctors feete, raised him somewhat higher on his backe, for the eafier discharging of his burthen, and to pitched him (with his head forwards) into the Leystall.

Then began he to make a dreadful kind of noise, fram-

nn 3 ping : ping and trampling with his feete, passing backe againe to Santa Maria della Scala, and to Prato d'Ognissanti, where he met with Bruno, who was constrained to forsake hin, because hee could not refraine from lowde laughter; then both together went backe once more, to see how the Physicion would behave himselfe, being so

fweerly embrued.

Mafter Doctor, feeing himselfe to be in such an abhominable stincking place, laboured with all his utmost endeavour, to get himselfe released thence ; but the more hee contended and strove for getting forth, hee plunged himselfe the further in, being most pittifully mired from head to foot, fighing and forrowing extraordinarily, because much of the foule water entred in ac his mouth. In the end, being forced to leave his hood behinde him, scrambling both with his hands and feet, he got landing out of his flinking Labyrinth, and having no other meanes, home hee returned to his owne house, where knocking at the doore, hee was at length admitted entrance. The doore being scarse made fast againe after his letting in , Buffalmaco and Bruno were there arrived, liftning how Mafter Doctor, should be welcomed home by his angry wife: who scoulding and railing at him with wonderfull imparience, gave him most hard and bitter speeches, terming him the vilest man living.

Where have you beene Sir? quoth she, Are you become a night-walker after other women? And could no worse garments serve your turne, but your Doctors gowne of Scarlet? Am I to suffer this behaviour? Or am not I sufficient for you, but you must be longing after change? I would thou hadst beene stifled in that soule slith, where thy souler life did justly cast thee. Behold, goodly Master Doctor of the Leyslast; who being married to an inouch woman, must yet goe abroad in the might tume, instaintly lusting after whores and harlots. With these and the like intemperate speeches, she cea-

fed

fed not to afflict and torment him, till the night was almost spent, and the Doctor brought into a sweeter favour.

The next morning, Brano and Buffalmaco, having coloured their bodies with a ftrange kinde of painting, refembling blifters, swellings, and bruises, as if they had beene extreamely beaten; came to the Physicians house, finding him to be newly up, all the house yet smelling of his foule savour (although it had beene very well perfumed) and being admitted to him in the Garden, hee welcomed them with the mornings salutations. But Bruno and Buffalmaco (being otherwise provided for him) delivering steame and angry lookes, stamping and chasing, Bruno thus replied.

Never speake so faire and flattering to us, for wee are moved beyond all compasse of patience. All misortunes in the world fall upon you, and an evill death may you die, like the most falle and persidious Traitor living on the earth. We must beate our braines, and move all our most endeared friends, onely for your honour and advancement: while we were well neere starved to death in the cold like Dogs, and, by your breach of promise, have beene this night so extreamely beaten, as if (like

Affes) we (hould have beene driven to Rome.

But that which is most grievous of all, is danger of excluding our of the Societie, where we tooke good order for your admittance, and for your most honourable ententainement. If you will not credit us, behold our bodies, and let your owne eyes be witnesses, in what cruell manner we have beene beaten. So taking him a-side under the Gallery, where they might not be discovered by overmuch light, they opened their bosomes, shewed him their painted bodies, and sodainely closed them up againe.

The Physician laboured to excuse himselfe, declaring his misfortunes at large, and into what a filthy place he was throwne. It maketh no matter (answered Buffal-

Novell.9. The Eighth Day,

males) I would you had beene throwne from off the Bridge into Arno, where you might have beene recommended to the Divill, and all his Saints. Did I not tell you so much before. In grood sadnesse (quoth the Doctor) I neither commended my selfe to God, nor any of his saints. How? said Buffalmaco, I am sure you will maintaine an untruth: you used a kinde of recommendation: for our messenger told us that you talked of God, Saint Dominicke, and your good Angell, whom you defired to assist you, being so affrighted with seare, that you trembled like a lease upon a tree, not knowing indeede where you were. Thus have you unfaithfully dealt with us, as never any man shall doe the like againe, in seeking honour, and losing it through your owne negligence.

Maîter Doctor humbly entreated pardon; and that they would not revile him any more, labouring to appeale them by all the best words he could use, as fearing least they should publish this great disgrace of him. And wheras (before) he gaue them gracious welcomes, now hee redoubled them with farre greater courtesies, feasting them daily at his owne table, and evermore delighting in their company. Thus (as you have heard) two poote Painters of Florence, taught Master Doctor

better wit, than all the Learned at Bologna.

Novell tenth.
Whereby appeareth, that fuch as meete with cunning Har-

A Curtezan, named Madam Biancafiore, by her subtle policy deceived a young Merchant called Sa'abetto, of all his money he had taken for his wares at Palermo. Afterward he making the wof coming thither agains with farrevicher Merchandifes than before: made the meanes to borrow a great sum of money of her leaving her so hase a pawne, as well required her for her former consenge.

lots, and saffer themselves to be deceived by them, must sharpen their wits, to make them requitall in the selfelame kinde.

NEedelesse it were to question, whether the Noveli related by the Queene, in divers passages thereof, moved the Ladies to heartie laughter, and likewise to compassionate sights and teares; as pittying Madame Helena in her hard missfortune, and yet applauding the Scholler for his just revenge. But the Discourse being ended, Dioneus, who knew it was his Office to be the last speaker every day, after silence were commanded, he began in this manner.

Worthy Ladies, it is a matter very manifest, that deceits doe appears so much the more pleasing, when (by the selfe same meanes) the subtle deceiver is artificially deceived. In which respect, though you all have reported very singular deceits: yet I meane to tell you one, that may proove as pleasing to you, as any of your owne. And so much the rather, because the woman deceived, was a great and cunning Mistris in beguling other; equalling (if not excelling) any of your former

beguilers.

It hath beene observed heretofore, and (haply) are this very day it is as frequent, that in all Cittes and Townes upon the Sea-coasts, having Ports for the benefite and venting of Merchandises; Merchants use to bring their wealthy laden Vessels thither. And when they unlade any ship of great fraught, there are prepared Stote-houses, which in many places are called Magazines or Doganaes, at the charge of the Communalty, or Lord of the Towne or City, for the use whereof, they receive yearely gaine & benefit. Into those ware-houses, they deliver (under writing, and to the owners of them in especiall charge) all their goods and merchandises, of what price and valew they are soever.

Such as be the Owners of these Magazines, when the

wares are thus flored up in them, doe safely locke them up there with their keyes, having first registred downe truly all the goods, in the Register belonging to the Custome-house, that the Merchant may have a just acaccount rendred him, and the rights paied to the Custome-house, according to the Register, and as they

are either in part, or in all made fale of.

Brokers are continually there attending, being informed in the qualitic of the Merchandifes stored, and like-wife to what Merchants they appertaine: by meanes of these men, and according as the goods come to their hands, they devise to have them exchanged, trucked, vented, and such other kinds of dispatches, answerable to the mens minds, and worth of the Commodities. As in many other Kingdomes and Countries, so was this custome observed at Palermo in Sicily, where like wise then were, and (no doubt) now adayes are, store of women, faire and comely of person, but yet vowed enemies to honesty.

Neverthelesse, by such as know them not, they are held and reputed to be blamelesse women, and by yeelding their bodies unto generall use, are the occasion of infinite missortunes to men. For so some as they espie a Merchant-stranger there arrived, they win information from the Booke belonging to the Magazin, what wares are therein stoared, of what valewthey be, and who is the Owner of them. Asterwards, by amorous actions, and affable speeches, they allure young Merchants to take knowledge of them, to be familiar in their company, till from some they get most part of their wealth, from others all. Nay, divers have gone so farre, as to make Port-sale of Ship, Goods, and Person, so cunningly they have been shaven by these Barbers, and yet without any Razor.

It came to passe, and no long time since, that a yong Florentine of ours, named Niccole da Cignano, but more afually called Salabetto, imploited as Factor for his Ma-

ster,

salabero

fter, arrived at Palerino; his Shippe ftored with many evoollen Closthes, a remainder of fuch as had beene fould at the Mart of Salerno, amounting in valew to above five hundred Florines of gold. When he had given in his packet to the Cuftome-house, and made them up fafe in his warehouse; without making thew of geniring any speedy dispatch, hee delighted to view all parts of the Citie, as mens minds are continually addicted to Novelries. Hee being a very faire and affable young man, easie to kindle affection in a very modelt eye : it fortuned, that a Courtezane, one of our before remembered thavers, who tearmed her felfe Madam Biancaffore, having heard somewhat concerning his affaires, began to dart amorous glances at him. Which the indifcreete yong youth perceiving, and thinking her to be some great Lady : began also to grow halfe perswaded that his comely person was pleasing to her, and therefore he would carrie this good fortune of his somewhat cauteoully. Without imparting his mind unto any one, he would daily passe too and fro before her doore; which the observing, and having indifferently wounded him with her wanton piercing lookes : the began rouse the first tricke of her trade, by pretending her enflamed affection towards him, which made her pine and confume away in care, except he might be moved to pittie her. Whereupon , the fent one of her Pandoraes unto him, perfectly intructed in the Art of a Maquerella, who (after many counterfetted fighes, and teares, which the had alwayes ready at command,) told him; that his comely person and compleate perfections, had so wounded the very foule of her Miftreffe, as thee could enjoy no reft in any place, either by day or night In regard whereof, the defired (above all things elfe) to meete with him privately in a Bathe : with which words, the straightway tooke a Ring forth of her purses and in most humble manner, delivered it unto him, as a token from her Miftreffe.

Novell.10: The Eighth Day,

Salabetto having heard the Message, was the onely joyfull man that could be: and having received the Ring, looking on it advisedly; first kissed it, and then put it upon his finger. Then in answer to the messenger. he faid : That if her Miftreffe Biancofiore affected him, the fultained no loffe thereby, in regard he loved her as fervently, and was ready to be commanded by her, at any time whenloever thee pleased, with his best fer-Vices.

Shee having delivered the message to her Mistresse, was prefently (with all speede) returned backe againe to him, to let him understand, in which of the Bathes the meant to meete him, on the next morrow in the evening. This being counsell for himselfe onely to keepe, he imparted it not to any friend whatfoever; but when the houre appointed for their private meeting was come, hee went into the place where hee was appointed, a Bathe (belike) best agreing with such kinde of

bufineffe.

Not long had bee tarried there, but two women flaves came laden to him, the one bearing a Mattreffe of fine Fustian on her head, and the other a great Bafket filled with many things. Having spred the Mattreffe in a faire Chamber on a Couch-bed, they covered it with delicate white Linnen feets, all about embroidred with faire Fringes of gold; then laid they on colly quilts of fine and rich Silkes, artificially wrought with gold and filver knots, having pearles and precious stones interwoven among them, and two such rich. Pillowes, as fildome before had the like beene feene. Salabette putting off his garments, entred the Bathe. prepared for him, where the two Slaves washed his body very neately. Soope after came Biancafiore her felfe, attended on by two other women flaves, and feeing Salaberro in the Bathe; making him a lowly reverence, breathing forth infinite diffembling fighes and grievous groance, the teares trickling downe her checkes

cheekes amaine, kiffing and embracing him, thus the

fpake.

-

-

n

It.

h

.

ic.

1:

.

-,

7

I know not what man in the world, befide thy felfe, could have the power to bring me hither ; the fire flew from thy faire eyes (O thou incomparable levely Tufsane) that melted my foule, and makes me onely live at thy command. Then hurling off her light wearing garments (because she came prepared for the purpose) the flept into the Bathe to him, and, not permitting the Slaves a while to come necre, none but her felfe must now lave his body, with Muske compounded Sope and Gilly-flowers. Afterward, the flaves washed. both him and her, bringing two goodly theeres, lofte and white, yeelding fuch a delicate fmell of Rofes, even as if they had beene made of Rofe-leaves. In the one they folded Salabetto, and her in the other, and fo prefently conveied them on their shoulders unto the prepared Bed-Couch, where, because they should not Sweate any longer, they tooke the sheets from about them, and circumfpealy laid them both together gently in the bed.

Then they opened the Basket , wherein were divers goodly Silken bottels, some filled with Rosewaters , o. thers with flowers of Oranges, and waters diffilled of Gelfomnie, Muske, and Amber-greece, wherewith (againe) the flaves bathed their bodies in the bed, and afterward presented them with varietie of Comfites, as also very precious Wines , serving them in stead of a little Collation. Salabetto supposed himselfe to be in Paradife: for this appeared to be no earthly joy, beflowing a thouland gladlome gazes on her, who (queflionleffe) was a most beautifull creature, and the tarrying of the flaves, feemed millions of yeares to him, that he might more freely embrace his Bige afiere Leaving a waxe Taper lighed in the Chamber, the flaves departed, and then thee fweetly embracing Salabetto bestowed those favours on him, & was not iquemith in affor-

Novell. 10. The Eighth Day,

affoording; whereof he was exceeding joyfull, because he imagined that they proceeded from the integrity of

her affection towards him.

When thee thought it convenient time to depart thence, the flaves returned; they cloathed themselves, and had a Banquet standing ready prepared [for them; wherewith they cheered their wearied spirits, after they had first washed in odoriferous waters. At parting: Salabetto (quoth fiee) whenfoever thy leafure thall best ferve thee, I will repute it as my cheefest happinesse, that thou wilt accept a Supper and Lodging in my house, which let it be this instant night, if thou tanft. He being absolutely caught, borh by her beauty and flattering behaviour: beleeved faithfully, that hee was as intirely beloved of her, as the heart is of the bo. dy : whereupon he thus answered. Madam, whatsoever pleafeth you, must needs be much more acceptable unto: and therefore, not onely may command my fervice this night, but likewife the whole employment of my life, to be onely yours in my very best studies and endeavours.

No fooner did thee heare this answer, but the returned home to her owne house, which thee decked in most sumptuous manner, and also made ready a costly Supper, expecting the arrivall of Salabetto; who when the darke night was indifferently well entred, went thicker, and was welcommed with wounderfull kindneffe, wanting no costly Wines and Delicates all the Supper while. Being afterward conducted into a goodly Chamber, he smelt there admirable sweete senting favours, fuch as might well befeeme a Princes Pallace, He beheld a most costly bed, and very rich furniture round about the roome: which when he had confidered to himfelfe, he was conftantly perswaded, that shee was 2 ady of infinite wealth; And although he had heard divers flying tales and reports concerning her life; yet hee would not credite any thing amiffe of her,

for

n

th

Bis

to [

to !

his .

800

ne i

Cro

for albeit the might (perhaps) beguile fome other; yet thee affected him (he thought) in better manner, and no

fuch misfortune could happen him.

Having spent all the night with her in wanton dalliances, and being risen in the morning; to ensime his
affection more and more towards her, and to prevent
any ill opinion he might conceive of her, the bestowed
a rich and costly Girdle on him, as also a puttle most curiously verought, saying to him. My sweet Salabette, with
these testimonies of my true affection to thee, i give
thee faithfully to understand, that as my person is only
subjected thine; so this house and all the riches in
it, remaineth absolutely at thy disposition, or whatseever hereafter shall happen within the compasse of my
powers.

Hee being not a little proud of this her bountifull offer (having never bestowed any gift on her, because by no meanes she would admit it) after many sweete kisses and embraces; departed thence, to the place where the Merchants usually frequented: reforting to her (from time to time) as occasion served, and paying not one single peny for all his wantonne pleasure, by which cunning baytes (at length) shee caught

him.

er

1-

-

of

nd

rin

lly

en

nt

d-

he

dly

12-

ce.

ure

W25

ard

fe;

for

It came to passe, that having made sale of all his Cloathes, whereby he had great gaines, and the moneys justly payed him at the just times appointed a Biancasiore got intelligence thereof: yet not by him, but from one of the Brokers Salabetto comming one night to sup with her, she embraced and kiffed him as she was wont to do, and seeming so wonderfully addicted in love to him, even as if she would have dyed with delight in his armes. Instantly, shee would needes bestow two goodly gilt standing Cups on him, which Salabetee by no meanes would receive, because the had somethy bin very bountifull to him, to above the value of an hundred Crownes, and yet she would not take of him so much

Novell. 10. The Eighth Day,

as a mite. At length, preffing still more tokens of her love and bounty on him, which he as courreously denied, as she kindly offered: one of her Womenslaves (as she hild before cunningly appointed) sodainely calling her, forthwith she departed out of the Chamber. And when she had continued a pretty while absent, she returned against weeping, and throwing her selfe downe upon her pallet, breathed forth such sighes and wofull lamentations, as no Woman could possibly do the like.

Sala betto amazedly wondering thereat, tooke her in his Armes, and weeping allo with her, faid. Alas my dear Love, what fodaine accident hath befalne you, to urge this lamentable alteration? If you love me, hide it not from me. After he had often entreated her in this manner, cafting her armes about his necke, and fighing as if

her heart would breake, thus fhe replyed.

Ah Salabetto, the onely lewell of my joy on earth, I know not what to doe, or fay, for (even now) I received Letters from Meffima, wherein my Brother writes to me, that although it cost the sale of all my goods, oe whatfoever els I have befide, I must (within eight dayes space) not faile to fend him a thousand Florins of gold, or elfe he must have his head smitten off, and I know not by what means to procure them fo foone. For; if the limitation of fifteen daies might ferve the turne, I could borrow them in a place, where I can command a farre greater fum, or elfe I would fell fome part of our Lands. But being no way able to furnish him to foone, I would I had died before I heard thefe difmall tydings. And in uttering these words, she graced them with such cunning diffembled forrow, as if thee had meant truly indeed.

(e

m

th:

kadconfumed a great part of his amorous flames, kadconfumed a great part of his necessary understanding, believing these countersetted teares and complaints of hers, to proceed from an honest meaning toule; rashly & foolishly shus replied, Deare Branessiere,

Counterfeit

I cannot furnish you with a thousand golden Florins, but am able to lend you five hundred, if I were fure of their repayment at fifteene daics, wherin you are highly beholding to Fortune, that I have made fale of all my Cloathes: which if they had lyen ftill on my hand, my power could not ftreich to lend you ave Florines. Alas deare heart (quoth thee) would you be in fuch want of money, and hide it from her that loves you to loyally? Why did you not make your neede knowne to mee? Although I am not furnished of a thousand Florines, yet I have alwaies ready three or foure hum . dred by mee, to doe any kinde office for my friend. In thus wronging me, you have robed me of all boldneffe, to prelume upon your offer made me. Salabetto, farre fatter inveigled by these words then before, saide Let not my folly (bright Biancaffore) cause you to refule my friendly offer, in fuch a cale of extreame necelfity : I have them ready prepared for you, and am hear- . tily forry; that my power cannot furnish you with the whole fum.

I

,

)Ċ

I

r,

h

n

Then catching him faft in her armes, thus the an-[wered. Now I plainely perceive, my dearest Salabetto, that the lovechou bearest me is true and perfect; when, without expediation of being requested, thou art ready to fuccour me in fuch an urgent neede, and with fo faire a lum of Florines. Sufficiently was I thine owne before, but now am much more ingaged by fo high defervingswith this particular acknowledgement for ever that my Brothers head was redeemed by thy goodnelle onely. Heaven beareth me record, how unwilling I am to be beholding in this kind, confidering that you are a Merchant, and Merchants furnish all their affaires with ready mony: but feeing necessity constraineth me, and I make no doubt of repayment at the time appointed: I thall the more boldly accept your kindnes, with this absolute promise beside, that I will rather sell all the houfes I have, then breake my honest word with you.

Novell. 10. The Eighth Day,

Counterfeit reares still drayning downe her cheekes, and Salabetto kindly comforting hershecontinued there with her all that night, to expresse himselfeher most liberall servant. And, without expecting any more requesting, the next morning he brought her the five hundred Florines, which she received with a laughing heart but outward dissembled weeping eies; Salabetto never demanding any other security, but onely her single promise.

Biancafiore, having thus received the five hundred Florines, the indiction of the Almanake began to alter. and whereas (before) Salabetto could come fee her whenfoever he pleafed, many occasions now happened, wherby he come seven times for once, and yet his entrance was fearfely admitted, neither was his entertainement so affable, or his cheare so hountifull, as in his former accesses thither. Moreover, when the time of repayment was come, yea a moneth or two over-past, and he demanded to have his money; he could have nothing but words for payment. Now he began to confider on the craft and cunning of this wicked woman, as allo his owne shallow understanding, knowing he could make no proofe of his debt, but what her felfe lifted to fay, having no witnes specialty, bill or bond to show, which made his folly fo shamefull to him, that hee durft not complaine to any person, because he had received some advertisements before, wherto he would by no meanes liften, and now should have no other amends, but publike infamy, scorne and disgrace, which made him almost weary of his life, and much to bemoane his owne unhappines. He received also divers Letters from his Mafter, to make returne of the 500. Florines over by way of banke, according as he had used to do, but now could performe no fuch matter.

Hercupon, because his error should not be discovered, he departed in a small vessell thence, not making for Pisa, as he should have done, but directly for Naples he

aped

·ft

21

Fa

par

190

his

mo

Co

Fol

leu

Mal

ly to

ches

haff

leffe,

bein

infla

a fun

offe,

liver

nark v Bu

hele

irne

blic

er

a

shaped his course. At that instant lodged there, Don Pietro della Conigiano, Treasurer of the Empresse of confiantinople, a man of great wisedome & understanding, as also very ingenious and politike, he being an especiall Favourer of Salabetto and all his friends, which made him presume the more boldly (being urged thereto by meere necessity, the best corrector of wandring wits) to acquaint him with his lamentable misfortine, in every particular as it had happened, requesting his ayde and advice, how he might best weare out the rest of his dayes, because he never meant to visite Florence any more.

.

12

er

1-

10

ng

is

ke

3-

ch

ot

me

nes

b-

al-

me

his

vay

uld

ed.

for

s he ped

Conigiano being much displeased at the repetition of his Folly, tharpely reprooved him, faying. Thou haft done leudly, in carrying thy felfe fo loofely, and spending thy Masters goods so carelesly; which shough I cannot true. ly tearme fpent, but rather art meerely confened and cheated of them, yet thou feeft at what a deere rate thou haft purchased pleasure, which yet is not utterly helpleffe, but may by one meanes or other be recovered. And being a man of wonderfull apprehension, advised him infantly what was to be done, furnishing him also with alumme of money, wherewith to adventure a fecond offe, in hope of recovering the first againe : hee caused ivers Packes to be well bound up, with the Merchants narkes orderly made on them, and bought about twen-Buts or barrels, all filled (as it were) with Oyle; and ale pretended commodities being thipt, Salabette rerned with them to Palermo. Where having given in spackes to the Custom-house, and entred them all der his owne name, as being both owner and factor; his Wares were lockt up in his Magizine with open blication, that he wold not vent any of them, before per merchandiles (which he daily expected) were ther. arrived.

ancafiore having heard thereof, and understanding hall, that he had brought Merchandises now with

him.

Novell-10. The Eighth Day,

him, amounting to above two thousand Floring, flaying also in expectation of other commodities, valewing better than three thousand more, shee began to confider with her felfe, that the had not yet gotten money enough from him, and therefore would caft a figure for a far bigger booty. Which that the might the better effect, without fo much as an imagination of the leak mistruft: she would repay him backe his five hundred Florines, to win from him a larger portion of two of three thousand at the least, and having thus setled her determination, thee fent to have him come speake with her. Salabette, having beene foundly bitten before and therefore the better warranted from the like ranckling teeth, willingly went to her, not thewing any figue of former discontent; and the, feeming as if thee knew nothing of the wealth he brought with him, gracing him in as loving manner as ever the had done, thus the spake.

1 am fure Salabetto you are angry with me, because I restored not your Florines at my promised day. Sala. betto smiling, presently answered. Beleeve mee Lady (quoth hee) it did a littlediftafte me, even as I could have beene offended with him, that should placke out my heart and bestow it on you, if it would yeelde you any contentment. But to let you know unfaignedly, how much I am incensed with anger against you: fuch and fo great is the affection I beare you, that I have fold the better part of my whole estate, converting the fame into Wealthy Merchandises, which I have already brought hither with me, and valewing above two thousand Florines, all which are stored up in my Magazine. There must they remaine, till another Ship come forth of the Westerne parts, wherein I have a much greater adventure, amounting unto more than three thousand Florines. And my purpose is, to make my aboade heere in this Citty, which hath won the fole possession of my heart, onely in regard of my Bi ancafiore,

att.

eny

ter

ply

thy

in

and

mu

m

for

en

de

CUI

fo

ha

ref

pro

gre

bor

the

tio

60

ral

]

27

go

for

me

19

be

ce

ret

YO

m

the

CO

meafiare, to whom I am fo intirely devoted, as both my felfe, and whatfoever elfe is mine (now or hereafter) is dedicated only to her fervice; wherto thus the repived.

y-

¥2.

to

no-

ure

tter

Res

red

10

her

ake

be-

like

any

hee

gra-

thus

use I

ala.

ady

ould

out

you

dly,

ou :

hat I

ting

eal-

bove

my

Ship

ve a

than

nake

the

Bi-

fore,

Now trust me Salabetto, whatsoever redoundeth to thy good and benefit, is the cheifest comfort of my soule in regard I prize thy love dearer than mine owne life, and am most joyfull of thy returne hither againe ; but much more of thy ftill abiding heere, because I intend to live onely with thee, fo foone as I have taken order for fome busines of import. In the meane while, let me entreate thee to hold me excused, because before thy departure hence, thou came ft fomtimes to fee me, without thy entrance admitted; and other whiles againe, found not fuch friendly entertainement, as formerly had beene affoorded. But indeed and above all the rest, in not repaying the money according to my promise. But consider my sweete Salabetto, in what great trouble and affliction of minde I then was in, both in regard of my Brothers danger, and ether important occurrences beside, which mollestations doe much diffract the fenfes, and hinder kind tourtefies, which otherwise would be extended liberally.

Laft of all confider allo, how difficult a thing it is for awomans to fedainely to raife the fum of a thouland golden Flormes when one friend promifeth, and performerh not; another protesteth, yet hath no such meaning; a third sweareth, and yet proverh a falle Lyer : fo that by being thus ungently vfed, a breach is made betweene the best friends living. From hence it proceeded, and no other defect elle, that I made not due returne of your five hundred Florines. No sooner were you departed hence, but I had them ready, and as many more, and could I have knowne whither to fend them, they had bin with you long time fince, which because I could not (by any means) compatie, I kept them fill for

YOU

Novell. 10. The Eighth Day,

you in continuall readinesse, as hoping of your come ming againe. So caufing a purse to be brought, wherein the same Florines were, which he had delivered her; she gave it into his hand, and prayed him to count them o-

ver, whether there were fo many or no.

Never was Salabertoes heart halfe fo joyfull before; and having counted them, found them to be his owne five hundred Florines: then, putting them up into his pocker, he faid. Comfott of my life, Full well I know that whatfoever you have faid is most certaine; but let us talke no more of talfbood in friendship, or casuall accidents happening unexpected: you have dealt with me like a most loyall Mistreffe, and heare I protest unfained. ly to yon, that as well in respect of this kind courtefie, as also the constancy of mine affection to you, you cannot request hereafter a farre greater sum of me, to supply any necessary occasion of yours ; but (if my power can performe it) you shall affuredly find it certaine; make proofe thereof when loever you please, after my other goods are Landed, and I have established my estate here in your Citty.

Having in this maner renewed his wonted amity with her, and with words farre enough off from all further meaning; Salabetto began againe to frequent her company, the expressing all former familiarity, and shewing her felfe as lavishly bountifull to him, in all respects as before the had done, nay, many time in more magnifi-

cent manner.

But he intending to punish her notorious trechery towards him, when the left him as an open fcorne to the world, wounded with difgrace, and quite out of credit with all his friends: she having (on a day) solemnly invited him, to sup and lodge in her house all night; he went, both with fad and melancholly lookes, feeming as overcome with extreamity of forrow, Biancaffere metvayling at this ftrange alteration in him, sweetly kishing and embracing him; would needs know the reason of

his

the

ny

of

gar

Shi

fes:

ran

par

utte

riac

follo

wife

ofth

ner:

ter, E

to fi

fore

ney

to M

terly.

Bi

reril

hers

all hi

Was t

from

Heave

make

red m

lying

luccou

to hel

dd ler

op the

his passionate affliction, and he permitting her to urge the question oftentimes together, without returning any direct answer; to quit her in her kind, and with coine of her owne stampe, after a few diffembled sighes, he be-

gan in this mannes.

t

1-

n

(C

er

re

th

er

m-

ing

as

ifi-

10-

the

cdit

in-

; he

19 35

mer.

fling

en of

his

Ah my dearest Love, I am unterly undon because the Ship containing the reft of mine expected Merchandi les, is taken by the Pyrates of Manago, and out to the ransome of ten thousand Florins of Gold, and my part particularly, is to pay one thousand. At this instant I am interly destitute of mony, because the five hundred Florines which I received of you, I fent hence the next day following to Naples, to buy more cloathes, which likewife are to be fent hither. And if I should now make sale of the Merchandizes in my Magazine (the time of ge nerall utterance being not yet come) I shall not make a penyworth for a penny. And my misfortune is the greater, because I am not so wel known here in your citty, as to find some succour in such an importat distresse, wherfore I know not what to do or fay. Moreover, if the money be not speedily fent, our goods will be carryed into Monago, and then they are patt all redemption utterly.

Biancafiore appearing greatly discontented, as one trily perswaded, that this pretended losse was rather bets then his, because she aymed at the mainest part of all his wealth began to consider with her selse, which was the likeliest course to be taken, for saving the goods from carriage to Monago: wherupon thus shee replyed. Heaven knoweth (my dearest Salabetto) how thy love maketh me for rowfull for this misfortune, and it greeted me to see thee any way distressed for it had mony lying by me (as many times I have) shou shouldest sinde factour from my selse onely, but indeede I am not able to helpe thee. True it is, there is a friend of mine, who did lend me five hundred Florines in my need, to make the other sum which I borrowed of thee; but he de-

manded

mandeth extreame interest, because he will not abate a ny thing of thirty in the bundred, and if you should be forced to use him, you must give him some good security. Now for my part, the most of my goods here I will pawne for thee; but what pledge can you deliver in to make up the rest ? Well did salabetto tonceive, the occasion why the urged this motion, and was so diligent in doing him fuch a pleasure: for it appeared evidently to him, that her felfe was to lend the money, whereof he was not a little joyful, feeming very thankful to her. Then he rold her, that being driven to fuch extremity, how unreasonable soever the usury was, yet hee would pay for it. And for her Friends further fecurity, he wold pawnehim all the goods in his Magazine, entering them downe in the name of the party, who lent the money. Onely he defired to keepe the Keyes of the Warehouse, as well to show his Merchandises, when any Merchant should be so desirous: as also to preferve them from illusing, transporting or changing, before his redemption of them.

tyc

000

rels

But

hay

one

ther

Mer

then

forme

Clos

noty

and e

while

hund

more.

That

have f

ted (m

ly per

thers ,

match

Lauret

ment w

nigiano

Soli

She found no fault with his honest offer, but said, he theyed himselfe a well meaning man, and the next morning the fent for a Broker in whom thee repoted especiall trust; and after they had privately consulted together, the delivered him a thousand Golden Florines, which were carried to Salabetto, and the Bond made in the Brokers name, of all the goods remaining in Salabettoes ware house, with composition and absolute 2greement, for the prefixed time of the moneys repayment No sooner was this trickefully accomplished, bat Salabetto feeming as if he went to redeeme his taken goods: fet fale to Naples towards Peetro della Canigiano, with fifteene hundred Florines of Gold; from whence also he fent contentment to his Master at Florence (who imployed him as his Factor at Palermo) befide his owne packes of Clothes. He made repayment likewise to Canigiane, for the monies which furnished

him in this last voyage, and any other to whom he was indebted. So there he stayed a while with Canigniano, whose counsell thus holpe him to out-reach the Siciffian Courtezane: and meaning to deale in Merchandise no more afterward he returned to Florence and

there lived in good reputation.

c-

19

m

¢-

he

ext

fcd

to-

105,

e in

ala-

2 4-

pay-

hed,

12.

C4-

From

Flo-

Timo)

men

nithed

him

Now as concerning Biancafiore, when the faw that Salabetco returned not againe to Palermo, the began to grow fomewhat abashed, as halfe suspecting that which followed. After thee had tarried for him above two moneths space, and perceiving he came not, nor any tydings heard of him; thee caused the Broker to breake open the Magazine, cafting forth the Buttes or Barrels, which thee beleeved to be full of good Oyles. But they were all filled with Sea-water, each of them having a small quantity of Oyle floating on the toppeonely to ferve when a tryall fhould be made. then unbinding the Packes, made up in formall and Merchantable manner : there was nothing elfe in them, but Logges and flumpes of Trees, wrapt handsomely in hurdles of Hempe and Tow; onely two had Cloathes in them. So that (to be briefe) the whole did not value two hundred Crownes: which when the fave, and observed, how cunningly the was deceived : a long while after the forrowed, for repaying backe the five hundred Florines, and folly in lending a thousand more, using it as a Proverbe alwaies after to her selfe : That who foever dealt with a Tuscane, had neede to have found fight and judgement. So remaining contented (whether the would or no) with her loffethe plainely perceived, that although thee lived by cheating others , yet now at the length flee had met with her match.

So foone as Dioneus had ended his Novell, Madama Lauretta also knews, that the conclusion of her Regiment was come; whereupon, when the counsell of Cahigiano had park with generall commendation; and

Novell. 10. The Eighth Day,

the wit of Salabetto no left applauded, for fitting it with fuch an effectuall profecution; the tooke the crewne of Laurell from her owne head, and fet it upon Madam Amiliaes, speaking graciously in this manner. Madam, I am not able to fay, what a Queen we shall have of you, but fire I am, that we shall enjoy a faire one: let matters therfore be so carried, that your government maybe answerable to your beautiful perfections; which words were no sooner delivered, but shee sate downe in her mounted scate.

Madam Æmilia being somewhat bashful, not so much of her being created Queene, as to heare her selfe thus publishly praised, with that which Women doe most of all debre; her sace then appearing, like the opening of the Damake Rose, in the goodhest morning. But after sochad a while dejected her lookes, and the Vermillion blush was vanished away; having taken order with the Master of the houshold, for all needefull occasions besitting the assembly, thus she be-

gan.

Gracious Ladies, we behold it daily, that those Oxen which have laboured in the youke most part of the day, for their more convenient feeding, are let forth at liberty, and permitted to wander abroade in the Woods. Wee fee moreover, that Gardens and Orchards, being planted with variety of the fairest fruite Trees, are c. qualled in beauty by Woods and Forrests, in the plentifell enjoying of as goodly forcading branches. In confideration whereof, remembring how many dayes we have already spent (under the severity of Lawesimpoled) thaping all our discourses to a forme of observarion: I am of opinion, that it will not onely well be ome us, but also proove beneficiall for us, to live no longer under fuch restraint, and like enthralled people, defirous of liberry we fhould no more be subjected to the yoke, but recover our former strength in walking frealy Wherfore,

her

ROY

gan

Wherefore, concerning our pastime purposed for to morrow, I am not minded to use any restriction, or tye you unto any particular ordination; but rather do libes rally graunt, that every one shall devise and speake of arguments agreeing with your owne dispositions.

Besides, I am verily persivaded, that variety of matter uttered so freely, will be much more delightfull, than restraint to one kinde of purpose onely. Which being thus granted by me, whospever shall succeed me in the government, may (as being of more power and preneminence) restraine all backe againe to the accused tomed lawes. And having thus spoken, shee dispensed with their any longer attendance, until it should be Sup-

per time.

e-

X-

he

at

ds.

ing

c.

on-

ofer-

well

o live

peo-

je ded

erfore,

Every one commended the Queenes appointment, allowing it to rellish of good wit and judgment; and being all rifen, fell to such exercises as they pleased. The Ladies made Nosegaies and Chaplets of Flowers, the men played on their instruments, finging divers sweet Ditties to them, and thus were busied untill Supper time. Which being come, and they supping about the beantiful Fountaine; after Supper, they fell to singing and dancing. In the end, the Queene, to imitate the order of her predecessors, commanded Pamphilus, that notwithstanding all the excellent longs formerly sung; he shold now any one, whereunto dutifully obeying, thus he began.

THE SONG.

The Chorus fung by all.

Love. I found such felicity,

And joy, in thy captivity:

As I before did never proove,

And thought me happy, being in Love.

Comfort abounding in my bart,

In

.02

The Eighth Day,

In foule and spright
I did possesse in every part;
O Soveraigne Love by thee.
Thy Sacred fires,
Fed my desires,
And still aspires,
Thy happy thrall to bee.
Love, I found such felicity, & a.

My Song wants power to relates
The sweets of minde
Whitch I did finde
In that most blissefull states
O Soveraigne Love by thee.
No sad despaires
Or hilling care
Could me prepare;
Still thou didst comfort me.
Love I found such selicity, &c.

I hate all fuch as doe complaint,
Blaffeming thee
With Cruelty,
And fleight so feoy difdaine.
O soveraigne Love, to me
Thou hast beene kinde:
If others finde
Thee worfe inclinde,
Tet I will honour thee.
Love, I found fuch felicity,
And joy in thy Captivity. O'e.

Thus the Song of Pamphilus caded, wherero all the rest (as a Chorus) answered with their Voyces, yet every one particularly (according as they felt their love-sicke passions) made a curious construction thereof, perhaps more than they needed, yet not Divining

att

fun

alic

ing

far

ftor

like

(by

they

dang

Bick

what Pamphilus intended. And although they were transported with variety of imaginations: yet none of them could arrive at his true meaning indeed. Wherfore the Queene, perceiving the Song to be fully ended, as also the young Gentlemen, willing to goe take their rest: thee commanded them severally to their Chambers.

THE NINTH DAY.

Whercon, under the Government of Madam Emilia, the Argument of each severall Discourse, is not limitted to any one peculiar subject; but every one remaineth at liberty, to speake of what sever themselves hest pleafeth.

The Industion.



Aire Aurora, from whose bright and chearfull lookes; the dusky darks night flyeth as an utter enemy, had already reached so high as the eight Heaven, converting it allinto an Azure colour.&

the pretty Flowrets began to spred open their Leaves: when Madam Æmilia, being risen, caused all her semale attendants, and the yong Gentlemen likewise, to be summoned for their personall appearance. Who being altome, the Queene leading the way, and they following her Majesticke pace, walked into a little Wood, not far off distant from the palace.

No sooner were they there arrived, but they beheld frore of wilde beasts, as Hindes, Hares, Goats, and such like; so safely secured from the pursuite of Huntsmen (by reason of the violent Pestilence then reigning) that they stood gazing boldly at them, as dreadlesse of any danger, or as if they were become tame and Dome-

Licke.

..

ve-

of,

123

Approaching neerer them, first to one, then unto another, as if they purposed to play gently with them, they then began to skip and run, making them such pastime with their pretty tripping, that they conceived great de-

light in beholding of them.

But when they beheld the Sun to exalt it felfe, it was thought convenient to returne backe againe, fhrouding themselves under the Trees spreading arms, their hands full of sweet Flowers and Odorifferous Hearbs, which they had gathered in their Walking. So that such as chanced to meete them, could say nothing else but that death knew not by what meanes to conquer them, or else they had set downe an absolute determination, to kill him with their Ioviall disposition.

In this manner, finging, dancing, or prettily pratling, at length they arrived at the Palace, where they found all things readily prepared, and their Servants duly attending for them. After they had reposed themselves a while, they would not (as yet) sit downe at the Table, untill they had sung halfe a dozen of Canzoners, some more pleasant than another, both the women and men

together.

Then they fell to washing hands, and the Master of the Houshould caused them to sit downe, according as the Queene had appointed, and Dinner was most sumptionally served in before them. Afterward, when the Tables were with-drawne, they all tooke handes to dance a Roundelay; which being done, they played on their Instruments a while; and then, such as so pleased, tooke their rest. But when the accustomed houre was come, they all repaired to the place of discoursing, where the Queene, looking on Madam Philimena, gave her the honour of beginning the first Novell for that day: whereto shee dutifully condescending, began as followeth-

Madami

whe

low

full

lated

livaci.

of,

a wh

read

accid

to co.

you y

Madam France fea, a Widow of Piftora, being affected by two Florentine Gentlemen, the one named Rinuccio Palermini, and the other Aleffandro Chiarmonte fi, and The bearing no good wil to either of them, ingenioully freed ber felfe frem both their temportunate fuites One of them fire caused to lye as dead in a grave, and the other to fetch him from thence: fo neither of them accompli-Thing what they were enjoyned, failed of their expettation.

The first Novell.

Appropring, that chafte and honest women ought rather to deny importunate suiters, by subtile and ingenious meanes, than fall into the danger of [candall and flan-

Adam, it can no yvay discontent me (feeing it is your most gracious pleasure) that I should have the honour, to breake the first staffe of freedome in this faire company (according to the injunction of your

Majefty) for liberty of our owne best liking arguments: wherein I dismay not (if I can speake well enough) but to please you all as well, as any other that is to follow me. Nor am I fo oblivious (worthy Ladies) but full well I remember, that many times hath beene related in our passed demonstrations, how mighty and variable the powers of love are; and yet I cannot be perfwaded, that they have all beene to fufficiently spoken of, but something may be added, and the bottom of them never dived into, although we should sie arguing a whole yeare together. And because it hath beene already approoved, that lovers have beene led into divers accidents, not onely inevitable dangers of death, but also have entred into the very houses of the dead, thence to convey their amorons friends : I purpole to acquaint you with a Novell, beside them which have beene dif-

The Ninth Day, Novell, T.

discoursed; whereby you may not onely comprehend the power of Love, buralfo the wifedome uled by an honest Gentlewoman, torid her selfe of two importunate futers, who loved her against her owne liking, yet neither of them knowing the others intent, or affer dion.



In the Citty of Pifloya, there dwelt fometime a beau full Gentlewoman, being a Widdow, whom two of our Florentines (the one named Rinuccio Palermini, and she other Aleffandro Chiarmontefi, having withdrawne themselves to Pistoja) desperately affected, the one ignorant

iene cale Ger bein (an adv hear COV

don mod ly u the moi left. pro rice

yare

ded ACLA not Wo afti med affic the oft thu

by. Ris ty i (pe for

dev

144

ignorant of the others intention, but each carried his case closely, as hoping to be possessed of her. This Gentlewoman, named Madam Francesca de Lazzaribeing often solicited by their messages, and troublessomely pessed with their importunities: at last (lesse advisedly then she entended) the granted admittance to heare either of them speake. Which she repenting, and toveting to be rid of them both a matter not easie to be done: the wittily devised the onely meanes, namely, to move such a motion to them, as neither would willingly undertake, yet within the compasse of possibility; but they failing in the performance, shee might have the more honest occasion, to be free from all turther mollessation by them, and her politike intention was thus projected.

On the same day, when she devised this peece of sertice, a man was buried in Pissoya, and in the Churchyard belonging unto the gray Friers, who being descended of good and worthy parentage: yet himselfe was very insumous, and reputed to be the vilest man living, not onely there in Pyssoya, but throughout the whole World beside. Moreover, while he lived, he had such a strange mithapen body, and his face so ugly deformed, that such as knew him not, would stand gastly affeighted at the first sight of him. In regard, whereof, the considereth with her selfe, that the soule desormity of this loathed sellow, would greatly availe in her determination, and consulting with her Chamber-maid,

thus the ipake.

r.

21

13

ur

d

ne

ne

ŋt

Thou knowest (my most true and faithfull servant) what trouble and affliction of minde I suffer dayly by the messages and Letters of the two Florentines, Rinuccio, and Alessandro, how hatefull their importunity is to me, as being utterly unwilling to heare them speake, or yeeld to any thing, which they desire. Wherefore, to free my selfe from them both together, I have devised (in regard of their liberall offers) to make trials.

Novella: The Ninth Day,

of them in such a matter, as I am sure they will never

It is not unknowne to thee, that in the Church-yard of the Gray Friers, and this instant morning, Scannadio (for fo was the ugly fellow named) was buried; of who, when he was living, as also now being dead, both men, women and children, doe yet frand in feare, fo gaftly and dreadfull alwayes was his personall appearance to them. Wherefore first of all gee thou to Aleffandro, and fay to him thus. My Miftreffe France fa hach fent mee to you, to tell you, that now the time is come, wherein you may deferve to enjoy her love, and gaine the possession of her person, if you will accomplish fuch a motion as thee maketh to you. For some elpeciall occasion, wherewith hereafter you shall be better acquainted, a neere Kinsman of bers, must needs have the body of Scannadio (who was buried this morning) brought to her house. And slice, being as much affraide of him now hee being dead, as when he was living, by no meanes would have his body brought shither.

In which respect, as a Token of your unseigned love to her, and the latest service you shall ever do for her she earnestly intreatest you, that this night, in the very deadest time theref, you would go to the grave, where Scanwadio lyeth yet uncovered with earth untill to morrow, and attyring your selfe in his garments, even as if you were the man himselfe, so to remaine there untill her kinsman doe come.

Then, without speaking any one word, let him take you forth of the grave, and bring you thence (instead of Seamadio) to her house: whereshee will give you gentle welcome, and disappoint her Kinsman in his hope, by making you Lord of her, and all that is hers as afterward shall plainly appeare. If he say he will do it, it is as much as I desire: but if he trifle and make deniall, then boldly tell him, that he must refraine all places whereso-

Le Handard for and

Sie kin you and the as you the

as i and central furnishment

tho nig dy f the crea yar as !

felf V tak but

fla

governed by Madam Amilia.

145

wherefoever I am, and forbeare to fend me any more

Letters, or meffages;

er

rd

lio

ő,

n,

ly

01

0,

nt

e,

ne

h

6.

2-

ls

13

15

0

12

e

C

1.

1-

u

r

d

Š

Having done to, then repaire to Rinucio Palermani, and fay. My Miltris Francocca is ready to make acceptance of your leve; provided, that you will do one thing for her fake. Namely, this enfuing night, in the midde and stillest season thereof, to goe to the grave where Scanadio was this morning buried, and (without making any noyie) or speaking one word, whatsoever you shall heare or see to take him forth of the grave, and bring him home to her house, where you shall know the reason of this strange business, and enjoy her freely as your owne for ever But if he resule to doe it, then I command him never hereaster to see me, or move surther suite unto me, by any meanes whatsoever.

The Chamber-mayde went to them both, and deliveted the feverall mellages from her Miffresse, according as the had given her in charge; whereunto each of them answered, that they would (for her fake) not onely defcend into a Grave, but also into hell, if it were her plea-

furcs

She returning with this answere unto her Mistresse, Inaucesea remained inexpectation, what the issue of those fond attempts in them, would fort unto. When night was come, and the middle hours thereof already past, Alessandrochiarmontess, having put off all other garments to his doublet and hose; departed featrelly from his lodging, walking towards the Churchyard, where Scannadio lay in his grave: but by the way as he went, he became surprized with divers dreadfull conceits and imaginations, and questioned with himfelse thus.

What a beaft am I? What a busines have I undertaken? And whither am I going? What doe I know, but that the Kinsman unto this woman, perhaps underflanding mine affection to her, and crediting some such matter, as is nothing so; bath laide this politicle

trair.

Novell. 1: The Ninth Day,

traine for mee, that hee may murther me in the grave? which (if it should so happen) my life is lost, and yet the occasion never knowne whereby it was done. Or what know I, whether some secret enemy of mine (affecting her in the maner, as I do) have devised this stratagem (out of malice) against mee, to draw my life in danger, & surther his own good sortune? Then contrary motions overswaying these suspicious, hee questioned

his thoughts in another natute.

Let me (quoth he) admit the case, that none of these furmifes are intended, but her Kinfeman (by and in this mannner devised) must bring me into ber house : I am not therefore perswaded, that hee or they doe cover, to have the body of Scannadio, either to carry it thither, or prefent it to her, but rather doe aime at some other end. May not I conjedure, that my close murthering is purposed, and this way acted, as on him that (in his life time) had offended them? The maid hath ftraitly charged me, that whatfoever is faid or done unto me, I am nor to speake a word. What if they pull out mine eyes, teare out my teeth, cut off my hands, or doe mee any other mischiese; Where am I then? Shall all these extremities barre me of speaking? On the other fide, if I speake, then I shall be knowne, and so much the soo. ner (perhaps) be abused. But admit that I sustaine no injury at ail, as being guilty of no transgression : yet (perchance) I shall not be carried to her house, but to some other baser place, and afterward the shall reprove me, that I did not accomplish what shee commanded, and fo all my labour is utterly left.

Perplexed with these various contradicting opinions, he was willing divers times to turne home backe again; yet such was the violence of his love, and the power thereof prevailing against all finister arguments; as her went to the grave, and removing the boordes covering it, whereinto he entred; and having despoiled Scannadio of his garments, cloathed himselfe with them, and

9

m

Co

th

W2

lo

CCI

the

his

wi

frie

the

in b

mo

love

grae

atte

TYCH

of all

he la

in th

so laid him downe, having first covered the grave againe. Not long had hee tar.ied there, but he began to
beckinke him, what manner of man Scannadio was, and
what strange reports had beene noised of him, not only
for ransacking dead mens graves in the night season,
but many other abhominable Villanies committed by
him, which so searcfully assaulted him; that his haire
stood an end, every member of him quaked, and every
minute he imagined Scannadio rising; with intent to
strangle him in the gave. But his fervent affection overcomming all these idle seares, and lying stone still, as if
he had beene the dead man indeede; he remained to see

the end of his hope.

n

(c

3

m to

T,

23

13

19

, 1

ne

eç

if

0 -

no

to

d.

ns,

in:

754

ace

ng

nd-

60

On the contrary fide, after midnight was paft, Rivuscio Palermini de parted from his lodging, to do what he was enjoyned by his hearts Miffrelle, and as he went along, divers confiderations also ran in his minde, conceraing occasions possible to happen. As, falling inco the hands of Juffice, with the body of Scannadio upon his backe, and being condemned for facriledge, in robbing granes of the dead; either to be burned, or otherwife fo punished, as might make him hatefull to his bell friends, and meerely a fhame to himfelfe, Many other the like conceits molefted him fufficient to alter his determination: but affection was much more prevailing in him, and made him use this consultation. How now Rinuccio? Wilt thon dare to deny the first request, being moved to thee by a Gentlewoman, whom thou dearely loveft, and is the only meanes, to gaine allurance of her gracious favour? Vadoubtedly, were I fure to die in the attempt, yet I will accomplish my promise. And so hee went on with courage to the grave.

Aleffandro hearing his arrivall, and also the removall of the boordes, although he was exceedingly affraid; yet he lay quietly ftill, and firred not, and finaccio being in the grave, tooke Aleffandro by the feete haling him forth, and (mounting him upon his back) went on thus

loder

Noveli, 2. The Winth Day,

loden, towards the house of Madam Francesca. As the patied along the fireets, unseene or unract by any, A-tessandro suffered many shrewd rushings and punches, by turnings at the fireets corners, and solting against bulkes, posits, and stalles, which Rinuccio could not avoide, in regard the night was so wonderfully darke, as

he could not fee what way he went.

Being come somewhat neere the Gentlewomans house, and shee standing ready in the window with her maide, to see when Rinuccio should arrive there with Aleffandro; provided alfo of an apt excuse, to fend them thence like a couple of Coxecombes ; it fortuned, that the Watchmen, attending there in the fame freete, for the apprehension of a banished man, stolne into the citie contrary to order; hearing the trampling of Rinuccioes feete, directed their course as they heard the noise, having their Lanthorne and light closely covered, to fee who it should be, and what he intended, and bearing their weapons upon the ground, demanded, Who goesthere? Rinuccio knowing their voyces, and that now was no time for any long deliberation : let fall Aleffandro, and ran away as fast as his legges could carry him.

Alessando being risen againe (although hee was cloathed in Scannadioes Garméts, which were long and too bigge for him) fledde away also as Rinuccio did. All which Madam Francesea easily discerned by help of the Watchmens Lanthorne, and how Rinuccio carried Alessando o on his backe, being attired in the Garments of Scannadio: whereat she marvelled not a little, as also the great boldnesse of them both. But in the midst of her marvelling, shee laughed very heartily, when shee saw the one let the other fall, and both to run away so manfully. Which accident pleasing her beyond all comparison, and applauding her good fortune, to be so happily delivered from their daily molessation: she betooke her selfet to her Chamber with the maide; avouching so

lemnly

han han but

fol

fine fine the gre

wh grie ver kno

four had the ons, the lefte Mac poir

tinu difer one with expe

Ma

folemnly to her, that (queftionlife) they both affected her dearly, having undertaken fuch a ftrange imposition,

and very neere brought it to a finall conclusion.

19

e,

10

-

d

13

d

10

-

18

Co

Z VV

1-

ly

Risuccio, being fadly discontented, and cuissing his hard fortune, would not yet return home to his lodging; but, when the watch was gone forth of that streete, came backe to the place where he let fall Alessandro, purposing to accomplish the rest of his enterprize. But not finding the body, and remaining fully perswaded, that the Watchmen were possessed thereof; he went away, greeving extreamely. And Alessandro, not knowing now what should become of him; confounded with the like griefe and sorrow, that all his hope was thus utterly overthrowne, retired thence unto his owne house, not knowing who was the Porter which carried him.

The next morning, the grave of Scamadio being found open, and the body not in it, because Aleffandro had throwne it into a deepe ditch neere adjoyning: all the people of Piltoya were possessed with fundry opinions, fome of the more foolish fort verily beleeving, that the divell had carried away the dead body. Nevertheleffe, each of the Lovers, severally made knowne to Madam Francesca, what hee had done, and how disappointed, either excusing himselfe, that though her command had not beene fully accomplished, yet to continge her favour towards him. But the, like a wife and discreere Gentlewoman, sceming not to credite either one or other, discharged her felf honestly of them both, with a cutting answer, That the would never (afterward) expect any other fervice from them, because they had failed intheir first injunction.

Malam V simbalda, Lady Abbesse of a Monastery of Nuns in Lombardie, arising hastily in the night time without a Candle, to take one of her Daughter Nuns in bed with a young Gentleman, whereof she was enviously accused.

accused, y certains of ner other Sisters: The Abbesse her selfe (being at the same time in bed with a Priest) imagining to have put on her head a plaited vaile, put on the Priests breeches. Which when the poore Nume perceiveds by causing the Abbesse to see her owne error, she got her selfe to be absolved, and had the freer liberty afterward, to be more familiar with ber friend, then formerly she had bin.

The second Novel!

Whereby is declared, that who so ever is defirous to reprebend fin in other men, should fulf examine himselfe, that he be not guilty of the same crime.

BY this time Madam Philomena fate filent, and the with of Francefea, in freeing her felfe from them whom the could not fancie, was generally commended; as also on the contrary, the bold prefumption of the two amorous fuiters, was reputed not to be love, but meerely folly. And then the Queene, with a gracious admonition, gave way for Madam Eliza to follow next; who prefently thus began.

Worthy Ladier, Madam Francesca delivered her selse discreetly from trouble, as already it hath been related: but a young Nun, by the helpe and savour of Fortune, did also free her selse (in speaking advisedly) from an inconvenience sodainely falling on her. And as you well know, there wants none of them, who (like bold Bayards) will be very forward in checking other mens midemeanors, when themselves (which my Novell will approve) deserve much more justly to be corrected. As hapned to a Lady Abbesse, under whose government the same yong Nun was, of whom I am now to speake.

You are then to understand (Gracious Auditors) that in Lumbardie there was a goodly Monastery, very famous for Holinesse and Religion, where, among other fanctified Sisters, there was a young Gentlewoman, endued with very singular beauty, being named Mabella,

Who

wi

32

bei

tifi

tha

he:

W3

cea

101

Spe.

me:

rific

OVER

othe

Gen

to hi

to ty

itto

bald

all th

deny

ning

perio

Nun

watch

moul.

being

Prefu

no dil

the ye

ter, th

Th

who on a day, when a Kinfman of hers came to fee her at the gate, became enamored of a young Gentleman,

being then in his company.

2

4

-

•

7

.

fe.

:

e,

n

M

ld

ns

lle

d.

nt

ic.

20.

er

n-

b,

ho

He likewise, beholding her to be so admirably beautifull, and perceiving by the pretty glances of her eye, that they appeared to be filent intelligencers of the hearts meaning, grewalso as affectionately inclined towards her; and this mutuall love continued thus concealed a long while, but not without great affliction unto them both. In the end, either of them being circumpect and provident enough, the Gentlman contrived a meanes, whereby hee might secretly visite his Nunne, wherewith she seemed no way discontented: and this visitation was not for once or twice, but very often, and closely concealed to themselves.

At length it came to passe, that either through their owne indiscreete carriage, or jealous suspiction in some others: it was espiced by one of the Sisters, both the Gentlemans comming and departing, yet unknowne to him or Isabella. The faid Sister, disclosing the same of two or three more: they agreed together, to reveale it to the Lady Abbelle, who was named Madam Usin-balda, a holy and devout Lady, in common opinion of

all the Nuns, and who foever elfe knew her-

They further concluded (because Isabella should not deny their accusation) to contrive the businesses of cunningly: that the Lady Abbesses should come her selfe in person, and take the young Gentleman in bed with the Nun. And upon this determination, they agreed to watch nightly by turnes, because by no meanes they would be prevented: so to surprise poore Isabella, who being ignorant of their treachery, suspected nothing. Presuming thus still on this secret selicity, and searing no disaster to befall her: it chanced (on a night) that the young Gentleman being entred into the Nuns Dorter, the Scovers soone descried him.

After some part of the night was overpast, they devi-

The Ninth Day, Novell.3.

ded themselves into two bands, one to guard Isabellaes Dorter doore, the other to carrie newes to the Abbeffe, and knocking at her Closet doore, faid. Rife quickly and use all the hafte you may, for wee have seene a man enter our Sifter Ifabellaes Dorter, and you may take her in bed with him. The Lady Abbeffe, who, (the very fame night I had the company of a lufty Priest in bed with her felfe, as oftentimes before the had, and he being alwayes brought thither in a Cheft: hearing thefe tidings, and feating alfo, left the Nunnes haftie knocking at her doore, might cause it to fly open, and so (by their entrance have her owne shame discovered : arose very haftily, and thinking thee had put on her plaited Vaile, which alwayes thee walked with in the night feafon, and used to tearme her Pfalter; the put the Priefts breeches upon her head, and fo went away in all hafte with them, supposing them verily to be her I'falter : but making fast the Closet doore with her key, because the Priest should not be discovered.

Away the went in all hafte with the Sifters, who were To forward in the detection of poore Ifabella, as they ne. ver regarded what manner of vaile the Lady Abbeffe wore on her head. And being come to the Dorter doore, quickly they lifted it off from the hookes, and being entred, tound the two Lovers sweetly embracing : but yet to amazed at this fudden furprifall, as they durft not flirre, not speake one word. The young Nunne 1/4. bella, was railed forthwith by the other Sifters, and according as the Abbelle had commanded, was brought by them into the Chapter house ; the young Gentle. man remaining fill in the Chamber, where he put on his garments, awaiting to fee the iffue of this bufineffe, and verily intending to act fevere revenge on his betrayers, if any harme were done to Isabella, and afterward to take her thence away with him, as meaning to make her amends by marriage.

The Abbeffe being feated in the Chapter-honfe; and

ded 1 2111 ver a had (ted b reno with foun able but f the tray

forti

the d

all th

her l her : bold for t you derf Wh prat Isth mod beh [wa lon Nu Abi

Cabo TOT Н toc

find

it:

laes

ffc,

kly

ian

her

ery

bed

be-

cle

k-

by

ole

cd

1-

fts

fe

THE.

he

re

e.

(le

er

c.

1.

11

.

n

,

.

0

ill the other Nunnes then called before her, who minded nothing else but the poore offending Sister; she began to give her very harsh and vile speeches, as never any transgressor suffered the like, and as to her who had (if it should be openly knowne abroad) contaminated by her lewde life and actions, the sanctitie and good renowne of the whole Monastery, and threatned her with very severe chassissement. Poore Isabella, confounded with feare and shame, as being no way able to excuse her fault, knew not what answer to make, but standing silent, made her case compassionable to all the rest, even those hard-hearted Sisters which betrayed her.

And the Abbeffe fill continuing her harfh speeches, it fortuned, that Isabella raising her head, which before he dejected into her bosome, espied the breeches on her head, with the flockings hanging on either fide of her; the fight whereof did fo much encourage her, that boldly the faid. Madam, let a poore offender advise you for to mend your veile, and afterward fay to me what you will. The Abbeffe being very angry; and not understanding what shee meant, frowningly answered, Why how now faucy companion? What veile are you prating of? Are you so malapart to be chatting already? Is the deede you have done, to be answered in such immodest manner? Isabella not a jor danted by her sterne behaviour, once againe faid. Good Madam let mee perfwade you to fet your veile right, and then chide mee as long as you will. At these words all the rest of the Nummes exalted their lookes, to behold what welle the Abbesse wore on her head, wherewith Isabella should and fuch fault, and the her felfe lift up her hand to feele it; and then they all perceived plainely the reason of 1labellaes speeches, and the Abbesse saw her owne erfor.

Hereupon, when the rest observed, that she had no help to cloud this palpable shame withall, the tide began to turne,

Novella: The Ninth Day,

turne, and her tong found another maner of Language, than her former fury to poore Ifabella, growing to this conclusion, that it is impossible to resist against the temptations of the flesh. And therefore thee faid: Let all of you take occasion, according as if offereth it selle, as both were and our predecessors have done; to be provident for your selves: take time while you may, having this sentence alwayes in remembrance, Si non caste, take man caute.

So, having granted the young Nunne Ifabella free abfolution: the Lady Abbelle returned backe againsto
bed to the Prieft, and Ifabella to the Gentleman. As
for the other Sifters, who (as yet) were without the
benefit of friends; they intended to provide themselves
so soone as they could, being enduced thereto by so good
example.

Maller, Simon the Phylitian, by the per finalisms of Bruns, Buffalmaco, and a third named Nello, made Calandrine believe that he was conceived with child. And having Phylicke ministred to him for the disease: they got both good far Capons and mony of him, and so cured him, without any other manner of deliverance.

The third Novell.

Discovering the simplicitie of some filly witted men, and bow easie a matter it is to abuse and beguite them.

A Fter that Madam Eliza had concluded her Novell, and every one of the company gave thanks to Fortune, for delivering poore Isabella the faire young Nunfrom the bitter reprehensions of the as faulty Abbolic, as also the malice of her envious Sifters: the Queene gave command unto Philostratus, that he should be the next in order, and hee (without expecting any other warning) began in this manner.

Faire Ladies, the paltry ludge of the Marquifate,

when when what to no comp nove aime: of im

> drine panio becau fo to a lega poled trey, feffed

Yo

the ve so his feder him, doe 5

thou

lay it mean cost, a The string in the cheir l

An oget

erth

whereof yesterday I made relation to you; hindred mee hen of another Novell , concerning filly Calandrino, wherewith I purpole now to acquaint you. And because whatfoever hath already beene spoken of him, tended to no other end but matter of merriment, hee and his companions duly confidered; the Novell which I shall now report, keepeth within the felfefame compaffe, and simeth alfo at your contentment, according to the scope

ofimpoled variety.

is

p• of.

as i-

ng ď.

b-

to As

he

ves boo

mo,

rins .

gning

get

in,

cher

fate,

creof

You have already heard what manner of man Calandring was, and likewise the rest of his pleasant Commions, who likewife are now againe to be remembred. because they are actors in our present discourie. Ir came fo to pale, that an Aunt of Calandrinees dying, left him alegacie of two hundred Florines, wherewith he purpoled to purchale fome frall farme-houle in the Countrey, or elie to enlarge the other, whereof hee was poffeffed already. And, as if hee were to disbutfe some ten thousand Florines, there was not a Broker in all Flonnce, but understood what he intended to doe : and all the worft was, that the ftrings of his purfe could ftretch so higher. Brune, and Buffalmace (his ancient Coniderates) who heard of this good Fortune befalue him, advised him in such manner as they were wont to lees allowing it much better for him, to make merry with the money in good cheere among them, than to ly it out in paltry Land; whereto he would not by any meanes liften, but ridde himfelf of them with a dinners coff, as loth to be at any further charge with them. vell.

For- Thefe merry Laddes meant not to leave him fo; but Nun, string one day in serious consultation, and a third man offe, in their company, named Nello; they all three laide cent their braines in fleepe, by what meanes to wash their the nouther well, and Calandrino to be at the cost thereof. And having refolved what was to be done, they met ogether the next morning, as Calandrino was comming erth of his house, and fundering themselves, to avoid

all

all fuspition, yet being not farre distant each from other . Nello tirit met him, and faid unto him, Good morrow Calandrino: which hee required backe againe with the fame falutation. But when Nello Itanding ftill, looked him steafastly in the face : whereat Calendrino mervailing, faid. Nello, Why doft thou behold mee fo advifedy? Whereunto Nello answered, Saying. Hast thou felt any prize this last night past? Thou lookest nothing fo well, as thou didft yesterday. Calandrino began instantly to wax doubtfull, and replied thus. Doeft fee any alteration in my face, wereby to imagine, I should feele some paine : In good faith Calandrino (quoth Nello) me thinkes thy coun senance is frangely changed, and furely it proceedeth from Some great cause, and so he departed away from him.

Calandrino being very mistruftfull; scratched his head, yet felt he no grievance at all; and going full on ; Buffalm seo sodainely encountred him, upon his departure from Nello, and afterward falutations passing between them; in a manner of admiration, demanded what hee

ailed?

Truly (quoth Callandrino) well enough to mine owne thinking, yet notwithstanding, I met with Nello but eyen now; and hee told me, that my countenance was very much altred; Is it possible that I should be sicke, and feele no paine or distaste in any part of me ? Buffalmace answered; I am not so skilfull in judgement, as to argue on the nature of diftemper in the body : but fure I am, that thou haft some dangerous inward impediment, because thou lookeft (almost) like a man more hions than halfe dead.

Calandrino began presently to shake, as if he had had lewil a Feaver hanging on him, and then came Brune look- lither ing fearefully on him, and before hee would utter any offer, if words, seemed greatly to be moone him; saying at length. afrien Calandrino? Art thou the same man or no? How wonderfully art thou chinged since last I saw thee, which is trang no longer than yester day? I pray thee tell mee, How passe o calandoed thou feele thy health?

lion ! ome could theref icd o dian coun! house with f om o fer D man o Are & and w

Byt they a boufe his vy feele n that t lide i ned to which and fer

faile t

who e the Mi WILL W

2

1

.

,

15

X 22

. 2

13

d,

1-

re

ne ce

ne

0-

V25 ke,

uf 1 25

bu:

pe.

ian-

Calandrino hearing, that they all agreed in one opiniion of him; he began verily to persivade himselfe shar ome fodaine fickneffe had feifed upon him, which they could differene, although he felt no anguish at all : and herefore, like a man much perplexed in minde, demaned of them, What he should doe? Beleeve me Calantino (answered Brano) if I were worthy to give thee confell, thou shouldst returne home presently to thy house, and lay thee downe in thy warme bed, covered with fo many cloathes as thou canst well endure. Then morrow morning, fend thy water unto learned Mafer Doctor the Phylitian, who (as thou knowest) is a man of most fingular skill and experience : hee will intred thee prefently what is the best course to be taken, and we that have ever beene thy loving friends, will not falle thee in any thing that lieth in our power.

By this time, Nello being come againe unto them, they all returned home with Calandina unto his owne loufe, whereinto he entering very faintly, hee faid to his wife : Woman, make my bed presently ready, for I kele my felfe to be growne extreamely ficke, and fee hat thou layest cloathes enow upon mee. Being thus laide in his bed, they left him for that night, and returand to visite him againe the very next morning, by which time, hee had made a refervation of his water, and feut it by a young Damofell unto Master Doctor, who dwelt then in the old market place, at the figne of the Muske Mellone. Then faid Brune unto his Compaaions; Abide you here to keepe him company, and I orc will walke along to the Phyfitian, to understand what had lewill fay: and if neede be, I can procure him to come ock- lither with me. Calandrino very kindely accepted his any offer, faying withall, Well Bruno, thou shewest thy selfe gth. afriend in the time of necessitie, I pray thee know of on- him, how the cafe ftand, with mee, for I feele a very this trange alteration within mee, farre beyond all comlow paffe of my conceit.

Brune

Bruno being gone to the Physitian, hee made such expedition, that hee arrived there before the Damolell, who carried the water, and informed Mafter Simon with the whole tricke intended : wherefore, when the Damosell was come, and he had passed his judgement concerning the water, he faid to her.

Maide, goe home againe, and tell Calandrino, that he must keepe himself very warme : and I my selfe will instantly be with him, to instruct him further in the qua.

litic of his fick neffe.

The Damofell delivered her meffage accordingly, and it was not long before Mafter Doftor Simon came, with Brune also in his company, and sitting downe on the beds fide by Calandrino, he began to tafte his pulle, and within a finall while after, his Wife being come into the chamber, he faid. Observe me well calandring, for I speake to thee in the nature of a true friend; thou half no other difeafe, but onely thou art great with child.

So soone as Calandrino heard these words, in despair ring manner hee began to rage, and cry out aloud, faying to his wife. Ah thou wicked woman, this is long of thee, and thou hast done me this mischiefe: for alwayes chou wile be upon me, ever railing at me, and fighting, matill thou haft gotten me under thee. Say thou divellish creature, doe I not tell thee true? The woman being of very honest and civill conversation, hearing her bufband speake so foolishly: blushing with shame, and hanging downe her head in bashfull manner; without returning any answer, went forth of her Chamber.

Calendrine continuing still in his angry humour, wringing his hands, and beating them upon his breft, faid : Wretched man that I am, What hall I doe? How shall I be delivered of this childe? Which way can it come from mee into the world? I plainely perceive, that I am none other then a dead man, and all through the wickednesse of my wife : heaven plague her with fo many mischiefes, as I am defirous to finde eale.

tin CCS hel

17

bec

ver Ail the : fpee

laug

neve

but !

mig beca ring requi hina 1 be un antivy your! ner, k shall fpace' of my Sir, fa Mocui hundr mine .

inthe fervin: Mafter felfe, f in that as que the gre Be of

Were

Were I now in as good health, as heretofore I have beene, I would rife out of my bed, and never cease beating her, untill I had broken her in a thousand peeces. But if Fortune will be fo favourable to mee, as to helpe me out of this dangerous agony : hang me, if ever the get mee under her againe, or make me fuch an Aile, in having the maftery over mee, as divers times the hath done.

Bruno, Buffalmaco and Nello, hearing thefe raving foreches of Calandrino, were fwollen fo bigge with laughter, as if their ribbes would have burft in funders nevertheleffe, they abkained fo well as they were able; but Doctor Simon gaped fo wide with laughing, 25 one might eafily have pluckt out all his teeth. In the end, because he could tarry there no longer, but was prepating to depart : Calanarino thanked him for his paines, requefting that he would be carefull of him, in aiding him with his best advise and counfell, and he would not be unmindefull of him. Honest neighbour Calandrino, answered the Physitian, I would not have you torment your felfe, in fuch an impatient and tempeftuous manner, because I perceive the time fo to haften on, as we hall soone perceive (and that within very few dayes fpace) your health well reftored, and without the feafe of much paine ; but indeede it will coft expences. Alas Sir, faid Calandrino, make not any spare of my purse, to mocure that I may have fafe deliverance. I have two hundred Florines lately falme to mee by the dearn of mine Aunt, wherewith I intended to purchase a Farme in the Countrey: take them all if neede be, onely referving some few for my lying in Child-bed And then Mafter Doctor, Alas, I know not how to behave my felfe, for I have heard the grievous complaint of women in that case, oppressed with bitter pangs and throwes a a queftionleffe they will be my death, except you have the greater care of me.

d

.

1

A

of

23

h.

of

af-

nd

210

m,

cft,

PV0

1 it

er•

all

her

264

Vere

Be of good cheere neighbour Calandrino, replied Doctor

The Ninth Day. Novell.3.

Doctor Simon, I will provide an excellent diffelled drink for you, maryelloully pleasing in taste, and of fovegaigne vertue, which will refolve all in three mornings, making you as whole and as found as a Fifth newly fpawned. But you must have an especiall care afterward, being providently wife, least you fall into the like follies againe. Concerning the preparation of this precious drinke, halfe a dozen of Capons, the very fairest and farteft, I must make use of in the distillation : what other things thall be imployed befide, you may deliver tortie Florines to one of these your honest friends, to see all the necessaries bought, and sent me home to my house. Concerning my businesse, make you no doubt thereof, for I will have all distilled against to morrow, and then doe you drinke a great Glasse full every morning, fresh and fasting next your heart. Colandrino was highly pleased withhis words, returning Master Doctor infinite thankes, and referring all to his disposing. And having given fortie Florines to Brune, with other moncy belide, to buy the halfe dozen of Capons: hee thought himselfe greatly beholding to them all, and protested to requite their kindnesse.

Master Doctor being gone home to his house, made ready a bottell of very excellent Hypocraffe, which hee fent the next day according to his promise : and Bruno having bought the Capons, with other junkets fit for the turne, the Phylitian and his merrie Companions, fed on them heartily for the givers lake. As for Calandring, he liked his diet drinke excellently well; quaffing a large Glaffefull off three mornings together: afterward Mafter Doctor and the reft came to fee him, and having felt his pulle, the Phylitian faid. Calandrino, thou art now as found in health, as any man in all Florence san be : thou needest not to keepe within doores any longer, but walke abroad boldly, for all is well, and the shild is cone.

Celendrino arofe like a joyfull man, and walked daily through

weake circum gined

Fratu

Queen

dies, if

to ma parant

would with a

m

through the streets, in the performance of such affaires as belonged to him; and every acquaintance hee met withall, he told the condition of his sudden sickenesses and what a rare cure Master Doctor Simon had wrought on him, delivering him (in three dayes space) of a child, and without the feeling of any paine. Bruno, Buffalmaco, and Nello, were not a little jocond, for meeting so well with covetous Calandino: but how the wife liked the folly of her husband, I leave to the judgement of all good women.

France so Fortarigo, plaied away all shat hee had at Buonconvento, and likewise the money of Francesco Aniolsero being his Master. Then running after him in his shirt, and avouching that he had robbed him: he caused him to be taken by Pezants of the Countrey, cloathed himselfe in his Masters wearing garments, and (mounted on his horse) rode thence to Sienna; leaving Anioltiero in his shirt, and washing bare-footed.

The fourth Novell.

de

20

To

159

an-

ing

er-

and

hou

ence

any

d the

daily

ough

Serving as an admonition to all men, for taking Gamefters and Drunkards into their fervice.

The ridiculous words given by Calandrins to his wife, all the whole company laughed at: but Philo-fratus ceassing, Madam Neiphela (as it pleased the Queene to appoint) began to speake thus. Vertuous Ladies, if it were not more hard and more uneasse for men, to make good their understanding and vertue, than apparant publication of their disgrace and folly; many would not labour in vaine, to curbe in their idle speeches with a bridle, as you have manifestly observed by the weakewit of Calandrins. Who needed no such fantastick circumstance, to cure the strange disaste, which he imagined (by sottish persyations) to have: had he not been a bee

Novell.4. - The Ninth Day ;

beene so lavish of his tongue, and accusing his wife of overmastering him. Which maketh mee to remember a Novell, quite contrary to this last related, namely, that one man may strive to surmount another in malice; yet he to sustain the greater harme, that had (at the fift) the most advantage of his enemy, as I will pre-

Sently declare unto you.

There dwelt in Sienna, and not many yeares fince. two young men of equall age, both of them bearing the name of Francesco: but the one was descended of the Anistiero, and the other likewife of the Fortarigi; fo that they were commonly called Aniokiero, and Fertarigo, both Gentlemen, and well derived. Now, although in many other matters, their complexions did differ very much : Yet notwith flanding , they varied not in one bad qualitie, namely, too great neglect of their Fathers, which caused their more frequent conversation, as very familiar and respective friends. but Aniottiero (being a very goodly and faire conditioned young Gentleman) apparently perceiving, that hee sould not maintaine himselfe at Sienna, in such effate as he liked, and upon the pension allowed him by his Father, hearing allo, that at the Marquifate of Ancona. there lived the Popes Legare, a worthy Cardinail, his much indeared good Lord and friend : hee intended to go vifice him, as hoping to advance his fortunes by him.

Having acquainted his Father with this determinazion, he concluded with him, to have that from him in a moment which might supply his wants for many mounted honourably. And seeking for a servant needfary to attend on him, it chanced that Fortarigo hearing thereof, came presently to Aniolliero, intreating him in the best manner he could, to set him waite on him as his serving man, promising both durifull and diligent attendance; yet not to demand any other wages, but onely payment of his ordinary expences. Aniolliero

made

tai apt fici to the to ma

fent Be ning dine trave laide char, shoul ro fle his fo wher fit fo them mone covet.

Asia ready, for For began dranke ther, a

Saddle

he vve

yet lo

his pu

made him answer, that hee durst not give him entertainement, not in regard of his insufficiency, and unapinelle for service: but because he was a great Gamester, and divers times would be beaftly drunker whereto Fortarigo replied that hee would refraine from both these foule vices, and addict all his endevour wholly to please him, without taxation of any groffe errour; making such solemne vowes and protestations beside, as soone did conquer Aniolisms, and won his confent.

Being entred upon his journey, and arriving in a mor. ning at Buonconvento, there AnioHiero determined to dine, and afterward, finding the heate to be unfit for travell; he caused a bed to be prepared, wherein being laide to reft by the helpe of Fortarizo, hee gave him. charge, that after the heates violence was overpait, hee should not faile to call and awake him. While Anioliicro flept thus in his bed, Fortarigo, never remembring his folemne vowes and promifes: went to the Taverne. where having drunke fufficiently, and finding company fit for the purpole, hee fell to play at the Dice with them. In a very thort while, hee had not onely loft his money, but all the cloathes on his backe likewife, and covering to recover his loffes againe; naked in his thirt, he went to Aniellieroes Chamber, where finding him yet foundly fleeping, he tooke all the money he had in his purfe, and then returned blacke to play, speeding in the fame maner as he did before, not having one poore penny left him.

١.

-

1d

6

m

35

nt

390

era

de

Asiolliero chancing to awake, arole and made him ready, without any fervant to helpe him; then calling for Fortarigo, and not hearing any tydings of him: he began immediatly to imagine, that hee was become drunke, and so hee had falne asseep in one place or other, as very often hee was wonted doe. Wherefore, determining so to leave him, hee caused the Male and Saddle to be set on his horse, and so to surnish him-

PP3

felfe

felte with a more honeft fervant at Corfignano.

But when he came to pay his Hoste, he found not any penny left him: whereupon (as well he might) hee grew greatly offended, and raised much trouble in the house, charged the Hoasts people to have robde him, and threatening to have them sent as prisoners to Sienna. Suddenly entred Fortarige in his shirt, with intent to have stolne Aniollieroes garments, as formerly hee aid the money out of his purse, and seeing him ready to mount on horsebacke, he said.

How now Aniolitero? What shall wee goe away so soone? I pray you Sir tarrie a little while, for an honest man is comming hither, who hath my Doublet engaged for eight and thirtie shillings; and I am sure he will restore it mee backe for five and thirtie, if I could pre-

fently pay him downe the money.

During the speeches, an other entred among them, who affured Anioffiero, that Fortarigo was the Theefe which robde him of his money, thewing him also how much he had loft at the Dice : Wherewith Aniofliere being much moved, very angerly reproved Fortarige, and, but for feare of the Law, would have offered him outrage, threatning to have him hanged by the neeke, or else condemned to the Gallies belonging to Florence, and fo mounted on horsebacke. Fortarigo making show to the ftanders by, as if Aniolliero menaced fome other body, and not him, faid. Come Anio Riere, I pray thee let us leave this frivolous prating, for (indecde) it is not worth a Button, and minde a matter of more importance: my Doublet will be had againe for five and thirty shillings, if the money may be tendred downe at this very infant, whereas if wee deferre it till to morrow, perhaps he will have the whole eight and thirtie which he lent mee, and he doth me this pleasure, because I am ready (at another time) to affoord him the like courtefie; why should wee loofe three shillings, when they maybe fo eafily faved?

AnioNiere

€:

th

ch

hi

w:

vif.

ou

his

Aniolliero hearing hearing him speake in such confufed manner, and perceiving alfo, that they which flood gazing by, beleeved (as by their lookes appeared) that Fortarigo had not placed his Mafters money at the dice, but rather that he had some stocke of Fortarigoes in his cuffody; angerly answered; Thou savvey companion, what have I to do with thy Doublet? I would thou were hangd, not onely for playing away my money, but also by delaying thus my journey, and yet boldly thou frandest out facing me, as if I were no better than thy fellow. Fortarigo held on ftill his former behaviour, without using any respect and reverence to Aniolliero; as if all the acculations did not concerne him, but faying, Why should not wee take the advantage of three shilling s profit? Thinkest thou that I am not able to doe as much for thee ? Why, lay out so much money for my fake, and make no more hafte than needes we muft, becanse wee have day-light enough to bring us (before night) to Torreniero. Come, draw thy purse, and pay the money, for upon mine honest word, I may enquire throughout all Sienna, and yet not finde fuch another Doublet as this of mine is. To fay then, that I thould leave it, where it now lieth pawned, and for eight and thirtie shillings, when it is richly more worth than fiftie, I am fure I shall fuffer, a double endammagement thereby.

You may well imagine, that Aniolliero was now enraged beyond all patience, to see himselfe both robde of his money, and over-borne with presumptuous language; wherefore, without making any more replications, he gave the spurre to his horse, and rode away towards Torreniero. Now sell Fortarigo into a more knavish intention against Aniolliero, and being very speedy in tunning, followed apace after him in his shirt, crying out still aloude to him all the way, to let him have his Doublet againe. Aniolliero riding on very sast, to free his cares from this idle importunity, it fortuned that

ic

y

it

d

ıt

ie

16

5,

PP 4

Fortarigo

Fortarigo espied divers country Pezants, labouring in the fields about thei businesse, and by whom Autoliters (of necessity) must pase: To them hee cried out so loude as he could; Stay the Thiese, Stop the Thiese, he

rides away fo fast having robde me.

They being provided, some with Pronges, Pitchforkes and Spades, and others with the like weapons at for Husbandry, stept into the way before Aniolliero: and beleeving undoubtedly, that hee had robde the man which pursued him in his shirt, staied and apprehended him. Whatsoever Aniolliero could doe or say, prevailed not any thing with the unmannerly Clownes, but when Forlaries was arrived among them, hee bra-

ved Aniolliero most impudently, faying.

What reason have I to spoile thy life (thou traitero us Villaine) to rob and spoile thy Master thus on the high way? Then turning to the Countrey Boores: How much deere friends (quoth he) am I beholding to you for this unexpected kindenesse? You behold in what manner he left me in my Lodging, having first placed away all my money at the Dice, and then deceiving me of my horse and garments also: but had not you (by great good lucke) thus holpe me to stay him; a poore Conteman had beene undone for ever, and I should never have found him againe.

Anialiero avouched the truth of his wrong received, but the base Pezants, giving credite onely to Fortari-gees lying exclamations: tooke him from his horse, despoyled him of all his wearing apparell, even to the very Bootes from off his Legges: suffered him to ride avoy in that manner, and Anialiero lest so in his shirts, to dance a bare-sooted Galliard after him, either to-

gyard Sienna, or any place elfe.

Thus Anioliero, purpofing to visite his Cousin the Cardinall like a Gallant, and at the Marquisate of Ancona, returned backe poorely in his shirt unto Buonconvento, and durft not (for shame) repaire to Sienna. In

elic

en

w!

K

the

of

aft

turn

her

feda

DICH

can

ted v

Lad

duc

there

(aim

the end, he borrowed money on the other horse which Fortarigo rode on, and remained there in the Inne, whence riding to Corsignano, where hee had divers Kinsinen and Friends, he continued there so long with them, till he was better furnished from his Father.

Thus you may perceive, that the cunning Villanies of Fortarigo, hindered the honest intended enterprise of Aniolliero, howbeir in fit time and place, nothing

afterward was left unpunished.

e

it

e

.

U

Calandrino became extraordinarily enamoured of a young Domo fell, named Nicholetta. Bruno prepared a charme or writing for him, avenching confrantly to him, that fo foome as hee touched the Damo fell therewith, finea froutd follow him, whither fover hee would have her. She heing gone to an appointed place with him, he was found there by his wife, and dealt withall according to his deferving.

The fifth Novell.

in just reprehension of those vaine-headed fooles, that are ied and governed by idle personafions.

Decause the Novell reported by Madam Neiphilavras Dio soone concluded, without much laughter, or commendation of the whole Company: the Queene turned her selfe towards Madam Fiammetra, enjoyning her to succeede in apt order; and she being as ready as sedantly commanded, began as followeth. Most gracious Ladies, I am perswaded of your opinion in judgement with mine, that there is not anything, which can be spoken pleasingly, except it be conveniently suited with apt time and place: in which respect, when Ladies and Gentlewomen are bent to discoursing, the due election of them both are necessarily required. And therefore I am not unmindefull, that our meeting here saming at nothing more, than to out-weare the time

The Ninth Day, Novelle:

with our generall contentment) should tye us to the course of our pleasure and recreation, to the same conveniencie of time and place; not sparing, though some have bin nominated oftentimes in our passed argumets; yet if occasion serve, and the nature of varietie be well confidered, we may speake of the felfesame persons a-

gaine.

Now notwithstanding the actions of Calandrine have beene indifferently canvazed among us ; yet, remembring what Philoftratus not long fince faid, That they intended to nothing more than matter of mirth: I presume the bolder, to report an other Novell of him, befide them already past. And, were I willing to conceale the truth, and cloath it in more circumstantiall maner I could make use of contrary names, and paint it in a Poeticall fiction, perhaps more probable, though not so pleasing. But because wandring from the truth of things, doth much diminish (in relation) the delight of the hearers : I will build boldly on my fore-alledged reason, and tell you truly how it hapned.

Nicchelae Cornacchini was once a Citizen of ours, and a man of great wealth; who, among other his rich policifions in Camerata, builded there a very goodly house, which being perfectly ready for painting: hee compounded with Brune and Buffalmaco, who because their worke required more helpe than their owne, they drew Nello and Calandrino into their affociation, and began to proceede in their bufineffe. And because there was a Chamber or two, having old moveables in them, as Bedding, Tables, and other Housholdstuffe beside, which were in the cuftody of an old woman that kept the house, without the helpe of any other servant else;a Son unto Niccholao, being named Phillippo, resorted thither divers times, with one or other pretty Damolell in his company (in regard he was unmarried) where hee would abide a day or two with ber, and then con-

vey her home againe.

n

W

CO

la:

m

th

hi

ca!

his

10

left

(w

bo.

bre

for

lov

lips

her

puf

aln

me

Wh

At one time among the reft, it chanced that he brought a Damosell thither named Nicholetta, who was maintained by a wily companion, called Magione, in a dwelling which he had at Camaldoti, and (indeede) no honester than she should be. She was a very beautifull yong weman, wearing garments of great value, and (according to her quality) well spoken, and of commendable carriage. Comming forth of her Chamber one day, covered with a white veile, because her haire hung loofe about her, which the wene to wath at a Well in the middie Court, bathing there also her face and hands ; Ca. landrine going (by chance) to the fame Well for water, gave her a fecret falutation. She kindely returning the like courtefie to him, began to observe him advisedly : more, because hee looked like a man newly come thither, than any great handsomnesse shee perceived in him.

Calandrino threw wanton glances at her, and feeing the was both faire and lovely, began to finde fome occasion of tarrying, so that he returned not with water to his other aflociates, yet neither knowingher, or daring to deliver one word. She, who was not to learne her lesson in alluring, noting what affectionate regards (with bathfulnesse) hee gave her: answered him more beldly with the like; but meerely in scorning manner, breathing forth divers dissembling fighes among them: so that Calandrino became foolishly inveigled with her love, and would not depart out of the Court, untill Phillippo, standing above in the Chamber window called her thence.

G

id

A,

d

II

re

1-

When Calandrino was returned back to his bufinesse, he could doe nothing else, but shake the head, sigh, pusse, and blowe, which being observed by Bruno (who alwayes sitted him according to his folly, as making a meere mockery of his best behaviour) sodainly he sud. Why how now Calandrino? Sigh, pusse, and blow man? What may be the reason of these unwonted qualities?

Calandrino immediatly answered, saying: My friendly companion Bruno, if I had one to lend me a little help, I should very quickly become well enough. How?quoth Bruno, doth any thing offend thee, and wilt thou not reveale it to thy friends? Deare Bruno, said Calandrino, there is a proper handsome woman here in the house, the goodliest creature that ever any eye beheld, much faiter than the Queene of Faires her selfe, who is so deepely salne in love with mee, as thou wouldest thinke it no lesse than a wonder; and yet I never saw her before, till yer while when I was sent to fetch water. A very strange case, answered Bruno, take heede Calandrino, that she be not the lovely stiend to Phillippo, our young Master, for then it may prove a dangerous matter, and

it will not goe unpunified.

Calandrizo flood ferarching his head an indifferent while, and then fodainely replied thus, Now trust mee Bruno, it is to be doubted, because hee called her at his window, and the immediatly went up to his Chamber, But what doe I care if it be for Have not the gods themfelves beene beguiled of their Wenches, who were better men than ever Phillippo can be, and shall I stand in feare of him ? Bruno replied : Be patient Calandrino , I will enquire what Woman shee is, and if she be not the wife or friend to our youg Mafter Phillippo, with faire perswasions I can over-rule the matter; because the is a familiar acquaintance of mine. But how hall wee doe, that Buffalmaio may not know hereof? I can never speake to her if hee be in my company. For Buffalmaca (quoth Colandrine) I have no feare at all, but rather of Nelle, because he is a neere Kiniman to my wife , and he is able to undoe mee quite, if once it fhould come to his hearing. Thou faift well, replied Brune, therefore the matter bath neede to be very cleanely carried.

Now let meetell you, the woman was well enough known to Brane, as also her quality of life, which Philsippe had acquainted him withall, and the reason of her

referring

ein

w

1010

the

th:

fee

01

bul

unt

lan

lier

tho

ofh

to C

ofI

the

the s

ry.

beha

Firft

sell h

which

Nex

mane

ently

work

there

to exp

Colons

reforting thither, Wherefore, Calandrino going forth of the roome where they wrought, onely to gaine andther fight of Nicheletta, Bruno revealed the whole hiftory to Buffalmaco and Nello; they all concluding together, how this amorous fit of the foole flould be followed. And when Calandrino was returned backe againe; in whifpering maner Bruno faid to him. Hafte thou once more feenher? Yes, yes Bruno, answered Calandrino: Alas the hath flaine me with her very eye, and I am no better than a dead man. Be patient faid Bruco. I will goe and fee whether he be the fame woman which I take her for or no: and if it proove fo, chen never feare, but refer the

bufines unto me.

.

I

c

e 2

, r

.

£

d

0

e

h

-

ı

g

Fruno descending downe the flaires, found Philippo and Nicholletta in conference together, and Repping unto them, discoursed at large, what manner of man Car landring was, and how farre he was falne in love with her : so that they made a merry conclusion, what shold be performed in this case, only to make a pastime of his hot begun love. And being come backe againe to Calandrino, bee faide. It is the fame woman whereof I told thee, and therefore we must worke wisely in the businesse: for if Philippo perceive any thing, all the water in Arno will hardly ferve to quench his fury. But what wouldst then have me fay to her on thy behalfe, if I compate the meane to speake with her? First of all (quoth Calandrine) and in the prime place. tell her, that I with infinite bufhels of those bleffings. which makes Maydes Mothers, and begetteth children. Next, that I am only hers, in any fervice the will command me. Doft thou understand me what I fay? Sufficiently answered Bruno, leave all to me.

When supper time was come, that they gave over working, and were descended downe into the Courts there they found Philippo & Nicholetta readily attending to expect some beginning of amourous behaviour, and Columbring glanced fuch kering lookes at her coughing

and spetting with hummes and haes, in such close and fecret manner, that a starke blinde fight might very ea-

1

y

m

te:

m

lin

Ca

the

gin

hac

him

plai

din

fani

ther

Cou

(334

dior

own

deliv

ablen

her)

fry have perceived it.

She also on the other side, returned him such queint and cunning carriage, as entlamed him farr more surjoully, even as if he were ready to leape out of himselfe. In the meane while, Phillippo, Buffalmaco, and the rest that were there present, seeming as if they were scriously consulting together, and perceived nothing of his fantasticke behaviour, according as Bruno had appointed, could scarse refraine from extremity of laughter, they noted such antick trickes in Calandrino.

Having spent an indifferent space in this soppish folly, the houre of parting came, but not without wonderfull affliction to Calandrino; and as they were going towards Florence, Bruno said closely to Calandrino, I date afflire thee; that thou hast made her to consume and melt, even like ice against the warme Sunne. On my word, if thou wouldst bring thy Gitterne, and sit down by us, singing some few amorous songs of them owne making, when we are beneath about our businessee in the Court: she would presently leape out of the window, as

being unable to tarry from thee.

I like thy counfell well Brune , answered Calandrine, but shall I bring my Gitterne indeede? Yes, in any case, replied Bruno, for Muficke is a matter of mighty prevailing. Ah Brune (quoth Calandrine) thou wouldest not credit mee in the morning, when I told thee, how the very fight of my person had wounded her: I perceived it at the very first looke of her owne, for thee had no power to conceale it. Who but my felfe could fo foone have enflamed her affection, and being a woman of such worth and beauty as the is? There are infinit proper handsome fellowes, that daily haunt the company of daintie Damosels, yet are so shallow in the affaires of love, as they are not able to winne one wench of a thousand, no, with all the wit they have fuch is their extreme folly and ill forsune. Then

Then paufing a while, and sodainely rapping out a Lovers oath or two, thus hee proceeded. My dearest Bruno, thou shalt see how I can tickle my Gitterne, and what good sport will ensue thereon. If thou dost observe mee with judgement; why man, I am not so old as I seeme to be, and she could perceive it at the very view; yea, and she shall finde it so too, when we have leisure to consult upon surther occasions: I sinde my selfe in such a free and frolicke jocunditie of spirit, that I will make her to follow me, even as a fond woman doth after her child.

But beware, said Brano, that thou doe not gripe her over-hard, and in kissing, be carefull of biting, because the teeth stand in thy head like the pegges of a Lute, yet make a comely shew in thy saire wide mouth, thy checkes looking like two of our artificiall Roses, swelling amiably, when thy jawes are well fild with meats. Calandrino hearing these handsome commendations, thought himselfe a man of action already, going, singing, and frisking before his company so lively, as if he

had not beene in his skin.

-

.

e

bi

y

n

he

23

0,

le,

21-

not

the

ved

no

one

-010

any

of a

pen ex-

On the morrow, carrying his Gitterne thither with him, to no little delight of his companions , her both . plaied and fung a whole Bed-role of Songs, not addithing himselfe to any worke all the day : but lokering fantastically, one while he gazed out of the window, then ran to the gate, and oftentimes downe into the Court, onely to have a fight of his Miffresse. Shee also (as cunningly) encountred all his follies, by fuch direcions as Bruno gave her, and many more befide of her owne deviling, to quicken him fill with new occasions : Bruno plaid the Ambaffadour betweene them, in delivering the meffages from Calandrino, and then returning her answers to him. Sometimes when thee was absent thence (which often hapned as occasions called her)then he wold write letters in her name, and bring them, as if they were feat by her, to give him hope et

W

what he defired, but because shee was then among her Kindred, yet thee could not possibly be unmindfull of

In this manner, Brano and Buffalmaco (who had the managing of this bufineffe) made a meere Gregory of poore Calandrino, caufing him fometimes to fend her, one while a pretty peece of Ivory, then a faire wrought purie, and a coffly paire of knives, with other fuch like. friendly tokens : bringing him backe againe, as in requitall of them, counterfeited Rings of no valery, bugles and bables, which he efteemed as matters of great mement. Moreover, at divers close and sodaine meetings, they made him pay for many dinners and suppers, amounting to indifferent charges, onely to be carefull in the furtherance of his love-fuite, and to conceale it

from his wife.

Having worne our three or foure months space in this fond and frivolous manner, without any other successe than as hath beene declared ; and Calandrino perceiving, that the worke undertaken by him and his fellowes, grew very neere upon the finishing, which would barre him of any longer reforting thicher; hee began to solicite Brune more importunately, than all the while before he had done. In regard whereof, Nienoletta being one day come thither, and Bruno having conferred both with her & Phillippe, with full determimation what was to be done, hee began with Calandri-20, faying. My honest Neighbour and loving Friend, this Woman hath made more than a thousand promifes, to grant what thou art fo defirous to have, and I plainely now perceive, that thee hath no fuch intent or meaning, but mecerely plaies with both our nofes? In which respect, secing shee is so perfidious, and unconstant, and will not performe one of all her faithfull made promifes : if thou wilt confent to have it fo, thee thall be compelled to doe it whether thee will or no. Yea marry Brune, aplivered Colondrine, that were an execulent

for fai har the pre

Wit cen wh RCX mal laft als . Cha men land lyup with diarl to co Walk

falute ingh barne ning; fery o her b Heave on tip Warra

NeR 23 dee ward: excellent course indeede, if it could be done, and with

expedition.

1

Brune Road mufing awhile to himfelfe, as if hee had fome ftrange ftratagem in his braine, and afterward faid. Haft thou fo much courage Calandrine, as but to handle a peece of written parchment, which I will give thee? Yes, that I have, answered Calaudrino, I hope that needed not to be doubted. Well then, faid Bruno, procure that I may have a piece of Virgin Parchment with a living Bat or Reremonfe; three graines of Incenfe, and an hallowed Candle, then leave me to effect what hall content thre. Calandrino watched all the next night following, with fuch preparation as he could make, onely to catch a Bat; which being taken at the laft, he brought it alive to Brano (with all the materials appointed:) who taking him alone into a backer Chamber, there he wrote divers follies on the Parchment, in the shape of strange and unusual Charracters, which he delivered to Calandrino, faying: Be bold calandrine, and of a couragious spirit, and build conflantly upon my words, that if thou canst but touch her with this facred Charra Gered charme, the will immediarly follow thee, and fulfill whatfoever thou pleafeft to command her. Wherefore, if Phillippo doe this day walke any whither abroad from this house, presume to falute her, in any manner whatfoever it be, and touch ing her with the written lines, goe prefently to the barne of hay, which thou perceivest so neere adjoyning; the onely conveniant place that can be, because few or none refort thither. Shee shall (in despight of her bloud) follow thee; and when thou haft her there, Heave thee then to thy valiant victory. Calandrino flood on tiptoe, like a man newly molded by Fortune, and warranted Brune to fulfill all effectually.

Mello, whom Calandrine most of all feared, had a hand as deepe as any of the rest in this decrit, and was as foreward also to have it performed, by Bruness direction,

Novelle: The Ninth Day.

he went unto Fiorence, where being in company with Calandrinoes Wife, thus he began.

Couffn, thirre unkinde usage by thine husband, is not unknowne to me how he did beate thee, / beyond the compaffe of all reason) when he brought home stones from the plaine of Mugnone, in which regard, I am very defirous to have thee revenged on him; which if thou wilt not do neverrepute me hereafter for thy Kinfman and Friend. He is falne in love with a Woman of the common gender, one that is to be hired for money:he hath his private meetings with her, and the place is partly knowne to me, as by a secret appointment (made very lately) I am credibly given to understand; wherefore walke prefently along with me, and thou shalt take him

in the heate of his knavery.

All the while as these words were uttering to her, shee could not diffemble her inward impatience, but flarting up as halfe franticke with fury, the faid. O notorious villaine! Dareft thou abuse thine honest wife so basely? I Iweare by bleffed Saint Bridges, thou fhalt be paid with dious come of thine owne stampe. So casting a light wearing or, so Cloak about her, and taking a yong woman in her com- the de pany; the went away with Nello in no meane hafte. Biu- me hi no leging her comming a farre off, faide to Phillippo:you much Sir, you know what is to be done, act your part accor Bru ding to your appointment. Phillippo went immediately behin into the roome, where Calandrino and his other Con tous of forts were at worke, and faid to them. Honest friends, tage, a have certaine occasions which command mine insta wife at being at Florence: worke hard while I am absent, and sholest will not be unthankfull for it. Away he departed from where them, and hid himselse in a convenient place where is surjour could not be described, yet see whatsoever Calandrino dispituiful who when he imagined Phillippo to be farre enough of som he descended downe into the Court, where he found Nattomy cho'esta sitting alone, and going towards her, begansat your enter into discourfing with her. An old

h

M

VO

Pa

fir

Ba

ing

222

din

tho

tak

kiffe

his !

land

hear

And

doft

rare

36

36

ts

ilt

nd

m-

th

rly

ery

ore

aim

hee

y ? 1

head.

Shee knowing what remained to be done on her behalie, drew somewhat neere him, and shewed her selfe more familiar then formerly the had done: by which favourable meanes, hee touched her with the charmed Parchment, which was no fooner done; but without ufing any other kinde of language, he went to the hay-Barne, whither Ntchelletta followed him, and both being entred, hee closed the Barne doore, and then flood gazing on her, as if he had never feene her before. Standing ftill as in a ftudy, or bethinking himfelfe what he thould fay: the began to use affable gefture to him, and taking him by the hand, made they as if thee meant to kiffe him, which yet the refrained, though he (rather then his life) would gladly have it. Why how now deare Calandrino (quoth the) jewell of my joy, comfort of my heart, how many times have I longed for thy company? ting And enjoying it now, according to mine owne defire, wile doft thou frand like a Statue, or man alls morte? The rare tunes of the Gitterne, but (much more) the melowith dious accents of thy voyce, excelling Orpheus or Amphiring or, fo ravished my foule, as I know not how to expresse om- the depth of mine affection; and yet haft thou brought Bill me hither, onely to looke babies in mine eyes, and not lo auch as speake one kind word to me?

ccor Bruno, and Buffalmaco, having hid themselves close stell behind Philippo, they both heard and fave all this amo-Contous conflie, and as Calardrino was quickning his cous nds. rage, and wiping his mouth, with intent to kiffe her : his aftar wife and Netto entred into the Barne, which caused Niand choletta to get her gone presently, shekring her selfe from where Philippolay scouting, But the enraged woman range in the surface with her nailes, and tearing the hair of pittifull massacre with her nailes, and tearing the hair of from his head, as he meerely looked like an infected Anatomy. Fowle loaths ome dog (quoth she) must you be gant to your minions, and leave me hungerstarved at home? An old knave with almost never a good tooth in thy shead,

The Ninth Day. Nevell.

head, and yet art thou neighing after young wenches) haft thou not worke enough at bome, but muft be gadding into other mens grounds? Are thefe the fruites of

wandring abroad?

Calandrine being in this pittifull perplexity, food like one neither alive nor dead, nor daring to use any refi-Stance again@ her; but fell on his knees before his wife, holding up his hands for mercy, and entreating her/fer charities fake) not to torment him any more: for he had committed no harme at all, and the Gentlewoman was his Mafters Wife, who came with no fuch intent thither as the fondly imagined. Wife, or wife nor (quoth the) I would have none to meddle with my Husband, but I that have the most right to him.

Brune and Buffalmaco, who had laughed al this while heartily at this pastime, with Philippo and Nicholetta; came running in haft to know the reason of this loud noyle, and after they had pacified the woman with gentle persyalions: they advised Calendrino, to walke with his Wife to Florence and returne no more to work there againe, least Philippo hearing what had hapned, should be revenged on him with fome outrage. Thus poore Calandine milerably missied and beaten, went home to Florence with his wife, scoulded and raild at al the way, befide his other moleftations (day and night)afterward; his Companions, Philippo and Nicholetta, making hemfelves merry at his misfortune.

wher lys

lan

vil mong

gener

Pampi ging t lo fon a No pole to fuddet mean On

long f

Or Of flende 1 poo ccit o luch a boffe. whon maide

not fu breft. Ac rems diver much tune

o you

Two your Gentlemen, the one named Panuccio, and the ther Adriano; lodged one night in a poore Inne, where ont of them went to bed to the Holes Daughter, and the other (by miftaking his way in the darke) to the Hoftes Mife. He which lay with the daughter, happened afterward to the Hofts bed, and told him what he had done, as thinking be fake to bis own companion. Difcontent. ment growing between them, the Mother perceiving her

governed by Madam Amilia. 18:

errour, went to bed to her daughter, and with discreete language, made a generall pacification.

The Sixt Nevell.

of

10

ad

25

rol I

t I

ile

35

ud

n-

ich

-0

Res

rer-

me,

nt.

let at.

the Wherein is manifested that an offence committed ignorantity and by mist aking sought to be covered with good adity, and civill discretion.

Alandrino, whose mishaps had so many times made the whole assembly merry, and this last passing among them with indifferent commendations: upon a generall silence commanded, the Queene gave order to Pamphilus, that he thold follow, as indeed he did, beginning thus. Praise-worthy Ladies, the name of Nicoletta, so fondly affected by Calandrino, putteth me imminde of a Novell, concerning another Nicoletta, of whom I purpose to speake: to the end you may observe how by a sidden wary foresight, a discreet woman compassed the meanes to avoyde a notorious scandall.

On the plaine of Mugnone, necre to Florence, dweit (not ere long fince) an honest meane man, who kept a poore Inne nld or Offery for travellers, where they might have fome C4-Render entertainement for their money. As he was but 07 spoore man, so his house affoorded but very small re-24 cit of guefts, not ledging any but of necessity, and rd: ing such as he had some knowledge of. This honest poore hofte had a woman (futficiently faire) to his wife, by whom he had also two children, the one a comely your maiden, aged about afreene yeares, and the other a fon, not fully (as yet) a yeare old, and fucking on the mothers 20 280 breft.

A comely youthfull gentleman of our Citty, became amorously affected to the Damosell, resorting thicker divers times as he travelled on the way to express hwe much he did respect her. And the accounting her fortune none of the meanest, that she should be beloved by so youthful a Gallant, declared such vertuous and modest

demea-

demeanour, as might deserve his best opinion of herefo that their love grew to an equall fimpathy, and mutuall concentment of them both, in expectation of further effects; he being named Paruccio and the Nicel. letta.

The heate of affection thus encreasing day by day, Panuccio grew exceedingly defirous to enjoy the fruits of his long continued liking, and divers deviles muffred in his braine, how he might compass one nights lodging in her father house, whereof hee knew every part and parcellas not doubting to effect what he defired yet un-

discovered by any, but the mayd her felfe.

According as his intention aimed, to he longing to put it in execution, and having imparted his mind to an honest loyal friend, named Adriane, who was acquainted with the course of his love: hyring two horses, and having Portmantues behind them, filled with matters of no moment, they departed from Florence, as if they had Some great journey to ryde. Having spent the day time where themselves best pleased, darke night being entred, they arrived on the plaine of Mugnone, where, as if they were come from the parts of Remanio, they rode direct. ly to this poore Inne and knocking at the doore, the honest Holle (being familiar and friendly to all commers) open'd the doore, when Panuccio spak in this manner to him. Good man, we must request one nights lodging with you, for we thought to have reached fo far as Florence, but darke night preventing us, you fee at what a late houre we are come hither. Signior Panuccio, an-Iwered the hofte, it is not unknowne to you, how valitting my poore house is, for entertaining such guests as you are : Neverthelette, seeing you are overtaken by to about unreasonable an houre, and no other place is neere the da for your receive; I will gladly lodge you so well as I where can.

When they were dismounted from their horses, and fee it b cutted into the simple Inne; having taken order for fee- fineffe ding

dig

ola

Wi

Con:

23

ita

bot

har

thr

in t

not

con

felfe

flic 1

Cra

caul

it,fh

Po

man

he in

and i

by he

firft,

him

ted.

maid

the h

great

eut a

the p

1000

y . WI

1.

1,

ts ed

ng

nd

n-

ut

0-

ted

ha-

of

aad

me

red,

her

eft-

the

om.

nan-

lod-

15 25 striv

an-

nlit-

ts 25

ding

never

ding their horfes, they accepted fuch provision as the place and time afforded, requesting the Hoste to Suppe with them. Now I am totell you, that there was but one inall Chamber in the house, wherein Rood three beds. asbelt the Hofte had devised to place them, two of them standing by the walles side, and the third fronting them both, but with such close and narrow paffage, as very hardly, could one step betweene them. The best of thele three beds was appointed for the Gentlemen, and therin theyd lay them downe to reft, but fleepe they could not, albeit they diffembled it very formally. In the fecond Bed was Nicho'etta the daughter, lodged by her felfe, and the father and mother in the third, and because he was to give the Child fucke in the night time, the Cradle (wherein it lay) flood close by their beds fide, because the childs crying or any other occasion concerning it, should not disquiet the Gentlemen.

Pannecio having subtilly observed all this and in what manner they went to bed; after fuch a space of time, as he imagined them to be all affeepe, he arofe very foftly, and flealing to the bed of Nicholetta, lay downe gently by her. And albeit thee feemed fomewhat afraid at the first, yet when the perceived who it was, the rather bad him welcome, then thewed her felfe any way discontented. Now while Panuccio continued thus with the maide, it fortuned that a Cat threw downe somewhat in the house, the noise wherof awaked the wife, and fearing greater harme, than (indeed) had hapned, the arole without a Candle, and went groping in the darke, towards the place where the heard the noyle. Adriano, who had no other meaning but well, found occasion also to rife by fo about fome naturall necessity, and making his passage in neere the darke, flumbling on the childes Cradle (in the way) asl where the woman had fet it, and being unable to paffe by without removing it from the place: tooke it and and fee it by his owne beds fide, and having done the burice- fineffe for which he role, returning to his bed againe,

never remembring to fee the Cradle where first he found it.

The Wife having found the thing throwne downe, being of no value or moment, cared not for lighting any candle; but rating the Cat , returned backe, feeling for the bed where her Husband lay, but finding notthe Cradle there, the faide to her felfe. What a foolish wo. man am I, that cannot weil tell my felfe what I doe? In fread of my Husbands bed, I am going to both my

gueits.

So, stepping on a little further, the found the childes Cradle, and laid her selfe downe by Adriano, thinking the had gone right to her Husband. Adriano being not Husb as yet faine alleepe, feeling the hostesse in bed with him, our C tooke advantag of so faire an occasion offered, and what he did is no busines of mine, (as I heard) neither found the woman any fault. Matters comming to passe in this ftrange maner, and Panuccio fearing, left fleepe feazing hight on him he might difference the maides reputation: taking The his kinde farewell of her, with many killes and fivects warre imbraces; returned againe to his owne bed, but meeting as a with the Cradle in his way, and thinking it stood by the where hostes bed, (as truely it did so at the first) went backe morn from the Cradle, and stept into the hosts Bed indeed, into or who awaked upon his very entrance, albeit he stept verteents ry foundly before. nit,re

Panuccio supposing that he was laid downe by his lasough
wing friend Adriano, merrily saide to the host. I proved the to
to thee, as I am a Gentleman, Nicholetta is a dainty de
licate wench, and worthy to be a very good mans wife:

18th friend both rethis night she hath given me the sweetest entertaine both rethere. ment, as the best Prince in the world can wish no bet ad bea ter, and I have kift her mott kindely for it. The Holl Nich hearing these newes, which seemed very unwelcome wentlen him; faide first to himfelfe : What makes fuch a divel anifest heere in my bed ? Afterward being more rashly angre tryet c than well advised, he faide to Panuccio, Canst thou martid me

Yaka

YAU thi

211

hay

as I O

men

ame quei

ner,

darf ning d

30

10

.

63

ny

es:

ng

101

m,

hat

Yaun

vaunt of fuch a monftrous villany? Or thinkest thou that heaven bath not due vengeance in flore, to requite all wicked deeds of darkenes ? If all should sleepe, yet I have courage sufficient to right my wrong, & yer as old as I am thou shalt be fure to find it.

Our amorous Panuccio being none of the wifeft yong men in the world, perceiving his errour; fought not to amend it, (as well he might have done) with fome queint straine of wit, carried in quicke and cleanly manner, but angerly answered. What I shall find that thou dark doe to me? am I any way afraid of thy threatnings? The Hofees imagining the was in bed with her Husband, faid to Adriano: Harke Husband, I thinke our Guefts are quarrelling together, I hope they will do no harme to one another. Adriant laughing outright, and salwered. Let them alone, and become friends againe this sthey fell out: perhaps they dranke too much yeftering right.

ring aight.

The woman perceiving that it was her husband that the warrelled, and diftinguishing the voyce of Adriano from ting is: knew prefently where the was, and with whom; the warrefore having wit at will, and defirous to cloud an acke from madvifedly committed, and with no willing condects from the felte: without returning any more words, but we telently the role, and taking the Cradle with the child hit, removed it thence to her daughters bed fide, alwished bough the had no light to helpe her, and afterward with the child hit to be do her, where (as if the were but newly alwed the called her Husband, to understand what wife agry speeches had past between him and Panuccio. The caire bott replied, saying. Didst thou not heare him wise, brag to be had beast, how he hath lyen this night with our daughters. How this high twith our daughter with lends; his he should say so, and beleeve me it is a divellanised by, for I am in bed with her my selle, and nedivelanifet lye, for I am in bed with her my felie, and neangry tryet closed mine eyes together, fince the first houre I u mainid me down: it is unmannerly done of him to fpeakit,

99

and you are little leffe than a logger-head, if you doe beleeve it. This proceedeth from your bibbing and fwilling vefternight, which (as it feemeth) maketh you to walke about the roome in your fleepe, dreaming of wonders in the night lealon: it were no great fin if you brake your necks, to teach you keepe a fairer quarter; and how commeth it to paffe, that Signior Panuceio could not keepe

himfelfe in his owne bed?

Adriano (on the other fide) perceiving how wifely the woman excused her owne shame and her daughters; to backe her in a busines so cunningly begun, he called to Panuscio, laying, Have not I told thee an hundred times, that thou are not fit to lye any where out of thine owne lodging?What a shame is this base impersection to thee, by riling and walking thus in the night time, according as thy dreames doe wantonly delude thee, and cause thee to forfake thy bed, telling nothing but lies and fables, yet avouching them for manifest truthes? Asfuredly this will procure no meane perill unto thee; Come hither, and keepe in thine owne bed for meere thame.

When the honest meaning Host heard, what his owne Wife and Adriano had confirmed : he was verily per-Swaded that Panuccio spake in a dreame all this while; And to make it the more constantly apparant, Panicia (being now growne wifer by others example) lay talking and blundering to himselfe, even as if dreames or perturbations of the minde did much molett him, with frange diffractions in franticke maner. Which the Hot perceiving, and compaffionating his cafe, as one mas hould doe anothers; he tooke him by the thoulders, joging and hunching him, faying Awake Signior Panucit and get you gone hence to your owne bed.

Panuccio, yawning and stretching out his limbs, with unufuall groanes and respirations, such as (better) could be hardly diffembled feeming to wake as out of a trance

and calling his Friend Adriano, faid.

Adrian

bez

Adriano, is it day, that thou doft waken me? It may be day or night replyed Adriano, for both (in these sits) are alske to thee. A rise man for shame, and come to thy lodging. Then faining to be much troubled and sleepy, he arose from the hoast, and went to Adrianoes bed.

When it was day and all in the house risen, the hoast began to smile at Panuccio, mocking him with his idle

dreaming and talking in the night.

e

0

co es,

ne ce,

ng

f1-

AG-

ce :

ecre

vvnc

per-

eccio

king

per-

Hot

mas

5,100

with

)ceuli

rance

triant

So, falling from one merry matter to another, yet without any millike at allithe Gentlemen, having their hostes prepared, and their Portmantues fastened behind, drinking to their host, mounted on horsebacke, and they roade away towards Florence, no leffe contented with the manner of occasions happened, than the effects they forted to. Afterward, other courses were taken, for the continuance of this begun pleasure with Nicoletta, who made her mother believe, that Panuccio did no. hing elsebut dreame. And the mother herselfer remembring kow kindely Adriano had used her (a fortune not expected by her before:) was more than halfe of the minde, that the did then dreame also, while she was vvalking.

The Seventh Novell.

whereby (with some indifferent reason) it is concluded, that Dreames do not alwayes fall out to be leasings.

By the conclusion of Pamphilus his Novell, wherein the womans ready wit, at a time of such necessity, carried deserved commendations: the Oseene gave command to Madam Pampinea, that shee should near begin with hers, and so she did, in this manner. In some discourses (gracious Ladies) already past among us,

ralano de Molisedreamed; That a Wolfe tore his wives face and throate. Which dreame be told to her, with advice to keepe her out of danger; which she refusing to doe, recerved what followed.

the truth of apparitions in dreames hath partly beene approved, whereof very many have made a mockery. Neverthelelle, whatfoever hath heeretofore beene Taide, I purpose to acquaint you with a very fhort Novell, of a strange accident happening unto a neighbour of mine, in not crediting a Dreame which her Husband

rold her.

I cannot tell, whether you knew Talana de Molefe, or ne, a man of very much honor, who tooke to wife a yong Gentlewoman, named Margarita, as beautifull as the beft: but yet fo peevish, scornefull, and fantafticall, that the disdained any good advice given her; neither could any thing be done, to cause her contentment; which abfurd humors were highly displeasing to her husband: but in regard he knew not how to helpe it, confrained. ly he did endure it. It came to passe, that Talano being with his wife, at a summer-house of his owne in the country, he dreamed one night, that he favy his Wife walking in a faire wood, which adjoyned neere unto his house, and while the thus continued there, he seemed to Ice iffue forth fro a corner of the same Wood, agreat & furious Wolfe, which leaping fuddainly on her caught her by the face and throate, drawing her downe to the earth, and offering to drag her thence. But he crying out for helpe, recovered her from the Wolfe, yet having ber face and throat very pittifully rent and torne.

In regard of this terrifying dreame, when Talano was rifen in the morning and fate converting with his wife, he spake thus unto her. Woman, although thy froward wilfull Nature be fach, as hath not permitted me one pleasing day with thee, fince we became man and wite, but rather my life hath bin most redions to me, fearing ftill some mischeife should happen unto thee:yet let me now in loving maner advise thee; to follow my counsel, and (this day) not to walke abroad out of this house. She demanded a reason for this advice of his. He relazed to her every particular of his dream, adding withall True fo

th

Pi

240

the

me

no

and

do,

shele speeches.

True it is wife (quoth he) that little credit should be given to dreames: neverthelesse, when they deliver advertisement of harmes to ensue, there is nothing lost by shunning and avoiding them. She sleering in his sace, and shaking her head at him, replied: Such harmes as thou wishelf, such thou dreamest of. Thou pretendest much pitty and care of me, but all to no other end; but what mischeeses thou dreamest happening unto me, so wouldest thou see them effected on mee. Wherefore, I will well enough looke to my selse, both this day, and at all times else, because thou shalt never make thy selse merry, with any such missortane as thou wishest unto me.

Well wife, answered Talano, I knew well enough before, what thou wouldest fay: An unfound head is foone fcratcht with the very gentleft Combe : but beleeve az thou pleasest. As for my selfe, I speake with a true and an honest meaning foule: and once againe, I doe advise thee, to keepe within our doores all this day : at least wife neware, that thou walke not into our wood, be it but in regard of my dreame, wel fir (quoth the fcoffingly) once you shall fay, I followed your countell : bue within her felfe she fell to this murmuring. Now I perceive my husbands colouring, and why I must not walk this day into our wood: hee hath made a compact with some common Queane, closely to have her company there, and is afraid least I should take them tardy. Belike he would have me feede among blinde folke, and I were worthy to be thought a starke foole, if I should not prevent a manifest trechery, being intended against me. Goe thither therefore I will, and tarry there all the whole day long; but I will meete with him in his merchandize, and fee the Pink wherein he adventures.

ıg

1¢

fe

is

to

80

ht

he

out

ing

was

ife,

ard

one

vite,

ring

E MIC

nfel,

oule.

rela-

thall

True

After this her fecret confultation, her husband waz no fooner gone out of one doore, but the did the like at another, yet fo fecretly as possibly shee could device to do, and (without delay) she went to the wood wherein Novell. 7.

the hid her felfe very closely, among the trickest of the bushes, yet could discerne every way about her, if any body should offer to passe by her. While shee kept her felfe in this concealement, luspeding other myfterious matters, as her idle imaginations had tutord her, rather than the danger of any Wolfe : out of a brake thicket by her fodainely rufhed a huge and dreadfull Wolfe, as having found her by the fent, mounting up, and grasping her throat in his mouth, hefore shee saw

him, or could call to heaven for mercy

Being thus feifed of her, hee carried her as lightly a. way, as if the had beene no heavier than a Lambe, thee being (by no meanes) able to cry, because he held her fo fift by the throate, and hindred any helping of her selie. As the Wolfe carried her thus from thence, he had quite ftrangled her, if certaine Shepheards had not met him, who with their outeries and exclaimes # the Wolfe, caufed him to let her fall, and haft away to fave his own life. Notwithstanding the harme done to her throat and face, the thepheards knew her, and carried her home to her owne house, where shee remained a long while after, carefully attended by Physisians and Chirurgions.

Now, although they were very expert and cunning men all, yet could they not fo perfectly cure her, but both her throat, and part of her face were fo blemished, that whereas the feemed a rare creature t efore, the was now deformed and much unfightly. In regard of which Arange alteration, being ashamed to shew her selfe in any place, where formerly the had beene feene: the spent her time in forrow and mourning, repenting her infolent and scornefull carriage, as also her rath running into danger, upon a foolish and jealous surmise, beleeving her husbands dreames the better for ever after.

Blondello (in a merry manner) caused Guiotto to beguile himselfe miti a good dinner: for which deceit, Guiotto he

ny

ept

te-

er,

full

ip,

12.

hee

her

her

ce,

hid

SI

y to

ar-

ned

and

ing

but

led,

W25

ich

n a-

ent

10-

in-

ing

wile

oito

became cunningly revenged by procuring Blond. No to be unreafonably beaten and mifufed.

The eight Novell.

Wherhy plainty appeareth, that they which take delight in deceiving, doe well deferve to be deceived inemfetues.

IT was a generall opinion in the whole Joviall company, that whatfoever Talanofaw in his fleepe, was not any dreame, but rather a vision; considering, every part thereof sell out sodirectly, without the least failing: but when silence was enjoyned, then the Queene gave out by evident demonstration, that Madam Lauretta was next to succeede, whereupon shee thus began. As all they (Iudicious hearers) which have this day spoken before me, derived the ground and project of their Novels, from some other argument spoken of before; even so, the cruell revenge of the Scholler, yesterday discoursed at large by Madam Pampinea, maket's mee to remember another Tale of like nature, some-what grievous to the sufferer, yet not in such cruell measure in-slicted, as that on Madam Helena.

There dwelt sometime in Florence, one that was generally called by the name of Guiotto, a man being the greatest Gourmand, & grossest seed for any Countries, all his meanes and procurements meetely unable to maintain expenses for filling his belly. But otherwise he was of sufficient and commendable carriage, fairely demeaned, and well discoursing on any argument: yet, not as a curious and spruce Countier, but rather a frequenter of rich mens Tables, where choice of good cheere is fildome wanting, and such should have his company, albeit not invited, he had the

At the fame time, and in our City of Florence also, there was another man, named Blondello, very low of flature, yet comely formed, quicke witted, more name & briske than a Butter flie, alwayes wearing a wrought

order, but the tuft flourishing about the forehead, and he such another trencher-flye for the table, as our forenamed Guiotto was. It so fell out on a morning in the Lent time, that he went into the Fishmarket, where he bought two goodly Lampreyes, for Meffer Viero de Chereli, and was espied by Guiotto, who (comming to Blondello) faid. What is the meaning of this cost, & for whom is it? Whereto Blondello thus answered. Yesternight, three other Lampries, far fairer than thefe, and a whole Stargeon, were fent unto Meffer Corfo Donati, and being not sufficient to seede divers Gentlemen, whom he hath invited this day to dine with him, hee canfed me to buy thefe two befide: Doft not thou intend to make one among them? Yes I warrant thee, replied Guiette, thou knowest I can invite my felf thither, without any other bidding.

Soparting; about the houre of dinner time, Guiotte went to the house of Meffer Corfe, whom he found fitzing and talking with certaine of his neighbours, but dinner was not (as yet) ready, neither were they come thither to dinner. Meffer corfo demanded of Guiotto, what newes with him, and whither he went? Why Sit (faid Guiotte) I come to dine with you, and your good company. Whereto Meffer Corfo answered, That he was evelcome; and that his other friends being gone, dinner was ferved in, none elle thereat prefent but Meffer Cor-To and Guiotto: all the diet being a poore dish of Peale, a little piece of Tunny, and a few small fishes fried, without any other dishes to follow after. Guistto seeing no better fare, but being disappointed of his expectation, as longing to feede on the Lamprics and Sturgeon, and fo to have made a full dinner indeed: was of a quicke apprehenfion, and apparantly perceived, that Blondello had meerely guld him in a knavery, which did not a little vexe him, and made him vow to be revenged on Blometto, as he could compasse occasion afterward.

Before many dayes were past, it was his fortune to

meet with Blandello, who having told his jest to divers of his friends, and much good merriment made therat: he faluted Guiotte in a kind manner, Taying. How didft thou like the fat Lampreyes and Sturgeon, which thou fedft on at the house of Meffer CorforWel Sir (answered Guiotto)perhaps before eight dayes paffe over my head, thou falk meete with as pleafing a dinner as I did. So, parting away from Blondello, hee met with a Porter, fuch as are usually fent on errands; & hyring him to do a meliage for him, gave him a glaffe bottell, and bringing him neere to the Hall-house of Cavicciati, shewed him there a Knight, called Signior Phillippo Argenti, a man of huge flarure, very cholericke, and fooner moved to anger than any other man. To him thou must go with this bottle in thy hand, and fay thus to him. Sir, Blondelle lent me to you, and curteo fly entreateth you, that you wonld enrubinate this glaffe bottle with your beft Claret wine; because hee would make merry with a few friends of his. But beware he lay no hand on thee, because he may be easily induced to misuse thee, and so my bufineffe be disappointed. Well Sir, faid the Porter. thall I fay any thing elfe unto him? No (quoth Guietto) only go and deliver this mellage, and when thou art returned, He pay thee for thy paines. The Porter being gone to the house, delivered his mellage to the Knight, who being a man of no great civil breeding, but very furious : presently conceived that Blondello (whom hee knew wel enough) fent this melfage in meere mockage of him, and starting up with fierce looks, faid; What enrubination of Claret thould I fend him? and what have I to do with him or his drunken friends? Let him and thee go hang your felves together. So he flept to catch hold on the Porter, but he being nimble, & elcaped from him, returned to Guiotte, and told him the answer of Phillippo. Guiotto not a title contented, paied the Porter, taried in no place til he mer with Blandelle, to whom he laid. When wast thou at the hal of cavicciulinot a long

00 5

while.

e to Sissi

and

ore-

the

e he

o de

2 00

for

ter-

nd a

ati,

aen,

hee

in-

re-

lacr,

otto

fit-

but

ome

otto,

y Sir

boos

was

nner

Cor-

fc, 1

ith-

g no

n,45

ad fo

ap-

had

ittle

10#-

When Blondello was thus parted from him, Guiotto followed not farre off behind him, to behold the iffue of this angry bufineffe; and Signiour Phillippo, because he could not eatch the Porter, continued much diffempered, fretting and fuming, because he could not comprehend the meaning of the Porters meffage ; but onely furmized, that Blondello (by the procurement of fome body elfe) had done this in scorne of him. While he remained thus deepely discontented, hee espied Blendella comming towards him, and meeting him by the way, he stept close to him, and gave him a cruell blow on the face, caufing his nose to fall out a bleeding. Alas Sir, faid Blondello, wherefore doe you frike mee? Signior Phillippo, catching him by the haire of the head, tramp. led his night-cap in the dirt, and his cloake alfowhen, laying many violent blowes on him, he faid. Villanous Traitor as thou art, He teach thee what it is to enrubinate with Claret, either thy felfe, or any of thy cupping companions : Am I a child to be jefted withall ?

Norwas hemore furious in words, than in stroakes also, beating him about the face, hardly leaving any haire on his head, and dragging him along in the mire, spoiling all his garments, and he not able (from the first blow given) to speake a word in defence of himfelse. In the end, Signior Phillippo having extreamely beaten him, and many people gathering about themato succour a man so much missisch, the matter was at large related, and manner of the mellage fending. For which, they all did greatly reprehend alondello, considering he knew what kind of man Phillippo was, not any way to be jested withall. Biendello in teares, maintained, that he never sent any such message for Wine, or intended

is in the least degree; so, when the tempest was more mildly calmed, and Biondello (thus cruelly beaten and durtied) had gotten home to his owne house, he could then remember, that (questionlesse) this was o casto-

ned by Guiotto.

e-

10

35

ra

20

10-

n,

us

oi-

¢\$

114

C,

he

m-

ely

to

ge

ch,

he

10

hat

led

1E

After some few dayes were passed over, and the burts in his face indifferently cured; Blondello beginning to walke abroade againe, chanced to meet with Guierre: who laughing heartily at him, faid. Tell me Blondello, how doll thou like the enrubinating Clarret of Signior Phillippo ? As well (quoth Blonnello) as thou didft the Surgeon and Lampreyes at Meffer Corlo Donaties. Why then (faid Guotto, let thefe tokens continue famihar betweene thee and me, when thou wouldest bestow such another dinner on me, then will I enrubinate thy male with a bortle of the fame Claret But Blondello perceived (to his cost) that hee had met with the worfer bargaine, and Guiotto got cheere, without any blowes : and therefore defired a peacefull attorement, each of them (alwayes after) abitaining from flouting one andther.

The ninth Novell.

I mo young Gentlemen, the one named Meliffo, bo no in the City of Laiazzo: and the other Giofejo of Antioch, travelled unto Salomon, the famous Kinz of Great Britaire. The one defining to learne must be floud doe, whereby to compaffe and winne the love of men. The other craveato be instructed, by what meanes he might reclaine an headstrong and unruly mise. And what answers she wise King gave unto them both, before they departed away from him.

Containing an excellent administion, that fuch as cover to have the love of other men, must first learne themselves how to love: Also, by what meanes such women as are turst and solf-willed, may be reduced to civil obedience.

Apon

Then the conclusion of Madam Laurettaes Novell, none remained to succeede next in order, but onely she Queene her selfe, the priviledge reserved, granted to Dioneus; wherefore, after they had all smiled at the folly of Bondello, with a cheerefull countenance thus

the Queene began.

Honourable Ladies, if with advised judgement, wee doe duely confider the order of all things, we shall very eafily perceive, That the whole universall multiplicitie of women, by Nature, Custome, and Lawes, are and ought to be subject to men, yea, and to be governed by their discretion. Because every one defiring to enjoy peace, repose and comfort with them, under whose charge they are; ought to be humble, patient and obedient, over and beside her spotlesse honesty, which is she crowne and honour of every good woman; and alshough those lawes, which respect the common good of all things, or rather use and custome (as our wonted faying is) the powers whereof are very great, and worshy to be reverenced, should not make us wife in this cafe. Yet Nature hath given us a sufficient demonstration, in creating our bodies more foft and delicate, yea, and our hearts timorous, fearefull, benigne and compassionable, our strength feeble, our voyces pleasing and the motion of our members sweetly pliant; all which are apparant restimonies that we have neede of others government.

Now, it is not to be denied, that who foever hath neede of helpe, and is to be governed: meerely reason commandeth, that they should be subject and obedient to their governour. Who then should wee have for our helps and governours, if not men? Wherfore, we should be intirely subject to them, in giving them due honour and reverence: and such a one as shall depart from this tule, the (in mine opinion) is not onely worthy of grievous reprehensions, but also severe chastissements beside. And to this exact consideration (over and above

divers

m

21

ph

in t

Wit

But

my

tofp

divers other important reasons) I am the rather indusced, by the Novell which Mad im Pampinea so lately reported, concerning the froward and wilfull wise of Talano, who had a heavier punishment inflicted on her, than her husband could devise to doe. And therefore it is my perceptory sentence, that all such women as will not be gracious, benigne and pleasing: doe justly deserve (as I have already said) rude, rough, and harsh handling, as both Nature, Custome, and Lawes have commanded.

S

ιđ

Y

le

e.

13

-

of

cd

11-

115

13-

13,

n-

ich

CIS

ath (on

ent

our

bis

y of

nts

OVC

To make good what I have faid, I will declare unto you the counfell and advise, given by Salowon, the wise and famous King of Great Evittaine, as a most whole-fone and soveraigne medicine for the cure of such a dangerous disease, in any woman so toulely insected. Which counfell (notwithstanding) all such women as have no neede of this Phisicke, I would not have them to imagine, that it was meant for them, albeit men have a common Proverbe, to wit.

as the good horse and bad borse, do both neede the source. So a good wife and bad wife, a wand will make stirre.

Which faying, whosever doth interpret it in such pleasing manner as they ought, shall finde it (as you all will assirt me no lesse) to be very true a especially in the morall meaning, it is beyond all contradiction. Women are naturally all unstable, and easily enclined to misgovernment; wherefore to correct such a distemperature in them that out-step the tearmes and bounds of woman-hood, a wand hath beene allowed for especially phiscke. As in the like manner, for support of vertue, in those of contrary condition, thaming to be sullyed with so grosse a since the correcting wand may serve as a walking staffe to protect them from all other seares. But, forbearing to teach any longer; let me proceeds to my purpose, and tell you my Novell.

In those ancient and reverend dayes, where I am now to speake, the high renowned and admirable wisedome

of Salomon, King of Great Brittaine, was most famous throughout all parts of the world, for answering all doubtfull questions and demands whatfoever, that polfibly could be propounded to him. So that many reforred to him, from the most remote and furthest off countreyes, to heare his miraculous knowledge and experience, yea, and to crave his counfell, in matters of greatest importance. Among the rest of them which repaired thither, was a rich young Gentleman, honourably descended, named Metiffa, who came from the Citic of Laiaggo, where hee was both borne, and

dwelt.

In his riding towards France, as he passed by Naples, he overtooke another young Gendeman, a native of Antioch, and named Giofefo, whose journey lay the fame way as the others did. Having ridden in company fonce few dayes together, as it is a custome commonly observed among Travellars, to understand one anothers Countrey and condition, as also to what part his occasions call him: to happened it with them, Giofefo directly telling him, that he journied towards the wife King Sa'omon, to defire his advice what meanes hee anould observe, in the reclaiming of a wilfull wife, the most froward and felfe-willed woman that ever lived; whom neither faire persivations, nor gentle courtelies could in any manner prevaile withall. Afterward hee demanded of Meliffo, to know the occasion of his travell, and whither.

Now truft me Sir, answered Meliffe, I am a native of Laiezzo, and as you are vexed with one great mil-forsune, even fo am I offended of another. I am young, wealthy, well derived by birth, and allow liberall expences, for maintaining a worthy table in my house, without distinguishing persons by their rancke and quality, but make it free for all commers, both of the City and all places elfe. Notwithstanding all which bounty and honourable entertainement, I cannot meete with

ski

ten

WO

fore

mo

her

Wat

inde

any man that loveth me. In which respect, I journey to the same place as you doe, to crave the counsell of so wise a King, what I should doe, whereby I might procure men to love me. Thus like two well-met friendly companions, they rode on together, untill they arrived in Great Brittaine, where, by meanes of the noble Barons attending on the King; they were brought before him. Melisso delivered his minde in very sew words, whereto the King made no other answer, but this: Learne to Love. Which was no sooner spoken, but Melisso was dismissed from the Kings presence.

Giofeso also relating, wherefore he came thither; the King replied onely thus: Goe to the Goofe Bridge: and presently Giofeso has also his dismission from the King. Comming forth, he found Melisso attending for him, and revealed in what manner the King had answered him: whereupon, they consulted together, concerning both their answers; which seemed either to exceede their comprehension, or else was delivered in meere mockery, and therefore (more than halfe discontented)

they returned homeward agains.

-

06

1-

he

es,

the

Yas

nly

10-

his

fe fo

vile

hee

ed;

hee

tra-

ve of

-for-

ung

oule,

qua-

City

ounty

with

After they had ridden on a few dayes together, they came to a River, over which was a goodly Bridge, and because a great company of Horses and Mules (heavily laden, and after a manner of a Caravan of Camels in Egypt) were first to passe over the said Bridge; they gladly staied to permit their passe. The greater number of them being already pass over, there was one she and skittish Mule (belike subject to fearefull starting, as oftenines wee see horses have the like ill quality) that would not passe over the Bridge by any meanes, where fore one of the Muletters tooke a good Cudgell, and smote her at the sirst gently, as hoping so to procue her passage. Notwithstanding, starting one while backward, then againe forward, sidewayes, and every way indeede, but the direct rode way she would not goe.

Now grew the Muletter extreamely angry, giving

her many ctuell froakes, on the head, fides, flanckes, and all parts elfe, but yet they proved to no purpose; which Melisso and Gioses seeing, and being (by this meanes) hindred of their passage, they called to the Muliter, saying. Foolish fellow, what does thou? Intendes thou to kill the Mule? Why dost thou not leade her gently, which is the likelier course to prevaile by, then bearing and missing her as thou dost? Content your felves Gentlemen (answered the Multer) you know your horses qualities, as I doe my Mules, let me deale with her as I please. Having thus spoken, he gave her somany violent strokes, on head, sides, hippes, and every where elle, as made her at last passe over the Bridge quictly, so that the Muliter wonne the mastery of his Mule.

When Mell To and Giefefo had past over the Bridge, where they intended to part each from other; a fudden motion happened into the minde of Meliffe, which caufed him to demand of an aged man (who fate craving almes of Paffengers at the Bridge foot) how the Bridge was called: Sir, answered the old man, this is called, The Goose Bridge. Which words when Giesefo heard, hee called to minde the faying of King Salemon, and therefore immediatly faid to Meliffo. Worthy friend. and partner in my travell. I dare now affure you, that the counfell given mee by King Salemon, may fall out most effectuall and true : For I plainely perceive, that I knew not how to handle my felfe-will d wife, untill the Muliter did enftruct mee. So, requefting ftill to enjoy the others company, they journeyed on, till at the length they came to Laisggo, where Giofefo retained Melt fo ftill with bim, for some repose after folong a journey, and entertained him very honourably.

One day Giose so said to his wife : Woman, this Gentleman is my intimate friend, and hath borne me company in all my travell: such diet as thou wilt welcome him withall, I would have it ordered (in dressing) ac-

cording

be

ho

ince

fpig

Wit

Ian!

crue

Veu !

de

7 3.

311

elc

235

e-

ery

ge,

den

cau.

Ping,

idge

led.

ofefo

7/10N2

riend.

that.

ll out

cive,

c,una

till to

till at

retal-

olong

Gen-

com-

come

ng) ac-

ording

cording to his direction Metisso perceiving that Giof for would have it so; in few words directed her such a course, as (for ever) might be to her husbands contentment. But she, not altering a jot from her sormer disposition, but rather farr more froward and tempessuous a adighting to vexe and crosse, doing every thing quite contrary to the order appointed. Which Gioseso observing, angerly he said unto her. Was it not told you by my friend, in what manner hee would have our Supper dress? She turning siercely to him, replyed. Am I to be directed by him or thee? Supper must and shall be dress it will have it if it pleaseth me, I care not who doth missise it; if thou wouldst have it otherwise, goe seeke both your Suppers where you may have it, according to your likeing.

Mel so marvelling at her froward-answer, rebuked her for it in very kinde manner: whereupon, Gioseso spake thus to her. I perceive wife, you are the same woman as you were wount to be: but believe mee on my word, I shall quite alter you from this curst complexion. So turning to Melisso, thus he proceeded. Noble friend, we shall trie anone, whether the counsell of King Salomon be essectiall; or no; and I pray you, let it not be offensive unto you to see it, but rather hold all to be done in merrment. And because I would not be hindered by you, doe but remember the answer which the Muletter give us, when wee tooke compassion on his Mule. Worthy friend replied Melisso, lam in your own house, where I will not impeach whatsoever you doe.

Giolofo, having provided a good Holly-wand, went into the Chamber, where his wife fate railing, and despightfully grumbling, where taking her by the haire of his head, he threw her at his feet, beating her extremely with the wand. She crying, then curfing, next railing, laftly fighting, biting and fetatching, when the felt the cruel finart of the blowes, and that all her refistance ferwed to no end: then the fel on her knees before him, and defired

Novelleg. The Ninth Day,

defired mercy for charities lake. Giolefo fought still more and more on head, armes, shoulders, sides, and all patts else, pretending as it he heard not her complaints, but weatied himselse well-neere out of breath: so that (to be britefo) shee that never felt his singers before, perceived and consessed, it was now too soone. This being done, he returned to Melisso, and said: To morrow we shall see a miracle, and how availeable the counsel is of going to the Goose Bridge. So sitting a while together, after they had washed their hands, and super, they withdrew to their lodgings.

The poore beaten woman, could hardly raife her felfe from the ground, which yet (with much adoe) the did, and threw her felfe upon the bed, where the tooke fuch reft as thee could; but arifing early the next morning the came to her Husband, and making him a very low courtefie, demanded what hee pleafed to have for he dinner; he finding heartly thereas, with Meliffo, tolk her his mind. And when dinner time came, every thing was ready according to the directions given: in which regard, they highly commended the counfell, whereas they made such an harth construction at the first.

Within a while after: Melisso being gone from Giob fo, and returned home to his owne houte: he acquainted a wife and reverend man, with the answer which King Salomon gave him, whereto here ceived this reply. No better or truer advise could possibly be given you, for well you know, that you love me any man; but the bountifull Banquets you befrow a them, is more in respect of your vaine-glory, than an kinde affection you beare to them: Learnethen to lot men, as Salomon advised, and you shall be beloved a them againe. Thus our unruly write became mildely the chained, and the young Gendeman, by loving others with found the fruites of reciprocall affection.

Rill

dal

ints,

that

fore,

is be-

HOTT

unsell

to:0 they

r felfe

ne did,

e fuch

ming

ry lon

for hi

o, tol

y thing

which

hered

Giole

John de Barolo, at the instance and request of his Goffip Pietro da Trefanti, made an enchantment, to have bis wife become a Muse. And when it came to the faftening en of the taile; Goffip Pietro by faying the should have no taile at all, foiled the who'e enchantment.

The teath Novell.

in iust reproofe of such foolish men, as will be governed by over-light beleefe.

This novell reported by the Queene, caused mormuring among the Ladies, albeit the men laughed heartily thereat: but after they were all growne filent, Dioneus began in this manner. Gracious Beauties, among many white Doves, one blacke Crow will feeme more fightly, than the very whitest Swanne can doe. In like manner, among a multitude of wife men, fometime one of much leffe wisedone and discretion, shall not onely increase the splendour and Majestie of their maturity, but allo give an addition of delight and great folace.

In which regard, you all being modest and discreets Ladies, and my selfe much more defective in braine, cquain than otherwise able : in making your vertues shine glorioufly, through the evident apparance of mine owne anlwd weakeneffe, you fould esteeme the better of mee, by hee rehow much I feeme the more cloudy and obscure. And d pofficonsequently, I hope to have the larger scope of liberty, lovend by plainely expressing what I am, and be the more paflow of tiently endured by you all, in faying what abfurdly I han an shall; than I should be if my speeches savoured of ab-n to lot solute wisedome. I will therefore tell you a Tale, which loved a shall not be of any great length, whereby you may comldely it prehend, how carefully fuch things should be observed, other which are commanded by them, as can effect matters by the power of enchantment, and how little delaiance also ought to be in such, as would not have an enchant. ment to be hindered.

Novellad. The Winth Day.

About a yeare already past fince, there dwelt at Barletta, an honest man, called Ishn de Barolo, who be-.caule he was of poore condition; for maintenance in his contented effate, provided himselfe of a Mule, to carry commodities from place to place, where Faires and Markets were in request, but most especially to Apuglia, buying and felling in the nature of a petty Chapman. Travelling thus thorow the Countreyes, he grew into great and familiar acquaintance, with one who named himselfe Pietro da Tresanti, following the same Trade of life as he did, carrying his commodities upon an Affe. In figne of amitie, according to the Countries custome, he never termed him otherwise, than by the name of Goffip Pietro, and alwayes when hee came to Barletta, he brought him to his owne house, taking it as his lane, entreating him very friendly, and in the bett manner he could devise to doe. On the other lide, Goffip Pietro being very poore, having but one fimple habitation in the Village of Trefanti, hardly sufficient for him, and an handlome young woman which he had to his wife, as also his Affe : evermore when John de Barolo came to Trefanti, hee would bring him to his poore abiding, with all his uttermost abilitie of entertainement, in oue acknowledgement of the courtefic he afforded to him at Barletta. But when hee came to take repose in the night season, Goffip Pietro could lyte not lodge him as gladly he would a because hee had by it,as one filly bed, wherein himselfe and his wife lay: fo that no Iohn de Barolo was faine to lie on a litle ftraw, in a final gan, Stable, close adjoyning by his own Mule and Affe.

The woman understanding, what good and honel doe, welcome, Gossip 18hn afforded her husband, when her y I n came to Barletta, was often very willing to goe lodge fall with an honest neighbour of hers, called Carapresa a Goudice Leo, because the two Gossips might both lie to the gether in one bed; wherewith divers times the acquain- ced ted her husband, but by no meanes he would admit it key a

te

do th

dit

but

yec

mo fuci

levy

At one time among the reft, as thee was making the fame motion againe to her husband, that his triend might be lodged in better manner: Goffip John thus spake to her. Good Zita Caraprefa, never moleft your felfe for me, because I lodge to mine own contentment, and so much the rather, in regard that when soever I lift : I can convert my Mule into a faire young woman, to give me much delight in the night-featon, and afterward make her a Mule againe; thus am I never with-

out her company.

Y-

in

to

res

A.

ap.

CW

na-

ame

pon

tries

y the

ne to

ng it

n the

lide,

mple

icient

e had

ohn de

to his

tie of

cour-

e came

c.

The young woman wondring at thefe words, and beleeving he did not fable to them; thee told them to her husband, with this addition befide, Pietro (quoth fac) if he be fuch a deare friend to thee, as thou haft of. ten avouched to me; with him to instruct thee in fo rare a cunning, that thou must make a Male of me; then halt thou have both an Affe and a Mule to travel withall about thy businesse, whereby thy benefit will be donble; and when we returne home to our house, then thou maift make me thy wife againe, in the fame condition as I was before. Goffip Pierro, who was (indeed) but a very Coxcomb; beleeved alfothe words to be true, yeelding therefore the more gladly to her advife; and moving the matter to his Goslip John, to teach him such a wonderfull fecret, which would redound fo greato could yto his benefit; but John began to diffwade him from it, as having (poken it in merriment, yet perceiving that and but no contradiction would ferve to prevaile, thus hee befo that a fmall ow morning before day , as in our travell wee ule to is honed to and then I will shew you how it is to be done; onetien het y I must and doe confesse, that the most difficult thing
as lodge fall the rest, is, to fasten on the taile, as thou shalt see,
aprela is Gossip Pietro and his wife, could hardly take any
this is established the night long, so desirous they were to have the
acquain ted done; and therefore when it drew towards day, up
admit it sey arose, and calling Gossip 10hm, he came presently to them in his thirt, and being in the Chamber with them, I know not any man in the world, to whom I would difclose this secret, but to you; and therefore because you so earnestly defire it, I am the more willing to doe it. Onely you must consent to do whatsever I say, if you are defirous to have it done. Faithfully they promifed to performe all; whereupon John delivering a lighted Candle to Goffip Pietro, to hold in his hand, faid, Marke well what I doe, and remember all the words I fay : but be very carefull, that whatfoever thou hearest or feelt, thou doe not speake one word, for then the enchantment will be interly overthrowne, only with that the taile may be well fer on, for therein confideth all

the cunning.

Goffip Pietro holding the Candle, and the woman being prepared as John had appointed her, thee bowed her felle forwards with her hands fer to the ground, even as if flice stood upon foure feete. First with his hands hee touched her head and face, faving. Here is the goodly head of a Mule; then handling her disheveld haire, termed them the goodly mane of a Mule. Afterwards, couching the body, armes, legs, and feete, gave them all the apr names (for those parts) belonging to a Mule, nothing elfe remaining, but onely the forming of the taile, which when Pietro perceived, how lost was preparing to fasten it on (having no way mishked ail his former proceeding:) hee called to him, faying! Forbeare Goffip 10hn, my mule shall have no taile at all, I am contented to have her without a taile. How now Goffip Pietro? answered Iohn . What hast that done? Thou haft mard all by this unadvited speaking even when the worke was almost fully finished. It is me pero matter Gostip (answered Pietro) I can like my Muk King much better without a taile, than to fee it fet on in fuch chee manner.

The fond young woman, more covetoully addicted in jeas gaine and commodity, than looking into the knavil (as the

intentio

ti

de

(m

be

th: po(

hes

red thu

S

in n

Mitt

YOU

intention of her Goffip John; began to grow greatly offended. Beaft as thou art (quoth the to her husband) Why haft thou overthrowne both thine own good fortune and mine? Diddeft thou ever fee a Mule without a taile? Wouldst thou have had him made mee a Monfter? Thou art wreichedly poore, and when we might have beene enriched for ever, by a secret knowne to none but our felves, thou are the Afle that haft defeated all, and made thy friend to become thine enemy. Goffip Iom began to pacific the woman, with folemne proteflations of his itill continuing friendship, albeit (afterwards) there was no further defiring of any more Mule making : but Goffip Pietro fell to his former Trading onely with his Affe, as hee was no leffe himfelfe, and hee went no more with Goffip John to the Faires in Apuglia, neither did hee ever request, to have the like peece of fervice done for him.

Although there were much laughing at this Novell, the Ladies understanding it better, than Dioness intended that they should have done, yet himselfe scarsely smiled. But the Novels being all ended, and the Sunne beginning to lofe his heate; the Queene also knowing, that the full period of her government was come : difpossessing her selfe of the Crowne, she placed it on the head of Pamphilus, who was the last of all to be honoured with this dignity; wherefore (with a gracious fmile)

thus the foake to him,

I

60

0

y's

0.

h-

id.

sl eft

en-

hat

all

min

wed

1, 0-

h his

ere is

eveld

111CT-

gave

ING D

ching

10:15

ifliked

aying: sailea

Llow

it that

aking

ntentie

Sir, it is no meane charge which you are to undergo, in making amends (perhaps) for all the faults committed by my felfe and the reft, who have gone before you in the same authoritie; and, may it prove as profperous unto you, as I was willing to create you our Irism y Mule King. Pamphilus having received the Honour with a in lud cheerefull minde, thus answered. Madam, your facred venues, and those (beside) remaining in my other subdictedu jests will (no doubt) worke so effectually for me, that knavil (as the rest have done) I shall deserve your generall

good

Novellato. The Winth Day.

good opinion. And having given order to the Mafter of the Houthold (as all his predeceffors had formerly done for every necessary occasion;) he turned to the Ladies,

who expected his gracious favour, and faid.

Bright Beauties, it was the discretion of your late Soversigne and Queene, in regard of case and recreation unto our tired spirits, to grant you free liberty for difcourling on whatfoever your felves best pleafed: where. fore, having enjoyed such a time of rest, I am of opinion, that it is best to returne once more to our Law, in which respect, I would have every one to speake in this manner to morrow. Namely, of those men or women, who have done any thing bountifully or magnificently, either in matters of amitie, or otherwife. The relation of fuch worthy arguments, will (doubtleffe) givean addition to our belt defires, for a free and forward inclination to good actions, whereby our lives (how thort fo ever they be) may perpetuate an ever-living renowne and fame, after that our mortall bodies are converted into dut, which (otherwise) are no better than those of bruite bealts, reason only distinguishing this difference, that as they live to perith utterly, to wee respire to reigne in eternity.

The theame was exceedingly pleafing to the whole Company; who being all rifen, by permiffion of the new King, every one fell to their wonted recreations, as best agreed with their owne disposition; until the house of Supper came, wherein they were served very sumptuously. But being risen from the Table, they began their dances, among which, many sweet Sonned were enterlaced, with such delicate Tunes as move admiration. Then the King commanded Madam Not phila, to sing a song in his name, or how her selfer so best affected. And immediatly with a cleare and rat

voice, thus the began.

166

The Chorus fung by all the Company.

In the Spring scason,
Maides have belt reason,
To dance and sing;
With Chaplets of Flowers,
To decke up their Bowers,

And all in bonour of the Spring.

Heard a Nymph that fate alone,

By a Fountaines fide,

Much her hard Fortune to bemone,

For fit fibe cride:

Ab! Who will pitty her distresse? That finds no fee like ficklenesse? For truth lives not in men:

Poore foule, why live I then? In the Spring feafon, &c.

Sach a faithlesse deed,

And not in Iustice punish it

As treasous meed?

I am undone through perjury,

am unaone through perjury, Although I loved constantly ? But truth lives not in men,

Poore soule, why live I then? In the Spring season, &c.

When I did follow Dyans traine,
As a loyall Maide,

Nor was dismaide.

But when I tistened Loves alluring, Then I mandred from affuring.

For truch lives not in me: Poore soule, why live 1 then In the Spring season, & c.

TH

of ne

es,

000

ion

dif-

erc.

ini-

, in

men,

ntly

2110B

rd in-

w thort

Nowne

verted

short r

s diffe.

respire

e whole

of the

cations

nullthe

ved very

they be

Sonne

s move

lam Ne

elfe ftoo

and rat

Adiens

Adien to all my former joyes, When I lived at cafe, And welcome now those fad annoies Which doe most displeases And let none pitty her diftreffe. That fell not but by fickleneffe. Fort uthlives not in men, Alas! may live I then? In the Spring Scalon, orc.

The Song, most sweetly sung by Madam Neiphila. was especially commended both by the King, and all the rest of the Ladies. Which being fully funshed, the King gave order, that every one should repaire to their Chambers, because a great part of the night was already fpent.

The Tenth and last Days.

Whereon, under the Government of Pamphilus, the feverall Arguments doe concerne fuch perfors, as either by may of Liberality, or in Magnificent manner, performed any worthy action, for love , favour, friendhip, or any other hone urable occasion.

The Industion.

Lready began certaine small Clouds in the West, to blush with a Vermillion tindure, when those in the East (having reached to their full heighth) looked like bright burmished gold, by splendor of the Sunne beames drawing neere unto them : when Phophilis being rifen, cauled the Ladies, and the rest of his honourable companions so be called. When they were all affembled, and had concluded together on the place, whither they fhould realise for the mornings recreation the King led on the way before, accompanied with the two noble Ladies, Philomena and Fiammetra, all the reft following after them, deviling, talking, and answering to divers demands, both what that day was to be done, as also con-

cerning the propoled impolition.

After they had walked an indifferent space of time, and found the rayes of the Sunne to be over-piercing for them: they returned backe againe to the Pallace, as fearing to have their bloud immoderately heated. Then rinfing their Glaffes in the coole cleere running current, each tooke their mornings draught, and then walked into the milde shades about the Garden, untill they should be summoned to dinner. Which was no fooner over-paft, and fuch as flept, returned waking: they mette together againe in their wonted place, according as the king had appointed, where he gave commandunto Madam Neiphila, that the should for (that day) begin the first Novell, which the humbly accepting, thus began.

Wherein may evidently be discerned, that servants to Princes and great Lords, are many timee recompensed, rather by their good fortune, then in any regard of their

dutifull fervices.

Doe accept it (Worthy Ladies) as no meane favour, that the King hath given me the first Tplace, to speake of such an honourable Argument, as Bounty and Magnificence is; which precious Icwell, even as the Sunne is the beauty,

ca on the

iphila:

and ali

d, the

to their

W252 -

be fove-

s either

er, per-

end hip

is in the

tindure,

achedia

aht bur-

drawing a, caufed

panions and had

y should

A Florentin Knight, named Signior Rogiero de Figiovanni, became a fervant to Alphonfo, King of Spain, who (is his opinion) feemed but fleightly to refpell and reword him. In regard whereof, by a notable experiment, the King gave him a manifest testimony, that it was not through any defect in him, but onely occasioned by the Knights ill fortune; most bountifully recompensing him afterward. The first Novell.

The Tenth Day. Novell. T.

or ornament and bright glory of all heaven; fo is county and magnificence the Crowne of all vertues. Ithall then recount to you a short Novell, sufficiently pleafing, in mine owne opinion, and I hope (fo much I date rely on your judgements) both profitable, and worthy so be remembred.



You are to know then, that among other vallant Knights, which of long have lived in our City, one of them, and (perhaps) of as great merit as any, was one, named Signior Rogiero d'Figiovanni, He being rich, and of great courage, and perceiving, that (in due confideradion) the quality belonging to life, and the customes oblerved

hi

bo

Sp

kg

an

K

50

observed among our Tustanes, were not answerable to his expectation, nor agreed with the disposition of his valour; determining to leave his native. Countrey, and belong in service. (for some time) to Alpheas & King of Spaine, whose same was generally notifed in all places, for excelling all other Princes in those times, for respect of mens well-deservings, and bountiful requirell of their paines. Being provided in honourable order, both with horses, armes, and a competent traine, hee travelled to

Spaine, where he was worthuly entertained.

Signior Rogiero continuing there, living in honourable manner, and performing many admirable actions of armes ; in thort time hee made himselfe sufficiently known, for a very valiant and famous man, And having remained there an indifferent long while, observing divers behaviours in the King : he faw how he inclined himselfe, first to one man, then to another, bestowing on one a Castle, a Towne on another, and Baronnies on divers, femewhat indifcreetly, as giving away boun. tifully to men of no merit: And reffraining all his fayours from him, as seeming close fifted, and parting with nothing: he tooke it as a diminishing of his for mer reputation, and a great empairing of his fame, wherfore he resolved on his departure thence, and made his fuit to the King that he might obtain it. The King did grant it, bestowing on him one of the very best Mules, and the goodliest that ever was backr, a gift most highly pleasing to Rogiero, in regard of the long journey he inunded to ride. Which being delivered, the King gave charge to one of his Gentlemen, to compaffe fuch convenient means, as to ride thorow the country with Ragiero, yet in fuch manner, as he fhould not perceive, that the King had purpolely fent him to to doe. Respectively he should observe whatsoever hee faid concerning the King, his geftures, Imiles, and other behaviour, shaping his answers accordingly, and on the next morning, to command his returne backe with him to the King.

2 3

Nos

one of sone, ch, and nfide-

all

a-

are

hy

nfidefomes

Novell, 1. The Tenth Day,

Nor was the Gontleman flacke in this command, but noting Regieroes departing forth of the City, he mounted on horfebacke likewife, and immediately after came into his company, making him believe, that hee journied towards Italy. Regierorode on the Mule which the King had given him, with diverfitie of speeches passing betweene them. About three of the clocke in the afternoone, the Gentleman said, It were not amissed for a while, till the heate be a little overpass. So taking an Inne, and the horses being in the stable, they all staled,

except the Mule.

Being mounted againe, and riding on further, the Gentleman duly observed whatsoever Rogiero spake, and comming to the paffage of a fmall River or Brooke; the rest of the beasts dranke, and not the Mule, but ftaled in the River: which Signior Rogiero feeing, clapping his hands on the Mules mane, he faid. What a wicked beaft art thou? Thou art just like thy Mafter that gave thee to me. The Gentleman committed the words to memory, as he did many other paffing from Rogiers. riding along the reft of the day, yet none in disparagement of the King, but rather highly in his commendazion. And being the next morning mounted on horsebacke, seeming to hold on still the way for Tuscane; the Gentleman fulfilled the Kings command, caufing Rogiero to returne backe againe with him, which willing. ly he yeelded to doc.

When they were come to the Court, and the King made acquainted with the words, which Rogiero spake to his Mule; he was called into the presence, where the King shewed him a gracious countenance, and demanded of him, why hee had compared him to his Mule? Signior Rogiero nothing daunted, but with a bold and constant spirit, thus answered. Sir, I made the comparison, because, like as you give, where there is no conveniency, and bestow nothing where reason requireth:

even fo, the Mule would not stale where shee should have done, but where was water too much before, there the did it. Beleeve mee Signior Regiero, replied the King, If I have not given you such gifts, as (perhaps) I have done to divers other, farre inferior to you in honour and merit; this happened not thorow any ignorance in me, as nocknowing you to be a most ralianz Knight, and well-worthy of speciall respect : but rather through your owne ill fortune, which would not fuffer me to do it, whereof thee is guilty, and not I, as the cruth thereof shall make it selfe apparent to you. Sir, answered Regiero, I complaine not, because I have reccived no gift from you, as defiring thereby coverously to become the richer; but in regard you have not as yet any way acknowledged, what vertue is remaining in me. Nevertheleffe, I allow your excuse for good and scasonable, and am heartily contented, to behold whatfoever you please; although I do confidently credit you, without any other testimony.

The King conducted him then into the great Hall, where (as he had before given order) flood two great Chefts fast locke; and in the presence of all his Lords, the King thus fpake, Signior Regiero, in one of thefe Chefts is mine imperiall Crowne, the Scepter Royall, the mound, and many more of my richeft girdles, rings, plate, and Iewels, even the very best that are mine: the other is full of earth onely. Chuse one of these two, and which thou makest election of; upon my Royall Word thou fhalt enjoy it. Hereby shalt thou evidently perceive, who hath beene ingratefull to thy defervings, either I, of thine owne bad fortune. Rogiers feeing it was the Kings pleasure to have it so; choic one of them, which the King caused presently to be opened, it approving to be the same that was full of earth, whereas

the King smiling, said thus unto him.

You fee Signior Rogiero, that which I faid concerning Your ill fortune, is very true : but questionlesse, your

valour

conireth: CYCH

bue!

oun.

ame

our-

a the

Hing

e af-

Sir,

for a

g an

aled,

, the

ake,

ooke:

t ft 1-

pping

icked

gave

ds to

iere.

rage-

nda-

orfe-

re:the

g Ro-

lling.

King

Spake

re the

man-

tule?

d and

mpa-

Novell. 1. The Tenth Day,

valour is of such desert, as I ought to oppose my self as gainst all her malevolence. And because I know right, that you are not minded to become a Spaniard, I will give you neither Castle nor dwelling place: but I will bestow the Chest on you (in meere despight of your malicious fortune) which shee so unjustly tooke away from you Carry it homewith you into your Courtey, that there it may make an apparant testimony, in the fight of all your well-willers, both of your owne vertuous deservings, and my bounty. Signior Rogiero humbly receiving the Chest, and thanking his Majestie for so liberall agift, returned home joyfully therewith, into his native countrey of Tustany.

Chinotto di Tacco, toole the Lord Abbot of Clugni as his prisoner, and cured him of a most grievous disease, which he had in his stomache, and afterward set him at liberty. The same Lord Abbot, when hee returned to the court of Kome, reconciled Chinotto to Bonisace; who made him a Knight, and Lord Prior of a goody Hospitall.

The fecond Novell.

Wherein is declared that good men doe fometimes fall into bad corditions, onely occasioned thereto by necessity: and what meanes are to be used, for their reducing to goodnesse agains.

The magnificence and Royall bounty, which King Alphonfo beflowed on the Florentine Knight, paffed through the whole affembly with no meane applicate and the King (who gave it the greatest praise of all) commanded Madam Eliza, to take the second turne in order; whereupon thus she began.

Faire Ladies, if a King thewed himfelfe magnificently minded, and expressed his liberall bounty to such a man, as had done him good and honourable firvices: at can be termed no more than a vertuous deed well

done

2.

ht,

vill

vill

our .

Nay

ey,

the

rtu-

m-

for

111-

s his

cafe,

him

d to

ace;

oodiy

Il in-

Tity:

g to

Sing

affed

ule,

all)

ne in

cent-

ch a

ccs:

well

dong

done, and becomming a King. But what will we fay, when we heare that a Prelate of the Church, flewed himselse wonderously magnificent, and to such a one as was his enemy; can any malicious tongue speake ill of him? Vadoubtedly, no other answer is to be made, but the action of the King was meerely vertue, and that of the Prelate, no leffe than a miracle: for how can it be otherwise, when they are more greedily covetous than women, and deadly enemies to all liberality? And akhough every man (naturally) defireth revenge for injuries and abutes dene unto him: yet men of the Church, in regard that they daily preach patience, and command (above all things elfe) remission of sianes: it would appeare a mighty blemish in them, to be more trovvard and furious than other men. But I am to speak of a reverend Prelate of the Church, as also concerning his magnificent bounty, to one that was his enemy, and yet became his reconciled friend, as you shall perceive by my Novell.

Ghinotto di Tacco, for his infolent and flout robbeies, became a man very farre famed, who being Lattisfied from Sienna, and an enemie to the Counteffe Difanta . Fiore : prevailed to by his bold and head-ftrong pertwahons, that the Towne of Raticoufant rebelled against the Church of Rome; wherein he remaining, all pasfengers whatfoever, travelling any way thereabout, were robde and rifled by his theeving Companions. At the time whereof I now fpeake, Bonif de the eight, governed as Pope at Rome, and the Lord Abbor of Chignifaccounted to be one of the richest Prelates in the world) came to Rome, and there either by fome furfeit, excelle of feeding, or otherwile, his fomacke being grievonly offended and pained; the Philitians advited him, to travell to the Baths at Sienna, where he should receive in:mediate cure. In which respect; his departure being licenced by the Pope, to fet onward thither, with great and pompous carriages, of Horfes, Mules, and a goodly traine,

21 5

traine, without hearing any rumour of the theevish.

Chinotto di Tacco, being advertised of his comming, fpred about his scouts and nets, and without misling fo much as one Page, that up the Abbot, with all his traine and baggage, in a place of narrow reftraint, out of which he could by no meanes eleape. When this was done he fent one of his most sufficent attendants, (well accompanied) to the Lord Abbet, who faid to him in his Mafters name, that if his Lordflip were fo pleafed, he might come and vifite Ghinotto at his Castle. Which the Abbot hearing, answered chollerickly, that he would not come thither, because hee had nothing to say to Chinotto : but meant to proceede on his journey, and would faine see who durft presume to hinder his passe, To which tough words, the messenger thus mildely an-Swered. My Lord (quoth hee) you are arrived in such a place, where we feare no other force, but the ill cons Billing power of heaven, clearely exempted from the Popes hunder cracks, of maledictions, interdictions, or whatfoe ... ele: and therefore it would be much better for you, if you pleased to doe as Ghinotto advifeth you.

During the time of this their interpatlance, the place was suddenly round ingirt with strong armed theeves, and the Lord Abbot perceiving, that both he, and all his followers were surprized: tooke his way (though very ampatiently) towards the Castle, and likewise all his company and carriages with him. Being dismounted, he was condusted (as Ghinetto had appointed) all alone into a small Chamber of the Castle, it heing very darke and uneasse, but the rest of his traine, every one according to his rancke and qualitie, were all well lodged in the Castle, their horses, goods, and all things else, delivered into secure keeping, without the least touch of injury or prejudice. All which being orderly done, Ghizetto himselse went to the Lord Abbot, and said. My

Lord

rifh

ng,

310

his

out

Was

well

n in

fed.

nich

culd

y to

and

fic.

an-

cha

ons

the

ns.

ach

dv:-

lace

his

ery

his

, he

one

ute

or-

de-

n of

My

ord

Lord, Ghinotto, to whom you are a welcome gueff, requesteth, that it might be your pleasure to tell him, whither you are travelling, and upon what occasion?

The Lord Abbot being a very wife man, and his angry diftemper more moderately qualified; revealed whither he went, and the cause of his going thither. Which when Gninotto had heard, hee departed counteously from him, and began to consider with himselfe, how he might cure the Abbot; yet without any Bathe. So, commanding a good fire to be kept continually in his small Chamber, and very good attendance on him; the next morning, he came to visite him againe, bringing a faire white Napkin on his arme, and in it two slices or toastes of fine manchet, a goodly cleare glasse full of the purest white-Bastard of Corniglia (but indeed, of the Abbots owne provision brought thicher with him) and then he spoke to him in this manner.

My Lord, when Ghinotte was younger than now he is, he studied Philicke, and hee commanded me to tell you, that the very best medicine, he could ever learne against any disease in the stomacke, was this which hee had provided for your Lordinip, as an especiall preparative, and which he should finde to be very comfortable. The Abbot, who had a better Romacke to eate, than any will or defire to talkealthough he did it fomewhat dildainefully, yet he eare up both the toaftes, and roundly dranke off the Glaffe of Baftard. Afterward, diues other speeches passed betweene them, the one Rill advising in Physicall manner, and the other feeming to care little for it: but moved many questions concerning Ghinotto, and earnefly defired to fee him. Such speeches as savoured of the Abbots discontentment, and came from him in passion; were clouded with courteous acceptance, and not the least figne of amy mislike : but affuring his Lordship, that Ghinet to intended very thortly to fee him, and fo they parted for chat time. Non Nor returned he any more, till the next morning with the like two toastes of bread, and such another Glasse of white Bastard, as hee had brought him at the first, continuing the same course for divers dayes after: till the Abbot had eaten (and very hungerly too) a pretter store of dried Beanes, which Ghinotto purposely, (yet secretly) had hidden in the Chamber. Whereupon he demanded of him (as seeming to be so enjoyed by his pretended Master) in what temper he sound his stomacke now? I should find my stomacke well enough (answered the Lord Abbot) if I could get forth of thy Masters singers, and then have some good soode to feed on: for his medicines have made mee so soundly stomacks, that I am ready to starve with hunger.

When Ghinatto was gone from him, he then prepared a very faire Chamber for him, adorning it with the Abbots owne rich hangings, and also his Plate and other moveables, such as were alwayes used for his service. A costly dinner he prepared likewise, whereto hee invited divers of the Towne, and many of the Abbots chiefest followers: then going to him against he next morning, he said. My Lord, seeing you doe seele your stomacke so well, it is time you should come forth of the Instrmary. And taking him by the sand, he brought him to the prepared Chamber, where he left him with his owne people, and went to give order for the dinners serving in, that it might be prepared in magnificant magner.

The Lord Abbot recreated himselfe a while with his owne people, to whom hee recounted the course of his life since hee saw them; and they likewise cold him, how kindly they had been eintreated by Ghinotto. But when dinner time was come, the Lord Abbot and all his company, were served with costly viands and excellent Wines, without Ghinottoes making himself known to the Abbot: till after he had been entertained some few dayes in this order; into the great Hall of the

Caftle,

ich affe

rft,

till

ly.

-פנו

ned

his

ccd

to-

the

fer-

0013

ext

our

ghe

vitla

lin-

his

im,

But

all

cel-

me

tle,

Caftle, Ghinotto caused all the Abbots goods and furniture to be brought, and likewise into a spacious court, whereon the windowes of the same court gazed, all his mules and horses, with their sumpters, even to the very silliest of them: which being done, Ghinotto went to the Abbot, and demanded of him, how he selt his stomack now, & whether it would serve him to venture on horsebacke as yet, or no? The Lord Abbot answered, that he found his stomacke perfectly recovered, his body strong enough to endure travell, and all things well, so he were delivered from Ghionotto.

Hereupon, hee brought him into the hall where his furniture was, as also all his people, and commanding a window to be opened, whereat he might behold his horses, he said. My Lord, let mee plainely give you to understand, that neither cowardile, or basenesse of minde, induced Ghinotto di Tacco (which is my felf)to become a lurking robber on the high-wayes, an enemie to the Pope, and fo (confedently) to the Romane Court : but onely to fave his owne life and honour. knowing himselfe to be a Gentleman cafe out of his owne house, and having (beside) infinite enemies. But. because you seeme to be a worthy Lord, I will not (although I have cured your ftomacks difeafe) deale with you as I doe to others, whole goods when they fall into my power) I take fuch part of as I please : but rather. am well contented, that my necessities being confidered by your felf, you spare me out a portion of the things. you have here, answerable to your owne liking. For all are present here before you, both in this Hall, and in the Court beneathe, free from any spoile, or the least impairing. Wherefore, give a part, or take all, if you pleale, and then depart hence when you will, or abide here still, for now you are at your owne free liberty.

The Lord Abbot wondred not a little, that a robber on the high wayes, should have such a bold and liberall spirit, which did very well please him; and instantly, his former

former harred and spleene against Ghinotto, became converted into cordiall love and kindnesse, so that (embracing him in his armes) hee faid. I protest upon my yow made to Religion, that to win the love of fuch a man, as I plainely perceive thee to be: I would undergoe farre greater injuries, than those which I have received at thy hands. Accurfed be cruell destiny, that forced thee to fo base a kinde of life, and did not blesse thee with a fairer Fortune. After he had thus spoken, he left there the greater part of all his goods, and returned backe againe to P.ome, with fewer horses and a meaner graine.

During these passed accidents, the Pope had received entelligence of the Lord Abbots furprizall, which was not a little displeasing to him: but when hee faw him returned, he demanded, what benefit he received at the Bathes? Whereto the Abbot merrily fmiling, thus replied. Holy Father, I met with a most skilfull Physicion neerer hand, whose experience is beyond the power of the Bathes, for by him I am very perfectly cured ; and so discoursed all at large. The Pope laughing heartily, and the Abbot continuing on still his report; moved with an high and magnificent courage, hee demanded. one gracious favour of the Pope : who imagining that he would request a matter of greater moment, than her did, freely offered to grant, whatfoever hee defired.

Holy Father, answeredthe Lord Abbot, all the humble fute which I make to you, is, that you would be pleased to receive into your grace and favour, Ghinotto di Tacco my Physitian, because among all the vertuous men, deferving to have especial account made of them, I never met with any equall to him, both in honour and honesty. What foever injury he did to me, I impute it as a greater in-fortune, than any way hee deferyeth. to be charged withall. Which wretched condition of his, if you were pleased to alter, and bestow on him some better means of maintenance to livelike a worthy man,

as he is no lesse: I make no doubt, but (in very short time) he will appeare as pleasing to your Holinesse, as

(in my best judgement) I thinke him to be.

me

m-

my

ha

624

rc-

hat

cile

he

ned

ner

red

NAS

im

the

reion r of

and

ily,

ved

ded .

hat

hee

ım-

be

otto

ous

em,

our

utc

reth

his

ome

as

The Pope, who was of a magnanimious spirit, and one that highly affected men of vertue, hearing the commendable motion made by the Abbot; returned answer, that he was as willing to grant it, as the other defired it, sending Letters of sase conduct for his comming thither. Ghinotto receiving such affurance from the Court of Rome, came thither immediatly, to the great joy of the Lord Abbot; and the Pope finding him to be a man of of valour and worth upon reconciliation, remitted all former errors, creating him Knight, and Lord Prior of the very cheefest Hospitallin Romes. In which Office hee lived long time after, as a loyall servant to the Church, and an honest friend to the Lord Abbot of Clugay.

Mithridanes envying the life and liberality of Nathans and travelling thither, with a fetled refolution to kill him: chanceth to conferre with Nathan unknowne. And being instructed by him, in what manner he might best performe the bloody deede, according as hee gave direction, hee meeteth him in a small Thicket or wood, where knowing him to be the same man, that taught him how to take away his life: Confounded with shame, be acknowledgeth his horrible intention, and becommeth his loyall friend.

The third Novell.

Showing in an excellent and lively demonstration, that any especial bonourable vertue, persevering and dwelling in a truly noble soule, cannot be violenced or confounded, by the most politicke attempts of natice and envie.

T appeared to the whole Assembly, that they had beard a matter of mervaile, for a Lord Abbot to performe

forme any magnificent action: but their admiration ceasing in filence, the King commanded Philoftratus to

follow next, who forthwith thus began.

Honourable Ladies, the bounty and magnificence of Aiphonfo King of Spaine, was great indeede, and that done by the Lord Abbot of Clugni, a thing (perhaps) never heard of in any other. But it will feeme no lefte marvellous to you, when you heare, how one man, in expression of great liberality to another man, that cannelly defired to kill him; should be secretly disposed to give him his hie, which had beene lost, if the other would have taken it, as I purpose to acquaint you with-

all, in a fhort Novell.

Most certaine it is, at least, if Faith may be given to the report of certaine Geneways, and other men reforting to those remote parts; that in the Countrey of Cathaya, there lived sometime a Gentleman, rich beyond comparison, and named Nathan. Hechaving his living adjoyning to a common rode-way, whereby men travelled from the East to the West (as they did the like from the West unto the East, as having no other passage) and being of a hountifull and cheerefull disposition, which heavas willing to make knowne by experience: hee summoned together many Master Masons and Carpenters, and there erected (in a short time) one of the greatest, and goodhest, and most beautifull houses (in manner of a Princes Pallace) that ever was seen in all those quatters.

With moveables and all kinde of furnishment, befitting a house of such outward apparance, he caused it to be plentisully stored, onely to receive, entertaine, and known all Gentlemen, or other Travellers whatsoever; as had occasion to passe that way; being not enprovided also of such a number of servants, as might continually give attendance on all commers and goers. Two and sity severall gates, standing alway wide open; and over each of them in great golden Characters was write-

sch,

When

ten, Welcome, Welcome, and gave free admission to all comers whatsoever. In this honorable order (observed as his estated custome) he persevered solong while, as not onely the East parts, but also those in the West, were every where acquainted with his same and renowne. Being already well stept into yeares, but yet not wearie of his great charge and liberality: it fortuned, that the rumor of his noble hospitality, came to the care of another gallant Gentleman, named Mithridanes, living in

a Countrey not farre off from the other.

The Gentleman, knowing himfelfe no leffe wealthy than Nathan, and envioully repining at his vertue and liberality, determined in his mind, to dim and obscure the others bright splendor, by making himselfe far more famous. And having built a Pallace answerable to that of Nathans, with like winding of gates, and welcome inscriptions; he began to extend immeasurable courtefice, unto all fuch as were disposed to visite him; so that (in a short while) he grew very famous in infinite places. It chanced on a day, as Mithidanes fate all alone within the goodly Court of his Pallace:a poore woman entred at one of the gates, craving an almes of him. which the had; and returned in againe at a fecond gate, comming also to him, and had a second almes; continuing fo ftill a dozen times; but in the thirteenth returning Mitbridanes (aid to her: Good woman, you goe and come very often, & ftill you are ferved with almes. When the old woman heard these words, she said. O the liberalitie of Nathan! How honourable and wonderfull is that? I have past through two and thirtie gates of his Pallace, even fuch as are here, and at every one I received an almes, without any knowledge taken of me, either by him, or any of his fellowers : and here I have past but through thirteene gates, and am there both acknowledged and taken. Farewell to this house, for I never meane to vifite it any more; with which words the departed thence, & never after came thither again.

tion us to

that aps) leffe n, in car-

d to ther ith-

recy of beg his men

ispo-

d the

efitlit to , and ever; yided ually

eene

and o-

When Mithridanes had a while pondered on her speeches, hee waxed much discontented, as taking the words of the old woman, to extell the renown of Nathan, and darken and ecclipfe his glory, whereupon he faid to himfelfe, Wretched man as Iam, when thall I attaine to the height of liberality, and performe such wonders, as Nathan doth? In feeking to furmount him, I cannot come neere him in the very meanest. Vindoubtedly, I spend all my cudeavour but in vaine, except I rid the world of him, which (feeing his age will not make an end of him) I must needs doe with my owne hands. In which bloudy determination (without revealing his intent to anyone) hee mounted on horfe-backe, with few attendants in his company, and after three dayes journey, arrived where Nathan dwelt. Hee gave order to his men, to make no facw of being his fervants, or any way to acknowledge him : but to provide themicives of convenient lodgings, untill they heard othertydings from hims

About evening, and (in this manner) alone by him-Selfe, neere to the Palace of Nathan, he met him solita. rily walking, not in pompous apparell, whereby to be distinguished from a meaner man; and, because hee knew him not, neither had heard any relation of his description, he demanded of him, if he knew where Nashan then was? Nathan with a cheerefull countenance, thus replied. Faire Sir, there is no man in thefe parts, that knoweth better how to shew you Nathan than I do; and therefore if you be fo pleased, I will bring youto him. Mithridanes faid, therein hee fhould doe him : great kindenesse: albeit (if it were possible) hee would be neither knowne or feene of Nathan. And that (quoth he) can I also doe sufficiently for you, seeing it is your will to have it lo, if you will goe along with me.

Dismounting from his horse, he walked on with No. shan, diverfly discoursing, untill they came unto the Pallace, where one of the fervants taking Mithidanes his

horfe,

V

h

to

TC

CI

m

2/2

210

70

herse, Nathan rounded the sellow in the eare, that hee should give warning to all in the house, for revealing to the Gentleman, that he was Nathan; as accordingly it was performed. No sooner were they within the Pallace, but he conducted Mithridane; into a goodly chamber, where none (as yet) had seene him, but such as were appointed to attend on him reverently; yea, and he did himselfe greatly honour him, as being loth to

leave his company.

er

he

4.

he

I

ch

nt

ıt.

e,

ill

ay

h-

on

nd

le.

ng

to

cy

1-

12-

be

ce

11\$

a.

(8,

0;

to

2

ild

eh

u

4

he

118

C,

While thus Mithridanes conversed with him, he defired to know (albeit hee respected him much for his yeares) what he was. In troth Sir, answered Nathan, I am one of the meanest servants to Nathan, and from my child hood, have made my selfe thus old in his service: yet never hath hee bestowed any other advancement on mee, than as you now see; in which respect, howsever other men may commend him, yet I have no reason as all to doe it. These words, gave some hope to Mithidanes, that with a little more counsell, hee might securely put in execution his wicked determination. Nathan likewise demanded of him (but in very humble manner) of whence, and what he was, as also the businesse inviting him thither: off-ring him his utmost aide and counsell, in what soever consisted in his power.

Methridanes fat an indifferent while meditating with his thoughts before he would return any answer: but at the last, concluding to repose considence in him (in regard of his pretended discontentment) with many tircumstantiall perswasions, first for fidelity, next for constancy, and lastly for counsell and assistance, he declared to him truly what he was, the cause of his comming thither, and the reason urging him thereto. Nathan hearing these words, and the detestable deliberation of Mithridanes, became quite changed in himself; yet wisely making no outward appearance theros, with a bold courage and setled countenance, thus he replied.

Mithria-

Mithidanes, thy Father was a noble Gentleman, and (in vertuous qualities) inferior to none, from whom (as now I fee) thou defireft not to be degenerate, having undertaken fo bold and high an enterprize, I meane, in being liberall and bountifull unto all men. I doe greatly commend the envie which thou bearest to the vertue of Nathan because if there were many more such men, the world that is now wretched and miferable, would become good and conformable. As for the determination which thou haft disclosed romee, I have sealed it up fecretly in my loule:wherein I can better give thee counfell, than any especiall helpe or furtherance; and the course which I would have thee to observe, followers thus in few words. This window which we now looks forth at, theweth thee a small wood or thicket of trees, being little more than the quarter of a miles distance hence; whereto Nathan usually mikethevery morning, and there continueth time long enough : there maift thou very eafily meete him, and do what sever thou intendest to him. If thou kilft him, because thou maift with fafetie returne home unto thine owneabiding, take not the fame way which guided thee thither, but another lying on the left hand, and directing speedily out of the wood, as being not fo much haunted as the other, but rather free from all refort, and fureft for visiting thy own country, after fuch a difmall deed is done.

When Mithidanes had received this infruction, and Nathan was departed from him; he fecreely gave intelligence to his men, (who likewife were lodged, as welcome strangers, in the same house) at what place they should stay for him the next morning. Night being pair fed over, and Nathan risen, his heart altered not a jot from his counsell given to Mithidanes, much lesse changed from any part thereof; but all alone by himselfe, walked on to the wood, the place appointed for his death. Mithidanes also being risen, taking his Bow and Sword (for other weapons had he none) mounted

on horsebacke, and so came to the wood, where somewhat far off) he espied Nathan walking, and no creature with him. Dismounting from his horse, he had resolved (before he would kill him) not onely to see, but alfo to heare him speake: so stepping roughly to him, and taking hold of the bonner of his head, his face being then turned from him, hee said. Old man, thou must die. Whereunto Nathan made no other answer but thus:

Why then (belike) I have deserved it.

-

it

15

i

e.

13

1-

1-

319

10

n-

fe,

is

WO

red

OR

When Mithidanes heard him speake, and looked adviledly on his face, he knew him immediatly to be the fame man, that had entertained him fo lovingly, conversed with him so familiarly, and counselled him so faithfully : all which overcomming his former fary, his harsh nature became meerly confounded with shame : So throwing downe his drawne fword, which hee held readily prepared for the deedshe profrated himfelfe at Nathans feete, and in teares, spake in this manner. Now doe I manifeftly know (most loving Father) your admirable bounty and liberality; confidering, with what industrious providence, you made the monnes for your comming hither, prodigally to bestow your life on me, which I have no right unto, although you were fo willing to part with it. But those high and supreame powers, more carefull of my duty, than I my felfe : even at the very instant, and when it was most needfull, opened the eyes of my better understanding, which infernall envy had closed up before. And therefore, looke how much you have beene forward to pleasure me; fo much the more thame and punishment, I confesse my heinous transgression hath justly deserved : take therefure on me (if you please) such revenge, as you thinke (in juffice) answerable to my finne.

Nathanlovingly raifed Mithridanes from the ground, then kiffing his cheeke, and tenderly embracing him, he faid. Sonne, thou needeft not to aske, much leffe to obtaine pardon, for any enterprise of thine, which thou

canft

const not yet tearme to be good or bad: because thou foughtest not to bereave mee of my life, for any hatred thon bearest me, but onely in covering to be reputed the worthier man. Take then this affurance of me, and beleeve it constantly, that there is no man living, whom I love and honour, as I doe thee: confidering the greatneffe of thy minde, which confifteth not in the heaping up of money, as wretched and milerable Worldlings make it their onely felicity; but, contending in bounty to fpend what is thine, didt hold it for no fhame to kill me, thereby to make thy felfe so much the more worthily famour.

Nor is it any matter to be wondered at, in regard that Emperors and the greatest Kings, had never made fuch extendure of their Dominions, and configuently of their renowne, by any other Art, than killing ; yet not one man onely, as thou wouldeft have done: but infinite numbers, burning whole Countries, and making desolate huge Townes and Cities, only to enlarge their Dominion, and further spreading of their fame. Wherefore, if for the increasing of thine owne renowne, thou walt defirous of my death: it is no matter of noveity, and therefore deferving the leffe marvell, feeing men are flaine daily, and all for one purpose or other.

Mithridanes, excufing no further his molevolent deliberation, but rather commending the honest defence, which Nathan made on his behalfe; proceede fo farre in after discoursing, as to tell him plainely, that it did wonderoufly amaze him, how he durft come to the faeall appointed place, himselfe having so exactly plotted and contrived his owne death: whereunto Nathante. curned this answer.

I would not have thee Mithridanes, to wonder at my counfell or determination; because, fince age bath made me Mafter of mine own will, and I refolved to do that, Tho whein thou haft begunto follow me : never came any Wh mun to me, whom I did not content (if I could) in any whi

shing

d

pr

tal

ha

tha

tha

2116

shing he demanded of me. It was thy fortune to come for my life, which when I faw thee fo defirous to have it, I refolved immediatly to bestow it on thee : and fo much the rather, because thou shouldst not be the onely man, that ever departed hence, without enjoying whatfoever he demanded. And to the end thou mightft the more affuredly have it, I gave thee that advice, leaft by not enjoying mine, thou fhouldest chance to lose thine own. I have had the use of it full fourescore years, all this while, with the confummation of all my delights and pleafuses : and well I know, that according to the course of Nature (as it fares with other men, and generally with all things elfe) it cannot be long before it must leave me.

Wherefore, I hold it much better for me to give it away freely, as I have alwayes done my goods and treafure ; than be curious in keeping it, and fuffer it to be ' taken away from me (whether I will or no) by Nature. A fmall gift it is, if time make me up the full fumme of an hundred yeares: how miserable is it then, to fland beholding for foure or five, and all of them vexation too? Take it then I intreate thee, if thou wilt have it; for I never met with any man before (but thy felfe) that did defire it, nor (perhaps) shall finde any other to requeft it : for the longer I keepe it, the worle it will be effeemed: and before it grow contemptible, take it I

pray thce.

LY الن

-10

ard ade

ntly yet

: IIIking

heir ieic-

thou

eity,

men

nt de-

fence, farie

it did

the fa-

plotted

han IC.

r at my

Methridanes, being exceedingly confounded with thame, bathfully faid: Fortune fore-fend, that I should take away a thing fo precious as your life is, or once to have fo vile a thought of it, as lately I had ; but rather than I would diminish one day thereof, I could wish, that my time might more amply enlarge it. Forthwith th made answered Nathan, faying. Wouldst thou (if thou couldst) do that, shorten thine owne dayes, onely to lengthen mine? ame any Why then thou wouldest have me to doe that to thee,) in any which (as yet) I never did unto any man namely robbe thing thee thee, to enrich my felfe. I will infruct thee in a far better course, if thou wilt be advised by me. Lusty and young, as now thou are, thou shalt dwell here in my house, and be called by the name of Nathan. Aged, and spent with yeares, as thou seefs I am, I will goe live in thy house, and be called by the name of Mithridanes. So, both the name and place shall illustrate thy glory, and I live contentedly, without the very least thought of envice.

Deare Father, answered Mithridanes, if I knew so well how to direct mine owne actions, as you doe, and alwayes have done, I would gladly accept your most liberall offer: but because I plainely perceive, that my very best endeavours, must remaine darkened by the bright renowne of Nathan: I will never seeke to the plaine that in another, which I cannot (by any meanes) increase in my selfe, but (as you have worthily taughtme) live contented with my owne condition.

After these, and many more like loving speeches had passed betweene them; according as Nathan very instantly requested, Mithridanes returned backs with him to the Pallace, where many dayes hee highly honoured and respected him, comforting and councilling him, to persevere alwayes in his honourable determination. But in the end, when Mithridanes could abide there no longer, because necessary occasions called him home; he departed thence with his men, having found by good experience, that he could never goe beyond Nathan in

re

m;

ac

it i

the

cen Chal

th.

inju

(15:

cair

liberality.

Signior Gentile de Carifendi, heing come from Modent tooke a Gentlewom an, named Madam Catharina, forth of a grave, wherein the was but ied for dead: which all he did, in regard of his former hanest affection to the faul Gentlewoman. Madam Catharina remaining these afterward, and delivered of a goody Sonne: was so Signin

Signior Gentile) delivered to her owne has band, named Signior Niceluccio Caccianimico, and the young infant with her.

The fourth Novell.

Wherein is showne, that true love hath almayes beene and so still is, the occasion of many worthy courtefies.

Dy judgement of all the affembly, is was reputed to give away his ownelife, and to his hatefull enemy. In which respect, it passed with generall affirmation, that Nathan (in the vertue of liberality) had exceeded Alphanjo King of Spatae, but (especially the Auber of clugny. So after every one had delivered their opinion, the King turning himselfe to Madam Lauretta, gave her such a signe, as well instructed her understanding that she thould be the next in order, whereto the gladly

yeelding, began in this manner.

20

nd

ny

nd

in

es.

of

ind

li-

my

m-

selis.

had

in-

him

inred

17,10

tion.

c no

good

an in

forth

ich aft

to the

g there

ous (b) signin

Youthfull Ladies, the discourses already past, have beene fo worthy and magnificent, yea, reaching to fuch a height of glorious (plendour; as (me thinkes) there remaineth no more matter, for us that are yet to fpeake, wherby to enlarge lo famous an argument, and in fuch manner as it ought to be: except we lay hold on the actions of love, wherein is never any want of subject, it is fo faire and spacious a field to walke in. Wherefore, as well in behalfe of the one, as advancement of the other, whereto our inflant age is most of all inclined : I purpole to acquaint you with a generous and magnificent act, of an amourous Gentleman, which when it shall be duely considered on, perhaps wil appeare equall to any of the reft, at least, if it may passe for currant that men may give away their treasures, forgive mighty injuries, and lay downe life it felfe, honour and renown (which is farre greater) to infinite dangers, onely to antaine any thing escemed and affected. Vnder@and

Vnderstand then (Gracious hearers) that in Bologna, a very famous City of Lombardi, there lived sometimes Knight, highly respected for his vertues, named Signior Gentile de Carisendi, who (in his younger dayes) was enamoured of a Gentlewoman called Madam Catharina, the wife of Signior Nicoluccio Caccianimico. And because during the time of his amorous pursuite, hee found but a sottish enterchange of affection from the Ludy; he went (as hopelesse of any successe) to be Potessue of Modena, whereto he was called by place and order.

At the same time, Signior Nicoluccio being absent from Bologna, and his Lady at a Farme-house in the Countrey (about three miles distant from the City) because thee was great with child, and somewhat neere the time of her teeming: it came to passe, that some dangerous accident befell her, which was so powerfull in operation, as no figne of life appeared remaining in her, but the was reputed (even in the judgement of the best Phisitions, whereoffhee wanted no attendance) to be verily dead. And because in the opinion of her Pas rents and neerest kindred, the time for her deliverance evas yet fo farre off, as the Infant within her, wanted much of a perfect creature; they made the leffe mourming; but in the next Church, as also the vault belonging to her Ancestors, they gave her buriallyery speedily.

Which tidings comming to the hearing of Signiot Gentile, by one that was his endeared friend: Although (while the lived) he could never be gracious in her favour, yet her to fudden death did greatly grieve him, whereupon hee difcourfed in this fort with himfelfa Deare Madam Catharina, I am not a little forry for thy death, although (during thy life-time) I was feared, worthy of one kind looke: Yet even now being dead, thou canft not prohibite mee, but I may robbe thee of kille. No fooner had hee spoke the words, but it being

ica

fin

for

So

mai

her

close

WOLL

donie

hovy

and

done

governed by Pamphilus.

then night, and taking such order, as none might know of his departure; he mounted on horse-backe, accompanied onely with one servant, and staied no where, till he came to the vault where the Lady was buried. Which when he had opened, with instruments convenient for his purpose, he descended down into the vault, and kneeled downe by the Biere whereon shee lay, and in her wearing garments, according to the usuall manner, with teares trickling mainely downe his cheekes,

he bestowed infinite fweet killes on her.

But as we commonly fee, that mens delires are never contented, but still will prefume on further advantages, especially such as love entirely : so fared it with Gentile. who being once minded to get him gone, as farisfied with the oblation of hiskiffes; wold needs yet flep back again, faying. Why should I not touch her yuory breast, the Adamant that drew all defires to adore her? Ah let me touch it now, for never hereafter can I be halfe fo happie. Overcome with this alluring appetite, gently hee laid his hand upon her breaft, with the like awefull refpect, as if the were living, and holding it fo an indiffetent while: either he felt, or his imagination fo perfwaded him, the heart of the Lady to beate and pant. Cafling off all fond feare, and the warmth of his increafing the motion : his inward foule affured him, that the was not dead atterly but had fome small sense of life remaining in her, whereof he would needs be further in-

So gently as possible he could, & with the help of his man, he tooke her forth of the monument, and laying her foftly on his horse before him, conveighed her closely to his house in Bologna. Signior Gentile had a worthy Lady to his Mother, a woman of great wisedome and vertue, who understanding by her Sonne, how matters had happened; moved with compassion, and suffering none in the house to know what was done, made a good sire, and very excellent Bathe, which

(1 2

recalled

ir being

nt he

Y)

ere

me full

gin

the

Pas

ance

nour-

clon-

Spee-

hough

her fa-

ve him,

imfelfe.

for thy

fearcely

ne dead,

recalled backe againe wrong-wandring life. Then fetching a vehement figh, opening her eyes, & looking very frangely about her, free faid. Alas! where am I now? wherero the good old Lady kindely replied, faying Comfort your felfe Madam, for you are in a good place. Her spirits being in a better manner met together, and the gazing every way about her, not knowing well where thee was, and feeing Signior Gentile standing before her; he correated his mother to tell her by what meanes the came thither; which the good old Lady did, Gentile himselfe belging to relate the whole history. A while thee grieved and lamented, but afterward gave them most hearty thankes, humbly requesting, that, in regard of the love he had formerly borne her, in his house the might find no other usage, varying from the honour of her felle and her Husband, and when day was come, to be conveied home to her owne house. Madam, answered Signior Gentile, whatsoever I fought to gaine from you in former dayes, I never meane, either here, or any place elfe, to motion any more. But feeing it hath beene my happy fortune, to prove the bleffed meanes, of reducing you from death to life : you shall finde no other entertainement here, than as if you were my owne Siften. And yet the good deede which I have this night done for you, doth well deserve some courteous requitall : in which respect, I would have you not to deny me one favour, which I will prefume to crave of you. Whereto the Lady lovingly replied, that shee was willingly to grant it; provided, it were honest, and in her power : whereto Signior Genfile thus answered.

Mad in, your Parents, Kinred and friends, and generally all throughout Bologna, doe verily thinke you to be dead, wherefore, there is not any one, that will make any inquificion after you; in which regard, the favour I define from you, is no more but to abide fectetly with my Mother, untill fuch time as I return from

Modens,

lis

ma

fed

bou

Wha

Modena, which finallbe very speedily. The occasion why I move this motion, aimeth at this end, that in prefence of the chiefest persons of our City, I may make a gladfome prefent of you to your husband. The Lady knowing her felfe highly beholding to the Knight, and the request he made to be very honett, disposed her felfe to doe as he defired (although the earnestly longed, to glad her Parents and Kinred with feeingher alive) and made her promise him on her faith, to effect it in such manner, as hee pleased to appoint and give her direction.

Scarcely were thefe words concluded, but the felt the custome of women to come upon her, with paines and throwes incident to childing :wherefore, with helpe of the aged Lady, Mother to Signior Gentile, it was not long before her deliverance of a goodly Sonne, which greatly augmented the joy of her and Gentile, who tooke order, that all things belonging to a woman in fuch a case, were not wanting, but shee was as carefully respected, even as if the had beene his owne wife. Secretly hee repaired to Modena, where having given direction for his place of authority; he returned backe againe to Bologna, and there made preparation for a great and folemn feath, appointing who shold be his invited guefts, the very chiefest persons in Bologna, and (among them Signior Nicoluccio Caccianimico the efpeciall man.

10

nd

ne

er

ver

2119

to

ath

re,

ood

Ilsy

t, I

Will

y re-

d, it

Gen-

d ge-

otito

livy 3

d, the

Ceret.

e from

odena,

After he was dismounted from horsebacke, and found fo good company attending for him (the Lady alfo. more faire and healthfull than ever, and the Infanc lively disposed) he fate downe at the Table with his guelts, caufing them to be ferved in most magnificent manner, with plenty of all delicates that could be devifed, and never before was there fuch a Ioviali feaft, A bout the ending of dinner, closely he made the Lady acquainted with his further intention, and likewise in what order everything should be done, which being effected,

113

effected, hee returned to his company and used these

Specches. Honorable friends, I remember a discourse sometime made unto mee, concerning the Countrey of Perfia, and a kinde of cuftome there observed, not to be misliked in mine opinion. When any one intended to honour his friend in effectuall manner, hee invited him home to his house, and there would shew him the thing, which with greatef love he did respect; were it Wife, Friend, Sounc, Daughter, or any thing elfe whatfoever; wherewithall he spared not to affirme, that as hee had shewed him those choise delights, the like view he shold have of his heart, if with any possibility it could be done; and the very fame custome I meane now to obfervehere in our City. You have vouchfafed to honour me with your presence, at this poore homely dinner of mine, and I will welcome you after the Persian manner, in shewing you the lewell, which (above all things in the world) I ever have most respectively esteemed. But before I doe it, I crave your favourable opinion in a doubt, which I will plainely declare unto you.

If any man having in his house a good and faithfull servant, who falling into extremity of sicknesse, shall be throwne forth into the open streete, without any care or pitty taken on him: A stranger chanceth to passe by, and (moved with compassion of his weakenesse) carrieth him home to his owne house, where using all charitable diligence, and not sparing any cost, hee recovereth the sicke person to his former health. I now desire to know, if keeping the said restored person, and imploying him about his owne businesse; the first Master (by pretending his first right) may lawfully complaine of the second, and yeeld him backe againe to the first Master.

fe

che

yo

rev

tho

fter, albeit he doe make challenge of him?

All the Gentlemen, after many opinions passing among them, agreed altogether in one sentence, and gave charge to Signior Nicoluccio Caccianimico, (because

cause he was an excellent and elegant speaker) to give answer for them all. First, he commended the custome observed in Perfia, saying, he jumpt in opinion with all the reft, that the first Master had no right at all to the fervant, having not onely (in fuch necessitie) forfaken him, but also cast him forth into the comfortleffe ftreet. But for the benefit, and mercies extended to him; it was more than manifeft, that the recovered person, was become justly servant to the second Master, and in deraining him from the first, he did not offer him any injury at all. The whole company fitting (at the Table (being all very wife and worthy men) gave their verdift likewise with the confession of Signior Nicoluccio Caccianimico. Which answer did not a little please the Knight; and fo much the rather, because Nicoluccio had pronounced it, affirming himselfe to be of the same minde.

So, fitting in a pretended mufing a while, at length he faid. My honourable guests, it is now more than halfe time, that I should doe you such honour, as you have most justly deserved, by performing the promise made unto you. Then calling two of his lervants, hee fent the in to Madam Catharina (whom he had cauled to adorne her felfe in excellent manner) entreating her, that the would be pleased to grace his guests with her presence. Catharina, having deckt her child in coffly habiliments; laied it in her armes, and came with thefervants into the dyning Hall, and fate downe (as the Knight had appointed) at the upper end of the Table, and then Signior Gentile spake thus. Behold, worthy Gentlemen, this is the lewell which I have most affecled, and intend to love none other in the world; be you my Iudges, whether I have just occasion to doe fo, or no? The Gentlemen faluting her with a respective reverence, faid to the Knight; that he had great reason to affect her: And viewing heradvifedly, many of them thought her to be the very fame woman (as indeede

114

She

ng a-, and (because

e

e,

er;

ad

ld

be

b-

our

of

acr.

sin

But

ina

full

libe

care

by,

arri-

cha-

cove-

lefire

im-

lafter

inc of

t Ma

the was) but that they believed her tobe dead,

But above all the relt, Nicoluccio Caccianimico conld never be fatisfied with beholding her; and enfluned with earnest defire, to know what shee was, could not reframe (feeing the Knight was gone out of the roome) but demanded of her, whether shee was of Eologod, or a ftranger? When the Lady heard her felfe to be thus questioned, and by her husband, it seemed painfull to her, to containe from answering : Nevertheleffe, to perfect the Knights intended purpose, the fate filent. Others demanded of her, whether the fweete Boy were hers, or no; and some questioned, if the were Gentiles wife, or no, or elie his Kinfewoman; to all which demands, flice returned not any answer. But when the Knight came to them again, fome of them faid to him. Sir, this woman is a goodly creature, but the appeareth to be dumbe, which were great pitty, if it should be lo. Gentlemen (quoth he) it is no small argument of her vertue, to fit ftill and be filent at this instant. Tell us then (faid they) of whence, and what the is. Therein (quoth he) I will quickly refolve you, upon your conditionall promife: that none of you doe remove from his place, whitfoever finall be faid or done, untill I have fully delivered my minde. Every one bound himselfe by folemne promise, to performe what he had appointed, and the Tables being voided, as also the Carpets laide; then the Knight (fitting downe by the Lady) thus he began.

Worthy Gentlemen, this Lady is that true and faithfull fervant wherof I moved the question to you, whom I rook out of the cold street, where her Parents, Kindred and Friends (making no account at all of her) threw her forth, as a thing vile and unprofitable. Neverthelesse, such hath been my care and cost, that I have rescued her out of deaths priping power; and in a necre charitable disposition, which honest affection caused me to beare her; of a body, all full of terror and astrighting (as

hen

then shee was) I have caused her to become thus lovely as you see. But because you may move apparently discerne, in what manner this occasion happened; I will lay it open to you in more familiar manner. Then hee began the whole history, from the original of his unbescenning affection to her (in regard the was a worthy mans wite) and consequently, how all had happened to the instant hours, to the no meane admiration of all the hearers adding withall. Now Gentlemen (quoth hee) if you varry not from your former opinion, and especially Signior Nico'uscio Caccianimicostis Lady (by good right) is mine, and no man else, by any just time can lay any claine to her.

All fate filent, without answering one word, as expecting what hee intended further to fay: but in the meane while, Nicoluccio, the parents and kindred, but chiefely the Lady her felfe, appeared as halte melted into teares with wecoping. But Signior Gentile, tharting up from the Table taking the Infant in his arme, and leading the Lady by the hand, going to Nicoluccios thus spake Rie Sir, I will not give thee thy wife, whom both her kindred and thine, threw forth into the ffreet; but I will be from this Lady on thee, being my Goffip, and this fiveet Boy my God-lonne, who was (as I am verily perfuaded) begotten beshee, I standing witnesse for him at the Font of Eappilme, and gave him mine owr. name Gentile Let me entreate thee that, although the have lived here in mine house, for the space of three. moneths, the thould not be lefte welcome to thee than before: for I sweare to thee upon my soule, that my former attetion to her (how unjuft foever) was the onely. meanes of preferving her life: and more honefly thee. could not live with Father, Mother, or thy felfe, than, the hath done here with mine owne Mother.

Having thus ipoken, he turned to the Lady, faying, Madara, I now discharge you of all promises made me, delivering you to your husband frank & free; And when

11 5

he

ed ild he to

Id

ffe, nt. ere

the im-

her l us rein on-

have fe by ated, aide; us he

hom herew leffe, d her

beare (as he had given him the Lady, & the child in his armes, he returned to his place, and fate downe againe, Nicoluccio, with no meane joy and hearty contentment received both his wife and child, being before farre from expe-Cation of fuch an admirable comfort; returning the Knight infinite thankes (as all the rest of the Compamy did the like) who could not refraine from weeping for meere joy, for such a frange and wonderfull accident: every one highly commending Gentile, and fuch alfo as chanced to heare therof. The Lady was welcommed home to her owne house, with many moneths of Joviall feafting, and as the palled through the ffreets, all beheld her with admiration, to be fo happily recovered from her grave. Signior Gentile lived long after, a loyall friend to Nicoluccio and his Lady, and all

that were well-willers to them.

What thinke you now Ladies Can you imagine, bea cause a King gave away his Crowne and Scepter; and an Abbot (withou: any coft to himselfe) reconciled a Malefactor to the Pope; and an old idle headed man, yeelding to the mercy of his enemy; that all those actions are comparable to this of Signior Gentile? Youth and ardent affection, gave him a just and lawfull title, so her who was free (by imagined death) from Husband, Parents, and all friends elfe, the being to happily wonne into his owne possession. Yet honesty not onely overfwayed the heate of defire, which in many men is violent and immoderate ; but with a bountifull and liberall foule, that which he covered beyond all hopes elfe, and had within his owne command; he freely gave away. Beleeve me (bright Beauties) not any of the other (in grue and upright judgement) are worthy to be equalled with this, or stiled by the name of magnificent actions.

Madam Dianors, the wife of Signior Gilberto, beingimmodestly affected by Signior Ansaldo, to free ber selfe

ccio.

ved

pe-

ipa-

oing

iuch

s of

ets,

af-

all

600

and

ed a

Ri-

outh title.

and,

nne

ver-

vio-

erall

vay.

(in

onse

im-

clfe

from his tedious importunity, shee appointed him to performe (inher judgement) an act of impossibility; namety to give her a Garden, as plentifully stored with
fragrant Flowres in Ianuary, as in the flourishing
moneth of May. Ansaldo, by meanes of a bond which
hee made to a Magitian, performed her request. Signior
Githerto, the Ladges Husband, gave consent, that his
wife should fulfill her promise made to Ansaldo, who
bearing the bountiful minde of her hashand; veleated
her of her promise. And the magitian likewise discharged Signior Ansaldo, without taking ought of him.

The fifth Novell.

Admonifying at Ladies & Gentlewomen, that are definous to prefer ve their chaffity, free from all blemith and taxation; to make no promife of yeelding to any, under a compact or covenant, bow impossible foewer it flems to be.

Not any one in all the Company, but extolled the worthy act of Signior Gentile to the skies; till the King gave command to Madam Æmilia, that thee should follow next with her Tale, who boldly stepping up, began in this order.

Gracious Ladies, I thinke there is none here present among us, but (with good reason) may maintaine, that Signior Gentile performed a magnificent deede: but whoseever saith, it is impossible to be more; perhaps is ignorant in such actions, as can and may be done, as I meane to make good unto you, by a Novell not overlong or tedious.

The Countrey of Fretulium, better knowne by the name of Forum Iulij; although it be subject to much cold, yet it is pleasant, in regard of many goodly Mountaines, Rivers, and cleare running Springs, wherewith it is not meanely stored. Within those Territories is a City called Vaina, where sometime lived a faire and noble Lady, named Madam Dianera, Wife to a rich

and worthy Knight, called Sigmo: Gilberte, a man of

ve y great fame and great merit.

This beautifull Lady, being very modeft and vertuoully inclined, was highly affected by a noble Baron of those paris, carmed by the name of Signier Anjaldo Gradenfe ; a man of very great spirit, bountifull, adive in aimes, and yet very affable and courteous, which cauted him to be the better respected. His love to this Lady was extraordinarie, hardly to be contained within any moderate compasse, striving to be in like manner affected of her: to which end, thee wanted no daily folicinines, Letters, Ambaffages, and Love-tokens, all

preving to no purpoic.

This vertuous Ludy, being wearied with his often temptations, and feeing, that by denying whatfoever he demanded, yet be would not give over his fuite, but fo much the more importunately flil purited her: began to bethinke her felfe, how the might best be rid of him, by impoling tome fach taske up in him, as should be impossible (in her opinion) for him to effect. An old woman, who he employed for his continual mellenger to her, as the came one day about her ordinary errand, with her the communed in this manner. Good woman (quoth the) thou h. It to often affured me, that Signior Anfaldo loveth me above all other women in the world, offering me wonderfull its and prefents in his name, which I have alwayes retailed, and to full will doe, in regard I am not to be wonne by any fuch allurements: yet if I cook be foundly pertivaded, that his affection is answerable to thy peremptory proteflations, I should (perhaps) be the fooner wonne, to liften to his tune in milder manner, than hitherto I have done. Wherefore, if he will give me allurance to performe fuch a bufinefle as I meane to enjoyne him, hee shall the speeder heare better answer from me, and I will confirme it with mine oth.

Wonderfully Ileased was Mistresse Maquerella, to heare

heare a reply of fuch comfortable hope; and therefore defired the Lady, to tell her what the wold have done. Liften to me well (answered Madam Dianora)the matter which I would have him to effect for me, is; without the wals of our City, and during the moneth of lanuarie next enfuing, to provide me a Garden, as fairely furnished with all kinde of fragrant flowers, as the flourishing moneth of May can yeeld no better. If hee be not able to accomplish this imposition, then I command him, never hereafter to folicite me any more, either by thee, or any other whatloever: for, if you doe importune me afterward, as hitherto I have concealed his fecret conspiring, both from my husband, and all my friends; fo will I then lay his dishonest suite open to the world, that he may receive punishment accordingly, for offering to wrong a Gentleman in his wife,

When Signior Anfaldo heard her demand, and the offer beside thereupon made him (although it seemed no easie matter, but a thing meetely impossible to be done) he confidered advifedly, that the made this motion to no other end, but only to bereave him of all his hope, ever to enjoy what so earnefly he defired : neverthelette, he would not fo give it utterly over, but would needs approve what could be done. Hereupon, he fent into divers parts of the world, to finde out any one that was able to advile him in this doubtfull cafe. In the end, one was brought to him, who being well recempenced for his paines, by the Air of Nigromancie would undertake to doe it. With him Sigmor Anfaldo covenanted, binding himfelfe to pay a great fumme of money, upon performance of fo rare a deed, awaiting (in hopefull expectation) for the moneth of lanuaries:

comming.

Q.

li=

of

ldo

ve

ich

his

n-

all

en

ver but

be-

J of

uld

old

nd,

nan

nor

rld,

me,

111

nis:

non

ore,

refle

dier

, to

care

It being come, and the weather then in extreamity of cold, every thing being covered with ice and fnow, the Magitian prevailed to by his Art, that after the Chiffmaffe holy dayes were path, and the Calends of Ianuary

antred:

entred: in one night, and without the City walles, the goodlieft Garden of flowers and fruites, was fuddenly forung up, as (in opinion of fuch as beheld it) never was the like feene before, Now Ladies, I thinke I need not demand the question, whether Signior Anfalis were well pleafed, or no, who going to it, faw it most plenteoufly flored, with all kinde of fruite trees, flowers, herbes and plants, as no one could be named, that was wanting in this artificiall Garden. And baving gathered some pretty itore of them, secretly he sent themto Madam Dianora, inviting her to come fee her Garden, perfected according to her owne defire, and upon view thereof, to confesse the integrity of his love to here confidering and remembring withall, the promife thee had made him under folemne oath, that thee might be reputed for a woman of her word.

When the Lady beheld the fruites and flowers, and had heard many things re-counted, fo wonderfully growing in the fame Garden : fiee began to repent her rash promise made; yet notwithstanding her repentance, as women are coverous to fee all rarities; fo accompanied with divers Ladies and Gentlewomen more, thee went to fee the Garden; and having commended it with much admiration, thee returned home againe, the most forrowfull woman that ever lived, con-Adering what the had tied her felfe to, for enjoying this Garden. So excessive grew her griefe and affliction, that it could not be fo clouded or concealed, but her Hufbandrooke notice of it, and would needs understand the occasion thereof. Long the Lady (in regard of thame and modelty) fate without returning any answers but being in the end conftrained, the difclosed the whole

he

bre

he:

the

lay

History to him.

At the first, Signior Gilberto waxed exceeding angry, but when hee further confidered withall, the pure and honest intention of his Wise; wisely he pacified his former distemper, and said. Diamora, it is not the part of a wise

wife and honest woman, to lend an eare to ambassages of such immodest nature, much lesse to compound or make agreement for her honesty, with any person, under any condition whatsever. Those perswasions which the heart listenesh to, by alluremen of the eare, have greater power than many doe imagine, and nothing is so uneasse or dissicult, but in a lovers judgment it appeareth possible. Ill didst thou therefore first of all to listen,

but worse (afterward) to contract.

the

eniy

ever

need

Caldo

moft

OW-

that

g 22.

hem

Gar-

upon

her;

thee

ht be

, and

rfally

at her

epen-

fo ac-

omen

com-

d,con-

g this

n,that

Huf-

fland

ard of

niwer

whole

ingry,

e and

is for-

rt of a

But, because I know the purity of thy soule, I will yeelde to disoblige thee of thy promise) as perhaps no wise man else would doe; moved thereto onely by seare of the Magitian, who seeing Signior Ansaldo displeased, because thou madest a mockage of him; will doe some such violent wrong to us, as wee shall be never able to recover. Wherefore, I would have thee to goe to Signior Ansaldo, and if thou canst (by any meanes) obtaine of him, the safe-keeping of thy honour, and full discharge of thy promise; it shall be an eternall same to thee, and the crowne of a most victorious conquest. But it it must needs be otherwise, lend him thy body onely for once, but not thy will; for actions committed by constraint, wherein the will is no way guilty, are halfe pardonable by the necessary.

Madam Dianora, hearing her husbands words, wept exceedingly, & avouched, that the had not deferred any such especiall grace of him, and therefore she would rather die, than doe it. Neverthelesse it was the will of her husband to have it to, and therefore (against her will) shee gave content. The next morning, by the breake of day, Dianora arose, and attiring her selfe in her very meanest garments, with two servingmen before her, and a watting wom an following, shee went to the lodging of Signior Ansaldo, who hearing that Madam Dianora was come to visite him, greatly mervelled, and being risen, hee called the Magitian to him, saying. Come goe with me, and see what effect will sol-

low

Novelles. The Tenth Day;

low upon thine Art. And being come into her prefence, without any base of mordinate appetite, he did her humble reverence, embracing her honestly, and taking her into a goodly Chan ber, where a faire fire was readily prepared, causing her to sit downeby him, he said unto

he as followeth.

Madam, I humbly intreate you to refolve me, if the affection I have long time borne you, and yet doe ftill, deferve any recon pence at all: you would be pleafed then to tell me truly, the occasion of your instant comming hather, and thus attended as you are. Dianors bluthing with a model thame, and the ceares trickling mainely done her faire cheekes, thus antwered. Signior Aufaide, not for any love I beare you, or care of my faithfull promise made to von, but onely by the command of my husband (who respecting more the paines and travels of your ingroing e love than his own reputation and honour, or mine;) hath caused me to cons hither; and by vertue of he commend am ready (for once onely) to fulfill your pleafure, but fame from any will or confere in my telfe. If Signior Aufaido wereabailed at the first, he began now to be more confounded with admiration, when he heard the Lady focak in fuch ffrange manner and being much moved with the liberall command of her husband, he began to alter his inflamed heate, into most honourable respect and compallion, returning her this answer.

Most noble Ladie, the gods forbid (if it be fo as you as you have faid) that I should (Viliame-like) foile the honour of him, that takes such unusual compassion of my inchaste appeare. And therefore, you may remaine here so long as you please, in no other condition, but as mine owne naturall borne Sister; and likewise, you may depart sively when you will: conditionally, that (on my behalfe) you render such thankes to your hubband, as you thinke convenient for his great bounts sowards me, accounting me for ever hereafter, ashin

an

Col

ho

dia

Wh

hum-

e her

adily

unto

fthe

ttill,

enled

com-

422074

ching

gnior

of my

com-

repus

COILO

y (for

n any

ciea-

toun-

cakin

th the

cer his

COR+

as you

ile the

lion of

maine

n, but

ic, you

y, that

ur huf-

ountie

loyal

loyall Brother and faithfull fervant. Dianora having well observed his answer, her heart being ready to mount out at her mouth with joy, said. All the world could never make me believe (considering your honorable minde and honesty) that it would happen otherwise to me, than now it hath done; for which noble courtesse, I will continually remaine obliged to you. So, taking her leave, she returned home honourably attended to her husband, and relating to him what had happened, it proved the occasion of begetting intire love and friendship, betweene himselfe and the Lord Ansaldo.

Now concerning the skilfull Magitian, to whom Anfalde meant to give the bountifull recompence agreed on betweene them, he having feene the firange liberality, which the hisband expressed to Signior Anfalde, and that of Anfaldo to the Lady, hee prefently faid. Great Jupiter ftrike mee dead with thunder, having my felfe feene a husband fo liberall of his honour, and you Sir of true noble kindne He, if I thould be not the like of my recompences for, perceiving it to be fo worthily imployed, I am well contented that you fall keepe it. The noble Lord was modeltly ashamed, and strove (fo much as in him lay) that hee thould take all, or the greater part thereof : but feeing he laboured meerely in vaine, after the third day was paft, and the Magitian had deftroyed the Garden againe, he gave him free hberty to depart, quice controlling all fond and unchaste affection in himselfe, either towards Dianora, or any Lady elie, and living (ever after) as belt becommerb any noble men to doe.

What fay you now Ladies? Shall wee make any actount of the woman well-neere dead and the kindneffe growne cold in Signior Gentile, by hole of his former hopes, comparing them with the liberal ty of Signior Anfaldo, affecting more fetvently, than ever the other dia? And being (beyond hope) postessed of the boosy, which (above all things in the world) he must desired

to have, to part with it meerly in fond copassio? I protest (in my judgement) the one is no way comparable to the other; that of Gentile, with this last of Signier Ansaldo.

Victorious King Charles, sirnamed the Aged, and first of that Name, fell in love with a young Maiden, named Genevera, daughter to an ancient Knight, called Signior Neri degli Vberti. And waxing assamed of his amorous folly, caused both Genevera, and her saine Sifter Isottato hee joyned in marriage with two noble Gentlemens the one named Signior Masses da Palazzi, and the other, Signior Gulielmo della Magna.

The Gath Novell.

Sufficiently declaring, that how mighty foever the power of Love is yet a magnanimous and truly generous heart, it can by no meanes fully conquer.

Who is able to expresse ingeniously, the diversitie of opinions, which hapned among the Ladies, in censuring on the act of Madam Dianora, and which of them was most liberall, either Signior Gilberto the husband, Lord Ansa'da the importunate suter, or the Magnian, expecting to be bountfully rewarded. Surely, it is matter beyond my capacity: but after the Kinghad permitted their disputation a long while, looking on Madam Fiammetta, hee commande that she should report her Novell to make an end of their controversies and she (without any further delaying) thus began.

I did alwayes (noble Ladies) hold it fit and decent, that in such an affembly as this of oursis, every one ought to speake so succinculy and plainely, that the obscure understanding, concerning the matters spoken of should have no cause of disputation. For disputes doe much better become the Colledges of Schollers, than to be among us, who hardly can manage our Distances.

do

I

for

he.

or Samplars. And therefore I doe intend to relate fomething, which peradventure) might appeare doubtfull; will forbeare (feeing you in fuch a difference; for that which hath beene spoken already) to use any difficult discourse; but will speake of one, a man of no meane rank; and quality, being both a valiant and vertuous King, and what he did, without any impeach or bleamishment to his honour.

I make no doubt, but you have often heard report of King Charles the Aged, and first of that name, by reafon of his magnificent enterprifes, as also his most glorious victory, which he obtained against King Manfred, when the Ghibellines were expulsed forth of Florence, and the Guelphes returned thither againe. By which occafion, an ancient Knight, named Signior Neri degli Oberti forfaking then the City, with all his family and great store of wealth, would live under any other obedience, than the awfull power or command of King Charles, And coveting to be in some solitary place, where he might finish the remainder of his dayes in peace, he went to Caftelo da Mare; where, about a Bow shoote distance from all other dwelling houses, hee bought a parcell of ground, plentifully flored with varietie of Trees, bearing Olives, Cheinuts, Orenges, Lemous, Pomcitrons, and other excellent frutages, wherewith the Countrey flourisheth aboundantly. There he built afaire and commodious house, and planted (close by it) apleasant Garden, in the middest whereof, because he had plentie of water: according as other men use to doe, being in the like case so well provided; he made a very goodly Pond, which forthwich had all kinde of

vonr, to tend his Garden, and increase his Fish-pond. It fortuned that King Charles (in the Summer time) for his pleasure and recreation went to repose himselfe (for some certaine dayes) at castello da Mare, where having heard report of the beauty and fingularity of Neries

Fifth swimming in it, it being his daily care and ende-

Garden;

ble to gnior

rotelt

firft of named d Sigofbis faire o noble al 4331

pewer hearis

ficie of

es, in nich of to the or the Surely, nghad ing on uld reversiei

decent ry one he obken of tes doc , than

an.

Raves

Garden; he grew very defirous to fee it. But when he understood to whom it belonged, then he entred into confideration with himselfe, that hee was an ancient Knight, maintaining a contrary faction to his: wherefore, he thought it fit to goe in some familiar manner, and with no traine attending on him. Whereupon he fend him word, that he would come to visite him, with source Gentlemen onely in his company, me aning to so with him in his Garden the next night ensuing. The newes was very welcome to Signior Neri, who took or der in costly manner, for all things to be done, entertaining the King joyfully into his beautifull Garden.

When the King had farvayed all, and the house likes wise, her commended it beyond all other comparison, and the Tables being placed by the Ponds side, her washed his hands therein, and then sate downe at the table, commanding the Count, Sir Guy de Monsule (who was one of them which came in his company) to fit downe by him, and Signior Nerion the other side. As for the other three of the traine, her commanded then to attend on his service, as Signior Neri had given or der. There wanted no exquisite Viandes and excellent Wines, all performed in most decent manner, and without the least noise or disturbance, wherein the King tooke no little delight.

0

Freding thus in this contented maner, and fancying the folytude of the place: fodaint ly entred into the garden, two young. Damofels, each aged about fome fifteene yeares, their haire refembling wyars of gold, and currently curled, having Chaplets (made like provincial Crownes) on their heads, and their delicate faces, expressing them to be rather Angels, than moral creatures, such was the appearance of their admired beauty. Their under garments were of coffly filke, you winter as the finest should as formathe girdle upward, close to their bodies, but spreading largely downward, like the extendure of a Pavillion, and so descent

n hee

into

cient

here.

aner,

n hee

vvith

tolup

The

ok or-

enter-

arden.

likes

rifon

e, hee

at the

onforte

14) 10

ide. As

them

en or-

cellent

, and

in the

acying

ne gar-

ne fif-

d. and

ovinci.

faces,

nortal

mired

ke, yet

ale up.

down

delcen ding ling to the feete. She that first came in fight, carried on her thoulder a couple of fifthing Nets, which thee he'd fift with her left hand, and in the right thee carried a long ftaffe, the other following her, had on her left shoulder a Frying-pan, and under the same arme a fmall Faggot of woodde, with a Travit in her handsand in the other hand a por of Oyle, as also a brand of fire.

No fooner did the Kingbehold them, but he greatly wondered what they should be ; and, without uttering one word, attended to liften what they would fay. Both the yong Damolels, when they were come before the King, with modest and bathfull gesture, they performed very humble reverence to him, and going to the place of entrance into the Pond, the who had the Tre . vit, fet it downe on the ground, with the other things alio; and taking the ftaffe, which the other Dimotel ! carried : they both went into the Pond, the water wherofreached to high as to their bolomes. One of the fervants to Signior Neri, prefently kindled the fire, fetting the Trevit over it, and putting Oyle into the Fryingpan, held a upon the Trevit, aw ming untill the Damosels should cal him up Fish One of them did beate a place with the flaffe, where thee was affured of the Fifnes refere, and the other had also lodged the nets lo conveniently, as they quickly caught great flore of Fish, to the Kings high contentment, who observed their behaviour very respectively.

As the Fifthes were throwns up to the fervant, alive asthey were, he tooke the best and fairest of them, and brought them to the table where they skipt and mounted before the king, Count Guy de Mont fort, and the Father: fome leaping from the Table into the Pond againe, and others, the King (in a pleasing humour) voluntarily threw backe to the Damofels. leafting and sporting in this manner, till the fervant had dreft divers of them in exquisite order, and ferved them to the Tale, according as Signior Neri had ordained. When

the Damofels faw the Fishes service performed, and perceived that they had fished sufficiently: they came forth of the water, their garments then (being wet) hanging close about them, even as if they hid no part of their bodies. Each having taken those things again, which at first they brought with them, and saluting the King in like humility as they did before, returned

home to the manfion house.

The King and Count likewife, as also the other attending Gentlemen, having duely confidered the behaviour of the Damofels: commended extraordinarily their beauty and faire feature, with those perfections of Nature fo gloriously shining in them. But (beyond all the reft) the King was boundleffe in his prailes given of them, having observed their going into the water, the equal carriage there of them both, their comming forth, and gracious demeanour at their departing (yet neither knowing of whence, or what they were) he felt his affection very violently flamed, and grew into fuch an amorous defire to them both, not knowing which of them pleased him most, they so choisely resembled one another in all things.

But after hee had dwelt long enough upon thele thoughts, he turned himselie to Signior Neri, and demanded of him, what Damolels they were. Sir (anlivered Neri) they are my Daughters, both brought into the world at one birth, and Twinnes, the one being named Genevera the faire, and the other Ifotta theamiable. The King began againe to commend them both, and gave him advise to get them both married: po wherein he excused himselfe, alleadging, that he wan- wi ted power to doe it. At the fame inftant time, no other to fervice remaining to be brought to the Table, except but fruit and Cheese, the two Damosels returned againe, to attired in goodly Roabes of Carnation Sattin, formed and after the Turkish fashion, carrying two faire filver diffes Kin in their hands, filled with divers delicate fruites, fuch as

(

13

k

ti

81

91

gi

an

CO

G

lik

ne

Pr

fa

go

ve

and

came

wet) part

aine, gthe

uned

er at.

behanarily

ons of nd all

given vater,

gaime (yet

he felt o fuch

nich of

d one

thefe

nd densive-

theathem

the

the scalon then afforded, setting them on the Table before the King. Which being done, they retired a little backeward, and with fiveet melodious voyces, fung a Ditty, beginning in this manner.

Where Love prefumeth into place: Let no one fing in Loves diffrace.

So sweete and pleasing seemed the Song to the King (who tooke no small delight, both to heare and behold the Damofels) even as if all the Hierarchies of Angels, were descended from the heavens to fing before him. No fooner was the fong ended, but i humbly on their knees) they craved favour of the King for their departing. Now, although that their departure was greatly grieving to him, yet (in outward appearance) hee feemed willing to grant it.

When supper was concluded, and the King and his company remounted on horsebacke: thankefully departing from Signior Neri, the King returned to his lodging, concealing there closely his affection himself. and whatfoever important affaires happened, to yet hee could not forget the beauty, and gracious behaviour of Ginevera the faire (for whose lake he loved her fifter likewise) but became so linked to her in vehement manner, as hee had no power to thinke on any thing elfe. Pretending other urgent occasions, hee fell into great at into familiaritie with Signior Ners, visiting very often his being goodly Garden; onely to fee his faire Daughter Genevera, the Adamant which drew him thither.

When hee felt his amorous affaults, to exceede all arried: power of longer fufferance : he refolved determinately e wan- with himself, (being unprovided of any better means) other to take her away from her Father, and not onely shee, except but her fifter allo; discovering both his love and intent againe, to Count Guy de Montforte, who being a very worthy formed and vertuous Lord, and meete to be a Counseller for a

r diffes King, delivered his mind in this manner.

fuch as Gracious Lord, I wonder not a lette at your speeches,

and

and is much the greater is my admiration, because no man else can be subject to the like, in regard I have knowne you from the time of your infancy; even to this instant houre, alwayes your carriage to be one and the fame. I could never perceive in your youthfull dayes (when love should have the greatest meanes to affale you) any such oppressing passions: which is now the more novell and ftrange to me, to heare it but faid, that you being old, and called the Aged; thould be growne amorous, surely to me it seemeth a miracle. And if it appertained to me to reprehend you in this cafe, I know well enough what I could fay. Confidering, you have yet your Armour on your backe, in a Kingdom newly conquered, among a Nation not knowne to you, full of faitchends, breaches, and treasons; all which are no meane mouves to care and needfull respect But hiving nove wonne a little leifure, to reft your felf a while from fuch ferrous affaires; can you give way to theide fur ellions of Love? Beleeve me Sir, it is no act becomming a marnanimious King; but rather the gidly folly of a young braine.

Moreover you fig (which most of all I missise) that you intend to take the two Virgines from the Knight, who each given you entertainement in his house beyond his ability; and to testisse how such he horoured you, he suffered you to have a sight of them, meetely (almost) in a naked manner; witnessing thereby, what constant shitch he reposed in you, beleeving verily, that you were a just King, and not a ravenous Woolfe. Have you so some fortot, that the rapes and violent actions, done by King Manfred to harmeless. Ladies, made your onely way of entrance into this kingdome? What treason was ever committed, more worthy of eternall punishment, than this will be in you : to take away from him (who hath so highly honoured you) his cheefest bope and consolation? What will be said by all men, if

you doc it?

Peradven-

ali

De!

th.

for

the

h15

the:

Peradventure you thinke, it will be a sufficient excuse for you, to say: I did it, in regard he was a Ghibet-line. Can you imagine this to be justice in a King, that such as get into their possession in this manner (what-sever it be) ought to use it in this fort? Let me tell you Sir, it was a worthy victory for you to conquer King Manfred; but it is farre more famous victory, for a man to conquer himselfe. You therefore, who are ordained to correct vices in other men, learne to induce them in your leste, and (by bridling this inordinate appetite) let not a foulc blemish on so faire a same, as will be lionour to you to preserve spotselse.

These words pierced the heart of the King deepely, and so much the more affl sted him, because hee knew them to be most true: wherefore, after hee had vented a very vehement sigh, thus he replied. Beleeve me noble Court, there is not any enemy, how strong so ever he be, but I hold him weake and easie to be vanquished, by him who is skifull in the waire, where a man may learne to conquer his owne appetite. But because hee shall finde it a laborious taske, requiring inestimable strength and courage: your words have so toucht mee to the quicke, that it becommet him to let you effectually perceive (and within the compasse of a few dayes) that is I hive learned to conquer others, so I am not ignorant, in expressing the like power upon my selfe.

Having thus spoken, within some sew dayes after, the King being returned to Maples, hee determined, as well to see himselfe from any the like ensuing folly, as also to recompence Signior Ners, for the great kindenesse he had thewne to him (although it was a difficult thing, to let another enjoy, what hee rather desired for himselfe) to have the two Dimosels married, not as the Daughters of Signior Ners, but even as if they were his owne. And by consent of the Father, he gave Generate taire, to Signior Masses da Palizzi, and I some the annuable, to Signior Guitelmo della Magna, two noble

men, if

no

ave

inis

the

Lyes

Taile

the

that

wac

ifit

Won

have

evvly

ullof

re no

s hi-

while

reide

A be-

gidiy

that

night,

Se be-

noured

y whit

ly, that

. Have

Ctions,

de your

at trea-

nall pu-

ay from

cheefelt

t Knights

Knights and honourable Barons. After hee had thus given them in marriage, in fad mouraing he departed thence into Apuglia, where by following worthy and honourable actions, hee fowell overcame all inordinate appetites: that thaking off the enthralling fetters of love, hee lived free from all passions, the rest of his

life time, and died as an honourable King.

Some perhaps will fay, it was a small matter for a King, to give away two Damosels in marriage, and I confesse it but I maintaine it to be great, and more than great, if wee say, that a King, being so earnessly enamored as this King was; should give her away to another, whom he so dearely affected himselfe, without receiving (in recompence of his affection) so much as a leaste, slower, or the least fruit of love. Yet such was the vertue of this magnificent King expressed in so highly recompencing the noble Knights corresse, honouring the two daughters so royally, and congering his owne affections so vertuously.

The seventh Novell.

Lifana, the Daughter of a Florentine Apothecary, named Bernardo Puccio, being at Palermo, and feeing Piero, King of Acagon run at the I it is fell for affectionately enamored of him, that thee languithed in an extreame and long ficknesse. By her owne devise, and meanes of a Song, sung in the hearing of the King: he-would afel to wiste her, and giving her akisse, terming bimselfe also to be her King: for ever after, he honourably bestowed her in marriage on a young Gentleman, who was called Perdicano, and gave him liberall endomments with her.

By herein is covert'y given to understand, that how seever a Prince may make use of his absolute power and authority, towards Mades or weves that are his Switests: yet her ought to deny and reject all things, a

shall reale him forgerfull of himselfe, and his true bonour.

MAdam Fiammetta being come to the end of her Novell, & the great magnificence of King Charles much commended (howbeit, some of the company, affecting the Giossline faction, were otherwise minded) Madam Pampinea, by order given from the King, be-

gan in this manner.

There is no man of good understanding (honourable Ladies) but will maintaine what you have said of vistorious Charles; except such as cannot with well to any. But because my memory hath instantly informed me, of an action (perhaps) no lesse commendable than this, done by an enemy of the said King Charles, and to a young Muden of our City. I am the more willing to relate 15, upon your gentle attention vouchlased, as

hitherto it hith beene courteoully granted.

At fuch time as the French were driven out of Sicily, there dwelt at Pakimo a Florentine Apothecary, named Bernardo Puccio, a man of good wealth and reputation, who had by his wife one onely Dan ther, of marriageble yeares, and very beautiful Piero King of Aragon, being then become Lord of that Kingdome, he made a Feaft Royall at Palermo, accompanied with his Lords and Barons. In honour of which publique Feaft, the King kept a triumphall day (of lusts and Turnaments) at Catalano, and whereat it chanced, that the Daughter of Bernardo, named Lifana was prefent. Being in a window, accompanied with other Gentlewomen, thee favy the King runne at the Tilt, who feemed fo goodly a person in her eye; that being never latisfied with beholding him, the grew enamoured, and fell into extremity of affection towards him.

When the Feaftivall was ended, the dwelling in the house of her Father, it was impossible for her to thinke on any thing else, but onely the love, which shee had

and aubis Subings, a shall

hus

and

rdi-

ters

his

or 3

ndl

nore

27 10

hout

ch as

in fo

, ho-

ng .c-

named

Piero,

onately

treame

anes of

chfafed

bim (elfe

ably be-

72 · 2010

endow

Exed on a person of such height. And that which most tormented her in this case, was the knowledge of her owne condition, being but meane and humble in degree; whereby the consessed, that the could not hope for any successed like of her proud love. Nevertheletic, the would not reframe from affecting the King, who taking no note of this kindnesse in her, by any perceiveable meanes must need be the more regards sife, which procured (by wary observation) her afflictions to be the greater and intollerable.

Whereupon it came to palle, that this earnest love encreasing in her more and more and one melancholly conceit taking hold on another; the faire maide, when the could heare the burden of her griefe no longer; sell into a languishing ficknesse, continuing away duly (by evident appearance) even as the Snow melteth by the

tyarme beames of the Sunne.

The Father and Mother, much difmaied and difflea. fed at this hapleffe accident, applying her with contimuall comforts, Philicke, and the best skill remaining in all the Philitions, lought all possible meanes to give her fuccour : but all proved to no effect, because in regard of her choife (which could fort to none other than a desperate end) thee was defirous to live no longer. Now it fortuned, that her Parents offering her what foever temained in their power to performe, a fudden ap. prehension, entired her minde, to wit, that (if it might politile be done) before thee died, thee would first have the King to know, in what manner thee stood affected to him. Wherefore, one day thee entreated her Father, that a Gentieman, named Manutio de Arcaga, might be permit ed to come fee her. I his Manutio was fin chole times) held to be a most excellent Musitians both for his vovce in finging, and exquifite skill in playing on Inft uments, for which he was highly in favour with King Piero, who made (almost) daily ute of him, to heare him both ling and play.

Her

oft

er

in

pe

ho

cr.

Te.

anc

SYC

olly

nen

fell

by

che

lea.

nii-

ive

re-

han

nio-

(if

ould

ood

lher

334

tiail,

olay-

vout

m,to

Her

Her tender and loving Father conceived immediately, that the was much defirous to heare his playing and
finging, both being comfortable to a body in a languishing ficknesses, whereupon he lent presently for the Gentleman, who came accordingly, and after he had comforted Lisans with kinde and courteous speeches; hee
played dexteriously on his Lute, which purposely hee
had brought with him, and likewise hee sung divers
excellent Ditties, which instead of his intended consolation to the maide, did nothing esse but encrease her
fire and stame.

Afterward thee requested to have some conference with Manutie alone, and every one being gone forth of the Chamber, she spake unto him in this manner.

Manutia, I have made choi'c of thee, to be the faithfull Guardian of an especiali secret, hoping fire of all, that thou wilt never reveale it to any living body, but onely to him whom I shall bid thee : And next, to helpe me fo much as poffibly thou canft, because my onely hope relieth in thee. Know then my dearest friend Mamitto, that on the folemne Festivall day, when our Sover igne Lord the King honoured his exaltation, with the noble exercifes of Tile and Turney; his brave behaviour kindled wich a sparke in my soule, as since brake forth into a violent flame, & brought me to this weake condition as now thou feelt. But knowing and confeffing, how farre unbeleeming my love is, to aime to ama bitiously at a King, and being inable to controule it, or in the leaft manner to aminifh it : I have made choile of the onely and built remedy of all, namely, to die, and fo I am most willing to doe. I'rue it is that I shall travell in this my lateft jour ney with endlesse affliction of foule, except he have forne understanding thereof before, & not knowing by whom to give him intelligence, in fo due and convenient order, as by thee: ! do therfore co natiothis laft office to the truft, defiring thee, not to refuie me in the performance thereof And when thou

haft done it, to let me understand what he saith, that I may die the more contentedly, and disburdened of so heavy an oppression, the onely comfort to a parting spirit: and so she ceased, her teares slowing forth abun-

dantly.

Manutio did not a little wonder at the Maides great fpirit, and her desperate resolution, which moved him to exceeding commisferation, and suddenly he conceived, that honeftly he might discharge his duty for her, whereupon, hee returned her this answer. Lifana, here Lengage my faith to thee, that thou shalt find me firme and conftant, and die I will, rather than deceive thee, Greatly I doe commend thy high attempt, in fixing thy affection on fo Potent a King, wherein I offer thee my utmost assistance : and I make no doubt (if thou wouldeft be of good comfort) to deale in fuch fort, as, before three dayes are fully paft, to bring fuch newes as will content the; and because I am loath to lose the least time, I will goe about it presently. Lifana the young Maiden, once againe entreated his care and diligence, promiting to comfort her felfe fo well as the could, commending him to his good fortune. When Manutio was gone from her, he went to a Gentleman, named Mico de Sienna, one of the best Poets in composing of verses, as all those parts yeelded not the like. At his request, Mico made for him this enfuing Dittie.

The Song fung in the hearing of King Picro on the behalfe of Love-licke LISANA.

Goe Love, and tell the torments I endure, Say to my Soveraigne Lord, that I must die Except he come, some comfort to procure, For tell I may not, what I seele, and why.

Withheaved hands Great Love, I call to thee, Goe fee my Soveraigne, where he doth abide, and fay to him, in what extreamitie, Thou hall (for him) my firme affections tryed.
To die for him, it is my fole defire,
For live with him I may not, nor aspire,
To have my fortunes thereby dignified;
Onely his fight would lend me life a while:
Grant it great love) mine anguish to beguile,
Goe love and tell the torments, &c.

Since the first hours that love enthrasted me, I never had the heart, totall my griese, My thoughts did speake, for thoughts be alwayes free, My thoughts did speake, for thoughts be alwayes free, Mrhen Gnats will mount to Eagles in the aye, Alw! they scorne them, for full well they know, They were not bred ton, for full well they know, alost they looke, to make their flight more faire. And yet his sight would lend melise a while: Grant it (great love) mine anguish to beguile.

Goe love, and tell the torments, eye.

If fight shall be denied, then tell them plaine,
His high triumphall day procurd my death,
The Launce that wonne him Honour, hath me flaine,
For instantly it did bereave my breath.
That speake I could not, nor durst be so bold.
To make the aire acquainted with my woe s
Alas! I lookt so high, and doing so,
Instity deserve by death to be controld.
Tet mercies sight would lead me life a while,
Grant it (great love) mine anguish to beguise.
Goe leve, and tell the torments, or e.

The lines contained in this Ditty, Manucio fitted with notes fo moving and fingularly muficell, that every word had the fenfible motion of life in it, where the King being (as yet) not rifen from the Table, her commanded him to use both his Lute and voyce.

This seemed a happy opportunity to Manucio, to sing the Dittie so purposely done and devised; which he des tt 4

They

at I

d of

ting

un-

reat

him ei-

her,

here

irme

hee.

chy

c my

oul-

efore

vvill

least owng

ence,

com-

o was

Mice

erfes,

queft,

Novell.7. The Tenth Day,

Invered in such excellent manner, the voyce and Instrument concording so extraordinally pleasing; that all the persons then in the Presence, seemed rather States, than living men, so strangely they were wrapt with admiration, and the King himselfe, farre beyond all the rest, transported with a rare kinde of change and algeration.

When Munutio had ended the Song, the King demanded of him, whence this Song came, because he had never heard it before? My gracious Lord, answered Ma-utio, it must needs feeme ftrange to your Majeftie, because it is not fully three dayes, since it was invented, mode, and fet to the note Then the Kingasked, whom it concerned ? Sir (quoth Manutie) I dare not disclose that to any bur onely your felte. Which answer made the King much more defirous, and being rifen from the I ble, hie tooke him into his Bed-chamber, where Mantivrelated all at large to him, according to the truft reposed to him Wherewich the King was wonderfully well ple tied, greatly commending the courage of the Maide, and faid, that a Virgin of fuch a valuant spirit, did well deferve to have her case commiserated: and commanded him al o, to toe (as tent from tim) and comfore her, with promite, hat the very fame day, in the evening, her would not faile to come and fee her.

Manutio, more than contented, to carry such glad tydings to Lisans; without staying in any place, and taking his Lute also with him, went to the Apothecaries
house, where speaking alone with the Maice: hee told
her what he had done, and afterward sung the Song to
her, in as excellent manner as hee had done before,
wherin Lisans conceived such joy & contentment as even in the very same moment, it was observed by appazent signes, that the violence of her fits for sookeher,
and health began to get the upper hand of them So,
without suffering any one in the house to know n, or by

the least means to suspect it; the comforted her selfe nit the evening, in expectation of her Soveraignes arrivall.

Fiero being a Prince, of most liberall and beniene nature, having afterward divers times confidered on the matters which Manutio had revealed to him, knowing alfo the young Maiden, to be both beautifull and verthous: was to much moved with pitty of her extremitie . as mounting on horfe-backe, in the evening, and feeming as if he rode abroad for his private recreation; be went directly to the Apothecarie: houle, where defiring to fee a goodly Garden, appertaining then to the Apothecarie, he difmounted from his horie. Walking into the Garden, hee began to question with Bernardo, den anded him for his Danghte, and whether hee had (as yer) marriedher, or no? My Gracious Lord, anfwer a Bernarde, as yer the is not married, neitherlikely to be, in regard the hath had a long and tedious ficknelle but fince Dimmer time, the is indifferently eated of her former viole a paine, which wee could not difceene the like alteration in her, along white before.

The King understood immediately, the reason of this fo ludgen alteration, and law. In good faith Bernardos the world would tust one a great maine and imperfection, by the loffe of thy faire daughter; wherefore wee will goe our felfe in perfon to vilite her. So, with two of his Lords onely, and the Father, he alcended to the Maides Chamber, and being entred, her went to the beds fide, where the fare, fornewhat railed,, in expectation of his comming, and taking her by the hand, hee faid, Faire Lifara, how commeth this to paffe ? You being so faire a Virgin, young, and in your delicacy of your dayes which thould be the chiefest comfort to you, will you fuffer your telte to be be over-awed with fickeneffe > Lat us intreace you, that for our (take) you will be of good comfort, and therby recover your health the : fooner, especially, when it is to quefted by a King, who is forry to tee to bright a beauty tick, and would help it, if it lay in his power. Ligands .

h ad-

dehad vered effic, nted, hom

here the the von-

int in) ame ome

tyitaries told g to ore,

paer, So, by

Lifana, feeling the touch of his hand, whom thee loved above all things in the world, although a baffifull blush mounted up into her cheekes; yet her heart was feazed with luch a rapture of pleafure, that the thought her selfe translated into Paradise, and, so well as shee could, thus the replied. Great King, by opposing my feeble strength, against a burthen of over-ponderous weight, it became the occasion of this grievous fickenesse: but I hope that the violence thereof is (almost) already kild, onely by this foveraigne mercy in you, and doubtleffe it will cause my speedy deliverance. The King did best understand this so well palliated answer of Lifans, which as he did much commend, in regard of her high adventuring; fo hee did againe as greatly condemne Fortune, for not making her more happy in her birth.

So, after he had ftayed there a good while, and given her many comfortable speeches, hee returned backe to the Court. This humanity of the King, was reputed a great honour to the Apothecaty and his daughter, who (in her own minde) received as much joy and contentment thereby, as ever any wife could have of her owne Husband.

And being affifted by better hopes, within a fhore while after, the became recovered, and farre more beautiful. (in common judgement) than ever the was before,

Lifana being now in perfect health, the King confulted with his Queene, what meete recompence hee should gratifie her withall, for loving and affecting him in such servent manner. Vpon a day determined, the King mounted on horsebacke, accompanied with many of his chiefest Lords and Barons, heerode tothe Apothecaries house, where walking in his beautiful Garden, he called for Benardo and his daughtet Lisana In the meanes space, the Queene also came thither, to yally attended on by her Ladies, and Lisana being admitted into their company, they expressed themselves very

ee lo.

fi.ful]

1V25

onghe

s face

y fee.

crous

noft)

u,and

The

Liver

gard

eatly

PYIN

given

ke to

hore

Cau-

fore,

him

the

any

po-

ar-

ally

tted

cry

Now

gracious to her. Soone after, the King and the Queene cald Lifana, and the King spake in this manner.

Faire Virgin, the extraordinary love which you bare to us, calleth for as great honour from us to you; in which respect, it is our Royall desire, by one meanes or other to require your kinde Love. In our opinion, the chiefest honour we can extend to you, is, that being of sufficient yeares for marriage, you would grace us so much, as to accept him for your husband, whom we intend to bestow on you. Beside this further grant fro us, that (notwithstanding whatsoever else) you shall call us your Knight; without coveting any thing else from you, for so great favour, but onely one kisse, and thinke not to bestow it nicely on a King, but grant it the rather, because he begges it.

Lifana, whole lookes, were died with a vermillian tincture, or rather converted into a pure maiden bluth, reputing the Kings defire to be her owne; in a low and humble voyce, thus answered. My Lord, most certaine am I, that if it had beene publikely knowne how none but your Highnesse might serve for mee to fixe my love on, I should have beene termed the foole of all fooles : they perhaps beleeving, that I was forgetfull of thy felfe, in being ignorant of my owne condition, and much leffe of yours. But the gods are my witnesles (because they know the secrets of all hearts) that even in the very inftant, when Loves fire tooke hold on my yeel. ding affection: I knew you to be a King, and my felf the daughter of poore Bernardo the Apothecary; likewife, how farre unfitting it was for me, to be fo ambitious in my loves prefuming. But I am fure your MajeRie doch know (much better than I am able to expresse) that no one bccommeth amourous, according to the dutie of election, but as the appetite shapeth his course, again? whose lawes my firength made many refistances, which not prevailing, I pretimed to love, did, and fo for ever shall doe, your Majestie.

Novell.7: The Tenth Day,

Now Royall Soveraigne, I must needs confeste, that fo foone as I felt my felfe thus wholly conquered by loving you, I relolved for ever after, to make your will mine owne, and therefore, am not onely to accept him for my husband, whom you shall ple ife to appoint, befitting my honour and degree : but if you will have mee to live in a flaming fire, my obedience fhall facrifice it felfe to your will, with the absolute conformity of mine owne. To file you by he name of my Knight, whom I know to be my lawfuil King and Soveraigne; you are not ignorant, how farre unfitting a word that were for metoule: As also the kiffe which you request, in requi. sall of my love to you, to thefe two I will never give confent, without the Queenes most gracious favour and license first granted. Neverthelesse, for such admirable benignity nied to mee, both by your Royali felfe, and by your vertuous Queene : heaven shower downe all boundleffe graces on you both, for it exceedeth all merit in me, and to thee ceased speaking, in most dutifull manner.

The answer of Lifana pleased the Queene exceedingly, in finding her to be fo wife and faire, as the King kimselfe had before informed her; who instantly called for her Father and Mother, and knowing they would be well pleased with what loever he did ; he cailed for a proper young Gentleman, but somewhat poote, being named Perdicano, and putting certaine Rings into his hand, which he refuted not to receive, caused him there to espouse Lifana. To whom the King gave immediate. ly (befides Chaines and lewels of inethinable valew, delivered by the Queene to the Bride) Ceffats and Calatabelotta, two great Territories abounding in divers wealthy polleffions, faying to Perdicano. These wee give thee, as a downy in marriage with this beautifull Maide, and greater gifts wee will bestow on thee hereafter, as we thall perceive thy love and kindnesse to her. When he had ended their words, he turned to Lifana,

faving:

faving Here do I freely give over al further finits of your all this towards me, thanking you for your former love; fo taking her head betweene his hands, hee kiffed her faire torcheid, which was the ufuall cuftome in those times. Perdicane the Father and Mother or Lifano, and the her selfe hkewise extraordinantly joyful for this to fortunate a marriage, retuined humble & he my thocks both to the King and Oneene, and (as many credible Authors doe affirme) the King kept his promise made to Lisana, because (so long as he lives) hee alwayes tearmed himselse by the name of her Knight, and in all ations of Chivalry by him undertaken, are never curried any other devise, but such as he received from her.

l

d

By this, and divers other like worthy deeds, not onely did he winne the hearts of his fubjects; burg we occasion to the whole world beside, to renowne his tame to all succeeding posterity. Whereto (in these more wretched times of ours) few or none bend the sway of understanding: but rather how to be cruell and tyrannous Lords, and therefore win their peoples hatted.

Sophionia, thinking her felf to be the married wife of Gifip pus, mas (indeed) the wife of Titus Quintus Fulvius, and departed thence with him to Rome wit in a while after, Gifippus a'fo came toitner in very poore condition, and thinking that he was defpefed by Tius, grew weary of his tife, and confessed that bee had murdered a man, with tall intent to diefor the fail. But Titus taking knowledge of him, and defining to fave the life of Gifippus, charged himfel e to nave dene the bloody deed. Which the murderer himselfe (standing then among the mult tu te; feeing, truely conjeffed the deed. By meanes whereof, at three were delivered by the Emperor Ottavius: and Titus gave his Sifter in warriage to Gisppus, giving them also the most part of bis goods and inheritances. The

The eight Novell.

Detlaring, that not win francing the fromnes of Fortune, diversitie of occurrences, and contrary accidents happening; yet love and friendship ought to be preciously preserved among mea.

BY this time Madam Philomena, at command of the King, (Madam Pampinea cealing) prepared to follow next in order, whereupon thus the began. What is it (Gracious Ladies) that Kings cannot doe(if they lift) in matters of greatest importance, and especially unto fuch as most they should declare their magnificence? He then that performeth what he ought to doe, when it is within his owne power, doth well. But it is not fo much to be admired, neither deserveth halfe the commendations, as when one man doth good to another, when leaft it is expeded, as being out of his power, and yet performed. In which respect, because you have so extolled King Piero, as appearing no: meanely meritorious in your judgements: I make no soubt but you will be much more pleased, when the actions of our equalls are duely confidered, and shall paralellany of the greatest Kings. Wherefore I purpose to tell you a Novell, concerning a honourable courtefie of two worthy friends.

At such time as Olfavius Cafar (not as yet named Augustus, but onely in the office called Triumuiri) governed the Romane Empire, there dwelt in Rome a Gentleman, named Publius Quintus Fulvius, a man of singular understanding, who having one Some named Titus Quintus Fulvius, of towardly years and apprehension, seat him to Athens to learne Philosophy, but with letters of familiar commendations, to a noble Athenian Gentleman, named Chremes, being his ancient fixed, of long acquaintance. This Gentleman lodged Titus in his owne house, as companion to his Son, named Gifippus, both of them Rudying together, under the tuto-

VIC

Afre

ting of a Philosopher, called Artifippus. These two yong Gentlemen living thus in one City, House, & ochoole, it bred betweene them such a brother-hoode and amitie, as they could not be severed from one another, but onely by the accident of death; nor could either of them enjoy any content, but when they were both to-

gether in company.

Being each of them endued with gentle spirits, and having begun their studies together; they arose (by degrees) to the glorious height of Philosophy, to their much same and commendation. In this manner they lived, to the no meane comfort of Chremes, hardly distinguishing the one from the other for his Son, & thus the, Schollers continued the space of three yeares. At the ending whereof (as it hapneth in all things else) Chremes died, whereat both the young Gentlemen conceived such hearty griese, as if he had been their common father; nor could the kindred of Chremes discerne, which of the two had most neede of comfort, the losse souched

them fo equally.

d

h

18

1,

n

100

It chanced within some two monthes after, that the kindred of Gifippus came to fee him, and (before Titus) advised him to marriage, and with a young Gentleweman of fingular beauty, derived from a most noble house in Athens, and the named Sophronia, aged about fifteene years. This marriage drawing neare, Gifippus on a day, increased Titus to walke along with him thither, because (as yet) he had not seene her. Comming to the house, and the fitting in the midft betweene them, Tio au making himfelfe a confiderator of beauty, and efpecially on his friends behalfe; began to observe her very judicioufly, and every pare of her feemed to pleafing in his eye, that giving them all a private praise, yet answerable to their due deserving ; hee became so enflamed with affection to her, as never any Lover could be more violently surprized, so sodainely doch beauty beguile our best fenfes.

After they had fate an indifferent while with her, they returned home to their lodding, while Taus being alone in his Chamber, began so bethinke on her whote perfections had to powerfully ple that integrand the more he entred into this confideration, the fierces he felt his defires enflamed, which being unable to quench, by reasonable perswasions, after hee had vented forth infa-

nite fighs, thus he questioned.

Most unhappy Titus as thou art, whicher does thou transport thine understanding, love and hope? Doft thou not know as well by the honourable favours, which thou halt received of Chremer and his house, as also the inti e amity betweene thee and Gifippus (unto whom faire Soparania is the affianced triend I not thou shoulk hold her in the like reverent respect, as if flice were thy true borne Sifter ? Dareft thou prefume to fancie her? Whither fall beguiling love all are thee, and vame immaining hopes carrie thee? Open the eyes of thy betzer understanding, and acknowledge thy selie to be a most miserable man, give way to reason, bridle thine intemperate oppetites, reforme all irregular defires, and guide thy fancy to a place of better direction Refift thy wanton and lascivious will in the beginning, and be Mafter of thy felfe, while thou haft opportunity; for what thou aimest at, is neither reasonable nor honest. And if thou wert affured to prevaile upon this purfuite, yer thou oughteft to avoide it; if thou haft any regard of true triendfhip, and the dutie therein j fily required. What wilt thou doe then Titus? Fly from this anordinate affection, if thou wilt be reputed to be a man of fentible judgement.

After hee had thus discoursed with himselfe; remembring Sophronia, and converting his former allegations, into a quite contrary sense, in unter deterration of them, and guided by his idle appearer, thus hee began again. The lawes of lave are of greater force than any other whatsoever, they not only breake the bands of

friend-

ti

be

ch

of

m

qu

ne

ote

310

1715

by

16-

013

oft

ch

he

m

df

hy

1.3

n-

-3

: 8

ile.

8,

d

nd

or

ft.

e,

rd

d.

i-

of

10

i-

of

n

y

of

do

friendship, but even those also of more divine consequesce. How may times it bath bin noted, the Father to aff & his owne daughter, the brother his fifter, and the stepmother her fon in law, matters far more monfrous, than to fee one friend love the wife of another, a cife happening continually? Moreover, lam young, and youth is wholly subjected to the passions of Love: is it realonable then that thole should be bard from me, which are fitting and pleafing to Love? Honeft things belong to men of more yeares, and maturity, than I am troubled withall, and I can cover none, but onely these wherein Love is directer. The beauty of Soparonia is worthy of generall love, and if I that am a young man. doe love her, what man living can justly reprove me for it? Should not I love her, because the is affianced to Gifippus? That is no matter to me, I ought to love her, be. cause the is a woman, and women were created for no other occasion, but to be loved. Fortune hath sinned in this cafe, and not I, in directing my friends affection :o her, rather than any other; and if the our he to be lo ed, as her perfections do challenge. G: fippus under flanding that I affect her, may be the better concented that it is I, rather than any other.

With these, and the like entercourses, he often mocke himselfe, falling into the contrary, and then to it is againe, and from the contrary into another kind of alteration, wasting and contuming himselfe, not onely this day and the aight following but many more afterward, till her less both his feeding and sleepe, so that through deality of body, he was confirmed to keep his be a Gisppus, who had aivers dayes noted his melancholly diposition, and now his falling into extremitie of sicknesse, was very forry to behold it; and with all mea ice and inventions he could device to use, her both questioned the cause of this strange alteration, and estated every way, how he might be it comfort him, never seassing to demand a reason, why he should be thus sad

and fickely. But Titus after infinite importuning (which full he answered with idle and frivolous excuses, faire from the truth indeede, and (to the no means affliction of his friend) when he was able to use no more contradictions; at length, in fighes and teares, thus he replied.

Gifippus, were the gods forwell pleafed, I could more gladly yeeld to die, than continue any longer in this wretched life, confidering, that Fortune hath brought me to fach an extremity, as proofe is now to be made of n y confidence and vertue; both which I finde conquered in mee, to my eternall confusion and shame. But my best hope is, that I shall shortly be required, as I have in justice deserved, namely with death, which will be a thousand times more welcome to me, than a loathed life, with remembrance of my base dejection in courage; which because I can no longer conceale from thee, not without blushing shame, I am well contented for to let thee know it.

Then began he to recount, the whole occasion of this strange conflict in him, what a maine battell hee had with his private thoughts, confessing that they got the victory, causing him to die hourely for the love of Sophronia, and affirming withal, that in due acknowledgement, how greatly he had transgressed against the lawes of friendship, hee thought no other penance sufficient for him, but onely death, which he willingly expected every houre, and with all his heart would gladly bid

welcome.

Gisppus hearing this discourse, and seeing how Titus bitterly wept, in agonies of moving afflictions: fate an indifferent while lad and pensive, as being wounded with affication to Sophionia, but yet in a well-governed and temperate manner. So, without any long delaying, he concluded with himselfe; that the life of his friend ought to be accounted much more deare, than any love he could be are unto Soplionia: And in this resolution, the teares of Titus forcing his eyes to flow forth like

21

two Fountaines, and running downe his cheekes, thus

he replied.

e

1=

11

20

n

d

ie

Ç.

.

es

20

d

id

13

n d

d

ıd

re

n,

cc

19

Titus, if thou hadft not neede of comfort, as plaintly I fee thou haft, I would justly complaine of thee to my felfe, as of the man who hath violated our friendship, in keeping thine extremity so long time concealed from me, which hath beene over-tedious for thee to endure. And although it might seeme to thee a dishound reason of the seement case, and therefore kept from the knowledge of thy friend, yet I plaintly tell thee, that dishonest courses (in the league of amity) deserve no more concealement, than those of the honestest nature. But leaving these imperviount wandrings, let us come so them of

much greater necessity.

If thou doest earnestly love faire Sophronia, who is betroathed and affianced to me, it is no matter for mee to marvell at; but I hould rather be much abashed, if thou couldit not intirely affect her, knowing how bea'ttifull the is, and the nobilitie of her minde, being as able to instaine passion, as the thing pleasing is fullest of excellence. And looke how reasonably thou fanciest Sophronia, as unjuftly thou complainest of thy Fortune, in ordaining her to be my wife, although thou doeft not speake it expresly : as being of an opinion, that thou mighteft with more honefty love her, if thee were any others, than mine. But if thou art lo wife, as I have alwayes held thee to be, tell me truely upon thy faith, to whom could Fortune better guide her, and for which thou oughtest to be more thankefull, than in bestowing her on me? Any other that had enjoyed her, although thy love was never to honeft, yet he would better affect her himselte, than for thee, which thou canst not (in like manner) looke for from me, if thou doeft account me for thy friend, and as constant now as ever-

Reason is my warrant in this case, because I cannot remember, fince first our entrance into friendship, that ever I enjoyed any thing, but it was as much thine, as

mine

mine. And if our affaires had fuch an equall course before, as otherwise they could not sublist; must they not now be kept in the fame maner? Can any thing more particularly appertaine to mee, but thy right therein is as absolute as mine? I know not how that thou maift efteeme of my friendship, if in any thing concerning my felf, I can pleade my priviledge to be above thine. True at is, that Sephronia, is affi inced to me, and I love her dearely, daily expecting when our Nuptials shall be celebrated. But feeing thou doff more fervently affect her, as being better able to judge of the perfections remaining in fo excellent a creature as the is, than I doe :affore thy felte, and believe it contrantly, that thee shall come to my bed; not as my wife, but onely thine. And therefore leave these despairing thoughts, thake of this cloudy disposition, reassume thy tormer loviall spirits with comfort and what elfe can content thee; in expedation of the happy houre, and the j ft requirell of thy long, loving, and worthy friendfup, which I have alwayes valued as mine owne life.

Tites he wing this answer of Gifippus, looke how much the fweet hope of that which he defred gave him pleature, as much both dury and reaton affronced him with frame ; ferring before his eyes this due confideratio, that the greater the liberality of Gifippus was ,far greater & unreasonable it appeared to him in digrace, i her should unmannerly accept it Wherefore, being Une de to refr ine from te res, and with fuch thrength as his weaken sie would give leave, thus he replied

Gifippus thy bounty and firme friendship fuffere hae to lee apparantly, what (on my pire) is no more than ought to be done. All the gods torbid, that I fhould receive as mine, her whom they have adjudged to be thine, by true refpett of birth and defert. For if they had thought her a wife hi for me, doe not then or any elle imagine, that ever free fould have beene granted to thee. Victreely therefore thine owne election, and

the

lea

nie.

WO

thu

D25

lice

WI

tils

ain

my

fiel

211

Da

tia:

do

no

b.1

TC

(d)

te:

6.3

of

ne

(o

in

ch

m

00

fil

h

tn

the gracious favour wherewith they have bleffed thee? leave me to confume away in teares, a mourning garment by them appointed for mee, as being a man unworthy of such happinesse; for either I shall conquer this dilaster, and that will be my crowne, or else it will yanguish me, and free me from all paine; whereto Gibp-

pus prefently thus answered.

e-

to

re

15

A

ry

36

13

e-

er,

1-

af-

all

nd

is

its

4-

of

YC

W

m

m

.

ar

e,

c

c

Worthy Titm, if our amity would give mee fo much license, as ut to contend with my felt, in pleasing thee with fuch a thing as I defire, and could also induce thee therein to be directed: it is the onely end wherear I sime, and am refolved to pur ue it. In which regard, let my perfw hons prevaile with thee, and thereto I conpare thee, by the faith of a friend, juffer me to ule mine gut orny, when it extendeth both to mine owne honour, and thy good for I will have Separonia to be only thine. I know furficiently, how farre the forces of love doc extend in power, and am not ignorant alfo, how not once or evise, but very many times, they have broughelovers to untertunate ends, as now I fee thee very neere it, and to farre gone, as thou art not able to turne backe againe, nor yet to conquer thine owne teares, but proceeding on further in this excremety, thou wilt be left vanq ashed, finking under the burthen of loves tyrinnicali oppression, and then my turne is next to follow thee. And the effore, had I no other reafon to love thee, yet because this life is deare to mee, in regard of mine owne depending thereon; I thank the necret thereto obliged. For this caule, Sophronia mult and thall be thine, for thou canft not finde any other to conforme to thy fancy. albeit I who can cafily convert my liking to another wife, but never to have the like friend againe, thall hereby content both tace, and my felfe.

Yet perhaps this is not a matter to easily done, or I to expresse such liberality thering wives were to be to und bearest to Sephronia, hath justly deferved.

Now although Tites was confounded with shame, to yeeld confent, that Sophronia should be accepted as his wife, and uled many obitinate relittances : yet notwithfrinding, love pleading on the one file powerfully, and Gifippus as errneftly perfeyading on the other, thus hee anfivered. Gifippus, I know not what to fay, neither how to behave my felfe in this election, concerning the fitring of my contentment, or pleafing thre mathy maportunate perlycation. But feeing thy liberalny is fo great, as it furmeunteth all reason or thame in me,! will yeeld obedience to thy more than noble nature. Yet let this remaine for thine affurance, that I doe not receive this grace of thine, as a man not sufficiently understanding, how I enjoy from thee, not onely her whom most of all I doe affect, but also doe hold my very life of thee. Grant then you greatest gods (if you be the Patrons of this mine unexpected telicity) that with honour and due respect, I may he reafter make apparantly knowne; how highly I acknowledge this thy wonderfull favour, in being more mercifull to me, than I could be to my felfe.

For abridging of all further circumstances, answered Gisspare, and for easier bringing this matter to full effect, I hold this to be out only way. It is not unknown

0

t

50

1

01

ni

ho

te

151

be

de

Pe

ple

So

m

ob:

fen

nig

duc

her

the

Pus

h

y

y

ee

nd

n-

ely

to

LOU

,10

his

th

and

how

fit-

1.11-

s lo

will

er let

ccive

tan.

shom y life

e the

h ho-

antly

nder-

could

wered

nown

13

to thee, how after much discourse had betweene my kindred, and those belonging to Saparonia, the matrimoniall conjunction was fully agreed on, and therefore, if now I shall flie off, and say, I will not accept her as my wife: great scandall would arise thereby, and make much trouble among our friends, which could not be greatly displeasing to mee, if that were the way to make her thine. But I rather fland in feare; that if I forfike her in fuch peremptory fort, her kindred and friends will bestow her upon some other, and so the is acterly loft, without all possible meanes of recovery. For prevention there ore of all finister accidents, I thinke it best, fifth opinion jumpe with mine) that I All purfue the bufinede, as already I have begun, having thee alwayes in my company, as my dearest friend, and onely affociate. The naptials being performed with our friends, in fecret manner at night (as we can cunningly enough contrive it) thou thale have her muden honour in bed, even as if the were thine owne wife. Afterward, in upr time and place, wee will publiquely make knowne what is done; if they take it well, we will be as jocond as they siftley frowne and waxe offended, the deede is done, over-late to be recalled, and fo perforce they must rest contented.

You may well imagine, this advise was not a little pleasing to Titus, whereupon G-stopus received home sophronia into his house, with publique intention to make her his wise, according as we seth custome then observed; and Titus being perfectly recovered, was present at the Feast very ceremonially observed. When night was come, the Ladies and Gentlewomen conducted Sophronia to the Bride-Chamber, where they left her in her Husbands bed, and then departed all away. The Chamber wherein Titus used to lodge, joyaed close to that of Gispopus, for their easter accelle each to the other, at all times whensoever they pleased; and Gispopus being alone in the Bride-Chamber, preparing as is

Novell. 8.

he were comming to bed; extinguishing the light, hee went fortly to Titus, willing him to goe to bed to his wife. Which Tites hearing, overcome with shame and feare, becamerepentant, and denied to goe. But Gifippas, being a true intire friend indecde, and confirming his words with actions, after a little lingering dispute, fent him to the Bride, and as foone as he was in the bed with her, taking Soph onia gently by the hand, foftly he moved the utual queftion to her, if the were willing ta be his wife.

She beleeving verily that hee was Gifippes modefly answered. Sic, I have chosen you to be my Husband, reason requires then, that I should be willing to be your w.fe. At which words, a cofty Rine, which Gifippis effed daily to weare, heeput upon her finger, faying With this Ring, I conteffe my filf to be your Husband, 2nd binde you (for ever) my Spo. le and Wife; no 0. ther kinde of marriage was observed in those day, and to he continued all the night with her, the never sufpe-Ging him to be any other than Gifipus : and thus was the marriage confinminated between Titus & Sophronia, albeit the friends (on eacher fide) thought otherwise.

h

SE

2 1

but

Gre

mot antiv

not

THE

SICS 1

and s

oan

he car

affen

ther,

began

mann

By this time Publius the Father of Titus, was depirted out of this moreall life, and letters came to Athens, that with all speed her should returne to Rome, to take order for occations there concerning him; whertore he concluded with Gifippus about his departure, and taking Separonia thither with him, which was no calle matter to be done, untill it were first knowne, how occasions had bin cirried among them. Whereupon, calling her one day into her chamber, they told her entire. ly how all had paft, which Titus confirmed fubftante ally, by fach direct pullages betweene themselves, as exceeded all possibility of deniall, and moved in her much admiration; looking each on other very discontrutedly, the heavily weeping and lamenting, and greatly complaining of Gifippus, for wronging her fo unkind. ly.

But before any further noise was made in the boufe, the went to her Father, to whom, as also to her Mother, the declared the whole treachery, how much both they and their other friends were wronged by Gifippus, ayouthing her felle to be the wife of Titus, and not of Gifippus, as they supposed. These nerves were highly difficating to the Father of Soplania, who with her Kindred, as also those of Gisippas, made great complaints to the Senate, very dangerous troubles and commotions arising daily betweene them, drawing both Gifippus and Sophronia into harfh reports; hee being generally reputed, not onely worthy of all bitter reproofe, but alfo the fevereft punishment. Nevertheleffe he maintained publikely what he had done, avouching it for an act both of honour and honeflie, wherewith Sephronia's friends had no reason to be offended, but rather to take it in very thankefull part, having married a man of farre greater worth and respect, than himselfe was, or could be.

On the other fide, Tites hearing thefe uncivill acciamations, became much moved and provoked at them, but knowing it was a custome observed among the Greckes, to be fo much the more hurried away with rumours and threatnings, as leffe they finde them to be answered, and when they finde them, fhew themselves not humble enough, but rather as base men, and of no courage; hee resolved with himselfe, that their braveses were no longer to be endured, without fome bold and manly answer. And having a Romane heart, as aloan Athenian understanding, by politick perswasions he caused the Kindred of Gisppus and Saphronie, to be affembled in a Temple, and himselfe comming this ther, accompanied with none but Gifippus onely, het began to deliver his minde before them all, in this

in her manner following.

ly

d.

nit

036

ng.

ild,

90.

and

pc-

VV.15

17.843

pir.

rems,

take

re he

d ta-

calle

VV OC-

, cal-

mrire.

fanu-

cs, 15

ilcon. orcal-

inkind.

But

N E

The Oration uttered by Titus Quintus Fulvius, in the hearing of the Athenians, being the Kindred and Friends to Gilippus, and Sophronia.

Many Philosophers doe hold opinion, that the aftions performed by mortall men, doc proceede from the disposing and ordination of the immortall gods. Whereupon some doe maintaine, that things which be done, or never are to be done, proceede of necefficie: albeit fome other doc hold, that this necessitie is onely referred to things done. Both which opinions (if they be confidered with mature judgement) do most manifeftly approve, that they who reprehend any thing which is irrevocable, doe nothing else but thew themselves, as if they were wifer than the gods, who we are to beleeve, that with perpetuall reason, and voide of any error, doe dispose and governe both us, and all our actions; In which respect, how foolish and beatt-like a thing it is prefumptuoufly to checkt or controlle their operations, you may very eafily confider; and likewife, how justly they deserve condigne punishment, who fuffer themselves to be transported in so temerarious a manner.

In which notorious transgression, I understand you all to be guilty, if common same speake truely concerning the marriage of my self and sophronia, whom you imagined as given to Gisppus; for you never remember that it was so ordained from eternity, she to be mine, and no wife for Gisppus, as at this instant is made manifest by full effect. But because the kinde of speaking, concerning divine providence, and intention of the gods, may seeme a difficult matter to many, and formerwhat hard to be understood: I am content to presuppose, that they meddle not here with any thing of ours, and will onely stay my selfe on humane reasons, and in this nature of speech, I shall be enforced to do two things, quite contrary to my natural disposition.

Vid

libo

SH at

ey

11-

ng

m-

are fa-

OUT

ke a

heir

like-

ent,

rari-

d you

ncers

na you

mem-

fant is

inde of

tention

my, and

t to pre-

thing of

realons

ed to dos

polition.

The

The one is, to speake somewhat in praise and commendation of my selfe: and the other, justly to blame and condemne other mens seeming estimation, but because both in the one and the other, I doe not intend to swerve a jot from the Truth, and the necessitie of the present case in question, doth not onely require, but alto command it, you must pardon what I am to say.

Your complaints doe proceede, rather from fury than reason, and (with continual) murmurings, or rather seditious) flander, backe-bire and condemne Gifippus, becrufe (of his owne free will and noble disposition) hee gave her to be my wife, whom (by your election) was made his; wherein I account him most highly praiseworthy: and the reasons inducing me thereunto, are thefe. The first, because hee hath performed no more than what a friend ought to doe: and the fecond, in regard he hath dealt more wisely than you did. I have no intention to display (at this present) what the secret law of amity requireth, to be acted by one friend towards another, it shall suffice mee onely to informe you, that the league of friendthip (farre Gronger than the bond of bloud and kindred) confirmed us in our election of cither at the first, to be true, loyall and perpetuall friends; whereas that of kindred, commeth onely by fortune or chance. And therfore if Gifippus affected more my life, than your benevolence, I being ordained for his friend, as I doe now confelle my felfe to be; none of you ought to wonder thereat, in regard it is no matter of marvell.

But let us come now to our second reason, wherein, with farre greater instance I will shew you, that hee hath (in this occasion) shewen himselfe to be much more wise, than you did, or have done; because it plainly appeareth that you have no feeling of the divine providence, and much lesse knowledge in the effects of friendship. I say, that your foresight, counsell and deliberation, gave Sophronia to Gisspus, a young Gentleman, and a l'hilosopher: Gisspus likewise bath given

HI 3

pc

ther to a young Gentleman, and a Philosopher, as himfelfe is. Your discretion gave her to an Athenian; the gift of Gisspus, is to a Romane. Yours, to a noble and konest man; that of Gisspus, to one more noble by sace, and no lesse honest than himselfe. Your judgement hath bestowed her on a rich young man: Gisspus hath given her to one sarrericher. Your vuscome gave her to one who not onely loved her not, but also one that desired not to know her: Gisspus gave her unto him, who, above all felicitic else, yea, more than his owne

life, both entirely loved and defired her.

Now, for proofe of that which I have faid, to be moft true and infailable, and that his deede deferveth to be much more commended than yours, let it be duly confidered on, point by point. That I am a young man and a Philosopher, as Gisspusis; my yeares, fice, and fludies, without feeking after further proofe, doth fufficiently testifie; One selfe-same age is both his and mine, in like quantitie of course have we lived and studied together. True it is, that he is an Athenian, and I am a Romane. But if the glory of these two Cities should be disputed on; then let mee tell you, that I am of a Citie that is Franke and Free, and hee is of a Tributary Cigie. I fay, that I am of a City, which is chiefe Lady and Mistrelle of the whole world, and he is of a Citie fubject to mine. I fay that I am of a City, that is strong in Armes, Empire, and Studie alfo; whereas his can commend it feife but for Studies onely. And although you feeme here to be a Schoiler, in appearance meane enough, yet I am not descended of the simplest stocke in Rome.

My houses and publique places, are filled with the ancient Statues of my Predecessors, and the Annales record the infinite triumphs of the Quintij, brought home by them into the Romane Capitole, and years cannot eate out the glory of our name, but it will live

and florish to all posterity.

Model

le G Modest shame makes me silent in my wealth and perfessions, my minde truely telling mee, that honest contented poverty, is the most ancient and richest inheritance, of our best and noblest Romanes; which opinion, if it be condemned by the understanding of the ignorant multitude, and herein we shall give way to them by preferring riches and worldly trreasures, then I can lay that I am aboundardly provided, not as ambitious, or greedily covetous, but sufficiently stored with the goods of Fortune.

d

y

h

er

at

n,

ne

no

be

on-

1116

Au-

ici-

ine

to-

m a

d be

Citie

Ci-

g and

: (nb-

ng in

s can

nough

meane

Hocke

ith the

anales

rought

yeares

will live

Model

I know well enough, that you held it as a defired benefite, Gifippus being a Native of your Citie, should al-To be linked to you by alliance : but I know no reafon, why I should not be as neere and deere to you at Rome, as if I lived with you here. Confidering, when I am there, you have a ready and well wishing friend, to flead you in all beneficiall and ferviceable offices, as carefull and provident for your support, yea, a prote-Gour of you, and your affaires, as well publique as particular. Who is it then, not transported with partiallaffection, that can (in reason) more approve your act, than that which my friend Gifippus hath done? Questionleffe, not any one, as I thinke. Sephronia is married to Titus Quintus Fulvius, a noble Gentleman by antiquitie, a rich Citizen of Rome, and (which is above all) the friend of Gifippus: therefore, fuch a one that thinkes it ftrange, is forry for it, or would not have it be;knoweth not what he doth.

Perhaps there may be some, who will say, they do not so much complaine, that Sophronia is the wife to Titus; but of the manner wherby it was done, as being made his wife secretly, and by thest, not any of her friendscalled thereto; no, not so much as advertized thereof. Why Gentlemen, this is no miraculous thing, but heretofore hath oftentimes happened, and therefore no novelty.

I cannot count unto you how many there have been, who fagain the will of their Father) have made choise

of their husbands; nor them that have fled away with their Lovers into strange countries, being first friends, before they were wives: nor of them who have sooner made testimony of mariage by their bellies, than those ecremonies due to matrimony, or publication thereof by the tongue; so that meere necessity and constraint, hath forced the Parents to yeeld consent: which hath not so happened to Suppronia, for the was given to me by Gi-

fippus discreetly, honefly, and orderly.

Others also may say, that shee is married to him, to whom it belonged not to marrie her. These complaints are foolish, and womanish, proceeding from very little, or no consideration at all. In these dayes of ours, Fortune makes no use of novell or inconsiderate meanes, whereby to bring matters to their determined essea, whereby to bring matters is a Cobler, rather than a Scholier, hath ended a businesse of mine, either in private or in publique, if the end be well made? Well I may take order, if the Cobler be indiscrete, that hee meddle no more with any matters of mine, yet I ought, in curtesse, to thanke him for that which he did,

In like manner, if Gifippus hath married Sophronia well, it is foolish and superfluous, to finde fault with the manner he used in her marriage. If you millike his course in the case, beware of him hereaster, yet thanks

him because it is no worse.

Neverthelesse, you are to understand, that I sought not by fraud or deceit, (but onely by wit) any opportunitie, whereby any way to sullie the honesty and cleare Nobilitie of your blould, in the person of Sophonia; for although in secret I made her my wise, yet I came not as an enemy, to take her person of like a Ravisher) wronged her virginity, to blemish your noble titles, or despising your alliance. But servently enslamed by her bright beauty, and incited also by her unparalleld vertues, I shaped my course; knowing well enough, that is I tooke the ordinary way of wiving, by moving the question

question to you, I should never winne your consent, as fearing, lest I would take her with me to Rome, and so conveigh out of your sight, a lewell by you so much esteemed, as she is.

For this, and no other reason, did I presume to use the secret cunning which now is openly made knowne unto you and Gisppus disposed himselfethereunto, which otherwise he never determined to have done, in contracting the marriage for me, and she consenting to me in his name.

o

i.

to

ts

le,

-10

cs,

a.

n a

ori-

1 1

hee

ht,

onia

with

e his

anke

ught

ortu-

leare

a; tor

e not

icher)

es, or

y her

d ver-

that if

ig the

cflion

Moreover, albeit most carnestly I affected her, I lought to procure your union, not like a lover, but as a true husband, nor would I immodestly touch her, till first (as her selfe can testifie) with the words becomming wedlocke, and the Ring also I espoused her, demanding of her, if shee would accept mee as her Husband, and shee answered mee, with her full consent. Wherein, if it may seeme that she was deceived, I am not any way to be blamed, but shee, for not demanding, what, and who I was.

This then is the great evill, the great offence, and the great injuric committed by my friend Gifppus, and by me as a Lover: that Sophronia is fecretly become the wife of Titus Quintus Fulvius. And for this cause, like Spies you watch him, threaten him daily, as if you intended to teare him in pieces. What could you do more, if he had given her to a man of the very vilest condition? to a villaine, to a flave? What prisons? what fetters? or what torments are sufficient for this fast? But leaving those frivolous matters, let us come to discourse of more moment, and better beseeming your attention.

The time is come, that I may no longer continue here, because Publius my Father is dead, and I must needs returne to Rome, wherefore being minded to take Sophronia thicher with me, I was the more willing to acquaint you therewith, as also what else I have said, which otherwise had beene concealed from you. Nor

ean you but take it in good part, if you be wife, and reft well contented with what is done; confidering, if i had any intention either to deceive, or otherwise wrong you; I could have basely left her, and made a scorne both of her and you, you not having any power to stay me here. But the gods will never permit that any courreous Romane, should ever conceive so vile and degene-

rate a thought.

Sophronia, by ordination of the gods, by force of humane lawes, and by the laudable confent of my friend Gifippus, as also the powerfull command of Love is mine. But you perchance, imagining your selves to be wifer than the gods, or any other men what foever; may thinke ill of it, and more brutishly than beasts, condemne their working in two kinds, which would be offensive to me. The one is, the detaining of Sophronia from me, of whom you have no power, but what pleafeth me. The other is your bitter threatnings against Gifipus my deare friend, to whom you are in dutie obliged. In both which cases, how unreasonably soever you carrie your felves, I intend not at this time to prefle amy further. But rather let me counsell you like a friend, to cease your hatred and disdaine, and suffer Sophrenia to be delivered me, that I may depart contentedly from you as a kinfman, & (being abfent) remaine your friend: affuring you, that whether what is done shall please or elfe displease you, if you purpose to proceede any otherwife; I will take Gifippus along with me, and when I come to Rome, take fuch fure order to fetch her heace, who in Iustice is mine, even in meere despight of you all; and then you shall feele by found experience, how powerfull is the just indignation of the wronged Ros manes.

When Titue had thus concluded his Oration, hee role up with a flerne and discontented countenance, and tooke Gisspus by the hand, plainely declaring that her made small account of all the rest that were in the

Temple ;

C

ľ•

C-

11-

ıd

is be

34

n.

of-

nia

2-

nft

ob-

you

e a-

nd,

enia

om

end:

cor

her.

en I

ACC,

YOU

TOVY

Ros

rofe

and

t het

n the

Temple ; and shaking his head at them , rather menaced than any otherwise seemed to care, or stand

in feare of them. They which tarried, when they were gone, confidering partly of the reasons alleadged by Titus, and partly terrified by his latest speeches; became induced, to like well of his alliance and amity, as (with common confent) they concluded : that is was much better to accept Titus as their kiniman (feeing Gifippus had made manifest resulall thereof) than to lose the kindred of the one, and procure the hatred of the other. Wherefore they went to feeke Titus, and faid unto him, they were very well contented that Sophronia should be his Wife, he their deare and loving kinfman, and Gifippus to remaine their much respected friend. And embracing one another, making a folemne feaft, fuch as in the like cafes is necessarily required, they departed from hiar, prefently fending Sophronia to him, who making a vertue of necessity, converted her love (in short time after) to Titus, in as effectuall manner, as formerly shee had done to Gifippus, and fo was fent away with him to Rome, where thee was received and welcommed with very great honour.

Gifepus remaining ftill at Athens, in small regard of either theirs, or his owne friends; not long after by meanes of fundry troublesome Citizens; and partialities happening among the common people, was banished from Athens, and hee, as also all his family, condemned to perpetuall exile: during which tempestuous time. Gisppus was become not onely wretched by poore, but wandred abroad as a common begger; in which miserable condition he travelled to Rome to try if Titus would take any acknowledgement of him. Vnderstanding that he was living, and one most respected among the Romanes, as being a great commander and a Senator: hee enquired for the place where he dwelf and going to be neare abous his house, staied there?

long till Titus came home, yet not daring to manifest himselse, or speake a word to him, in regard of his poore and miserable estate, but strove to have him see him, to the end that he might acknowledge and call him by his name; notwithstanding, Titus passed by him without either speech or looking on him. Which when Giffest perceived, and making sull account, that (at the least) he would remember him, in regard of former courtesses, done to him: consounded with griefs and desperate thoughts, he departed thence, never meaning to see him any more.

Now, in regard it was night, hee having paten nothing all that day, nor provided of one peuply to buy him any food, wandred he knew not whither, defiring rather to die than live; hee came at last to an old ruinous part of the Citie, over-spred with briers and bushes, and seldome reforted unto by any: where sinding a hollow Cave or Vault, hee entred into it, meaning there to weare away the comfortlesse night, and laying him downe on the hard ground, almost starks naked, and without any warme garments, over-wearied

with weeping, at last he fell into a sleepe.

It fortuned that two men, who had beene abroad the fame night, committing thefts and robberies together; fomewhat very early in the morning, came to the fame Cave, intending there to finare and divide their booties, and differences happening betweene them about it, he that was the stronger person, flew there the other, and

shen went away with the whole purchafe.

Gifippus having heard and seene the manner of this accident, was not a little joyfull, because hee had now found a way to death, without laying any violent hand on himselfestor life being very loathsome to him, it was his onely desire to die. Wherefore, he would not budge from the place, but tarried there so long, till the Sergeants and Officers of Justice (by the information of him ahat did the deede) came thither well attended, and surjections.

oully ledde Gifippus thence to prilon. Being examined concerning this bloudy fact, he plainly confessed, that he himselfe had committed the murther, and afterward would not depart from the Cave, but purposely flated for apprehention, as being truely toucht with compunction for fo foule an offence: upon which peremptorie confession, Marcus Varro being then l'ixtor, gave sentence that he fould be crucified on a Croffe, as it was the usuall manner of death in those dayes. Titus chancing to come at the fame time into the Preterium, adviledly beholding the face of the condemned man (as ne fate upon the bench) knew him to be Gifippus, not a little wondring at this strange accident, the povertie of his estate, and what occasion should bring him this ther, especially in the questioning for his life, and before the Tribunall of Inflice.

His folle earneftly thirfting, by all possible meanes to helpe and defend him, and no other course could now be taken for safetie of his life, but by accusing himselfe, to excuse and cleare the other of the crime: heestepe from off the judgement bench, and crouding through the throng to the Barre, called out to the Prator in this manner. Marcus Varre, recall thy sentence given on the condemned man sent away, because he is truely guildesse and innocent: With one bloudy blow have I offended the gods, by killing that wretched man, whom the Sergeants sound this morning staine, wherefore noble Prator, let no innocent mans bloud be shed for it,

but onely mine that have offended.

d

10

1-

10

cd

he

Cr;

ne

cs,

he

nd

his

YYO

ind

w25

dge

rge-

nim

uri-

Marcus Varrostood like a man confounded with admiration, being very forry, for that which the whole affistants hath both seene and heard, and yet he could not (with honour) desist from what must needs be done, but would performe the Laws severe injunction. And sending for condemned Gisspus backe againe, in the presence of Titus, thus hee spake to him. How becamed they so madly incensed, as (without any tor-

ment

ment inflicted on thee) to confeste an offence by thee never commetted? Are thou weary of thy life? Thous chargest thy selfe falsely, to be the person who this last night murdered the main in the Cave, and there is another that voluntarily also doth confeste his guiltinesse.

Giffpous lifting up his eyes, and perceiving it was Tigus, conceived immediately, that he had done this one-Ly for his deliverance, as one that remembred him fufficiently, and would not be ungratefull for former kindneffes received. Wherefore, the teares flowing abundantly downe his checkes, hee faid to ludge Farro, it was none but I that murdered the man; wherefore, I commiserate the case of this noble Gentleman Titur, who speakes now too late for the safetic of my life. Titus on the other fide, faid. Noble Prator, this man (as thou feelt) is a franger here, and was found without any weapon, fast affeepe by the dead body : thou maiest then easily perceive, that meerely the miscrable condition wherein hee is, bath made him desperate. and hee would make mine offence the occasion of his death. Absolue him, and send mee to the Croffe, for none but I onely have deserved to die for this notorious fact.

Darrs was aniazed, to observe with what earnest in-Rance each of them strove to excuse the other, which halfe perswaded him in his soule, that they were both guildesse. And as hee was starting up, with full intent to acquite them; a young man, who had stood there all this while, and observed the hard pleading on either side; he crowded in to the Barre, being namen Publiss Ambussus, a fellow of leved life, & utterly out of hopes, as being debauched in all his fortunes, and knowne amongst the Remanes to be a notorious theese, who verily had committed the murder. Well knew his conscience, that mone of them were guilty of the crime, whereyouth each so wisfully charged himselfe: beingwhereyouth each so wilfully charged himselfe: beingtherefore truely toucht with remorfe, hee ftept before

Marcus Varre, faying.

į.

(-(-

1-

1-

it,I

150

e.

25

ch-

1013

ble

ate.

his for

no-

173-

hiciz

tent

esil

ther

blins

pes,

ne a -

who

con-

rime,

being.

Honourable Prator, mine owne horrid and abominable actions, have induced me thus to intrude my felf, for clearing the Arich contention betweene thele two perfons. And questionlesse, some god or greater power, hath tormented my wretched foule, and fo compunctually folicited me, as I cannot chuse, but make open confession of my sinne. Here therefore, I doe apparantly publish, that neither of these men is guilty of the offence, wherewish so wilfully each chargeth himselfe. I am the Villaine, who this morning mardered the man in the Cave, one of no greater honesty than my felfe, and feeing this poore man lie there fleeping, while wes were dividing the stolne booties betweene us; I flew my Companion, because I would be the fole possesser. As for noble Lord Titus, hee had no reason thus to accuse himselfe, because he is a man of no such base qualiey: let them both be delivered, and inflict the feutence of death on me,

Offavius Cesar, to whom tidings were brought of this rare accident, commanding them all three to be brought before him; would needs understand the whole Historie, in every particular as all had happened, which was substantially related to him; whereupon, Offavius quited them all three; the two noble friends, because they were innocent, and the third, for openly revealing the

very truth.

Titus tooke home with him his friend Gifippus, and after he had sharply reproved him for his distrust, and cold credence of his friendship: hee brought him to Sophronia, who welcomed him as lovingly, as if hee had beene her naturall borne brother, bemoaning his hard and disastrous fortune, and taking especialicare, to convert all passed distresses, into a happy and a comfortable change, fitting him with garments and attendants, beseeming his degree in Nobility & vertue. Titus,

ont

out of his honourable bounty, imparted halic his lands and rich possessions to him, and afterward gave him in marriage, his owne Sifter, a most beautiful Lady, pamed Fulvia, laying to him befide. My deare friend Gifippus, it remaineth now in thinc owne election, whother shou wilt live here ftill with me, or returne backe to Athens, with all the wealth which I have beflowed on thee. But Gifippus, being one way constrained, by the sentence of banishment from his native City, and then againe, in regard of the constant leve, which hee bare to fo true and thankefull friend as Titus was: concluded to live there as a loyall Roman, where hee with his Fulvia, and Titus with his faire Sophonia, lived long after together in one and the fame house, augmenting daily (if poslible it might be) their amicy beyond all other equalizing.

A most facred thing therefore is cordiall amity, worthy not onely of fingular reverence, but also to be homoured with eternall commendation, as being the onely wise Mother of all magnificence and honesty, the Sister of Charity and Grantude, the enemy to hatred and avarice, and which is alwayes ready (without attending to be requested) to extend all vertuous actions to others, which she would have done to her selfe. Her tare and divine effects, in these contrary times of ours, are not to be found betweene two such persons, which is a mighty fault, and greatly checketh the miserable coverous residuals and preaction nothing but onely their particular benefite, have banished true Amity, to the utmost confines of the whole earth, and sent her into perpetu-

all exile.

What love, what wealth, or affinity of kindred, could have made Gifippus feele (even in the intirest part of his foule) the fervent compassion, the teares, the fighes of Titus, and with such effication as plainely appeared; to make him consent, that his faire elected Spouse, by him so dearely esteemed, should become the wife of his

11

1-

2-

.

c

d

y

d

:0

1.

ch ca

n-

r -

0-

14

es

2-

ng

nd

10

ity

fic

ti-

of

U-

ld

of

ies

by

115

10-

companion, but onely the precious league of Amity? What lawes, what threatnings, what feares could cause the young armes of Gisspus to abitaine embraces, betaking himselfe to solitary walkes, and obscure places, when in his own bed, he might have enjoyed so matchlesse a beauty (who perhaps defired it so much as himselfe) but onely the title of Amity? What greatnesse, what merits or precedence, could cause Gisspus not to care, for the loss of his kindred, those of Sophronia, yea, of Sophronia her selfe, not respecting the dishoness murmurings of base minded people, their vile and contemptible language, scornes and mockeries, and all to content and satissic a friend, but onely divine Amity.

Come now likewife to the other fide. What occasions. could compell noble Titus, fo promptly and deliberatly, to procure his owne death, to releue his friend from the Crolle, and inflict the paine and thame upon himfelfe, pretending not to fee or know Gifippus at all, had. it not beene wrought by powerfull Amity? What cause else could make Titus to liberall, in dividing (with fuch willing neffe) the larger part of his pattimony to Gifippus, when Fortune had disposses him of his own, but onely heaven-borne Amity? What elfe could have procured Tirus, without any further dilation, feare or Suspition, to give his Sifter Falvia in marriage to Gifippus, when he favy him reduced to fuch extreame povertie, difgrace and milery, but onely infinite Amity? To what end doe men care then, to cover and procure great multitudes of kindred, flore of brethren, numbers of children, and to encrease (with their owne moneyes) plenty of fervants : when by the least loffe and damage happening, they forget all dutie to Father, Brother, or Mafter ? Amity and true friendthip is of a quite contrarie nature, facisfying (in that facred bond) the obligation due to all degrees, both of Parentage, and all alliances cife.

Saladine, the great Soldan of Babylon, in the habite of a Merchant, mas honourably received and melcommed, into the house of Signier Thorello d'Afria. Who travelling to the Holy Land, perfixed a certaine time to his Wife, for the returnebacke to her againe, wherein, if he failed, it mas lamfull for her to take another Hufband. By clouding himselfe in the diffuise of a Faultmer, the Soldan tooke notice of him, and did him more, great honours. Afterward, Thoreto falling ficke, by Magicall Art, her was conveighed in one night to Pavia, when his wife was to be married on the merrow a where making himselfe knowne to her, all was disappointed, and she went home with hims to his own house.

The ninth Novell.

Declarize what an honorable vertue Courtefic is, in the M that truely know how to use it.

MAdam Philomenahaving concluded her discourse. and the rare acknowledgement, which Titus made of his esteemed friend Gifippus, extolled justly as it deferred by all that company: the King, referring the laft office to Dieneus (as it was at the hell granted him) began to speake thus. Without all question to the contratie (worthy Ladies) nothing can be more truely faid, than what Madam Philomena hath delivered, concerning Amity; and her complaint in the conclusion of her Novell, is not without great reason, to see it is flenderly reverenced and respected (now adayes) among all men. But If wee had met her in duty onely for corre-Aing the abuses of iniquitie, and the malevolent courles of this preposterous age; I could proceede further in this just cause of complaint. But because our end aimeth at matters of other nature, it commeth to my memory to tell you of a History, which (perhaps) may Seeme somewhat long, but altogether pleasant, concerning a magnificent alt of great Saladine; to the ond, that by observing those things which yor shall heare in

my Novell, if wee cannot (by reason of our manifold imperfections) intirely compasse the amity of any one yet (at least) wee may take delight, in stretching our kindenesse (in good deeds) so sarre as we are able, in hope one day after, some worthy reward will ensue

thereon, as thereto juftly appertaining.

Let me tell you then, that (as it is affirmed by many) in the time of the Emperour Frederick, first of that name, the Christians, for the better recovery of the holy Land, resolved to make a generall voyage over the Seaes. Which being understood by Saladine, a very worthy Prince, and then Seldan of Babylon: he concluded with himselfe, that he would (in person) goe see, what preparation the Christian Potentates made for the Warre, that he might the better provide for himselfe. Having settled all things orderly in Ægypt for the businesse, and making an outward appearance, as if hee purposed a Pilgrimage to Mecha: he set onwards on his journey, habited like a Merchant, attended onely with two of his most Noble and wisest Baschaes, and three waiting servants.

When he had visited many Christian Provinces, and was riding thorow Lumbardy, to passe the mountaines; it fortuned, in his journying from Missaine to Pavia, and the day being very farre spent, so that night hastened speedily on him: hee met with a Gentleman, named Signior Thorella d'Istria, but dwelling at Pavia, who with his Men, Hawkes and Hounds, went to a house of his, seated in a singular place, and on the Riaver of Ticinama; Signior Thorello seeing such men making towards him, presently imagined, that they were some Gentle-strangers, and such hee desired to respect with

konour.

14

Ċ,

de

C-

ıft

C-

2-

d,

era

CI.

n-

ng

rc-

ur-

her

alm

me-

nay

eer-

nd,

e in

my

Wherefore, Sa'adine demanding of one of Thorelloes men, how farre (asthen) it was to Pavia, and whether they might reach thicker by such an house, as would admit their entrance into the City: Thorello would not suffer

fuffer his fervant to returne the answer, but replied thus himselfe. Sir (quoth hee) you cannot reach Pavia, but night will abridge you of any entrance there. I befeech you then Sir, answered Saladine, favour us so much (because we are all strangers in these parts) as to tell us where were may be well lodged. That shall I Sir, said

Therete, and very gladly too.

Even at the instant Sir, as we met with you, I had determined in my minde, to fend one of my fervants fomewhat neere to Pavia, about a bufineffe concerning my felfe; he shall goe along with you, and conduct you to a place, where you will be very well entertained. So, Repping to him, who was of best discretion amongst his men, hee gave order to him what should be done, and fent him with them. Himfelfe, making haft by a farre neerer way, caused Supper to be prepared in worthy manner, and the Tables to be covered in his Gardens and all things being in good readineffe, he fate downe at his doore, to attend the comming of his guefts. The Servingman, discoursing with the Gentleman on divers occasions, guided them by fuch unufuall passages, as (before they could discerne it) he brought him to his Mafters house; where so soone as Thoretto favy them arrived, he went forth to meece them, affuring them all of most hearty welcome.

Fa Saladine, who was a man of accute understanding, did well perceive, that this Knight Thorelly missioning with him, if (when hee met him) he should have invited him; and therefore, because he would not be denied, of entertaining him into his house, he made choise of this kinde and honourable course, which caused him to returne this answer, Gentle Sir, if courteste in one man to another, doe deserve condemning, then may we justly complaine of you, who meeting us upon the way, which you have shortned by your kindnesse, and which we are no way able to deserve, we are constrained to accept, taking you to be the mirrour of cour-

telie. There No being a Knight of ingenious apprehenti-

on, and well languaged, replied thus.

Gentlemen; this courtesse (seeing you terme it so) which you receive of me, in regard of that justly belonging to you, as your faces doe sufficiently informe mee, is matter of very slender account: but assuredly out of Pavia, you could not have any lodging, deserving to be termed good. And therefore, let it not be displeasing to you, if you have a little gone forth of the common rode way, to have your entertainement somewhat better, as many travellers are easily induced to doe.

Having thus spoken, all the people of the bouse shewed themselves, in serviceable maner to the Gentlemen, taking their horses as they dismounted, and Thoreso himselfe, conducted the three Gentlemen, into three severall faire Chambers, which in costly manner were prepared for them, where their boots were pluckt off, faire Napkins with Manchets lay ready, and delicate Wines to refresh their wearied spirits, much prety conference being entercoursed, till supper time invited them

thence.

d

u

03

113

зd

TC

hy

ni

ne

he

di-

CS,

his

em

ali

RC:

oted

ould

not

nade

cau-

then

upon

reffe,

con-

telic,

Saladine, and they that were with him, spake the Latine tongue very readily, by which meanes they were the better understood; and Theresto seemed (in their judgement) to be the most gracious, compleate, and best spoken Genteleman, as ever they met with in all their journey. It appeared also (on the other side) to Signior Thoresto, that the guests were men of great merit, and worthy of much more esteeme, than there hee could use towards them: wherefore, it did highly distass him, that hee had no more friends there this night to keepe them company, or himselfe better provided for their entertainement, which he intended (on the morry) to recompence with larger amends at dinner.

Hercupon, having inflructed one of his men with what he intended, he fent him to Pavia, which was not. fare off (and where he kept no deore shut) to his wife,

named

named Madam Adialetta a woman fingularly wife, and of a noble fairit, needing little or no direction, especially when she knew her husbands minde. As they were walking in the Garden, Thorello desired to understand, of whenceland what they were? Whereto Saladine thus answered. Sir, were are Cyprian Merchants, comming new from Cyprus, and are travelling to Paris, about affaires of importance. Now trust me Sir, replied Thorello, I could heartily wish, that this Countrey of ours would yeeld such Gentlemen, as your Cyprus affordeth Merchants. So, falling from one discourse unto another, Supper was served in; and looke how best themselves pleased, so they fate at the Table, where (wee neede make no doubt) they were respected in honourable order.

So foone as the Tables were withdrawne, Thorella knowing they might be weary, brought them againe to their Chambers, where committing them to their good reft, himselfe went to bed soone after. The servant fent to Pavia, delivered the mellage to his Lady, who, not like a woman of ordinary disposition, but rather truely Royall, fent Thorelloes fervants into the City, to make preparation for a Feaft indeed, and with lighted Torches (because it was somewhat late) they invited the very greatest and noblest persons of the City, all the roomes being hanged with the richest Arras, Clothes of gold worke, Velver, Silkes, and all other rich adornments, in such manner as her husband had commanded, and answerable to her owne worthy minde, being no way to learne, in what manner to entertaine ftrangers.

On the morrow morning, the Gentlemen arofe, and mounting on horsebacke with Signior Thorello, he called for his Hawkes and Hounds, brought them to the River, where he thewed two or three faire flights: but Saladine defiring to know, which was the fairest Hothery in all Pavia. Therello answered. Gentlemen, I will

ALCH

1

m

the

thew you that my felfe, in regard that I have occasion to ride thither. Which they beleeving, were the better contented, and rode on directly unto Pavia; arriving there about nine of the clocke, and thinking he guided them to the best Inne, hee brought them to his owne house; where siste of the worthicst Chizens, stood ready to welcome the Gentlemen; imbracing them as they lighted from their horses. Which Saladiae, and his affectives perceiving, they guessed as it was indeede, and Saladiae faid. Believe mee worthy Thorello, this is not answerable to my demand; you did too much yesternight, and much more than we could desire or deserved. Wherefore, you might well be the sooner discharged of us, and let us travell on our journey.

. Noble Gentlemen, replied Threello (for in mine eye you feeme no leste) that courtefie which you met with yester-night, I am to thanke Forme for, more than you, because you were then straited by such necessitie, as urged your acceptance of my poore Countrey-house. But now this morning, I shall account my selfe much beholding to you (as the like will all these worthy Gentlemen here about you) if you doe but answer kindnesse with kindnesse, and not to result to take a homely din-

ner with them.

!-

13

h

3 =

1-

ee

N-

10

to

od

ent

not

sely

ake

010

the

the

ches

orn-

tran-

c,and

e cal-

to the

: but

Ho.

I tvil

BUCH

Saladine and his friends, being conquered with such potent persuasions, and already dismounted from their norses, saw that all deniall was meerely in vaine; and therefore thankefully condescending (after some seremonious coplements were over pass) the Gentlemen conducted them to their Chambers, which were not sumptuously prepared for them, and having laide afide their riding garments, being a little refreshed with Cakes and Wines; they (after a while) descended into the dining Hall, the pompe whereof I am not able to report.

When they had washed, and were seated at the Tables, dinner was served in most magnificent fort; so that if

the

the Emperor himselfe had beene there, hee could not have beene more sumptiously served. And although Saladine and his Baschaes were noble Lords, and wonted to see matters of admiration; yet could they doe no less now, but rather exceede in marvell, considering the quality of the Knight, whom they knew to be a Citizen, and no Prince or great Lord. Dinner being ended, and divers facultar conferences passing among them; because it was exceeding hot; the Gentlemen of Pavia (as it pleased Thorello to appoint) went to repose themselves awhile, and hee keeping company with his three guests, brought them into a goodly Chamber, where, because he would not faile in the least seruple of courterie, or conceale from them the richest Lewell which he had; hee sent for his Lady and Wife, because (as yet)

they had not seene her.

She was a Lady of extraordinary beauty, tall stature, very sumptuously attired, and having two sweet Sonnes, (refembling Angels) the came with them waiting before her, and graciously falused her guests. At her comming, they arole, and having received her with great reverence, they feated her in the midft, kindely chearishing the two children. After some gracious Language patt on either fide, fice demanded of whence, and what they were, which they answered in the same kind as they had done before to her husband. Afterward, with a modest smiling countenance, shee said. Worthy Gentlemen, let not my weake Womanish discretion appeare distastable, in defiring to crave one especiall fayour from you, namely, not to refuse or disdaine a small gift, wherewith I purpole to present you. But conside. ring first, that women (according to their simple facultie) are able to beflow but filly gifts : fo you would be pleased, to respect more the person that is the giver, than the quality or quantitie of the gift.

Then causing to be brought (for each of them) two
goodly Gownes or Robes (made after the Persian man-

er

ster) the one lyned thorough with cloth of Gold, and the other with the cost liest Fur; not after such fashion as Citizens and Merchants use to weare, but rather beseeming Lords of greatest account, and three light under-wearing Cassocks or Mandillions, of Carnatian Sattin, richly Imbroidered with Gold and Pearles, and lined thorow with white Tassa, preferting these gifts to them, shee said. I destreyou Gentlemento receive these meane trifles, such as my husband we are stee like, and these other beside, considering you are so far from your wives, having travelled a long way already, and many miles more yet to evertake; also Merchants (being excellent men.) affect to be comely and handlome in their habites; although these are of sender value, yet in necessity) they may doe you service.

Now was Saladine and his Baschnes halfe associated with admiration, at the magnificent minde of Signior Thorello, who would not forget the least part of courtefie towards them, and greatly doubted (seeing the beauty and riches of the Garments) least they were discovered by Therello. Neverthelesse, one of them thus nasswered the Lady. Believe mee Madam, these are rich gifts, not lightly either to be given, or received: but in regard of your strict imposition, were are not able to denie them. This being done, with most gracious and courteous demeanour, the departed from them, leaving her Husband to keepe them still company; who surnished their servants also, with divers worthy necessaries sitting for their journey.

Afterward, Thoredo (by very much importunity) won them to fany with him all the rest of the day; wherefore, when they had rested themselves a while, being attired in their newly given robes; they rode on horse-backe thorow the City. When Supper time came, they supt in most honourable and worthy company, being asterwards Lodged in most faire and sumptuous chambers; and being risen in the morning, in exchange of

hem) tivo

t

4

ed

Te

he

en,

ind

be-

via

CMJ .

arcc

eres

h he

yet)

arure,

mnes,

ng be-

r com-

great

chea-

Langu.

me kind

crward,

Worthy

ction ap.

eciallfa.

confide.

ple facul

the giver,

their horses (over-wearied with travell) they found three other very richly furnished, and their men also in like manner provided. Which when Saladine had perceived, he tooke his Baschaes aside, and spake in this manner.

By our greatest gods, I never met with any man, more compleate in all noble perfections, more courteous and kinde than Thorello is. If all the Christi in Kings, in the true and Heroicall nature of Kings, doe deale so honourably as I see this Kinght doth, the Soldane of Babylon is not able to endure the coming of one of them, much lesses many, as wee see preparing to make head against us. But beholding, that both resulal and acceptation, was all one in the minde of Thorelio after much kinde Language had beene intercoursed between them, Saladine (with his attendants) mounted on horseback.

Signior Thorello, with a number of his honourable friends (to the number of an hundred horfe) accompapanied them a great distance from the Citie, and although it grieved Saladine exceedingly, to leave the company of Thorello, to dearely was he affected to him; but accessity (which controlleth the power of all lawer whatfoever) must needs divide them : yet requesting his returne againe that way, if possibly it might be granted; which Saladine promised, but did not performe. Well Gentlemen (quoth Thorello at parting) Iknow not what you are, neither (againft your will) doc I defire it : but whether you be Merchants or no remember me in your kindenesse, and so to the heavenly powers I commend you. Saladine, having taken his leave of all them that were with Thorello, returned him this anfwer. Sir, it may one day hereafter fo happen, as wee thall let you fee some of our Merchandises, for the better confirmation of your beleefe, and our profession.

Thus parted Signior Thorello and his friends, from saladine and his company, who verily determined in the heighth of his minde, if hee should be spared with life, and the warre (which he expected) concluded: tores

quite

quite Thorello with no lette courtese, than he had alre ady declared to him; conferring a long while after
with his Baschaes, both of him and his beauteous Lady,
not forgetting any of their courteous actions, but gracing them all with deserved commendation. But after
they had (with very laborious paines) surveyed most of
the Westerne parts, they all tooke shipping, and returned into Alexandria: sufficiently enformed, what preparation was to be made for their owne desence. And
Signior Thorello being come backe againe to Pavia,
consulted with his private thoughts (many times after)
what these three travellers should be, but came farre
short of knowing the touth, till (by experience) he became better informed.

When the time was come, that the Christians were to make their paffage, and wonderfull great preparations, in all places performed : Signior Thorello, notwith Randing the teares and intreaties of his wife, determined to be one in fo worthy and honourable a voyage: and having made his provision ready, nothing wanting but mounting on horsebacke, to goe where hee should take thipping ; to his wife (whom he most intirely affected) thus hee spake. Madam, I goe as thou feeft in this famous Voyage, as well for mine Honour, as also the benefite of my foule; all our goods and possessions I commit to thy vertuous care. And because I am not certaine of my returne backe againe, in regard of a thousand accidents which may happen, in such a Countrey as I go unto: I defire onely but one favour of thee, whatfoever dange shall befall me; Namely, when any certaine tidings shall be brought thee of my death; to stay no longer before thy fecond marriage, but one yeare, one moneth, and one day; to begin on this day of my departing from thee. The Lady, who wept exceedingly, presently thus answered. Alas Sir: I know not how to carry my felfe, in fach extremity of gricfe, as nove you leave mee; but if my life furmount the fortiruce

led : to re-

ce

cc

do

r.

9:0

nd

tine

10-

em,

read

cepe

nuch nems

oack.

rable

d al-

e the

him:

lawer

granforme.

Iknow

e Ide-

owers I

e of all

this and

the bet-

ned in the

with life,

effion.

tude of forrow, and whatfoever shall happen to you for certainetie, either life or death: I will live and die the Wife of ThoreHo, and make my obsequies in his me-

mory onely.

Not so Madam (replied her husband) not so; Be not overash in promising any thing, albeit I am well assured, that so much as consider hin thy strength, I make no que tion of thy performance: But consider withall (dearc heart) thou are a young woman, beautifull, of great parentage, and no way thereto inferior in the

bleffings of Fortune.

Thy Vertues are many, and univerfally both divulged and knowen; in which respect, I make no doubt, but divers and sundry great Lords and Gentlemen (if but the least rumour of my death be noised) will make suite for thee to thy Parents and Brethren, from whose violent folicitings, wouldst thou never so resolutely make resistance, yet thou canst not be able to defend thy selfe; but whether thou wilt or no, thou must yeeld to please them; and this is the onely reason, why I would tie thee to this limited time, and not one day or minute

longer.

Adalicita, sweetly hugging him in her armes, and melting her selse in kisses, sighes, and teares on her face, said. WellSir, I will doe so much as I amable, in this your most kinde and loving imposition: and when I shall be compelled to the contrary: yet rest thus constantly assured, that I will not breake this your charge, so much as in thought. Praying ever heartily to the heavenly powers, that they will direct your course home againe to mee, before your prefixed date, or else I shall live in continual languishing. In the knitting up of this wosull parting, embracing and kissing either infinite times; the Lady tooke a Ring from off her singer, and giving it to her husband, said. If I chance to die before I see you againe, remember me when you looke on this. He receiving the Ring, and bidding all the rest

ter

kn

the

of his Friends farewell, mounted on horfebacke, and rode away well attended.

Being come to Geneway, he and his company boorded a Galley, and (in few dayes after) arrived at Acres, where they joyned themselves with the Christian Armie, wherein there happened a very dangerous mortality : During which time of fo tharpe visitation (the cause unknowne whence it proceeded) whether therough the industrie, or rather the good Fortune of Saladine, well-neere all the rest of the Christians (which escaped death) were surprized his prisoners (without a blow ftrucken) and fundred and imprisoned in divers Townes and Cities. Amongst the which number of priloners, it was Signior Therettees chance to be one, and walked in bonds to Alexandria, where being unknowne, and fearing leaft he should be discovered:confrained thereto meerely by necessity, hee flewed himfelfe in the condition of a Faulconer; wherein hee was very excellently experienced, and by which meanes his profession was made knowne to Saladine, he delivered out of Prison, and created the Soldans Faulconer.

Therello (whom the Soldan called by no other name, then the Christian, neither of them knowing the other) fidly now remembred his departure from Pavia, devifing and practifing many times, how hee might escape thence, he could not compaffe it by any possible means. Wherefore, certaine Ambassadours being fent by the Genewayes, to redceme divers Citizens of theirs, there detained as prisoners, and being ready to returne home againe: he purposed to write to his Wife, that hee was living, and would repaire to her fo foone as he could, defiring the still continued remembrance of her limited time. By close and cunning meanes hee wrote the Letter, earnestly intreasing one of the Ambassadors (who knew him perfectly, but made no outward apparance thereof) to deale in such fort for him, that the Letter might be delivered to the hands of the Abbot Disan

XXZ

Pictra

d tie inute and on her ble, in when us concharge, he hea. home a. fe I shall ag up of her infier finger, ce to die ou looke

Il the reft

G-

ke

all

of

ged but

but

vio-

nake

elfe;

leale

Novell.9. The Tenth Day,

Pietro in Ciel d'Oro, who was (indeede) his Vnckle.

While Therello remained in this his Faulconers condition, it fortuned upon a day, that Saladine, converting with him about his Hawkes: Therello chanced to finile, and used such a kinde of gesture or motion with his lippes, which Saladine (when hee was in his house at Pavia) had heedfully observed, and by this note, in-Rantly hee remembred Signior Therello, and began to eye him very respectively, perswading himselfe that he was the same man. And therefore falling from the former kinde of discoursing: Tell me Christian (quoth Saladins) what Country-man are thou of the West? Sir, answered Signior Therello, I am by Countrey a Lombard, borne in a City called Pavia, a poore man, and of

as poore condition.

So soone as Saladine had heard these words ; becomming affured in that which (but now) he doubted, hee faid within himfelfe: Now the gods have given mee time, wherein I may make knowne to this man, how thankefully I accepted his kinde courtefie, and cannot eafily forget it. Then, without faying anything elfe, causing his Guard-robe, to be set open, hee tooke him with him thither, and faid, Christian, observe well all these Garments, and quicken thy remembrance, in telling me truly, whether thou haft feene any of them before now or no. Signior Therette looked on them all advisedly, and espied those two especiall Garments, which his wife had given one of the strange Merchants; yet he durst not credit it, or that possibly it could be the fame, nevertheleffe he faid. Sir, I doe not know any of them, but true it is, that thefe two doe refemble two fuch Robes, as I was wont to weare my felfe, or the like were given to three Merchants, that happened to vifite my poore house.

Now could Satadine contains no longer, but embracing him joyfully in his armes, he faid. Signior Thordte d'illio, and I am one of those three Merchants, a

when

whom your wife gave thefe Robes: and now the time is come to give you credible intelligence of my Merchandile, as I promised at my departing from you, for fuch a time (I told you) would come at length. Thore!le, was both glad, and bashfull together : glad, that hee had entertained such a Guest, and bashfully ashamed, that his welcome had not exceeded in more bountiful! manner. Therette, replied Saladine, feeing the gods have fent you so happily to mee; account you your felfe to be foly Lord here, for I am now no more than a private man.

I am not able to expresse their counterchanges of courtefie, Saladine commanding him to be cloathed in Royall Garmenes, and brought in presence of his very greatest Lords, where having spoken liberally in his due commendation, he commanded them to honour him as himselfe, if they expected any grace and favour from him, which every one did immediatly, but (above all the rest) those two Baschaes, which accompanied Saladine at his house. The greatnesse of this pompe and glory, fo fuddenly throwne on Signior Therello, made him halfe forget all matters of Lombardie; and fo much the rather, because hee had no doubt at all, but that his letters, were fafely come to the hands of his Vncle.

Here I am to tell you, that in the Campe or Army of the Christians, on the day when Saladine made his furprizall, there was a Provinciall Gentleman dead and buried, who was Signior Thorello de Dignes, a man of very honourable and great effceme, in which respect (Signior Thorello a' Iftria, knowne throughout the Armie, by his Nobility and valour) wholeever heard that my felfe, of Signior Thorello was dead; bekeved it to be Therello hat happe d'Ifria, & not he of Dignes, so that Thorette d' Iffriaes unknowne surprizall and thraldome, made it also to

but embra paffe for an affured truth.

Beside, many Italians returning home, and carrying exchants, this report for credible; some were so audaciously pre-

XX 3

[umpt#

n-

-75

to ich

ulc in-

n to

t he

sa-

Sir

Lom.

nd of

ecom-

ed, bee

n mee

a, how

cannot

ing elfe.

oke him

vvell all

ance, in

of them

them all

arments,

Aerchants;

t could be

know any

e resemble

whe

Novelles. The Tonth Day,

fumptuous, as they avouched upon their oathes, that not onely they faw him dead, but were present at his buriall likewise. Which rumour comming to the eare of his wife, and likewise to his kindred and hers: procured a great and grievous mourning among them, and

all that happened to heare thereof.

Over-tedious time it would require, to relate at large, the publique griefe and forrow, with the continual! lamentations of his wife, who (within some few moneths after) became tormented with new marriage solicitings, before the had halfe sighed for the first: the very greate R persons of Lembardie making the motion, being daily followed and surthered by her owne brothers and friends. Still (drowned in teares) the returned deniall, till in the end, when no contradiction could prevaile, to satisfie her parents, and the importunate pursuers: shee was constrained to reveale the charge imposed on her by her Husband, which shee had vowed infallibly to keepe, and till that very time, shee would in no wise consent.

While wooing for a second weeding with Adalietta, proceeded in this manner at Pavia, it chanced on a day, that Signior Thoreso had espied a man in Alexandria, whom hee saw with the Geneway Ambassadurs, when they set thence towards Geneway with their Gallies. And causing him to be sent for, hee demanded of him, the successe of the voyage, and when the Gallies arrived at Geneway; whereto he returned him this answer. My Lord, our Gallies made a very statall voyage, as it is (already) too well knowne in Creete, where my dwelling is. For when we drew neere Sicily, there suddenly arose a very dangerous North-West winde, which drove us on the quicke-Sands of Barbary, where not any man escaped with life, onely my selfe excepted, but (in the wracke) two of my brethren perished.

Signior Thorello, giving credite to the manswords, because they were most true indeede, and remembring

also that the time limited to his wife, drew neere expiring within very few dayes, and no newes now poffibly to be fent thither of his life, his wife would questionleffe be married againe : hee fell into fuch a deepe cons ceited melanchelly, as foode and fleepe forfooke him. whereupon, he kept his bed, ferting downe his peremptory resolution for death. When Saladine (who deerely loved him) heard thereof, hee came in all hafte to fee him, and having (by many carnell persyations and entreaties) understood the cause of his melancholly and fickens.he very severly reproved him, because he would no fooner acquaint him therewith. Many kinde and cofortable speecheshe gave him, with coftant affurance, that (if hee were so minded) he would so order the bufinefie for him; as hee should be a Pavia, by the same time as he had appointed to his wife, and revealed to him also the manner how.

Therelle verily beleeved the Soldanes promise, because he had often heard the possibilitie of performance, and others had effected as much, divers times else-where: whereupon he began to comfort himselfe, soliciting the Soldan earnessly that it might be accomplished. Saladine, sent for one of his Sorcerers (of whose skill hee had formerly made experience) totake a direct course, how Signior Thorello should be carried (in one night) to Pavia, and being in his bed. The Magitian undertooke to doe it, but, for the Gentlemans more ease, hee must first be possessed with an entraunced dead sleepe. Saladine being thus assured of the deeds full effecting, hee came againe to Thorelle, and finding him to be settled for Pavia (if possibly it might be accomplished by the determined time, or else no other expectation but death)

he faid unto him as followeth.

Signior Thereto, if with true affection you love your wife, and misdoubt her marriage to some other man: I protest unto you, by the supreame powers, that you deferve no reprehension in any manner whatsoever. For,

swords, mbring also

hat

his

arc

-010

and

rge,

112-

eths

olici-

very

eing

s and

miall,

ilc,to

: thee

n her

ly to

Wile.

lietta.

on 2

lexan-

dours,

ir Gal-

nded of

Gallies

115 AR-

oyage,

ere my

ere fud-

e, which

nota-

ted, but

of all the Ladies that ever I have feene, the is the onely woman, whose carriage, vertues, and civill speaking, Aferting afide beauty, which is but a fading flowre) deferveth most graciously to be respected, much more to be affected in the highest degree. It were to mee no meane favour of ourgods, (feeing Fortune directed your course so happily hither) that for the short or long zime wee have to live, we might reigne equallie together in these Kingdomes under my subjection. But if fuch grace may not be granted me, yet, feeing it fands mainely upon the perill of your life, to be at Pavis agains by your owne limitted time, it is my chiefest comfort, that I am therewith acquainted, because I inrended to have you conveighed thither, yea, even into your owne house, in such honourable order as your vertues doe juftly merit, which in regard it cannot be To conveniently performed, but as I have informed you, and as the necessitie of the case urgently commandeth; accept it as it may be best accomplished.

Great Saladine (answered Thorello) effects (without words.) have already sufficiently warranted your gracious disposition towards me, farre beyond any requitall remaining in mee; your word onely being enough for my cofort in this case, either dying or living. But in regard you have taken such order for my deparzure hence, I defire to have it done with all possible expedition, because to morrow is the very last day, that I am to be absent. Saladine protested that it fould be done, and the same evening in the great Hall of his royall Pallace, comanded a rich and coffly bed to be fet up, the mattras formed after the Alexandrian manner, of Velvet and cloth of gold, the Quilts, counterpoints and coverings, sumptuoully, imbroidered with Orient Pearles and Precious Stones, supposed to be of inestimable value, and two rarely wrought Pillowes, such as best befeemed so stately a bed, the Curtaines and Val-

lans every way equall to the other pompe,

Which

m;

Livi

COU

the

fiel

nesi

him.

his f

you

leave

wher

Pyax

forb

Which being done, he commanded that Thoretto (who was indifferently recovered) should be attired in one of his owne sumptuous Saracine Roabes, the very faireft and richeft that ever was feene, and on his head a Majesticall Turbant, after the manner of his owne wearing, and the houre appearing to be fornewat late, hee with many of his best Baschaes, went to the Chamber where Thore Ho was, and fitting downe a while by him, in teares thus he speake. Signior ThereRo: The houre for fundring you and mee, is now very neere, and because I cannot beare you company, in regard of the bulinesse you got about, and which by no meane's will admit it; I am to take my leave of you in this Chamber, and therefore I am come to doe it. But before I bid you farewell, let me increase you, by the love and friend hip confirmed betweene us, to be mindfull of me, and to take such order (your affaires being fully finished in Lomhardy) that I may once more enjoy the fight of you here, for a mutual I folace and fatisfaction of our minds. which are now divided by this argent hafte. Till which may be granted, let me want no vifitation of your kind letters, commanding thereby of mee, whatfoever here can possibly be done for your affuring your felfe, no man. living can command me as you doe. Signier Thorello could not forbeare weeping, but being much hindred thereby, answered in few words. That he could not poffibly forget his gracious favours and extraordinarie benefits used towards him, but would accomplish whatfor ever hee commanded, according as heaven did enable him. Hereupon, Saladine embracing him, and kiffing his forehead, faid. All my gods goe with you, and guard you from any perill, departing fo out of the Chamber weeping, and his Baschaes having likewise taken their leave of Thorello) followed Saladine into the Hall, whereas the bed food readily prepared. Because it waxed very late, and the Magitian also there attending for his dispatch; the Philition went with the potion. 10

ű,

1;

1-

M

.5

e-

ıg.

17-

Y.

at [

be

his

fet

er,

ints

ent

fti.

h as

Val-

rich

to Thorello, and perswading him, in the way of friendthip, that it was onely to strengthen him after his great weakeneffe: hee dranke it off, being thereby immediately entraunced, and so presently sleeping, was (by Saladines command) laid on the sumptuous and colly bed, whereon stood an Imperiall Crowne of infinite value, appearing (by a description engraven on it) that Saladine fent it to Madam Adalietta, the wife of Thore No. On his finger he put a Ring, wherein was enchased an admirable Carbuncle, which seemed like a flaming Torche, the value thereof not to be estimated. By him likewise hee laide a rich sword, with the girdle, hangers, and other furniture, fuch as feldome can be seene the like. Then be laid a lewell on the Pillow by him, fo sumptuously embelished with Pearles and precious Stones, as might have befeemed the greatest Monarch in the world to weare. Last of all, on either fide of them, he fee two great Basons of pure gold, full of double ducates, many cords of Orient Pearles, Ring's, Girdles, and other costly levels (over-tedious to be recounted) and kiffing him once more as hee lay in his bed, commanded the Magitian to dispatch and be gone.

Inflantly, the bed and Thorello in it, in the presence of Saladine, was invisibly carried thence, and while hee sate conferring with his Baschaes, the Bed, Signior Thorello, and all the rich sewels about him, was transported and set in the Church of San Pietro in Ciel d'Ore in Pavia, according to his owne request, and foundly sceping, being placed directly before the high Altar. Afterward, when the bells rung to Mattines, the Sexton entring the Church with a light in his hand (where he beheld a light of greater splendor) and suddenly efficied the sumptuous bed there standing: not onely was the similar into admiration, but he ranne away also very searcfully. When the Abbot and the Monkes met him what summing into the Cloyster, they became amazed,

and demanded the reason why heer anne in such haste, which the Sexton told them. How? quoth the Abbot, thou art no child, or a new-come hither, to be so casily affrighted in our holy Church, where Spirits can have no power to walke. God and Saint Peter (we hope) are stronger for us than so: wherefore turne backe with us,

and let us fee the cause of thy feare.

13

13

10

10

il·

cs

a -

1-

ld,

es,

us

ay

nd

ace

hee

IOI

an-

Ore

dly

tar.

ics-

nere

ef-

VY28

VC-

him zed,

236

Having lighted many Torches, the Abbot and his Monkes entred with the Sexton into the Church, where they beheld the wonderfull rich Bed, and the Knight lying fast asseep in it. While they stood all in amazement, not daring to approach neere the bed, whereon lay such costly sewels; it chanced that Signior Thoresto awaked, and breathed forth a most vehement sighe. The Monkes and the Abbot seeing him to stirre, ranne all away in seare, crying ont aloud, God and Saint Peter defend us.

By this time Therello had opened his cies, and looking round about him, perceived that he was in the place of Saladines promife, whereof hee was not a little joyfull. Wherefore, fitting up in the ocd, and particularly observing all the things about him: albeit hee knew fuffiently the magnificence of Saladine, yet now it appeared farre greater to him, and imagined more largely thereof, than he could doe before. But yet, without any other ceremony, feeing the flight of the Monkes, hearing their cry, and perceiving the reason; he called the Abbot by his name, desiring him not to be asraid, for, he was his Nephew Thorello, and no other.

When the Abbot heard this, her was ten times more worse affrighted than before, because as by publique same) he had beene so many moneths dead and buried; but receiving (by true arguments) better affurance of him, and hearing him still call him by his name: bleffing himselfe with the signe of the Crosse, hee went somewhat necret to the bed, when Thorello said. My loving Vncle, and religious holy Father, whereof are

you afraid? I am your Nephew, newly returned from beyond the Seaes. The Abbot, feeing his beard to be growne long, and his habit after the Arabian fathion, did yet collect fome refemblance of his former countenance; and being better persyaded of him, tooke him

by the hand, faying:

Sonne, thou are happily returned, yet there is not any in our Citie, but doth verily believe thee to be dead, and therefore doe not much wonder at our feare. Moreover; I date affire thee, that thy wife Adalutta, being conquered by the controuling command, and threatnings of her kindred (but much against her own mind) is this very morning to be matried to a new husband, and the marriage feast is solemnly prepared, in honour

of this second Nuptials.

ThereMariling out of the bed, gave gracious falutations to the Abbot and his Monker, entreating earnefly of them all, that no word might be spoken of his returne, untill he had compleated an important bufineffo. Afterward, having fafely secured the bed, and all the rich lewels, he fully acquired the Abbot with all his passed fortunes, wherof he was immeasurably joyfull, & having fatisfied him, concerning the new elected hufband, Thorello faid unto the Abbot. Vnckle, before any. rumour of my return, I would gladly fee my wives behaviour at this new briding feast, and although men of religion are seldome scene at such Ioviall meetings: yet (for my fake) doe you to order the matter, that I (as an Arabian stranger) may be a guest under your protetion; whereto the Abbot very gladly and joyfully consickended.

In the morning, hee lent to the Bridegroome, and advertised him, that he (with a stranger newly arrived) intended to dine with him, which the Gentleman'accepted in thankefull manner. And when dinner time came, Thorello in his strange disguise went with the Abbot to the Bridegroomes house, where he was lookt on

with

rep

his

ma

fore

WIC

ger

man

conv

perfe

of W

Th

with admiration of all the guefts, but not knowne or suspected by any one; because the Abbot reported him to be a Sarracine, and sent by the Soldane (in Ambassage) to the King of France. Thoseko was seated at a by-table, but directly opposite to the new Bride, whom he much delighted to looke on, and easily collected by her sad countenance, that she was searcely well pleased with this new Nuprialls. She likewise beheld him very often, not in regard of any knowledge she took of hims for the bushinesse of his beard, strangenesse of habite, (but most of all) firme beliefe of his death, was the

maine prevention.

y.

1-

t

n

1-

d

I)

C-

b-

h

At fuch time as Thore Ho thought it convenient, to approove how far he was falne out of her remembrance; he tooke the Ring which the gave him at his departure, and calling a young Page that waited on none but the Bride, faid to him in Italian: Faire youth, goe to the Bride, and faluting her from me, tell her it is a custome in my Countrey, that when any stranger (as I am here) fitteth before a new married Bride, as now fhee is, in figne that he is welcome to her feat, thee lendeth the fame Cup (wherein the drinketh her fel fe) full of the best wine, and when the ftranger hath drunke fo much as him pleaseth, the Bride then pleageth him with all. the reft. The Page delivered the message to the Bride, who being a woman of honourable disposition, and reputing him to be a Noble Gentleman, to tellific that his presence there was very acceptable to her, the commanded a faire Cup of gold (which flood direaly before her) to be neately washed, and when it was filled with excellent wine, caused it to be carried to the ftranger, and fo it was done prefently according as the commanded.

Therette having drunke a heartie draught to the bride, conveyed the Ring into the Cuppe, before that any person could perceive it, and having left but small store of wine in it, covered the Cup, and sent it against to the

Brides

Bride, who received it very graciously, and to honour the Stranger in the Countries custome, dranke up the rest of the Wine, and espying the Ring, shee tooke it forth undescried by any: Knowing it to be the same Ring, which she gave Signior Thoresto at his parting from her; she fixed hereyes often upon it, and as often on him, whom she thought to be a stranger, the cheerefull bloud mounting up into her cheekes, and returning againe with remembrance to her heart, that (howsloever

thus disquised) he onely was her husband.

Like one of Bacchus Froes, up furioufly shee farted, and throwing downe the Table before her, cried out aloud: This is my Lord and Husband: this truely is my Lord Thorello. So running to the Table where hee fate, without regard of all the riches thereon, down the threw it likewise, and clasping her armes about his necke, hung so mainely on him (weeping, sobbing, and kissing him) as the could not be taken off by any of the copany, nor thewed any moderation in this excelle of paffion, till Thorello ipake, and entreated her to be more patient, because this extremitie was over-dangerous for her. Thus was the folemnitie much troubled, but every one there very glad and joyfull for the recovery of such a famous and worthy Knight, who intreated them all to vouchfafe him filence, and fo related all his fortunes to them, from the time of his departure, to the instant houre. Concluding withall, that he was no way offended with the new Bride-groome, who upon the fo conftant report of his death, deserved no blame in making election of his wife.

The Bridegroome, albest his countenance was somewhat cloudie, to see his hope thus disappointed; yet granted freely, that Adalietta was Thorello's wife in equitie, and he could not lay any claime to her. Shee also refigned the Crowne and Rings which she had so laterly received of her new Spouse; and put that on her singer which she found in the Cup, and that Crowne was

fet upon her head, in honour sent her from great Saladine. In which triumphant manner, shee less the new Bridegroomes abiding, and repaired home to Thorello's house, with such pompe and magnissence as never had the like beene seene in Pavia before, as the Citizens esteeming it as a miracle, that they had so happily recovered Signior Thorello agains.

Some part of the lewells hee gave to him, who had beene at coft with the marriage feafting, and some to his Vacle the Abbot, beside a bountie bestowed on the Monkes. Then hee sent a messenger to Saladine, with Letters of the whole successe, and confessing himselfe (for ever) his obliged servant; living many yeares (after) with his wife Adalietta, and using greater courtefies to strangers, than ever before he had done.

In this manner ended the troubles of Signior Thorello, and the afflictions of his dearely affected Lady, with due recompence to their houest and ready courteses. Manystrive (in outward shew) to doe the like, who although they are sufficiently able, doe performe it so basely, as it rather redoundeth to their shame, than honour. And therefore if no merit ensue thereon, but onely such disgrace as justly should follow; let them lay the blame upon themselves.

30

Ic

be

6-

d,

0-

all to

ne

011

me

nc.

yet

10-

alfo

210-

fin-

fet

The Marquess of Saluzzo, named Gualtiero, being confirained by the importunate softiciting of his Lords, and
other inferiour people, 10 joyne himselfe in marriage;
tooke a moman according to his owne liking, called
Grizelda, she being the daughter of a poore countreyman, named laniculo, by whom hee had two children,
which hee pretended to be secretly murdered. Aftermard, they being growne to yearer of more stature, and
making shew of taking in marriage another wife,
more worthy of his high degree and calling: made a
seeming publique liking of his owne daughter, expulsing

fing his wife Grizelda poorely from him. But finding her incomparable patience; more deerely (than hefore) her received her into favour againe, brought her home to his owne Pallace, where (with her children) he caused her and them to be respectively bonoured in despisht of all her adverse enemies.

The tenth Novel!

Set downe as an example or warning to all wealthy men, how to have care of marrying themselves. And likewise to poore and meane women, to be patient in their fortunes, and obedient to their husbands.

Overftionlesse, the Kings Novell did not so much exaccede the rest in length, but it proved as pleasing to the whole assembly, and past with their generall approbation, till Dioness (in a merry-jesting humour) said. The plaine honest sample man, that stood holding the Candle, to see the setting on of his Mules taile; deserved two penny-worth of more praise, than all our applauding of Signior Theresto: And knowing himselfe to be lest for the last speaker, thus he began.

Milde and modest Ladies, for ought I can perceive to the contrary, this day was dedicated to none but Kings, Soldanes, and great Potentates, not in favour of any inferiour or meaner perfons. And therefore, because I would be loth to dif-ranke my selfe from the rest, I purpose to speake of a Lord Marqueste, not any matter of great magnificence, but rather in a more humble nature, and forced to an honest end: which yet I will not advise any to imitate, because (perhaps) they cannot so well digest it, as they did whom my Novall concerneth; thus then I begin.

It is a great while fince, when among those that were Lord Marquesses of Saluzzo, the very greatest and word thick man of them all, was a young noble Lord, uamed Gualtiero, who having neither wife nor childe, spent his time in nothing else but hawking and hun-

ting!

70

ma

my

YOU

ma

ting a nor had hee any minde of marriage, or to enjoy the benefit of children, wherein many did repute him the wifer. But this being distantfull to his subjects, they very often earnestly solicited him, to match himselfe with a wife, to the end, that he might not decease without an heire, nor they be left destitute of a succeeding Lord; offering themselves to provide him of such a one, so well descended by Father and Mother, as not onely should consume their hope, but also yeeld him high contentment; whereto the Marquesse thus answered.

Worthy friends, you would constraine me to the thing wherewith I never had any intent to meddle, confideting, how difficult a case it is to meete with such a woman, who can agree with a man in all his conditions, and how great the number is of them, who daily happen on the contrary; but mok (and worft of all the reft) how wretched and miserable proves the life of man, who is bound to live with a wife not fit for him. And in faying, you can learne to understand the custome and qualities of children, by behaviour of the fathers and mothers, and so to provide me of a wife, it is a meere argument of folly: for neither shall I comprehend, or you either, the fecret inclinations of parents; I meane of the Father, and much leffe the complexion of the mother. But admit it were within compaffe of power to know them; yet it is a frequent fight, and observed every day; that daughters do refemble neither father nor mother, but that they are naturally governed by their owne inftinct.

1.

e

) -

0

O

5,

ny

I

110

of

1-

ot

fo

h

ere

er-

18-

de,

ng:

But because you are so desirons to have me sertered in the chaines of wedlocke; I am contented to grant what you request. And because I would have no complaint made of any but my selfe, if matters should not happen answerable to expectation; I will make mine owne eyes my electors, and not see by any others fight. Giving you this assurance before, that if shee whom I shall make choise of, be not of you honoured and respected

Novell-10. The Tenth Day.

as your Lady and Miffresse : it will ensue to your detriment, how much you have displeased me, to take a wife at your request, and against mine owne will.

The noble men answered, that they were well fatif-

fied, provided that he tooke a wife.

Some indifferent space of time before, the beautic, manners, and well-feeming vertues, of a poore Country-mans daughter, dwelling in no farre distant Village, had appeared very pleasing to the Lord Marquelle, and gave him full perswafion, that with her hee should leade a comfortable life. And therefore, without any further fearch or inquisition, hee absolutely resolved to marry her; and having conferred with her Father, agreed, that his daughter should be his wife. Whereupon, the Marquesse made a general Convocation of all his Lords, Barons, and other of his especiall friends, from all parts of his Dominion; and when they were affembled together, hee then spake unto them in man-

ner as followeth.

E Honourable friends, it appeared pleasing to you all, and yet (I thinke) you are of the same minde, that I should dispose my selfe to take a wife: and I thereto condescended, more to yeeld you contentment, than for any particular defire in my felfe, Let mee now remember you of your folemne made promise, with full confent to honour and obey her (wholoever) as your Soveraigne Lady and Mistresse, that I shall elect to make my wife : and now the time is come, for my exacting the performance of that promise, and which I looke you must constantly keepe. I have made choise of a young Virgine, answerable to mine owne heart and liking, dwelling not farre off hence, whom I intend to make my wife, and (within few dayes) to have her brought home to my Pallace. Let your care and diligence then extend fo farre, as to fee that the feast may be sumptuous, and her entertainement to be most honourable :to the end that I may receive as much contentment in

your promise performed, as you shall perceive I doe in

my choife.

i.

fe

ſ-

ic,

nil-

le,

ny

to

2-

all

ds,

crc

n-

all,

t I

eto

an

re-

full

our

ake

ing

you

ung

ng, ake ght

hen

tu-

t in

OUL

The Lords, and all the rest, were wondrously joyfull to heare him so well inclined, expressing no lesse by their shours and jocund suffrages: protesting cordially, that she should be welcommed with pompe and Majestie, and honoured of them all, as their Liege, Lady, and Soveraigne. Afterward, they made preparation for a princely and magnificent feast, as the Marqueste did the like, for a marriage of extraordinary state and qualitie, inviting all his kindred, friends, and acquaintance in all parts and Provinces, about him. Hee made also ready most rich and costly garments, shaped by the body of a comely yong Gentlewoman, whom he knew to be equall in proportion and stature, to her of whom he had made his election.

When the appointed Nuptiall day was come, the Lord Marquelle, about nine of the clocke in the morning, mounted on horse-backe, as all the rest did, who came to attend him honourably, and having all things in due readinesse with them, he said : Lords, it is time for us to fetch the Bride. So on he rode with his traine, to the same poore Village whereas she dwelt, and when he was come to her Fathers house, hee saw the maiden returning very hastily from a Well, where she had been to fetch a paile of water, which she set downe, and stood (accompanied with other maidens) to see the passage of the Lord Marques and his traine, Gualtiero called her by her name, which was Grizelda, and asked her, where her Father was: who bashfully answered him, and with an humble courtesse, saying. My gracious Lord, hee is in

the house.

. Then the Marquesse dismounted from his horse, commanding every one to attend him, then all alone hee entred into the poore Cottage, where hee found the maides Father, being named Issiculo, and said unto him. God speed good Father, I am come to espouse thy

daugh -

Novellato. The Tenth Day;

daughter Gricelds: but first I have a few demands to make, which I will neter to her in thy presence. Then

he turned to the maide, and faide.

Faire Grizelda, if I make you my wife, will you doe your best endeavour to please me, in all things which I shall doe or say ? Will you also be gentle, humble, and patient? with divers other the like questions: whereto she still answered, that she would, so neero as heaven

(with grace) should enable her.

Presently he took her by the hand, so led her forth of the poore mans homely house, and in the presence of all his company, with his owne hands, he tooke off her meane wearing garments, (mocke and all, and clothed her with these Robes of State which he had purposely brought thither for her, and plaiting her hairs over her shoulders, hee placed a Crowne of gold on her head, whereat every one flanding as amazed, and wondring not a little, hee faid: Grizelda, wilt thou have mee to thy husband. Modefly blushing, and kneeling on the ground, thee answered. Yes my gracious Lord, if you will accept so poore a maiden to be your wife. Yes Grirelda, quoth he, with this holy kiffe, I confirme thee for my wife; and so espouled her before them all. Then mounting her on a milke-white Palfray, brought thither for her, thee was thus Itonourably conducted to her Pallace.

Now concerning the marriage feafts and triumphes, they were performed with no less pompe, than if shee had beene daughter to the King of France. And the young Bride apparantly declared, that (with her garments) her minde and behaviour were quite changed. For indeed she was sait were shame to speake otherwise) a rarecreature, both of person and perfections, and not onely was she absolute for beautie, and so sweetly amiable, gracious, and goodly; as if shee were not the daughter of poore laniculo, and a Country Shepheard-dess, but rather of some noble Lord; whereat every

Offic

21

R

ra

W

he

his

one wondered that formerly had knowne her. Beside all this, she was so obedient to her husband, so servent in all dutiful offices and patient, without the very least provoking; as hee held himselfe much more than contented, and the onely happy man that lived in the world.

In like manner, towards the Subjects of her Lord and Husband, face shewed her selfe alwayes so benigne and gracious; as there was not any one, but the more they lookt on her, the better they loved her, honouring her voluntarily, and praying to the heavens, for her health, dignity and well-fares long continuance; Speaking now Equite contrary to their former opinion of the Marqueffe) honourably and worthily, that hee had showne himselfe a singular wife man, in the election of his wife, which few else (but he) in the world would ever have done : because their judgement might fall farre short, of discerning those great and precious vertues, veiled undet a homely habite, and obscured in a poore Country Cottage. To be briefe, in very fhort time, not onely the Marquifate it felfe, but all neighbouring Provinces round about, had no other common talke, but of her rare course of life, devotion, charity, and all good actions elfe whatfoever; quite quailing all unifter Instru-Rions of her Husband, before he received her in matrimony.

đ,

12

to

he

OW

ri-

cc

en

i-

to

C3 3

hee

the

ar.

ed.

er-

and

ya-

the

ard-

very

ONG

About foure or five yeares after the birth of her daughter, the conceived with childe againe, and (at the limitted houre of deliverance) had a goodly Sonne, to the no little liking of the Marquelle. Afterward, a ftrange humour entred into his braine, namely, that by a long continued experience, and courses of intollerable qualitie; he would needs make proofe of his faire wives patience, First, he began to provoke her by injurious speeches, thewing sierce and frowning leokes to her, intimating; that his people grew displeased with him, in regard of his Wives base birth and educa-

tion,

tion, and so much the rather, because shee was likely to bring children, who (by her bloud) were no better than beggers, and murmured at the daughter already borne. Which words when Grizelda heard, without any alteration of countenance, or the least distemperature in any apppearing action, the said.

My honourable and gracious Lord, dispose of me, as you thinke best, for your owne dignity and contentment, for I shall therewith be well pleased: as she that knowes her selfe, farre inseriour to the meanest of your people, much lesse worthy of the honour, whereto you

liked to advance me.

This answer was very welcome to the Marquesle, as apparantly perceiving hereby, that the dignity whereto hee had exalted her, or any particuliar favours belide, could not infect her with any pride, coineffe, or difdaine. Not long after, having told her in plaine and open speeches, that his subjects could not endure her so late borne daughter: he called a trufty fervant of his, and having instructed him what he fould doe, fent him to Grizelda, and he being alone with her, looking very fad, and much perplexed in minde, he faid. Madani, except I intend to lose mine owne life, I must accomplish what my Lord hath firielly enjoyned mee, which is, to take this your young daughter, and then I must: So breaking off abruptly, the Lady hearing these words, and noting his frowning lookes, remembring also what the Marquelle himselfe had formerly said; the presently imagined, that he had commanded his fervant to kill the child. Suddenly therefore, thee tooke it out of the Cradle, and having sweetly kissed, and bestowed her bleffing on it (albeit her heart throbbed, with the inward affection of a Mother) without any alteration of countenance, the tenderly laid it in the fervants armes, and faid. Here friend, take it, and doe with it as thy Lord and mine hath commanded thee : but leave it in no rude place, where birds or favage beaks may devoure it except it be his will to have it fo.

Bi bi go m:

VCI

the

Monyour may ter, the S

the S beene comp no or the ha vell o The servant departing from her with the childe, and reporting to the Marquesse what his Lady had said; he wondered at her incomparable constancy. Then her sent it by the same servant to Bologna, to an honourable Lady his kinsewoman, requesting her (without revealing whose child it was) to see it both nobly and care-

fully educated.

).

0

S:

M

c-

11.

m-

ich

ift:

ds,

hat

ent-

kill

the

her

e'in-

on of

mes,

sthy

it ift

VOUTE

The

At time convenient afterward, being with child againe, and delivered of a Princely Sonne (than which nothing could be more joyfull to the Marqueffe) yet all this was not sufficient for him; but with farre ruder language than before, and lookes expressing harsh intentions, hee said unto her. Grizelda, though thou pleasest mee wonderfully, by the birth of this Princely Boy, yet my subjects are not therewith contented, but blunder abroad maliciously; that the grand-child of Ianiculo, a poore countrey Pezant, when I am dead and gone must be their Soveraigne Lord and Master. Which makes me stand in searc of their expulsion, and to prevent that, I must be rid of this childe, as well as the other, and then send thee away from hence, that I may take another wise, more pleasing to them.

Grizella, with a patient sufferent soule, hearing what hee had said, returned no other answer but this. Most Gracious and Honorable Lord, satisfie and please your owne Royall minde, and never use any respect of me: for nothing is precious or pleasing to me, but what may agree with your good liking. Within a while after, the noble Marquesse in the like manner as hee did before for his Daughter, so he sent the same servant for the Sonne, and seeming as if hee had sent it to have been slaine, couveighed it to be nursed at Bologna, in company of his sweet Sister. Whereat the Lady shewed no other discontentment in any kinde, than formerly she had done for her Daughter, to the no meane marvell of the Marquesse, who protested in his soule, that the like woman was not in all the world beside. And

MACLE

were it not for his heedfall observation, how leving and carefull the was of her children, prizing them as dearely as her owne life : rash opinion might have per-Swaded him, that the had no more in her, than a carnall affection, not caring how many fhee had, so the might thus eafly be rid of them; but he knew her to be a truly vertuous mother, and wifely liable to endure his fevereft impolitions.

His Subjects beleeving, that hee had caused the children to be flaine, blamed him greatly, thought him to be a most cruell man, and did highly compassionate the Ladies case: who when she came in company of other Gentlewomen, which mourned for their deceaffed children, would answer nothing else: but that they could not be more pleasing to her, than they were to the fa-

2

m

ho

an

te.

mo

Pai

trai

five

tion

hum

your

Leve

not a

which

7

ther that begot them.

Within certaine yeares after the birth of these children, the Marquelle purpoled with himselfe, to make his last and finall proof of faire Grizeldaes patience, and faid to fome neere about him : that he could no longer endure, to keepe Grizelda as his Wife, confessing, he had done foolifhly, and according to a young giddie braine, when bee was fo rash in the marriage of her. Wherefore he would fend to the Pope, and purchasea dispensation from him, to repudiate Grizelda, and take another wife. Wherein although they greatly reproved him; yet hee told them plainely, that it must needes be fo.

The Lady hearing these newes, and thinking shee must returne againe to her poore fathers house, and effate, and (perhaps) to her old occupation of keeping of heepe, as in her younger dayes thee had done; understanding withall, that another woman mnit enjoy him, whom face dearely loved and honoured ; you ough may well thinke (worthy Ladies) that her patience 15 the was now put to the maine proofe indeede. Nevertheleffe, as with an invincible true vertuous courage, the tie h

226

had overflood all the other injuries of Fortune; fo did the constantly fettle her foule to beare this with an un-

daunted countenance and behaviour.

1-

to

he

acr

ail-

puld

far

hil-

nake

and.

nget

g, he

iddie

her.

hale a

nd take

proved

necdes

At fuch time as was prefixed for the purpole, counterfeit Letters came to the Marquelle (as fent from Rome) which he caused to be publikely read in the hearing of his Subjects: that the Pope had despensed with him, to leave Grizelds, and marty with another wife. wherefore, fending for her immediatly, in prefence, and before them all, thus hee spake to her. Woman, by concession fent mee from the Pope, bee hath dispensed with me, to make choile of another wife, and to free my felfe from thee. And because my predecessors have been Noblemen, and great Lords in this Country, thou being the daughter of a poore Countrey Clowne, and their bloud and mine notorioully imbased, by my marriage with thee : I intend to have thee no longer my wife, but will returne thee home to thy Fathers house, with all the rich Dowry thou broughtest mee; and then I will take another wife, with whom I am already contracted, better befeeming my birth, and fare more contenting and pleafing to my people.

The Lady hearing these words (not without much paine and difficulty) reftrained her teares, quite contrary to the naturall inclination of women, and thus anfwered. Great Marques, I never was fo emptie of diferetion, but did alwayes acknowledge, that my base and ing face humble condition, could not in any manner fute with ng shee pour high bloud and Nobilitie, and my being with you, use, and of kee lever acknowledged, to proceed from heaven and you, not any merit of mine, but only as a favour lent mee, and done mist enought to be pleased (and so am) that it be restored. Her extends you leave to be pleased (and so am) that it be restored. Her extends humility) I deliver it to you. You command me, to caracter the humility) I deliver it to you. You command me, to caracter the humility is not any manner fute with the humility is the marriage Downy which I brought with the particular is no access of a Treasurer to repay it mee, but the marriage is no access of a Treasurer to repay it mee.

уу

Del-

neither any new purse to carrie it in, much lesse any Sumpter to be laden with it. For (Noble Lord) it was never out of my memory, that you tooke me starke naked, and if it shall seeme sightly to you, that this bodie hath borne two children, and begotten by you, must againe be seene naked, willingly must I depart hence naked. But I humbly beg of your Excellency, in recompence of my Virginitie, which I brought you blamelesse, so much as in thought: that I may have but one of my wedding Smocks, onely to conceale the shame of

nakedneffe, and then I depart rich enough.

The Marquesse whose heart wept bloudy teares, as his eyes would likewise gladly have yeelded their naturall tribute; covered all with a dissembling angry countenance, and starting up, said. Goe, give her a Smocke onely, and so send her gidding. All there present then, entreated him to let her have a petticote, because it might not be said, that shee who had been his Wise thirteene yeares and more, was sent away so poorely in her Smocke; but all their perswasions prevailed not with him. Naked in her Smocke, without hose or shooes, bareheaded, and not so much as a Cloth or rag about her necke, to the great griefe and mourning of all that saw her, shee went home to her owne sathers house.

And he (good man) never beleeving, that the Marquesse would long keepe his daughter as his Wise, but rather expected daily, what now had happened: safely said up the garments, whereof the Marquesse despoyled her, the same morning when he espoused her. Wherefore hee delivered them to her, and shee fell to her Fathers houshold businesse, according as formerly shee had done; sustaining with a great and unconquerable spirit, all the cruellassauts of her enemy Fortune.

About such time also, as suted with his owne dispofition, the Marquesse made publiquely knowne to his subjects, that her meant to joyne in marriage against

vith

ing

que

caf

thu

nyl

read

her

Smo

and

the !

Fing

as be

done

the C

marr

treyg

N

with the daughter to one of the Counts of Panage, and causing preparatio to be made for a supruous weddings he sent for Grizelds, and she being come, thus he spake to her. The Wise that I have made the new election of, beto arrive here within very sew dayes, and at her first comming, I would have her to be most honourably entertained. Thou knowest I have no woman in my house, that can decke up the Chambers, and fet all requisite things in due order, bestting for so solemne a feast; and therefore I sent for thee, who knowing (better than any other) all the parts, provision, and goods in the house, set every thing in such order, as thou shall thinke necessary.

Invite fuch Ladies and Gentlewomen as thou wilt, and give them welcome, even as if thou wert the Lady of the house and when the marriage is ended, returne

then home to thy Father againe.

Although these words pierced like wonding daggers, the heart of poore (but Noble patient) Grizelda, as besting unable to forget the unequald love the bare the Marqueffe, though the dignitie of her former fortune, more easily slipt out of her remembrance; yet neverthelesse, thus the answered.

My Gracious Lord, I am glad that I can doe you any fervice, wherein you shall finde me both willing and ready. In the same poore garments, as shee came from her fathers house (although shee was turned out in her Smocke) shee began to sweepe and make cleane the Chambers, rubbe the stooles and benches in the Hall, and ordered every thing in the Kitchin, as if shee were the worst maide in all the house, never ceasing or giving over, till all things were in due and decent order, as best beseemed in such a case. After all which was done, the Marquesse, having invited all the Ladies of the Countrey, to be present as so great a Feast when the marriage day came, Grizelda, in her gowne of Gountrey gray, gave them welcome, in honourable manner,

yy 2

and.

o his gaine with

C

13

1-

n.

ke

nt

se

ife

in

not

10

rag

gof

ers

far-

but

arcly

sere-

cable

and graced them all with very cheerefull countenance.

Gualtiero the Marquesse, who had caused his two children to be nobly nourished at Bologna, with a neare kinswoman of his, who had married with one of the Counts of Panago, his daughter being now aged twelve yeares old, and some-what more, as also the Son about fixe or feven. He fent a Gentleman expresly to his kindred, to have them come and vifice him at Salu ? ?a, bringing his Daughter and Son with them, attended in very honourable manner, and publishing every where as they came along, that the young Virgin (knowne to none but himselfe and them) Gould be the wife to the Marqueffe, and that onely was the cause of her comming. The Gentleman was not flacke, in the exrecution of the trust reposed in him; but having made convenient preparation; with the kinred, Son, Daughter, and a worthy company attending on them, arrived at Salazza about dinner time, where wanted no refort, from all neighbouring parts round about, to feethe somming of the Lord marquelles new Speule.

By the Lords and Ladies thee was joyfully entertained, and comming into the great Hall, where the Tables were readily covered. Grizelda, in her homely Countrey habite, humbled her felfe before her, faying. Gracious welcome, to the new elected Spoule of the

15

is

br

W

ne

Gi

de

tha

vill

not

3 7

win.

(wi

Wh

Lord Marqueffe.

All the Ladies there present, who had very earnessly importuned Gualtiero (but in vaine) that Grizelds, might better be shut up in some Chamber, or else to lend her the wearing of any other garments, which formerly had beene her owne, because the should not be so poorely seene among strangers: being seated at the Tabless the waited on them very serviceably. The young Virga was observed by every one, who spared not to say, that the Marquesse had made an excellent change: but above them all, Grizelda did most commend her, and so did her brother likewise, as young as he was, yet not knowing her to be his Sister.

ON

arc

he

lve

out

in-

34,

ded

perc

wne

fe to

her

e ex-

nade

ugh.

rived

fort,

e the

ertai-

c T2-

omely

aying.

of the

neftly

zelda

o lend

merly

poore ables

Virgin

y, that

but 1 er, and

yet not

Not

Now was the Marques Infficietly fatisfied in his foule, that he had feen fo much as he defired, concerning the patience of his wife, who in fo many heart-grieving trials, was never noted formuch as to alter her counternance. And being absolutely personaded, that this proceeded not from any want of understanding in her, because hee knew her to be fingularly wife; hee thought it high time now, to free her from these afflicting oppreflions, and gave her fuch affurance as thee ought to have. Wherefore, commanding her into his prefence, openly before all his affembled friends, fmiling on her, he faid. What thinkest thou Grizelda of our new cholen Spoule? My Lord (quoth the) I like her exceeding well, and if thee be fo wife, as thee is faire (which verily I thinke free is) I make no doubt but you shall live with her, as the onely happy man of the world. But I humbly entreate your Honour (if I have any power in mee to prevaile by) that you would not give her fuch cutting and unkinde language, as you did to your other wite : for I cannot thinke her armed with fuch patience. as thould (indeede) support them : as well in regard the is much yonger, as also her more delicate breeding and education, whereas the whom you had before, was brought up in continuall toile and travell.

When the Marqueffe perceived, that Grizeldabelesved verily, this young daughter of hers should be his wife, and answered him in so honest and modest manner; he commanded her to fit downe by him, and faid. Grizelda, it is now more than fit time, that thou shouldest taste the fruite of thy long admired patience, and that they who have thought me cruell, barth and uncivill natured, should at length observe that I have done nothing at all basely, or unadvisedly. For this was a worke premeditated before, for enftructing thee what it is to be a married wife, and to let them know (wholoeuer they be) how to take and keepe a wife. Which hath begotten (to mee perpetuall joy and hap. pineile

y y 3

nesse, so long as I have a day to live with thee: a matter whereof I stood before greatly in searc, and which (in marriage I thought) would never happen to me.

It is not unknowne to thee, in how many kinds (for my first proofe) I gave thee barsh and unpleasant speeches, which drawing no discontentment from thee, either in lookes, words, or behaviour, but rather fuch comfort as my foule defired, and fo in my other fucceedings afterward; in one minute now, I purpole to give thee that confolation, which I bereft thee of in many tempeltuous ftormes, and make a sweete restauration for all thy former fowre sufferings. My faire and dearely affected Grizelda, thee whom thou supposets for my new elected Spoule, with a glad and cheerefull heart, embrace for thine owne daughter, and this also her brother, being both of them thy children and mine, in common opinion of the yohole vulgar multitude, imagined to be (by my command) long fince flaine. I am thy honourable Lord and Husband, who doth, and will love thee farre above all women elfe in the world; giving thee justly this deserved praise and commendation, That no man living hath the like wife, as I have.

So, sweetly kissing her infinitely, and hugging her joyfully in his armes (the teares now streaming like new-let-loose Rivers, downe her faire face) which no disafter before could force from her) hee brought her, and seated her by her daughter, who was not a little, amazed at so rare an alteration. She having (in zeale of affection) kissed and embraced them both, all else present being clearely resolved from the former doubt which too long deluded them; the Ladies arose jocendly from the tables, and attending on Grizelda to her Chamber, in signe of a more successful augury to sollow: tooke off her poore contemptible rags, and put on such costly robes, which (as Lady Marchionesse) the weare before.

After-

h

CO

(pi

bre

ber

oth

eye,

rage

like

haps

quitt

forth

facco

the c

to the

Afterward, they waited on her into the Hall againe, being their foveraigne Lady and Miltrelle, as thee was no lefie in her pooreit Garments; where all rejoycing for the new restored Mother, and happy recovery of so moble a fon and daugher, the Festivall continued many moneths after. Now every one thought the Marquelle to be a noble & a wife Prince, though fomewhat tharp and unfufferable, in the fevere experience made of his wife: but (above all) they reputed Grizelds, to be a most wife, patient, and vertuous Lady. The Count of Panago, within few dayes after returned backe to Bologna; and the Lord Marquelle, fetching home old Isniculo from his countrey drudgery, to live with him (as his Father in law) in his Princely Palace, gave him honourable maintenance, wherein he long continued, and ended his dayes. Afterward he marched his daughter in a noble marriage : hee and Grizelds living long time together, in the highest honour that possibly could be.

What can now be faid to the contrary, but that poore Countrey Cottages, may yeeld as divine and excellent spirits, as the most flately and Royall mansions, which breed and bring up fome, more worthy to be Hog.rubbers, than hold any foveraignty over men? where is any other (belide Grizalda) who not onely without a wet eye, but imboldened by a valiant and invincible courage : that can inffer the harpe rigors, and (never the like heard of proofes) made by the Marquelle ? Perhaps he might have met with another, who would have quitted him in a contrary kinde, and for thrufting her forth of doores in her smocke, could have found better faccour fomewhere elfe, rather than walke to nakedly in

the cold Arcers.

Jeneus having thus ended his Novell, and the Ladies delivering their severall judgements, according to their own fancies, some holding one conceit, others

lea-

ic)the After-

r

20

er

er

fe

of

e-

31

IP-

nd

ind

ren

gar

nce vho

e in

and

rife,

her like

h no her,

little

zeale

I elle

oubt

ond-

o her o fol-

d put

leaning to the contrary; one blaming this thing, and another commending that; the King lifting his eyes to heaven, to feeing the Sun began to fall low, by rifing of the Evening Starre; without arifing from his feate, spake as followeth. Differest Ladies, I am perswaded you know sufficiently, that the sense and understanding of us mortals, consider the not onely (as I thinke) by preserving in memory things past, or knowledge of them present; but such as both by the one and other, know how to foreste suture occasions, are worthly

thought wife, and of no common capacity.

It will be (to morrow) fitteene dayes, fince wee departed from the Citie of Florence, to come hither for our pastime and comfort, the conservation of our lives, and support of our health, by avoiding those melanchollies, griefes and anguishes, which wee beheld daily in our Citie, fince the pestilentiall visitation began there, wherein (by my judgement) wee have done well and honefly, Albeit some light Novels, perhaps attractive to a little wantonneile, as forme fay, and I oviall feathing with good cheere, finging and dancing, may feeme mattere inciting to incivilitie, especially in weake and shallow underfrandings. But I have neither feene, heard, or knowne, any ach, word, or whatfeever elfe, either on your part or ours, justly deferving to be blamed : but all has beene honell, asin a fweet and harmonious concord, fuch as might well befeeme the communitie of Brethren and Sifters; which affuredly, as well in 16gard of you, as us, hath much contented me.

And therefore, least by oner-long consucrude, something should take life, which might be converted to a bad construction, and by a bad construction, and by our Countrey demourance for so many dayes, some captious conceit may wrest out an ill imagination; I am of opinion (if yours be the like) seeing each of us hath had the honour, which now remaineth still on meet that it is very fitting for us, to returne abuther from

whence

C2

be

ga

If g

CS

ng

c,

bs

ng

Of

er.

ily

24

for

es,

0.

V 13

ere,

and

cvif

ing

mat-

hal-

d, or

r on

con-

I LC.

om.c.

d 103

y our

I am

s hath

mee:

from

hence

whence we came. And so much the rather, because this sociable meeting of ours, which already hath wonne the knowledge of many dwellers here about us, should now grow to such an increase, as might make our purposed passing offensive to us. In which respect (if you allow of my advise) I will keepe the Crowne till our departing hence; the which I intend shall be to morrow; but if you determine otherwise, I am the man ready to make my resignation.

Many imaginations passed amongst the Ladies, and likewise the men, but yet in the end, they reputed the Kings counsell to be the best and wisest, concluding to doe as he thought convenient. Whereupon, he called the Master of the Houshold, and conferred with him, of the businesse belonging to the next morning, and then gave the company leave to rise. The Ladies and the rest, when they were risen, fell some to one kind of recreation, and others as their fancies served them, even as (before) they had done. And when Supper time came, they dispatcht it in very loving maner. Then they began to play on instruments, sing and dance, and Madam Lapretta leading the dance, thee commanded Madad Fiammetta to sing a song, which pleasantly she began in this manner.

The Song.

The chorus fung by all the reft of the Company!

IF love were freee from leal oufie, No Lady living. . Had leffe heart-greeving, Or liv'd fo happily as I.

If gallent youth
In a faire friend, a women could content.
If vertues prize, valour and hardiments
Wil, carriage, pure fictoquences

The Tenth Day,

Could free a woman from impatience:
Then I am she can vaunt (if I were wise)
All these in one faire flower,
Are in my power,
And yet I boast no more but truth.
If love were free from icalousie, Gr.

But I behold

That other women are at wife as I,

Which hills me quite,

Fearing falfe firquedrie.

For when my fire begins to flame

Others defires misquide my aime,

And so beceaves me of secure delight,

Onely through fond mistrust, he is unjust:

Thus we my comforts bourely but and cold.

If love were free, & a.

If in my friend.

I found like fairb, as manly minde I know;

Mistrust were staine.

But my fight griefes still grow,

By sight of such as doe assure;

So I can thinke none true, none sure,

But all would rob me of my golden gaine.

Lee thus I die. in Icalousse,

For losse of him on whom I waind.

If Love were free, cre.

Let me advise

Such Ladies as in Love are bravely bold,

Not to wrong me, I scorne to be controld.

If any one I charce to finde,

By winks, words, smiles, in crasty kindes

Sceking for that, which onely mine should be:

Then I protest, to doe my best.

And make them know, that they are scarcely wise.

If Love were free from leasonste, Go.

So foone as Madam Fiammetts had ended her Song; Dieneus, who face by her, failing faid. Truely Madam. you may do us a great courtefie, to exprese your felfe more plainely to us all, leaft (thorow ignorance) the paffion may be imposed on your felfe, and fo you remaine the more offended. After the Song was paft, divers other were fung befide, and it now drawing wellneere midnight, by the Kings command, they all went to bed. And when new day appeared, and all the world awaked out of fleepe, the Mafter of the Housholdhaving fent away the carriages; they returned (under the conduct of their difference King) to Florence, where the three Gentlemen left the feven Ladies at the Church of Santa Maria Novella, from whence they went with them at the first. And having parted with kinde falutations; the Gentlemen went whither themselves best pleased, and the Ladies repaired home to their houses.

The End of the Tenth and last Day.

FINIS.